

Mouton Grammar Library

A Grammar of Hup



Mouton Grammar Library 43

Editors

Georg Bossong

Bernard Comrie

Matthew Dryer

Mouton de Gruyter
Berlin · New York

A Grammar of Hup

by

Patience Epps

Mouton de Gruyter
Berlin · New York

Mouton de Gruyter (formerly Mouton, The Hague)
is a Division of Walter de Gruyter GmbH & Co. KG, Berlin.

⊗ Printed on acid-free paper which falls within the guidelines of the
ANSI to ensure permanence and durability.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Epps, Patience, 1973 A grammar of Hup / by Patience Epps. p. cm. — (Mouton grammar library ; 43) Includes bibliographical references and index. ISBN 978-3-11-019588-0 (cloth : alk. paper) 1. Jupda language — Grammar. 2. Jupda language — Phonology. 3. Jupda language — Morphosyntax. I. Title. PM6275.J921E77 2008 498.35—dc22 2008010732

Bibliographic information published by the Deutsche Nationalbibliothek

The Deutsche Nationalbibliothek lists this publication in the Deutsche Nationalbibliografie;
detailed bibliographic data are available in the Internet at <http://dnb.d-nb.de>.

ISBN 978-3-11-019588-0
ISSN 0933-7636

© Copyright 2008 by Walter de Gruyter GmbH & Co. KG, D-10785 Berlin.
All rights reserved, including those of translation into foreign languages. No part of this book may
be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including
photocopy, recording or any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing
from the publisher.
Printed in Germany.

*For the Hupd'əh – may they always have Hup,
and for Zephyr – may he have the chance to learn it.*

Acknowledgements

This project would never have been possible without the help and support of a very many people along the way. First and foremost, I am grateful to the Hupd'əh, who welcomed me into their villages. I particularly want to thank my primary consultants, Pedro Pires Dias (Yaʔam D'úb), Teresa Monteiro Socot (Mũn), and Jovino Monteiro (Hüd), as well as Americo Monteiro (M'æh J'ñh), Sabino Monteiro (ʔǎd), and Jarbas Dias (J'ib Hĩʔ). Thanks also to all the other people who told stories or sang songs for the tape recorder, or simply put up with its presence in the midst of their conversations. I also am especially grateful to my adopted 'family' in Barreira Alta: Mario, Selina, José Luis, Ped, Aracy, Emilia, José Maria, and Luisa, as well as Pedro, Alba, and family, for their warm friendship and many meals together; likewise Paulina, Jovita, and other friends in Tat Deh, and the many children, young people, and others who were my companions during my time among them.

Also in Brazil, I am very fortunate to have had an affiliation with the Museu Paraense Emilio Goeldi in Belém, and am particularly grateful to Denny Moore, who first suggested I work with the Hupd'əh, and who did considerable legwork to help make that possible. I also owe a special thanks to Nilson Gabas Jr., my sponsor in Brazil, and to Jorge Pozzobon, who knew the Hupd'əh well and who provided my initial direction regarding where to go and what to expect.

I am very grateful as well to the Instituto Socioambiental, particularly to Beto Ricardo, Marta Azevedo, and others of the Rio Negro team – Carlão, Fernando, Francimar, and Flora and Aloisio Cabalzar – for their assistance with the practical issues of fieldwork, their advice, and their friendship. Without their invaluable help, fieldwork would have been considerably more difficult.

I would also like to thank FOIRN (Federação das Organizações Indígenas do Rio Negro) for their support and interest in the project, and CNPq (Conselho Nacional de Desenvolvimento Científico e Tecnológico) and FUNAI (Fundação Nacional do Índio) for their permission to undertake research in Brazil and within the Indigenous Area. I am grateful to the health agents (of Saude Sem Limites, DSEI, etc.) working in the region for their support, and particularly to Marc de Bont and Herma Klandermans for their friendship and help during my months in the field.

I am very grateful to the organizations that funded this research: Fulbright-Hays, the National Science Foundation (Grant 0111550), and the Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology.

The bulk of this grammar was written at the Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology in Leipzig, Germany, where I held a Ph.D. fellowship

from 2003–2005, and I owe the department there a great deal of thanks for its support and for the strong intellectual climate that helped to foster this project. Among the many people there whose comments and insights contributed to this work, I would particularly like to thank Juliette Blevins, Bernard Comrie, Michael Cysouw, Tom Güldemann, Martin Haspelmath, and Don Stilo. I am also grateful to Nick Enfield and others at the MPI for Psycholinguistics in Nijmegen, who generously supplied me with the extremely useful elicitation materials that they have developed for use in the field, and with whom I had many stimulating discussions.

My thanks also go to a number of other linguists for their input on aspects of Hup grammar or their typological implications: Alexandra Aikhenvald, Mark Donohue, Nick Evans, Larry Hyman, Knud Lambrecht, and numerous others. I am grateful to Renato Athias and Henri Ramirez for interesting discussions regarding the Hupd'əh and their language. I would also like to thank Ana María Ospina for our discussions comparing aspects of Hup and Yuhup; her insights on Yuhup grammar have given me considerable food for thought.

I would especially like to thank Orin Gensler, who read and made copious insightful comments on every page of this grammar. I can never thank him enough for the time and care he put into being my mentor at MPI, or for his unfailing encouragement during the writing process. His vast knowledge of typology and historical linguistics, his meticulous approach, and his seemingly endless patience have contributed immeasurably to this work.

Similarly enormous thanks go to Eve Danziger, my dissertation advisor at the University of Virginia, who was behind this work from the very beginning, and who has been an invaluable part of every step in the process. Without her helpful feedback, her encouragement, and her constant support, it is hard to imagine how this grammar would have been possible.

In addition, I am very grateful to Lise Dobrin, Ellen Contini-Morava, George Mentore, and Peter Hook at the University of Virginia for their insightful comments on this grammar in its dissertation stage, as well as to other members of the UVA Anthropology Department. This work has also benefited a great deal from the insights and support of my colleagues and students in the Linguistics Department at the University of Texas at Austin. Additional thanks go to the department and to I-Wen Lai and Gabriela Garcia for help with the index.

At Mouton de Gruyter, I would like to thank Ursula Kleinhenz and Wolfgang Konwitschny for their help with the publishing process, and I am particularly grateful to Georg Bossong for his detailed and helpful comments on the manuscript. A University Co-operative Society Subvention Grant, awarded by the University of Texas at Austin, is much appreciated for its help in covering publication costs.

Finally, a special thanks to my husband Chris for his patience with my long absences.

Contents

Acknowledgements.....	vii
List of maps, figures, and tables.....	xix
Abbreviations.....	xxi
1 Hup and its speakers.....	1
1.1 Linguistic profile of Hup.....	2
1.2 Hup within the Nadahup (Makú) language family.....	3
1.2.1 Suggested name changes.....	9
1.2.2 Previous studies of Hup.....	10
1.3 Dialectal variation in Hup.....	10
1.4 The cultural context of the Hupd'əh.....	13
1.5 Vaupés multilingualism and language contact.....	22
1.5.1 The Hupd'əh and the River Indians: socioeconomic interaction.....	24
1.5.2 The sociolinguistics of Hupd'əh–River Indian interaction.....	26
1.5.3 Bilingualism and language contact.....	30
1.5.4 Viability and endangerment status of Hup.....	31
1.6 Regional history and the current situation of the Hupd'əh.....	32
1.7 Methods and presentation of the study.....	37
2 Phonology.....	41
2.1 Segmental phonology.....	41
2.1.1 Vowels.....	42
2.1.2 Consonants.....	45
2.1.2.1 Consonantal allophones and alternations: morphological context.....	47
2.1.2.2 Voiceless obstruents.....	50
2.1.2.3 Voiced obstruents.....	54
2.1.2.4 Fricatives.....	60
2.1.2.5 Glides.....	61
2.1.2.6 Glottalized consonants.....	63
2.2 Syllable, morpheme, and word structure.....	78
2.3 Prosodic features.....	82
2.3.1 Nasalization.....	82
2.3.2 Word-accent: tone and stress.....	86
2.3.2.1 Lexical stress patterns.....	87

2.3.2.2	Tone.....	88
2.4	Orthographic conventions.....	98
2.5	Phonological processes across morpheme boundaries.....	102
2.6	Phonological differences among Hup dialects.....	108
3	The architecture of the word: parts of speech and formatives.....	110
3.1	Parts of speech.....	111
3.1.1	Nouns.....	111
3.1.2	Verbs.....	113
3.1.3	Adjectives.....	114
3.1.4	Other word classes.....	115
3.2	Morphological processes and the phonological word.....	115
3.2.1	Defining the phonological word.....	117
3.3	Polysemy or homonymy?.....	119
3.4	Formative classes and their combination.....	121
3.4.1	Core formatives.....	122
3.4.1.1	Prefixes and preforms.....	122
3.4.1.2	Suffixes.....	124
3.4.2	Peripheral formatives.....	134
3.4.2.1	Clitics.....	135
3.4.2.2	Particles.....	136
3.5	Flexibility of formative positions in the verb: ‘fluid’ morphemes...	139
3.6	Phonologically reduced formative variants.....	144
3.7	Formative flexibility and grammaticalization.....	149
4	The noun class and nominal morphology.....	158
4.1	Types of nouns.....	158
4.1.1	Human nouns.....	158
4.1.2	Closed nominal classes.....	159
4.1.3	‘Verby’ nouns.....	163
4.2	Nominal morphology.....	164
4.3	Case marking and grammatical relations.....	165
4.3.1	Object case - <i>ǎn</i>	166
4.3.1.1	Semantic roles and object marking.....	167
4.3.1.2	Differential object marking.....	170
4.3.1.3	Object marking on noun phrases and relative clauses.....	178
4.3.2	Directional oblique case - <i>an</i>	181
4.3.3	Other constructions involving - <i>an</i>	183
4.3.4	Oblique case - <i>ǂi</i>	184
4.3.4.1	Semantic roles and oblique marking.....	185
4.3.4.2	Oblique marking and subordinate clauses.....	190

4.4	Number.....	191
4.4.1	Differential plural marking (plurality split) and animacy.....	192
4.4.2	Number and other noun types: demonstratives, numerals, and pronouns.....	198
4.4.3	Uncountable or mass nouns.....	202
4.4.4	Number marking and the noun phrase.....	204
4.4.5	Number marking and the subordinate clause.....	205
4.4.6	Associative plural <i>-ǎnd'əh</i>	206
4.5	Reduplication in the noun stem.....	208
4.6	Nominal derivation.....	210
4.6.1	Nouns formed from free verb stems.....	210
4.6.2	Derivational uses of bound nouns.....	212
4.6.3	Other nominalizations.....	212
5	The complex noun: compounding, possession, and noun classification.....	213
5.1	Noun compounding.....	213
5.1.1	Hup compounds and metaphorical extensions.....	216
5.1.2	Two types of compounds.....	217
5.1.2.1	Lexically specific compounds.....	217
5.1.2.2	Productive compounds.....	217
5.1.3	Lexification and phonological reduction of compound forms.....	220
5.1.4	Nominal compounds involving adjectives: attributive uses of aspect.....	220
5.2	Alienable possession.....	224
5.3	Other possessive constructions: clausal strategies.....	228
5.3.1	Clausal possession (possessor 'raising').....	228
5.3.2	Other possessive strategies.....	230
5.4	Syntactically bound nouns.....	232
5.4.1	Referential kin terms.....	234
5.4.2	Human nouns.....	238
5.4.2.1	'Generic human' nouns.....	239
5.4.2.2	'Male' and 'female' nouns.....	241
5.4.2.3	Possession and human nouns.....	244
5.4.3	Plant parts.....	246
5.4.4	Other obligatorily bound nouns.....	250
5.4.5	Body parts: both bound and free realizations.....	252
5.5	Making sense of the bound noun construction.....	256
5.5.1	Non-obligatorily bound nouns and the bound construction..	261
5.5.2	Exceptions to obligatory participation in the bound construction.....	262

5.6	Bound nouns and semantic extension: noun ‘classification’	264
5.6.1	Semantically extended bound constructions and names for native items.....	265
5.6.2	Semantically extended bound constructions and names for newly introduced cultural items.....	267
5.6.3	Animate entities	273
5.6.4	A classifier system?.....	273
5.6.4.1	From bound nouns to classifiers: a grammaticalization story.....	275
5.6.4.2	Functions of the Hup classifier system and the typology of noun classification.....	276
5.6.4.3	An incipient classifier system.....	279
6	The noun phrase: modification and definiteness.....	284
6.1	Pronouns.....	284
6.2	Question words.....	287
6.3	Demonstratives.....	291
6.4	Indefinite reference.....	306
6.5	Quantification.....	309
6.5.1	Numerals.....	309
6.5.2	Distributive <i>pɨd</i> as a quantifier.....	318
6.5.3	Other quantifiers.....	321
6.6	Adjectival modifiers.....	326
6.7	Coordination of noun phrases.....	333
7	Nominal discourse-marking morphology.....	336
7.1	‘Promiscuous’ verbal morphology and the noun class.....	336
7.1.1	Inchoative focus <i>-ay</i>	338
7.1.2	Contrastive emphasis (Telic) = <i>yɨ?</i>	341
7.1.3	Topic-switch marker = <i>b’ay</i> ‘again’.....	345
7.1.4	Reflexive intensifier = <i>hup</i>	348
7.1.5	Dependent suffix <i>-Vp</i> as topic marker.....	349
7.1.6	Comparison of ‘promiscuous’ nominal discourse markers... ..	351
7.2	Augmentatives and diminutives.....	352
7.3	‘Deceased’ marker = <i>cud</i>	353
7.4	Respect markers.....	355
7.5	Indefinite Associative = <i>ʔũy</i> (‘who’).....	357
7.6	‘Related Instance’ particle <i>tá?</i>	361
7.7	Parallel marker = <i>hin</i>	362
7.8	Contrastive <i>n’ũh</i>	365
7.9	Locative <i>có?</i>	367

8 The verb word	371
8.1 Defining the Hup verb.....	371
8.2 Verb root classes and transitivity.....	372
8.2.1 Transitive and intransitive variants distinguished by glottalization.....	379
8.3 The verbal template.....	380
8.4 The verb <i>ni</i> -.....	385
9 The compound verb	388
9.1 The verb compound and its component roots.....	388
9.2 Defining the verb compound as ‘word’.....	390
9.3 Compounds as serial verb constructions.....	393
9.4 The Hup compound and levels of sub-event integration.....	395
9.4.1 Low integration.....	395
9.4.1.1 Temporal sequence.....	396
9.4.1.2 Compounds encoding a cause-effect relationship..	398
9.4.2 High integration.....	404
9.4.2.1 Multiple sub-events: semantic classes of verb roots.....	405
9.4.2.2 Order of roots in compounds.....	410
9.4.2.3 Complex compounds: ordering of multiple roots..	416
9.4.2.4 Auxiliary and ‘vector’ roots: aspect, mode, and Aktionsart in compounds.....	419
9.4.3 Maximal integration: roots and formatives.....	426
9.5 Restrictions on compounding.....	429
9.6 Noun incorporation.....	431
10 Adjectives and adverbial expressions	441
10.1 Adjectives.....	441
10.2 Adverbs and adverbials.....	446
10.2.1 ‘No reason’ adverbial <i>hĩ</i>	451
10.2.2 Comparative strategies.....	452
10.2.2.1 ‘Like’ comparison.....	452
10.2.2.2 Contrastive comparison.....	459
10.3 Locative postpositions.....	463
10.3.1 Basic locative postpositions.....	464
10.3.1.1 ‘Following’ marker <i>hũy</i>	469
10.3.2 Locative postpositions with <i>-ʔah</i>	470
11 Adjusting valency	473
11.1 Reflexive <i>hup</i> -.....	473
11.1.1 Reflexive reading.....	476

11.1.2	Passive reading.....	481
11.1.3	Reciprocal reading.....	485
11.2	Reciprocal relations and Interactional <i>ʔũh</i> -.....	487
11.3	Applicative <i>-ʔũh</i> -.....	500
11.3.1	Additional functions of postverbal <i>ʔũh</i>	502
11.4	Factitive <i>hi</i> -.....	504
11.5	Other valency-related operations.....	516
11.5.1	Derivation of causatives.....	516
12	Aspect	520
12.1	Hup’s aspect markers and their properties.....	520
12.2	Dynamic <i>-V̄y</i>	524
12.3	Inchoative <i>-ay</i>	533
12.4	Perfective <i>-ʔeʔ- / -ʔe-</i>	541
12.5	Completive <i>-cĩp- / -cĩw-</i>	549
12.6	Telic <i>-yiʔ-</i>	554
12.7	Venitive <i>-ʔay-</i>	558
12.8	Habitual <i>bíg / -bi-</i>	561
12.9	Iterativity.....	566
12.9.1	Distributive <i>píd</i>	566
12.9.2	‘Repeated instance’ <i>b’ay</i>	575
12.9.3	Reduplication.....	579
12.10	Verbal ‘diminutives’.....	583
12.11	Persistentive <i>tæ</i>	584
13	Tense and related forms	587
13.1	Future <i>-teg / -te-</i>	588
13.1.1	Purposive function of <i>-teg</i>	591
13.1.2	Other uses of <i>teg</i>	594
13.2	Proximative <i>-tuk- / -tu-</i>	597
13.3	First person plural inclusive future.....	598
13.4	Fused contrast/tense particles.....	599
13.4.1	Temporally Proximate Contrast <i>páh</i>	600
13.4.2	Distant Past Contrast <i>j’ám / j’áh</i>	603
13.4.3	Future Contrast <i>tán</i>	605
14	Modality and evidentiality	609
14.1	Conditional <i>-tæñ</i>	609
14.2	Counterfactual <i>-tæʔ-</i>	613
14.2.1	Counterfactual in conditional expressions.....	613
14.2.2	‘Avertive’ function of <i>-tæʔ-</i>	616

14.3	Alternative Counterfactual form = <i>tih</i>	619
14.4	Frustrative <i>yǎh</i>	620
14.5	Cooperative <i>-niŋ</i>	627
14.6	Apprehensive mood.....	630
14.7	Jussive <i>-ŋúh</i>	634
14.8	Epistemic modality <i>ŋúh</i>	637
14.9	Evidentiality.....	641
	14.9.1 Visual evidential ‘category’.....	643
	14.9.2 Nonvisual evidential <i>hǔ(h)</i>	646
	14.9.3 Inferred evidential <i>cud</i>	650
	14.9.4 Reportative evidential <i>mah</i>	654
	14.9.5 Co-occurrence of evidentials.....	658
	14.9.6 Additional inferred evidential <i>-ni</i>	659
15	Sentence-level affect marking	665
15.1	Degree markers.....	667
	15.1.1 Intensifier <i>-(V)cáp</i>	667
	15.1.2 Intensifiers <i>mún / muhún</i>	670
	15.1.3 Other intensifiers.....	671
	15.1.3.1 Verbal auxiliary <i>-tubud</i>	672
	15.1.3.2 Adverbial intensifier <i>pǐb</i> ‘strong’.....	673
	15.1.3.3 Elative <i>-kəd</i>	673
	15.1.4 Diminutive intensifier <i>mæh</i>	674
15.2	Promiscuous focus and emphasis markers.....	677
	15.2.1 Emphasis <i>pog / -po- / wog / -wo-</i>	677
	15.2.2 Emphasis marker = <i>ʔih</i>	681
	15.2.3 Focus <i>-áh</i>	684
	15.2.4 Filler form <i>-Vw-</i> as an emphasis marker.....	688
15.3	Sentence-final affect particles.....	692
	15.3.1 Emphasis particles (<i>ti</i>).....	693
	15.3.1.1 Interrogative emphasis <i>tǐ</i>	693
	15.3.1.2 Emphasis <i>tí</i>	694
	15.3.1.3 Emphasis <i>tíh</i>	696
	15.3.1.4 Emphatic tag <i>-(V)ti?</i>	697
	15.3.2 Interactive tag <i>ya</i>	698
	15.3.3 Interactive tag <i>-(V)hó?</i>	700
	15.3.4 Additional emphatic device: final glottalization.....	703
	15.3.5 Protestive <i>bá?</i>	704
	15.3.6 Exclusive <i>-Vyík</i>	706
	15.3.7 ‘Acting alone’ markers <i>-ké?</i> , <i>-d’ǎh</i>	709
	15.3.8 Acquiescence particle <i>bé</i>	710
15.4	Grammaticalized social connectedness.....	711

15.5	‘Whatchamacallit’ morpheme <i>hǎy</i>	714
15.6	Interjections.....	716
	15.6.1 Clause-bound interjections.....	716
	15.6.2 Free interjections.....	719
15.7	Ideophones.....	721
16	Negation	725
16.1	Verbal Negative <i>-nǐh</i>	725
	16.1.1 Verbal negation in main clauses.....	726
	16.1.2 Verbal negation in subordinate clauses.....	728
	16.1.3 Verbal negation and scope within the verb compound and phrase.....	729
	16.1.4 Verbal negation and modifiers (adjectives, adverbs, quantifiers).....	732
	16.1.5 The interaction of verbal negation and other grammatical systems.....	733
	16.1.6 Verbal negation and emphasis/intensification.....	734
	16.1.7 Reinforced negation with <i>nǎé</i>	736
16.2	Existential negative <i>pǎǎ</i>	737
16.3	Identity negative <i>ǎp</i>	741
16.4	Negative expressions and negative lexical items.....	745
17	Simple clauses	748
17.1	Boundary Suffixes and clause type.....	748
17.2	The morphosyntax of main clauses.....	749
17.3	Declarative clauses.....	750
	17.3.1 Constituent order in the declarative clause.....	750
	17.3.2 Declarative marker <i>-Vǐh</i>	761
	17.3.3 Verbless clauses	767
	17.3.3.1 Nominal predicates.....	768
	17.3.3.2 Adjectival predicates.....	771
	17.3.4 Copula clauses.....	775
17.4	Interrogative clauses.....	777
	17.4.1 Constituent (question-word) questions.....	778
	17.4.2 Basic polar questions.....	784
	17.4.3 Polar questions with argument focus.....	787
	17.4.4 Interrogative Alternative = <i>ha?</i>	791
	17.4.5 Responding to interrogatives.....	792
17.5	Imperative clauses.....	794
	17.5.1 Simple imperative	795
	17.5.2 Imperative suffix <i>-kǎǎm</i>	800
	17.5.3 Responses to imperatives.....	802

18 Clause combining	803
18.1 Coordination.....	804
18.1.1 Juxtaposition strategy	805
18.1.2 Vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes and clause linkage.....	806
18.1.3 Emphatic Coordinator = <i>nih</i>	809
18.1.4 Adversative conjunction <i>kǎh</i>	816
18.1.5 Disjunction.....	818
18.2 Subordination and cosubordination.....	819
18.2.1 Quoted speech.....	820
18.2.2 Cosubordination and predicate reduplication with <i>ni-</i>	823
18.2.3 Relative clauses.....	828
18.2.3.1 Other constructions with a relationship to relative clauses.....	839
18.2.4 Dependent marker - <i>Vp</i>	841
18.2.4.1 Dependent marker and dependent clauses: adverbial function.....	841
18.2.4.2 Dependent marker and main clauses.....	845
18.2.4.3 Further uses of the Dependent marker: appearance on nominals.....	847
18.2.5 Complementation and the Nominalizer - <i>n ʔh</i>	849
18.2.6 Dependent clauses contributing adverbial information.....	853
18.2.6.1 Adverbial (Telic) = <i>yǐʔ</i> with adverbial clauses.....	854
18.2.6.2 The case-marked clause as an adverbial.....	856
18.2.6.3 Sequential - <i>yóʔ</i>	861
18.2.6.4 Simultaneity and concession with - <i>mǎʔ</i>	864
18.2.6.5 Simultaneous temporal adverbial - <i>kamí</i>	869
18.2.6.6 Reason adverbial <i>keyóʔ</i>	870
18.2.6.7 Temporal/spatial adverbial particle <i>té</i>	872
Appendix I: Texts.....	873
1 Introduction.....	873
2 Traditional tales.....	874
Text 1: The Spirit Who Fished for Traira.....	874
Text 2: A Story of Curupira.....	881
Text 3: The Spirit of the Pineapple Thicket.....	890
3 Conversation.....	894
Text 4: Conversation: The fight at Santa Atanasio.....	894
4 Spells.....	916
Text 5: Curing spell.....	916
5 Songs.....	920
Text 6: Song.....	921
Text 7: Song.....	925

Appendix II: Summary of Hup grammatical formatives.....	928
Appendix III: Glossary of regional terms.....	935
Appendix IV: Photographs.....	938
References.....	943
Author index.....	969
Subject index.....	973

List of Maps, Figures, and Tables

Maps:

Map 1	Location of Hup speakers.....	1
Map 2	Location of the Nadahup languages.....	4
Map 3	Location of Hup dialects.....	11

Figures:

Figure 1	The Nadahup (Makú) family.....	3
Figure 2	Earlier proposals for the Nadahup (Makú) family.....	5
Figure 3	Interaction among language groups in the Vaupés region.....	26
Figure 4	Geminate medial consonant.....	50
Figure 5	Medial glottal stop realized as vocalic laryngealization.....	54
Figure 6	Pre- and post-nasalization of voiced obstruents.....	58
Figure 7	Word-medial nasalization of voiced obstruent.....	59
Figure 8	Glottalized consonant in onset position: laryngealization of following vowel.....	64
Figure 9a	Glottalized stop in coda position: tóg' [tógʷ] 'room, compartment'.....	65
Figure 9b	Voiceless stop in coda position: tǒk [tǒkʷ] 'stomach, belly'.....	65
Figure 10	Glottalized stop followed by vowel-initial suffix.....	66
Figure 11a	Falling tone, CVCvoiced syllable.....	89
Figure 11b	Rising tone, CVCvoiced syllable.....	90
Figure 12a	High tone, CVCvoiceless syllable.....	90
Figure 12b	Rising tone, CVCvoiceless syllable.....	91
Figure 13	Possible grammaticalization paths for ʔǎh.....	504

Tables:

Table 1	Lexical comparison of pronouns across Nadahup and Kakua-Nukak.....	7
Table 2	Hup clans.....	15
Table 3	Hup 'spell names'.....	20
Table 4	The Hup vowel inventory (oral contexts).....	42
Table 5	Hup vowel contrasts in oral contexts.....	43
Table 6	The Hup vowel inventory (nasal contexts).....	44
Table 7	Hup vowel contrasts in nasal contexts.....	45
Table 8	The Hup consonant inventory.....	46
Table 9	Hup vowels in the working and practical orthographies.....	101
Table 10	Hup consonants in the working and practical orthographies.....	101

Table 11	Hup core preforms.....	123
Table 12	‘Simple’ Boundary Suffixes in Hup	126
Table 13	Vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes in Hup.....	127
Table 14	Consonant-initial Boundary Suffixes in Hup.....	129
Table 15	‘Internally complex’ Boundary Suffixes in Hup.....	130
Table 16	Inner Suffixes in Hup.....	132
Table 17	Enclitics in Hup.....	136
Table 18	Hup post-stem particles.....	138
Table 19	Fluid formatives in Hup.....	140
Table 20	Hup formative pairs with final consonant erosion before vowel-initial suffixes.....	145
Table 21	Simple and derived pronouns.....	159
Table 22	Demonstratives and interrogative pronouns: derived forms.....	160
Table 23	Grammatical relations and case markers in Hup.....	166
Table 24	Hup possessive pronominal paradigm.....	225
Table 25	Summary of forms for ‘male’ and ‘female’	244
Table 26	Semantics of pronouns and possession with human referents...	246
Table 27	Hup subject pronouns.....	285
Table 28	Hup question words.....	288
Table 29	Hup Proximal demonstrative forms.....	293
Table 30	Hup Distal demonstrative forms.....	297
Table 31	Hup ‘Intangible’ demonstrative forms.....	299
Table 32	Hup Alterative demonstrative forms.....	304
Table 33	Cardinal numerals 1–5 in Hup.....	310
Table 34	Cardinal numerals 6–20 in Hup.....	313
Table 35	Adjective vs. bound noun in Hup.....	331
Table 36	Nominal discourse-marking formatives in Hup.....	337
Table 37	Locative postpositions in Hup.....	465
Table 38	Hup locative postpositions formed with <i>-?ah</i>	471
Table 39	Verbal aspect markers in Hup.....	522
Table 40	Tense-related morphemes in Hup.....	587
Table 41	Markers of modality and evidentiality in Hup.....	610
Table 42	Evidentials in Hup.....	642
Table 43	Evidentiality in Vaupés languages.....	663
Table 44	Sentence-level affect markers in Hup.....	665
Table 45	Distribution of Hup tag variants.....	702
Table 46	The set of parallel clause-final Boundary Suffixes in Hup.....	749
Table 47	Formatives relating to clause combining.....	804
Table 48	The principal adverbial clause markers in Hup.....	854

Abbreviations

Abbreviations of example source

cv	Conversation or other spontaneous discourse
el	Elicitation
ru	Reported utterance
sg	Song
sp	Speech
txt	Text (narrative, story, etc.)

Abbreviations in interlinearization

ACQ	Acquiescence (<i>bé</i>)
ADVR	Adversative (<i>káh</i>)
AGAIN	Repetitive aspect / topic-shift (<i>b'ay</i>)
ALT.INT	Alternative interrogative (= <i>ha?</i>)
APPL	Applicative (<i>-ǎh</i>)
APPR	Apprehensive mood
ASSOC.PL	Associative plural (<i>-ǎnd'əh</i>)
CAUSE	Reason adverbial (<i>-keyó?</i>)
CMP	Comparative (<i>diyí?</i>)
COMPL	Completive (<i>-cǐp, -cǐw-</i>)
COND	Conditional (<i>-tǎn</i>)
COOP	Cooperative (<i>-nǐŋ</i>)
CNTR	Contrastive (<i>n'úh</i>)
CNTRFCT	Counterfactual (<i>-tǎ?</i>)
CNTRFCT2	Counterfactual 2 (<i>tíh</i>)
DCSD	Deceased marker (= <i>cud</i>)
DECL	Declarative (<i>-Vh</i>)
DEM	Demonstrative
DEP	Dependent marker, Topic marker (<i>-Vp</i>)
DIM	Diminutive intensifier (<i>mǎh</i>)
DIR	Directional oblique (<i>-an</i>)
DISJ	Disjunction (<i>?ó</i>)
DIST	Distributive (<i>píd</i>)
DST.CNTR	Distant past contrast (<i>j'ám</i>)
DYNM	Dynamic (<i>-Vý</i>)

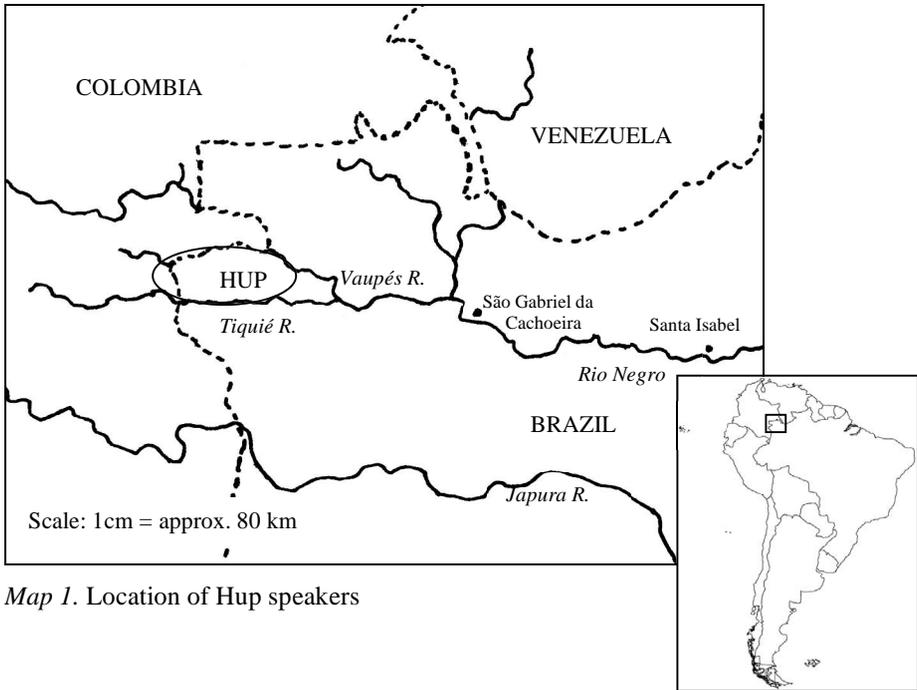
EMPH1	Emphasis 1 (<i>pog</i> , <i>-po-</i> , <i>wog</i> , <i>-wo-</i>)
EMPH2	Emphasis 2 (<i>tíh</i>)
EMPH.CO	Emphatic Coordinator (= <i>nih</i>)
EMPH.INT	Interrogative emphasis (<i>tí</i>)
EMPH.DEP	Dependent emphasis (<i>tí</i>)
EMPH.TAG	Emphatic tag (<i>-[V]ti?</i>)
EPIST	Epistemic modality (<i>?úh</i>)
EXCL	Exclusive (<i>-Vyik</i>)
FACT	Factitive (<i>hi-</i>)
FEM	Feminine (bound noun) (= <i>?áy</i>)
FLR	Filler form (<i>-Vw-</i>)
FLW	Following marker (<i>hŭy</i>)
FOC	Focus (<i>-áh</i>)
FRUST	Frustrative (<i>yæh</i>)
FUT	Future (<i>-teg</i> , <i>-te-</i>)
FUT.CNTR	Future contrast (<i>tán</i>)
HAB	Habitual (<i>bíg</i> , <i>-bi-</i>)
IDEO	Ideophone
IMP	Imperative
IMP2	Imperative suffix (<i>-kaēm</i>)
INCH	Inchoative, Inch. focus (<i>-ay</i>)
INFR	Inferential evidential (<i>cud</i>)
INFR2	Inferential 2 evidential (<i>-ni-</i>)
ITG	Intangible (dem.)
INT	Interrogative (<i>-V?</i>)
INTERJ	Interjection
INTRC	Interactional (<i>?úh-</i>)
INTS1	Intensifier 1 (<i>-[V]cáp</i>)
INTS2	Intensifier 2 (<i>mún</i> , <i>muhún</i>)
INTS3	Intensifier 3 (<i>-tubud-</i>)
JUS	Jussive (<i>?úh</i>)
LOC	Locative (<i>có?</i>)
MEAS	Measure (<i>-m'æ</i>)
MEAS2	Measure 2 (= <i>tæn</i>)
MSC	Masculine (bound noun), Emphasis (= <i>?ih</i>)
NEG	Negative (verbal) (<i>-nĭh</i>)
NEG:EX	Negative existence (<i>pã</i>)
NEG:ID	Negative identity (<i>?áp</i>)
NEG:R	Reinforcing negative particle (<i>næ</i>)
NMZ	Nominalizer (<i>-n'ih</i>)
NONVIS	Nonvisual evidential (<i>hōh</i> , <i>hō</i>)
OBJ	Object (<i>-än</i>)

OBL	Oblique (- <i>V̂t</i>)
PERF	Perfective (- <i>?e?</i> , - <i>?e-</i>)
PL	Plural/collective (= <i>d'əh</i>)
POSS	Possessive (<i>nĭh</i>)
PROTST	Protest (<i>bá?</i>)
PROX	Proximate
PRX.CNTR	Proximate contrast (<i>páh</i>)
PURP	Purpose (- <i>tég</i>)
Q	Interrogative particle (<i>hĭ</i>)
QTY	Quantity (= <i>?ap</i>)
RED	Reduplication
REL.INST	Related instance (<i>tá?</i>)
REP	Reportive evidential (<i>mah</i>)
RESP	Respect marker (= <i>wəd</i>)
RFLX	Reflexive (<i>hup-</i>)
RFLX.INTS	Reflexive intensifier (= <i>hup</i>)
RS	Repeated syllable (occurs in song texts only)
SEQ	Sequential (- <i>yó?</i>)
TAG1	Interactive tag 1 (<i>ya</i>)
TAG2	Interactive tag 2 (- <i>[V]hə?</i>)
TEL	Telic, Contrastive emphasis (= <i>yĭ?</i>)
UNDER	Locative adposition, Adverbial (- <i>mĭ?</i>)
VDIM	Verbal diminutive (- <i>kodé</i>)
VENT	Venitive (- <i>?ay-</i>)
YET	Persistive (<i>tă</i>)

Chapter 1

Hup and its speakers

The approximately 1500 speakers¹ of the Hup language (also known as Hupda or Jupde) live scattered throughout the heavily forested region on the Brazil-Colombia frontier. On the Brazilian side, the region is known as the *Cabeça de Cachorro* or ‘Dog’s Head’ (due to its shape on the map), and is part of the state of Amazonas. Within this region, most Hup speakers live in an area of approximately 5400 square kilometers, defined by the Tiquié River to the south, the Vaupés River to the east, and the Papuri River to the north, as shown in Map 1.



Map 1. Location of Hup speakers

¹ Because the Hud’oh live scattered throughout remote areas in both Brazil and Colombia, estimates of their population size are rough and vary widely; for example, Pozzobon (1983: 38) puts the number at 1200, while Martins and Martins (1999: 253) estimate it at 1900.

1.1. Linguistic profile of Hup

Hup grammar exhibits a combination of features that it shares with its Nadahup (Makú) sister languages, and a number of language-specific innovations, many of which are due to contact with eastern Tukanoan languages, principally Tukano.

In its phonology, Hup has nine contrastive vowels and twenty-one contrastive consonants, including a series of eight glottalized consonants. Nasalization in Hup is a morpheme-level feature, and the language has a word-accent (restricted tone) system made up of two contrastive tones (rising and high). There is a strong tendency toward isomorphism of the morpheme and the syllable.

Hup's nominal morphology is considerably more isolating than its verbal morphology, which tends toward polysynthesis and can be relatively complex. Hup morphology involves both compounding (of as many as five verb roots) and the association of multiple bound formatives in a series of slots. It is relatively agglutinative with very little fusion, and bound formatives are predominantly suffixing or otherwise post-stem.

Hup has nominative-accusative alignment and employs morphological case marking. In general, it favors dependent marking (realized mainly as nominal case marking and possession marked on the possessor). Hup grammar shows sensitivity to an animacy hierarchy and particularly to humanness; this is evident in its systems of differential object case marking and differential or 'split' plural/collective marking, which reflect the animacy of the referent. Such differential grammatical marking is a feature of the languages of the Vaupés region generally.

Other features of Hup grammar include a basically verb-final constituent order; this is best characterized as AOV, although the relative order of A and O is highly flexible. In addition, Hup has developed a complex evidentiality system (with five distinctions) and an incipient system of noun classification; these features also fit the regional profile, and their development in Hup has probably been motivated by contact with Tukano. A further intriguing aspect of Hup grammar is the significant and even exuberant polyfunctionality of many morphemes, which in most cases reflects traceable historical processes of grammaticalization.

A number of aspects of Hup grammar are typologically unusual, as well as intriguing from an areal perspective. These include the treatment of possessed body parts (animal body parts are inalienably possessed, while human body parts are alienable; see §5.4.5), word order inversion patterns in question formation (see §17.4), the polyfunctionality of many morphemes (e.g., §3.3), and several unusual paths of grammaticalization that create such unique historical links as between the noun 'stick, tree' and a verbal future suffix (§13.1), and between an evidential and a nominal marker indicating a deceased referent

(§14.9.3). These grammaticalization processes have for certain morphemes resulted in deaffixation, or a transition from more to less bound – a highly unusual occurrence cross-linguistically (§3.7). Finally, the heavy effects of areal diffusion on Hup grammar (but much less on its lexicon) are interesting from both a cross-linguistic and a regional point of view. Hup is a good illustration of the value of research on little-known and endangered languages, which can provide us with new ways of thinking about languages in general.

1.2. Hup within the Nadahup (Makú) language family

Hup belongs to the Nadahup or Makú family (see §1.2.1 below for a discussion of the family name). According to the family tree given in Figure 1, Hup's closest relative is Yuhup, followed by Dâw, then Nadëb. While their relationship is supported by many lexical and grammatical cognates and by the regular sound correspondences identified by V. Martins (2005), the subgroupings suggested here are based primarily on shared cognate percentages (as opposed to shared innovations) and should thus be understood to be tentative; further historical work is needed to establish them conclusively.

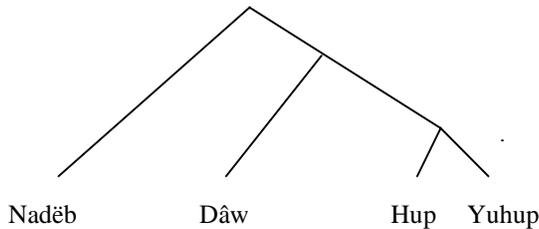


Figure 1. The Nadahup (Makú) family

There is no question that Hup and Yuhup are very closely related. They are almost mutually intelligible and share over 90% cognate basic vocabulary. Their most striking difference is their opposing tone patterns, which are the mirror image of each other: where Hup has high (or phonetically conditioned falling) tone, Yuhup has rising; and where Hup has rising tone, Yuhup has high/falling, suggesting that a tone reversal may have taken place at some point in these languages' history. Yuhup is spoken by around 550 people (Franky and Mahecha 1997), located in the area of the Brazilian and Colombian Vaupés between the Tiquié and Japura Rivers, south of Hup territory, as can be seen on Map 2 below. Many of these speakers are also fluent in Tukano (Ana María Ospina, p.c.). The principal study of the Yuhup language is Ospina's (2002) grammar; further studies are articles by Ospina (1999), Del Vigna (1991), Brandão Lopes (1995), and Brandão Lopes and Parker (1999).

Dâw (also known as Kamã) shares approximately 75% cognate vocabulary with Hup and Yuhup (see also Martins and Martins 1999: 254). It is spoken by only 94 people (S. Martins 2004: 6), who are located on the periphery of the Vaupés region (see Map 2). Most of the Dâw people also speak Nheengatú (also known as Língua Geral, a version of Tupinamba spread by early Jesuit missionaries, see §1.5) or Portuguese as a second language. The main studies of Dâw are S. Martins (1994, 2004) and V. Martins (1994).

The Nadëb language (also known as Guariba²) differs more widely from the rest of the Nadahup family. The percent of its vocabulary that it shares with Hup, Yuhup, and Dâw has been estimated at roughly 50% (cf. Martins and Martins 1999: 254); its grammatical differences include its lack of contrastive tone, its more extensive noun incorporation, its preference for prefixation, and its ergativity. These profound grammatical differences between Nadëb and its sister languages may be due largely to the apparent lack of any Tukanoan influence on Nadëb, which is spoken along the Uneiuxi River, well outside the Vaupés region (see Map 2), but may also be attributable to contact between Nadëb and Arawak or other languages in the past. The speakers of Nadëb have been estimated at about 400 (Pozzobon 1983: 38), and some of these speak Portuguese as a second language (cf. S. Martins 2004: 6). Studies of Nadëb are limited primarily to Weir (1984, 1986, 1990, 1994).



Map 2. Location of the Nadahup languages

² *Guariba* means ‘howler monkey’ in Portuguese.

Kuyawi, probably best characterized as a dialect of Nadëb, is reportedly spoken by a handful of old people living near the town of Santa Isabel on the Rio Negro (Martins and Martins 1999: 253, S. Martins 2004: 6). The rest of the Kuyawi community is said to speak only Nheengatú and Portuguese.

Due in large part to the relative inaccessibility of the Nadahup peoples to the outside world, the Nadahup language family is under-described and as a result poorly understood. Work relating to the Nadahup family as a whole has for the most part been limited to some scattered word lists and grammatical notes relating to a subset of the languages; these are Koch-Grünberg (1906a, 1906b), Rivet, Kok, and Tastevin (1925), and Nimuendajú (1950). An overview of the family is also given in Martins and Martins (1999); however, the description is severely constrained by faulty and missing data, due to the lack of reliable documentation on these languages (at the time documentation existed only for Dâw and Nadëb). More recently, a tentative reconstruction of the family (termed ‘Eastern Makú’) has been carried out by V. Martins (2005).

The family tree in Figure 1 above is a conservative classification. Previous proposals regarding the Nadahup (Makú) family tree also include the languages Kakua (Bara) and Nukak, which are spoken in Colombia and are clearly related to each other, and the language Puinavé, also spoken in Colombia, as illustrated in Figure 2; see, for example, Loukotka (1968), Rodrigues (1986), Campbell (1997), and Martins and Martins (1999: 255).³

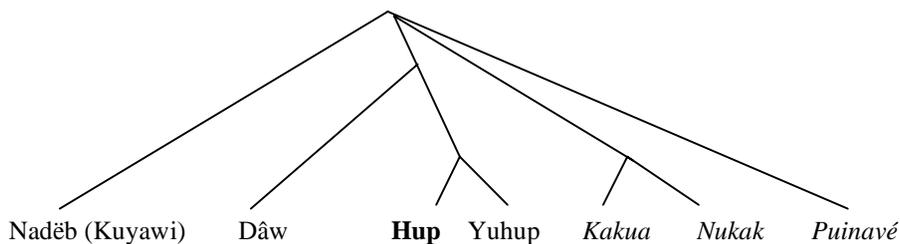


Figure 2. Earlier proposals for the Nadahup (Makú) family

The further addition of the Hodï language of Venezuela to the Nadahup family was proposed by Henley et al. (1996), but primarily on the basis of ethnographic similarities; the linguistic resemblances that are suggested are impressionistic, and examination of additional data (kindly provided by Marie-Claude Mattei-Müller) has to date yielded no evidence of clear cognates or regular sound correspondences. Moreover, most of the similarities that were identified

³ Martins and Martins include Kakua and Nukak, but not Puinavé, in their proposed family tree.

by Henley et al. are between Hodĩ and Kakua-Nukak, whose relationship with the other Nadahup languages is itself in question.

Very little is known about the Kakua (Bara) and Nukak languages, which are spoken in an area of eastern Colombia that is currently difficult to access due to guerrilla activity. The Kakua, thought to number about 300 (Buchillet 1992: 53), live in the area between the Papuri and Vaupés Rivers (see Map 2 above). Preliminary linguistic investigations of Kakua (by missionaries) are Cathcart (1972, 1979), Cathcart and Levinsohn (1977), and La Rotta (1977); see also the word lists in Koch-Grünberg (1906a, 1906b) and Huber and Reed (1992). The Nukak number about 200 (S. Martins 2004: 7), and only came into contact with Colombian society in 1988, before which they lived exclusively as hunter-gatherers. Some preliminary notes on their language have been published in Cabrera et al. (1994, 1999) and Huber and Reed (1992). However, further study of Nukak is currently in progress (cf. Mahecha 2007), and is expected to result in more substantial documentation.

The claim for a relationship between Kakua-Nukak and the rest of the Nadahup family apparently goes back to Koch-Grünberg (1906b), who published some short word lists and pointed out a number of supposed similarities between the words. However, Koch-Grünberg's proposal rests on a half-dozen look-alikes among words collected with no prior knowledge of the languages. Thus a number of the resemblances he suggests can be identified as due to little more than transcription errors or the mistaking of morphological formatives as part of the root. Because so little was known about these languages, it seems that scholars simply continued to cite Koch-Grünberg's claim, with little opportunity to verify it for themselves. Almost a hundred years later, Martins and Martins (1999) propose that 35% of Kakua-Nukak vocabulary is cognate with that of Hup-Yuhup, but they note that "the lexical data on Kakua-Nukak are scanty and these... figures are provisional" (1999: 254); no data or source of data are provided. More recent work by V. Martins (2005: 331–341) presents a list of 47 possible cognates between the Nadëb-Dâw-Hup-Yuhup languages and Kakua/Nukak, but these are impressionistically determined, and Martins concludes that "it is not possible to discover rules of regular correspondence" among the words, although they appear to "share a certain resemblance" (2005: 31, my translation). My own comparisons of the lexical data available for these languages also have not produced any evidence for a relationship; the pronominal forms listed in Table 1 give an idea of the dissimilarity between the Nadahup and Kakua-Nukak lexicons, as well as the similarity among the Nadahup forms (although note that Nadëb's plural pronouns are distinct).

Table 1. Lexical comparison of pronouns across Nadahup and Kakua-Nukak⁴

	Hup	Yuhup	Dâw	Nadëb	Kakua	Nukak
1sg	ʔǎh	ʔǎh	ʔǎh	ɦh		wem'
2sg	ʔám	ʔám	ʔám	õm	mem'	mem'
3sg (m/f)	táh	táh	tih	(ta-)	(nin)	kan' (nin)
1pl	ʔín	ʔín	ʔid	əəl/ǎah	wít	wiwi
2pl	nítʔ	nítʔ	nũg	bəəh		? nǎh
3pl	híd	híd	hid	(la-)		ket'

Claims for relationship among these languages have made much of four words that are virtually identical across Kakua-Nukak and Hup-Yuhup – ‘thorn’ (Hup ʔút, Yuhup ʔút, Nukak *ut*), ‘egg’ (Hup *típ*, Yuhup *típ*, Nukak *tip*), ‘mother’ (Hup/Yuhup ʔín, Kakua/Nukak *in*), and ‘father’ (Hup/Yuhup ʔíp, Kakua/Nukak *ip*). However, the fact that these words are *so* similar makes the case for genetic relationship seem less likely: if the languages have changed so much that the rest of the basic vocabulary cannot even be identified as cognate at all, then would not these words, too, have undergone at least a few sound changes? Language contact seems a much more likely explanation for these lexical resemblances, and contact between Hup and Kakua speakers – whose territories are separated only by the Papuri River – has indeed been documented by Silverwood-Cope (1972; see also Reid 1979: 23). Only future research will be able to definitively answer these questions.

The claim that Puinavé is related to the rest of the Nadahup family is even more dubious than that for Kakua-Nukak. It appears (rather like the Kakua-Nukak claim) to be due to a snowball effect of citations, all apparently tracing back to a 1920 article by Rivet and Tastevin. As did Koch-Grünberg, Rivet and Tastevin base their argument on sketchy and poorly transcribed lexical data, in which they suggest a number of look-alikes. No sound correspondences are proposed, and the identification of the supposed cognates appears to have been carried out in a highly impressionistic and liberal fashion. It may be telling that Paul Rivet actually published dozens of articles during his lifetime proposing relationships among languages all over South America, many of which have

⁴ Sources for data are the following: Hup: my fieldnotes; Yuhup: Ospina 2002 and my fieldnotes (my orthographic conventions differ somewhat from Ospina’s); Dâw: S. Martins 2004; Nadëb: Rivet, Kok, and Tastevin 1925, Schultz 1959, Weir 1984, 1986, 1990, 1994; Kakua and Nukak: Cabrera et al. 1994, Huber and Reed 1992, Marie-Claude Mattei-Müller p.c.

proved to be unfounded; Beuchat and Rivet (1910), Rivet (1911), and Rivet (1912) are only a few examples.

In evaluating the arguments of Rivet and Tastevin regarding Puinavé, it is clear that a number of the supposed resemblances are simply founded on mistakes. For example, the claim that the Hup or Yuhup pronouns *ám* 1sg and *ã* 1pl correspond to Puinavé *am* 1sg is incorrect; the Hup and Yuhup pronouns (which differ from each other only by tone) are actually *?ãh* 1sg and *?in* 1pl, while *?am* is 2sg. Likewise, the ‘striking similarity’ that Rivet and Tastevin claim for many other pairs of words is clearly very much exaggerated (especially when the revised transcriptions are taken into account). Also, like Koch-Grünberg, the authors have no particular concept of ‘basic vocabulary’ (as defined by Morris Swadesh and others) by which to organize the proposed correspondences, and they accept all kinds of semantic variation in their list of ‘related’ words. One example of such a ‘strikingly similar’ pair, for which the phonetic resemblance in fact appears to be fairly weak, is Puinavé *dexei* and Hup *tohó* ‘white’. Another, for which the relationship appears questionable on both phonetic and semantic grounds, is Puinavé *ueyu* ‘day’ and Hup *uerhó* ‘sun’ (actually *wædhó*). Additional problems with the analysis include the non-systematic mix of Nadahup languages used in the comparison (undoubtedly due to a lack of adequate data), and the failure to appeal to regular sound correspondences – which do not seem to appear in the data at all, especially since clear cognates cannot even be identified as a first step. All this corroborates my basic claim: There is at this point essentially no evidence for a relationship between Puinavé and the Nadahup languages, and more and better data is needed before the question can be settled conclusively.

There may be a simple explanation for why all of these languages were lumped together in the first place. The riverine, agriculturalist Tukanoan and Arawak peoples of the Upper Rio Negro region have long used the name ‘Makú’ to refer to all Indians who are nomadic forest-dwellers and rely heavily on hunting and gathering for subsistence. The name ‘Makú’, which probably derives from Arawak ‘do not talk; without speech’ (cf. Baniwa-Kurripako *ma-aku* [NEG-speak]; Koch-Grünberg 1906b: 877, Ramirez 2001a: 198, Martins and Martins 1999: 251, but see Ospina 2002: 16 for several alternative possible etymologies), is applied with no particular regard to the language and ethnicity of the recipients (i.e., it essentially means ‘primitive people’). Thus, in addition to the Nadahup peoples, Yanomami and numerous others are sometimes referred to as ‘Makú’ (see §1.2.1 below). The early European travelers had contact primarily with the riverine groups, and therefore learned of the Nadahup and other so-called ‘Makú’ peoples mainly through them. The similarities in the

culture and subsistence patterns of these forest-dwellers and the use of the single name ‘Makú’ to refer to them may have encouraged Europeans to consider their languages more alike than they really were.⁵

1.2.1. Suggested name changes

The Hup language has generally been referred to in the literature as Hupda, with alternate spellings Jupde, Hubde, etc. This name is derived from the ethnonym of the speakers: *húp* is an ethnonymic ‘shifter’ term (cf. Proschan 1997), which can be applied generally to mean ‘human’, and specifically to mean ‘person of Hup ethnicity’; *=d’əh* is the plural or collective marker (see §4.4). Thus *húpd’əh* means ‘people; Hup people’, just as *húp = ʔih* (person=MSC) means ‘man, Hup man’, and *hup = ʔǎy* (person=FEM) means ‘woman, Hup woman’. The Hupd’əh themselves call their language *húp ʔid* ‘Hup language’, or simply refer to it as *húp*. An additional alternative is *húp-d’əh nǐh ʔid* (person-PL POSS language) ‘the language of the Hup people’; it is probably this form that was rendered as *ubde-nehern* by Giacone (1955). Since the change of the language’s name from Hupda to Hup is a minor one, and since Hup is considered the correct name by the speakers themselves, I have chosen to use this name to refer to the language.

The name of the language family presents a somewhat more complex problem. Although it is generally known as Makú (or Maku), this name is unsatisfactory for several reasons. First, as already discussed in §1.2 above, there is considerable confusion surrounding the name ‘Makú’, which occurs in the literature in reference to several unrelated languages and language groups in Amazonia. In particular, these include Máku or Makú, spoken along the Auari River in Roraima, Brazil; Mako or Cofán-Makú, spoken in the area of Lake Cuyabeno in Colombia and Ecuador; and Makú, Sáliba-Maco, or Maco-Piaroa, a subgroup belonging to the Sáliba-Piaroa family in Venezuela (cf. Martins and Martins 1999: 251).⁶ Nimuendajú (1950: 172) refers to as many as six independent indigenous groups in Colombia, Venezuela, and Brazil that are known as ‘Makú’. In addition to this problem, the name ‘Makú’ (probably from

⁵ Note, however, that both Koch-Grünberg (1906b: 878) and Nimuendajú (1950: 172) recognize that the name ‘Makú’ is applied widely to groups that are linguistically quite distinct.

⁶ As an example of the various applications of this name, compare Campbell’s (1997: 183) listing of the Nadahup languages and Puinavé (labeled ‘Makú’ by other authors) as belonging to the ‘Puinavean’ family, and ‘Makú’ as an extinct or near-extinct isolate located in Brazil and Venezuela.

Arawak ‘without language’, as noted above) is widely recognized in the Vaupés region as an ethnic slur, frequently directed toward the Nadahup peoples by River Indians as an insult, and considered to be extremely offensive.

For both of these reasons, I prefer not to use the name ‘Makú’ to describe this language family, and have proposed the name ‘Nadahup’ instead. This name combines elements of the four established members of the language family (Nadëb, Dâw, Hup, and Yuhup).⁷

1.2.2. Previous studies of Hup

Research on the Hup language itself has been very limited. Some lexical and grammatical data (of very dubious quality) was published by Rivet, Kok and Tastevin in 1925, followed by an equally poor Portuguese-Hup dictionary by Giacone in 1955. Later, missionaries associated with SIL published some short studies: articles by Moore 1977, Moore and Franklin 1979, and Franklin and Moore 1979, and a Hup-Spanish-Portuguese lexicon by Erickson and Erickson 1993. Finally, Henri Ramirez has recently published a pedagogical Hup-Portuguese dictionary (Ramirez 2006).

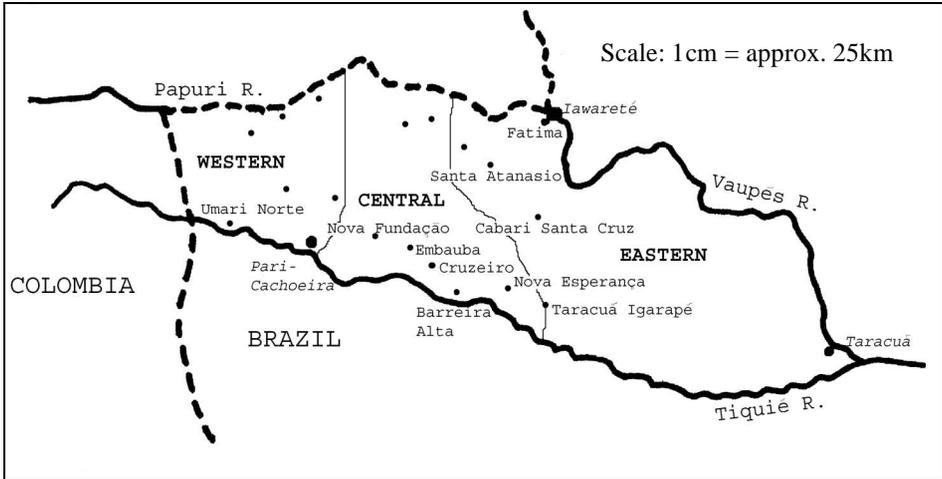
1.3. Dialectal variation in Hup

The Hup language is subdivided into three main dialect areas, as defined initially by Pozzobon (1992: 55; see also Cabalzar and Ricardo 1998: 52). These are the Western dialect, spoken between the upper Tiquié and Papuri Rivers, the Central dialect, spoken between the middle Tiquié and Papuri Rivers, and the Eastern dialect, spoken in the area south of the Papuri and immediately west of the Vaupés.

Map 3 shows the approximate locations of the dialect regions, most of the major Hup villages that occur within them, and the three large River Indian towns (Yawareté, Taracuá, and Pari-Cachoeira), in which major Catholic missions, health stations, and Brazilian army garrisons are located. Each of the major villages has both an ‘official’ Portuguese (or *Língua Geral* [Nheengatú])

⁷ An alternative name that has been suggested is Vaupés-Japura (or Uaupés-Japura, Ramirez 2001b), based on the names of two rivers (the Vaupés and the Japura) that delineate the general area in which these languages are spoken. However, the general consensus among those working with these languages is that this name is unwieldy and obscures the fact that many other unrelated languages are also spoken in this geographical region.

name, as given on the map, and a Hup name, which typically corresponds to the name of the stream on which the village is located. When the village name involves the name of a local plant or animal, the Língua Geral name and the Hup name are simply translations of each other (e.g., Cabari, Umari, Imbaúba; see Appendix III for definitions of these terms).



Map 3. Location of Hup dialects

The Hup names that correspond to the Portuguese names on Map 3 are the following:

Western region:

Umari Norte = Pæj J'ǰh Deh ('unripe umari stream')

Central region:

Nova Fundação = Pǰŋ Deh ('cucura stream')

Imbaúba = B'ab'ǎ? Deh ('imbaúba stream')

Cruzeiro = Payǎ? Deh ('falling? stream')

Barreira Alta = Yǰyǰw Deh Nǝ ('mouth of ant sp. stream')⁸

Nova Esperança = B'ǝy Deh ('traira stream')

⁸ Hup speakers rarely use the Hup name of this village, but typically refer to it as Barreira [bahéda].

Eastern region:

Taracuá Igarapé = Tát Deh ('ant sp. stream')

Cabari Santa Cruz = Pij Deh ('cabari stream')

Santa Atanasio / Serra dos Porcos = Tõh Hayám ('pig town')

Fatima = Yã'am Hüh ('jaguar rapid')

I worked extensively with speakers of the Central dialect, mostly in the village of Barreira Alta, and with speakers on the border of the Central and Eastern regions, in the village of Taracuá Igarapé / Tat Deh. The people of Tat Deh use features of both the Central and Eastern regions in their speech, and because many residents of Tat Deh were born in the Eastern dialect region (especially Cabari Santa Cruz village) and have married into the Tat Deh group, there is some individual variation in the degree to which speakers favor aspects of one dialect or the other. My knowledge of the Eastern region comes mainly from my work with speakers in Tat Deh, from conversations with Hupd'əh from those regions who arrived in Tat Deh and in Barreira Alta on visits, and from a visit to the village of Cabari Santa Cruz / Pij Deh in the Eastern dialect region. I also visited all of the villages along the middle Tiquié River that represent the Central region (Nova Esperança / B'oy Deh, Cruzeiro / Paya? Deh, Imbaúba / B'ab'a? Deh, and Nova Fundação / Piñ Deh). My knowledge of the Western dialect is limited to data collected during a week spent in the village of Umari Norte / Pæj J'ih Deh) on the upper Tiquié River. During this time I had the opportunity to meet an additional Hup speaker from the Colombian side, who was visiting relatives in Umari Norte; his dialect was similar to that of speakers on the Brazilian side.⁹

In discussing specific dialectal differences in this grammar, I refer to the names of villages in which I spent the most time, rather than extrapolate regional isoglosses for specific features when my knowledge is limited primarily to one or two villages in that region. However, these known points can for the most part be considered as representative of the larger regions (although Tat Deh is of course more fuzzy):

Umari Norte: Western dialect

Barriera: Central dialect

Tat Deh: Eastern and Central dialects

The differences between the Central and Eastern dialects are fairly small, while those separating the Western dialect from the others are much greater.

⁹ Interestingly, however, his pronunciation of dental-alveolar stops was slightly retroflex.

This is undoubtedly due to the fact that interaction between the Western group and the other groups is minimal, at least on the Tiquié side (it may be greater along the Papuri River, where one might expect to find a more gradual continuum between the dialects). Differences are phonological, lexical, and grammatical in nature. In general, the Central dialect appears to be the most conservative, in some cases preserving internally analyzable variants of forms that have been phonologically reduced in the Eastern and Western dialects. Dialectal differences will be identified and discussed in the relevant sections of this grammar.

Despite the significant differences between the Western dialect and the others, they are certainly mutually intelligible, because I myself was able to communicate with Western speakers in my Eastern/Central Hup (although it was more difficult). However, Hupd'əh from the Central and Eastern regions tended to describe the Western dialect as “a different language” and “hard to understand”, and occasionally say that its speakers “do not know how to speak”. A visitor from Umari Norte to the Central region in 2002 was reported to have spoken only Tukano with the other Hupd'əh, presumably because he was sensitive about his language's differences, and felt disconcerted by not being able to communicate normally (there is no doubt that this speaker routinely speaks Hup at home in his own village; I had interacted with him there a few months previously). This underscores the difficulty in assessing mutual intelligibility among the Vaupés languages on the basis of native speakers' own reports. Sorensen (1967), Grimes (1985), Aikhenvald (2002a), and others have reported on the strictness of Vaupés Indians' evaluation of competence in a language; people do not typically admit to ‘knowing’ or ‘speaking’ a language unless they have an almost native-speaker fluency, and will often switch to the lingua franca (Tukano) if uncomfortable.

1.4. The cultural context of the Hupd'əh

In this section, I give a brief overview of some aspects of Hup culture. Constraints of space necessarily limit this to no more than a sketch, but a basic understanding of Hup life is an important backdrop for understanding their language, and for engaging with the material presented in the examples and texts. A fuller account of Hup culture and living patterns is available in the Ph.D. dissertations of Reid (1979) and Pozzobon (1991) (the principal ethnographic contributions on the Hupd'əh). Other works include Athias (1995) and articles by Koch-Grünberg (1906a, 1906b), Terribilini and Terribilini (1961), Bamonte

(1972), Knobloch (1972), Reid (1978), Milton (1984), and Pozzobon (1994, 1997).¹⁰

Described frequently as “professional hunters”, the Hupd’əh traditionally have been semi-nomadic forest dwellers, who travel primarily on foot and live along small streams in the forest. They practice limited agriculture (cultivating mostly bitter manioc in small plots), and hunt and gather for much of their subsistence. Their lifestyle is therefore distinct from that of the River Indians, who live along the rivers, travel by canoe, and rely primarily on fishing and agriculture (also cultivating bitter manioc) for their subsistence. For the Hupd’əh, the last generation has seen a move toward more settled villages, less reliance on hunting, and a somewhat greater dependence on agriculture (see §1.6 below). Nevertheless, many Hupd’əh today still spend several months of the year away from their villages, visiting relatives, living in hunting and gathering camps in the forest, or attached to a River Indian village. Also, while some Hupd’əh plant fairly large *roças*, or manioc fields, and devote considerable time to them, others do not have their own *roças* at all, and obtain manioc by helping relatives in their *roças*, working for River Indians or other Hupd’əh, or stealing from others’ fields. Their relationship with the River Indians is described in detail in §1.5.1 below.

The Hupd’əh are divided socially into clans, listed in Table 2. These tend to be concentrated in particular geographic areas, but almost all clans are represented in more than one village, and every village is made up of members (both male and female) of multiple clans. Clan membership is determined patrilineally, and is traced back in each case to a particular ancestral figure.

In addition to clan membership, Hupd’əh on the Rio Tiquié are classified (both by River Indians and amongst themselves) as being affiliated with a particular Tukanoan group, either Tukano or Desano (via a patron-client relationship, see §1.5.1 below). This affiliation corresponds to clan divisions, as illustrated in Table 2.

River Indian clans are ranked hierarchically (cf. Chernela 1993, Hill 1985, S. Hugh-Jones 1979, etc.); a few Hupd’əh mention such a ranking for their own Hup clans, but almost no one seems to be aware of this or care much about it. Perhaps it was once more important and has been all but forgotten, or perhaps it was borrowed only half-heartedly from the River Indians and never taken very

¹⁰ The most important ethnographies of other ‘Makú’ peoples are the studies of the Kakua (Bara) by Silverwood-Cope (1972), and the Nukak (Cabrera et al. 1994, 1999 and Politis 1996); however, the membership of these languages in the Nadahup family is highly doubtful (see §1.2). There is very little ethnographic material on the Nadëb, Dâw, and Yuhup peoples.

seriously in the first place. The latter possibility seems somewhat more likely; in general, Hup society is very egalitarian, with fewer rules and taboos than those observed by the River Indians, and less pressure to observe those that do exist (cf. Reid 1979, Pozzobon 1991).

Table 2. Hup clans

Clan name	Translation	River Indian affiliation	Some villages where this clan is well represented
<i>cəkʷ'ət nɔg'əd tæhd'əh</i>	Toucan's Beak Children	Desano	Taracuá Igarapé (Tat Deh), Cabari Santa Cruz, Barreira Alta
<i>dog m'æh tæhd'əh</i>	Vapisuna Snake Children	Tukano	Santa Atanasio, Cabari Santa Cruz
<i>məhɔy kɔʔ tæhd'əh</i>	Deer Bone(?) Children	Desano	Santa Atanasio, Cabari Santa Cruz
<i>paç yāʔám tæhd'əh</i>	Stone/sky Jaguar Children	?	Santa Atanasio
<i>deh pūh tæhd'əh</i>	Water Foam Children	Desano	Fatima
<i>yāʔam d'ūb tæhd'əh</i>	Jaguar's Tail Children	Tukano	Barreira Alta
<i>wih tæhd'əh</i>	Hawk Children	Desano	Barreira Alta
<i>mih pow tæhd'əh</i>	Turtle Open-shell Children	?	Barreira Alta
<i>pij nɔwá tæhd'əh</i>	Sprouting Cabari Children	Tukano	Cruzeiro
<i>g'og g'æg tæhd'əh</i>	Titi-monkey Bone Children	Tukano	Nova Fundação, Imbaúba, Umari Norte
<i>tegd'uh ʔág tæhd'əh</i>	Tree Fruit Children	?	Umari Norte

The Hupd'əh marry among themselves, and observe a fairly strict pattern of clan exogamy. Kinship is organized according to a basically Dravidian-type system; cross-cousin marriage is considered ideal, whereas parallel-cousin marriage is clan-internal and prohibited. Relationships and even marriages between members of the same clan do occur (cf. Pozzobon 1991: 141), but are not

looked upon favorably; for example, when an unmarried girl in the village was discovered having an affair with a boy of her clan, I heard the other young girls gossiping about it with disapproval: “How disgusting [*páy* ‘bad, strange’],” they said, “he’s sleeping with his younger sister!” As in the Vaupés generally (cf. Goldman 1963: 122–123, Chernela 1993: 66, Jackson 1983: 126, etc.), sister-exchange (i.e., marriage between two pairs of opposite-sex siblings) is an ideal (and to some extent a norm), and forms the mythological basis for established patterns of marriage between specific pairs of clans (said to be descended from male ancestors who married each others’ sisters; cf. Pozzobon 1991: 122).

In their religious and spiritual life, the Hupd’əh in general are nominally Catholic, and most villages hold Sunday services (in Tukano) led by a resident River Indian (who is often also the schoolteacher). Many people are only marginally involved in these services or do not attend at all, while a few take it fairly seriously. There is considerable syncretism between the Hupd’əh understanding of Catholicism and their more traditional cosmology (which is described in detail in Reid 1979: 218–271); for example, the culture-hero *g’əg təh* ‘Bone-Son’ is equated with the Christian God, and the ever-present *baʔtib’-d’əh* or malignant spirits, which include the spirits of the dead, are sometimes equated with the Christian Devil or demons.

Aside from the *baʔtib’* spirits, the Hupd’əh consider their lands to be inhabited by several other malignant spirit-like beings, the most frequently mentioned of which is undoubtedly Curupira, a being known all over northern Amazonia (for which the Hupd’əh and other groups each have their own name). It is said that Curupira is covered with long, reddish hair, lives in the forest, and that his feet are attached to his body backwards, so that his tracks appear to be going when they are coming, and vice versa. He practices various kinds of deception in order to lure people into his clutches; having succeeded in doing so, he opens a small hole in their skulls and sucks out their brains.

Probably the most common ritual and social event among the Hupd’əh is the *dabacuri*, which involves the presentation of a gift (usually forest fruit, but also tapioca, smoked game, smoked fish, etc.) from one group (often a clan or village) to another (or occasionally, to one or two individuals, such as a village schoolteacher). The *dabacuri* almost always involves large quantities of *caxiri*, or manioc beer. Frequently the whole village participates, and sometimes another village is involved as well (in such cases, one village is usually presenting to the other); however, the people involved in the *dabacuri* (both givers and recipients) can also make up a subgroup within a large village. The gift is usually expected to be reciprocated (either at the same *dabacuri*, or at another *dabacuri* at some later time), except in cases where it is requested by the River Indians (who usually give some reason for why it is ‘owed’ them); *dabacuris* presented to teachers (who are mostly River Indians) are often of this type.

The drinking party is a frequent event in Hup life, occurring as often as once every one to two weeks in some villages, every one to two months in others. It often involves the entire village, and depending on the amount of caxiri (manioc beer) that is produced, by the end of the day nearly everyone is drunk, including even small children. On other occasions, one or two families prepare a small quantity of caxiri to offer to other Hupd'əh who have spent the day helping them clear a manioc field or in some other task.

Occasions for holding a drinking party include ritual events such as a *dabacuri*, Brazilian national holidays such as Christmas or Independence Day, and community work days (when most of the drinking occurs in the afternoon once the work is over). The drinking is usually accompanied by a few impromptu speeches and by dancing – often traditional group-dancing to the music of pan-flutes, and later on Brazilian-style couples-dancing to the music of a tape player (when enough batteries can be found). Once they have imbibed enough alcohol, women in particular typically begin to sing. They arrive face to face with another person, usually brandishing a *cuiã* (gourd dipper) full of beer, and improvise a text according to a semi-stylized pattern, set to a high-pitched melody (see Appendix I for examples of song texts). They typically sing about their personal status in the community, and their relationship with and thoughts about the person to whom they are singing. This person likewise frequently responds in song, and sometimes the two carry on an animated, sung conversation for some time – the drunker they are, the longer it tends to go on. These singing discourses are usually congenial, although I have witnessed some that are more quarrelsome. This singing tradition (with similar texts and melodies) is also common among the Tukanos and other Vaupés peoples (cf. Chernela 1988, 1993), as well as among Arawak peoples in the surrounding regions (Jonathan Hill, p.c.).

According to several elderly Hupd'əh people, the drinking party in days past used to be a much more ritualized event, occurred less frequently, and typically involved more singing and traditional dancing than it does today. Several of the older women I met complained about the more hedonistic atmosphere of today's parties, and rarely attended. In the old days, the old people said, men would often drink the hallucinogenic *caapi* (produced from the vine *banisteriopsis caapi*), after decorating themselves with macaw and parrot feathers, monkey fur, and other paraphernalia, and would perform the *kapiwaya* dance and song cycle.

This *kapiwaya* tradition is known throughout the region, although it is rarely performed among either River Indians or Hupd'əh today; nevertheless, many older Hup men still know the songs. The most fascinating feature of the *kapiwaya* songs is that they are not sung in the Hup language, or in fact in any language that the Hupd'əh are familiar with, but are formulaic sets of unintelligible words which are apparently passed down from person to person and learned

verbatim. The kapiwaya songs may be a reflection of the ‘shamanic language’ tradition that is relatively widespread in Amazonia, whereby shamans or other powerful figures use a distinct or unintelligible form of language for spells, etc. It is also possible that the songs have their origin in an Arawak language. As discussed below, a number of names for significant ritual and religious items are shared among all three of the Vaupés language families, and may originally be Arawak; moreover, some kapiwaya songs performed by River Indians appear to contain words of Arawak origin (Janet Chernela, p.c.; Jonathan Hill, p.c.).

Another important aspect of Hup ritual life is the *Yurupari* tradition, which has been described at length in the literature about the Vaupés region – especially by the scandalized priests, who at one time considered it devil-worship and did their best to eradicate it (see, for example, Bruzzi 1977: 313–17, Buchillet 1992: 18). The *Yurupari* was once a Vaupés-wide phenomenon; today, the majority of River Indian groups in the Brazilian Vaupés no longer practice it, but many Hupd’əh groups have kept the tradition alive. The *Yurupari* ritual is centered around sacred trumpets, played by initiated men, which women and children are forbidden to see – supposedly on pain of death.¹¹ According to male ethnographers such as Reichel-Dolmatoff (1978: 5), these instruments are fashioned from strips of bark, twisted into a spiral to form long funnel-shaped instruments, with mouthpieces of black hardwood. According to the Hupd’əh, each trumpet embodies the spirit of an ancestral figure, whose voice is heard when it is played. The trumpets are typically associated with the wild fruits or wild game intended for a dabacuri, and (in my experience) they are played initially in the forest as the men bring the offering into the village, and then in the village itself for several hours, while the women hide in the forest or in an enclosed hut. The women sit listening to the far-off music with an air of awe, excitement, and fear, and although they have never seen the trumpets (and are terrified of doing so accidentally), they recognize their many different ‘voices’ and can name each one by its ancestral name. The music of the *Yurupari* is pulsing, eerie, and indescribably beautiful.

Most large Hup villages have one shaman or *pajé* (a regional term derived from *Língua Geral*), who has the power to both heal and curse, and is said to take the form of a jaguar and travel large distances in his dreams. The *pajés* are always men (at least among the Brazilian Hupd’əh today), and are highly respected and sometimes feared. While the *pajé* holds a unique and specialized

¹¹ A similar tradition of sacred instruments that are forbidden to women is found elsewhere in Amazonia, such as among the Yagua of the Peruvian Amazon (Chaumeil 1993) and among the Mundurucu of the southern Amazonian region of Brazil (Murphy and Murphy 1985).

position, most older men are considered to have certain specialized powers of healing, 'blessing' (known in the local Portuguese as *benzamento*), and cursing. Such a man is known as a *kumu* in Tukano and *kəd = ?ih* in Hup (see §15.1.3.3 for a discussion of this term), and typically has an extended repertoire of spells at his disposal. These are used for such tasks as inducing childbirth, healing illness, protecting against possible curses or poisonings by River Indians and others, helping a newborn infant and mother through the first stages of life (such as the child's first bath and its receiving of a 'blessing' name), warding off snakebite, etc. Typically, the spell is spoken in private over some object such as tobacco (rolled into a cigar), a healing plant, piece of resin, etc., and the object is then given to the individual to smoke, apply, or burn him/herself, thereby transferring the words of the spell to his/her person. An example of a Hup spell text is provided in Appendix I.

Ritual restrictions exist among the Hupd'əh, many or most of which are shared by the River Indians; however (as noted above) the Hupd'əh are comparatively relaxed about these (see also Reid 1979). Examples of restrictions include the admonition that a menstruating woman should not bathe in a large river or stream (because snakes or river dolphins will be drawn to her and harm her), and should not attempt to extract tapioca from manioc, because the tapioca will not come out of the mash for her. When the Yurupari trumpets enter the village, the listening women of child-bearing age should stand up, so as to ease the passage of a child out of the body. The mother and father of a newborn infant obey couvade restrictions, such as staying in the house and eating only food blessed by a *kəd = ?ih* for a period of time. Victims of snakebite must obey certain eating restrictions and stay isolated from other people (except for someone who stays to care for them). People should not eat both meat and fish at the same time; if they do, cysts will emerge on their bodies.

Other aspects of Hup cultural life include verbal art, which is quite rich among the Hupd'əh and includes a variety of traditional stories and personal narratives, the kapiwaya and song styles mentioned above, and spells. Speeches are impromptu and are not particularly stylized. Musical instruments are mostly woodwind, and include the pan-flute, the long *japurutu* flutes, small cane and deer-leg-bone flutes, and the Yurupari trumpets; occasionally one sees a small drum. Gesture is fairly rich, and typically accompanies any narrative; both lip pointing and index finger pointing are also common. Hup laughter is often shouted out as a loud 'hey-hey-hey!' especially by women; I have also heard Tukano women do this, and it is probably a more widespread cultural practice.

Most Hupd'əh have several names, as is common among Vaupés Indians. The first of these is the Hup name, the *bi?id hat* 'blessing name' or 'spell name'. This name is determined by the person's clan membership; each clan has a relatively small repertoire of girls' and boys' names (amounting to less than a dozen of each) that are typically applied in a rough order according to the birth

order of the children. The Hup ‘spell names’ for the Toucan’s Beak, Jaguar’s Tail, and Hawk Clans are given in Table 3.¹²

Table 3. Hup ‘spell names’

Clan	Male spell name	Translation	Female spell name	Translation
	<i>mɔhɔy</i>	‘deer bone?’	<i>pěd</i>	‘cunuri fruit’
	<i>kǎ?</i>			
	<i>g’od</i>	? (compare <i>nɔg’od</i> ‘mouth’; <i>g’odan</i> ‘inside)	<i>cib</i>	‘mutum (bird)’
<i>cɔkw’ət</i>	<i>m’æh j’ih</i>	‘immature snake’?	<i>mæhæñ</i>	‘night monkey (sp.)’
<i>nɔg’od</i>				
<i>tæhd’əh</i>	<i>b’ɔ?</i>	‘cuia’	<i>mɔt</i>	‘rubber-tree fruit’
Toucan’s Beak Clan	<i>b’ðh</i>	‘salt’	<i>mũn</i>	‘caatinga’
	<i>hũd</i>	‘sauva ant’	<i>kəwóg</i>	‘eye’ (opposite tone)
	<i>w’ih</i>	‘sarapó fish’	<i>kawáy</i>	?
	<i>?æd</i>	‘insect sp.’; also type of spirit?	<i>wɔhwæw</i>	‘whippoorwill’
			<i>mɔh</i>	‘inambu (bird)’
	<i>wih kǔy’</i>	‘hawk-?’	<i>j’ɔ</i>	‘flower’
	<i>wih pæm</i>	‘sitting hawk’	<i>wih pát</i>	‘hawk’s feather’
<i>wih tæhd’əh</i>	<i>wih j’ib</i>	‘hawk’s claw’	<i>pát</i>	‘hair/fur/feather’
Hawk Clan	<i>b’ɔk</i>			
	<i>wih tǔk</i>	‘hawk’s belly’		
	<i>wih tohó</i>	‘white hawk’		

¹² Several of these names differ in intriguing ways from normal Hup vocabulary. A few have opposite tone values (and therefore correspond to the same words in Yuhup), and the meanings of several others are not known. In the case of the name *mɔhɔy kǎ?*, the word *kǎ?* has no meaning in Hup, but *kǎ?* means ‘bone’ in Yuhup. (This is according to my fieldnotes and V. Martins [2005: 278], but Ospina [2002: 216, 250, and passim] has *kǎ?* ‘bone’; it is possible that this difference is due to dialectal variation within Yuhup.) It seems likely that some of these names preserve archaic features of the language, or perhaps started out as Yuhup names and entered Hup through intermarriage (which occasionally occurs, although Hup people claim that this was much less common in the past).

Clan	Male spell name	Translation	Female spell name	Translation
	<i>yāʔam</i>	'jaguar's tail'	<i>yāʔám</i>	'entering jaguar'
	<i>d'úb</i>		<i>yééy</i>	
	<i>hōp</i>	'catches no fish'	<i>hōw dēh</i>	'urucu-water'
	<i>cognih</i>			
<i>yāʔám d'úb</i>	<i>j'ím</i>	'tapuru (parasitic worm) sp.'	<i>púh</i>	?
<i>tāhd'əh</i>	<i>pan wód</i>	'many sloths'	<i>hǐʔ</i>	'paint'
Jaguar's Tail Clan	<i>wǎç</i>	'dove'	<i>b'ot hǐʔ</i>	'roça-paint'
	<i>j'ós</i>	'flower'	<i>yakʔǎh</i>	'small macaw sp.'
	<i>ped j'ós</i>	'cunuri flower'	<i>báh</i>	'small fish sp.'
	<i>b'eb'ěp</i>	'butterfly'	<i>hǎb</i>	?

In addition to a Hup name, each person has a Portuguese name (composed of first name, middle name corresponding to mother's last name, and father's last name), which is usually given them in a formal baptism ceremony by a visiting priest. Some Hupd'əh add a version of their Hup clan name to this name. It is also common to have a nickname, which is often not a Hup word; for example, one little boy is called *cubí* ('curly' in Tukano) because of his curly hair, and his brother is nicknamed *ceb* (from 'zebu' – the type of cattle that was given to some villages by missionaries – because of his buck teeth). Where Portuguese names are used, they are frequently shortened to one or two syllables; for example, Selina becomes *cidí*, Roseneia (pronounced [hözenea] in Portuguese) becomes *hōc* [hoʔt], and Jovino *yubí*. Whether an individual is called more often by his/her Hup name, Portuguese name, or nickname varies from person to person, and may depend on the relative length of the name, or on which one has simply happened to stick. For example, the three daughters in my 'adopted' family in Barreira Alta are named Pěd/Mariestella, Cǐb/Aracy, and Mǎhǎén/Emilia, and are usually called Pěd, Ara, and Min. Curiously, dogs seem to always be given Portuguese names (e.g., *tuberão* 'shark', *motor-serra* 'chain-saw', and *cupim* 'termite'), which presumably reflects their identity as an entity of foreign origin.

1.5. Vaupés multilingualism and language contact

The Vaupés is well-known in the literature on South America as an extremely multilingual region: multiple languages are typically spoken in any given com-

munity, and most children grow up speaking more than one. This multilingualism is closely linked to the system of linguistic exogamy practiced by the River Indians (though not by the Hupd'əh), which requires people to marry outside their language group. Each River Indian language group is defined as a clan-like structure in which membership is determined patrilineally; speakers therefore identify first and foremost with their father's language as emblematic – and indeed constitutive – of their identity, regardless of how many other languages (such as their mother's language) they can speak or understand. This linguistic exogamy system has been described at length by Sorensen (1967, 1984), Jackson (1974, 1983, 1984), and others.

The Vaupés region, which includes areas of both Brazil and Colombia, is home to as many as four different indigenous language families. Languages belonging to the Eastern Tukanoan family¹³ are the most numerous, and include Tukano, Desano, Wanano, Waikhana (Pira-Tapuya), Tuyuca, Tatuyo, and Makuna, among others. There are also a few speakers of the Central Tukanoan language Cubeo on the Brazilian side, and many more in Colombia. The Eastern Tukanoan languages in the region are said to be, on the whole, “a little farther apart” than the Romance languages (Sorensen 1967: 675). In addition to the Tukanoan languages, the Arawak language Tariana is spoken within the Vaupés region proper, while other Arawak languages (Baniwa, Warekena, and Piapoco) are spoken to the north along the Içana River, and Baré was once spoken in the area of São Gabriel and downstream but is now probably extinct (cf. Aikhenvald 2002a: 19). Nheengatú or Língua Geral, a variant of Tupinamba (Tupi-Guarani family), was spread as a lingua franca throughout much of Brazil by the Jesuits in the 17th–19th centuries; it is still spoken in the Upper Rio Negro region and by older people along the Vaupés River, and has contributed many loanwords to the region's native languages (cf. Rodrigues 1986, Aikhenvald 2002a: 20). Finally, as discussed above, the Nadahup languages spoken within the Vaupés region are Hup and Yuhup, while Dâw is found on the periphery. Within the Brazilian Vaupés, only the Nadahup peoples do not participate in the linguistic exogamy system.¹⁴ Most River Indians (especially men and younger people) have some degree of fluency in Portuguese, but this is rare among the Hupd'əh.

¹³ The ethnographic documentation of the Eastern Tukanoan peoples in the region (particularly in Colombia) is fairly substantial, and includes major works on the Cubeo (Goldman 1963), the Wanano (Chernela 1993), the Barasana (C. Hugh-Jones 1979, S. Hugh-Jones 1979), and the Desano (Reichel-Dolmatoff 1971); see also Bruzzi (1977).

¹⁴ However, the Cubeo in Colombia are linguistically endogamous, as are the Arawak peoples outside the Vaupés.

Today, the custom of linguistic exogamy and multilingualism in the region is changing, due primarily to the influence of Catholic missionaries, who have encouraged monolingualism and pushed the use of Tukano as a lingua franca (which it already was to some extent) since the 1920's (after giving up Nheengatú). These changes have led to a gradual undermining of the strong regional identification between language and ethnic group, and marriage patterns are no longer as strictly determined by language (although ethnicity is still the main factor). Many of the River Indians have given up their 'father languages' and speak only Tukano and Portuguese, and most of the Tukanoan languages other than Tukano can now be considered endangered within the Brazilian Vaupés, as is Tariana (cf. Aikhenvald 2002a: 27, Stenzel 2005).

Despite these recent changes, there is still a strong regional ideology surrounding language. Language and identity are considered to be in a sense inseparable, such that – by definition – you are what you speak, and you speak what you are. Even for those who no longer speak their 'father's language', the sense remains that this *is* their language, and that they are somehow not quite complete without it. This ideology is undoubtedly closely linked historically to the system of linguistic exogamy.

The practical outcome of this regional linguistic ideology and of the practice of linguistic exogamy itself has been a remarkable combination of multilingualism and language contact on the one hand, and strong pressure to *avoid* language mixing on the other. This has led to an intriguing language contact situation, in which the borrowing of vocabulary (of which speakers are very aware, cf. Jackson 1983, etc.) is relatively rare, but at the same time, the languages converge on a structural level (of which speakers are much less aware) until they come to resemble each other grammatically. This kind of grammatical convergence is relatively easily identified when the languages involved belong to different language families. A detailed discussion of the striking influence that Tukano has had on the grammar of the Arawak language Tariana has been presented by Aikhenvald (1999b, 2002a, etc.); similar influence between Cubeo (East Tukanoan) and Baniwa (Arawak) is discussed by Gomez-Imbert (1996).

Understanding the position of Hup speakers in this linguistic melting pot is essential background to understanding their language. As the discussion at various points in this grammar will illustrate, the Hup language has undergone significant influence from Tukano, particularly on a structural level. This has occurred in spite of the important ways in which the Hupd'əh and other Nadahup peoples differ from the River Indians – their forest orientation, their emphasis on foraging over agriculture, and their linguistic and ethnic endogamy. As the following discussion will argue, the Hupd'əh are in fact deeply involved in the Vaupés regional network, despite being outside the linguistic exogamy system.

1.5.1. The Hupd'əh and the River Indians: socioeconomic interaction

Far from being isolated in their forests, the Hupd'əh are engaged in an active socioeconomic relationship with the River Indians, which was probably in place long before the Europeans arrived in the region. This interaction has been discussed in depth by Athias (1995), Fisser (1988), Pozzobon (1991), Ramos et al. (1980), Reid (1979), and others, and has been characterized by a range of labels, from 'slavery' (e.g., Koch-Grunberg 1906b) to 'symbiosis' (e.g., Silverwood-Cope 1972), 'patron/client' (Ramos et al. 1980), and 'intelligent parasitism' (Reid 1979).¹⁵

For untold generations, the Hupd'əh have provided the River Indians with labor (clearing gardens, building houses, collecting cipó vines, etc.), hunted meat,¹⁶ and *aturá* baskets and other products (such as *tipitis*, or manioc-squeezers). In exchange, they receive agricultural products (primarily raw manioc and manioc products such as tapioca, farinha, and beiju, as well as tobacco, hot peppers, coca, etc.) and other goods, especially Western trade goods such as clothing, machetes, axes, pots, beads, etc. From the point of view of ecological adaptation, the two groups have traditionally practiced complementary strategies, which exploit different environmental niches (cf. Silverwood-Cope 1972, Milton 1984). In a sense, the Hupd'əh can be said to occupy a somewhat extreme position in a region-wide system of economic specialization and trade, in which the Tuyucas traditionally make the canoes, the Baniwas make the manioc graters, and the Tukanos make the painted benches. Traditionally, however, many Hup families are 'linked' to River Indian families, such that much of the socioeconomic exchange is carried out directly with them.¹⁷ Also, as noted in Table 2 above, each Hup clan is associated with a particular River Indian group – presumably one with which they have historically been most directly involved.

¹⁵ The 'symbiotic' relationship between the River Indians and the Hupd'əh is strikingly similar to the relationship between other foragers and agriculturalists elsewhere in the world, such as the Mbuti Pygmies and the Bantu peoples in Africa. It is an intriguing possibility that aspects of this interaction may be characteristic of the interface between foragers and agriculturalists more generally (cf. Fisser 1988, Peterson 1978, Epps forthcoming c).

¹⁶ Meat is more rarely traded today because of a lack of surplus; see §1.6 below.

¹⁷ This association is usually not considered to be particularly binding – at least not on the part of the Hupd'əh. It appears to be somewhat less common today than it was in the past, but this is not entirely clear.

While this socioeconomic interaction is essentially ‘symbiotic’, it is marked by a profound social inequality (which is probably what led early visitors to characterize it as enslavement). The River Indians treat the Hupd’əh and other Nadahup peoples as inferior, and hold them in considerable contempt. Various descriptions of the region note the River Indians’ evaluation of the Hupd’əh as being little better than animals, citing their linguistic endogamy, their forest orientation, and their semi-nomadic status as evidence for this (cf. Koch-Grünberg 1906b, Jackson 1983, Buchillet 1992, etc.), and even exaggerating it to falsely include such behaviors as regularly sleeping on the ground. I myself have more often heard the River Indians describe the Hupd’əh as “like children” – irresponsible, disorganized, and capricious.

This attitude is constantly reflected in the River Indians’ interaction with the Hupd’əh (cf. Reid 1979). They often show up at Hup parties and request drink, and sometimes ‘invite’ the Hupd’əh to give dabacuris for them; they are known to take advantage of Hup girls and have even killed Hup people, usually when they feel that the person is trespassing on their fishing territory (one such event happened during my stay in the region). When visiting a Hup village, they often help themselves to the possessions of the inhabitants. They treat the Hup language as animal-like and not worth learning, so that interaction is carried out almost exclusively in Tukano. Occasionally Hup women marry River Indian men, but I was unable to discover even a single case of the reverse arrangement.

For their part, the Hupd’əh appear to accept their position in the regional hierarchy, while at the same time maintaining a sense of pride in their own identity. They usually act timid and deferential in the presence of the River Indians, but often make ribald jokes at their expense when back on their own turf (cf. Reid 1979: 180, 186; Pozzobon 2002: 61, etc.). When they feel themselves to be underpaid (or sometimes when they simply think they can get away with it) they pilfer produce from the roças of the River Indians – so much so that the latter often feel obliged to locate their manioc fields in relatively inaccessible places (such as across the river). A visit of River Indians to a Hup village usually results in a scurry to hide food, fish nets, and other possessions, probably not only to keep them from being appropriated, but also to encourage the River Indians to think of their Hup neighbors as poor and needy, in order to extract as much payment as possible for their services. Fear of the other group’s sorcery appears to be mutual between the Hupd’əh and the River Indians.

The intense interaction between the various groups in the Vaupés region has led to striking cultural similarities among them. This applies not only to the Tukanoan and Arawak groups, but also to the Hupd’əh (and to some extent to the Yuhup and Dâw), despite their distinct social position, alternative subsistence strategies, and general forest orientation. The groups of the region share myths and stories, spells, song styles, music, and dances; they have common religious and ritual beliefs and practices, such as the Yurupari and the dabacuri;

and they all use (or used in the recent past) coca and ritual hallucinogenic substances. Material culture is also very similar from one group to another, as are their agricultural practices – the difference between the ‘agriculturalists’ and the ‘foragers’ in the region is more one of relative degree of emphasis on agriculture, rather than of techniques and produce types.

Figure 3 summarizes the relationships among the Vaupés groups, as discussed in this and the following sections.

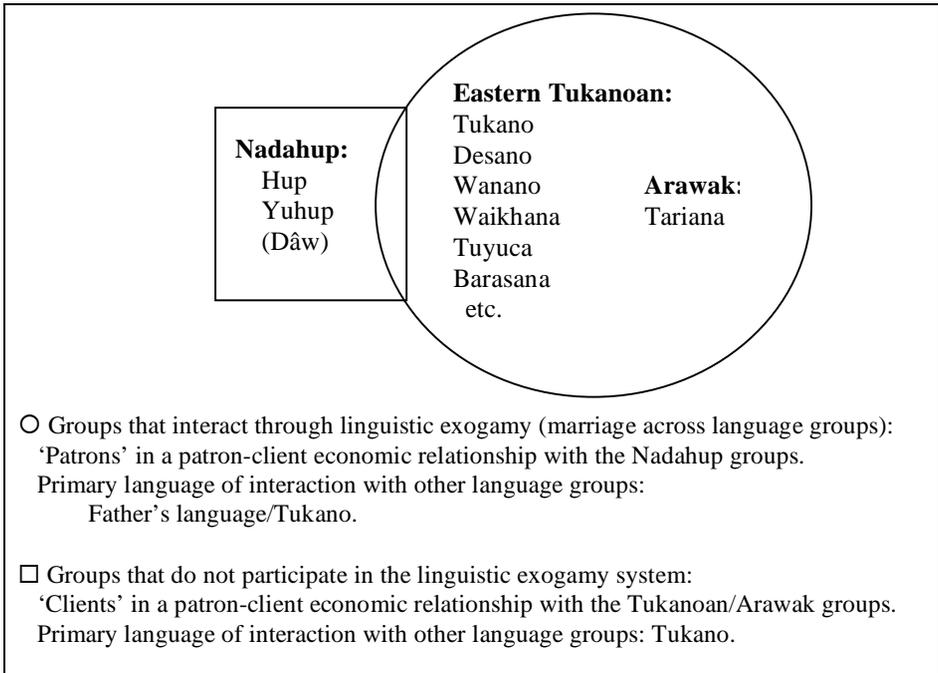


Figure 3. Interaction among language groups in the Vaupés region

1.5.2. The sociolinguistics of Hupd’əh–River Indian interaction

The social inequality that defines the relationship between the Hupd’əh and the River Indians also structures the sociolinguistics of their interaction. The Hupd’əh use Tukano almost exclusively in their interactions with River Indians, who in general show no interest whatsoever in learning any Hup. This use of Tukano applies even in cases where the River Indians are not Tukano themselves and prefer to speak their own language in their community (although they typically use Tukano as a lingua franca elsewhere, and many of the married women in the village are Tukano). This is the case in the Tuyuca community of São Pedro, close to the Hup village of Umari Norte; here the River Indians use

both Tukano and Tuyuca (which is closely related to Tukano) in addressing the Hupd'əh, who respond exclusively in Tukano.

As far as I could ascertain, 100% of adult Hupd'əh understand Tukano, and at least 90% speak it fluently. A few choose not to speak it regularly, despite rumors that they can command it as well as anyone; this may be due to feelings of insecurity about their fluency, or perhaps to a desire to avoid interaction with the River Indians as much as possible. Children learn Tukano as they grow up, mainly in the context of their parents' frequent interactions with River Indians, although young children – especially in villages like Tat Deh where there are fewer Tukanos around – sometimes understand relatively little. Ethnohistoric evidence and the reports of late 19th-century explorers suggest that this bilingualism and the socioeconomic relationship between the two groups may be quite old, and may considerably predate the arrival of the Europeans.

The attitude of the River Indians toward the Hup language corresponds to their attitude toward the Hup people. From their point of view, Hup is not a proper language; it is extremely “difficult”, essentially sub-human, and not worth speaking. In general, River Indian teachers in Hup villages make no effort whatsoever to learn Hup, even though the children do not always understand what they are being taught. However, some River Indians apparently understand more Hup than they let on, and occasionally even say a few words as a joke – usually greeted with shouts of laughter from other River Indians. In one case, three Tukano teenagers who have grown up with Hup children (in *Barriera*, where the Hup village is adjacent to the Tukano village) do speak fluent Hup, but their parents have forbidden them to speak it and chastise them for doing so. Because most non-Indian people associate with the River Indians rather than with the Hupd'əh, the fact that I speak Hup but not Tukano is typically received with disbelief and some consternation by the River Indians, and with great glee by the Hupd'əh themselves.

The fact that the Hupd'əh have maintained their language in the face of generations of bilingualism and linguistic inequality is probably largely a result of the same regional attitudes that created this situation in the first place. As discussed in §1.5.1 above, the Hupd'əh are deeply integrated into the Vaupés regional system, and share many aspects of their culture with the other language groups in the area. One of these aspects is the regional ideology linking language intrinsically to one's ethnic identity. Despite the fact that this ideology has undoubtedly been promoted and strengthened by the practice of linguistic exogamy, in which the Hupd'əh do not take part, they have nevertheless embraced the perception that language and identity are one and the same thing. A person can no more escape his or her language than he can escape his identity by birth – which cannot really be hidden, since it is almost impossible to go somewhere in the region without running into people one knows. Thus for the Hupd'əh, being Hup means speaking Hup. The Hupd'əh occasionally refer to

themselves as a group with the term *?id-d'əh* (speak-PL) ‘those who speak’, and most feel that no amount of speaking Tukano would make them *become* Tukano (although there are those who try; see below). As one woman characterized the ability of the Hupd’əh to speak Tukano, “we don’t really know their language; we’re just stealing/appropriating it; it’s not our language.”

The attitudes of the Hupd’əh toward their own language are thus a complex mixture of linguistic pride and linguistic insecurity, linked to positive and negative feelings of identity vis-à-vis the River Indians. They see their language as something to cherish and be proud of within the Hup community, reflecting the comfort and autonomy they feel within the bounds of their own villages and their forest world, and their connection to other Hupd’əh. On the other hand, they see it as something to be ashamed of when they step outside this domain. One Hup woman told me that she was afraid to fall asleep when in the company of River Indians, for fear of speaking Hup in her sleep and being mocked by those around her. I often found that people I conversed with freely in Hup in their villages or in the forest would immediately clam up when we entered a River Indian village, and would cease speaking to me at all, or would speak only in whispers. Similarly, conversations with Hupd’əh in their own language in the city of São Gabriel (where Portuguese is dominant) are usually conducted in a low, almost whispered voice, except in private; the Hupd’əh seem to find it disconcerting on such occasions that our only common language is Hup, since I do not speak Tukano and few of them speak Portuguese. The feelings of linguistic insecurity that arise in these contexts are further illustrated by a story told by a Hup girl of about 17 or 18 years old who had gone to São Gabriel with a Tukano family to look after their children. Upon returning to her village and recounting her experiences, she mentioned encountering a local missionary in the city: “I saw Marcio there, and he said to me, ‘Hello!’ [in Hup]. I was so ashamed!”

This curious mix of pride and insecurity is also reflected in the positive and negative uses of the ethnonym *húp*. In general, its use is positive; as noted in §1.2.1, it can be used in reference to human beings in general (i.e., in contrast with animals), but it is most commonly used to refer specifically to Hup people (i.e., in contrast to River Indians, non-Indians, etc.). In addition, it is used as an adjective meaning ‘new, good, beautiful’. At the same time, however, *húp* is used to translate the extremely negative term ‘Makú’ (see §1.2), used by River Indians as an ethnic slur toward Hup (and other Nadahup) people; for example, it turns up in the common (Hup) insult *húp tǎh* ‘son of a Makú’ (probably a calque from Tukano).

While most Hupd’əh feel that their identity and their language are inseparable, and that there is no escaping either even if they wanted to, a few individuals handle the tension differently. These Hupd’əh have dropped Hup altogether and speak only Tukano. The people that do this are very few; I know of a total of

four, and two of these were apparently raised by River Indians and so did not really speak Hup as children.

Of the other two, one had switched back to Hup and given up his Tukano-only approach before I arrived in the area. According to other Hupd'əh, he had used Tukano in an effort to 'change' his Hup identity, and had even secured his Hup wife while pretending to be Waikhana (Pira-Tapuyo). However, after living for some time in the Hup village of Tat Deh, his fellow villagers teased him so mercilessly that he gave up Tukano. Interestingly, it was apparently his own grammatical mistakes in Tukano that were the main subject of the teasing.

I had the opportunity to interact closely and over a long period of time with the remaining Tukano speaker, who is the wife of one of my consultants. Her case is quite interesting. Although she did spend many years with River Indians while a young girl (from perhaps eight or ten years old until a teenager), living with a family to look after their children, people all agreed that she was old enough when she left her village, and spoke Hup fluently enough, that she could not possibly have forgotten it. However, although today she lives in a Hup village and has a Hup family – all of whom speak exclusively Hup in their interactions with her and other Hupd'əh – she will not speak a word of Hup. Nevertheless, her level of understanding is clearly that of a native speaker, and in fact her Tukano is not flawless, according to a local Tukano woman. All of her conversations – with her Hup husband, children, parents, etc. – are carried out in two languages; she speaks Tukano to them, and they speak Hup to her. No one seems to think anything of this, since this sort of bilingual conversation is actually fairly normal in the linguistic context of the Vaupés.

In me, however, she was faced for the first time with a person – particularly an adult – who spoke Hup but understood virtually no Tukano. In spite of my inability to understand, she never compromised herself by saying a single word to me in Hup, even though I ate together with her family every morning, and often accompanied them to the manioc fields or in other tasks. It was no different even when I was alone or nearly alone with her and needed direction, such as when planting a manioc field, or was in danger of getting hurt by something, such as when the canoe was moving into a tree branch while I was not paying attention. She would always say something, but only in Tukano, and I would always have to appeal to someone else to translate.

Other Hupd'əh had a variety of answers to my inquiries about the woman's refusal to speak Hup. Some seemed intrigued by my question, as if they had never really thought about it before. Several responded by saying "she's lying!" (i.e., about her identity); one said "she's ashamed" (again about her Hup identity); and others did not have an answer. Still others told me that the River Indians had given her "medicine" to magically make her switch languages.

Code switching into Tukano does occur in the speech of ordinary adult Hupd'əh, but this is fairly constrained. While the Hupd'əh do not seem to be as

anxious about language mixing as the River Indians are reported to be (cf. Jackson 1983, Aikhenvald 2002a, etc.), most do in general avoid unrestrained borrowing and code switching, and sometimes respond negatively to others' use of a Tukano word. In the context of narrative, on the other hand, spirits and animals often speak in Tukano (cf. Aikhenvald 1996: 79, who notes that the Tarianas use Wanano or Tukano in this context). People who are speaking about River Indians in a narrative will occasionally mix in some Tukano words, especially when recounting a River Indian's part in a dialogue, and a few speakers will throw in bits of Tukano somewhat more indiscriminately. Certain adults speak Tukano now and then to children with the explicit intention of helping them learn the language, and once in a while young people would speak Tukano to me in order to tease me.

1.5.3. Bilingualism and language contact

The Hup language and its speakers must be understood within the full context of the Vaupés linguistic area, especially vis-à-vis the relationship of the Hupd'əh with Tukano speakers; Hup should not be considered as a self-contained system. In the Vaupés, both the Hupd'əh and the River Indians effectively belong to two different kinds of speech community at once: one defined by a language or dialect group, the other by a group of people in the immediate locale who interact on a regular basis. Arguably, the type of speech community that is more of an everyday reality in the Vaupés is this second one: a geographically and socially defined group of people who communicate with each other regularly, using multiple languages. Thus the discourse-defined 'speech community' is not isomorphic with the language group, but rather cross-cuts it. It is even possible that certain features of discourse or even of grammar or lexicon may have arisen among one particular group of Tukano and Hup speakers, before spreading to other groups of speakers of both these languages.

Contact with Tukano has had significant effects on the Hup language. The most profound of these have been structural, such that many aspects of Hup grammar have come to resemble those of Tukano. These contact phenomena can be compared with those undergone by Tariana, as discussed by Aikhenvald (1996, 2002a, etc.); in fact, the unilateral influence of Tukano has caused Hup and Tariana to resemble each other closely in a number of ways, even though they have had little or no mutual contact. Many of these contact phenomena are assessed in the 'Comparative notes' that appear throughout this grammar; further discussion can be found in Epps (2007a and 2008a). In contrast, the Tukanoan loanwords that have entered Hup's vocabulary are relatively few, due largely to the regional avoidance of language-mixing (see Epps forthcoming a).

Among the Nadahup languages, the influence of Tukano appears to be the strongest in the case of Hup, whose speakers are located squarely in the Vaupés region and apparently have the highest degree of interaction with River Indians. Yuhup also appears to have been profoundly influenced by Tukano, although perhaps not quite to the extent that Hup has been. Otherwise, the degree to which the Nadahup languages have undergone contact with the Eastern Tukanoan languages seems to correspond neatly to their geographical distribution (cf. Epps 2007a). Dâw, spoken on the periphery of the Vaupés, has far fewer contact features; and Tukano-like features seem to be essentially absent from Nadëb, which is spoken well outside the Vaupés (see Map 2 above), although it is possible that Nadëb underwent areal influence from its own now-extinct neighbors, such as Arawak Baré.

It is important to note that previous assessments of Tukano's influence on the Nadahup languages as a group are misleading because they were based mostly on Dâw. For example, Aikhenvald states that there is "no inhibition against lexical loans" in the Nadahup languages (1999b: 389), and claims that in these languages "areal diffusion is more superficial (compared with Tariana–Tucano interaction)... since the Makú are accorded an inferior social status and are not fully integrated into the multi-lingual socio-cultural community" (Aikhenvald 1999b: 394). As this discussion has argued, however, and as the 'Comparative notes' throughout this grammar illustrate, the deep involvement of Hup speakers in the Vaupés system has indeed resulted in profound contact effects on their language.

As noted above, Portuguese fluency is low among Hup speakers, but is much higher among the River Indians of the region. Portuguese loans do nonetheless appear with some frequency in Hup; almost all of these correspond to previously unfamiliar cultural and material items (e.g., 'battery', 'sugar', etc.), although Hup also has very productive mechanisms for creating native neologisms (§5.6.2). It is likely that many of Hup's Portuguese loans entered the language via Tukano (see Epps forthcoming a).

1.5.4. Viability and endangerment status of Hup

At present, Hup is not seriously endangered: Virtually all Hupd'əh learn it as a first language, and many children are essentially monolingual (although virtually all understand some Tukano). However, its future is uncertain. Its speakers are numerically few (although 1500 is more than many Amazonian languages have). Bilingualism in Tukano approaches 100% in adults, and most Hupd'əh experience some degree of linguistic insecurity regarding their own language, such that a few individuals have even given up Hup in favor of Tukano, as discussed in §1.5.2 above. The general shift toward Tukano among the other languages of the region, brought about by the growing contact with Brazilian soci-

ety and the resulting social changes, does not bode well for the future of Hup. Similarly, while Portuguese is not currently a threat to Hup's viability, Hup speakers are coming into more and more frequent contact with this language, and Portuguese has already replaced Tukano for others of the region's indigenous people who have migrated into the urban centers of São Gabriel and Manaus. Ironically, it may be partly the social discrimination experienced by the Hupd'əh and their resulting relative dissociation from the non-Indian world that have encouraged them to hold on to their language as long as they have.

1.6. Regional history and the current situation of the Hupd'əh

Little is known about the history of the Vaupés peoples before the arrival of the Europeans. Pottery found in sites on the middle Vaupés River dates from about 1200 B.C.E. onward (Neves 1998, cf. Cabalzar and Ricardo 1998: 55), but in general the archaeological record is poor. This is due both to the high biodegradability of material remains in the region and to the paucity of excavation that has been undertaken there. Ethnohistorical accounts of the Tariana indicate that they arrived late to the region, coming from the direction of the Rio Aiari to occupy lands already occupied by the Wanano and Tukano, possibly around 600 years ago (Aikhenvald 2002a: 24, Cabalzar and Ricardo 1998: 57, Neves 2001: 282). According to Neves (2001: 281–283), Tukanoan-speaking groups had already been living in the Vaupés region for hundreds of years by the beginning of the fifteenth century. Tukano and Desana people arrived on the Tiquié from the Papuri region only in the eighteenth century, after the area had been emptied of its earlier Tukanoan inhabitants by the European slave trade. Scholars such as Nimuendajú (1982) have suggested that the Nadahup (Makú) peoples are in fact the autochthonous inhabitants of the region; however, at this point this is little more than speculation (cf. Aikhenvald 2002a: 24). It is also interesting that the origin myth of the various Tukanoan peoples of the region involves their arrival in an anaconda-canoe from the east (cf. Goldman 1963, S. Hugh-Jones 1979, etc.), although the distribution of their languages suggests movement between the Vaupés and areas to the west. Reid (1979: 21) reports that the Hupd'əh say they came from the east, from the direction of the Amazon River, on foot (whereas the Kakua say they came from the northeast, from the Orinoco); in my own experience, contemporary Hup accounts of their origin closely mirror those told by the Tukanoans.

The Nadahup languages offer some intriguing clues to their history and past material culture, as discussed in detail in Epps (forthcoming c). One such clue is the word for 'River Indian', which appears to be cognate across Hup, Yuhup, and Dâw (example 1; cf. V. Martins 2005: 270). This suggests that the speakers

of Proto-Hup-Yuhup-Dâw were familiar with River Indians as a social category, and thus that the distinction between and interaction among the Nadahup peoples and River Indian groups is quite old, probably predating at least the split of Hup, Yuhup, and Dâw into separate languages.

- (1) Hup *wǎh* ‘River Indian’
 Dâw *wǎ:h*
 Yuhup *wǎh*

Lexical clues to early Nadahup material culture also include the existence of cognate words for ‘hammock’ and ‘canoe’ across the Nadahup family (example 2).¹⁸ This suggests that some of the early historical accounts of the Nadahup peoples’ ‘primitiveness’ are exaggerated, which is no great surprise since European travelers attained most of their information about the Nadahup peoples through their River Indian neighbors, who considered them inferior. In particular, Koch-Grünberg characterizes the Nadahup peoples as “crude nomadic hunters, who... know neither hammock nor canoe, but who have an excellent knowledge of the woods” (1906b: 877; my translation). However, not only did they apparently know hammock and canoe in Koch-Grünberg’s time, but probably had known them for many generations.

- (2) Hup Yuhup Dâw Nadëb
 hammock *yág* *yǎg* *yǎg* *yag*
 canoe *hǎh-tǎg* *hǎh* *hó:* *h’ǎh*

Lexical comparison also reveals that terms referring to cultivated plants and to manioc-processing technology appear to be considerably more innovative than are terms for useful native (forest) plants and other basic vocabulary (see Epps forthcoming c), suggesting that agriculture was not an important part of the lives of Proto-Nadahup peoples. This point is especially relevant because some present-day Amazonian foraging peoples are probably ‘remnants’ of formerly agricultural populations, who abandoned agriculture and returned (in the sense of long-term historical patterns) to a foraging subsistence strategy (cf. Balée 1999, Dixon and Aikhenvald 1999: 6, Rival forthcoming). That several of

¹⁸ That these lexical correspondences could be due to borrowing is unlikely, since no donor language can be identified outside the family, and there has apparently been relatively little contact among the Nadahup languages themselves since the split of the family.

the Nadahup agricultural terms appear to be borrowed or calqued from Tukanian languages suggests that the Nadahup acquired their knowledge of agriculture through interaction with the River Indians.

Finally, several words connected to ritual and religious practices common to the Vaupés groups are shared across languages of all three families (Nadahup, Tukanian, and Arawak): ‘coca’, ‘caapi’ (the hallucinogenic *Banisteriopsis caapi*), and the name of the culture-hero (‘Bone Son’ in Hup and Tukano; ‘the one on the bone’ in Tariana and Baniwa). These terms (and the concepts they represent) probably do not have a Nadahup origin, and likely come ultimately from Arawak.

The more recent phases of Vaupés history were shaped by the arrival of the Europeans. The Portuguese reached the area around São Gabriel da Cachoeira by the late 1700s, initiating an epoch characterized by a fierce slave trade and epidemics that decimated the indigenous populations. This was followed later by a rubber boom, which lasted from about 1870 to 1920; during this time non-Indian rubber seekers penetrated deep into the Vaupés region, coercing local Indians to work as rubber gatherers according to a debt-peonage system. For several centuries, Catholic missionaries have also been present in the region, building missions, conducting baptisms and other ceremonies, and making Indian children attend the mission schools (often by force), where – until recently – the children were frequently mistreated and forbidden to speak their native languages.

The River Indians bore the brunt of this onslaught, and for a long time the nomadic, forest-dwelling Hupd’əh and other Nadahup peoples were spared the worst. Some are reported to have been sold by River Indians to Whites as slaves or to work rubber (cf. Reid 1979: 25), but in general, the River Indians experienced most of the direct contact with the non-Indians themselves, while the Hupd’əh obtained manufactured trade goods through the River Indians as intermediaries. As a result, the River Indians have experienced the more drastic cultural changes; for example, with the exception of some groups on the Upper Tiquié and in Colombia, many have abandoned traditional practices – such as the Yurupari ceremony – which are still practiced by the Hupd’əh.

By the 1940s, however, the Salesian Catholic missionaries had begun to approach the Hupd’əh seriously, and intensified their efforts in the early 1970s. In their efforts to ‘civilize’ the Hupd’əh, the Salesians coerced numerous local groups into moving into large, settled villages, which in some cases were located at a considerable distance from the inhabitants’ original territories. In the course of these events, which are described in detail in Reid (1979), a River Indian was usually installed as a schoolteacher and catechist, and in many cases a non-Indian missionary couple or priest would live in the new Hup village as well.

The abrupt changes in living patterns brought about by the Salesian missionaries' 'civilizing' efforts have led to many serious problems for the Hupd'əh. Even after devastating epidemics took their toll in the initial years of the shift, the problems have continued. Many of these were observed by Reid in the 1970s, when the mission villages were still relatively new, and they are unfortunately still glaringly obvious today – in fact, they appear to have increased as populations expand in the mission villages and fewer Hup groups maintain a small size and relatively autonomous existence (cf. Epps 2005b).

One of the most striking problems is the level of nutrition, especially among children. Particularly in the larger villages, such as Tat Deh (Taracua Igarapé) and Nova Fundação, many children appear visibly malnourished, with swollen bellies and thin limbs. One of the main reasons for this is that game has gradually grown scarce as the forest surrounding the mission villages has been continuously hunted over several decades. In contrast, Reid (1979) describes the nutritional well-being and frequent surpluses of game among the more nomadic groups of Hupd'əh, who when game grew scarce could easily move on to areas where it was more plentiful. In addition to scarcity of game, the sites of the new villages were typically chosen by the missionaries on the basis of accessibility to the river and/or nearby missions, and are often not the best land for agriculture. Even in the best soils of the region, roças must be moved every two years or so, and now (after several decades have passed) many Hup women must walk for up to two hours to reach their gardens, since the cultivatable areas closer to the village have been exhausted.

The health problems of the Hupd'əh are not limited to nutrition (cf. Athias 2004, Athias and Shankland 2007, etc.). Intestinal parasites are a constant and serious problem, and greatly exacerbate the nutritional deficiencies, especially for children. This is undoubtedly due in part to the fact that their current sanitation practices are better suited to a nomadic lifestyle, where the accumulated debris of human living can be left behind every six months or so. Large population size also leads to greater risk of epidemic and infection, and the initial move from smaller to larger groups in the 1970s and 80s led to widespread outbreaks of disease among the Hupd'əh, in which large numbers of people died. Nutritional deficiencies also contribute to a lowered resistance to disease, which in turn results in a mortality rate that is alarmingly high: an informal survey of Hup families along the Tiquié River revealed that over thirty percent of children have died before reaching adulthood within approximately the past twenty-five years (Herma Klandermans, p.c.), and this rate does not seem to have slowed in the past five years. On the other hand, the new pattern of large villages that are relatively accessible to outsiders does facilitate the arrival of health care and medicines through the visits of government-sponsored teams of health agents. If the Hupd'əh were not living in these large communities in the first place, however, their need for some of this medical aid would probably be lessened.

Yet another problem fostered by the missionary settlement pattern is violence. The large number of people living in one place disrupts the traditional patterns of sharing meat and coca, and this in turn fosters and fuels resentments (cf. Reid 1979: 311). Whereas in earlier times such frictions could be defused by the fissioning of the group, this is a less viable option in these villages, and enormous and deadly fights sometimes break out, usually in the context of the drinking party. In 2003, for example, friction among subgroups in Santa Atanasio (Serra dos Porcos), the largest of the mission villages with some three hundred or more inhabitants, reportedly led to an extended period of fighting that lasted for weeks and resulted in a number of deaths, serious injuries, and destroyed houses (see Appendix I, text 4).

Finally, other problems the Hupd'əh face today are a loss of self-esteem when confronted by the patronizing and disrespectful attitudes of missionaries and others, and the compromising of their relative autonomy vis-à-vis the River Indians by the continuous presence of the latter in Hup villages as teachers and catechists. The resident River Indians typically adopt a leadership role in the village, and are often domineering.

The reasons why the Hupd'əh continue to stay in the mission villages, despite all these problems, are complex, and involve a combination of factors. When the villages were initiated in the 1970s, many Hupd'əh tried to leave, only to be coerced and intimidated into returning by River Indians and missionaries (Reid 1979: 314–315). Today, while coercion is less of a factor, many Hupd'əh value the medical assistance, the access to the village school for their children (although these schools are currently extremely ineffective [see Epps forthcoming d]), and the school food stipend sent by the government. They also welcome the opportunity to trade with passing non-Indians, who tend to give them a better rate of exchange than do the River Indians (cf. Reid 1979: 314). Most Hupd'əh, who attribute much illness and death to sorcery or poisoning (usually by River Indians), do not seem to be aware of a connection between large population size, sanitation practices, and illness and violence. Also, the importance to Hup culture of visiting among related kin groups and participating in group rituals and parties makes it difficult for a small family group to break away and live on its own, and even those family groups that did hold out for years after neighboring groups had been attracted to a larger village usually joined them eventually. Finally, probably all Hupd'əh are very aware of the scale of 'primitive' to 'civilized' that is typically applied among the region's inhabitants. Some version of this scale probably predates European contact, in the sense that a social hierarchy already existed among different River Indian clans and between River Indian and Nadahup peoples (cf. Chernela 1993, Jackson 1983, etc.), but it has since been changed, strengthened, and reified by non-Indians, particularly missionaries. Thus, like the River Indians themselves, some Hupd'əh (especially the young) have apparently come to equate aspects of

their traditional lifestyle – such as living ‘in the middle of the forest’ and hunting with blowpipes and darts rather than with bows and arrows or guns – with being ‘primitive’.

Currently, some efforts are being made to bring improved medical care to the Hupd’əh, and to consider ways to initiate a more effective village school system (cf. Athias 2002, 2004, etc.). However, it is not yet clear whether these efforts will meet with much success. At least the lands of the Hupd’əh appear to be safe for the time being, having been officially included in the Upper Rio Negro Indigenous Area in 1996, through which outsiders’ access to the region is restricted.

1.7. Methods and presentation of the study

The materials for this grammar were gathered during four trips to the Vaupés region between 2000 and 2004, adding up to a total of about fifteen months actually spent in the field. The longest of these trips involved a year spent in the region, divided into two- to three-month blocks in the Hup villages, with short supply trips (one to two weeks) to the town of São Gabriel da Cachoeira in between.

The area where Hup is spoken is relatively remote. After flying to Manaus and then by smaller plane to São Gabriel, one must travel by boat to the Tiquié River. By motorboat, this usually takes from two to three days; by the local riverboat (when it is functional) the trip can last up to five days if the water level is low. Upon reaching the path to the Hup village, I was typically dropped off on the riverbank to make my own way in through the forest while the boat continued on.

I divided most of my time in the field between the villages of Tat Deh (Taracua Igarapé) and Barreira Alta. Like most Hup villages, these have no electricity, telephone, or even a two-way radio. Barreira is near the river and travelers occasionally pass by in boats and even stop for the night, but the only visitors to Tat Deh – which is located an hour’s walk through the forest from the river – are Hupd’əh from other towns or the occasional River Indians, health agents, or missionaries. Aside from my occupation as linguist, I lived much like the Hupd’əh: in a thatched hut with stick walls, sleeping in a hammock, bathing in the nearby stream, and usually cooking over a wood fire. I made participant-observation an integral part of my work with the Hup language, so that an understanding and appreciation of their culture would inform my work on the language, and vice versa. I therefore tried to integrate myself as much as possible into the daily life of the community, becoming attached to an ‘adopted’ family in both villages (especially in Barreira), and eating and interacting together with them and others on a daily basis. I also made time to help with the work in the

manioc fields and to participate in expeditions to gather wild forest fruits, impromptu armadillo and rat hunts, treks on foot to other villages for drinking parties, fishing expeditions with *timbó* (fish-poison vine, which stuns the fish when put into a creek), and many other activities.

One of the initial challenges in the fieldwork was the fact that very few Hupd'əh speak more than a few words of Portuguese. When I first arrived, I of course spoke no Hup, knew very little about the culture, and spent a frustratingly large amount of my time following around after the one busy Hup person in the village who spoke Portuguese, hoping that she would have time to work with me, and worrying that I was making a pest of myself. Eventually, however, the lack of Portuguese became a blessing; completely immersed and surrounded by Hup twenty-four hours a day, I attained a reasonable level of fluency. This allowed me to obtain a considerable amount of data from the spontaneous speech around me, and eventually to have my choice of consultants for tasks that could be carried out without the help of an intermediary language.

My choice of principal consultants was constrained by 1) who in the village spoke enough Portuguese to communicate effectively, and 2) who was interested in working with me. In Tat Deh, I worked mostly with Teresa Monteiro Socot (Mũn), the only Hup schoolteacher in the region, and with Jovino Monteiro (Hũd); I also worked in Hup with Americo Monteiro (M'əh J'ih), the village leader, and with Sabino Monteiro (?æd). In Barreira, I worked principally with Pedro Dias (Ya?am D'úb), and occasionally in Hup with Jarbas Dias (J'ib Hĩ?). I also recorded a variety of texts – narratives, interviews, conversations, songs, spells, etc. – from many people in the region (in Tat Deh, Barreira, and several other villages), including several old people who are true encyclopedias of stories and traditional knowledge.

The organization and presentation of this grammar is informed as much as possible by historical and cultural observations, especially when attempting to give explanations for linguistic phenomena. It seeks to view the Hup language as part of a broader system of human discourse and interaction within the context of Hup society and culture. The discussion of Hup morphosyntax is informed by a functional-typological approach, in keeping with the perspectives presented in Shopen (1985, 2007), Givón (2001), etc. The analysis of the phonetics and phonology was aided by speech analysis programs such as Praat (Boersma and Weenik 2007). At various points throughout the grammar, the synchronic description is supplemented with 'Historical notes', which discuss the possible development and grammaticalization of the constructions under consideration, and with 'Comparative notes', which compare the Hup phenomena with those found in Tukano, Tariana, and other Vaupés languages, and propose hypotheses relating to areal diffusion.

A number of the topics discussed in this grammar have been developed and expanded in article-length papers. This is the case, in particular, for parts of

§3.7, §5.6, §6.5.1, §11.2, §13.1, and §14.9. References to these papers are made at the relevant points in the text.

Conventions in the transcription and glossing of examples are the following. Portuguese and Tukano borrowings (with the exception of loans that are very well integrated into the Hup language) are generally rendered according to Hup phonology (although speakers vary in their pronunciations of Portuguese words according to their command of this language) and are identified in the interlinear gloss line as (Pt) or (T), respectively. Local Portuguese or *Língua Geral* terms referring to aspects of the regional culture (e.g., ‘caxiri’, ‘tipiti’, ‘roça’) are used in the transcriptions and are defined in Appendix III.

In indicating morpheme juncture, a hyphen is used to indicate boundaries between (compounded) verb stems and affixes, while an equals sign marks juncture for clitics and bound nouns. Particles (defined in §3.4.2.2 as grammatically bound formatives that are phonologically relatively free) are written as unattached forms (i.e., separated from their grammatical host by a space), as are most constituents of noun phrases. In cases where an internally analyzable form has been relexicalized as essentially monomorphemic, no juncture is indicated in the transcription; typically, the semantic breakdown of the parts is indicated in the gloss line, while the general meaning of the full unit as a whole is given in the translation line.

The examples used in this grammar are drawn from a number of sources, which are indicated explicitly in the text. Many come from texts of traditional stories, personal narratives, spells, and descriptive and hortatory discourse, coded generally as (txt). A few examples come from public speeches (coded as [sp]) and from songs (coded as [sg]), and many others are from spontaneous speech and conversations, coded as (cv). All of these text genres were recorded, transcribed, and translated in the field; examples of most of them may be found in Appendix I and on the CD accompanying this volume. Finally, elicited examples are of two types. Many are statements that were volunteered more or less spontaneously by a consultant, often in the context of an elicitation setting (i.e., ‘we say X when...’); these are coded (ru) (for ‘Reported Utterance’). Others are explicit grammaticality judgments, direct translations, or responses to visual stimuli (such as pictures or video clips), and are glossed as (el) (for ‘Elicited’); such elicited data are relied on as little as possible, but sometimes could not be avoided. Almost all of the examples herein were double-checked with consultants when the grammar was in draft form.

Additional conventions used in this grammar are the following. I have chosen to capitalize the grammatical labels applied to individual Hup formatives (e.g., Perfective aspect, Future tense), following Comrie (1976) and Bybee (1985). This reflects the fact that these labels are all language-specific to some degree, even when they appeal to categories that are widely attested typologically. Also, in the comparative sections of the grammar involving the other

Nadahup languages (Yuhup, Dâw, and Nadëb), I have adapted the orthographies of Martins, Ospina, and Weir to correspond as much as possible to that used with Hup, in order to facilitate comparison on the part of the reader. In some cases, however, the changes necessarily reflect my own analysis of phenomena in Hup phonology, and do not always accurately represent the analyses of these authors. Finally, the orthographic conventions used in this grammar to write the Hup language are discussed in §2.4.

Chapter 2

Phonology

Hup phonology relies on contrasts on both the segmental and the prosodic levels. Not only does Hup have a relatively large inventory of segmental phonemes relative to the neighboring Tukanoan languages, but it also makes use of contrastive tone (realized within a word-accent system)¹⁹ and nasalization as morpheme- or syllable-level prosodic features. Hup demonstrates a strong preference for isomorphism between the morpheme and the syllable. The majority of syllables take the form CVC, but CV, CV:, and VC syllables also exist, although in somewhat more limited contexts.

The discussion presents the basic points of Hup phonology, including both segmental and prosodic features, and gives an overview of orthographic issues. Morphophonemic processes are also dealt with in this chapter; those involving Hup's vowel-initial suffixes are introduced early in order to provide the context for discussing consonantal alternations, while other phonological processes that occur across morpheme boundaries are treated in more detail later in the chapter. The discussion ends with a brief discussion of the phonological differences among the various Hup dialects.

2.1. Segmental phonology

Compared to most of its neighbors, Hup has a fairly large repertoire of vowels and consonants. However, on the segmental level these do not contrast in terms of nasalization; as discussed in detail in §2.3.1 below, nasalization is a feature of the entire morpheme or (minimally) the syllable, and is not a property of the individual segment. In the following discussion, the examples are given in both phonemic and phonetic transcriptions. The phonemic transcriptions for the most part mirror the orthography used in this grammar (see §2.4), with the exception

¹⁹ In Hup's word-accent system, tonal contrasts occur only on the syllable of the word that receives lexical stress (see §2.3.2). For this reason, stress is not marked independently of tone in the examples in this chapter; instead, word-accent is marked by a diacritic above the vowel: \acute{v} = stress and high (falling) tone; \check{v} = stress and rising tone.

(primarily) of the nasal morphemes;²⁰ for these forms the orthographic spelling is given (in italics) alongside the other transcriptions.

2.1.1. Vowels

The Hup vowel inventory is composed of nine contrasting segments:

Table 4. The Hup vowel inventory (oral contexts)

	Front	Central	Back
Close	i	ɨ	u
Mid	e	ə	o
Mid/Open	æ	a	ɔ

This is in fact a very large vowel inventory for an Amazonian language. Most of the neighboring (non-Nadahup) languages, including Tukano, have more typical six-vowel systems: i, ɨ, u, e, o, a. However, Hup's nine-vowel inventory applies only in non-nasal contexts; in nasal environments the number of contrastive segments is reduced to six (see below). There are no diphthongs or phonemically long vowels in Hup, although phonetic lengthening effects do apply word-finally to CV morphemes (see §2.2).

The contrasts distinguishing the Hup vowels in oral contexts are illustrated by the minimal or near-minimal word sets in Table 4.²¹ (Diacritics marking word-accent are not provided for verb roots; see §2.3.2.2 below for discussion.)

²⁰ Nasal morphemes are indicated phonemically by a tilde preceding the rest of the form /~.../.

²¹ The phonetic spellings given here use the symbol *y* to indicate a laryngealized vowel. As discussed in §2.1.2.6 below, vocalic laryngealization is a phonetic effect of a preceding glottalized consonant. The symbol for laryngealization (*y*) should not be confused with that for nasality (*ỹ*).

Table 5. Hup vowel contrasts in oral contexts

	i	ɨ	u	e	ə	o	æ	a	ɔ
/ci/ [çiʔ] 'urinate'	/ci/ [çiʔ] 'slug'	/cu/ [çuʔ] 'grab'	/cé/ [céʔ] 'buriti- palm- leaf basket'	/cə/ [cəʔ] 'shrimp'	/cɔ/ [cɔʔ] Locative particle	/cá/ [cáʔ] 'box'	/cæ/ [cæʔ] 'urine smell'	/cá/ [cáʔ] 'box'	/cɔ/ [cɔ: 'rainbow'
/tɨ/ [tɨʰ] 'stem'	/tɨ/ [tɨʰ] 'howler mon- key'	/tũ/ [tũʰ] 'want'	/tég/ [tégʰ] 'wood'	/tə/ [təʔ] 'give some- thing to be shared'	/tɔ/ [tɔʔ] 'daughter'	/tá/ [táʔ] 'rubber, sticky sap'	/tæ/ [tæʔ]	/tá/ [táʔ] 'rubber, sticky sap'	/tɔ/ [tɔ: 'thigh'
/bɨ/ [bɨʰ] 'anteater'	/bɨ/ [bɨʰ] 'anteater'	/b'uy/ [b'uy] 'throw'	/b'ej/ [b'ej'dʰ] 'jandiá (fish sp)'	/bɔ/ [bɔʔ] 'bee sp.'	/b'oy/ [b'oy] 'traira fish'	/b'ág/ [b'ágʰ] 'light'	/b'ay/ [b'ay] 'leave'	/b'ág/ [b'ágʰ] 'light'	/b'óg/ [b'ógʰ] 'bundle of vi- nes/strings'
/dɨ/ [dɨʰ] 'stump'	/dɨ/ [dɨʰ] 'stump'	/duɨd/ [duɨdʰ] 'tadpole'	/deɨ/ [deɨʰ] 'round'	/də/ [dəʔ] 'many'	/dɔ/ [dɔʔ] 'worm'	/d'ád/ [d'ádʰ] 'jenipapo (dye)'	/d'ád/ [d'ádʰ] 'jenipapo (dye)'	/d'ád/ [d'ádʰ] 'jenipapo (dye)'	
/cɨ/ [cɨʰ] 'grass'	/cɨ/ [cɨʰ] 'be tired'	/cuh/ [cuh] 'put on string (e.g., beads)'	/cuh/ [cuh] 'round'	/cə/ [cəʔ] 'sing in kapiwaya ceremony (women)'	/cɔ/ [cɔʔ] 'walk with a cane'	/cáh/ [cáh] 'earth'	/cæ/ [cæʔ] 'have food stick in throat'	/cáh/ [cáh] 'earth'	/cɔ/ [cɔ: 'peck (bird); dig by chipping with instrument'

Because nasality in Hup is a morpheme-level (or minimally syllable-level) prosodic feature, vowels are not considered to be marked as nasal or oral on the segmental level, as noted above. In nasal environments, however, Hup's vowel inventory is reduced to six contrastive segments:

Table 6. The Hup vowel inventory (nasal contexts)

	Front	Central	Back
Close	ĩ	ɨ̃	ũ
Mid/Open	ǣ̃	ã̃	õ̃

This vowel set suggests that nasal environments lead to a neutralization of the mid vowels' contrast with the low and/or high vowels. Since morphemes in Hup are lexically marked as nasal or oral, no cases of alternation between nasal and oral vowels have been encountered that would establish exactly how this neutralization takes place. However, it is worth noting that [ɨ̃] is sometimes pronounced [õ̃], most noticeably when the nasal /ɨ̃/ occurs in the environment of [h]; e.g., /~bĩh/ [mǣ̃h] *mĩh* 'ucuqui', /~ʔĩh/ [ʔõ̃h] *ʔĩh* 'fire ant'.²²

The contrasts among the Hup vowels in nasal contexts are illustrated by the minimal or near-minimal word sets in Table 7.

²² As mentioned above, nasal morphemes are represented orthographically in italics, since the orthographic representation of nasals differs from the phonetic and phonological representations (a decision made in the interest of user-friendliness; see §2.4).

Table 7. Hup vowel contrasts in nasal contexts

ĩ	ĩ̃	ũ	ǣ	ǣ̃	õ
/~bĩh/	/~bĩh/ [mǣh̃]	/~bũh/ [mũh̃]	/~bǣh/	/~bǣh/	/~bõh/
[mǣh̃] <i>mĩh</i>	<i>mĩh</i> ‘ucuqui’	<i>mũh</i> ‘arrow’	[mǣh̃] <i>mǣh</i>	[mǣh̃] <i>mǣh</i>	[mõh̃]
‘turtle’			‘younger sister’	‘nearby’	<i>mõh</i> ‘inambu’
/~kidĩb/	/~dĩb/ [nĩm̃]		/~dǣb/	/~dǣb/	
[kĩm̃]	<i>nĩm</i>		[nǣm̃] <i>nǣm</i>	[nǣm̃] <i>nǣm</i>	
<i>kinĩm</i>	‘shadow, spirit of dead’		‘louse’	‘curare’	
‘wrist, upper part of hand’					
	/~di/ [nĩ:]		/~dǣ/ [nǣ:]	/~daʔ/	/~doʔ/
	<i>nĩ-</i> ‘keep’		<i>nǣ-</i> ‘bring together’	[naʔ] <i>naʔ-</i>	[nõʔ]
				‘die’	<i>noʔ-</i> ‘give’
	/~tihĩy/	/~tuhúʔ/	/~tǣh/ [tǣh̃]		/~tõh/
	[tĩhĩỹ] <i>tĩhĩỹ</i>	[tũhũʔ] <i>tũhũʔ</i>	<i>tǣh</i> ‘off- spring, son’		[tõh̃]
	‘venomous snake’	‘phlegm; a cold’			<i>tõh</i> ‘pig’
/~ʔiʔ/	/~ʔih/ [ʔõh̃]	/~ʔúh/ [ʔũh̃]		/~ʔáh/	/~ʔõh/
[ʔíʔ]	<i>ʔih</i> ‘fire ant’	<i>ʔúh</i> ‘oppo- site-sex sib- ling’		[ʔáh̃]	[ʔõh̃]
<i>ʔíʔ</i> ‘Mom’ (vocative)				<i>ʔáh</i> ‘I’ (1sg pro- noun)	<i>ʔõh-</i> ‘sleep’

2.1.2. Consonants

Hup has nineteen (or marginally twenty) contrasting consonant segments.²³ The consonant inventory is given in Table 8:

²³ Note that this is much larger than the eleven-consonant inventory of Tukano (cf. Ramirez 1997a: 25).

Table 8. The Hup consonant inventory

	Bilabial	Dental-alveolar	Palatal	Velar	Glottal
Voiceless stops	p	t	c	k	ʔ
Voiced stops	b	d	j	g	
Glottalized stops	b', (p')	d'	j'	g'	
Fricatives (voiceless)			ç		h
Glides	w		y		
Glottalized glides	w'		y'		

Three of Hup's consonants can only appear in morpheme-final position: /j/, /g/, and /ç/. (Note that /p'/ has been encountered only in morpheme-initial position, but occurs in only one word and is not found at all in some Hup dialects.) All other consonants appear in morpheme-initial, medial, and final position (initial and medial positions are subject to the same constraints on which consonants may be present).

While only encountered in morpheme-final position, the consonants /j/, /g/, and /ç/ are not in fact limited to syllable codas. As discussed in detail below, when a CVC root is followed by a vowel-initial (-VC) suffix, the final consonant of the root geminates to form both the coda of the first syllable and the onset of the next. It is extremely rare cross-linguistically for a language to have more consonant contrasts in syllable coda position than in onset position (reported only for Toda, Dravidian family; Ian Maddieson, p.c., cf. Shalev et al. 1993); Hup, however, can only be said to have more coda than onset contrasts on an underlying (morphophonemic) level, not on a surface level.

Hup's consonant inventory is also typologically interesting in that it has no phonemic liquids (/l/ or /r/), and in that – according to the analysis of nasality as syllable-level rather than segment-level (see below) – there are no segmental phonemic nasals at all, which is highly unusual cross-linguistically (cf. claims by Jakobson [1968/1941] and Ferguson [1963] that nasal consonants are universal).

Other relevant observations include the fact that the glottalized consonants in Hup, while represented orthographically as C', are phonetically distinct from the ejective consonants (also written C') found in many other languages. While certain glottalized consonants in Hup can have a mildly ejective realization, glottalization is usually realized quite differently (as laryngealization on a following vowel or as non-release of the consonant when morpheme-final; see §2.1.2.6). Furthermore, Hup's palatal consonants are also somewhat unusual phonetically in that they are frequently pronounced with a strong glide (C^y or ^yC) (as if they were composed phonetically of two segments), but they clearly pattern phonologically as single segments rather than clusters. Note that analyz-

ing these as a *palatalized* series, rather than a palatal series, is probably inappropriate; if palatalization were a suprasegmental feature associating with consonants, we would expect it to associate with all the stops rather than only with /t/, /d/, and /d'/.

Hup's non-glottalized stops are contrastive on the basis of voicing (voiced vs. voiceless), but not on the basis of nasalization, which – as noted above – is not a property of the individual segment in Hup at all. In oral environments, voiced stops are pre-nasalized (^NC) in morpheme-initial position, post-nasalized (C^N) in morpheme-final position, and may be medially nasalized (C^NC) at morpheme boundaries; in nasal contexts, they are realized as fully nasal (sonorant) allophones. These phenomena are discussed at more length in the subsections below.

2.1.2.1. Consonantal allophones and alternations: morphological context

The allophonic variation of a given consonant segment is determined by several factors. These are the nasal or oral quality of the morpheme, the identity of the adjacent segments, and the position of the consonant (particularly as morpheme-initial, medial, or final).

An intriguing feature of Hup phonology is the fact that variation in the surface realization of a given consonant is determined largely by its position in the morpheme, rather than by its position in the syllable (as onset or coda). While there is some isomorphism in Hup among syllable, morpheme, and phonological word, they frequently do not overlap – especially in the case of verbs. In these cases, it is the morpheme boundary that is the most relevant to determining the surface realization of the consonant.

One of the most important contexts for defining consonantal alternations and allophony is the morpheme boundary between a consonant-final stem and a vowel-initial suffix. The vowel-initial suffixes, discussed in detail in §3.4.1, include Oblique case -*V́t*, Object case -*ǎn*, Dynamic -*V́y*, etc. Driven by Hup's preference that all syllables have onsets (where possible), these suffixes condition the gemination of the final consonant of the stem, where one exists, in order to provide an onset for the suffix (examples 1–2). When the suffix has an underlyingly specified vowel and the nasality of the suffix differs from that of the stem, the nasal or oral value of the copied consonant corresponds to the value of the suffix, as in (2).

- (1) a) *ʔəg-əy*
 [ʔəgⁿ.ⁿgəy] (fast speech: [ʔəgəy])
 drink-DYNM
 ‘drinking’
- b) *wæd-æy*
 [βædⁿ.ⁿdəy] (fast speech: [βædəy])
 eat-DYNM
 ‘eating’
- (2) a) *hám-ay*
 [hám.bay]
 go-INCH
 ‘I’m going.’
- b) *baʔtīb’-ǎn*
 [baʔtíp.mǎn]
 spirit-OBJ
 ‘spirit’ (object)

In its surface realization, this gemination phenomenon varies to some degree across consonants and speech events. For example, /d/ and sometimes /t/ may be pronounced as a short flap [ɾ] in intervocalic contexts, and in faster speech consonant duration tends to be shorter.

In general, consonant gemination is most audible when the morpheme-final consonant is a phonetically complex segment – particularly a post-nasalized stop or a glottalized consonant. These segments are made up syntagmatically of multiple phonetic components, whose relative order is determined by their position in the syllable as onset or coda. The consonant’s gemination thus creates an even more complex series of contours, as if a part of the complex segment were copying around the remaining segmental material. For example, a voiced stop that is post-nasalized in coda position will be pre-nasalized in onset position, as illustrated in (1) above. A similar phenomenon occurs with palatal consonants; for example, /pǎç/ [pǎ^yh] ‘stone’ yields /pǎç-át/ [pǎ^yh.h^yát^ʔ] (stone + Oblique case) ‘with a stone’. The post-nasalized voiced palatal stop /j/ produces an even

more complex unit: /pǎj/ [pǎ^{xy}dⁿ] ‘umari’ yields /pǎj-ǎt/ [pǎ^{xy}dⁿ.ⁿd^yǎt^ʔ] (umari + Oblique case) ‘with umari’.²⁴

As the discussion below of the individual consonants will illustrate, the gemination phenomenon provides an essential context for revealing consonantal contrasts that may be neutralized in other environments. This is most clearly the case for the glottalized consonants, which undergo alternation according to the morphological context in which they appear.

While these stem + suffix combinations that condition gemination clearly involve two morphemes, other forms in Hup can be understood as having a synchronic identity that falls somewhere *in between* a monomorphemic and a bimorphemic form. These ‘marginally bimorphemic’ forms are those words that were formed via reduplication and lexicalization. In many cases (though not all) these are only historically bimorphemic, in the sense that they can no longer be taken apart etymologically (for example, no meaningful stem can be identified for most reduplicated nouns in Hup, which are frozen forms; cf. §4.5 and §12.9.3). This morphologically in-between status tends to be reflected in their surface realization. As discussed in more detail in §2.5 below, where the medial consonant appearing in such forms is other than a voiced stop, it typically appears as geminate or long (although this is to some degree optional); when a voiced stop, it tends to surface as a homorganic consonant cluster (voiceless + voiced stop) – resulting in a CVC.CVC template.

Finally, monomorphemic forms of more than one syllable (e.g., /~bǒhǒy/ *mǒhǒy* ‘deer’) are optionally pronounced as CV.CVC, or may surface with a long or geminate medial consonant which provides a coda to the first syllable and onset to the second (CVC.CVC) (particularly in slow, careful speech). However, even when pronounced long, this medial consonant is almost never realized as the complex contour (such as C^N.^NC) typical of gemination (for some segments) in the context of vowel-initial suffixes, or as the homorganic (voiceless + voiced) consonant cluster found in reduplicated or relexicalized morphemes.

A long or geminate medial consonant in a monomorphemic form is illustrated in Figure 4, at the syllable boundary in the word *kǎpǒy* ‘taioba’ (a type of vegetable). Note that the first syllable ends in the voiceless stop /p/, which is then reinitiated by a burst at the beginning of the second syllable; the total length of the consonant is at least as long as that of the stressed vowel in the second syllable.

²⁴ There may, however, be some neutralization of voicing in the part of the consonant that forms the onset of the second syllable.

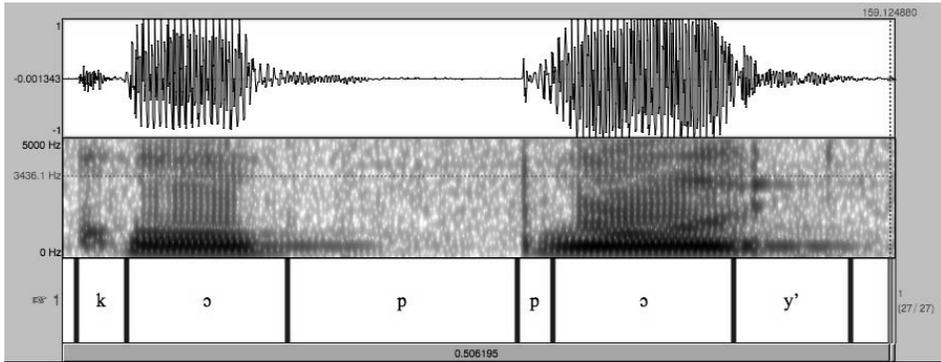


Figure 4. Geminate medial consonant: (/kəpəy'/ [kəp.pəy'] 'taioba' (edible plant sp.)

The discussion in the following subsections examines the allophones and distribution of the Hup consonants, and their alternations vis-à-vis their position in the morpheme and in the word – especially in the context of the geminate-conditioning vowel-initial suffixes.

2.1.2.2. *Voiceless obstruents*

All voiceless obstruents in Hup are unreleased in coda position. They do not undergo nasalization in nasal environments, having no nasal allophones.

A. /p/

The voiceless bilabial stop /p/ in morpheme-initial and medial position is illustrated in the following examples. The right-hand column provides minimal pair contrasts (/p/ ≠ /b/, /p/ ≠ /w/).

- | | | | | | | |
|-----|--------|----------------------|------------|-------|-----------------------------------|--------------------|
| (3) | /pód/ | [pód ⁿ] | 'island' | /bod/ | [^m bod ⁿ] | 'elope' |
| | /pəç/ | [pə ^y h] | 'comb' | /wəç/ | [wə ^y h] | 'fish-trap (type)' |
| | /páb'/ | [páb ^l] | 'mushroom' | | | |
| | /~páč/ | [páč ^{h̃}] | páč | | | 'paternal uncle' |
- (4) /pəpəp/ [pəpəp^l] 'small owl'
or: [pəp.pəp]

The morpheme-final realization of /p/ as [pʰ] is illustrated in the following:

- (5) /púp/ [púpʰ] ‘paxiuba (palm sp.)’
 /hɔp/ [hɔpʰ] ‘dry up’ /hób/ [hóbʰ] ‘hollow (plant part)’

B. /t/

The voiceless dental-alveolar stop /t/ occurs in initial position in the examples in (6), and in final position (as [tʰ]) in (7). The contrasting words on the right illustrate /t/ ≠ /c/, /t/ ≠ /d/.

- (6) /tóg/ [tógʰ] ‘wood’ /cág/ [čágʰ] ‘piece, shred’
 /tóg/ [tógʰ] ‘daughter’ /ďog/ [ⁿdögʰ] ‘wirapisuna’
 /~tíháy/ [tíháy] tíháy ‘poisonous snake’
- (7) /hăt/ [hătʰ] ‘alligator’ /căc/ [căʰtʰ] ‘shoulder’
 /ʔít/ [ʔítʰ] ‘piranha’ /ʔíd/ [ʔídʰ] ‘language, speech’

Intervocally (both morpheme-internally and when followed by a vowel-initial suffix), /t/ is usually realized as a flap [ɾ] in the Tat Deh and Umari Norte area dialects. In the Central dialect region of Barreira and other middle Tiquié villages, it is pronounced [t] (or as long/geminate [t.t]).

- (8) /bɔtɔk/ [ᵐbɔtɔk] ‘ear’
 [ᵐbɔrɔk] (Tat Deh)
 /tetěy/ [tetěy] ‘coral snake’
 [terěy] (Tat Deh)
 /ʔɔt-ɔy/ [ʔót.tóy] [cry-DYNM] ‘crying’
 [ʔóróy] (Tat Deh)

C. /c/

As an onset, the voiceless palatal stop /c/ is usually pronounced as a postalveolar fricative or affricate, varying between [ʃ] and [č]. More infrequently, it also appears as [ts], [s] or the palatal [tʲ]. These realizations are essentially in free variation; an individual speaker may alternate between [ʃ] and [č], in particular, from one pronunciation to another of the same word, in the same context. Note that the phonetic spelling in the examples below and elsewhere in this chapter represents this phoneme as [č], but this should be understood as interchangeable with [ʃ] (and, although more rarely, with the other variants). The contrastive

- (12) /**key**/ [kɛy] ‘see, look at’ /ʔey/ [ʔey] ‘call’
 /**kək**/ [kək^ʔ] ‘pull’ /tək/ [tək^ʔ] ‘give to be shared’
- (13) /~**kikíy**’/ [kíkíy^ʔ] *kíkíy*’ ‘winding’
 /**kakăh**/ [kakăh] ‘between’
- (14) /**cūk**/ [čūk^ʔ] ‘small owl type’ /tóg/ [tôg^ʰ] ‘daughter’
 /**tök**/ [tök^ʔ] ‘belly’ /tóg’/ [tók^ʔ] ‘room, compartment’

E. /ʔ/

The glottal stop in Hup is a segment in its own right, and can appear in initial and final position, as well as intervocalically (morpheme-medially or preceding a vowel-initial suffix). It contrasts with other segments; for example, /ʔ/ ≠ /t/, /ʔ/ ≠ /k/.

- (15) /ʔóg/ [ʔôg^ʰ] ‘drink’ /tóg/ [tôg^ʰ] ‘tooth’
 /ʔít/ [ʔít] ‘piranha’ /kit/ [kít^ʔ] ‘cut by chopping’
- (16) /ʔiʔid/ [ʔiʔidⁿ] ‘stammer’
 /~yaʔáb/ [yãʔãm] *yãʔám* ‘jaguar’
 or: [yãʔãm]
- (17) /céʔ/ [čéʔ] ‘basket made of palm leaves’ /cet/ [čet^ʔ] ‘carry on back’
 /táʔ/ [táʔ] ‘Related Instance’ particle /tăk/ [tăk^ʔ] ‘rubber, sap’

In a few cases, /ʔ/ forms a default coda in the first syllable in words that are historically bimorphemic but are synchronically lexicalized as monomorphemic. In these cases, /ʔ/ is less constrained in its occurrence than other consonants, in that it can form a non-homorganic medial cluster with the onset of the following syllable (see §2.5 below for more discussion):

- (18) /wiʔwiʔ/ [wiʔwiʔ] ‘tremble’
 (reduplicated form)

Some predictable (minor) laryngealization (‘creaky voice’) occurs on vowels surrounding the glottal stop (i.e., in the sequences CVʔVC, ʔVC, or CVʔ), particularly on the vowel directly following it. Also, the intervocalic glottal stop is

frequently (and optionally) realized not as a full stop, but as laryngealization on the adjoining vowels of the two syllables. Note that in this chapter (other than in Figure 5 below), this predictable laryngealization is not noted in the phonetic transcriptions, in the interest of clarity.

In Figure 5, laryngealization can be seen in the word *yãʔám* ‘jaguar’, where it takes the place of a full glottal stop. The laryngealization effect is realized as a relatively long distance (i.e., having more small intermediate peaks) between the peaks of the waveform, between the vowels at the midpoint of the word (upper graph), accompanied by a corresponding dip in pitch (and intensity) (lower graph).

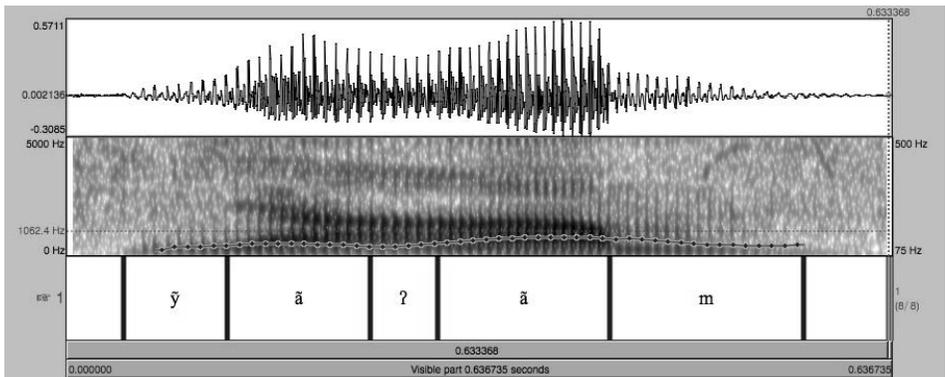


Figure 5. Medial glottal stop realized as vocalic laryngealization:

yãʔám [nỹããm] ‘jaguar’

2.1.2.3. Voiced obstruents

Voiced obstruents in Hup are pre-nasalized in morpheme-initial position, and post-nasalized in morpheme-final position. Medial nasalization normally occurs when the obstruent-final root is followed by a vowel-initial suffix (i.e., producing a geminate consonant $C^N.NC$). The voiced obstruents are realized as their nasal allophones when they occur in nasal morphemes or syllables.

A. /d/

Morpheme-initially, the voiced alveolar stop /d/ appears as pre-nasalized [$^n d$], and morpheme-finally as postnasalized [d^n]. Note that /d/ \neq /t/, /d/ \neq j/, and /d/ \neq /dʔ/.

- (19) /**dód**/ [$^n d\acute{o}d^n$] ‘large worm’
 /**dú**/ [$^n d\acute{u}:$] ‘grandchild’ /**tú**/ [t \acute{u}] ‘ground, low’

- (20) /wǎd/[βǎdⁿ] ‘food’ /pǎj/ [pǎ^vdⁿ] ‘umari’
 /tód/ [tôdⁿ] ‘hollow log’ /tód’/ [tót^ʔ] ‘jar, bottle’

Within a morpheme, /d/ is typically pronounced as a flap [r]:

- (21) /ciđíʔ/ [čiríʔ] ‘bag’

In reduplicated contexts (cf. §2.1.2.1 above and §2.5), medial /d/ may be realized as [r], [d], or [td]; when followed by a vowel-initial suffix, it may alternate as a flap or as medially nasalized, geminate [dⁿ.d]:

- (22) /tǔd-út/ [tǔdⁿ.dút^ʔ] (support + Oblique case) ‘with the support’
 [tǔrút^ʔ]

In lexically nasal morphemes, /~d/ is realized as its nasal allophone [n]:

- (23) /~đíb/ [nǐm] *ním* ‘shadow, spirit of dead’
 /~đudút/ [nũnú^ʔ] *nunút* ‘moth’
 /~tôd/ [tõn] *tõn-* ‘hold’

B. /b/

Following the general pattern for voiced obstruents, the voiced bilabial stop /b/ is prenasalized [m̥b] morpheme-initially, and post-nasalized [b^m] morpheme-finally. Note that /b/ ≠ /w/, /b/ ≠ /d/, /b/ ≠ /g/, and /b/ ≠ /p/.

- (24) /bǐg/ [m̥bǐg^ʔ] ‘long time’ /wǐg/ [wǐg^ʔ] ‘seed’
 /bóbób/ [m̥bop.bôb^m] ‘ant sp.’ /đód/ [dôdⁿ] ‘worm’

- (25) /cób/ [čôb^m] ‘finger’ /cog/ [čôg^ʔ] ‘gather up’
 /hób/ [hôb^m] ‘hollow (plant part)’ /hõp/ [hõp^ʔ] ‘dry up’

In reduplicated contexts, where the medial consonant marks the marginal morpheme boundary (see above), /b/ is usually pronounced [pb] (although it occasionally appears as [b] or even – in exaggeratedly slow speech – as medially nasalized [b^mb]).

- (26) /**bebé**/ [ᵐbep.bê:] ‘small bird sp.’
 [ᵐbebê:]
 [ᵐbebᵐbê:]

This latter variant [bᵐb] or [bᵐ.ᵐb] is typical when morpheme-final /b/ is followed by a vowel-initial suffix:

- (27) /wób-óy/ [wóbᵐ.ᵐbóy] [rest.on-DYNM] ‘be resting on (something)’

In lexically nasal morphemes, /~b/ appears consistently as [m]:

- (28) /~**bǎb**/ [mǎm] *mǎm* ‘axe’
 /~**bubŭy**/ [mŭmŭỹ] *mumŭy* ‘arm’
 /~**bŭd**/ [mŭn] *mŭn* ‘caatinga’

C. /j/

The voiced palatal stop /j/ (which corresponds to the IPA symbol ɟ; cf. §2.4) occurs only in morpheme-final position, where it is realized as [ʲdⁿ]. The minimal pairs on the right illustrate that /j/ ≠ /d/, /j/ ≠ /c/.

- (29) /**tu**j/ [tuʲdⁿ] ‘light up’ /**tud**/ [tudⁿ] ‘support’
 /**pæ**j/ [pæʲdⁿ] ‘umari’ /**wæd**/ [βædⁿ] ‘food’
 /**có**j/ [čɔʲdⁿ] ‘brilliant red’ /**cóc**/ [čɔʲtⁿ] ‘hoe, digging tool’
 /**těj**/ [tɔʲdⁿ] ‘nose’

Before a vowel-initial suffix, morpheme-final /j/ is realized as geminate [ʲdⁿ.n.dʲ] or [ʲd.dʲ]:

- (30) /**těj-ót**/ [tɔʲdⁿ.n.dʲótⁿ] (nose + Oblique case) ‘in the nose’

In nasal morphemes, /~j/ appears as [ʲn] (and as geminate [ʲn.nʲ] before a vowel-initial suffix):

- (31) /~**těj**/ [tɔʲᵑ̃n] ‘jacundá (fish sp.)’
 /~**búj**/ [mŭʲᵑ̃n] ‘stink’
 /~**g’ój**/ [kɔʲᵑ̃n] ‘snail’

Note that [dʲ] and [nʲ] would be the expected morpheme-initial allophones of /j/ if this consonant occurred in morpheme-initial position, which it does not. Instead, while these sounds do occur in Hup, they are morpheme-initial allophonic variants of /y/, as discussed below.

D. /g/

Like /j/ and /ç/, the voiced velar stop /g/ occurs only morpheme-finally, where it is realized as [g^ɰ]. Note that /g/ ≠ /d/, /g/ ≠ /j/, and /g/ ≠ /k/.

- (32) /pǒg/ [pǒg^ɰ] ‘big’ /pód/ [pôdⁿ] ‘island’
 /bíg/ [bíg^ɰ] ‘anteater’ /b’ij/ [b’ij^ydⁿ] ‘squirrel monkey’
 /cúg/ [čúg^ɰ] ‘hummingbird’ /cúk/ [čúkⁿ] ‘tool handle’

Before a vowel-initial suffix, /g/ typically appears as medially nasalized [g^ɰ.^ɰg]:

- (33) /bíg-ít/ [bíg^ɰ.^ɰgít] (anteater + Oblique case) ‘with the anteater’

In nasal morphemes, /~g/ is realized as its nasal allophone [ŋ]:

- (34) /~dǎg/ [nǎŋ] *nǎŋ* ‘honey, candy’
 /~dág/ [nǎŋ] *nǎŋ* ‘fat, grease’
 /~pǐg/ [pǐŋ] *pǐŋ* ‘wild grape’

As the examples in this section illustrate, each voiced obstruent segment in Hup has multiple allophones, and at least a trace of nasalization is present in almost all contexts. In nasal environments, these consonants are realized as nasal sonorants; in oral contexts, as pre-, post-, and even medially nasalized contour segments. Such pre- and post-nasalization of voiced obstruents is fairly common in South American languages, and is found in particular in Hup’s Tukanooan neighbors. In fact, according to Wetzels (1995: 291), “the presence of nasal contours represents the unmarked situation in languages in which nasal consonants and contour segments are allophones of underlying voiced obstruents”.²⁶

²⁶ My translation.

In Hup, post-nasalization of morpheme-final voiced obstruents is considerably more pronounced and audible than is pre-nasalization, and is obligatory (unless the obstruent is followed by a vowel-initial suffix, when the nasal contour may be left out in fast speech); pre-nasalization is to some degree optional.

Figure 6 illustrates pre- and post-nasalization for the Hup word /b^hg/ [ʰmbʰg^h] ‘anteater’. The nasalization is represented by the long, low sections of the waveform, and the low sections (about 250 Hz) of the spectrogram, which precede and follow the rest of the word.

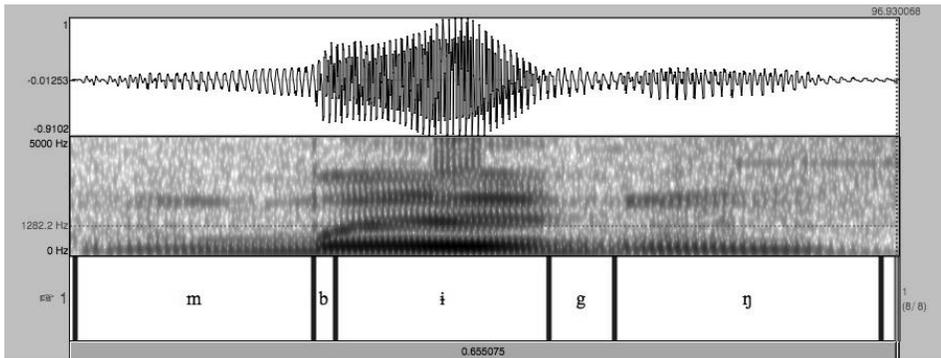


Figure 6. Pre- and post-nasalization of voiced obstruents: b^hg [ʰmbʰg^h] ‘anteater’

Medial nasalization (i.e., C^NC contours between vowels) occurs in some South American languages such as Kaingáng (cf. Wetzels 1995) and Karitiana (cf. Storto 1999). In Hup, it is rarely found outside of bimorphemic contexts involving a vowel-copying suffix (motivated by the need for an onset for the second syllable; see above). In general, medial nasalization is more common in slower speech; in faster speech, it may be absent – for example, when the voiced stop /d/ is pronounced as a flap [ɾ].

Figure 7 illustrates medial nasalization of the geminate obstruent /d/ as [dⁿd] (in free variation with the flap [ɾ]). As in Figure 6 above, the nasal portions of the segment are represented by the long, low sections of the waveform and spectrogram.

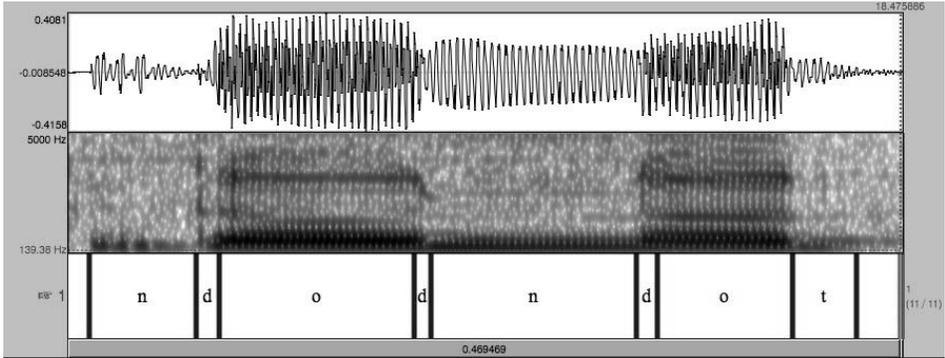


Figure 7. Word-medial nasalization of voiced obstruent: *dód-ót* [ˈdòdˠdótˠ]
 ‘with the worm’

Given that they usually have at least a trace of nasalization in both nasal and oral contexts, how are the voiced obstruents in Hup best understood? Several analyses of similar phenomena in other languages have posited a series of underlyingly *nasal* consonants, in lieu of a simple (nasality-neutral) voiced stop series and in opposition to the voiceless stops. To explain the pre-, post-, and (in some cases) medial nasalization of voiced obstruents in oral contexts (i.e., non-nasal morphemes or syllables), these analyses suggest that the underlying nasals are oralized by the adjacent vowels, resulting in contour segments with both an oral and a nasal component. Such an analysis of underlying nasals instead of a voiced stop series is offered by Brandão Lopes and Parker (1999) for Yuhup, and has also been proposed for the Amazonian languages Kaingáng (Wiesemann 1964, cf. Wetzels 1995) and Karitiana (Storto 1999).

In Hup, however, the question of the underlying nasal or oral identity of segments is probably irrelevant. As a prosodic feature that applies to the morpheme or syllable as a whole (see §2.3.1), nasality (like orality) is not a property of the individual segment at all; segments are simply unspecified for nasality at the underlying level. The meaningful contrast on the level of the obstruent segment is rather one of voiced vs. voiceless, *not* oral vs. nasal.

But since Hup voiced obstruents are underlyingly neither nasal nor oral, what explains their appearance as contour segments (C^N or NC) in oral environments? Arguably, the nasal contours on Hup oral segments are motivated primarily by the phonetic salience of a fully audible release. In coda and/or morpheme-final position, a nasal release is the only reasonable option for a highly audible stop release which will not compromise the CVC form of the syllable (note that all words in Hup must end in a heavy, bimoraic syllable; see §2.2 below). The insertion of an epenthetic vowel after the stop would be equally or even more audibly salient, but would violate this heavy syllable constraint. This audibility of the release is particularly important in Hup because both the series

of voiceless stops and that of glottalized stops are unreleased in coda position; were the voiced stops unreleased as well, the contrast between all three of these sets (already essentially neutralized in the case of the voiceless and glottalized stops) would be obscured or completely neutralized.

Likewise, pre-nasalization helps to differentiate the voiced stops from the voiceless stops in onset position; however, the fact that this voiced-voiceless distinction is already relatively audible in this context (even without the pre-nasalization) explains why post-nasalization is so much more audibly distinctive and near-obligatory than is pre-nasalization in Hup.

That voiced stops in Hup are associated with nasality – in both oral and nasal contexts – is in keeping with the close relationship exhibited by these two features cross-linguistically (Nasukawa 2005).

2.1.2.4. *Fricatives*

Hup has only voiceless fricatives, /ç/ and /h/. In nasal environments, these are pronounced as nasal fricatives. Note that the palatal stop /c/ also appears allophonically (in morpheme-initial and medial positions) as a voiceless fricative or affricate, typically realized as [ʃ] or [č].

A. /ç/

The voiceless palatal fricative /ç/ occurs only morpheme-finally, where it is realized as [ʰh]. It is nasalized in nasal contexts. The contrasting words on the right demonstrate that /ç/ ≠ /h/, /ç/ ≠ /c/, and /ç/ ≠ /k/.

- | | | | | |
|------|----------------|--------------------|---------------|----------------------|
| (35) | /g'əç/ [kəʰh] | 'bite' | /g'əh/ [kəh] | 'sweet' |
| | /păç/ [păʰh] | 'stone, hill' | /pác/ [páʰtʰ] | 'mandube (fish sp.)' |
| | /wəç/ [wəʰh] | 'fish-trap (type)' | /wək/ [wəkʰ] | 'sauva ant (type)' |
| | /j'óç/ [čəʰh] | 'spit' | | |
| | /~páč/ [páʰh̃] | páč | | 'paternal uncle' |

Before a vowel-initial suffix, /ç/ is realized as geminate [ʰh.hʰ] (this can be contrasted with /c/ in this context, which is realized as [č] or [ʰt.tʰ], see §2.1.2.2C above):

- (36) /păç-át/ [păʰh.hʰátʰ] (stone + Oblique case) 'with a stone'

B. /h/

The voiceless glottal fricative /h/ occurs in morpheme-initial, medial, and final positions, and undergoes nasalization in nasal morphemes. Note that /h/ ≠ /ʔ/ and /h/ ≠ /ç/.

- (37) /húp/ [húp^ʔ] ‘person, Hup person’
 /hɔhóh/ [hɔhóh] ‘toad’
 /~huh/ [hũh] hũh- ‘carry in arms or on shoulder’
- (38) /hũh/ [hũh] ‘rapid, waterfall’ /húʔ/ [húʔ] ‘pium (insect)’
 /wĩh/ [βĩh] ‘hawk’ /wiç/ [βiʔh] ‘whistle (using fingers)’
 /póh/ [póh] ‘high’
 /~bũh/ [mũh] mũh ‘arrow’ /~ʔúh/ [ʔũh] ʔũh ‘opposite-sex sibling’

2.1.2.5. Glides

Hup has two (non-glottalized) glides, /w/ and /y/. Both are nasalized in nasal contexts.

A. /w/

The bilabial glide /w/ occurs in morpheme-initial, final, and intervocalic position. It is pronounced [β] before front vowels (/æ/, /e/, and especially the high front vowel /i/), and is pronounced [w] before all other vowels. Contrasts with other consonants include /w/ ≠ /p/ and /w/ ≠ /b/.

- (39) /wĩh/ [βĩh] ‘hawk’
 /wěç/ [βěʔt^ʔ] ‘maroon-tailed parakeet’ /péc/ [péʔt^ʔ] ‘(fish) scales’
- (40) /wowöw/ [wowöw] ‘fly (insect) sp.’ /bobób/ [ᵐbop.böb^m] ‘ant sp.’
 /ciwĩb/ [çiβĩb^m] ‘bacaba’
- (41) /ków/ [kôw] ‘hot pepper’
 /wĩw/ [βĩw] ‘tocandira ant’

In nasal morphemes, /w/ is nasalized [w̃] or [β̃]:

- (42) /~wáʔ/ [w̃áʔ] wáʔ ‘vulture’
 /~wǎç/ [β̃ǎç] wǎç ‘dove’
 /~wawaw/ [w̃ǎw̃ǎw̃] wǎwǎw- ‘stammar’

B. /y/

Because the realization of /y/ is more complex in morpheme-initial context than in morpheme-final context, I begin with the latter for the sake of clarity. Morpheme-finally and between vowels, /y/ is realized as [y], or as nasalized [ỹ] in nasal contexts. It contrasts with the other palatals in final position: /y/ ≠ /ç/, /y/ ≠ /j/, and /y/ ≠ /c/.

- (43) /páy/ [pây] ‘bad’ /pǎç/ [pǎʰ] ‘stone, hill’
 /cǎy/ [čǎy] ‘centipede’ /caj/ [čǎʰdⁿ] ‘lean with shoulder’
 /~bohǎy/ [mõhǎỹ] mohǎy ‘deer’

- (44) /yiyǐw/ [d^yyiyǐw] ‘ant sp.’ /cǎc/ [čǎʰtʰ] ‘shoulder’
 /tiyǐʔ/ [tiyǐʔ] ‘man’

We now turn to the behavior of /y/ morpheme-initially. Other than the palatal stop /c/, which is usually pronounced as a fricative when not morpheme-final, the glide /y/ (and its glottalized counterpart /yʰ/, see below) is the only palatal consonant allowed in non-morpheme-final position. In initial position, /y/ is pronounced [d^y] or [n^y] (depending on the oral or nasal context). This represents a neutralization of the contrast that exists elsewhere (i.e., morpheme-finally) between the palatal glide /y/ [y] and the voiced palatal stop /j/ ([j^yd], or [d^y] when geminate and forming the onset of a vowel-initial suffix syllable). That this sound [d^y] / [n^y] in morpheme-initial position represents underlying /y/ and not a morpheme-initial realization of /j/ is supported by two points. First, since both the sound [d^y] and the stop phoneme /j/ are absent from morpheme-medial environments, and because consonants that cannot appear medially also do not appear initially in Hup, initial [d^y] cannot be the phoneme /j/. Second, reduplication phenomena also indicate that [d^y] and [y] are allophones, hence realizations of the same phoneme /y/. For example, the verb /yo/ [d^yyo] ‘swing from the hand’ is reduplicated to form /yoyo/ [d^yyoyo] ‘swing back and forth’, in which the initial and medial consonants are phonetically different but must be underlyingly identical.

glottalized consonants) are given below. As noted above, the glottalized consonants in Hup differ markedly in their phonetic realization from the ejective consonants found in other languages.

Figure 8 illustrates this laryngealization effect for the word /j'ɔ/ [č̥ɔ:] 'flower'. The laryngealization or 'creaky voice' can be seen in the long intervals between the peaks of the waveform and spectrogram in the initial section of the word.

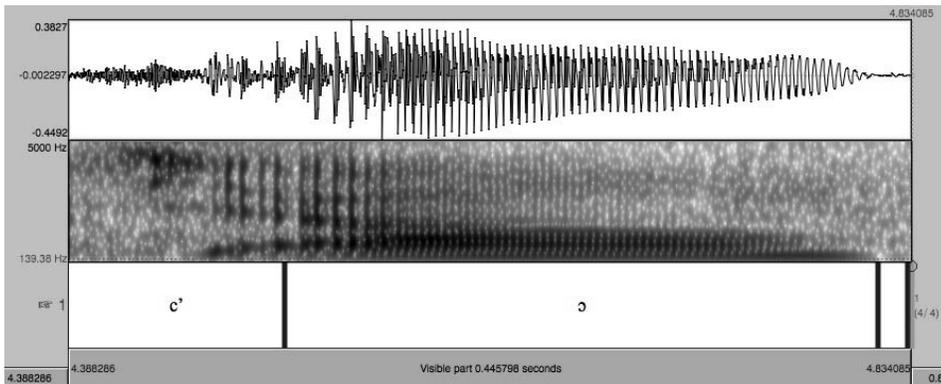


Figure 8. Glottalized consonant in onset position: laryngealization of following vowel:
j'ɔ [č̥ɔ:] 'flower'

As mentioned in §2.1.2.2 above, a segmental glottal stop can also condition weak phonetic laryngealization on the surrounding vowels. Nevertheless, C'V? and CV? words do contrast, mainly by the relative strength of the laryngealization and by its location on the beginning vs. the end of the vowel segment (i.e., in C'V? syllables, the entire vowel is laryngealized, but most strongly on its initial part; in CV? syllables, only the end of the vowel segment is laryngealized, and only slightly). Examples of this contrast include /yú?/ [yú?] 'burn (IMP)' and /y'ú?/ [y'ú?] 'soft, flexible'; /cá?/ [cá?] 'box, nest' and /j'á?/ [č̥á?] 'turí wood'.

Because morpheme-final glottalized stops are phonetically unreleased and cannot normally be audibly distinguished from voiceless stops (except in nasal contexts or when followed by a vowel-initial suffix), the contrast between these segments in this position is effectively neutralized. That native speakers do not hear a difference is clear from their writing in Hup literacy sessions. When trying to write a word ending in a glottalized stop, speakers tend to write a simple voiceless stop; only after adding a vowel-initial suffix – in the context of which the contrast between a morpheme-final glottalized stop and voiceless stop is clear – are they aware of the contrast.

Word-final glottalized and voiceless stops are contrasted in Figures 9a and b. The waveforms and spectrograms illustrate the minimal phonetic difference between the two consonants.

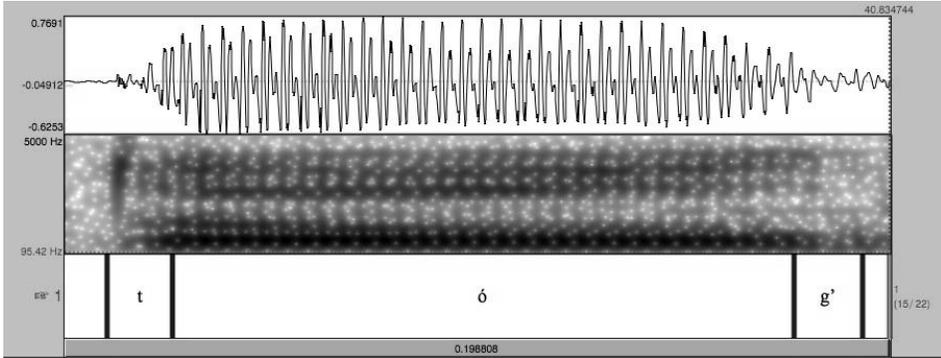


Figure 9a. Glottalized stop in coda position: *tógʷ* [tɔ́gʷ] ‘room, compartment’

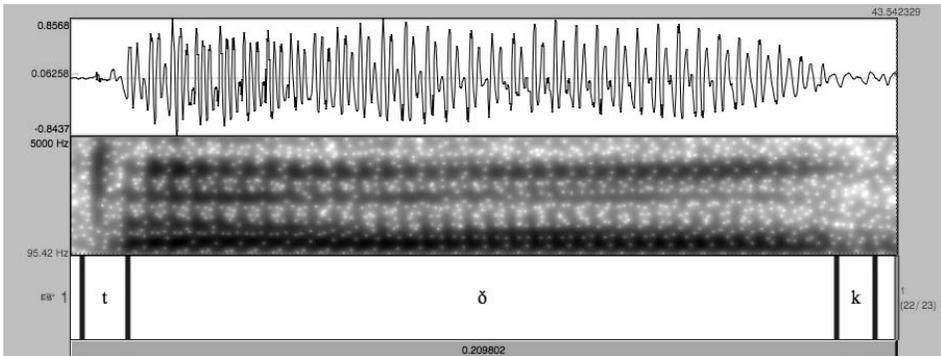


Figure 9b. Voiceless stop in coda position: *tók* [tɔ́k] ‘stomach, belly’

The underlying difference between final voiceless stops and final glottalized stops in oral contexts emerges through the alternations undergone by a morpheme-final glottalized stop. While the difference between the two types of consonant is neutralized in word-final position, they behave differently when followed by a vowel-initial suffix. In this environment, the consonant geminates in order to produce an onset for the following syllable (as discussed in §2.1.2.1); glottalized stops surface with voicing and pre-nasalization in this onset position, whereas voiceless stops do not. For example, the voiceless stop /p/ in this intervocalic context is realized as [CVp.pVC], whereas the geminate glottalized stop /bʷ/ is realized as [CVp.^mbVC] or [CVbʷ.^mbVC]. This is illustrated for the word *hebʷ-et* [hépʷ.^mbétʷ] (‘fan’ + Oblique) ‘with a fan’ in Figure 10; note that some laryngealization – realized as relatively long intervals be-

tween wave peaks – is evident at the morpheme boundary (but, as expected, is *not* realized on the vowel of the suffix):

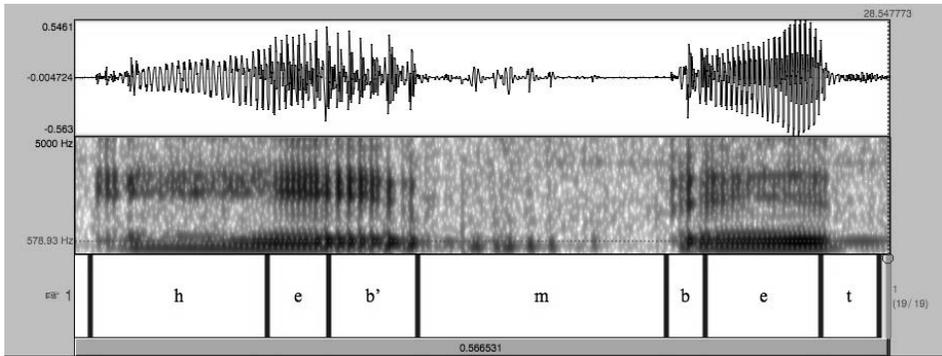


Figure 10. Glottalized stop followed by vowel-initial suffix:
heb'-et [hépʰ.métʰ] ('fan' + Oblique) 'with a fan'

I. Glottalized obstruents

As mentioned above, voicing contrasts are neutralized in these segments. Those that are phonetically voiced (in onset position) – /bʰ/ and /dʰ/ – are prenasalized; phonetically voiceless /jʰ/ and /gʰ/ are not.

A. /dʰ/

In initial position, /dʰ/ is realized as [ʰdV]. The words on the right illustrate the contrasts /dʰ/ ≠ /d/, /dʰ/ ≠ /t/.

- | | | | |
|-------------------|------------|---------------|---------------|
| (47) /dʰoʔ/ [ʰdʔ] | 'take' | /dóʔ/ [ʰdóʔ] | 'child' |
| /dʰǎd/ [ʰdǎdʰ] | 'genipapo' | /dód/ [ʰdôdʰ] | 'large worm' |
| /dʰǔç/ [ʰdǔʰh] | 'timbó' | /tód/ [tôdʰ] | 'hollow tree' |

In reduplicated contexts, /dʰ/ may appear as [t.dV], providing both a coda to the first syllable and an onset to the second; it may also occur as a flap [ɾ].

- (48) /dʰidʰfɪb/ [ʰdʰit.dʰɪbʰ] 'curly'

In final position, /dʰ/ appears as [dʰ] or [tʰ]. Without a following vowel-initial suffix, the distinction between [dʰ] and the voiceless stop [tʰ] (as in *tút* 'cold') is neutralized:

- (49) /tódʰ/ [tótʰ] ‘jar, bottle’ /tód̥/ [tôt̥] ‘hollow tree’
 /búdʰ/ [bútʰ] ‘roll around something’ /tút/ [tútʰ] ‘cold’
 /ʔədʰ/ [ʔətʰ] ‘flute made from deer leg bone’

Once again, the underlying contrast between morpheme-final /dʰ/ and /t/ is brought out in the context of a vowel-initial suffix, where geminate /dʰ/ takes on voicing and a nasal contour: [t.ⁿd] or [d.ⁿd]. Again, the complex geminate consonant does not condition laryngealization on the following vowel. It can be contrasted with voiceless /t/ in the same context (example 51).

- (50) /tódʰ-ót/ [tót.ⁿdótʰ](jar + Oblique case) ‘with jar, bottle’

- (51) /tút-úy/ [tút.túy] (cold + Dynamic) ‘be cold’

In nasal morphemes, /~dʰ/ is realized as [nV] morpheme-initially (52), and unreleased [ntʰ] morpheme-finally (53) (note that in nasal contexts, the difference between /~dʰ/ and voiceless /~t/ is not completely neutralized, as noted for /~bʰ/ above).

- (52) /~dʰád/ [nân] *nʰán* ‘foot flea (bicho-do-pé)’
 /~dʰæbʰ/ [næmpʰ] *nʰæmʰ*- ‘lick’ /~dʰæb/ [næm] *næm* ‘louse’
- (53) /~pídʰ/ [pʰíntʰ] *pʰín* ‘puçanga (love-charm)’
 /~pít/ [pʰítʰ] *pʰít* ‘paraná’
 /~wǒdʰ/ [wǒntʰ] *wǒn* ‘mingau’ /~wǒt/ [wǒtʰ] *wǒt* ‘pull out’
 /~pǎdʰ/ [pǎntʰ] *pǎn* ‘beiju type’²⁸ /~pát/ [pát] *pát* ‘hair’

Before a vowel-initial suffix, nasal /~dʰ/ appears as geminate [nt.n]; compare this with /t/ in the same nasal context (55):

- (54) /~pǎdʰ-át/ [pǎnt.nátʰ] *pǎnʰ-át* (beiju + Oblique case) ‘with beiju’

²⁸ In the Tat Deh and Barreira dialects, *pǎn*ʰ refers to a beiju-like flat bread that is made not from manioc (unlike ordinary beiju) but from umari seeds or other gathered food-stuffs. In the Umari Norte region, *pǎn*ʰ is used to refer to manioc beiju as well as bread made from other sources.

(55) /~pát-át/ [pát.tát^ɿ] *pát-át* (hair + Oblique case) ‘with hair’

B. /j’/

Morpheme-initially and medially, /j’/ is phonetically voiceless: [čV̥]. As discussed in §2.1.2.5 above, this voiceless realization is consistent with the absence of the non-glottalized voiced palatal stop /j/ from morpheme-initial or medial position. Note that /j’/ ≠ /c/.

(56) /j’áy/ [čǎy] ‘*juí* frog sp.’ /cǎy/ [čǎy] ‘centipede’
 /j’ák/ [čǎk^ɿ] ‘buriti’ /cǎk/ [čǎk^ɿ] ‘mash (usu. manioc)’
 /j’óp/ [čóp^ɿ] ‘*tapuru* (parasitic worm)’ /cóp/ [čóp^ɿ] ‘disposable drinking cup made from a leaf’
 /j’óʔ/ [čóʔ] ‘packet of leaves’ /cóʔ/ [čóʔ] ‘shrimp’
 /j’ij’ib’/ [čij’ip^ɿ] ‘fly sp.’

Morpheme-final /j’/ is realized as [ʔ^d] or [ʔ^t], effectively indistinguishable from the voiceless palatal stop [ʔ^t]. Final /j’/ also contrasts with /j/, in addition to other segments: /j’/ ≠ /j/.

(57) /cǎj’/ [čǎʔ^t] ‘cicada type’ /pǎj’/ [pǎʔ^d] ‘umari’
 /bǎj’/ [ʔ^mbǎʔ^t] ‘dragonfly type’
 /wáj’/ [wáʔ^t] ‘tree frog type’ /wóc/ [wóʔ^t] ‘pull off (clothes), pull out (plants)’

Before a vowel-initial suffix, the contrast between /c/ and /j’/ is no longer neutralized; geminate /j’/ is realized as [ʔ^t.ⁿd^y] or [ʔ^d.ⁿd^y]. Compare /c/ in the same environment (example 59).

(58) /cǎj’-át/ [čǎʔ^t.ⁿd^yát^ɿ] (cicada + Oblique case) ‘with cicada type’

(59) /wóc-óy/ [wóʔ^t.t^yóy] (pull off + Dynamic) ‘pulling off’

In nasal morphemes, /~j’/ is [čV̥] morpheme-initially and [j̃n^ɿ] morpheme-finally:

(60) /~j’áh/ [čǎh] *j’áh* ‘cará (potato-like tuber)’
 /~j’ip/ [čip] *j’ip-* ‘tie up’

- (61) /~b'áj'/ [mǎǎyṇ] *m'áj'* 'mud'
 /~büj'/ [mǔǔyṇ] *mǔj'* 'murici (edible fruit sp.)'

Before a vowel-initial suffix, /~j'/ is realized as [yṇ.ⁿy] or [ýnt.ⁿy]; compare this with /y'/ in the same context (63):²⁹

- (62) /~b'áj'-át/ [mǎǎ^{nt.}yáṭ] *m'áj'-át* (mud + Oblique) 'in the mud, with mud'
 (63) /~cíy'-ít/ [čǐ^{t.}yíṭ] or [čǐỵ^{t.}yíṭ] *cǐy'-ít* (poke in + Oblique)
 'at the time of poking in'

C. /g'/

Like /j'/, the glottalized velar stop /g'/ is phonetically voiceless in morpheme-initial and medial position, where it is realized as [k̟]. Also as in the case of /j'/, this fact is consistent with the absence of the non-glottalized voiced stop /g/ morpheme-initially and medially. Note that /g'/ ≠ /k/ and (in final position; example 65) /g'/ ≠ /g/.

- (64) /g'ɔp/ [kɔp̣] 'serve drink' /kɔp/ [kɔp̣] 'be rotten'
 /g'ɔh/ [kɔ̣h] 'minnow, tiny fish' /kɔh/ [kɔh] 'fruit sp.'
 /g'a/ [kɑ:] 'straighten' /ká/ [ká:] 'line (of people, etc.)'
 /g'ǒg/ [kǒg̣] 'titi monkey'
 /g'ag'ǎw/ [kǎkǎw] 'lymph node'

Morpheme-finally, /g'/ is pronounced [g̣] or [ḳ] and, according to the general pattern, its contrast with the voiceless stop /k/ ([ḳ]) is neutralized when no suffix follows:

- (65) /kág'/ [káḳ] 'forehead'
 /tóg'/ [tóḳ] 'room, compartment' /tóg/ [tóg̣] 'daughter'
 /b'úg'/ [búḳ] 'hill' /tǒk/ [tǒḳ] 'belly'

²⁹ Morpheme-final nasal /~j'/ ([yṇ]) is difficult to distinguish from the phoneme /~y'/ in nasal contexts. This is because morpheme-final /~y'/, when it geminates in the context of a following vowel-initial suffix, forms an onset [ṇy] to the second syllable, just as does nasal /~j'/.

Once again, the contrast becomes audible when /g'/ is followed by a vowel-initial suffix, and accordingly becomes geminate [k.^hg] or [g'.^hg]; compare non-glottalized /g/ and voiceless /k/ in the same context (example 67):

(66) /tóg'-ót/ [tók.^hgót] (room + Oblique case) 'in the room'

(67) /tóg'-ót/ [tôg.^h.^hgót'] (daughter + Oblique case) 'with daughter'
 /tők'-ót/ [tök.kót'] (belly + Oblique case) 'in the belly'

In nasal morphemes, /~g'/ appears as [k^hŷ] morpheme-initially and as [ŋ'] morpheme-finally:

(68) /~g'aŋ/ [k'ãŋ] g'ãŋ- 'be suspended'

/~g'ɔc/ [k^hŷ't'] g'ɔc- 'pick by hand' /~kɔc/ [k^hŷ't'] kɔc- 'scrape fruit out from shell'

(69) /~ŋǝg'/ [ŋǝŋ'] ǝŋg' 'throat'

Before a vowel-initial suffix, nasalized /g'/ is geminate and appears as [ŋk.ŋ]; compare voiceless /k/ in the same environment (71):

(70) /~ŋǝg'-ót/ [ŋǝŋk.ŋót'] ǝŋg'-ót (throat + Oblique case) 'in the throat'

(71) /~hók'-ót/ [hōk.kót'] hōk'-ót (cut/caw + Oblique) 'at the time of cutting with sawing motion'

D. /b'/

In morpheme-initial and morpheme-medial position, /b'/ conditions laryngealization on the following vowel: [ᵐbV]. Note that /b'/ ≠ /b/ and /b'/ ≠ /p/.

- (72) /b'äh/ [ᵐbäh] 'flat thing' /báh/ [ᵐbáh] 'acara (fish sp.)'
 /b'ǎʔ/ [ᵐbǎʔ] 'beiju' /páʔ/ [páʔ] 'shallow aturá basket'
 /b'öy/ [ᵐböy] 'traira fish'
 /b'úgʔ/ [ᵐbükʔ] 'hill'
 /b'ab'ǎw/ [bap.bǎw] 'snake sp.'

Morpheme-finally, /b'/ is realized as [bʔ] or [pʔ]. Following the general pattern, the contrast between /b'/ and voiceless stop /p/ [pʔ] is effectively neutralized in this context.

- (73) /báb'/ [ᵐbápʔ] 'sibling'
 /d'éb'/ [ᵐdépʔ] 'lightning bug type' /dedéb/ [ᵐderébᵐ] 'round'
 /páb'/ [pápʔ] 'mushroom' /pəpáp/ [pəpápʔ] 'small owl'
 /ʔib'/ [ʔípʔ] 'life'
 /bibíb'/ [ᵐbip.bípʔ] 'squirrel'

The contrast between glottalized /b'/ and voiceless /p/ in morpheme-final position is only realized when the root ending in /b'/ is directly followed by a vowel-initial suffix. In this context, /b'/ geminates as the complex segment [p.ᵐb] (or [bʔ.ᵐb]), and contrasts clearly with voiceless /p/ in the same environment (75):

- (74) /páb'-át/ [páp.ᵐbátʔ] (mushroom + Oblique case) 'with mushroom'
 (75) /pəpáp'-át/ [pəpáp.pátʔ] (small owl + Oblique case) 'with small owl'

In nasal morphemes, /~b'/ is realized in onset position as [mᵛ], and in coda position as [mpʔ]. The difference between morpheme-final /~b'/ and /~p/ in nasal contexts is not fully neutralized, in contrast to oral contexts, although it is relatively difficult to distinguish. In (76), /b'/ and /b/ are presented in contrastive pairs.

- (76) /~b'áb/ [mǎᵛm] *m'ám* 'termite type'
 /~bab/ [mãᵛm] *mam-* 'lean sideways'
 /~b'ǎh/ [mǎᵛh] *m'ǎh* 'water snake'
 /~bǎh/ [mǎᵛh] *mǎh* 'younger sister'

/~b'uc/ [mũ[̃]t^ɾ] *m'uc-* 'suck on'
 /~b'ũc/ [mũ[̃]t^ɾ] *mũc* 'clay wind instrument'

(77) /~c'ib'/ [čĩmp^ɾ] *cĩm'* 'sifting basket' /~j'ip/ [čĩp^ɾ] *j'ĩp-* 'tie up'
 /~d'æb'/ [næmp^ɾ] *n'æm'* 'lick' /~dæb/ [næm] *næm* 'louse'

Before a vowel-initial suffix, geminate nasal /~b'/ is pronounced [mp.m]; note that in this context it does not condition laryngealization on the following vowel (example 78). Compare /~p/ (= [p]) in this context in a nasal morpheme (example 79).

(78) /~c'ib' -ĩt/ [čĩmp.mĩt^ɾ] *cĩm' -ĩt* (basket + Oblique case) 'sifting basket'

(79) /~j'ip -iy/ [čĩp.pĩy] *j'ĩp -ĩy* (tie up + Dynamic) 'tie up'

E. (p')

Glottalized /p'/ is an extremely marginal phoneme in Hup. It occurs in only one word: /p'ây/ [păy] 'priest' (probably from Nheengatú *pai*; cf. Grenand and Ferreira 1989: 124). Moreover, even this one occurrence of /p'/ is limited to certain dialect areas (the Tat Deh and Barreira regions), while the same word 'priest' is realized as /b'ây/ [mbăy] in the Vaupés area dialect (compare the homonym /b'ay/ [mbay] 'return', found in all Hup dialects). This marginal existence of /p'/ suggests the possibility that these Hup dialects may someday develop a voicing contrast for the two phonetically voiced glottalized obstruents in morpheme-initial position, analogously to the voicing contrast which exists for non-glottalized obstruents generally.

II. Glottalized glides

Both of Hup's glide consonants have glottalized counterparts. These are always voiced, both phonemically and phonetically (as are the non-glottalized glides). In morpheme-final position the glottalized glides are phonetically equivalent to a glide + glottal stop cluster.

A. /w'/

Like Hup's other glottalized consonants, morpheme-initial and medial /w'/ is most easily identified by the laryngealization it conditions on the following vowel: [wṼ]. The contrastive words on the right illustrate /w'/ ≠ /w/.

- (80) /w'ob/ [wɔb^m] 'set onto' (trans. verb) /wob/ [wɔb^m] 'rest on'
 /w'ə́t/ [wə́t^ɾ] 'long' (intrans.)
 /w'ðh/ [wðh] 'large sarapó (fish) sp.' /wðh/ [wðh] 'River Indian'
 /w'ĩh/ [βĩh] 'small sarapó (fish) sp.' /wĩh/ [βĩh] 'hawk'

Morpheme-finally, /w'/ is realized as [w^ʔ]:

- (81) /ʔéw'/ [ʔéw^ʔ] 'small bird sp.'
 /púw'/ [púw^ʔ] 'rotten bits of wood'
 /j'ǎw'/ [čǎw^ʔ] 'dirtiness, filth'

Before a vowel-initial suffix, geminate /w'/ is realized as [w^ʔ.w]; which contrasts with intervocalic /ʔ/ (82–83). (By contrast, the coincidence of a final /w/ and initial /ʔ/ across a morpheme boundary is realized as a simple [wʔ] sequence, whereas in the geminate the glide appears to 'copy' around the glottal component.)

- (82) /ʔéw'-ét/ [ʔéw^ʔ.wét^ɾ] (bird + Oblique case) 'with small bird (sp.)'
 /púw'-út/ [púw^ʔ.wút^ɾ] (rotten wood + Oblique case)
 'rotten bits of wood'
- (83) /túʔ-út/ [túʔ.ʔút^ɾ] (vertical post + Oblique) 'with the vertical post'

In nasal environments, /w'/ is a target for nasalization:

- (84) /~w'ǎç/ [wǎç̃] w'ǎç 'smooth-billed ani (bird sp.)'
 /~tǎh-díw'/ [tǎh̃-níw^ʔ] tǎh-níw' 'father-in-law'

B. /y'/

The glottalized palatal glide /y'/ appears morpheme-initially as [^dyV̥]; it demonstrates the same allophonic variation (between initial [^dy^ʔ] and medial/final [y^ʔ]) as does its non-glottalized counterpart /y/ (initial [^dy], medial/final [y]). Glottalized /y'/ contrasts with its non-glottalized counterpart (/y'/ ≠ /y/).

- (85) /y'úʔ/ [^dyúʔ] 'soft, flexible' /yuʔ/ [^dyuʔ] 'burn (paper, cloth)'
 /y'æt/ [^dyæt^ɾ] 'lay on ground, leave' /yæt/ [^dyæt^ɾ] 'lie on ground'
 (transitive verb) (intransitive verb)

Morpheme-finally, /y'/ is realized as [y^ʔ]:

(86) /púy'/ [púy^ʔ] 'younger brother'

Before a vowel-initial suffix, geminate /y'/ appears as [y^ʔ.^dy]:

(87) /púy'-út/ [púy^ʔ.^dyút^ˀ] (younger brother + Oblique case)
 'with younger brother'

In nasal morphemes, /y'/ appears morpheme-initially as [ⁿỹV], morpheme-finally as [ỹ^ʔ], and before a vowel-initial suffix as [ỹ^ʔ.ⁿy].

(88) /~y'uy'/ [ⁿỹũỹ^ʔ] y'ũy'- 'shake something that is planted at the base'

As the examples in this section illustrate, the most striking feature of the glottalized consonants generally in Hup is their extreme allophonic variation. The most audibly distinctive cue to their presence in onset position is the laryngealization of the following vowel; in morpheme-final position, most are essentially indistinguishable from voiceless stops unless a vowel-initial suffix follows – only the glottalized glides can easily be recognized for what they are.

Alternative analyses of these phonetic phenomena can be suggested, but they all prove to be much less effective ways of explaining the data than is the positing of a single distinct series of glottalized consonants. One such alternative would consider the glottalized consonants as not comprising a distinct series of their own, but rather as consonant clusters made up of two segments: Cʔ. Positing such clusters would accurately predict the existence of vocalic laryngealization, since some laryngealization on surrounding vowels (and especially the following vowel) does accompany the glottal stop when it appears elsewhere as a segment in its own right (cf. §2.1.2.2 above). However, it is unlikely that Hup would allow morpheme-internal Cʔ clusters when no other morpheme-internal consonant clusters are allowed elsewhere in the language at all (other than in a few intervocalic contexts; see §2.2 below). It is also not clear why only some consonants would form Cʔ clusters while others could not (namely /t/ and /p/; there is no /*t'/ and only marginally /*p'/).

An even more important argument against this cluster analysis is the fact that Cʔ clusters do not account for the phenomenon of consonant gemination in the context of a vowel-initial suffix, in which part of the complex segment appears on each side of the glottal component, as if the consonant material were being 'copied' around the glottal (e.g., /ʔéw'/ + /V́t/ → /ʔéw'-ét/ [ʔéw^ʔ.wét] 'with small bird sp.'). If the consonantal coda in the root were truly a Cʔ cluster, rather than a unitary glottalized segment, we would expect there to be no such

'copying' phenomenon; instead, the glottal stop would simply form the onset of the second syllable, leaving the consonant segment behind to form the coda of the first syllable: [CVC.ʔVC]. We would also expect the vowel-initial suffix to bear a trace of laryngealization from the preceding glottal stop, which likewise does not occur. In fact, this consonant 'copying' phenomenon is no different for glottalized consonants than it is for other single segments with complex realizations – the palatal and post-nasalized stops – which undergo the same sort of surface inversion of components when followed by a vowel-initial suffix: /CVd/ [CVdⁿ] → [CVdⁿ.ⁿdVC] and /CVç/ [CV^yh] → [CV^yh.h^yVC]. This parallelism can only be accounted for in a consistent way if the glottalized consonants are understood to be single complex segments and not clusters.

A second possible alternative analysis to the single distinct series of glottalized consonants proposed here would involve multiple phonemic entities: a series of laryngealized vowels, a series of unreleased voiced stops, and an additional set of consonant clusters made up of a glide + glottal stop (something along these lines has, in fact, been suggested for Yuhup; see Ospina 2002). Again, however, there are convincing arguments against this approach for Hup, and in favor of a single series of glottalized consonants. First, the glottalized consonants present a simpler, more streamlined system, in which a single feature – rather than three distinct phonemic entities – accounts fully for the data. Moreover, the three phoneme types suggested by the alternative analysis are internally inconsistent: one entire set of consonant phonemes (the unreleased voiced stops) could only occur in word-final position, while Cʔ clusters would be found only with glides. In addition, to have an entire series of laryngealized vowels (which would increase the vowel inventory significantly) is typologically rare (cf. Macaulay and Salmons 1995).

There are still other arguments against this three-fold approach, and in favor of a single glottalized consonant series. If a distinct set of laryngealized vowels is posited, there is no explanation for the fact that these laryngealized vowels never follow the voiceless stop /t/, and follow /p/ in only one marginal case. By contrast, the voicing neutralization in the glottalized consonant series accounts for this neatly. Likewise, the lack of contrastive laryngealization on vowels in syllables with /ʔ/ or /h/ as the onset is also not easily explained if laryngealized vowels are phonemically distinct; but again, this fits with the glottalized consonant approach, since we would not expect consonants that are already glottal by definition (as are /ʔ/ and /h/) to receive an additional phonemic glottal feature (/ʔ^ʔ/ and /*h^ʔ/).

Furthermore, we would predict that – were laryngealization a property of the vowel and not the consonant – it would carry over with the copied vowel in the context of a vowel-copying suffix (e.g., Oblique -V̂t, Dynamic -V̂y, etc.), which takes its vowel quality from the preceding syllable (usually belonging to the root). However, while *nasality* always spreads together with the copied vowel in

this context, laryngealization never does so; e.g., /tóg'/ + /Ńt/ → /tóg'-ót/ [tók.^Ńgót] 'in the room'. (This is also due to the fact that gemination does not result in the straightforward copying of a complex segment, but leaves the glottalic or nasal feature 'stranded' in the middle of the geminate; i.e., [C^NC] or [C^ŃC].) Conversely, laryngealization does carry over in reduplication contexts, in which the initial consonant (together with the following vowel) is copied from the root; laryngealization is always present on both syllables in reduplicated words: e.g., b'ág 'light'; b'ab'ag- [bap.bag^Ń] 'be bright'.

Finally, acoustic evidence also supports an analysis of laryngealization as conditioned by the preceding consonant, rather than being a property of the vowel. Laryngealization on vowels typically affects only the *first part* of the vowel segment, where it is contiguous with the glottalized consonant; moreover, the consonant itself may also show some laryngealization or ejective effects (cf. Figures 8 and 10 above).

There are thus clearly good arguments for positing a series of glottalized consonants in Hup to explain these phenomena. But one more question remains: why is voicing neutralized with the glottalized stops? This can be explained as motivated by phonetic distinctiveness (audibility). In word-final position, to begin with, the glottalized consonants surface as unreleased stops, and as such are too phonetically similar to the unreleased voiceless stops for a contrast to be maintained. As Blevins (2004: 99) has noted, for plain obstruents and ejective or glottalized obstruents to contrast in word-final position, the stops must be audibly released. In fact, syllable-final neutralization of ejective or glottalized obstruents as voiceless unaspirated obstruents – as we find morpheme-finally in Hup – is crosslinguistically quite common (Blevins 2004: 94).

In morpheme-initial and medial position, Hup already has a constraint barring voiced palatal /j/ and velar /g/ from appearing; this carries over to their glottalized counterparts /j'/ and /g'/, which are accordingly pronounced as voiceless [čV] and [kV] (respectively), as discussed above. Thus the only voicing contrast that would even be possible for the glottalized stop series is limited to the bilabial and dental-alveolar stops /b'/ and /d'/ in non-final position – a very restricted environment.

As an intriguing final note, there are a few cases in Hup which suggest that ordinary voiced stops may occasionally have developed glottalized variants during a historical process of deriving new words. The pair in (89a) is particularly suggestive of a historical link between a (prior) voiced stop and a (later) glottalized stop:

- (89) a) /tóg/ [tóg^Ń] 'daughter'
 /hutóg'/ [hutók^Ń] 'niece'

The unmistakable parallelism between (89a) and the pair in (89b) below – in which the final consonant /h/ in ‘son’ and ‘nephew’ could not be glottalized and remained the same – indicates that the similarity between ‘daughter’ and ‘niece’ is indeed due to a historical connection rather than to chance:

- b) /~tǎéh/ [tǎéh] ‘son’
 /~hutǎéh/ [hūtǎéh] ‘nephew’

Other similar pairs, of which one member is probably also derived historically from the other, are the following:

- (90) a) /tód/ [tôdⁿ] ‘hollow log, tree’ (verb: ‘hollow out, make hole in’)
 /tódʔ/ [tótʔ] ‘jar, bottle, hollow receptacle’
- b) /wob/ [wob^m] ‘be resting on something’ (intransitive verb)
 /wʔob/[wɔb^m] ‘set on something’ (transitive verb)
- c) /yǎt/ [d^yǎtʔ] ‘lie on ground’ (intransitive verb)
 /yʔǎt/ [d^yǎtʔ] ‘lay on ground’ (transitive verb)

Such pairs suggest that glottalization is in some sense a distinct prosodic or suprasegmental feature that is associating with a consonant in Hup. They also suggest that, despite their neutralization for voicing, glottalized stops may (at least historically) have an underlying association with voiced segments.

Comparative note

What appears phonetically as vocalic laryngealization in Hup [CV̥C] is realized in many Yuhup words as [CV₁ʔV₁(C)] (i.e., a medial glottal stop surrounded by identical vowels):³⁰

³⁰ Not all such words correspond in this way, however; for example, Yuhup *yaʔǎm* ‘jaguar’ takes the same CVʔVC form as does Hup (*yaʔám*).

(91) Hup:	Yuhup: ³¹	
/c'ɨw/ [čɨw]	[čɨ'ɨw]	'pupunha'
/d'ũç/ [ᵐdũʸh]	[ᵐdúʔuʸh]	'timbó'

Brandão Lopes and Parker (1999) analyze such VʔV sequences in Yuhup as involving a floating glottalic autosegment that associates with the vowel. Ospina (2002: 117–118), on the other hand, proposes a morpheme-level feature of laryngealization that is realized phonetically only on the vowel; Ospina also represents words such as those in (91) phonetically as [CV̤C], and makes no mention of a VʔV structure. In my own brief sessions with a Yuhup speaker, I found the [VʔV] structure to be in some variation with laryngealized [V̤]. It is possible that the difference between Yuhup VʔV (recorded in Brazil) and Ospina's V̤ (recorded in Colombia) reflects dialectal variation.

It is also noteworthy that a number of Hup words containing a glottalized initial consonant appear to have been borrowed from Tukano, but in Tukano (currently, at any rate) the corresponding words take the form CVʔV. Examples are Hup /j'ʒ/ and Tukano *soʔô* 'spade-fish', and Hup /b'ɨʔ/ and Tukano *biʔf* 'rat'. According to Stenzel (2007), the glottal in these Tukanoan words is best analyzed as a suprasegmental feature that associates with the vowel of the root.

A possible explanation for these CVʔV correspondences to Hup C'V lies in the general flexibility of glottalic phenomena. As noted by Macaulay and Salmons (1995), the association of glottalic suprasegmental features with other segments is potentially so flexible that their targets have been shown to differ even across dialects of a single language. Similarly, Blevins (1993) observes that there is a cross-linguistic tendency for glottalization and other laryngeal node features to start out as linked to a consonant slot and then to evolve into a floating feature, with an intermediate step in which both the linked and the root-level floating features are present (i.e., the two strategies coexist). It is possible that while the glottalic feature associates with the consonant in Hup, it targets the vowel in Tukanoan languages and probably in Yuhup as well.

2.2. Syllable, morpheme, and word structure

Hup exhibits a strong isomorphism between the syllable and the morpheme; approximately 80% of Hup morphemes have only one syllable. Hup strongly prefers syllables with a CVC structure, and the vast majority of syllables have

³¹ These examples are from a word list I collected with a Yuhup speaker.

an onset (but see below for exceptions). The CVC syllable is accordingly the template for most morphemes, and also constitutes a well-formed word.

CV syllables are less common. A number of morphemes (belonging to various word classes) are underlyingly CV, but these normally surface as CV syllables only when they are immediately followed by a vowel-initial (-VC) suffix (which produces two syllables, each with its own stress/tone value); e.g., /j'ó-ót/ [čǔ.ót'] (flower-Oblique) 'with the flower'. Elsewhere – particularly when word-final or even when followed by a consonant-initial root or formative – these CV morphemes undergo a phonetic vowel-lengthening effect (CV:) to produce a single heavy syllable: e.g., /j'ó/ [čǔ:] 'flower'.

VC syllables do exist, despite Hup's general requirement of syllable onsets. However, these are morphologically restricted to the set of vowel-initial suffixes (which are underlyingly VC; cf. §3.4.1.2), and have a surface realization as VC syllables only when they are directly preceded by a CV root; e.g., *yú-úy* [d'yú.úy] 'waiting'. The fact that no epenthetic consonant is inserted at the syllable/morpheme boundary shows that Hup's preference for onsets may be overridden, and is also evidence that these suffixes do not involve an empty consonant slot (while they do involve an empty vowel slot). As noted above (§2.1.2.1), when the preceding root has a consonantal coda, the vowel-initial suffix takes an onset from the coda of the root, which becomes geminate: *wób-óy* [wób^m.^mbóy]. This results in two CVC syllables – Hup's preferred structure.

Given that VC morphemes (and syllables) are limited to this small set of bound suffixes, all words in Hup necessarily have an initial consonant. This may be a glottal stop. Evidence that word-initial glottal stops do indeed occupy an underlying consonant slot comes from the lexicalization of certain bimorphemic forms, which tends to preserve the glottal stop (even at the expense of another consonant): *tih* + *?ãy* → *tã?ãy* (3sg + FEM → 'woman'); *tih* + *?ág* → *ta?ág* (3sg + FEM → 'the/its fruit' (cf. §5.4). The same glottal-preserving phenomenon is also found in reduplication contexts: *?id-* 'speak' → *?i?id-* 'stammer'.

As noted above, Hup has no diphthongs and no syllable-internal consonant clusters. Adjacent consonants are normally only acceptable across morpheme boundaries, as in verb or noun compounds, with the marginal exception of the homorganic stop clusters in reduplicated forms and relexicalized former compounds (which, as noted above, are synchronically not clearly bimorphemic; cf. §2.5). The Hup preference for avoiding morpheme-internal clusters is illustrated by such borrowed Portuguese words as *escada* 'ladder', which Hup speakers typically pronounce *sikada*, and by the reduction of medial consonant clusters undergone by formerly bimorphemic forms in the process of lexicalization to create monomorphemic words (see §2.5). The few exceptions to the generalization against non-homorganic morpheme-internal clusters are mostly cases involving glottal consonants in reduplicated or relexicalized forms (and possibly in certain

borrowings): /ʔ/ as first-syllable coda in words such as /baʔt̪ɪb/ ‘spirit’, /baʔt̪úk/ ‘dark’, and reduplicated /wiʔwiʔ-/ ‘tremble’ (cf. §2.5); and /h/ as second-syllable onset (limited mainly to the Barreira dialect) in /wædhó/ ‘sun, moon’, and a few other forms.

While Hup strongly favors a syllable-morpheme isomorphism, it also permits words of more than one syllable; these, however, are almost all limited to two syllables. With the exception of ideophones (which are phonologically unusual; see §15.7), only a handful of words have three or more syllables. These are almost all names of birds or flying creatures, and probably have an onomatopoeic or ideophonic origin (a few may also be borrowed). Examples include *pitidih* ‘Tropical Cane Bird’, *kɔdɔhɔhɔg* ‘morpho butterfly’, and *wɔdɔkɔw* ‘Speckled Chachalaca’.

Most bisyllabic monomorphemic words in Hup fall into two categories, defined by their medial consonant. Both categories share the general preference that vowel quality should be the same across the two syllables. In the first group, the initial and medial consonants differ, but the medial consonant is either /h/ or /w/:

- (92) /~bɔhɔy/ [mɔhɔỹ] *mɔhɔy* ‘deer’
 /wəhəd/ [wəhədⁿ] ‘old (man)’
 /pɪhɪt/ [pɪhɪt^ɿ] ‘banana’
 /yɔhɔy/ [yɔhɔy] ‘search for’
 /cuwūk/ [čuwūk^ɿ] ‘cotton’
 /yiwík/ [yiwík^ɿ] ‘heavy’

In the second category, the initial and medial consonants are identical. All of these words appear to be reduplicated forms (but, as noted above, for many the non-reduplicated ‘root’ is meaningless). Examples include the following:

- (93) /b’eb’ěp/ [ᵐbɛp.bɛp^ɿ] ‘butterfly’
 /~dudút/ [nun.nút^ɿ] ‘moth’
 /totób’/ [tot.tóp^ɿ] ‘Black-tailed Trogon (bird)’
 /~pɔpɔh/ [pɔp.pɔh̃] ‘blue, green’
 /kikid/ [kik.kidⁿ] ‘tickle’

There are also a few exceptional forms which fall outside of both these categories. These are bisyllabic morphemes having different initial and medial consonants, where the medial consonant is not /h/ or /w/. In a very few cases, such

exceptional forms also have different vowels, and/or include medial consonant clusters (usually involving /h/ or /ʔ/, as noted above). Examples include the following:

(94) /~yoʔób/	[yɔʔɔ́m]	yɔʔɔ́m	‘dangerous, powerful’
/~puʔúk/	[pũʔú́k ^ʷ]	pũʔú́k	‘coca’
/cidiʔ/	[číríʔ]		‘bag’ (dialectal variant)
/~bidíʔ/	[mĩníŋ]	mĩníŋ	‘straight, direct’
/bótók/	[^m bótók ^ʷ]		‘ear’
/wɔhwæw/	[wɔhwæw]		‘dove’

There are a number of ways to account for the non-canonical forms of such words. Some, like /wɔhwæw/ ‘dove’, are undoubtedly onomatopoeic; the name closely mimics the bird’s call.

Many other such unusual words are derived historically from bimorphemic forms (cf. §2.5). Examples of what were probably once bimorphemic forms include /cug^ʷǽt/ [čuk^ʷǽt^ʷ] ‘leaf, paper’, possibly from /j^ʷúg-g^ʷǽt/ ‘forest-leaf’, /yãʔamhõʔ/ ‘dog’, from /yãʔám/ ‘jaguar’ and an unidentified form /hõʔ/, and /~hutæh/ ‘bird’, probably from /~hú/ ‘animal’ and /tæh/ ‘small’. Words of more speculative origin are /wædhó/ ‘sun, moon’ (compare /wæd/ ‘eat, food’, and /hó/ ‘liver’) and /~yoʔób/ yɔʔɔ́m ‘powerful, dangerous, scary’, possibly from the ‘Intangible’ demonstrative /yi/ and /~ʔób/ ʔɔ́m- ‘fear’ (compare yaʔăp ‘that’s all’, which is more clearly derived from /yi-ʔăp/ [Dem + Quantifier]).

Still other bisyllabic Hup morphemes with non-canonical form are undoubtedly borrowings. Examples include /~cadă/ [čănă:] cană ‘pineapple’ (from Tukano *sêra*), and /bicíw/ ‘spirit type’ from Tukano *biisú*.

Finally, there are many cases in which the origin of the non-canonical word is unknown. Examples of such unexplained exceptions to the general rule are /~bidíʔ/ [mĩníŋ] mĩníŋ ‘straight, direct’ and /bótók/ [^mbótók^ʷ] ‘ear’.

In keeping with Hup’s strong preference for words of one to two syllables, borrowings from Portuguese of more than two syllables are usually shortened. Many examples are provided by personal names, such as *hóc* [hó^yt^ʷ] ‘Rosineia’, *céb* [čěb^m] nickname ‘Zebu’ (after the cow), and *cidi* [čírí:] ‘Selina’. The main exception to this reduction of borrowed Portuguese words to one or two syllables occurs where the Portuguese form has a word-final *r* or consonant cluster involving *r*. Because the Hup flap [r] (an allophone of /d/ and /t/) can occur only between vowels, such words receive an epenthetic vowel before or after

the *r*; e.g., /motúdu/ [motúru] ‘motor’ (from *motor*); /padátu/ [parátu] ‘plate’ (from *prato*).³²

The well-formed word in Hup is somewhat more constrained than are the syllable and the morpheme. Without exception, the Hup word must begin with a consonant and end with a bimoraic syllable (i.e., [C]VC or [C]VV, where the lengthened vowel is not phonemic [see above]). Hup words also conform to violable soft constraints: In particular, the ideal monomorphemic Hup word should be composed of a single CVC syllable; if it has two syllables, then the vowel quality should be the same across both, and the medial consonant should be either /h/ or /w/ (or identical to the initial consonant in the case of reduplicated forms, which are not clearly monomorphemic). In general, bimorphemic words that are becoming relexicalized as monomorphemic forms are under pressure to conform to this ideal, and tend to undergo vowel harmonization and other processes to accommodate to it (cf. §2.5). These preferences thus yield a continuum of word types in Hup, beginning with the ideal CVC word and expanding outward to include words that are less and less consistent with this ideal. Such a continuum effect has also been identified for constraints on the lexicons of other languages; e.g., Ito and Mester (1995) for Japanese.

A discussion of the various criteria for defining the phonological word in Hup – especially for multimorphemic words (involving root compounding, etc.) falling at the far end of this continuum – is provided in §3.2.1.

2.3. Prosodic features

Hup’s primary prosodic features are nasalization and word-accent, the latter combining contrastive tone and lexical stress. Both of these are phonemic, and take the syllable (and usually the morpheme) as their primary domain.

2.3.1. Nasalization

Nasalization is a morpheme-level or – minimally – a syllable-level feature in Hup. In other words, every syllable, and almost every morpheme, is specified as either fully nasal or fully oral. Nasality therefore targets all segments within this

³² Note, however, that many of these words were likely borrowed through Tukano (the immediate source of many Portuguese words that enter Hup, since speakers are bilingual in Tukano but do not generally speak Portuguese). This epenthesis phenomenon therefore probably reflects phonotactic constraints of Tukano (which also has an inter-vocalic flap as an allophone of /d/) rather than or as much as it reflects those of Hup.

domain equally, and nasality or orality cannot be considered a property of the individual segment. As noted above, nasal morphemes in the phonemic transcriptions herein are represented with a leading tilde, e.g., /~báh/ (cf. 95–104 below).

As discussed in §2.1 above, all segmental phonemes in Hup – with the exception of voiceless obstruents, which are not targets for nasality – have both nasal and oral variants, depending on the nasal or oral value of the morpheme/syllable in which they occur. Thus [m], [n], [ñ], [ŋ] are all allophones of the voiced stop series /b/, /d/, /j/, /g/, and glottalized [mʰ], [nʰ], [ñʰ], and [ŋʰ] are allophones of the glottalized stops. The glides /w/ and /y/ and the fricatives /h/ and /ç/ are also nasalized in nasal contexts. The same applies to vowels, although the nine-vowel system is reduced to six vowels in nasal environments (see §2.1.1). Note, however, that some of these nasal and oral allophones of individual phonemes are represented with different symbols in the orthography used in this grammar; this approach to representing nasality was chosen as more user-friendly, and is discussed in §2.4 below.

Many Hup words contrast on the basis of nasalization. Examples of minimal pairs or near-minimal pairs are the following:

- (95) /wǎh/ [wǎh] ‘River Indian’
 /~wǎh/ [wǎ̃h] wǎ̃h ‘resin’
- (96) /báh/ [ᵐbáh] ‘acará fish (sp.)’
 /~báh/ [mǎ̃h] mǎ̃h ‘near’
- (97) /húʔ/ [húʔ] ‘pium (insect)’
 /~huʔ/ [hũʔ] hũʔ- ‘finish’
- (98) /dʰad/ [ᵐdᵐadᵐ] ‘paint with genipap (dye)’
 /~dʰád/ [ᵐᵏᵐ] ‘foot-flea’
- (99) /jʰáh/ [čǎh] ‘earth, land’
 /~jʰáh/ [čǎ̃h] jʰǎ̃h ‘cará’
- (100) /hǎh/ [hǎh] ‘smoke (fish, meat, etc.)’
 /~hǎh/ [hǎ̃h] hǎ̃h- ‘make noise’

- (101) /páʔ/ [páʔ] ‘shallow aturá basket’
 /~páʔ/ [páʔ] pǎʔ ‘frog sp.’
- (102) /bób/ [ʰbóbʰ] ‘matá-matá (tree sp.)’
 /~bób/ [mǒm] mǒm ‘axe’
- (103) /dɔʔ/ [ʰdɔʔ] ‘count’
 /~dɔʔ/ [nɔʔ] nɔʔ- ‘give’
- (104) /yǒh/ [ʰyǒh] ‘affinal relative’
 /~yǒh/ [ʰyǒh̃] yǒh̃ ‘medicine’

While almost all Hup morphemes are either fully nasal or fully oral, there are a few examples of words that are (at least synchronically) monomorphemic but combine one nasal syllable with one oral syllable. Some of these exceptional forms are listed in (105); most or all are probably derived historically from two morphemes, although synchronically they are lexicalized as a unitary morpheme.

- (105) a) *dʼapũh̃* [ʰdapũh̃] ‘hand’
 (from *dʼap* ‘flesh’?? + *ʔũh̃* ‘sibling/reciprocal/interactive’??)³³
 Compare the fully nasalized variant [nãpũh̃]
- b) *yãʔambõʔ* [yãʔãmhõʔ] or *yãʔambõʔ* [yãʔãmbõʔ] ‘dog’
 (from *yãʔám* ‘jaguar’ + ??)
- c) *tõhódʰ* [tõhódʰ] ‘collared peccary’ (from *tõh̃* ‘pig’ + ??)
- d) *mõyǎk* [mõyǎkʰ] ‘mirror’ (etymology unclear)

Mixed nasal-oral forms also include words borrowed from Portuguese, particularly personal names:

³³ Compare Tukano *amû paʼma* ‘hand’ (*amû* ‘superior part’; *paʼma* ‘group of things connected one to the other’; cf. Ramirez 1997b: 7, 135).

- (106) *mandú* 'Manuel'
míngu 'Domingo'
mingáw 'Miguel'

While these bisyllabic morphemes are exceptional in their mixed nasal-oral quality, it is important to note that nasality and orality in Hup are still consistently (and apparently altogether without exception) a property of the syllable as a whole. Accordingly, Hup speakers have trouble distinguishing between such Portuguese pairs as *bandeira* 'flag' and *madeira* 'wood', in which the contrast is syllable-internal.

Nasal spreading is extremely limited in Hup. In general, nasal spreading does not occur across morpheme boundaries. The only exceptions involve the vowel-copying suffixes, in which the copied vowel takes on the nasal or oral quality of the root vowel along with its other features (e.g., /~dæd/ + /Vy/ → /~dæd-æy/ *næn-æy*), and cases in which a historically bimorphemic form is relexicalized to form a synchronically monomorphemic form (e.g., example 107 below). Otherwise, nasal spreading does not occur even between a root and a non-copying vowel-initial suffix. For example, the Inchoative suffix *-ay* is always oral (and accordingly conditions a nasal-oral medial consonant sequence via coda gemination when preceded by a consonant-final nasal root): /~pǎ/ + /ay/ [pǎ.ay] (Negative existence + Inchoative); /~hab/ + /ay/ [hám.bay] ('go' + Inchoative); /~dæd/ + /ay/ [nǎn.day] ('come' + Inchoative). The Object suffix *-ǎn*, which is always nasal, likewise does not undergo or condition spreading: /baʔtǐb'/ + /ǎn/ [baʔtǐp̣̣̣.mǎn] ('spirit' + Object).

When nasal spreading does occur as part of the lexicalization process – in which over time a bimorphemic form (usually a noun or verb compound) develops an identity as a unitary or even monomorphemic lexical item – it usually proceeds from right to left. This directionality probably has to do with the fact that the phrase-final element is normally the syntactic (and semantic) head of the compound, and/or with the tendency of the final syllable in the word to bear the primary lexical stress. In most cases, nasal spreading simply accompanies vowel harmonization (which likewise proceeds from right to left; e.g., 107a). In a few cases, however, it applies even in the absence of any harmonization process (107b).

- (107) a) *tǐh* + *ʔǎy* → *tǎʔǎy*
 3sg FEM woman
 'woman'

b) *d'apúh* → *n'apúh* [nǎpúh] (variant) 'hand' (cf. 100a above)

Comparative note

As in Hup, nasalization generally appears as a morpheme-level prosodic feature in Yuhup and in the neighboring Tukanoan languages. In Hup's more distant sister Dâw (which has only marginal contact with Tukano), on the other hand, nasalization is not a feature of the morpheme or the syllable, but is restricted to segmental phonemes. Both vowels and consonants in Dâw have contrastive nasality, and nasal consonants and voiced stops can co-occur in the same morpheme or syllable. The Dâw cognates of many morphemes that are either fully nasal or fully oral in Hup contain both nasal and oral segments. In the most distant relative Nadëb (which has no contact with Tukano), nasalization is likewise a property of individual segments, and not of the morpheme as a whole. These facts suggest that prosodic nasalization entered Hup (and Yuhup) via diffusion from Tukano, although the possibility that it arose autonomously via nasal spreading within the syllable cannot be conclusively ruled out.

2.3.2. Word-accent: tone and stress

Hup has a restricted system of contrastive lexical tone. Tone contrasts are restricted to syllables bearing primary stress (and in such cases the tonal contrast, which depends on the contour, is only clearly audible on those stressed syllables that are word-final). This kind of restricted tone system has been characterized as a 'word-accent system' (cf. Remijsen and van Heuven 2005: 227, Riad 1998). A system of 'word-accent' (also termed 'polytonicity' and 'tone accent') shares features with pitch-accent, tone, and stress systems, but is distinct from all of these. As in a tone language, the Hup word-accent system exhibits a paradigm of word-level tone contrasts; as in a pitch-accent language, the tone contrast is restricted to one syllable per word; and finally, as in many stress systems, the accented syllable in the word is generally predictable and is 'singled out' by the same phonetic features that typically distinguish lexical stress in other languages – greater intensity, longer duration, and higher pitch.

In Hup, tone and lexical stress work together, and they are accordingly discussed side by side in this section. Note that to avoid orthographic redundancy, stress is indicated only by the tone diacritic (ˇ or ˘) over the vowel in these examples (rather than having both a stress diacritic and a tone diacritic on the same syllable).

2.3.2.1. Lexical stress patterns

Hup has relatively consistent lexical stress patterns. Independent words (i.e., those that are not cliticized or bound to other words) receive stress; for those that are monomorphemic and of more than one syllable, stress almost invariably falls on the final syllable of the word. The same final stress pattern occurs in many noun compounds and in noun-adjective noun phrases (see §5.1 and §6.6). For independent lexical items, the only exceptions to this rule that have been encountered are borrowed Portuguese words (in which stress tends to conform to the stress pattern of the word as it is pronounced in Portuguese, e.g., /bóda/ ‘ball’, from *bola*), and one idiosyncratic Hup noun *húhu?* ‘pacu (fish sp.)’.³⁴

The stress patterns of multimorphemic words are more varied. Stress on noun compounds depends largely on the type of compound (see §5.1). More lexicalized compounds (i.e., those having a meaning that is not predictable from the component parts) tend to place stress word-finally (on the model of monomorphemic words), but there are many exceptions.

The stress patterns of verbs conform to certain regular patterns, but are partially determined by the lexical identity of the particular Boundary Suffix that is attached to the stem. As discussed in detail in §3.4 and §8.3, a verb in most clause types is expressed as a grammatical word composed of multiple morphemes. Minimally, the verb word must normally include a root and a Boundary Suffix; maximally, it can be composed of multiple roots and other formatives, according to the following template (see §8.3). Note that the Boundary Suffix marks the end of the verbal ‘core’, while the verbal ‘periphery’ is made up of enclitics and particles.

Prefix – **Root** – [(Prefix) Root...] – Inner Suffix – [Inner Suffix...] – **Boundary Suffix** = Enclitic = [Enclitic...] Particle [Particle...]

The Hup Boundary Suffixes are lexically marked for stress, and also determine the stress pattern of the phonological verb word as a whole (which may be composed of all the formatives in the above template except the particles, which lie outside the phonological word). As discussed in §3.4.1, some Boundary Suffixes take the primary stress of the phonological verb word, yielding the pattern (...stem-suffix), in which only the Boundary Suffix receives primary stress (underlined here). Other Boundary Suffixes condition stress on the final syllable of the stem (which may belong to a root or to an Inner Suffix); within this last

³⁴ This word *húhu?* may itself have been borrowed from Tukano *uhú* ‘pacu fish’, but it is not clear why this would have motivated the non-canonical stress pattern, since the Tukano form is stressed on the second syllable.

type, the Boundary Suffix itself may also take stress equal to that of the stem (...stem-suffix), or it may be unstressed (...stem-suffix). Accordingly, verb compounds – which may be composed of as many as five roots, multiple Inner Suffixes, and one Boundary Suffix – normally receive no more than one to two primary stresses per (phonological) word, which occur(s) on the final syllable or two syllables of the word. Any prefixes that may be present are normally unstressed, as are all roots that precede the final root in the compound. To the extent that the non-root formatives in the template above also combine with nouns, the resulting word tends to conform to these same lexically determined stress patterns, although there are certain exceptions (see below).

Peripheral formatives (i.e., those formatives which follow the Boundary Suffix in a verb) are also lexically marked for stress or lack of stress. Enclitics are by definition unstressed; particles – which generally follow the enclitics – are by definition stressed and are therefore considered to be phonologically separate from the rest of the verb (cf. §3.4.2).

For certain bound formatives, stress patterns may vary somewhat depending on the part of speech they attach to or their position in the clause. However, this does not seem to be predictable for formative classes generally, but is a property of the individual morpheme. For example, the Dependent suffix *-Vp* is generally stressed when it occurs on clause-final nominal subjects (as a topic or emphasis marker), but is unstressed elsewhere (cf. §7.1.5):

- (108) *n'íp g'é^t-ep = wəd-áh cáw-ǎ́p*
 that stand-DEP=RESP-FOC other-DEP
 'That other old fellow standing there' (serve drink to him!) (cv)

Perhaps because word-level stress patterns are so intricate in Hup, secondary metrical stress does not appear to play an important role. There is some indication of an iambic metrical stress pattern; for example, alternating syllables of a compound verb may take a weak secondary stress, and certain formatives that normally appear as unstressed enclitics are stressed when they immediately follow another unstressed enclitic. In general, however, rhythmic stress patterns are minimally salient in Hup, and the nuances of metrical stress and its interaction with lexical stress must await future research.

2.3.2.2. *Tone*

Tonal contrasts in Hup occur mainly in nouns and adjectives, although there is some evidence suggesting that verb roots may have underlying tonal values as well. Tones are also realized on stressed grammatical formatives.

Hup has two phonemic tones, realized as rising and high, which occur exclusively on stressed syllables; the Hup system is accordingly defined as a word-accent system, as discussed above (§2.3.2). Phonetically, Hup also has a falling contour tone, which is an allophone of the high tone (note, however, that it is not altogether clear which should be considered underlying; see below). Unstressed syllables take a default phonetic low tone. As mentioned above, orthographically tone and stress are both indicated together by a single diacritic on the vowel of the syllable: \check{v} (stress and rising tone); \acute{v} (stress and high [falling] tone).

The tonal value and/or its allophonic realization are partially predictable from the syllable template (CVCvoiced, CVCvoiceless, or CV; see below for further discussion). Stressed syllables in which the coda consonant is voiced (CVCvoiced) receive either a rising or a falling contour tone (109). As Figures 11a and b illustrate, the voiced coda consonant – such as a post-nasalized obstruent – typically accommodates part of the contour; note the dip downward (a) or upward (b) in the level of the line indicating pitch (in the pitch graph) where it corresponds to the postnasalized segment $[g^{\text{N}}]$ (in the waveform graph).

- (109) /t $\acute{a}g$ / [t $\acute{a}g^{\text{N}}$] ‘tooth’ (falling)
 /t $\check{e}g$ / [t $\check{e}g^{\text{N}}$] ‘wood, stick’ (rising)

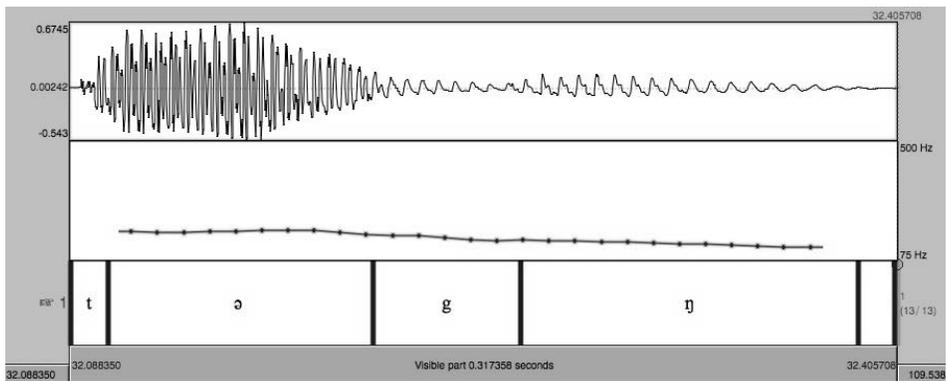


Figure 11a. Falling tone, CVCvoiced syllable (/t $\acute{a}g$ / [t $\acute{a}g^{\text{N}}$] ‘tooth’)

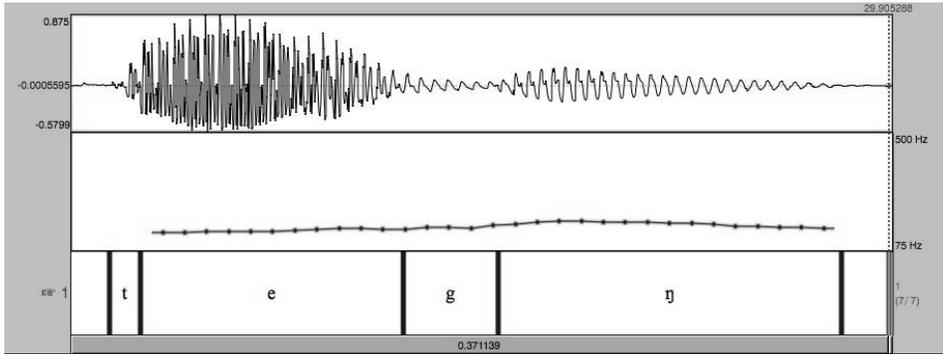


Figure 11b. Rising tone, CVCvoiced syllable (/těg/ [těg^ŋ] ‘wood, stick’)

Syllables with a voiceless coda consonant (CVCvoiceless) can receive either high or rising tone:

- (110) /~dúh/ [nũh̃] *núh* ‘head’ (high)
 /~dũh/ [nũh̄] *nũh* ‘tapioca’ (rising)

This is illustrated in Figure 12a and b; compare the high, nearly level pitch on the vowel in (a) with the rising pitch on the vowel in (b).

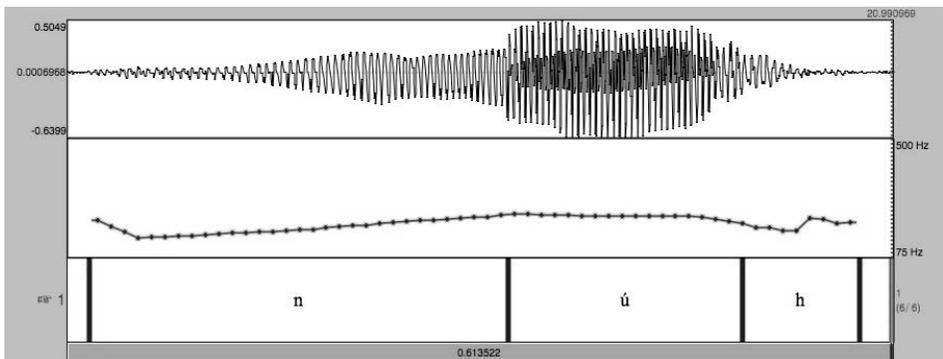


Figure 12a. High tone, CVCvoiceless syllable (/~dúh/ *núh* ‘head’)

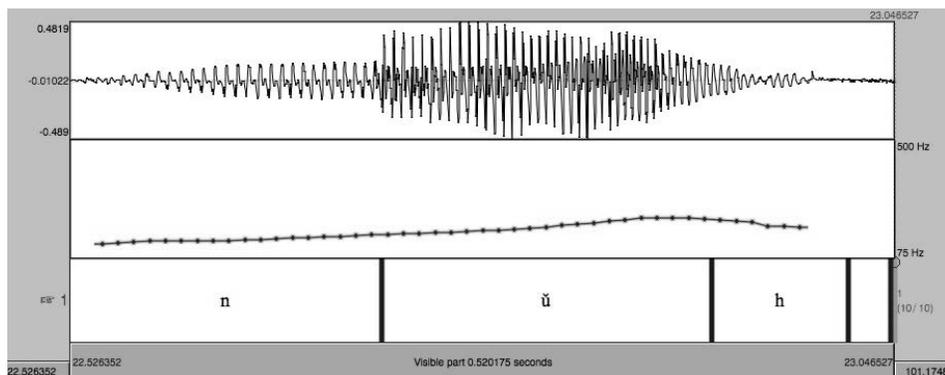


Figure 12b. Rising tone, CVC voiceless syllable (/~dũh/ *nũh* ‘tapioca’)

Syllables with an underlying CV template, realized as [CV:] when word-final, almost always take falling tone:

(111) /j’á/ [čĕ:] ‘black’ (falling)

Exceptions to this rule all appear to be borrowings from Tukano or Portuguese, such as the following:

(112) /j’š/ [čš:] ‘spade-fish’ (rising tone; probably from Tukano *so?ô*);
 compare Hup /j’š/ [čš:] ‘flower’ (falling tone)
 /~cadã/ [čãñã] *canã* ‘pineapple’ (rising tone; from Tukano *sěrá*)

Falling tone and high tone are clearly allophones; they are in complementary distribution according to syllable coda.³⁵ A voiced coda can accommodate a

³⁵ Valteir Martins, in his reconstruction of ‘Proto-Makú’, includes a short discussion of Hup tone (2005: 119–120). He claims that syllables receiving high tone are not limited to those with voiceless codas, and he considers all high-tone syllables to be atonal, while rising and falling contour tones are phonemic; in other words, high tone is considered not as an allophone of a falling contour, but rather as a default tone on stressed syllables (whereas low tone is the default on unstressed syllables). I consider this analysis to be suspect on several accounts. First, while there are many two-way tonal contrasts of both rising vs. falling and rising vs. high in Hup, I have discovered no minimal pair that contrasts falling vs. high tone (Martins also cites no such contrast). Second, I have found that consultants apparently do not find the high vs. falling distinction particularly salient; my pronunciation of a CVC voiceless word with a falling contour or a

falling contour,³⁶ whereas a voiceless coda cannot. Such a correlation between tone and syllable coda (such that a falling contour or downglide is possible with a voiced coda but not with a voiceless one) is reported to be fairly common cross-linguistically; for example, in Central Carrier (Pike 1986), high-tone syllables with a CV and CVCvoiced template downglide when word-final, while CVCvoiceless syllables do not downglide.

However, it is not entirely clear in Hup whether the high tone or the falling tone should be considered the basic underlying tone value, with the other representing the allophone. One possible scenario would be that falling tone is underlying, yielding a symmetrical pattern of two opposing contour tones; a voiceless coda consonant would therefore reduce the tone contour, because the voiced part of the rhyme (i.e., the main tone-bearing unit of syllable nucleus + coda) would be relatively short.

However, this scenario does not explain why a CVCvoiceless syllable can accommodate a *rising* contour. If it can take a contour at all, then why can it not take a falling contour in just the same way as it takes a rising contour? A reasonable explanation for this would assume the high tone to be underlying, and the falling contour a default downglide that is accommodated by the voiced coda. This analysis is also consistent with the fact that the presence of both level and contour tones is more common among the world's tone systems than is the presence of only contour tones (Yip 2007: 231). A phonetic downglide after a high tone is also cross-linguistically common and is presumably acoustically motivated by a word-final drop in pitch and intensity.

For the purposes of this discussion, then, the high contour will be assumed to be the underlying tonal value, and the falling tone the allophone, but the final word on this will have to be left to future research. A further feature of the Hup

CVCvoiced word with a high tone does not elicit any particular reaction on their part. Third, imperative mood in Hup is indicated by high or falling tone on the verb stem, depending only on the coda of the final syllable, suggesting that these have a single underlying value. Finally, Martins' analysis can offer no explanation for his claim that CVCvoiceless syllables can be atonal or take rising tone, but never take falling tone; in my account of high and falling tone as allophones, on the other hand, CVCvoiceless and CVCvoiced syllables can each take both phonemic tone values (rising and high), and the allophonic distribution of high vs. falling corresponds to cross-linguistically typical patterns of interaction between tone and syllable weight.

³⁶ For CVCvoiced syllables that are stressed but not word-final, however, what would otherwise be realized as a falling contour is often truncated to a simple high tone, especially in faster speech.

tone system that awaits explanation is the fact that open CV [CV:] syllables almost always take a falling contour rather than a rising one.

As Figures 11 and 12 above illustrate, the vowel is the main tone-bearing unit in Hup; but voiced coda consonants (such as the postnasalized stops in 11) also are able to accommodate part of the contour, especially in the case of falling tone. However, the tonal contour also appears to have an effect on the onset consonant: when the syllable-initial consonant is a sonorant (i.e., a glide or nasal), this sonorant tends to be significantly longer relative to the vowel in syllables with falling/high tone than in syllables with rising tone. In Figure 12 above, for example, the initial consonant [n] in the high-tone syllable *núh* ‘head’ is twice as long as the vowel in the same word (300 ms vs. 150 ms); in the rising-tone syllable *nǔh* ‘tapioca’, on the other hand, the initial [n] is almost exactly as long as the following vowel (about 225 ms vs. 225 ms). Similarly, as these figures also illustrate, the vowel in syllables with contour tone (rising or falling) tends to be longer than the vowel in CVCvoiceless syllables with high tone. Unstressed syllables, with their default low tone, likewise have relatively short vowel length.

Tone in Hup does nevertheless appear to be independent of the *type* of onset consonant present in the syllable. In particular, the presence of a glottalized consonant in onset position has no apparent influence on the tone of the syllable (cf. examples 114 and 116 below). Tone also appears to be independent of the type of coda consonant present; however, a high proportion of the lexical minimal pairs with contrastive tone appear to have glottal consonants (/ʔ/ or /h/) in coda position. This and the fact that CV syllables always take high (falling) tone may provide a clue to the mystery of tonogenesis in Hup and its sister languages.

Hup has many minimal pairs that contrast solely on the basis of tone. In the following examples, the morpheme with high (falling) tone is listed first, followed by the morpheme with rising tone.

- (113) /cáʔ/ [čáʔ] ‘box, nest’
 /cǎʔ/ [čǎʔ] ‘clump of roots’
- (114) /jʔw/ [čǰw] ‘water snake sp.’
 /jʔw/ [čǰw] ‘pupunha (palm sp.)’
- (115) /~tóh/ [tǒh] *tǒh* ‘pig’
 /~tǒh/ [tǒh] *tǒh* ‘caterpillar’

- (116) /b'ók/ [ᵐbɔ́kʰ] 'skin, bark'
 /b'ók/ [ᵐbɔ̌kʰ] 'mud, swamp'
- (117) /cúk/ [čúkʰ] 'tool handle'
 /cũk/ [čũkʰ] 'owl'
- (118) /~wáʔ/ [wǎʔ] wǎʔ 'vulture'
 /~wǎʔ/ [wǎʔ] wǎʔ 'belt'
- (119) /~yóh/ [ʸyóh̃] yóh̃ 'tipiti'
 /~yǒh/ [ʸyǒh̃] yǒh̃ 'medicine'
- (120) /bîg/ [ᵐbîgᵀ] 'anteater'
 /bĩg/ [ᵐbĩgᵀ] 'a long time; old'
- (121) /~bóh/ [móh] móh 'lake'
 /~bǒh/ [mǒh] mǒh 'inambu'

Two-syllable words can likewise take either of the phonemic tone values (rising or falling) on the stressed final syllable:

- (122) /wɔwóy/ [wɔwóy] 'opossum sp.'
 /~bɔhǒy/ [mɔhǒy̌] mɔhǒy̌ 'deer'
- (123) /hudúk/ [hurúkʰ] 'Blue-crowned Mot-mot (bird sp.)'
 /cuwũk/ [čuwũkʰ] 'cotton'
- (124) /tutúd/ [tutúdᵐ] 'toad sp.'
 /bəbǎd/ [ᵐbəpǎdᵐ] 'toad sp.'
- (125) /kəwəg/ [kəwəgᵀ] personal name
 /kəwǎg/ [kəwǎgᵀ] 'eye'

A noun may take a stressed suffix and also be stressed itself (e.g., when it takes the Oblique or Object case markers). In these cases, the tone contour on the noun stem is still audible in slow, careful speech (example 126); in faster

speech, the stem tone usually sounds like a high tone, regardless of whether it is phonemically rising or high.

- (126) /~dǔh-út/ [nǔhǔ́ʔ] *nǔh-út* ‘on the tapioca’
 /~dúh-út/ [núhǔ́ʔ] *núh-út* ‘on the head’

The question of whether or not tone contrasts exist for verb roots has not yet been fully settled. In general, tonal contours seem to be largely neutralized on verb roots. This is probably due at least in part to the fact that verb roots almost never appear word-finally, except in the Apprehensive and Imperative moods (in which tone values do appear; see below). Elsewhere in Hup, tone contours are maximally audibly salient on word-final syllables; in general, stressed syllables that are not word-final – particularly within verb compounds – receive what appears to be a default high tone. When asked to judge tone values of uninflected verb roots in elicitation contexts, consultants usually classify them as having falling/high tone, but are frequently inconsistent and seem uncertain. There are exceptions to this generalization, however. At least three minimal pairs for tone have been identified for verb roots:

- (127) /túk/ [túkʰ] ‘want’
 /tǔk/ [tǔkʰ] ‘(to) sting (ant or wasp)’
- (128) /túh/ [túh] ‘stay, pause’
 /tǔh/ [tǔh] ‘be blackened with soot; color something black with charcoal’
- (129) /táh/ [táh] ‘break’
 /tǎh/ [tǎh] ‘fall over in wind (tree)’

In each of these pairs, one member (the second in the above examples) is frequently used as a noun (i.e., ‘a sting’; ‘soot’; ‘wind-felled tree’), and in each case this root is the one that takes rising tone. Since nouns derived from verbs typically are assigned rising tone in Hup (see below), it is possible that these verbal tone contrasts are due to a process of conversion or association with the nominal form.

There is, however, at least one context in Hup in which verb roots are given consistent and non-predictable tone values. This is the Apprehensive mood (see §14.6), in which verb roots occur bare (i.e., without a Boundary Suffix), and are accordingly word-final:

(130) *?am nɔh !*

2sg fall.APPR

'(Watch out,) you'll fall!' (cv)

Whether the Apprehensive verb root receives falling or rising tone is not predictable (with the exception of CV syllables, which virtually always take falling tone), as the following list of Apprehensive forms illustrates. These verbs were elicited multiple times from several speakers in two different dialect areas (Tat Deh and Barreira), with almost no inconsistencies among the responses. Moreover, some of these verbs are not commonly used in this mode, but their tone values are nevertheless consistent across speakers. The tonal differences can thus safely be taken as reliably established.

(131) *čĩy'* 'poke, vaccinate'*ciʔ-d'ǎk* 'urinate on'*g'ǎç* 'bite'*wí* 'give something back to'*mǎh* 'hit, kill'*nɔ* 'say (to)'*hǔ* 'burn up'*hǔh* 'make noise'*yǎʔ* 'singe, get burned'*cǔb* 'point out'*hup-yɔd* 'hide oneself (from)' [Reflexive-hide]

That verbs in the Apprehensive mode receive consistent and non-predictable tone values suggests that Hup verb roots in general do in fact have underlying tone, just as do nouns and adjectives. The case for this is strengthened further by the fact that, for some of the verbs in the elicited list above, it seems unlikely that the tone values would have been learned through regular exposure to their Apprehensive forms (because these rarely occur in discourse). Moreover, when the verbs in the minimal pairs in (127–129) above appear in the Apprehensive mode, their tone assignment is consistent with that identified by consultants for the roots themselves. One possible way in which speakers might learn these tonal values is in contexts in which a stressed verb stem combines with an unstressed Boundary Suffix, particularly the statistically frequent Dependent marker *-Vp* (e.g., *wǎd-æp* 'eat-DEP'); since in this environment the (final syllable-

ble of the) stem is the only stressed element in the word, it is possible that a contour could be distinguished.

At this point in the study of Hup, the question of whether or not verb roots are underlyingly marked for contrastive lexical tone must be left open. Tone contrasts are accordingly not indicated on verb roots in this grammar; stressed roots, which in most (multimorphemic) contexts are pronounced as if they simply received high tone, are always marked as such (´). It is hoped that future investigation will resolve this question.

Stressed grammatical formatives – i.e., particles and some Boundary Suffixes – also receive tone values, although no pairs of formatives have been encountered that contrast solely on the basis of tone contour. While Inner Suffixes may be stressed, their tone is usually realized as high – as is the case with compound-final verb roots – because contours are not usually realized in word-internal position (see above).

In addition to lexical tone, Hup also has two grammatical uses of tone. First, in the basic imperative mood (see §17.5.1), the verb stem appears bare (i.e., without a Boundary Suffix) and its final syllable (which may belong either to a root or to an Inner Suffix) invariably receives a high (falling) tone:

- (132) *key-* ‘look, see’ *kéy* (look.IMP) ‘look!’
 ham- ‘go’ *ham-yí?* (go-TEL.IMP) ‘go!’

Tone also plays a role in the derivation of nouns from verbs in Hup, although the productivity of this process is limited (see §4.6.1). When a verb stem without a Boundary Suffix acts as a derived noun, the default tone assignment for the noun is a rising contour (but many exceptions exist):

- (133) *bí?*- ‘work, make’ *bí?* ‘work to be done, job’
 hæp- ‘sweep’ *hæp* ‘work of sweeping’
 hí?- ‘write’ *hí?* ‘writing’

Comparative note

The most striking aspect of Hup’s tone system from a comparative perspective is its nearly mirror-image resemblance to the tone (word-accent) system in Yuhup. While the word-final lexical stress pattern is essentially the same in the two languages, rising tone on Yuhup words corresponds quite consistently to high (falling) tone on their Hup cognates; likewise, high/falling tone in Yuhup corresponds to rising tone in Hup. The same allophony between falling tone and

high tone (dependent on whether the coda consonant is voiced or voiceless, respectively) exists in both languages.

- (134) Hup /cúg/ [čûg^h] ‘hummingbird’
 Yuhup /cǔg/ [čǔg^h] ‘hummingbird’
- (135) Hup /~dúh/ [núh̃] *núh* ‘head’
 /~dǔh/ [nǔh̃] *nǔh* ‘tapioca’
 Yuhup /~dǔh/ [núh̃] *nǔh* ‘head’
 /~dúh/ [núh̃] *núh* ‘tapioca’

This mirror-image tone pattern can undoubtedly be explained in one of two ways. In one scenario, the common ancestor of Hup and Yuhup could have been without phonemic tone, and the two daughter languages could have developed tone independently in response to the same segmental cues (such as vowel length, phonation, etc.), as has occurred within the Athabaskan family and among languages of East and Southeast Asia (Kingston 2005). In the alternative scenario, the common ancestor of Hup and Yuhup could have had contrastive tone – or at least the beginnings of a tone system – and either Yuhup or Hup could have undergone a tone reversal. Such a tonal flip-flop has occurred among certain Athabaskan languages (such as within the Tanacross subgroup) and in the Bantu family (cf. Kingston 2003: 88–107, 2005).

Phonemic tone also exists in Dâw, and Dâw’s tonal contours tend in general to correspond to those on cognate nouns in Hup (although there are exceptions), rather than to those in Yuhup. This could be taken as evidence for Yuhup’s having undergone a tone reversal. Phonemic tone is not found in Nadëb at all.

Tone is also a feature of the Eastern Tukanoan languages. These – and many other languages of the wider region – have systems in which tone and stress pattern together (frequently described as pitch-accent), in which the vowel of the accented syllable in a word receives high pitch (cf. Barnes 1999, Aikhenvald 2002a: 50, Gómez-Imbert and Kenstowicz 2000). This fact, together with the absence of tone in Nadëb, suggests that Hup, Yuhup, and Dâw may have developed tone through contact with neighboring languages.

2.4. Orthographic conventions

The orthographic conventions used in this grammar represent a compromise between two requirements. These are, on the one hand, to maintain consistency

with the phonology of Hup; and on the other, to maximize user-friendliness for the benefit of the reader.

This compromise comes to the fore especially in the representation of nasality. As a morpheme- or syllable-level feature, nasality is realized equally on all segments within its domain except for voiceless obstruents (§2.3.1). Thus a word like /~d'ád/ [nǎ́n] 'foot-flea' (*bicho-do-pé*) could alternatively be represented orthographically as ~d'ád (as it is phonemically; see Ospina 2002, Gómez-Imbert 2007, etc. for implementations of this strategy in other Vaupés languages), or nasality could be marked on the vowels only (e.g., d'áǎd), or on the consonants only (e.g., n'án). Of these three alternatives, the most user-friendly choice (to anyone familiar with the Roman alphabet) is surely to mark nasality on some segment within the syllable, which may be either a consonant or a vowel. Accordingly, where the voiced obstruent and glottalized obstruent phonemes /b/, /d/, /g/, /b'/, and /d'/ are present, their nasal variants are represented as *m*, *n*, *ŋ*, *m'*, and *n'* (but note that the palatal stop /j/ and the glottalized stops /j'/ and /g'/ do not have nasal variants in the orthography used here, and are simply written *j*, *j'*, and *g'*). Where these consonants are not present, nasality is marked on the vowel: *ǎ*. All other unmarked segments in these nasal syllables (with the exception of the voiceless obstruents) should be understood as nasalized; this includes vowels that are adjacent to the nasal-marked consonants, as well as other types of consonants (glides, glottalized glides, and fricatives).

In addition to being relatively user-friendly, this solution of marking syllable-level nasality on some segment within the syllable also avoids the problem of how to represent the few words that are essentially monomorphemic (at least synchronically) but combine nasal and oral syllables, such as *yã?ambõ?* 'dog' and borrowed Portuguese names like *mandú* 'Manuel'. A morpheme-level approach such as that exemplified by ~d'ád (above) would not represent these words effectively.

Other orthographic conventions used in this grammar include the use of the symbol *c* to represent the voiceless palatal stop and its various allophones: [ç, č, s, ts, ty, yt^ɿ], and the letter *j* to represent the voiced palatal stop, which corresponds to *ʃ* in the International Phonetic Alphabet. The glottalized stop series (in which voicing is neutralized) is represented using the voiced obstruent symbols *b'*, *d'*, *g'*, *j'*, even though /g'/ and /j'/ are always pronounced as voiceless ([k̚] and [č̚]). As mentioned in §2.1.2.6 (footnote), the choice of the voiced set has the advantage of allowing differentiation of the marginally phonemic voiceless /p'/ from phonetically voiced /b'/, and is consistent with the fact that both the voiced stops and the glottalized stops (but not the voiceless stops) have nasal allophones. Finally, the tone diacritic *ǎ* represents rising tone, and *á* is used for high tone (which is assumed to be underlying, with the falling contour as its allophone; cf. §2.3.2.2 above). In other respects, the working orthography used here corresponds closely to Hup phonology and the IPA alphabet.

A practical orthography is also in the process of being developed. Its primary purpose is to be a tool for the Hupd'əh themselves, in developing a native-language literacy program. This orthography has been proposed by Henri Ramirez, with some input from myself. Tables 9 and 10 compare the working orthography used in this grammar (Epps) with the practical orthography as it now stands (Ramirez).

The general approach to marking nasality in the practical orthography is the same as that described above for this grammar, except that only the consonants /~b/ *m*, /~d/ *n*, /~b'/ *m'*, and /~d'/ *n'* are represented with distinct nasal symbols. The palatal stop /c/ is written as *s*, and diacritics used to mark tone are \hat{v} for rising tone and \acute{v} for high (falling) tone. Finally, the voicing neutralization is not represented in the glottalized consonants; morpheme-initial /g'/ and /j'/ are represented essentially as they are pronounced, as voiceless *s'* and *k'*, while morpheme-finally they are written *g'* and *j'*.

There are still many problems to be worked out and decisions to be made for the practical orthography to function effectively. A distinct glottal stop symbol may be needed, because in the current system an adjacent consonant and glottal stop (C?) (which occurs across morpheme boundaries) is indistinguishable from a glottalized consonant (C'). The initial glottal in ?VC morphemes is also not currently written in the practical orthography, which may lead to confusion in multimorphemic contexts. Whether tone should be marked on all words (notably verbs, for which tone values are unclear) is presently undecided, and the current choice of tone/accent marks (particularly \hat{v} for a rising contour, but also \acute{v} for a falling contour) is somewhat counterintuitive. The voicing neutralization is not represented in the glottalized stops, resulting in two more symbols than necessary. Finally, a further concern is whether or not to write compound verbs and other morphologically complex forms (including those containing enclitics, Inner Suffixes, and CVC Boundary Suffixes) as single or multiple words. It is hoped that, as more Hup speakers become familiar with the writing system, some of these issues will be resolved through discussions within the community.

Table 9. Hup vowels in the working and practical orthographies³⁷

Phoneme	Working orthography	Practical orthography
/i/	i, ĩ	i, ĩ
/i/	ĩ, ỹ	ĩ, ỹ
/u/	u, ũ	u, ũ
/e/	e	ë
/ə/	ə	ä
/o/	o	ö
/æ/	æ, æ̃	e, ë
/a/	a, ã	a, ã
/ɔ/	ɔ, õ	o, õ

Table 10. Hup consonants in the working and practical orthographies

Phoneme	Working orthography	Practical orthography
/p/	p	p
/t/	t	t
/c/	c	s
/k/	k	k
/ʔ/	ʔ	'
/b/	b, m	b, m
/d/	d, n	d, n
/j/	j	j
/g/	g, ŋ	g
/b'/	b', m'	b', m'
/p'/	p'	p'
/d'/	d', n'	d', n'
/j'/	j'	s', j'
/g'/	g'	k', g'
/ç/	ç	ç
/h/	h	h
/w/	w	w
/y/	y	y
/w'/	w'	w'
/y'/	y'	y'

³⁷ In the practical orthography, the choice of which vowel receives the diacritic is consistent with Portuguese pronunciation of the corresponding symbols (i.e., *o* corresponds roughly to [ɔ], *e* to [æ]).

2.5. Phonological processes across morpheme boundaries

Phonological processes across morpheme boundaries in Hup are limited primarily to two domains: the attachment of vowel-initial suffixes to the stem (giving rise to morphophonemic processes), and the fusion of bimorphemic forms to yield monomorphemes (via lexicalization).

The morphophonemic processes involving vowel-initial suffixes are discussed in detail in §2.1.2.1 above, and summarized here. Vowel copying from the final syllable of the stem to the suffix occurs with a subset of the vowel-initial suffixes (see the list of suffixes in §3.4.1.2), the majority of which can be considered primarily verbal, although most also occur with nouns and (in some cases) with other parts of speech. The vowel-copying suffixes have an empty vowel slot in the syllable template; in other words, their vowel is not underlyingly specified, but is rather a copy of the immediately preceding vowel (i.e., that found in a final stem or Inner Suffix of the host; see the examples below). As discussed above, vowel-initial suffixes in general (both those that involve vowel-copying and those that do not) also trigger ‘copying’ of the final consonant of the preceding stem or formative, which geminates in order to provide an onset to the following syllable.

Other phonological processes that apply across morpheme boundaries are vowel harmony and consonant cluster simplification, which are not limited to any particular class of formative (such as Boundary Suffixes, etc.). These processes are all internal to the phonological word, and primarily involve morphemes within the word core (particularly roots strung together to form compounds). On the periphery of the word, these processes affect proclitics, but not enclitics (or particles); this probably has to do with the right to left directionality of vowel and nasal harmonizing processes, originating on stressed syllables (cf. §2.3.1).

Vowel harmony across morpheme boundaries is confined primarily to a series of (usually two) roots that form a compound and are becoming relexicalized (i.e., fused) to produce a single monomorphemic form (whereas in most compounds the component roots remain phonologically relatively independent from each other). This process is subject to lexical variation and some variation across dialects, as discussed in §2.6. It differs from vowel copying (which is limited to a subset of Boundary Suffixes) in that vowel harmony involves the spreading of vowel quality (including its nasal or oral quality) from one morpheme so as to *replace* the vowel quality of another, whereas vowel copying targets a suffix that has an unspecified underlying vowel slot to begin with. In other words, in vowel copying (unlike vowel harmony), the spreading simply fills in without pushing anything else out. In addition, vowel harmony has a right to left directionality, whereas copying is left to right. Nevertheless, the two processes plainly have much in common, and both may be motivated by the

same preferences for identical vowel quality and no non-homorganic consonant clusters within the minimal Hup word (cf. §2.2).

Consonant cluster simplification always accompanies vowel harmony; it too is subject to some dialectal variation. This process, whereby two adjacent non-homorganic consonants at an erstwhile morpheme boundary reduce to one (or to two homorganic consonants, which form the coda and onset of their respective syllables) is motivated by the constraint against consonant clusters within the morpheme. Thus bimorphemic forms that are becoming relexicalized as monomorphemic, or whose components are otherwise phonologically dependent on each other, tend to undergo simplification of the consonants at the morpheme boundary – thereby reducing this boundary. Most examples of this simplification process involve an initial obstruent taking precedence over a following continuant; however, there are a few examples involving two obstruents, in which the first usually replaces the second (e.g., *tegd'úh* [teg^hgúh] ‘tree’).

The examples below illustrate forms that have undergone both vowel harmony and consonant cluster simplification in the process of lexicalization from bimorphemic to monomorphemic forms:

(136) a) *kaday-*

kəd-way-
pass-go.out
‘go out fast’

b) *kānam-*

kəd-ham-
pass-go
‘go fast’

c) *kaʔáp*

kəwəg-ʔáp
eye-quantity
‘two’

d) *b'akāb* (some Tat Deh and Japu area speakers)

b'ək-kāb
clay? griddle?
‘griddle’

The same processes affect the third person singular pronoun *tih* = when it acts as a proclitic. This applies both to the procliticization of subject *tih* to the verb

in the Umari Norte dialect (see §3.4.2.1 below and §6.1), and to its use as a ‘dummy head’ with bound nouns and adjectives (§5.4 and §6.6), as in example (137) – although in the latter case, it should be noted that vowel harmony affects only a few relatively lexicalized forms, and even then is subject to considerable variation.

(137) a) *taʔág* (some dialectal and individual variation)

tih = *ʔág*

3sg=fruit

‘fruit’

b) *tãʔãý*

tih = *ʔãý*

3sg=FEM

‘woman’

c) *todó* (Umari Norte dialect)

tih = *dó*

3sg=red

‘red’

A number of monomorphemic lexical items convey the impression of having undergone these reductive phonological processes in the past, but they are no longer etymologically transparent. Examples include *yaʔáp* (possibly from *yí-ʔáp* [DEM.ITG-QUANTITY]) and *pũʔũk* ‘ipadu (coca)’ (possibly involving *ʔuk-* ‘convey a powdery substance to the mouth’), among others (cf. §2.2).

While the forms in examples (136–137) above are lexicalized and relatively frozen, in fast speech speakers sometimes apply the same vowel harmony and consonant cluster simplification processes more generally to other phonological words. In example (138), the forms *tih* = *ʔíp* (3sg=father) and *tih-ăn* (3sg=OBJ), which in slow speech are pronounced without any phonological changes, undergo these processes:

(138) *tí* = *ʔíp* *táh-ăn* *hãyʔah* *cóʔ* *d’oʔ-way-g’et-yíʔ-ih*
 3sg=father 3sg=OBJ outside LOC take-go.out-stand-TEL-DECL
 ‘Her father put her (the child) outside.’ (txt)

Nasal spreading across Hup morphemes usually accompanies vowel harmony, and involves nasalization of the entire syllable (in keeping with the mor-

pheme-level prosodic nature of nasalization in Hup; cf. §2.3.1). In a few cases, however, nasal spreading occurs independently of vowel harmony:

(139) *n'apũh*

variant of *d'apũh*

'hand; finger section of hand'

(possibly from *d'ap* 'flesh' + *ũh* 'interactive/together'?;

cf. §2.3.1 footnote)

As noted above, consonant cluster simplification always accompanies vowel harmony, and in fact appears to be a prerequisite for vowel harmony to occur. This is supported by the fact that no cases of vowel harmony have been encountered across a non-reduced, non-homorganic consonant cluster within a semi-lexicalized bimorphemic form (e.g., *togtũg* 'son-in-law' [*tóg* 'daughter'; cf. *tũg* 'husband' in Dâw], which is etymologically obscure for Hup speakers). On the other hand, cases of a reduced consonant cluster without vowel harmony do exist. Examples include the variant [teɡ^hgũh] (used by a few speakers in Tat Deh) of *tegd'ũh* 'tree' (probably originally bimorphemic; cf. *teɡ* 'wood, stick', but no form *d'uh* is currently attested), and *d'apũh* 'hand' (possibly from *d'ap* 'flesh' and *ũh* 'sibling; interactive', cf. 139 above). Similarly, in certain cases where vowel harmony *appears* to be present, but is in fact due to the chance similarity of the original morphemes, consonant cluster simplification is also present: e.g., *totóg* 'granddaughter', from *tóg tóg* 'daughter's daughter'; compare the unreduced *togtãh* 'grandson', i.e., *tóg tãh* 'daughter's son'.

Cases of lexicalization of an erstwhile bimorphemic form frequently result not in a single consonant, but in a homorganic cluster which provides both a coda to the first syllable and an onset to the second (cf. §2.1.2.1). This is typically the case when the consonant involved is a voiced obstruent (or its nasal allophone); it is then realized as a voiceless + voiced sequence. These homorganic clusters are found almost exclusively in reduplicated forms (which probably do not involve the reduction of a non-homorganic cluster, but rather the creation of a homorganic one) and those lexical items which are composed historically of two morphemes (and which do typically involve cluster reduction). The process is motivated by Hup's preference for a consonant-initial syllable template for the morpheme, discussed in §2.1.2.1, which similarly motivates the gemination of the final consonant of a root when a vowel-initial suffix is added; however, its result is in a sense more reduced than is a full geminate consonant. As such, it arguably marks the lexeme as *marginally* bimorphemic (see §2.1.2.1) – not easily broken down into two distinct morphemes, but also not really analyzable as a single one.

This phenomenon is illustrated for reduplicated forms involving medial voiced stops in example (140):

- (140) *b'eb'ěp* [ᵐb'ep.b'ěp^ʔ] 'butterfly'
bəbəg [ᵐbəp.bəg^ʙ] 'cubiu fruit'
mamap- [māp.māp^ʔ] 'eroding ditch'
d'id'ib- [ᵈd'it.d'ib^m] 'be curly' (cf. *d'ib-* 'rolled')
d'od'ok- [ᵈd'ot.d'ok^ʔ] 'be bent'
nəny- [nət.nəy] 'swing'

Reduplicated forms with a medial voiceless stop, fricative, or glide are frequently (though not invariably) pronounced with a geminate medial consonant:

- (141) *kōkōt-* [kōk.kōt^ʔ] 'spiral'
pəpət- [pəp.pət^ʔ] 'circular'
tætæn- [tæt.tæn] 'clumped together' (e.g., jacu or maniwa)
cecew- [čəč.čew] 'turn dark when ripe'
yəyəp- [yəy.yəp^ʔ] 'rub'

Reduplicated forms also provide a context in which the constraint against morpheme-internal non-homorganic consonant clusters is occasionally violated (cf. §2.2). When the reduplicated root ends in a glottal stop, this stop may appear in the coda of the first reduplicated syllable, forming a consonant cluster with the onset of the second syllable, as in (142). This phenomenon is probably due to the fact that reduplicated forms are historically bimorphemic, and – like some non-reduplicative forms that have been relexicalized from historically bimorphemic forms – they are not governed absolutely by the constraints that apply to monomorphemic forms. Note also that the ability of the glottal stop to form a medial cluster in reduplicative contexts is consistent with the nature of glottal stops cross-linguistically, which tend to be more free in their patterning than are other consonants (see, for example, Macaulay and Salmons 1995).

- (142) *pe?pe?* 'grope, pat'
wi?wi? 'tremble'
čī?čī? 'lower back'
w'ā?w'ā? 'stick up out of a pot, basket, etc.'

The same phenomena of medial consonants realized as homorganic clusters or geminates (with the occasional appearance of the glottal stop as a first-syllable coda) also occur in synchronically monomorphemic words that appear to be historically derived from compounds, and in certain derived forms involving a bound word-initial CV morpheme. As in the case of the reduplicated forms above, here too intervocalic voiced stops tend to be preceded by a homorganic voiceless stop, producing two heavy syllables. This is the case even where the word is not etymologically transparent, as in the following names of animals, which appear to involve the combination of a semantically opaque morpheme /cV-/ with a root (compare the cognate words having the same meaning in Hup's sister languages):

- (143) *camáy* [čãp.mǎỹ] 'opossum' (compare Yuhup *mǎy*)
cɔm'ǒh [č'ǒp.mǒħ] 'tayra' (compare Yuhup *m'ǒh*)
cib'ǐh [čip.bǐħ] 'bat' (compare Dâw *bǐh*)
cub'út [cup.být¹] 'electric eel' (compare Yuhup *b'út*)
cəw'əb [čəʔ.wəb^m] 'aquatic lizard sp.'

A further example is *yɔmǒy* [yǒp.mǒỹ] 'anus' (possibly from *mǒy* 'hole?'). Note that the same kind of surface cluster pattern can also occur when the first consonant is present underlyingly: *b'uʔb'ǎk* [^mbɥʔ.bǎk¹] or [^mbɥp.bǎk¹] 'termite nest', from *b'úʔ* 'termite' and *b'ǎk* 'nest, clump'.

The medial homorganic cluster phenomenon also occurs with those few bound forms in Hup that occur word-initially and have an underlying CV syllable structure – the Factitive prefix *hi-* and the bound demonstrative forms (*nu-* 'proximal', *n'i-* 'distal', *yu-* or *yi-* 'distal intangible', and *hĩ-* 'interrogative'). When these CV forms are followed by other morphemes beginning with a voiced stop (or [k], for which voicing is neutralized in morpheme-initial position), they take a homorganic coda consonant from the onset of the following morpheme, resulting in a heavy syllable structure for both morphemes:

- (144) a) *hi-m'æ-* [hip.m'æ:] (FACT-cool) 'make cool'
hibi- [hip.bí:] (FACT+?) 'be jealous'
- b) *hĩ-n'ǐh* [ħĩt.ñǐħ] (INT-NMZ) 'what'
ni-d'ǒh [ñĩt.dǒħ] (PROX-PL) 'these'
n'i-m'ǎ [ñĩp.mǎ:] (DIST-MEAS) 'that much, that time'
nukán [nũʔ.kǎn] (PROX + DIR?) 'over here, this way'

However, this homorganic cluster phenomenon does not apply equally to all lexical items with the appropriate phonological template: certain bisyllabic forms, including those that appear to be reduplicated, are nonetheless not typically pronounced with the medial homorganic stop. Examples include the nasal forms *mæmæç* ‘jacamim bird’, *nunút* ‘moth’, *mæmæn* ‘bee sp.’; it is not clear why these lexical items should deviate from the more general pattern. Similarly, intervocalic /d/ is often pronounced as a flap [r] (cf. §2.1.2.3), rather than as a homorganic cluster. Borrowings such as *mamãw* ‘papaya’ (from Portuguese *mamão*) also lack a medial homorganic stop, which may reflect their truly monomorphemic identity. Finally, the homorganic cluster phenomenon does not extend to ‘normal’ compounding of noun or verb stems, even where a CV root is involved. This is because this compounding, which is fully productive, forms a phonologically less-integrated word than do unitary lexical items or combinations of root + phonologically bound affix; thus non-homorganic consonant clusters are acceptable in this context.³⁸

2.6. Phonological differences among Hup dialects

There are a number of phonological differences among the three main Hup dialect regions, as well as among sub-areas within these regions. In particular, the phonological processes of vowel harmonization (including nasal spreading) and medial consonant cluster simplification (cf. §2.2, §2.5) that accompany the lexicalization of erstwhile multimorphemic words into monomorphemic forms are more advanced in the Eastern and (especially) the Western dialect areas than they are in the more conservative Central dialect (cf. §1.3 and §2.5). Accordingly, more words in the Eastern and Western dialects exhibit vowel harmony; for example, while speakers in Barreira and along the middle Tiquié River say /koʔăp/ ‘two’ and /b’ək g’ăb/ [ʰbəkăb] ‘griddle’, speakers in Umari Norte and in the areas of the Vaupés and Japu Rivers (and to some extent in Tat Deh) say /kaʔăp/ ‘two’ and /b’akg’ăb/ ‘griddle’ (the probable etymologies of these forms are *kəwəg-ʔăp* ‘eye-quantity’ for ‘two’, and ‘pot-?’ for ‘griddle’).

A particularly clear example of consonant cluster simplification in the Eastern and Western dialect areas involves the loss of cluster-final /h/ in words such

³⁸ Note that CV roots in compounds may be pronounced with a long vowel (CV:), as if they were independent words. This is consistent with the nature of compounds as words that are relatively less lexicalized, in contrast to those (including most reduplicated forms, etc.) that are formed via less productive processes and tend to be learned as discrete lexical units.

as /wædhó/ ‘sun, moon’ (Central dialect), pronounced [βǽrɔ́:] in the Tat Deh area, and /~bɔbhũy/ *mɔmhũy* ‘arm’ (Central), pronounced [mũmũỹ] *mumỹy* in Tat Deh. A further example is /yãʔamhǒʔ/ *yãʔamhǒʔ* ‘dog’ (Central dialect), pronounced [ỹãʔãmbǒʔ] in Tat Deh; here ‘dog’ clearly contains /~yaʔáb/ ‘jaguar’ and an unidentified second morpheme /hǒʔ/. The [b] present in the Tat Deh form was undoubtedly inserted after the original /h/ was lost, due to gemination of the medial consonant [m.b] across the syllable boundary; since vowel harmonization and the accompanying nasal spreading did not take place, the word remained half nasal and half oral. The [b] is simply the oral half of the geminate medial consonant /m/.

Other dialectal differences in phonology include the use of a flap [ɾ] for intervocalic /t/ in the Tat Deh region (e.g., /ʔɔt/ + /N̄y/ ‘cry-Dynamic’: Tat Deh [ʔóɾóy] vs. Barreira [ʔóty]; also Tat Deh [bɔrók] vs. Barreira [bɔtók] ‘ear’). Conventional (but optional) use of flap [ɾ] in place of medial /d/ is common to all the dialect areas.

In the Umari Norte dialect area, the vowel in the first syllable of some bisyllabic, monomorphemic words is pronounced [i] – an interesting exception to the general rule of morpheme-internal vowel harmony. Examples include [kirô:] for [kerô:] /kedó/ ‘firefly’ (a Tukano borrowing); [kiyăk^ɿ] for [kayăk^ɿ] /kayăk/ ‘manioc’; and [βirô:] for [βærô:] or [βædhô:] /wædhó/ ‘sun, moon’. Note that the vowel that has presumably been replaced by [i] is variably [a], [æ], and [e], but this process is not regular; what drives it is not clear.

Morpheme-medial /y/ has been replaced by /h/ in some words in the Hup spoken along the Vaupés and Japu Rivers (but this replacement is rare in Tat Deh); examples include /kæhæk tɔʔ/ (elsewhere /kayak tɔʔ/) ‘manioc tuber’ (compare Yuhup *yák* and Dâw *yăk*, additional evidence that /y/ is historically prior), and /bihĩw/ (elsewhere /biyĩw/) ‘blood’ (compare Yuhup *yíw* and Dâw *yíw*). Note that /h/ and /w/ are the most common medial consonants in Hup, a generalization that may have motivated this change.

Chapter 3

The architecture of the word: parts of speech and formatives

Hup morphology is relatively complex: a single grammatical word can be composed of a long string of concatenated morphemes, with varying degrees of bonding among them. This complexity is best handled by a definition of the word that distinguishes between morphosyntactic and phonological criteria. Accordingly, this discussion follows Bickel and Nichols (2007) in establishing a distinction between the grammatical word, which is the smallest unit of syntax (i.e., the terminal node or minimal projection in phrase structure), and the formative, which cannot govern or be governed by words, cannot require or undergo agreement, and cannot head phrases. Crucially, the unit defined by the grammatical word need not be a single *phonological* word; likewise, while formatives are often bound morphemes (i.e., affixes or clitics), they can also be phonologically free (or relatively free) forms (i.e., particles).³⁹

In Hup, the innermost core of the grammatical word is the root or string of component roots forming a compound, where the root is defined as “an unanalyzable form that expresses the basic lexical content of the word” (T. Payne 1997: 24). Associated with this core may be several layers of formatives, which for the most part follow the core (in other words, Hup morphology is predominantly suffixing, or otherwise post-stem). The term ‘stem’ is here taken to mean the association of one or more compounded roots and (verbal) prefixes, which form a relatively tightly integrated unit.

This chapter focuses on the architecture of the Hup word: the parts that make up the word and the details of their combination. It begins with a discussion of the basic parts of speech or word classes, and then moves to the definition of the phonological word and the question of polysemy vs. homonymy of forms. This provides the context for the discussion of formative classes, of the flexibility of certain morphemes to vary their form class within the verb, and finally, of the implications of this last phenomenon for grammaticalization.

³⁹ According to the conventions for indicating morpheme juncture in this grammar (as noted in §1.7), the hyphen (-) marks affixation and compounding of verb roots, the equals (=) marks cliticization and bound nouns, and a blank space marks the juncture between a word and a particle, as well as between most elements of noun phrases (other than bound nouns).

3.1. Parts of speech

Three major word classes can be defined in Hup, in all of which the basic members are roots. There are two open classes of nouns and verbs, and a relatively small closed class of adjectives. Syntactic, semantic, and morphological factors establish the formal categorial differences among these classes. The following discussion begins with nouns and verbs, defining them partly through contrast with each other; the adjective class is then defined vis-à-vis nouns and verbs.

In Hup, the majority of roots are lexically pre-assigned to a particular word class. However, in certain cases the same root (i.e., the same segmental form) can occur as a noun, a verb, and/or an adjective. Because little or no derivational morphology may be required to express a change in word class, it can sometimes be difficult to determine whether one of these different word-class manifestations of a lexeme is more ‘basic’ than another. In some cases these different manifestations are probably best considered distinct lexical items; in others, zero derivations or polyvalent roots (i.e., distinguished at the level of the grammar, not the lexicon; see also §4.6.1).

3.1.1. Nouns

Prototypical members of the noun class are those roots that head noun phrases and typically function as arguments of the clause. Unlike verbs, nouns can regularly appear bare in the clause, without any inflectional morphology or other associated formatives, and they contrast lexically for tone (see §2.3.2.2). Examples of nouns are given in (1–2):

- (1) *tinĩh* *mɔm* *nɔh-ɔh*
 3sg.POSS axe fall-DECL
 ‘His axe fell.’ (txt)

- (2) *yawǎç* = *mah* *tĩh* *cɔw-ɔh*, *koʔǎp*
 capuchin.monkey=REP 3sg shoot.with.blowpipe two
 ‘He had shot capuchin monkeys with his blowpipe, two (of them).’ (txt)

Nouns and verbs are also distinguished by the formatives with which they combine, and under what circumstances the formatives occur. Nouns regularly inflect for case and number, whereas members of the verb class can only take case- and number-marking formatives when they are themselves nominalized or head adverbial clauses (where the case marker arguably has a distinct function from its usual one; see §18.2.6.2). Unlike verbs, nouns can be possessed (alien-

ably and/or inalienably), and can be quantified and otherwise modified by numerals, adjectives, demonstratives, etc. Moreover, nouns and verbs are negated via distinct strategies ('existential' vs. 'clausal' negation, see Chapter 16). Example (3) illustrates inalienable possession and case marking on the noun:

- (3) *yin̄y* = *mah*, *ʔāh* = *yāwám-ǎn* *hid* *mæh-yíʔ-ih*
 that.ITG.be.like.DYNM=REP 1sg=ynger.brother-OBJ 3pl kill-TEL-DECL
 'Then (he said) they killed my younger brother.' (cv)

Hup's rich system of aspect-mode morphology is primarily associated with verbs; nevertheless, many of these markers can also combine with nouns. Nouns acting as predicates of clauses can take many (although not all) of these markers. Even when acting as arguments, nouns can take some formatives that are (sometimes primarily) associated with verbal predicates, although these markers often have distinct functions depending on what part of speech they combine with; for example, the verbal Inchoative aspect marker signals focus when occurring on nouns (see §7.1.1).

Nouns in Hup undergo regular compounding (which is also a feature of verbs), as example (4) illustrates. A distinction exists between nominal roots that are 'bound' – i.e., that can appear *only* in a compound construction – and those that are free; this formal difference corresponds roughly to the semantic distinction of inalienable vs. alienable possession (see Chapter 5).

- (4) *tecáp* *hǎp yam* *ʔāh* *yam-té-h*
 tomorrow fish song 1sg sing-FUT-DECL
 'Tomorrow I'll sing the Fish Song.' (txt)

The majority of the members of the noun class function exclusively as nouns, and have no derived variants in other word classes. However, as discussed in §4.6.1, some nominal stems can also act as verbs. Some of these noun-verb correspondences are quite productive and are best considered to involve zero-derivation of nouns from more basic verbal forms (by simply removing the verbal inflection and allowing the stem to function as a bare form); the nominal variants usually are assigned rising tone (e.g., *bíʔ-* 'to work' and *bíʔ* 'work to be done'). In principle, this derivation can also go in the opposite direction, to derive verbs from nouns; however, this does not appear to be a particularly productive process. Where a verbal and nominal form of the same root do coexist, the verbal form usually appears to be more basic and the nominal form more derived. In other cases, however, there is no clear argument for directionality one way or the other; e.g., *coh-* 'walk with cane/stick' and *cōh* 'cane/stick for walking'; *wæd-* 'eat' and *wǎd* 'food'; *tǎh-* 'be pregnant (animal

only)’ and *tǎéh* ‘offspring’. In such cases, the nominal and verbal forms are best considered synchronically to be distinct lexical items rather than derivations. A small subgroup of nouns yield derived verbal forms via a different process: incorporation by the verb *ni-* (see §9.6); e.g., *hǎm* ‘wound’, *hǎm-ni-* ‘have a wound’, while as a bare verb stem itself **hǎm-* is ungrammatical.

3.1.2. Verbs

Prototypical members of the verb class are those roots that head predicates and cannot in general appear bare (i.e., as uninflected stems). Except in a few contexts relating to mood and clause chaining, they minimally require a Boundary Suffix. This is essentially a formal requirement; semantically the contribution of the Boundary Suffix is highly variable, and may indicate aspect, mood, clause type, etc. (see §3.4.1.2 below). In addition to the obligatory Boundary Suffix, verbs can optionally take multiple Inner Suffixes, enclitics, and prefixes (see §8.3 and §3.4 below). In general, in contrast to nouns, tonal values are not contrastive on verbs (or at least are minimally distinctive), but at least a few cases of contrastive tone do exist (see §2.3.2.2). Verb roots are transitive, intransitive, or ambitransitive (see §8.2). They occur singly or in compounds (see Chapter 9); in the case of verbal compounds, the obligatory inflectional marking occurs at the end of the entire string of compounded roots. Examples of Hup verbs – in simple and compound form – are given in (5–6):

- (5) *kapíʔ ʔin ʔǎg-ǎh*
 caapi 1pl drink-DECL
 ‘We would drink *caapi*.’ (txt)

- (6) *yít=mah hǎt nǎh-túʔ-úh, tapúh ! yít=mah*
 then=REP alligator fall-immersed-DECL splash then=REP

tih-ít=yiʔ tih nǎh-tuʔ-wǎn-kǎd-d’ób-óh
 3sg-OBL=TEL 3sg fall-immersed-follow-pass-go.to.water-DECL
 ‘Then, it’s said, the alligator went into the water, splash! Then right with him he (the spirit) fell into the water, following (the alligator).’ (txt)

As discussed above and in §4.6.1, certain members of the verb class can also double as nouns (and are in some cases verb > noun derivations). This ability of verb stems to appear by themselves as independent nouns is limited to a relatively small subset of the verb class. However, verbs do occur quite productively in nominal compounds, nominalized via their combination with a noun

stem, as discussed in §4.6 and §5.1. Verb stems also appear in noun phrases in the form of relative clauses:

- (7) *[hǒp tih kók-əp] yud, [mĩh tih cúʔ-up] yud...*
 fish 3sg pull-DEP clothes turtle 3sg grab-DEP clothes
 ‘His fishing clothes, his turtle-catching clothes...’ (txt)

3.1.3. Adjectives

It is possible to define a formally distinct, though small, adjective class in Hup, whose members are distinguished by two primary features. First, adjectives can act as predicates in main clauses, and when functioning as such – unlike verbs, but like nouns – they do not require a Boundary Suffix or any other bound formative (examples 8–9). However (unlike nouns), adjectives can optionally take aspectual and other verbal formatives (which maintain their verbal functions), and in this way they pattern very much like verbs (see §10.1).

- (8) *pǒg = mah yúw-úh, yúp ʔin-wæd-æh !*
 big=REP that.ITG-DECL that.ITG mother-eat-DECL
 ‘He was big, they say, that “Mother-eater”!’ (txt)
- (9) *nút yak pāt b’ók wob-hám-ǎh, dó nǎw !*
 here macaw hair skin rest-go-DECL red good
 ‘Here the headband of macaw feathers rested, red and beautiful!’ (txt)

Second, adjectives can occur as modifiers in noun phrases, where they follow a nominal head – minimally the dummy head *tih* = (the third person singular pronoun). In this function, adjectives closely resemble the class of obligatorily bound nouns, which likewise must be preceded by another nominal form (again, minimally the dummy *tih*; see §5.4). However, adjective modifiers are distinct from bound nouns in that bound nouns cannot escape the bound construction to appear as predicates (i.e., as independent stems not involved in compounds); moreover, the order of head and modifier in the two types of noun phrase (bound noun and adjective noun phrase) is arguably reversed (see §5.4 and §6.6). Note that members of the verb class can also function as nominal modifiers, but as such must normally appear in relative clause form, and usually precede the head noun (see §18.2.3). An adjective modifier is illustrated in (10):

- (10) *nút = mah tǐh-ǎn nɔh-g'ét-éh, wowǒw pǒg*
 here=REP 3sg-OBJ fall-stand-DECL fly.sp. big
 'Here, it's said, it hit and stuck to her, a big fly.' (txt)

The members of the adjective class and their predicative function are discussed in detail in §10.1, while the function of adjectives as modifiers in the noun phrase is described in §6.6. Certain adjectives can act as adverbs and as such have a relatively all-purpose modifier function; however, the adverbial variants are frequently at least minimally morphologically derived (see §10.2).

While the adjective class has a concrete identity as a distinct word class in Hup, as this discussion shows, the most important distinction in Hup grammar remains that between verbal and nominal morphology. Where not otherwise explicitly discussed, predicate adjectives are therefore treated implicitly as part of the verb class in terms of their morphological properties (i.e., their ability to take tense-aspect-mode formatives, etc.), and adjective modifiers are considered together with the noun phrase.

3.1.4. Other word classes

Hup has several additional word classes, which play a relatively minor role in the grammar compared to the major classes of nouns, verbs, and adjectives. Small closed classes of words that can occur as heads or modifiers in noun phrases are pronouns, demonstratives, interrogative pronouns, and numerals (which can all be considered subsets of the noun class more generally; see Chapter 6). Locative and temporal postpositions also form a closed class (itself made up of two sub-classes), whose elements occur either within noun phrases or independently as adverbs (§10.3). Interjections and ideophones form a (potentially open) class of phonologically and morphosyntactically idiosyncratic words that are for the most part never modified or associated with formatives at all; these are discussed along with sentence-level affect-marking strategies (which mostly involve formatives) in Chapter 15. Finally, *hǎ?* 'yes, all right' and *?am ya?ápa?* 'I don't know' make up a small closed class of proclauses.

3.2. Morphological processes and the phonological word

The syntactic distinction between grammatical word and formative in Hup is cross-cut by the phonological distinction of free vs. bound units. In other words, the grammatical word in Hup is not necessarily equivalent to the phonological or prosodic word. This discussion and the sections that follow seek to clarify the status of Hup morphemes in terms of both the syntactic and phonological bonds

that link them to other morphemes within the ‘word’, with the understanding that these syntactic and phonological criteria do not always match up (although there is a partial correlation).

Hup morphology is highly agglutinative and concatenative; that is, it involves the stringing together of morphemes (here defined as any indivisible unit of form/meaning, whether root or formative) such that they are easily segmentable. Each unit of form typically encodes only one category or unit of meaning at a time, with almost no multiple exponence (fusion) or suppletion; virtually the only really (phonologically) fused formative is *-nʔán*, from *dʔəh-ăn* (Plural number + Object case; see §4.4). Thus Hup has, in Comrie’s terms (1989: 46) a relatively high ‘index of synthesis’, coupled with a low ‘index of fusion’.⁴⁰

Morphologically conditioned allomorphy in Hup is also minimal, being limited to certain verbal suffixes/auxiliaries which undergo reduction or deletion of their final consonant when followed by a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix (such as the Habitual marker in example (11); see §3.6 below for a list and discussion of these forms). Furthermore, those Boundary Suffixes that copy their vowel from the host stem typically appear with no vowel at all in this context. This deletion of both consonant and vowel maintains the CVC syllable structure that is preferred in Hup (see §2.2). In (11b), accordingly, where the Declarative suffix *-Vh* follows the Habitual formative *big / -bi-*, we have *-bi-h* (instead of *-big-ih*), with both of the adjacent morphemes undergoing phonological reduction.

(11) a) *ʔāh hám-ǎy bíg*
 1sg go-DYNM HAB
 ‘I go regularly.’ (txt)

b) *ʔāh ham-bí-h*
 1sg go-HAB-DECL
 ‘I go regularly.’ (txt)

Roots in Hup are typically concatenated via compounding, whereas formatives undergo affixation and/or cliticization (and, in some cases, simple juxtaposition). While compounding and affixation are considered to be distinct processes, they are linked both synchronically and diachronically. On the synchronic level, a compound-final verb stem is formally indistinguishable from an Inner Suffix (see below); diachronically, many Inner Suffixes can be shown to have developed from verb stems within compounds through processes of grammati-

⁴⁰ Thus previous assessments of Hup as a highly isolating language (e.g., D. Payne 1990: 219–220) are inaccurate, at least with respect to the verbal morphology.

calization (i.e., historical processes whereby a formative is derived from a root; see §3.7 below). Similarly, a relationship exists between affixes and enclitics/particles in that a number of formatives can appear in either Inner Suffix or peripheral position within the verb word, depending on the type of Boundary Suffix present (see §3.5).

Nonconcatenative morphological processes, on the other hand, are infrequent in Hup. Tone is used to mark the imperative mood, and also plays a role in the derivation of certain nouns from verbs (in cases where the bare verb stem can act as a noun, it is usually assigned rising tone; see §4.6.1). Stem reduplication is a marginally productive means for signaling iterative aspect in verbs.

3.2.1. Defining the phonological word

Together, the root and associated bound formatives make up a syntactic unit that can constitute, on its own, a single phonological or prosodic word. The phonological word in Hup – which may or may not be isomorphic with the grammatical word – is defined according to a number of features. These are pause phenomena, primary stress assignment, and morphophonemic processes (cf. Dixon and Aikhenvald 2002: 13).

A. Pause phenomena

Phonological word boundaries may be marked by a pause (at least optionally). However, while the presence of a pause is a reliable indicator of a phonological word boundary, its absence is not necessarily good evidence that a boundary is not there (usually within a grammatical word).

B. Primary stress assignment

Primary stress – realized as word-accent, as discussed in §2.3.2 – is one of the most useful diagnostics of the phonological word in Hup. This is especially true for verbs: there are typically either one or two syllables – and no more – per verb word that receive primary stress (depending on the lexical identity of the Boundary Suffix present). These stressed syllables are the Boundary Suffix itself (such as the Declarative in example 12) and the syllable preceding it, which either belongs to the final verb stem or is an Inner Suffix (see §3.4 below for explanations of these formative labels).

- (12) *kayăk tih g'ɔʔ-yæ̀t-é̀h*
 manioc 3sg pull-lay.down-DECL
 'She pulled manioc (from the earth) and set it down (on the ground).'
- (txt)

In a few exceptional cases, the preceding syllable is unable to take stress, and stress then falls on the next syllable to the left. These unstressed elements are all Inner Suffixes that can alternatively appear as enclitics or particles (see §3.5 below).

Different verbal constructions (involving different types of Boundary Suffixes) require different stress patterns, but one or both of these two syllables – and only these syllables (with the rare exceptions mentioned above) – always bears the primary stress of the word. All preforms (i.e., prefixes and proclitics), verb stems within compounds, and Inner Suffixes preceding the last verb stem or Inner Suffix in the verb word are unstressed, as are enclitics, which follow the Boundary Suffix.

Stress is not as clear a diagnostic with nouns. It typically falls on the noun stem and/or on the following suffix(es) (depending on their lexical identity, as in verbal constructions), but is somewhat idiosyncratic in noun phrases and nominal compounds. The more lexicalized compounds typically have a single stress (whose assignment to the first or the last component is largely predictable according to the type of compound or noun phrase), but in other compounds each member can receive equal stress (see Chapter 5). Similarly, in noun phrases involving noun + adjective modifier, stress typically falls on the adjective (which follows the noun), but – especially in slow, careful speech – it can occur on both noun and adjective.

For some nominal roots, lack of stress is a primary indication that the root also has at least a marginal status as a clitic to some other form. Perhaps the best example of this phenomenon is the procliticization of subject pronouns to verbs (see §3.4.2.1 below and §6.1), which probably indicates an in-process historical transition from free word to bound formative.

C. Morphophonemic processes

Morphophonemic processes in Hup, limited though they are, are restricted to the domain of the phonological word, and as such provide a useful diagnostic of the phonological word. The most common of these processes, in which no more than two morphemes are usually involved, are vowel copying/harmony, consonant gemination (to meet syllable structure requirements), and medial consonant cluster simplification, as discussed in §2.5.

3.3. Polysemy or homonymy?

An important issue in Hup grammar is the multifunctionality of many individual Hup forms (here understood as units of segmental phonological material), which can appear in a variety of distinct morpheme classes or slots in the word template, and often combine promiscuously with various different parts of speech. In many cases, the functions of the different manifestations of a given form are clearly related or even identical, but in other cases they seem – at least at first glance – to be completely distinct.

An extreme example of this multifunctionality is the morpheme *ʔũh* (see §11.2, §11.3, §14.7, §14.8). This form functions as a lexical root meaning ‘sibling of opposite sex’ (example 13a), as a verbal preform indicating reciprocal or other interaction among co-participants (13b), as a verbal Inner Suffix (i.e., between root and periphery) marking an applicative construction (13c), as a verbal Boundary Suffix (i.e., marking the periphery of the word) indicating jussive or optative mood (13d), and as a particle (i.e., morphosyntactically within the periphery of the word, see §3.4.2) following nouns and verbs marking epistemic modality (13e):

- (13) a) ‘Sibling of opposite sex’:

nĩ ʔũh = n'an núp j'áh-át kək-næn-g'et-yó?
 1sg.POSS **sibling**=OBJ.PL this land-OBL pull-come-stand-SEQ
 ‘Having brought my siblings to stay in this land...’ (txt)

- b) Interactional (reciprocal) preform:

yãʔambǒʔ = d'əh ʔũh-g'əç-əy
 dog=PL **INTRC**-bite-DYNM
 ‘The dogs are fighting.’ (lit. ‘biting each other’) (el)

- c) Applicative Inner Suffix:

ʔãh = tãhʔíp ʔãn tih d'oʔ-ʔũh-ũh, yěw
 1sg=child.father 1sg.OBJ 3sg take-**APPL**-DECL armadillo
 ‘My husband took armadillos for me.’ (txt)

- d) Jussive Boundary Suffix:

tih m'æ-ʔũh
 3sg cool-**JUS**
 ‘Let it cool off (then I’ll drink it).’ (cv)

e) Epistemic particle:

hǒp yǎéʔ = d'əh ʔũh !

fish roast=PL **EPIST**

'Maybe it's people cooking fish.' (discussing a smell) (cv)

How best to represent such multifunctional forms is a recurrent question in this grammar. Clearly, some must be cases of homonymy, where two (synchronically and diachronically) distinct morphemes share a chance phonological resemblance. Others are just as clearly examples of polysemy, where multiple related functions are performed by a synchronically unitary morpheme. Still others – of which *ʔũh* is probably an example (see the Historical notes in §11.2, §11.3, §14.7, and §14.8) – are best treated as distinct morphemes on the synchronic level, but as a diachronically unitary entity, from which the functional variants have arguably been derived through grammaticalization.

This issue of polysemy and polyfunctionality on the synchronic and/or diachronic levels is an important key to understanding the historical origins and development of many morphemes in Hup, as well as their synchronic distributions, and is the focus of many of the Historical notes in this grammar. Economy of form in expressing multiple functions is a phenomenon that is undoubtedly shared by all languages to varying degrees, but Hup may take this farther than many. In arguing for grammaticalization scenarios to explain the historical development of Hup morphemes, a formal resemblance and a plausible semantic and functional link between morphemes will be taken as grounds for hypothesizing a historical connection between them, especially where there is typological precedent for such a link and likely bridging contexts can be shown to exist – although homonymy can rarely be ruled out with absolute certainty. As Kemmer (1993: 4) observes, “recurring instances of different meanings being expressed by the same formal or structural means is an indication that the meanings in question are related. Furthermore, the more direct the semantic relationship between two meanings, the more likely they are to be subsumed under a single form of expression, both within and across languages.” In this grammar, the question of historical relationship among morphemes is considered not only to be interesting in its own right, but also as an important part of understanding the synchronic patterning and behavior of Hup's grammatical forms.

3.4. Formative classes and their combination

While roots – the smallest units of syntax – were discussed in §3.1, this section focuses on formatives. These are morphemes that do not head phrases, govern/be governed, or trigger/undergo agreement. Two general classes of formatives, and several finer distinctions, can be defined with respect to the structure of the Hup word (i.e., corresponding to slots in the word template). These are the ‘core’ formatives, which are made up of prefixes and suffixes (including Inner Suffixes and Boundary Suffixes), and the ‘peripheral’ formatives, which include clitics and particles. Hup morphology is almost exclusively suffixing (or otherwise post-stem), a common feature of verb-final languages.

Definitional morphosyntactic criteria for classifying the Hup formatives include their distance from the root (i.e., position in the core vs. the periphery of the word, especially the verb) and the obligatoriness of the formative vis-à-vis the word class of the host. Important definitional phonological features for classifying formatives include stress/tone, vowel copying and other morphophonemic processes, and underlying syllable structure. In general, the degree of phonological integration of formatives with their host stem corresponds to their degree of syntactic and semantic integration. There is some flexibility between the Inner Suffix and the peripheral (enclitic and particle) positions, an issue which is discussed in §3.5 below.

Hup nominal morphology is relatively isolating, whereas its verbal morphology is quite rich (note that this morphology is largely dedicated to the marking of tense-aspect-mode and of discourse-related phenomena such as focus and emphasis, rather than agreement). Both nouns and verbs can associate with affixes, clitics, and particles, but prefixes are strictly verbal (with the exception of nominals derived from verbs). Likewise, the distinction between Inner and Boundary Suffixes only has a distinct reality with respect to verbs; in the few cases in which formatives identified as verbal Inner Suffixes (based on their behavior with verbs) associate with nouns, they appear formally indistinguishable from Boundary Suffixes or enclitics. In fact, most of the core (i.e., affixal) formatives in general (with the exception of case markers) arguably are primarily verbal forms, although many do occur with predicate nominals as well and even with nominal arguments. When they associate with nominal arguments, these suffixes often have significantly different functions from when they associate with verbs; for example, many verbal aspect/mode markers have focus- or emphasis-related functions when occurring in combination with nouns (see §7.1).

In relation to the semantic and functional categories by which reference grammars are typically organized (e.g., aspect, tense, mood, etc.), each subset of formatives (Boundary Suffixes, enclitics, etc.) in Hup is largely heterogeneous; in other words, it is in many cases impossible to predict the function of a forma-

tive based on its form-class, and vice versa. The organization of this grammar employs a breakdown of grammatical morphemes by semantics and function (such that formatives relating to aspect, valency, etc. are grouped together), which is judged more user-friendly, rather than attempting to organize according to the formal identity of each class of morpheme. The formatives are treated purely according to their slot-class membership in this chapter alone. However, there are certain broad generalizations that can be drawn to relate form-class to semantics and function; these will be discussed in this chapter and also addressed in the relevant chapters throughout the grammar.

The verbal template is summarized here (see also §8.3). Note that the minimal verb word usually requires a stem and a Boundary Suffix (although the latter is absent in the imperative and apprehensive moods, and in some cases of clause chaining).

(Preform) – Stem – (Inner Suffix) – Boundary Suffix = (Enclitic) (Particle)

Nominal morphology typically corresponds to the following template:

Stem – (Suffix) = (Enclitic) (Particle)

3.4.1. Core formatives

This section describes formatives that are relatively closely associated – both phonologically and morphosyntactically – with the root. The distinctions made here are useful primarily for the verb class, but have some relevance to the nominal class (and other parts of speech) as well.

Hup has two main ‘layers’ of core formatives; these are here all labeled ‘affixes’, but this should be understood as a loose, relatively language-specific label vis-à-vis more general, typologically defined properties of affixes. Despite their affix-like identity, many of the core formatives in Hup tend to have features in common with verb roots on the one hand, and with peripheral formatives (i.e., clitics and morphosyntactically associated particles) on the other.

3.4.1.1. *Prefixes and preforms*

There are very few formatives in Hup that precede the root, as opposed to the very large number that follow it. Criteria for determining whether such preforms should be considered affixes or clitics are less clear than for formatives that follow the root, mainly because preforms are always unstressed (whereas stress is a crucial feature for distinguishing core and peripheral post-stem for-

matives in Hup). Nevertheless, the preforms clearly correspond to several distinct layers or levels, including a peripheral or proclitic layer having just a single member (the third person pronoun *tih*, see §3.4.2.1 below), and a relatively central set of what normally appear as prefixes. This group of core preforms has only three members, which (as preforms) are strictly verbal forms and are all used for valence-adjusting (although they can appear on other parts of speech which are derived from verbs). These preforms are summarized in Table 11:

Table 11. Hup core preforms

Function	Form
Interactional (reciprocal)	<i>?ũh-</i>
Reflexive	<i>hup-</i>
Factitive	<i>hi-</i>

Hup's three core preforms fall into at least two sub-layers: in the outer layer are Interactional *?ũh-* (§11.2) and Reflexive *hup-* (§11.1); in the inner is Factitive *hi-* (§11.4). Note that this sub-layering emerges in their relative linear ordering: the Factitive is always closest to the stem if it co-occurs with one of the other prefixes:

- (14) *tiyĩ?* ***hup-hi-páy-áy*** *ba?tíb'-ǎn*
 man RFLX-FACT-bad-DYNM evil.spirit-OBJ
 'The man is being made bad by the evil spirit.' (el)

Various features of these preforms support the characterization of at least two layers relative to the verb stem, with the outer layer relatively loosely associated (to the point that it might be considered clitic-like). First, the outer-layer Reflexive and Interactional preforms have the CVC phonological form that is more typical of independent words in Hup, whereas the CV form of Factitive *hi-* is more common in bound formatives. The two outer-layer forms are poly-functional, such that (what are probably historically) the same etymons appear as enclitics and as independent grammatical words (with meanings distinct from their Reflexive and Interactional values), but Factitive *hi-* exists only as a verbal prefix. The outer-layer forms are also more productive in their combinability with verb stems than is the Factitive. Finally, Factitive verb forms alone are frequently lexicalized to the point that the bare root (minus the Factitive) is no longer meaningful (e.g., the stem *hipãh-* 'know' in example 15 below). These are all criteria that have been applied cross-linguistically to distinguish clitics from affixes (cf. Klavans 1985, Aikhenvald 2002b: 42, Zwicky and Pullum 1983, Sadock 1991: 52). A final, unusual property of these two outer preforms

is their ability to detach from the verb stem in the context of a ditransitive verb with an explicit object, such that they appear directly before the object (which is itself followed by the verb in an incorporating-like relationship) and act as phonologically semi-free, predicate-initial particles (see §11.1 and §11.2).

There is also some indication that the outer-layer forms, Interactional *?ũh-* and Reflexive *hup-*, are themselves ordered with respect to their integration with the verb, such that *?ũh-* occurs in the outermost slot. Evidence for this includes the fact that the Reflexive *hup-* and Factitive *hi-* prefixes – but not Interactional *?ũh-* – can combine with roots to form stems which can then appear inside larger compounds, suggesting their relatively high integration with that particular root within the compound, as in (15). Note that this ability to occur compound-internally as part of an individual stem also distinguishes these prefixes from the more clearly proclitic-like use of the third person pronoun *tih* (§3.4.2.1), and likewise from the post-stem (suffix and enclitic) forms to be discussed below, which in general do not occur between compounded roots.

- (15) *yúp = yí?* *d'ó?*-[**hup**-*hipãh*]-*nih-yó?*...
 that.ITG=TEL take-RFLX-FACT:know-NEG-SEQ
 ‘Having thus caused them to have knowledge/awareness...’ (txt)

Finally, in the very few cases in which they co-occur, the Interactional precedes the Reflexive, which in this context appears to form a more lexicalized unit with the verb root:

- (16) *hid ?ũh-[hup-yód]-áy*
 3pl INTRC-RFLX-hide-DYNM
 ‘They are hiding from each other.’ (el)

3.4.1.2. *Suffixes*

As noted above, the distinction between the two classes of suffixes in Hup, Inner and Boundary Suffixes, is relevant only for verbs. Unlike verbs (in most contexts), nouns do not by definition require a suffix, but can stand on their own as fully formed words. Members of both suffix classes can nevertheless occur with nouns; the formatives here described as Boundary Suffixes are particularly likely to do so, and tend to maintain their affix-like morphophonological properties (stress patterns and morphophonemic processes) regardless of the word-class of their host. Otherwise, most nominal morphology is peripheral (i.e., expressed as clitics and particles), including formatives that appear as suffixes (especially Inner Suffixes) when they combine with verbs.

A. Boundary Suffixes

Boundary Suffixes are defined as the group of suffixes that separate the core of the verb (in which prefixes, roots, and Inner Suffixes can co-occur to form a phonological unit) from the periphery, which is made up of unstressed enclitics and (phonologically relatively free) particles. Most Boundary Suffixes are considered to be primarily verbal forms by definition, but the same formative can in many cases occur with both verbs and nouns (and in some cases with other parts of speech).

As discussed in §8.3, verbs (in most moods) minimally require one, and only one, Boundary Suffix (arguably including certain zero-marked forms) when acting as predicates, but may have anywhere from zero to multiple Inner Suffixes (preceding the Boundary Suffix) and peripheral formatives (following the Boundary Suffix). As a class of verbal formative, the Boundary Suffixes do in general have a functional common denominator: one appears on every verbal predicate to mark the clause type, in some cases almost like a marker of punctuation. Thus a subset of Boundary Suffixes indicates various types of main clause (declarative, interrogative, negative, etc.), as well as indicating finer distinctions such as strong vs. neutral imperative, jussive, and apprehensive (all of which could be considered sub-types of imperative), etc. Another set of Boundary Suffixes indicates the various types of dependent or subordinate clause, including complements, relative clauses, and various adverbial clauses. While grouped accordingly in the discussion below, these suffixes are treated elsewhere in the grammar alongside other formatives to which they relate functionally and semantically, rather than formally (as noted above). A few forms can appear as either Boundary or Inner Suffixes (see B below); these are Future/Purpose *-téǵ*, Inchoative *-ay*, and Negative *-níh*.

As noted in §3.4.1 above, the label ‘suffix’ applied to these formatives is to some degree a language-specific convenience, which expresses their relative integration with the root vis-à-vis the more peripheral forms (‘clitics’ and ‘particles’). In fact, many of the Boundary Suffixes have certain clitic-like attributes: they can attach to different parts of speech, and often are attached at the phrasal or clausal level (i.e., with scope over a larger unit than their phonological host).

The Boundary Suffixes in Hup themselves fall into two sets. The first of these – the simple or regular Boundary Suffixes – are the more prototypical markers of clause type, and have either a VC or CVC form. The second group is morphophonologically internally complex, involving a copied vowel followed by a CVC formative; this CVC form can in most cases appear without the copied vowel (an essentially verbal phenomenon) as a peripheral formative in combination with other parts of speech. While here defined as Boundary Suffixes (because of their ability to combine directly with a verb stem and mark the

right-hand boundary of the well-formed verb word), this second group of suffixes behaves quite differently from the first and larger set, and functionally relates more to marking of affect and discourse rather than clause type per se.

Table 12. ‘Simple’ Boundary Suffixes in Hup

Clause Type	Function (with verbs)	Form	Function w/ nominal arguments?
Main clauses	Declarative	- <i>ǂh</i>	Clause-final marker
	Interrogative	- <i>V?</i>	Interrogative focus
	Dynamic (aspect-related)	- <i>ǂy</i>	Attributive (limited use)
	Inchoative (aspect-related)	- <i>ay</i>	Inchoative focus
	Focus	- <i>áh</i>	Focus
	Clausal negation	- <i>nǂh</i>	
	‘Acting alone’ markers	- <i>ké?</i> - <i>d’áh</i>	
	Cooperative	- <i>nǂŋ</i>	
	Imperative (strong)	- <i>kǂm</i>	
	Jussive	- <i>ǂǂh</i>	
Verbal diminutive ⁴¹	- <i>kodé</i>		
Dependent clauses (some have a secondary function with main clauses)	Dependent clause	- <i>Vp</i>	Topic marker
	Relative clause as object	- <i>ǂn</i>	Object case
	Adverbial clause	- <i>ǂt</i>	Oblique case
	Adverbial clause	- <i>an</i>	Directional oblique case
	Nominalizer (complement clauses)	- <i>n’ǂh</i>	
	Sequential	- <i>yó?</i>	
	Conditional	- <i>tǂn</i>	
	Simultaneous	- <i>mǂ?</i>	Locative postposition ‘under’
	Temporal adverbial	- <i>kamí</i>	
	Future (main clauses) Purpose (dependent clauses)	- <i>tég</i>	Generic nominalizer (as unstressed enclitic)

⁴¹ This form is borrowed directly from Tukano and is somewhat idiosyncratic; it does not really appear to mark clause type, unlike most of the other Boundary Suffixes listed here.

The simple Boundary Suffixes are listed in Table 12. They form a closed set and encode a variety of semantic information (aspect, mode, subordination, etc.). Most are more common with verbs and/or occur clause-finally, but many can also associate directly with nouns in certain contexts. Those that mark nominal case are arguably primarily nominal suffixes, but are here identified as Boundary Suffixes based on their performance in combination with verb roots (which in some cases actually produces a nominalization).

These Boundary Suffixes may themselves be divided into two subsets, primarily on the basis of their morphophonological properties. The members of the first subset (listed in Table 13) are all vowel-initial, and for many the quality of this initial vowel is unspecified, being obtained via copying from the preceding syllable (which is usually the root, but may also be an Inner Suffix). Those that do not copy their vowel all begin with /a/ (perhaps due to some common historical origin or process). These vowel-initial suffixes also condition consonant gemination at the end of the preceding stem (see §2.1.2.1 and §2.5 above). Moreover, a particular stress pattern is required by these suffixes: they all condition stress on the preceding syllable (the root or Inner Suffix). The Boundary Suffix itself may be stressed or unstressed, depending mainly on its individual lexical identity.⁴²

Table 13. Vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes in Hup

Clause Type	Function (with verbs)	Form
Main clauses	Declarative	- $\acute{V}h$
	Interrogative	- $V?$
	Dynamic (aspect-related)	- $\acute{V}y$
	Inchoative (aspect-related)	- ay
	Focus	- $\acute{a}h$
Dependent clauses (primarily)	Dependent clause	- Vp
	Relative clause as object of main clause	- $\check{a}n$
	Adverbial clause	- $\acute{V}t$

Within this set, those vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes that involve vowel copying (particularly Declarative - $\acute{V}h$, Dynamic - $\acute{V}y$, Interrogative - $V?$, and Dependent - Vp) can themselves be distinguished from the others. In addition to

⁴² Note that the stress/tone patterns of Hup verbal constructions are not conditioned by or indicative of temporality, unlike the situation reported for Yuhup (Ospina 2002: 293–314, 2007).

their distinct phonological form, they are the most frequently occurring formatives in Hup, and mark several of the most basic (i.e., semantically neutral) distinctions in clause type (see §17.1; also compare the imperative and apprehensive modes, which are signaled by a -Ø form, or lack of a Boundary Suffix altogether).

However, even these vowel-copying forms do not pattern in identical ways. Declarative -*V̄h* is obligatorily the final element of the grammatical word, and cannot be followed by any peripheral formatives; it is also always clause-final, regardless of the part of speech of its host (cf. §17.3.2). Dynamic -*V̄y*, on the other hand (like the consonant-initial Boundary Suffixes discussed below) may be followed by clitics and particles (cf. §12.2 and §17.3.2), and need not be clause-final. The Interrogative, Dependent, and Inchoative forms pattern much like the Declarative, but are more flexible in allowing following peripheral forms. The implications of this distinction for the structure of the verb word are discussed in detail in §3.5 below.

Examples (17–19) illustrate some of the vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes in use:

- (17) *húptok* *ʔóg-ǫy*
 caxiri drink-DYNM
 ‘(He’s) drinking caxiri.’ (cv)
- (18) *ʔóg-əp,* *ʔáh-ǎh*
 drink-DEP 1sg-DECL
 ‘Drinking is what I’m doing.’ (cv)
- (19) *núw-ǎn tih* *bíʔ-ǎh*
 this-OBJ 3sg make-DECL
 ‘He made this one.’ (cv)

The second subset of Boundary Suffixes, listed in Table 14, are those that begin with a consonant (and for the most part have a CVC form). In addition to their initial consonant (which conditions corresponding differences in morphophonemic patterning), they differ from the vowel-initial forms above in their stress pattern, which is in most cases [unstressed stem (or Inner Suffix) + stressed Boundary Suffix] (whereas the vowel-initial suffixes all require stress on the preceding stem syllable, and may or may not be stressed themselves). They also differ in that more of these consonant-initial forms are strictly limited to combination with verbs, whereas all of the vowel-initial forms can associate with nouns in certain contexts. They tend to express more fine-grained variations in modality, whereas most of the vowel-initial forms mark broader clause-

type distinctions; the vowel-initial forms also occur considerably more frequently.

Table 14. Consonant-initial Boundary Suffixes in Hup

Clause type in which suffix usually occurs	Function	Form
Main clauses	'Acting alone' markers	<i>-kéʔ</i> <i>-d'ǎh</i>
	Clausal negation	<i>-níh</i>
	Cooperative	<i>-níŋ</i>
	Imperative (strong)	<i>-kǎm</i>
	Jussive	<i>-ʔúh</i>
	Verbal diminutive	<i>-kodé</i>
Dependent clauses	Conditional	<i>-tǎn</i>
	Nominalizer	<i>-n'íh</i>
	Sequential	<i>-yóʔ</i>
	Simultaneous	<i>-mǐʔ</i>
Both main and dependent clauses	Temporal adverbial	<i>-kamí</i>
	Future (main clauses) Purpose (dependent clauses)	<i>-téǵ</i>

Examples of consonant-initial Boundary Suffixes in main clauses (Jussive *-ʔúh* and Clausal Negative *-níh*) are given in (20–21), and in dependent clauses (Conditional *-tǎn*, Simultaneous *-mǐʔ*, and Sequential *-yóʔ*) in (22–23):

(20) *děh d'oj-ʔúh*
water rain-JUS
'Let it rain!' (ru)

(21) *děh d'oj-níh*
water rain-NEG
'It's not raining.' (ru)

(22) *deh = mí hɔp-hí-tǎn, ʔin b'ák-áh*
water=river dry-descend-COND 1pl beat.timbo-DECL
'When the water level goes down, we'll fish with timbó.' (ru)

- (23) “*hǎʔ*”, *nɔ-yóʔ*, *tih-ǎn tih yók-ay-áh*
 OK say-SEQ sg-OBJ 3sg poke-INCH-DECL
 ‘Having said ‘all right’, he poked him.’ (txt)

Distinct from the ‘simple’ or ‘regular’ Boundary Suffixes (of both the vowel-initial and the consonant-initial sets) are the ‘internally complex’ type. These suffix forms appear to be made up of two components, and involve the combination of a copied vowel (from the preceding syllable of the host) followed by a CVC or CV formative which has a certain degree of autonomy in its own right (see below). These suffixes’ stress pattern usually (with the exception of the Emphatic Tag *-Vtiʔ*) involves stress on both the host stem (i.e., its final syllable) and the consonant-initial second syllable of the suffix, while the copied vowel (which may be preceded by a geminate stem consonant) forms an unstressed syllable (stem-V-CV[C]). These suffixes are also somewhat different functionally from the ‘simple’ Boundary Suffixes, in that they relate more to affect and discourse marking than to designation of clause-type; moreover, most are restricted to clause-final position, often having scope over the entire predicate. In their vowel-copying (V-CV[C]) form, most associate only with verbs. All can also occur with nominal hosts (and other parts of speech), but as such (and in certain cases even with verbs in non-declarative clauses), they appear exclusively as CV[C] enclitics or particles (cf. Table 45, §15.3.3) – with the exception of Exclusive *-Vyík*, which always keeps its copied vowel.

The set of internally complex Boundary Suffixes is summarized in Table 15:

Table 15. ‘Internally complex’ Boundary Suffixes in Hup

Function	Form (with verbs)
Intensifier	<i>-Vcáp</i>
Emphatic Tag	<i>-Vtiʔ</i>
Interactive Tag 1	<i>-Vyá</i>
Interactive Tag 2	<i>-Vhǎʔ</i>
Emphasis	<i>-Vʔih</i>
Exclusive	<i>-Vyík</i>

Examples of these suffixes – the Interactive Tag2 *-(V)hǎʔ* and the Emphatic Tag *-Vtiʔ* – are given in (24–25a); compare the encliticized CVC variant *-tiʔ* that occurs with nouns in (25b).

- (24) *tih hǎʔ-taʔ-píd-ihǎʔ*, *nóh ?*
 3sg put.in.hand-meet-DIST-TAG2 say
 ‘He too put his hand in (to the hollow), right?’ (txt)

- (25) a) *nín'ǎh = nih j'am, ʔǎn ʔíp ʔid-itiʔ*
 thus=EMPH.CO DST.CNTR 1sg.OBJ father speak-EMPH.TAG
 'Thus Father told me (long ago)' (txt)
- b) *w'ěh-éy = ʔǎy j'ǎh ʔǎh = tiʔ*
 far-DYNM=FEM DST.CNTR 1sg=EMPH.TAG
 'I am a woman who comes from far away.' (sg)

This variation in the form of many of the internally complex Boundary Suffixes depending on the word class of their host suggests that the vowel-copying phenomenon seen in these forms (and possibly in the vowel-copying Boundary Suffixes listed above as well) may be best interpreted as a feature of the Hup verbal construction in general, as well as a property specific to these individual suffixes. The copied vowel in the 'internally complex' suffixes may be functioning to mark the verb 'core', acting like a default Boundary Suffix in its own right by distinguishing the verbal core from the periphery. If this is in fact the function of the copied vowel, then the rest of the formative (i.e., the CV[C]) syllable) would actually fall outside this core, and thus bear a resemblance to the peripheral formatives (enclitics and particles), whose location within the verb word falls by definition outside the Boundary Suffix.

B. Inner Suffixes

The Hup morphemes labeled 'Inner Suffixes' fill a specific slot in the verbal template. They occur in the core of the word, between the verb stem and the Boundary Suffix: [Stem – Inner Suffix – Boundary Suffix]. As discussed above, this slot is not present in nouns; in the few cases where formatives that are normally identified as Inner Suffixes (based on their usual occurrence with verbs) can also combine with nominals (e.g., the Perfective), they are indistinguishable in their formal realization from peripheral formatives. Functionally, many of these suffixes relate to tense, aspect, or mood, but they are in general a mixed lot.

Those morphemes in Hup that appear as Inner Suffixes are summarized in Table 16. Note that many Hup formatives can optionally appear either in the Inner Suffix position or in the verbal periphery (and as such perform more or less the same function; see §3.5 below). These are not included in Table 16 (with the exception of Habitual *big*, the phonologically unreduced variant of the Inner Suffix *-bi-*), but are considered together with the peripheral formatives in §3.4.2, and discussed further in §3.5. Also, as discussed above, a few formatives can appear as either Boundary or Inner Suffixes.

Table 16. Inner Suffixes in Hup

	Function	Form	
Forms that exist primarily as Inner Suffixes	Applicative	<i>-ʔũh-</i>	
	Completive	<i>-cĩp- / -cĩw-</i>	
	Counterfactual	<i>-tãẽʔ-</i>	
	Venitive	<i>-ʔay-</i>	
	Filler	<i>-Vw-</i>	
	Elicative	<i>-kəd-</i>	
	Inferred evidential 2	<i>-ni-</i>	
	Telic	<i>-yiʔ-</i>	
Forms that can act as either Boundary or Inner Suffixes	Clausal Negative	<i>-nĩh</i>	
	Future/purpose	<i>-téɡ</i>	
	Inchoative	<i>-ay</i>	
		CV	CVC
Phonologically eroded Inner Suffixes (with CVC variants that are in some cases not restricted to Inner Suffix position)	Emphasis	<i>-po-</i>	<i>pog</i>
	Future	<i>-te-</i>	<i>teg</i>
	Habitual	<i>-bi-</i>	<i>big</i>
	Perfective	<i>-ʔe-</i>	<i>ʔeʔ</i>
	Volition, Imminent future	<i>-tu-</i>	<i>tuk</i>

Because of their placement (preceding the Boundary Suffix) in the verb word, Inner Suffixes are almost always word-internal, but they can occur word-finally in the very limited set of modes or contexts in which a Boundary Suffix is not present on the verb stem (i.e., imperative and apprehensive modes, and certain cases of clause chaining). While – apart from these specific exceptions – verbs always have one and only one Boundary Suffix, they can have zero to multiple Inner Suffixes. Inner Suffixes (unlike Boundary Suffixes) play no role in determining word-level stress patterns; rather, stress is assigned to Inner Suffixes exactly as it would be if they were component verb roots in a verb compound.

Phonologically, Inner Suffixes in Hup are consonant-initial (with the single exception of the ‘Filler’ syllable), and are usually of the form CVC. However, as Table 16 illustrates, a subset of the Inner Suffix forms can appear without a final consonant when they are directly followed by a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix; these are all phonologically reduced allomorphs of the corresponding CVC morphemes. As noted above, the vowel-initial suffix itself usually undergoes loss of its vowel in this context, resulting in a single CVC syllable. When

any consonant-initial Boundary Suffix or other Inner Suffix follows, on the other hand, only the CVC variant may appear. This phenomenon is illustrated in (26) for the Emphasis marker *-pog / -po-* (but note that the same process also affects Future *-teg / -te-* in 26a), and is discussed in more detail in §3.6 below.

(26) a) *níŋ-ǎn tih tɔn-ham-pog-té-p !*
 2pl-OBJ 3sg hold-go-EMPH1-FUT-DEP
 ‘She’ll really take you away!’ (cv)

b) *kaniní cɔp-ham-pó-h*
 sleepy(Tuk) go.from.river-go-EMPH1-DECL
 ‘Sleepyhead’s gone up away from the river!’ (cv)

The only true exception to the generalization that Inner Suffixes are consonant-initial is the idiosyncratic ‘Filler’ syllable *-Vw-* (see §15.2.4), which is obligatorily followed by a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix, but requires an initial copied vowel as if it were a Boundary Suffix itself. The Inchoative suffix *-ay*, which can occur as either a Boundary or an Inner Suffix, also represents a marginal exception.

Example (27) illustrates the Inner Suffixes *-ʔay-* (Venitive) and *-ʔe-* (Perfective, in its CV variant); the CV variant *-te-* (Future) may also be seen in (26a) above.

(27) *ʔin ham-ʔay-ʔě-h*
 1pl go-VENT-PERF-DECL
 ‘We went (and returned).’ (cv)

Inner Suffixes are among the most morphologically flexible components of the Hup verb. While some (including the CV variants mentioned above) are restricted to the verb-internal Inner Suffix position and can appear nowhere else in the verb word, others can occur either in the Inner Suffix slot or in a peripheral slot (i.e., as enclitics and particles, which *follow* the Boundary Suffix rather than precede it), depending on the type of Boundary Suffix that is present (see §3.5 below). At the same time, Inner Suffixes in general appear to be morphologically identical to verb stems within compounds, vis-à-vis their morphological properties of placement, stress pattern, and optionality in the verb word. The fact that they are semantically and syntactically more like formatives than roots does differentiate them as a class from compound-internal verb stems. However, this distinction is not always clear in individual cases, where the morpheme may have an auxiliary-like status and appear to be semantico-syntactically intermediate between a root and a formative. As the following

sections will make clear, Inner Suffixes occupy a morphosyntactic domain in Hup in which the distinctions between processes of compounding and several processes of affixation are both synchronically and diachronically blurred.

3.4.2. Peripheral formatives

Outside the ‘core’ of the word, whose rightmost edge may be (or usually must be, in the case of verbs) marked by a Boundary Suffix, is the periphery. There are two types of peripheral formatives in Hup, labeled ‘clitics’ and ‘particles’, which are respectively more and less integrated with the core. As with the other labels applied to Hup formatives in this grammar, these terms are intended to reflect some of their features vis-à-vis a more general typology of formatives in the world’s languages, but they should also be understood as language-specific.

In characterizing the peripheral formatives, it is important to note that the distinction between bound and free morphemes in Hup is not fully discrete. Although the ‘particles’ are defined as being relatively free phonologically (as opposed to the relatively bound clitics), they still exhibit some features of bound forms, and in fact have much in common with clitics. They are not only syntactically bound – so that free or phrasal elements cannot come between them and the preceding stem – but they are even marginally phonologically bound as well, in that there are in general no pause phenomena that separate them from the verb core.

In the attempt to distinguish among the various Hup formatives and to give them coherent labels, this discussion is informed by Zwicky’s (1985: 285) insight that there are “characteristic *symptoms* of a linguistic state of affairs.” In Hup, as in other languages, such ‘symptoms’, or diagnostics, are not invariant definitional criteria, since – as Zwicky puts it – “as in medical diagnosis, interfering factors can prevent even clear cases from exhibiting a certain symptom, and a particular symptom might result from some condition other than the one at issue.”

The peripheral formatives have a number of features in common. Their position in the word (most notably in the verb) following the Boundary Suffix is the single feature that differentiates them definitively from all the core formatives (i.e., prefixes, Boundary Suffixes, and Inner Suffixes). Other identifying features include the fact that their position tends to be syntactically less constrained; in other words, they are more likely than the core formatives to be able to attach to a variety of clausal constituents as hosts, depending on information structure. They are optional in the word, and most also have phrasal or even clausal scope, attaching to the end of a phrase or clause, rather than simply to its head. These are all features that are typical of clitics cross-linguistically (cf. Bickel and Nichols 2007: 174; Mithun 1999: 39).

Other characteristics of Hup peripheral formatives include their occurrence with main clauses, but not dependent clauses (that is, while some of the same morphemes that occur as enclitics or particles in main clauses *can* also occur in dependent clauses, they can only appear as Inner Suffixes – within the verb core – in this context; see §3.5). Peripheral formatives always have the phonological form of a separate word – a heavy syllable (CVC or CVV) – as opposed to the -VC form common in Boundary Suffixes and the -CV- form of some Inner Suffixes; note that this phonological resemblance to a well-formed word is also a cross-linguistically typical property of clitics, as opposed to affixes (cf. Trask 1993: 46). Finally, certain formatives that appear frequently as clitics and particles can also appear within the verb core as Inner Suffixes, conditioned by the type of Boundary Suffix present, as discussed in detail in §3.5 below.

3.4.2.1. Clitics

Only one clearly proclitic-like form, the third person singular pronoun *tih*, can be determined for Hup, although this form patterns so differently with various parts of speech that it might be considered as constituting at least two distinct homophonous morphemes. It combines with bound nouns to act as a ‘dummy’ or default nominal component in the bound construction (e.g., *tih = g’æt* ‘the/its leaf’), and it serves a similar function as a dummy nominalizer with adjective stems (e.g., *tih = pög* ‘the big one’). In verb phrases, on the other hand, the subject pronoun *tih* undergoes marginal proclisis to verb stems (see §6.1). This is most clearly the case in the Umari Norte dialect, where *tih* regularly drops its final *-h* and assimilates to the vowel quality of the first syllable of the verb word (which in most cases is the first verb root):

- (28) “*hít tã = há-m-ã? ?*” *tõ = nɔ-máh-ãh*
 where 3sg=go-INT 3sg=say-REP-DYNM
 “Where did he go?” he said.’ (txt)

The fact that other subject pronouns in Hup typically appear unstressed and immediately before the verb suggests that they too may be undergoing proclisis, but that the process is not as far along as it is for the (more frequent) third person singular form.

Hup has a fairly large class of enclitics, which are listed in Table 17. These are peripheral forms that follow any Boundary Suffix that is present, and can frequently pile up. They are distinguished from particles principally by their lack of stress (a feature that is typical of clitics; cf. Sadock 1991) and their relatively close integration with the word core. As noted above and in §3.5 below, some can appear as either verbal enclitics or Inner Suffixes, which is in most

cases determined by the type of Boundary Suffix present; for these formatives, semantics/function tend to be essentially the same regardless of their position in the verb. Other forms occurring as enclitics are more generally polyfunctional and can appear in other slots in the verb word or with various parts of speech, usually with distinct meanings and functions.

Table 17. Enclitics in Hup

	Function	Form	Additional functions?
Primarily nominal enclitics	Plural	= <i>d'əh</i>	
	Contrastive emphasis; Adverbializer	= <i>yíʔ</i>	Inner Suffix (verbs): Telic aspect only
	Reflexive Intensifier	= <i>hup</i>	Verbal prefix: Reflexive
	Parallel comparison	= <i>hin</i>	
	Diminutive Intensifier	= <i>mæh</i>	Inner Suffix (verbs)
	Emphasis	= <i>pog</i>	Inner Suffix (verbs)
Primarily verbal enclitics	Counterfactual 2	= <i>tih</i>	
	Inferred evidential	= <i>cud</i>	Nouns: 'Deceased referent' Inner suffix (verbs)
	Nonvisual evidential	= <i>hɔ̃</i>	Inner Suffix (verbs)
Enclitics that attach indiscriminately to nouns and verbs	Interrogative alternative	= <i>haʔ</i>	
	Verbs: Repetition	= <i>b'ay</i>	Inner Suffix (verbs)
	Nouns: Topic-switch		
	Reported evidential	= <i>mah</i>	Inner Suffix (verbs)
	Emphatic Coordinator	= <i>nih</i>	

An example of an enclitic in use is given in (29) (see also 31 below).

- (29) *d'ũç hid tətəd-d'óʔ-óy = mah*
 timbó 3pl beat.timbó-take-DYNM=REP
 'They beat timbó, it's said.' (txt)

3.4.2.2. Particles

Particles in Hup differ from clitics in that they are relatively loosely integrated with the word core. By definition, they are grammatically associated with their host, but are phonologically relatively free in that they receive independent stress; moreover, particles usually follow any unstressed enclitics that appear in the word:

- (30) *yíníy = mah j'ám tih bí?-ih*
 so=REP DST.CNTR 3sg make-DECL
 'Thus, long ago, they say, he made (people).' (txt)

Almost all particles in Hup follow their grammatical host, but there are a few examples of pre-verbal particles; these are the Interactional form *?ũh* and the Reflexive marker *hup*, which normally appear as verbal prefixes but can be separated from the verb stem by an object nominal (see §3.4.1.1 above), and – more marginally – the bound demonstrative and interrogative forms in association with the verbs 'say' and 'be like' (§6.2). The clause-initial 'no reason' adverbial *hĩ* (§10.2.1) could also be considered a particle rather than a fully free lexical item.

The Hup particles that follow their host stem are listed below in Table 18.⁴³ Like the enclitics, some verbal particles have an alternative realization as Inner Suffixes, conditioned by the type of Boundary Suffix present (see §3.5 below).

As noted in §3.5.2 above, the characterization of particles as free or bound is not clear-cut in Hup. Their independent stress and tendency toward final position in the word suggest that they are more independent from their host than are the members of the 'clitic' class, and should therefore be distinguished from clitics. However, other features suggest that this independence is only relative. The inability of other clausal constituents to come between all post-stem particles and their host material indicates a close morphosyntactic association between the particle and the word, and the general lack of preceding pause phenomena suggests a degree of phonological bondedness. Certain post-stem particles and enclitics also behave identically in their ability to appear in the verb core as Inner Suffixes (cf. §3.5 below). Finally, both can pile up, and when they do so, the tendency of particles to follow clitics in the phrase is subject to exceptions – as in example (31), where the stressed Habitual particle *bíg* is both preceded and followed by encliticized forms:

- (31) *yí-d'ǎh-ǎn pe?-níh =pog bíg = nih j'ám hś?*
 DEM-PL-OBJ hurt-NEG=EMPH1 HAB=EMPH.CO DST.CNTR TAG2
 'And (the insects) never bother those guys at all, huh?!' (cv)

⁴³ Note that this table does not include most of the locative postpositions, which are discussed in §10.3.

Table 18. Hup post-stem particles

	Function	Form	Commonly appears as Inner Suffix?
Primarily nominal particles	Related Instance	<i>táʔ</i>	no
	Locative	<i>cóʔ</i>	no
	Measure (comparison)	<i>m'ǎé</i>	no
	Contrastive	<i>n'ǔh</i>	no
	Possessive	<i>nǎh</i>	no
Primarily verbal particles	Adversative conjunction	<i>kǎh</i>	no
	Contrast: Distant past	<i>j'ám, j'áh</i>	no
	Contrast: Temporally proximate	<i>páh</i>	no
	Contrast: Future	<i>tán</i>	no
	Frustrative	<i>yǎéh</i>	yes
	Habitual	<i>bíg</i>	yes
	Intensifiers	<i>mún</i> (verbs) <i>muhún</i> (adjs)	yes
	Persistive	<i>tǎé</i>	no
Particles that occur indiscriminately with nouns and verbs	Distributive marker (Nouns: quantifier) (Verbs: repetition, iterativity)	<i>píd</i>	yes
	Epistemic modality	<i>ʔǔh</i>	no
	Identity negation	<i>ʔǎp</i>	no
Clause-level particles	Acquiescence	<i>bé</i>	no
	Emphasis	<i>tí</i>	no
	Emphasis 2	<i>tíh</i>	no
	Interactive Tag 1	<i>yǎ</i>	no
	Interrogative emphasis	<i>tǐ</i>	no
	Protestive	<i>báʔ</i>	no

In light of their behavior, the Hup ‘particles’ are neither clearly clitics, nor clearly independent words. It is even possible that the differences in stress and (to some degree) relative ordering between these Hup formative categories have individual historical explanations different for each member, such that the for-

mal distinction between ‘clitic’ and ‘particle’ discussed here might be no more than the cumulative result of different historical accidents. Zwicky (1985: 291) actually argues against a separate grammatical class of ‘particles’, observing that all so-called particles (from a range of languages) can be classed as either clitics or separate words; he identifies clitics as inherently ‘bound’ forms, which in most cases cannot appear in complete isolation, whereas words meet the criteria for separability (i.e., they are set apart by pause phenomena, allow other free forms to come between them and their putative host, and in many cases take independent stress; cf. 1985: 287). Nonetheless, the fact that the Hup ‘particles’ meet some, but not all, of these criteria for separability suggests that they are best considered as something in between a clitic and an independent word. The term ‘particle’ thus seems useful here, both in highlighting their intermediate status and in distinguishing them from other Hup formatives within a language-specific perspective, and will therefore be used throughout this grammar.

3.5. Flexibility of formative positions in the verb: ‘fluid’ morphemes

In the verb word – where the distinction between core vs. periphery and Inner vs. Boundary Suffix is most relevant – a number of formatives are flexible vis-à-vis their slot in the template. This applies primarily to those morphemes here labelled ‘fluid’, which appear sometimes as peripheral formatives (enclitics and particles) and sometimes as Inner Suffixes, with little or no difference in meaning.

Example (32) illustrates the phenomenon of fluidity for the Frustrative form *yǎh*.⁴⁴ Consultants judge the two constructions to be essentially interchangeable semantically.

- (32) a) *núw-ǎn ?ǎh túk-úy yǎh*
 this-OBJ 1sg want-DYNM FRUST
 ‘I’d like this one (but I don’t expect to get it).’ (e1)
- b) *núw-ǎn ?ǎh tuk-yǎh-ǎh*
 this-OBJ 1sg want-FRUST-DECL
 ‘I’d like this one (but I don’t expect to get it).’ (cv)

⁴⁴ It is at this point not clear why some fluid morphemes are enclitics and others particles when they appear in the verbal periphery. This is particularly puzzling in the cases where both have a probable origin in compounded verb roots.

Hup's 'fluid' formatives are listed in Table 19.

Table 19. Fluid formatives in Hup

Function	Form
Frustrative	<i>yǎ́h</i>
Habitual	<i>bíg</i>
Intensifier	<i>mún</i>
Distributive marker (repetition, iterativity)	<i>pá'd</i>
Inferred evidential	<i>cud</i>
Nonvisual evidential	<i>hō</i>
Repetition	<i>b'ay</i>
Reported evidential	<i>mah</i>

Morphologically, this fluidity seems at face value to be a very strange phenomenon: formatives appear to be essentially 'jumping over' Boundary Suffixes to occur either inside or outside the verb core. What could motivate this flexibility? The primary explanation is undoubtedly historical. A solution to the problem is offered below (§3.7) and is developed in more detail in Epps (2007d).

Synchronically, a morpheme's identity as a peripheral vs. core formative is largely dependent on the type of Boundary Suffix present. As noted in §3.2.1.4, Boundary Suffixes in Hup pattern in significantly different ways and perform distinct functions. They can be divided into two sets with respect to the fluid morphemes. The first set includes those Boundary Suffixes that can appear on the verb regardless of its position within the clause (as clause-final or clause-internal), most notably the Dynamic suffix *-V́y*, but also the negative suffix *-níh*, Future *-té'g*, and a few others. When these Boundary Suffixes are present, a fluid morpheme appears obligatorily in the verbal periphery, as an enclitic or particle.

In contrast, fluid formatives must appear as Inner Suffixes (within the verb core) in the presence of the second set of Boundary Suffixes. These Boundary Suffixes are principally those whose function is one of marking clause type, in particular the very frequent and formally parallel suffixes *-V́h* 'Declarative', *-V?* 'Interrogative', and *-Vp* 'Dependent'. These suffixes are normally clause-final (obligatorily so in the case of the Declarative marker, which is not limited to verbal hosts); the tension between their identity as primarily verbal suffixes (with the partial exception of Declarative *-V́h*) and their clause-final placement is generally neutralized by Hup's preference for verb-final word order. The 'internally complex' Boundary Suffixes of the *-VCV[C]* type also require fluid formatives to appear as Inner Suffixes, although they co-occur less frequently.

From a synchronic perspective, the varying placement of fluid morphemes reflects the broad functional differences between these two sets of Boundary Suffixes. The first set of suffixes, which require fluid morphemes to appear in the verbal periphery, have functions relating to aspect, tense, etc. We might therefore expect them to occur closest to the verb stem, iconically reflecting their close conceptual integration with the event itself. In contrast, the suffixes in the second set, such as Declarative, Interrogative, and Dependent markers, function primarily to indicate clause type and associate with the clause as a whole, rather than simply with the verb. Like markers of punctuation, they therefore occur clause-finally (or nearly clause-finally). In these cases, because the verb stem requires a Boundary Suffix but that suffix must occur toward the end of the clause, the extra morphology is incorporated into the verb core – between the stem and the clause-final marker – in order to accommodate both requirements.

There is nevertheless considerable variation among individual formatives as regards their realization of this flexible placement. For example, while *yæ̃h* (like other forms in Inner Suffix position) in (32b) follows exactly the same stress pattern as would be expected were it a verb stem within a compound (i.e., the stressed stem *yæ̃h* immediately precedes the Boundary Suffix *-Ṽh*, which is also stressed), many enclitics (which are by definition unstressed) *remain* unstressed when they occur as Inner Suffixes, thus appearing virtually invisible to the verb's expected stress pattern. In (33), for example, the Reported evidential *mah* is left unstressed in the Inner Suffix slot, while stress falls on the preceding Inner Suffix *píd* (which appears elsewhere as a particle) and on the following Boundary Suffix *-Ṽh*.

- (33) *hayám biʔ-wid-næn-píd-mah-áh, hib'áh = tæ̃h = ʔih-íh*
 town make-arrive-come-DIST-REP-DECL create=clan=MSC-DECL
 'The Ancestor(s) arrived and built a town' (txt)

The same stress pattern is illustrated for the Nonvisual evidential *cud* in example (34), and for the Repetitive form *b'ay* in (35):

- (34) a) *ʔãh himihin-yíʔ-íy = cud*
 1sg forget-TEL-DYNM=INFR
 'I forgot it, apparently.' (cv)
- b) *ní-cud-úʔ ?*
 be-INFR-INT
 '(She's) there, huh?' (cv)

- (35) a) *yúp = ʔǎy-ǎn ʔǎh b'uy-d'əh-yíʔ-ip = b'ay*
 DEM=FEM-OBJ 1sg throw-send-TEL-DEP=again
 'I got rid of that woman, too' (txt)
- b) *yúp = mah tih hí-b'ay-áh*
 that=REP 3sg descend-AGAIN-DECL
 'Then he came down again.' (txt)

In example (36), a similar stress pattern marks the juncture between a canonical Inner Suffix (Perfective *-ʔe-*) and a fluid morpheme that appears in Inner Suffix position (Inferred evidential *cud*). Here the Perfective gets stress – while Inferred *cud* does not – in addition to the expected stress on the penultimate syllable (which in this case is Frustrative *yǎh*, also a peripheral formative in an Inner Suffix slot) and on the Boundary Suffix (*-Vh*).

- (36) *n'íp cidídu tóg ham-ʔay-ʔéʔ-cud-yǎh-ǎh*
 that Cirino daughter go-VENT-PERF-INFR-FRUST-DECL
 'That daughter of Cirino's went and came right back, apparently' (txt)

In at least one case, a slight functional distinction exists between the more tightly integrated (Inner Suffix) variant of the formative and its peripheral realization. This involves the Distributive morpheme *pid*, which as a peripheral verbal form has clausal scope and indicates a repeated event distributed over different subjects (example 37a). As a verbal Inner Suffix, however, it can have an iterative or durative meaning, as well as a quantifier-like interpretation, depending on the context (example 37b). Note that this tighter *semantic* integration with the verb iconically reflects the tighter *formal* integration of formative and stem.

- (37) a) *hid nǎn-ǎy pí d*
 3pl come-DYNM DIST
 'They also came/are coming.' (subjects compared)
- b) *hid nǎn-píd-ih*
 3pl come-DIST-DECL
 'They always, repeatedly came.' (within a given period of time)
 'They were coming for a long time.'
 'They all came.'

It is also noteworthy that several peripheral formatives may pile up in Inner Suffix position, just as they may pile up in peripheral position under other cir-

cumstances. In (38), multiple enclitics and particles appear as Inner Suffixes: Emphasis *pog* (in the phonologically reduced form *wog*⁴⁵), Habitual *bíg*, and Frustrative *yǎh*.

- (38) ...*yíkán kəkəy-nih-yi?*
 there interrupted-NEG-TEL

kədcak-wog-bíg-yǎh-ǎw-ah *yǎ?*
 fast.climb-EMPH1-HAB-FRUST-FLR-FOC INT.tag
 ‘...(Why the heck does Mom) always climb up there?!’ (txt)

As noted in §3.4.1.2B, Hup Inner Suffixes are formally identical (in terms of stress patterns and placement within the verb word) to component verb roots within verb compounds. This fact has interesting implications for Hup grammar. In a number of cases, a single form has two distinct formal identities, with a corresponding difference in semantics; it can appear as a peripheral clitic or particle, and also as a verb root. When the peripheral form is brought into the Inner Suffix position, however, the formal surface distinction between root and formative (determined primarily by placement relative to the Boundary Suffix) may be erased, and the difference in semantics must be inferred from the discourse context. This phenomenon applies in the case of *yǎh*, which occurs as a verb root meaning ‘request, command’, in addition to its use as a Frustrative marker (see §14.4). As example (39) illustrates, the verbal use is formally indistinguishable from the Frustrative use as an Inner Suffix in (40) (repeated from 32b above); in both cases, *yǎh* occupies the same position and shows the same stress pattern. However, a structural difference does exist: the Dynamic suffix *-V̇y* can occur with verb roots (and could therefore take the place of Declarative *-V̇h* in (39), where *yǎh-* is a verb root), but it cannot follow fluid formatives occurring in Inner Suffix position (and so could not appear in 40, where *yǎh* is a grammatical formative).

- (39) *deh cǎy-ǎn tih hop-yǎh-ǎh*
 water beetle-OBJ 3sg immerse-**command**-DECL
 ‘He sent the water-beetle down into the water.’ (txt)

⁴⁵ A /p/ > /w/ sound change is attested elsewhere in Hup; compare the full and reduced forms of the Completive suffix *-c̄ɪp-* / *c̄ɪw-* (cf. Table 19).

- (40) *núw-ǎn ʔāh tuk-yǎ́h-ǎ́h*
 this-OBJ 1sg want-**FRUST**-DECL
 ‘I’d like this one (but I don’t expect to get it).’ (cv)

The formative *b’ay* ‘again’ likewise resembles the verb *b’ay*- ‘return’ (as the final stem in a compound) when it appears as an Inner Suffix; in this case, however, the formative and the verb root are differentiated by their stress patterns:

- (41) *pěd wid-b’áy-áh*
 Ped arrive-**return**-DECL
 ‘Ped came back’ (el)
- (42) *yúp = mah tih hí-b’áy-áh*
 that=REP 3sg descend-**AGAIN**-DECL
 ‘Then he came down again.’ (txt)

3.6. Phonologically reduced formative variants

A striking characteristic of Hup Inner Suffix formatives is the co-existence, in certain cases, of two marginally distinct forms of the same morpheme (see also §3.4.1.2 above). One variant has the syllable structure CVC and is the historically older form, whereas the other variant has undergone phonological reduction involving loss (or, in one case, reduction from /p/ > /w/) of the final consonant, usually resulting in the form CV. This reduced form occurs only when the Inner Suffix is directly followed by a vowel-initial suffix, either a Boundary Suffix (such as the Declarative *-Vh*) or the ‘Filler’ form *-Vw-* (technically an Inner Suffix, but always directly followed by a Boundary Suffix itself). Note that loss of final consonants when followed by vowel-initial suffixes is a natural phonological change that is also attested in other languages, such as Turkish (cf. Bickel and Nichols 2007); likewise, phonological reduction is a process common in language change generally (cf. Bybee et al. 1994, Hopper and Traugott 1993).

The complete set of the formative pairs that are characterized by regular final consonant loss or reduction in the context of vowel-initial suffixes is summarized in Table 20.

Table 20. Hup formative pairs with final consonant erosion before vowel-initial suffixes

Unreduced form	Function of unreduced form	Reduced form (Inner Suffix)	Function of reduced form
-big-	Habitual aspect	-bi-	Habitual aspect
-čip-	Completive aspect	-čiw-	Completive aspect
-ʔeʔ-	Perfective aspect	-ʔe-	Perfective aspect
-pog-	Emphasis	-po ⁴⁶	Emphasis
-teg-	Purpose, future	-te-	Future
-tuk-	Lexical verb 'want'; imminent future	-tu-	Volition; imminent future

This phonological reduction of Inner Suffixes is accompanied by a similar reduction of the vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes that follow them, as mentioned above, although this is limited only to those suffixes that copy their vowel from the preceding stem (see example 43 below), and does not appear to apply to the 'Filler' form -Vw-. When these follow a reduced (CV) Inner Suffix, the copied vowel in the Boundary Suffix disappears, and the consonant – which is now the Boundary Suffix's only remaining segment – attaches directly to the vowel of the preceding Inner Suffix. The process serves to maintain Hup's preferred CVC syllable structure. Note, however, that this elision of the Boundary Suffix vowel occurs *only* in combination with these reduced Inner Suffixes. It is morphophonologically conditioned, rather than simply phonologically conditioned, since it does not occur when the vowel-copying suffix combines with a CV verb stem; for example, the verb *yu-* 'wait' combines with the Dynamic suffix to form *yú-úy* (wait-DYNM) 'waiting'.

Example (43) (repeated from 11 in §3.2 above) illustrates this phenomenon of phonological reduction for the Habitual formative (§12.8). The Habitual is a fluid formative; as a particle, it must have the CVC form *bíg* (43a), and the same applies when it is an Inner Suffix followed by another consonant-initial form. In (43b), however, the presence of the following Declarative Suffix (reduced from -Vh to -h) provides the context for the reduced form -bi-.

- (43) a) ʔāh hám-ǎy **bíg**
 1sg go-DYNM HAB
 'I go regularly.' (txt)

⁴⁶ This form has an additional reduced variant -wog- or -wo-, involving reduction of the initial consonant, as in example (38) above (but limited to certain speakers/dialect areas).

- b) *ʔāh ham-bí-h*
 1sg go-HAB-DECL
 ‘I go regularly.’ (txt)

The same phenomenon of phonological reduction yields variants of the Emphasis marker *-pog-* / *-po-* (and *-wog-* / *-wo-*) (example 44; §15.2.1) and the Completive aspect marker *-cīp-* / *-cīw-* (example 45; §12.5). Both of these formatives occur only as Inner Suffixes with verbs, rather than as peripheral forms, although Emphasis *pog* can appear as an enclitic with nonverbal parts of speech. The reduced variant *-cīw-* of the Completive is somewhat idiosyncratic in that its final consonant is not completely dropped, but only reduced from a stop /p/ to a glide /w/; furthermore, this reduced form normally appears only with the Dynamic suffix *-V̄y* (45c), and not with any other vowel-initial suffix (cf. 45b).

- (44) a) *ham-pog-tég níŋ-ah ?*
 go-EMPH1-FUT 2pl-FOC
 ‘Would you really go?!’ (txt)

- b) *kaniní cōp-ham-pó-h !*
 sleepy(Tuk) go.from.river-go-EMPH1-DECL
 ‘Sleepyhead’s gone up away from the river!’ (txt)

- (45) a) *ʔapíd nutkán puhu-hi-cīp-kəd-cak-yíʔ-íy = mah*
 right.away here.OBJ swell-FACT-COMPL-pass-climb-TEL-DYNM=REP
 ‘Right away it had already swelled up and spread quickly up to here’
 (on her leg) (txt)

- b) *tedé-d’əh-ót tih biʔ-ni-cīp-íh*
 three-PL-OBL 3sg work-be-COMPL-DECL
 ‘He’s already worked with three (of them).’ (txt)

- c) *ʔōh-yiʔ-cīw-íy híd, ʔin = tǎh = d’əh ?*
 sleep-TEL-COMPL-DYNM 3pl 1pl=child=PL
 ‘Have they already gone to sleep, our children?’ (txt)

Another example of a formative having both CVC and CV variants is the Perfective marker *-ʔeʔ-* / *-ʔe-* (see §12.4). In keeping with the expected pattern, the variant *-ʔeʔ-* appears when no vowel-initial suffix follows, such as in the

imperative mode (46a) and with predicate nominals, while the reduced form *-ʔe-* precedes a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix (46b).

- (46) a) *n'i-cóʔ way-ʔéʔ!*
 there-LOC go.out-PERF.IMP
 'Go outside for a while!' (cv)
- b) *ʔǎh yamhidóʔ-g'oʔ-ʔě-h*
 1sg sing-go.about-PERF-DECL
 'I used to go around singing (at drinking parties).' (txt)

Although the reduced variants of these Inner Suffix forms can only occur when followed by a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix, they are not in general the obligatory choice when such a suffix is present. They can normally be used interchangeably with their unreduced (CVC) variant, although the reduced (CV) form is by far the more common. In some cases, choice of the full variant over the reduced form has little semantic or pragmatic effect, and is simply associated with exaggerated precision in speaking, as some consultants report for example (47) (in comparison to 43b above). Often, however, use of the full variant is associated pragmatically with a more emphatic utterance (as in example 49 below), and for some forms the choice may also be semantically and functionally motivated (*-teg* / *-te-* in 48 and *-tuk-* / *-tu-* in 49–50 below).

- (47) *ʔǎh ham-bíḡ-ih*
 1sg go-HAB-DECL
 'I always go.' (el)

Some of Hup's formative pairs exhibit a functional as well as a formal distinction between the two variants. The suffix *-teg* (which can act both as a Boundary Suffix and as an Inner Suffix) indicates both purpose (48a) and future tense (48b), whereas its reduced Inner Suffix variant *-te-* can only signal future tense (48b; see §13.1):

- (48) a) *...tinih pǎb, tih wáy-át píḡ, tih wæd-tég-éh*
 3sg.POSS food.supply 3sg emerge-OBL DIST 3sg eat-FUT/PURP-DECL
 '[He put them in the canoe,] his food supplies, in order for him to eat (them) when he emerged again.' (txt)

b) *níŋ-ǎn tih tɔn-ham-pog-té-p, cún'!*
 2pl-OBJ 3sg take-go-EMPH1-FUT-DEP INTERJ

ham-pog-tég níŋ-áh ?!

go-EMPH1-FUT 2pl-FOC

'She's really going to take you all off, hey! Would/will you all really go?!' (cv)

Another case of a formal and functional distinction between the two variants is that of *-tuk-* / *-tu-* (volition and imminent future). Here, the variation is between a compound-final verb root (*tuk-*) and a verbal auxiliary or Inner-Suffix-like form (*-tuk-* / *-tu-*), whereas the above examples all clearly involve formatives, not roots. The original, unreduced member of this pair is the verb root *tuk-*, a normal transitive verb meaning 'want', which has developed a modal or auxiliary use in compounds. As such, it can optionally appear as either *-tuk-* or *-tu-*. As is common for such formative pairs, the two variants can encode different degrees of forcefulness: the unreduced form *-tuk-* is preferred for an insistent request, while the reduced version *-tu-* is neutral (example 49). Moreover, the grammaticalized variant *-tu-* is frequently used to indicate immediate future, as in example (50).

(49) a) *cúg ?ǎh wi?-túk-úy=hõ*
 fiddle 1sg hear-want-DYNM=NONVIS
 'I want to hear the fiddle!' (emphatic) (cv)

b) *cúg ?ǎh wi?-tú-y=hõ*
 fiddle 1sg hear-want-DYNM=NONVIS
 'I'd like to hear the fiddle.' (non-emphatic) (cv)

(50) *děh d'oj-tú-y*
 water rain-want-DYNM
 'It's about to rain.' (cv)

Finally, it is important to note that this phenomenon of final consonant loss represents an ongoing process of language change. It affects different Hup formatives to different degrees, and is subject to individual and dialectal variation. The Telic Inner Suffix *-yɨ?*, for example, is typically pronounced without the final glottal stop when followed by the Dynamic suffix *-Vý* in the Tat Deh dialect area, whereas speakers in the Barreira region tend to pronounce it in unreduced form.

3.7. Formative flexibility and grammaticalization

As the discussion in the preceding sections has illustrated, the flexibility among the different morpheme classes in Hup has provided the context for an extensive formal and functional overlap between verb roots and formatives. It has also fostered the development of alternative formal realizations of a given formative, accompanied in some cases by functional distinctions. Clearly, the formal and functional resemblances among many Hup morphemes (see §3.3) cannot be due to chance, but rather reflect historical processes of grammaticalization that are linked to this flexibility. The following discussion addresses some of these processes, and they are considered in more detail in Epps (2007d).

Many of the changes that Hup morphemes have undergone are typical of grammaticalization processes cross-linguistically. These include the phonological erosion experienced by Inner Suffixes, the increased semantic abstraction of many grammaticalizing formatives, and the tendency for formatives to have their apparent origins in roots (see §3.5 above); for example, the verb root ‘want’ (*tuk-*) has clearly given rise to an Inner Suffix indicating imminent future tense (see examples 49–50 above), and the verb ‘request, command’ (*yãh-*) is probably the source of the Frustrative formative (see examples 39–40).⁴⁷ These changes are consistent with the ‘unidirectionality principle’ referred to in grammaticalization studies, which posits that the process of grammaticalization leads “from lexical to nonlexical or from less grammatical to more grammatical structures; ...more ‘concrete’ concepts serve as structural templates for the expressions of less ‘concrete’ or more ‘abstract’ concepts” (Heine et al. 1991: 120). While this principle is understood to have exceptions, it is an empirical fact that these exceptions are far outnumbered by the attested cases of historical change that support the rule (cf. Haspelmath 2004: 27, Lehmann 2005: 23, etc.).

However, the flexibility between Hup roots and Inner Suffixes, and between Inner Suffixes and peripheral formatives, has interesting implications for grammaticalization theory, especially in light of the unidirectionality principle. Diachronically, the development of Hup’s fluid formatives has arguably involved *bi-directional* movement between the verbal core and the periphery, as illustrated by the case studies of individual morphemes offered below. In other words, Hup grammar has the mechanisms in place by which, over time, mor-

⁴⁷ As discussed in §14.4, the motivation behind this development may be the relative frequency of the verb ‘request, command’ in situations where a speaker is discussing an event that was *not* realized; i.e., ‘I requested him to do X (but it is still not done)’, as opposed to those situations in which the action has been carried out.

phemes originating in the verb core (where they are more bound) can migrate out to the periphery (where they are less bound), and likewise those originating outside the verb word can migrate from the periphery into the core. Although the choice and usage of the terms ‘clitic’, ‘particle’, and ‘affix’ in this grammar are understood to be somewhat language-specific (as discussed above), there is no debating the fact that the core formatives or ‘affixes’ in Hup are more closely integrated – both phonologically and morphosyntactically – with the verb stem, while the peripheral ‘clitics’ and ‘particles’ are less bound (see §3.5 above).

This bi-directional movement is exceptional with respect to the unidirectionality principle, which posits a diachronic trajectory of less bound to more bound for grammaticalizing morphemes – usually realized as a transition from free form to clitic to affix. This process has been termed ‘morphologization’, whereby “loose, paratactic [discourse] structures develop into closed syntactic structures” (Heine et al. 1991: 13, 20, cf. Givon 1979). Although the grammaticalization of Hup formatives from roots (verbal, nominal, or adjectival) is consistent with this cross-linguistic unidirectional tendency to shift from lexical to nonlexical structures, the degree of the Hup forms’ bondedness is in many cases not at all consistent with ‘morphologization’; many forms have gone from more to less bound, involving a shift from affix to clitic/particle, rather than the reverse.

The decrease in bondedness on the part of certain Hup morphemes is arguably an example of ‘degrammaticalization’ (e.g., Norde 2002, 2006), or ‘antigrammaticalization’ in Haspelmath’s (2004) terms: “a change that leads from the endpoint to the starting point of a potential grammaticalization and also shows the same intermediate stages.” While what qualifies as ‘degrammaticalization’ or ‘antigrammaticalization’ is widely debated, Haspelmath and many other scholars understand the term(s) as covering “any type of change that goes against the general direction of grammaticalization (i.e., discourse > syntax > morphology)” (Haspelmath 2004: 28), including changes such as suffix > clitic > postposition. Regardless of one’s terminology, it is clear that this more bound > less bound trajectory in Hup morphosyntax represents a change that is counter-directional in light of broader cross-linguistic tendencies. Moreover, it is particularly unusual in that it has happened multiple times and in consistent fashion in Hup, whereas cases of deaffixation in other languages are reported to be idiosyncratic and unproductive, typically arising from some kind of structural collapse (Heine 2003: 582, Norde 2002: 49, Plank 1995).

We turn now to case studies of the two types of directional change in Hup, the one involving more straightforward grammaticalization, the other morphosyntactic deaffixation or ‘degrammaticalization’. All of the scenarios suggested below are consistent with grammaticalization theory’s other canonical generalizations: that historical change usually involves a progression from semantically

more concrete to more abstract, and from more lexical to more functional. It is noteworthy that, were the cases of deaffixation discussed here to be construed differently (such that the historical transition were assumed to be one of syntactically less bound > more bound instead of the opposite path suggested here), some kind of counterdirectional change would still be involved, because we would have to assume a *semantic* shift from abstract to relatively concrete.

Of the grammaticalization paths that can be identified for formatives in Hup, several appear to follow the cross-linguistically canonical transition from morphologically less bound to more bound, from free lexical item > clitic > affix. In general, the first stage of this type of grammaticalization involves a root that is not a verb (whereas the alternative trajectory always involves a verb within a compound), i.e., a noun or an adjective.

One particularly interesting example is the development of the Future particle *-teg / -te-* from the noun ‘stick, tree’, as summarized here (and presented in detail in the Historical note in §13.1 and in Epps 2008b). This form – which exists as a free noun (*tég*) meaning ‘firewood, wood’ – also occurs as a bound noun meaning ‘tree, stick’ (example 51). Over time, this bound noun took on a secondary function as a generic nominalizer meaning ‘thing’, as in example (52). This form, in turn, grammaticalized into a marker of purpose on non-finite verbs in dependent clauses, where it took on the role of a consonant-initial Boundary Suffix; this usage is also attested in modern Hup (example 53). The stress shift that accompanied this process (from [stem=teg] to [stem-teg]) allowed the erstwhile nominal construction to conform to the formal template for a verbal construction (i.e., consistent with the typical stress pattern found with CVC Boundary Suffixes; see §3.4.1.2 above).

(51) *púp = teg*

paxiuba=STICK
‘paxiuba tree’

(52) *pəpəd = teg*

roll=STICK
‘rolling thing’ = ‘automobile/tractor’

(53) *dóʔ = d’əh hid pəhə-tég, ham-ní-íy yúw-úh*
child=PL 3pl grow.plump-FUT/PURP go-be-DYNM that-DECL
‘In order for the children to grow plump; that’s how it (the blessing)
went.’ (txt)

At some point after this had occurred, the use of the suffix *-teg* in dependent clauses was generalized to main clauses (as has apparently occurred with other

verbal formatives in Hup; see Chapter 18). Once within the main clause, the verbal purpose construction subsequently developed future semantics; this step is also attested synchronically in Hup, since *-teg* currently doubles as a purpose marker (example 54a and above) and as a future marker (54b). (Such a transition from purpose to future is typologically common; cf. Bybee et al. 1991.) Finally, *-teg* was phonologically eroded to produce the variant *-te-*, which can only have a future tense meaning (example 55), and which occurs exclusively in the Inner Suffix slot when followed by a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix (as is typical of reduced variants; see §3.6 above). A free nominal root has thus become a bound verbal Inner Suffix.

(54) a) *dóʔ=d'əh mūhūʔ-tég*
 child=PL play-FUT/PURP
 '(It's) for kids to play with.' (cv)

b) *tih ham-tég ʔūhníy*
 3sg go-FUT maybe
 'Maybe he will go.' (cv)

(55) *tán ʔāh næn-té-h*
 FUT.CNTR 1sg come-FUT-DECL
 'I'll come later.' (cv)

A related process probably led to the development of the Habitual gram *bíg* (example 56), which has a likely source in the adverbial *bíg* 'for a long time' (example 57), itself related to the adjective root *bíg* 'old. As discussed in §12.8, the semantic link among all three functions of *bíg* is probably one of temporal duration: just as an old object (e.g., a path) is typically one that has been used or experienced again and again over a long period of time, so a habitual activity is one that has been performed over and over.

(56) *ʔid-íy bíg ʔāh-āh*
 speak-DYNM HAB 1sg-DECL
 'I habitually speak (Tukano)' (txt)

(57) *cet-ham-tubud-yíʔ-íy, húp=ʔāy-ān, bíg !!*
 carry.on.back-go-INTS3-TEL-DYNM Hup-FEM-OBJ long.time
 'He carried the girl a long way off, for a long time!' (txt)

Habitual *bíg* is a fluid morpheme, whose occurrence as either a particle or an Inner Suffix is conditioned by the type of Boundary Suffix present. As we have already seen in §3.6 above, it alternates in Inner Suffix position with the phonologically eroded form *-bi-* when it is directly followed by a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix (example 58). In this case, an adjectival/adverbial lexical item has presumably grammaticalized to a particle and thence to a verbal affix, but has maintained a fluid identity.

- (58) *ʔāh ʔid-bí-h*
 1sg speak-HAB-DECL
 ‘I habitually speak (Tukano)’ (txt)

On the other hand, there are at least four clear examples of forms that appear to have followed a trajectory involving deaffixation, from verb root > Inner Suffix > enclitic or particle. These are *yāh*, which appears both as a verb root meaning ‘request, command’ and as a Frustrative formative (see examples 39–40 above); *b’ay*, which acts as a verb ‘return’, as an aspectual formative signaling repetition of an event or state, and as a marker of topic shift (see examples 41–42 above); and two evidentials, Nonvisual *hō(h)* and Inferential *cud*. Of these, the path of grammaticalization taken by the Nonvisual evidential *hō(h)* is detailed here, and is considered to be typical of a transition from verb > formative generally in Hup.

As discussed in §14.9.2, the Nonvisual evidential *hō(h)* appears most frequently as an enclitic (= *hō*), and is used to indicate that the speaker’s information source is first-hand but nonvisual – in other words, the information was acquired through hearing, smelling, tasting, or feeling:

- (59) *náciya pæ-æy = hō*
 boat go.upriver-DYNM=NONVIS
 ‘The boat is going upriver (I can hear it).’ (cv)

This evidential enclitic almost certainly derives from the verb root *hōh-* ‘produce sound, be audible’:

- (60) *tih hōh-ōp, nukán-ay tán yúw-úh*
 3sg make.sound-DEP over.here-INCH FUT.CNTR that.ITG-DECL
 ‘When it (first) becomes audible, it (the boat) is still over there in this direction.’ (txt)

How did this shift from verb to enclitic come about? In the first stage of its grammaticalization, the verb *hōh-* ‘produce sound’ probably developed a fre-

quent use as a productive compound-final form, with the meaning ‘do (verb) and produce noise’. It was only a short step from this to a more manner-related meaning, ‘be audible while doing (verb)’. As discussed in detail in Chapter 9, verb compounding is extremely productive in Hup, and stems within compounds frequently take on modal or Aktionsart functions with varying degrees of abstraction; examples of this are found in compounds like *?id-hipāh-* (speak-know-) ‘know how to speak’, and *wæd-hũ?-yi?* (eat-finish-TEL-) ‘eat (it) all up’. Such integrated compounds involving the verb *hǝh-* ‘produce sound’ are in fact currently attested in Hup:

- (61) *yam-hǝh-nih = yi?* *nĩh !*
 sing-make.sound-NEG=TEL be.IMP
 ‘Don’t make (so much) noise singing!’ (ru)

Through more and more frequent use, the compound-final verb ‘make noise’ would have taken on an increasingly secondary status vis-à-vis the preceding stem, until it became a true auxiliary with an essentially evidential function.⁴⁸ This process is illustrated by the many other co-existing, functionally distinct pairs of verb roots and verbal auxiliaries in Hup, such as *tuk-* (root: ‘want’; auxiliary: ‘imminent future’; see 49–50 above) and *key-* (root: ‘see’; auxiliary: ‘try’, as in the compound *bi?-key-* (work-see) ‘try to make/do (something)’; see also §9.4.2.4). It was probably at this stage that *-hǝh-* underwent the loss of its final consonant (*hǝh > hǝ*) in the context of immediately following vowel-initial suffixes, just as occurred in the case of *-tuk-* / *-tu-* ‘want’ or ‘imminent future’, and other grammaticalizing forms (§3.6 above). Example (62) illustrates that *-hǝh-* would now have had two possible interpretations, and remains semantically ambiguous (and the interpretations pragmatically equivalent) in some contexts:

- (62) *himũn = hǝb* *d’o?-d’ǝh-?áy* *hám,*
 paxiuba.tree=hollow take-send-VENT.IMP go.IMP

yúp nǝh-kǝd-hi-hǝ-ǎn

that fall-pass-descend-NOISE-OBJ

‘Go fetch a paxiuba-tree-hollow, that one that fell, making noise.’

...that one that fell (I heard it).’

⁴⁸ This development was probably motivated in part by language contact with Tukano; see Epps (2005a).

At this stage in its existence, the verb stem ‘produce sound’ would have had two distinct realizations – one primarily lexical (as the independent verb root ‘make noise’), and the other primarily grammatical (as an auxiliary or Inner Suffix with a marginal evidential function). However, both would have appeared in formally identical constructions, as still occurs in cases like (62). The next stage would have involved the more grammaticalized form of the verb detaching itself from the core of the verbal construction (i.e., moving outside the Boundary Suffix) and appearing in the periphery as an enclitic. At this point in the process, the verb stem and the evidential particle would have become formally and functionally distinct. That this path of grammaticalization is indeed what took place, rather than the enclitic and the suffix having grammaticalized independently, is indicated by the fact that the enclitic =*hɔ̃* lacks the final consonant of the verbal source and Inner Suffix variant (and this consonant loss occurs exclusively in Inner Suffix position when vowel-initial suffixes follow), and by the fact that the peripheral and affixal realizations of *hɔ̃(h)* are in a complementary distribution that is mirrored by many other fluid morphemes in Hup (which themselves have several different historical sources).

The mechanisms behind this transition from suffix to peripheral formative are complex, and are discussed in detail in Epps (2007d). Deaffixation probably took the following route: As compounded verb roots like *hɔ̃h* grammaticalized into Inner Suffixes, some of these took on discourse-related functions (such as evidentiality). In doing so, they experienced a *widening* of syntactic and semantic scope from the level of the verb stem to that of the predicate – as is common in the development of discourse markers (see Traugott 1997, Tabor and Traugott 1998, etc.). Once this had occurred, the new formatives could be extended to *all* predicates, rather than applying strictly to verbal predicates (example 63). However, as discussed above, non-verbal elements lack the morphological complexity of verbs; they do not normally take Boundary Suffixes, and the category of Inner Suffix is thus irrelevant in non-verbal contexts. Accordingly, if a morpheme that appeared as an Inner Suffix on verbs were to associate with a non-verbal element, it would occur by default as an enclitic or particle.

- (63) *pɑ̃j=hɔ̃*
 umari=NONVIS
 ‘It’s umari fruit.’ (speaker is smelling mess on baby’s foot)

With this extension from verbal to non-verbal predicates complete, the newly grammaticalized Inner Suffixes would now have a context in which they could function outside the morphophonologically defined ‘core’ of the word with which they were associated. Once this relatively free identity was

established, they could then *reassociate* – again by analogical extension – with verbal predicates. At this point, however, their new identity as peripheral formatives, coupled with their newly widened scope (which would iconically suggest that they should be ordered further away from the verb stem than are those suffixes relating to aspect, etc., as discussed in §3.5 above) would have led to their applying *outside* those Boundary Suffixes with relatively narrow scope. They would thus have begun to appear as fluid morphemes, appearing outside the more strictly verb-related Boundary Suffixes (such as Dynamic aspect -*V*y), but inside those Boundary Suffixes with primarily clause-level functions (such as Declarative -*V*h).

This transition was probably also reinforced by analogy with Hup's other fluid formatives that originated outside the verb and followed a path from less > more bound as they became suffixes (in keeping with more typical processes of grammaticalization); examples include the fluid Habitual form *big* (most likely derived from the adjective 'old'; see above) and the Reportative evidential *mah* (historically an evidential enclitic). The existence of these fluid forms may have provided a model for the development of a comparable flexibility between Inner Suffix and verbal periphery on the part of formatives like evidential *hǎ(h)* – particularly within the new evidential paradigm that was formed by the addition of the new Nonvisual and Inferential forms to the historically prior Reportative form. Crucially, only compounded verb roots have undergone deaffixation; because they started their life as grammatical formatives within the verb core (thus fully bound), they could only become less bound as they developed more discourse-related functions and underwent a widening of scope.

That the fluid identity of formatives like *hǎ(h)* represents only one point along a possible trajectory of morphosyntactic change is illustrated by the fact that other formatives appear to occupy different positions along the same path. For example, two Inner Suffixes – Emphasis *pog* and Diminutive *mæh* – appear consistently as Inner Suffixes with verbs (example 64); however, like Habitual *big*, their historical sources are probably adjectives: 'big' and 'small', respectively. Accordingly, their exclusive status as Inner Suffixes in verbal contexts (although they do appear as enclitics with nouns) suggests that they have developed an identity that is closely integrated with the verb stem, such that their formal realization is not dependent on the type of Boundary Suffix present. At the same time, their origin outside the verb suggests that they have passed through a 'fluid' stage like that exemplified by the formatives discussed above.

- (64) *təghǎ = nɔg'öd ʔāh wiʔ-mæh-ǎh, cípmæh = yíʔ*
 Non.Indian=mouth 1sg hear-DIM-DECL little=TEL
 'I understand just a little Portuguese.' (txt)

At the other end of the continuum, the contrast-tense particles *páh* (Temporally Proximate Contrast), *j'ám* / *j'áh* (Distant Past Contrast), and *tán* (Future Contrast; see §13.4) always appear in the verbal periphery, even when the normally clause-final Interrogative and Dependent suffixes are present – which for fluid grams entail that these appear within the verb core. These forms may thus be at an early stage in their development as verbal formatives, and may eventually develop a fluid identity as they become more integrated with the verb.

- (65) *tód-ót=mah* *hid* *yók-o?* ***j'ám*** *yǎ?*
 hollow-OBL=REP 3pl poke-INT DST.CNTR TAG1
 ‘They poked around in the hole, right?’

This concludes the discussion of the architecture of the Hup word, and of the processes of formative combination and grammaticalization which it involves. In the chapters that follow, the facts and concepts discussed in this chapter will be an important basis for understanding the behavior of Hup morphemes within the word and the clause, as well as the possible historical connections between them.

Chapter 4

The noun and nominal morphology

The noun stem in Hup is identified as the minimal nominal word, which in most cases is monomorphemic. As discussed in §3.1.1, the defining features of the noun include its ability to occur as a bare stem lacking a Boundary Suffix (unlike verbs, which usually require inflection), and its functioning as an argument of a predicate or as an attributive modifier of another noun. Lexical (contrastive) tone is also most salient on nouns. Unlike verbs and adjectives, nouns can in general be possessed, and can be negated with the existence negator *pǎ̃* (see §16.2).

In this chapter, I present the simple noun stem and the categories of nominal morphology that are most basic to it, case and number. I also offer a brief discussion of the lexical phenomenon of reduplication in nouns, and summarize the processes of nominal derivation. Processes of nominal compounding are treated in Chapter 5, and multi-word noun phrases are covered in Chapter 6.

4.1. Types of nouns

Noun stems in Hup fall into two basic classes: bound nouns, which are obligatorily bound to another nominal form (a phenomenon akin to inalienable possession), and nouns that are free (i.e., that need not appear with a possessor or associated noun). Bound nouns in Hup include almost all generic human nouns, referential kin terms, animal body parts, plant parts, and a few other nouns. These are discussed in detail in §5.4, but are also necessarily mentioned here in the discussion of case and number marking.

Hup proper nouns include clan names (see Table 2, §1.4) and personal names, of which most people have several: a Hup *biʔíd hǎt* or ‘spell (blessing) name’ (see Table 3, §1.4), a Portuguese name, and sometimes a nickname. Place names are mostly compounds of the ‘productive’ type (see §5.1.2.2), such as *tát deh* ‘Taracúa Ant Creek’ (Taracúa Igarapé); *b’óʔ paç* ‘Tucunaré Hill’; *g’áj paç* ‘Cutivara Hill’, etc. (cf. §1.3). Kin terms in Hup occur both as bound referential forms and also as free vocative variants.

4.1.1. Human nouns

Human entities get special treatment in Hup grammar, as this chapter and Chapter 5 will clarify. Unlike most nouns referring to animals and inanimate objects,

generic human nouns are obligatorily bound when singular (see §5.4–5.5), and receive obligatory object and number marking in environments where these categories apply. The special place human nouns hold in Hup grammar can be explained as manifesting a conceptualization of humans as maximally discrete entities, the most significant participants in any event. Such a prioritization of human entities is cross-linguistically common, reflected in the fact that many languages' grammatical organization corresponds to an animacy hierarchy (e.g., Silverstein 1976, Comrie 1989); nevertheless, the split between humans and other entities seems to be encoded with particular frequency in Hup.

4.1.2. Closed nominal classes

Closed classes of nominals in Hup include pronouns, demonstratives and interrogative pronouns. These are comprised of small sets of base forms from which more specific forms are derived, via the addition of bound morphemes.

The Hup pronouns and their basic derived forms are summarized in Table 21, and discussed in more detail in §6.1. Note that most of the irregularity in the paradigm (resulting from the morphological fusion of derived forms) is limited to the first person singular forms. In addition to the derived forms given here, pronouns can take a variety of other regular Boundary Suffix forms, such as the Dependent and Declarative markers, as well as certain enclitics.

Table 21. Simple and derived pronouns⁴⁹

	Subject PN	Object PN (PN + - <i>ǎn</i>)	Oblique PN (PN + - <i>Vít</i>)	Possessive PN (PN + - <i>nǐh</i>)	
				Downriver Hup dialects	Umari Norte dialect
1sg	<i>ʔǎh</i>	<i>ʔǎn</i>	<i>ʔǎh-ǎt</i>	<i>nǐ</i>	<i>nǐh</i>
2sg	<i>ʔám</i>	<i>ʔám-ǎn</i>	<i>ʔám-ǎt</i>	<i>ʔamǐh</i>	<i>ʔam-nǐh</i>
3sg (M/F)	<i>tǐh</i>	<i>tǐh-ǎn</i>	<i>tǐh-ǎt</i>	<i>tinǐh</i>	<i>tih-nǐh</i>
1pl	<i>ʔin</i>	<i>ʔin-ǎn</i>	<i>ʔin-ǎt</i>	<i>ʔinǐh</i>	<i>ʔin-nǐh</i>
2pl	<i>nǐŋ</i>	<i>nǐŋ-ǎn</i>	<i>nǐŋ-ǎt</i>	<i>nǐŋǐh</i>	<i>nǐŋ-nǐh</i>
3pl (M/F)	<i>híd</i> <i>yǐʔd'ǎh</i>	<i>híd-ǎn</i> [híran] (TD)	<i>híd-ǎt</i> [hírit] (TD) <i>yǐʔd'ǎh-ǎt</i>	<i>hidnǐh</i> <i>hidǐh</i> [hírih] (TD) <i>yǐʔd'ǎh-nǐh</i>	<i>hid-nǐh</i>

⁴⁹ (TD) refers to the Tat Deh dialect area.

Hup demonstratives are bound forms that encode a basic three-way distinction: *nu-* (variant *nĩ-*) ‘proximal’, *n’i-* ‘distal’, and *yu-* (variant *yĩ-*) ‘intangible’ (i.e., relatively abstract; outside accessible sphere), and an additional fourth term *cã-* ‘alterative’ (‘other’). These forms are obligatorily inflected – for the most part with Boundary Suffixes, but also with a number of enclitic-like forms; these are (with a few exceptions) mutually exclusive. The basic and derived forms are summarized in Table 22, and are discussed in detail in §6.3.

Almost all of the Hup interrogative pronouns are derived forms which pattern like the demonstratives, and are built on a single bound interrogative particle *hĩ-*. The sole exception to this is the form *?ũy* ‘who’, which is restricted to human referents. The derived interrogative forms are summarized together with the demonstratives in Table 22, and again in detail in §6.2.

Table 22. Demonstratives and interrogative pronouns: derived forms

Inflection	Demonstratives (forms and meanings) ⁵⁰				Interrogative
Basic uninflected form	<i>nu-</i> / <i>nĩ-</i> Proximal	<i>n’i-</i> Distal	<i>yu-</i> / <i>yĩ-</i> Intangible ⁵¹	<i>cã-</i> ‘Other’	<i>hĩ-</i> Interrogative
<i>-p</i> (from Dependent marker)	<i>núp</i> ‘this’	<i>n’íp</i> ‘that’	<i>yúp</i> ‘that’ (inaccessible)	<i>cáp</i> ‘another’	<i>híp</i> ‘which?’
<i>-t</i> (from Oblique)	<i>nút</i> ‘here’	<i>n’ít</i> ‘there’	<i>yít</i> ‘thus, then’		<i>hít</i> ‘where?’
<i>-ăn</i> (Object ⁵² (cf. §4.3.1))	<i>núw-ăn</i> ⁵³ ‘this-(FLR)-OBJ’	<i>n’íw-ăn</i> ‘that-(FLR)-OBJ’	<i>yúw-ăn</i> ‘that-(FLR)-OBJ’	<i>cáw-ăn</i> ‘another-(FLR)-OBJ’	<i>híw-ăn</i> ‘which one?’
			<i>yí?iw-ăn</i> ⁵⁴		

⁵⁰ As noted in §2.5, inflectional forms beginning with obstruents all condition a preceding glottal stop or homorganic consonant at the morpheme/syllable boundary; e.g., [hĩn’ɣh] ‘what’, [nu’kán] ‘over here’, [yĩt’ðh] ‘those’, etc. (a general morphophonological process in Hup). This morphophonologically conditioned change is not shown in the orthography.

⁵¹ The ‘Intangible’ demonstrative is typically used for entities that are outside the accessible sphere or are generic.

⁵² Case inflection can also follow the basic modifier form (ending in *-p*) of the demonstrative; e.g., *nup-an*, but this is not common.

⁵³ The [w] in these forms is a reflex of the ‘filler’ syllable *-Vw-*, which also appears in unreduced form.

⁵⁴ In Santa Atanasio (Serra dos Porcos) dialect.

Inflection	Demonstratives (forms and meanings)				Interrogative
- <i>Vt</i>	<i>núw-út</i>	<i>n'íw-ít</i>	<i>yúw-út</i>	<i>cǎw-át</i>	<i>hǐw-ít</i>
Oblique (cf. §4.3.4)	<i>nú-ũw-út</i> 'this-(FLR)-OBL'	<i>n'í-ĩw-ít</i> 'that-(FLR)- OBL'	<i>yú-uw-út</i> 'that-(FLR)- OBL'	<i>cǎ-ãw-át</i> 'another- (FLR)-OBL'	'with which one?'
- <i>Vp</i>	<i>núw-úp</i>	<i>n'íw-íp</i>	<i>yúw-úp</i>	<i>cǎw-áp</i>	<i>híp</i>
Dependent (cf. §18.2.4)	<i>nú-ũw-úp</i> 'this-(FLR)-DEP'	<i>n'í-ĩw-íp</i> 'that-(FLR)- DEP'	<i>yú-uw-úp</i> 'that-(FLR)- DEP'	<i>cǎ-ãw-áp</i> 'another- (FLR)-DEP'	'which; how, in what manner?'
- <i>Vh</i>	<i>núw-úh</i>	<i>n'íw-íh</i>	<i>yúw-úh</i>	<i>cǎw-áh</i>	
Declarative (cf. §17.3.2)	<i>nú-ũw-úh</i> 'this-(FLR)-DECL	<i>n'í-ĩw-íh</i> 'that-(FLR)- DECL	<i>yú-uw-úh</i> 'that-(FLR)- DECL	<i>cǎ-ãw-áh</i> 'another- (FLR)- DECL	
- <i>V?</i>	<i>núw-ũ?</i>	<i>n'íw-ĩ?</i>	<i>yúw-u?</i>	<i>cǎw-ã?</i>	
Interrogative (cf. §17.4) ⁵⁵					
- <i>có?</i>	<i>nú-có?</i> 'in this place here'	<i>n'í-có?</i> 'in that place there'	<i>yí-có?</i> 'over there'	<i>cǎ-?ah-</i> <i>có?</i> 'in another place'	<i>hǐ-có?</i> 'at/to what location?'
- <i>d'əh</i>	<i>ní-d'əh</i> 'these'	<i>n'í-d'əh</i> 'those'	<i>yí-d'əh</i> 'those, they'	<i>cǎ-d'əh</i> 'others'	
Plural/ collective ⁵⁶ (cf. §4.4)					
- <i>n'ih</i>	<i>ní-n'ih</i> 'these, this, about here' (plural inanimate, mass)	<i>n'í-n'ih</i> 'those, about there' (plural inanimate, mass)	<i>yí-n'ih</i> 'those, thus' (plural inanimate, mass)	<i>cǎ-n'ih</i> 'whatever'	<i>hǐ-n'ih</i> 'what, what kind?'
- <i>?ap</i>	<i>ná?ap</i> 'this many'	<i>n'íp-?ap</i> 'that many'	<i>yí-?ap</i> or <i>yá?ap</i> 'this many, all that'	<i>hǐ-?ap</i> 'how many?'	
Quantity, number (cf. §6.5.3)					

⁵⁵ The interrogative marker *-V?* can also follow most other inflectional forms, such as the modifier form *-p* and the case-markers *-ăn*, *-Vt*; e.g., *núp-u?*, *núwăn-a?*.

⁵⁶ The plural marker *-d'əh* receives primary stress in these pronominal forms, whereas it is unstressed when occurring with nouns.

Inflection	Demonstratives (forms and meanings)				Interrogative
<i>-m'ǽ</i> Amount, measurement (§10.2.2.1)	<i>nú-m'ǽ</i> 'this much, (at) this time'	<i>n'í-m'ǽ</i> 'that much, (at) that time'	<i>yú-m'ǽ</i> 'that much (ITG)'		<i>hǐ-m'ǽ</i> 'when, what quantity?'
<i>-wag</i> 'day'	<i>nú-wag</i> 'these days'	<i>n'í-wag</i> 'those days; earlier days'	<i>yú-wag</i>	<i>cǎ-wag</i> 'another day'	
<i>-wəd</i> 'old/ resp. masc.'	<i>nú-wəd</i> (-wa)	<i>n'í-wəd</i> (-wa)	<i>yú-wəd</i> (-wa)	<i>cǎ-wəd</i> (-wa)	
<i>-wa</i> 'old/ res- pected fem.' (cf. §7.4)	'this old/ resp. man (woman)'	'that old/ resp. man (woman)'	'that old/resp. man (woman)'	'other old/ resp. man (woman)'	
<i>nih-</i> '(be.like)' Manner (verbal form) (§10.2.2.1)	<i>ní nih-</i> (TD) <i>nup-yi? nih-</i> (B) 'in this way'		<i>yí nih-</i> 'in this way, thus'		<i>hǐ nih-</i> 'in what way?' <i>hǐ-níy</i> (from <i>nih-iy</i>) 'what did you say?'
<i>nɔ-</i> 'say' (verbal form)	<i>ní nɔ-</i> 'saying this'		<i>yí nɔ-</i> 'saying that, thus'		<i>hǐ nɔ-</i> 'saying what?'
<i>-niykeyó?</i> (<i>-nih-iy key-yó?</i>) be.like-DYNM see- SEQ ['because of']			<i>yíniykeyó?</i> 'for that reason'		<i>hǐniykeyó?</i> 'why, for what reason'

Most of the bound inflectional forms in Table 22 are productive with nouns in general in Hup, as discussed in the relevant listed chapter sections. Exceptions are the 'directional' form *-kán* (possibly formed from the 'locational/directional object' marker *-an*, see §4.3.2 below), which has not been encountered anywhere else in Hup, and the form *-wag* 'day', which occurs elsewhere only as a free noun. The forms *-p* and *-t* are also not productive with nouns (but they, and the mono-consonantal variants of other Boundary Suffixes, do occur with the phonologically reduced versions of certain Inner Suffixes, such as *-te-* (FUTURE) *-bi-* (HABITUAL); see §3.6). The semantics of the *-p* and *-t* demonstrative variants (relating to nominal modification and location), as well as their form, suggests that they are in fact reduced versions of the Dependent

marker *-Vp* (see §18.2.4) and the Oblique *-Vt* suffixes (see §4.3.4), which also combine with the bound demonstrative and interrogative pronoun forms in unreduced form. A further idiosyncrasy of the demonstrative and interrogative forms is their ability to occur as marginally free particles when followed (whether directly or with an intervening subject pronoun) by the verb stems *nih-* ‘be like’ and *nɔ-* ‘say’, exclusively (see §6.2–6.3 for more detail).

4.1.3. ‘Verby’ nouns

A small group of Hup nouns are semi-verbal in their morphosyntactic patterning. This is presumably because of their semantics, which involves periods of time and so is inherently progressive and impermanent. Nevertheless, these lexical items belong primarily to the noun class: unlike members of the verb class, they do not require aspectual inflection and cannot take the full range of inflectional markers, they typically appear as arguments of a clause, and they can in general be possessed and existence-negated. It should also be noted that they do not pattern as a fully coherent set, in that they do not all take the same aspectual forms.

The set of ‘verby’ nouns consists of terms for humans as defined by age, in particular (*tih=*)*wəhəd* ‘old man’, (*tih=*)*wá* ‘old woman’, and (*tih=*)*dó?* ‘child’, and for periods of time, namely *wág* ‘day’ and *j’əb* ‘night’.⁵⁷ When the human nouns appear as predicates, they often (and in some cases must) appear without the bound preform *tih=*, which they normally require when appearing as arguments; its removal thus apparently has something of a de-nominalizing function (but note that noun > verb derivation is not generally productive in Hup).

The verb-like qualities of these nouns include the ability of some members of the set – in particular ‘day’ and ‘night’ – to occur in verbal compounds (something normally possible only with verb stems):

- (1) *mǝh tih yə̃?-wəd-hi-wág-áh*
 inambu 3sg roast-eat-FACT-day-DECL
 ‘He cooked and ate inambu until daybreak.’ (txt)

These nouns are also able to occur with a limited subset of verbal aspectual forms, which are otherwise restricted to the verb class. For example, (with the

⁵⁷ A related phenomenon exists in Hup’s sister language Yuhup, in which ‘night’ and ‘day’ are reported to act as verb roots (Ospina 2002: 403).

exception of ‘child’) they can take the Completive marker (§12.5), as in *wag-yiʔ-cʰw-ǿy* (day-TEL-COMPL-DYNM) ‘already day’, and in example (2). ‘Night’ and ‘day’ may also take the verbal Factitive prefix (§11.4), as in (2) and (1) above.

- (2) *(hi-)j’əb-yiʔ-cʰp-ǿy* *ʔin-ǿh !*
 (FACT-)night-TEL-COMPL-DYNM 1pl-DECL
 ‘Night has already befallen us!’ (cv)

‘Day’ and ‘night’ have lexicalized variants involving the Inchoative marker (§12.3): *wág-ay* (day-INCH) ‘dawn’ (beginning of day), and *j’əb-ay* (night-INCH) ‘dusk’ (beginning of night). The primarily verbal Persistent marker *tǿ* (‘yet, still’ §12.11) is also grammatical with these forms, as in *j’əb tǿ* ‘still night/dark’ (compare the adverbial expression *j’əb-tǿ-yiʔ* ‘dawn’), *wág tǿ* ‘still day/light’, and *tǿh = dóʔ = muhún tǿ* ‘still a very young child’ (note that this form also uses the exclusively verbal intensifier *muhún*; §15.1.2). Finally, the ‘old man/woman’ lexemes can take the verbal Future form *-teg* (§13.1), as in (3), although they are *not* able to take its more grammaticalized variant *-te-* without a copula; this fact may be evidence both for the semi-nominal status of the verbal form *-teg* (see §13.1 Historical note), and for the only semi-verbal status of the ‘old man/woman’ lexemes.

- (3) *yũ wəhəd-tég-ay-áh*
 João old.man-FUT-INCH-DECL
 ‘João will get old’ (el)

4.2. Nominal morphology

Hup’s nominal morphology is considerably less complex than its verbal morphology. Nevertheless, a given nominal root can typically take multiple formatives, including suffixes as well as enclitics. In keeping with Hup morphological patterns in general, these always follow the stem – with the marginal exception of the procliticization of the third person singular pronoun *tǿh* to some bound nouns (see §5.4). In general, formatives attach to the last element of the noun

phrase in Hup, rather than to the head noun within the noun phrase, regardless of how phonologically integrated the bound morpheme is with its host stem.⁵⁸

A morphological slot sequence for the noun is given below.

STEM – Number[-*d'əh*] – (Filler[-*Vw*]) – Case[-*ǎn*, -*an*, -*Ǒt*]/
 Dependent marker[-*Vp*] – Aspect/Focus – Declarative[-*Ǒh*]

The discussion of nominal morphology in this chapter concentrates on the inflectional marking of case and number; these forms are considered to be morphosyntactically maximally ‘basic’ to the noun, since they relate intrinsically to the identity of the individual nominal referent and to its syntactic role in the clause. However, the list of formatives that can be associated with nouns is in fact much longer, and most of these are addressed in Chapter 7. In general, the primary function of these latter forms is one of marking pragmatic focus and other functions related to the larger discourse context. In addition, many of them are highly ‘promiscuous’, in that they are also found on other parts of speech and in a variety of constructions, often with quite distinct functions for a single form; for example, several occur as aspect markers on verbs. Still other promiscuous forms can be associated with virtually any part of speech – which frequently functions as a convenient host in a key position within the clause – with no substantial difference in semantic contribution; most of these are discussed in Chapter 15 (see also Appendix I).

4.3. Case marking and grammatical relations

Hup has a case system that marks both core and oblique arguments of verbs. Grammatical alignment is strictly nominative-accusative, both morphologically and syntactically. Subjects in Hup are unmarked, while nouns occurring in a variety of non-subject roles are object-marked with the suffix -*ǎn*, provided they conform to certain semantic restrictions relating to the noun’s placement on the animacy/definiteness hierarchy. Oblique arguments (which are not subject to any animacy restrictions) are marked with the suffix -*Ǒt* in instrumental, comitative, and locative roles, and with the Directional marker -*an* (which likely is historically related to the Object marker -*ǎn*) in locative and allative/ablative roles. A noun can take no more than a single case marker at a time. These patterns are summarized in Table 23.

⁵⁸ As noted in §3.4, this is a feature that is typically associated with clitics; in Hup, it is a property both of formatives that are labeled clitics and of those that are labeled suffixes.

Table 23. Grammatical relations and case markers in Hup

Grammatical function	Nouns	Nouns marked for number	Pronouns, demonstratives
S, A (subject of transitive and intransitive clauses)	-∅	-∅	-∅
O ₁ (direct object, other directly affected entities)	Human: - <i>ǎn</i> Animal: optional - <i>ǎn</i> Inanimate: -∅	- <i>ǎn</i> (PL+OBJ: - <i>n'ǎn</i>) ⁵⁹	- <i>ǎn</i>
O ₂ (beneficiary, recipient in ditransitives)	- <i>ǎn</i>	- <i>ǎn</i> (PL+OBJ: - <i>n'ǎn</i>)	- <i>ǎn</i>
Directional oblique (locative, directional goal/source)	- <i>an</i>	[does not occur (?)]	[does not occur]
Oblique (instrumental, comitative, locative)	- <i>ǂt</i>	- <i>ǂt</i>	- <i>ǂt</i>

4.3.1. Object case -*ǎn*

The patterning of core case marking – depending both on the semantic role of the nominal and on its semantic status (with respect to animacy and definiteness) – is discussed in this section. When marking core arguments, the stress on the object marker -*ǎn* is quite strong: it is often equal to that on the noun stem itself, and in certain cases it may be noticeably stronger (especially with pronouns and demonstratives) and could arguably be considered to be primary stress.

The interaction between the semantic roles of core non-subject participants and object marking is considered in §4.3.1.1, and the phenomenon of differential object marking (reflecting animacy and definiteness) is addressed in §4.3.1.2.

⁵⁹ As discussed below, case marking is to some degree dependent on number marking.

4.3.1.1. Semantic roles and object marking

The Object marker *-ǎn* marks a variety of core non-subject participants. These include prototypical patients, recipients, beneficiaries, and other directly affected entities (including those encoded as headless relative clauses), as illustrated in the examples below.

A. Prototypical patients (direct objects of transitive clauses)

(4) *híd-ǎn, húptok g'óp = n'ǎn, hid wæd-hũ?-yí?-íy*
 3pl-OBJ caxiri scoop=PL.OBJ 3pl eat-finish-TEL-DYNM
 'They ate up all of them, those who were serving caxiri.' (txt)

(5) *tih = tǎh?ín-ǎn = mah tih mǎh-ǎh*
 3sg=child.mother-OBJ=REP 3sg hit-DECL
 'He beat his wife, it's said.' (txt)

(6) *híd-ǎn g'əç-tuk-yó? = mah*
 3pl-OBJ bite-want-SEQ=REP
 'Having tried to bite them, it's said...' (txt)

B. Recipients, beneficiaries, and maleficiaries (ditransitive clauses)

Examples of typical recipients are given in (7–9). If both objects of a ditransitive construction are semantically qualified to receive Object marking (according to their placement on the animacy/definiteness hierarchies), they both appear with identical marking (see the examples in E below).

(7) *'máý! teghō = ?áy-ǎn dadánya ?in du-wæd-?áy-ay-áh*
 let's.go Non.Indian-FEM-OBJ orange 1pl sell-eat-VENT-INCH-DECL
 'C' mon! Let's go sell some oranges to the Non-Indian girl.' (txt)

(8) *hũt, hōpkók-ǎh... tīw bi?-téç = n'ǎn tih nó?-ōp*
 tobacco fish.pull-DECL path work-FUT=PL.OBJ 3sg give-DEP
 'There was tobacco, fishhooks...that he gave to those who would work on the road.' (txt)

- (9) *ʔǎy-hiyóʔ = mah híd-ǎn ʔǎg hid g'óp-óh*
 together-above=REP 3pl-OBJ drink 3pl scoop-DECL
 'All together they served them drink.' (txt)

Ditransitive constructions involving beneficiaries are given in (10–11).

- (10) *nǎm ʔám-ǎn ʔǎh key-nǎŋ*
 louse 2sg-OBJ 1sg see-COOP
 'I'll look for lice for you.' (txt)
- (11) *ʔin ʔám-ǎn tǐw y'æt-té-h*
 1pl 2sg-OBJ path lay-FUT-DECL
 'We'll lay down (clear) a path for you.' (txt)

Hup uses the same strategy to mark the source (here also a maleficiary) in ditransitive constructions:

- (12) *ʔam tón-ōw-ǎn, g'ǎg-tǎh ʔám-ǎn toh-tég = mah*
 2sg hold-FLR-OBJ Bone-Son 2sg-OBJ steal.away-FUT=REP
 'That which you have, Bone-Son will steal (it) from you, it's said' (txt)

Object marking of recipients/beneficiaries/maleficiaries in ditransitive constructions differs formally from that of prototypical patients in one crucial respect: it is *required* on all recipients/beneficiaries of ditransitives, regardless of their animacy. While recipients are only very rarely inanimate, an example of such a case ('tree') is given in (13), and of an animal recipient (which in other contexts would be optionally object-marked) in (14).⁶⁰

- (13) *tiyǐʔ tegd'úh-ǎn děh nóʔ-óy*
 man tree-OBJ water give-DYNM
 'The man gives the tree some water' (el)
- (14) *tiyǐʔ cadakǎʔ-ǎn pihityúm nóʔ-óy*
 man chicken-OBJ corn give-DYNM
 'The man gives corn to the chicken' (el)

⁶⁰ I am grateful to Seppo Kittilä for suggestions in exploring these parameters relating to animacy and argument-marking.

C. Other affected entities (monotransitive clauses)

The forms treated in this section are Object-marked like the patients and recipients in the examples above, but they are arguably less prototypical objects. This is also reflected formally in the fact that derived passive variants of most prototypically transitive clauses (like those in A above) are possible, but passive variants cannot be derived from the clauses below (see §8.2 for more discussion). In other words, Hup clauses that contain an Object-marked argument may be of varying Transitivity, as defined by Hopper and Thompson (1980).

Examples of affected entities marked with Object case are given in (15–17).

- (15) *húptok* *ʔín-ǎn* *ʔam* *ʔəg-nǎ-ǎy*
 caxiri 1pl-OBJ 2sg drink-be.together-DYNM
 ‘You drank caxiri together with us (to our benefit).’ (txt)
- (16) *ʔǎh = ʔín* *ʔǎn* *naʔ-yiʔ-ní-h*
 1sg=mother 1sg.OBJ die-TEL-INFR2-DECL
 ‘My mother died on me.’ (txt)
- (17) *ʔín* *ʔám-ǎn* *hicocó-óh*
 1pl 2sg-OBJ happy-DECL
 ‘We are happy because of you.’ (txt)

D. Animate actors in a reflexive (passive) construction

As discussed in §11.1.2, the animate actor (i.e., that which would be the agent of an active clause) is marked with Object case in a passive-type reflexive construction (example 18). Inanimate actors in these constructions occur in Oblique case (see §4.3.4.1.D).

- (18) *ʔam* *yǎʔám-ǎn* *hup = wæd-té-h*
 2sg jaguar-OBJ RFLX=eat-FUT-DECL
 ‘You’ll get eaten by a jaguar!’ (cv)

E. Discussion: multiple object marking in the clause

Because Hup uses the same object-marking strategy for different core participants of a clause, as many as three identically marked participants can co-occur when the animacy/definiteness requirements are met. However, this is very rare

in normal discourse, where participants that can be recovered from the context are typically left unstated. Elicited examples are provided in (19–21).

- (19) *hocăy deníci-ǎn tih=dóʔ-ǎn d'oʔ-be-yǎh-ǎy, teréca-ǎn*
 Rosalino Denise-OBJ 3sg=child-OBJ take-show-order-DECL Teresa-OBJ
 'Rosalino makes Denise show the child to Teresa.' (el)
- (20) *ʔectedimá pawdína-ǎn hǒp d'oʔ-nɔʔ-ʔúh-úy, yubínu-ǎn*
 Esterimar Paulina-OBJ fish take-give-APPL-DYNM Jovino-OBJ
 'Esterimar gives fish to Paulina for Jovino.' (el)
- (21) *núp hǒp-ǎn ʔǎn nɔʔ-ʔúh-ʔáy hám, pawdína-ǎn*
 this fish-OBJ 1sg.OBJ give-APPL-VENT.IMP go.IMP Paulina-OBJ
 'Go give this fish to Paulina for me.' (el)

Constituent order in these examples is fairly free, as it is generally in Hup (see §17.3.1), and the respective roles of participants would under normal circumstances be largely recoverable from the discourse context. In elicitation, however, the general pattern seems to be that the least prototypically 'core' participant is clause-final, following the verb. This pattern can be avoided without ambiguity in (21), where the directional applicative verb form makes it clear that the speaker cannot be the recipient, but only the beneficiary. The identity of the *-ǎn*-marked nominal as direct object vs. recipient seems to be primarily dependent on pragmatics, rather than word order, with consultants maintaining that the interpretation of 'show the child to X' is the same whether the word order is Recipient-Object or vice versa, and preferring a more complex series of clauses to communicate 'show X to the child'.

4.3.1.2. *Differential object marking*

With the exception of recipients/beneficiaries of ditransitive constructions, object marking crucially depends on the semantics of the nominal. In general, object marking is obligatory for human nouns, pronouns, and demonstratives, optional for animals, and ungrammatical for inanimates.

It is relatively common cross-linguistically for object marking to be sensitive to animacy, definiteness, and even topicality. This phenomenon, by which some objects are marked and others are not, depending on their semantic features, has been termed 'differential object marking' (Bossong 1980, 1985a, 1991, 1998, etc.; see also Blake 2001: 119–20, Comrie 1989). The likelihood that an object will be morphologically marked corresponds principally to its degree of ani-

macy and definiteness (or inherence and reference, in Bossong's terminology [1991: 158–160, 1998]), in keeping with the extended animacy hierarchy proposed by Silverstein (1976; see also Comrie 1989, Croft 1990). With respect to animacy, a cross-linguistically general ranking is Human > Animate > Inanimate; with respect to definiteness, Personal pronoun > Proper name > Definite noun phrase > Indefinite specific noun phrase > Non-specific noun phrase. The degree to which differential object marking extends across the class of nouns in different languages can be explained in functionalist terms as determined by the tension between economy and iconicity: economy pushes the language to avoid unnecessary morphological material, whereas iconicity fosters the use of morphological complexity to facilitate comprehension (cf. Aissen 2003, Haspelmath forthcoming). The presence of object marking also functions to register a relatively high degree of individuation of the nominal entity (cf. Hopper and Thompson 1980: 292).

Differential object marking is widespread among the languages of the world, occurring in various branches of Indo-European (Romance, Slavic, Iranian, etc.), the Semitic, Finno-Ugric, and Turkic families (Bossong 1998), and in languages of Australia (Bossong 1983). It is also found in the Americas, such as in Guarani (Bossong 1985b), and is a general feature of the Vaupés region (Aikhenvald 2002a, Zúñiga 2007). Minor variations in the phenomenon from language to language include, for example, the fact that nouns in Hindi are marked only when the referent is both specific and animate (Blake 2001: 120); that in Sinhalese, optional object marking is limited to animate-referring objects; and that in Hebrew object marking is obligatory but limited to definite objects (Aissen 2003: 436). In Hup, differential object marking is sensitive to both animacy and definiteness. When examined in more fine-grained detail, certain idiosyncrasies in this pattern reinforce the conclusion that the phenomenon has to do with the individuation of entities, as the examples and discussion below illustrate.

Despite the fact that both subjects and some objects are unmarked and that constituent order is fairly free in Hup (see §17.3.1), ambiguity is easily avoided. Given that differential object marking reflects the fact that humans are more prototypical agents, whereas inanimate objects are more prototypical patients, potential ambiguity between agents and patients in Hup discourse is mostly limited to cases of interaction between animals. When such cases do come up, context and the optional application of object marking are the primary means of differentiating agents from patients, but if no other clues are available speakers interpret the clause according to agent-object constituent order (see §17.3.1).

A. Pronouns and demonstratives

Marking with *-ǎn* is required on all objects that are pronouns (examples 22–25) and demonstrative heads of noun phrases (examples 26–27).

- (22) *ʔám-ǎn ʔot-yóʔ tih ham-yíʔ-íy*
 2sg-OBJ cry-SEQ 3sg go-TEL-DYNM
 ‘After crying over you, he left.’ (cv)
- (23) *ʔám cóʔ-óy ʔǎn wõt-ʔúh*
 2sg LOC-DYNM 1sg.OBJ pull.out-APPL.IMP
 ‘You take (my eyes) out for me!’ (txt)
- (24) *yúp = mah tih-ǎn tih kəwǎg wõt-ay-áh*
 that.ITG=REP 3sg-OBJ 3sg eye pull.out-INCH-DECL
 ‘So he took his eyes out for him.’ (txt)
- (25) *mangǎ táʔ-ay, hid-ǎn yamhidóʔ-nih tih ?*
 Margarita REL.INST-INCH 3pl-OBJ sing-NEG 3sg
 ‘What about Margarita, didn’t she sing to them?’ (cv)
- (26) *ʔǎh hipǎh-ǎy yúw-ǎn-áh*
 1sg know-DYNM that.ITG-OBJ-DECL
 ‘I know this one (story).’ (txt)
- (27) *cǎw-ǎn yǎwǎc-yíʔ, n’í-cóʔ = b’ay, tók cóʔ*
 other-OBJ meet-TEL there-LOC=AGAIN belly LOC
 ‘(She) had already gotten another (child), there, in the belly.’ (txt)

B. Personal names and kin terms

All require object marking, as in examples (28–30).

- (28) *hid-nih ʔintúg = tǎh-ǎn, tiʔcik-nih níŋ-íp*
 3pl-POSS mother’s.husband=son-OBJ dislike-NEG 2pl-DEP
 ‘You all didn’t dislike their step-brother either!’ (sarcastic) (cv)

- (29) *mændí = tog-ǎn*
Bernadito=daughter-OBJ
'(She said it) to Bernadito's daughter.' (response to question) (cv)
- (30) *patí-ǎn húp-út ?āh ?id-ihó?*
Pattie-OBJ Hup-OBL 1sg speak-TAG2
'I speak Hup to Pattie.' (sp)

Personal names and kin terms in Hup discourse usually correspond to human referents, as one would expect. However, their obligatory object marking applies equally when the referents are animals or even inanimate entities, as in example (31), which refers to a canoe nicknamed *hǎt* ('Alligator'), owned by people of Barreira Alta.

- (31) *hǎt-ǎn ?āh d'ó?-óh*
Alligator-OBJ 1sg take-DECL
'I took Alligator.' (el)

Object marking does not, however, extend to place-names, on the relatively rare occasions that they occur as prototypical objects of the clause:

- (32) *ba?tǐb' paç ?āh key-éy*
spirit hill/rock 1sg see-DYNM
'I'm looking at Spirit Hill.' (el)

C. Human nouns

In general, *-ǎn* is obligatory on all human objects, as in examples (33–34).

- (33) *yub = ?ǎy-ǎn, dēh hɔn-yó?...*
cipó.vine=woman-OBJ water vomit-SEQ
- tih d'o?-macá-b'ay-áh*
3sg take-gain.consciousness-AGAIN-DECL
'Having (ritually) vomited water, he created cipó vine-woman.' (txt)

Example (34) is a case of possessor 'raising' (see §5.3.1), in which the human 'possessor' of the body part receives the object marker:

- (34) *tih = dól-ǎn pǎt ʔǎh j'íd-íy*
 3sg=child-OBJ hair 1sg wash-DYNM
 'I wash the child's hair.' (el)

Obligatory object marking for humans also applies to indefinite referents which are specific:

- (35) *húp-ǎn hipǎh-ǎy yúw-úh*
 person-OBJ know-DYNM that.ITG-DECL
 'They (divining bones) know/are aware of those people (who are approaching).' (txt)
- (36) *ʔayǔp = ʔih-ǎn ʔǎh káy-éy, j'ǔg-ǎn*
 one=MSC-OBJ 1sg see-DYNM forest-OBJ
 'I saw a man in the forest.' (ru)

However, human referents that are both non-specific and indefinite are *not* case-marked, the only example of such an exception. This underscores the insight that differential object marking has to do with the conceptual individuation of referents – an observation which is further supported by the fact that the exceptions to obligatory object marking of human referents parallel the exceptions to their obligatory participation in the bound construction, which also arguably has to do with individuation (see §5.4–5.5). When the human referent is specific, the kin terms in examples (37–38) require *both* the default bound preform *tih =* and the Object marker, whereas neither occur when it is nonspecific. Likewise, 'leader' in (39) lacks the object marker when nonspecific. These examples are reminiscent of the well known distinction in Spanish between *busco un empleado* ('I am looking for [any] employee') and *busco a un empleado* ('I am looking for [a particular] employee'), also found in other Romance languages (Bossong 1998: 226–227).

- (37) a) *wǎʔ tǎhʔín túk-úy*
 vulture child.mother want-DYNM
 'Vulture wants a wife.' (i.e., he wants to get married) (cv)
- b) *wǎʔ tih = tǎhʔín-ǎn túk-úy*
 vulture 3sg=child.mother-OBJ want-DYNM
 'Vulture wants his wife.' (e.g., they have separated) (el)

- (38) a) *tāʔāy tæʰ cúʔ-úy*
 woman offspring grab-DYNM
 ‘The woman is having a baby.’
- b) *tāʔāy tih = tæʰ cúʔ-úy*
 woman 3sg=small grab-DYNM
 ‘The woman grabs the small (inanimate) thing.’
- c) *tāʔāy tih = tæʰ-ǎn cúʔ-úy*
 woman 3sg=offspring-OBJ grab-DYNM
 ‘The woman grabs her son.’ (el)
- (39) a) *yʃʔʃm = ʔih tih d’əh-d’əh-yé-éh*
 powerful=MSC 3sg send-send-enter-DECL
 ‘He picked out (someone to be) a leader.’ (txt)
- b) *yʃʔʃm = ʔih-ǎn tih d’əh-d’əh-yé-éh*
 powerful=MSC-OBJ 3sg send-send-enter-DECL
 ‘He picked out the (already existing) leader.’ (el)

D. Animals

Object marking is optional on nouns referring to animals (whether dead or alive); these nouns may accordingly be left unmarked, as in examples (40–41). Object-marked variants of the nouns in these examples are also judged acceptable, with no difference in interpretation reported.

- (40) *cʃʔ cæg-æp = mah tih há-m-ǎh*
 shrimp net-DEP-REP 3sg go-DECL
 ‘She went netting shrimp.’ (txt)
- (41) *həhʃh = mah tih ʔey-yəhóy-əh*
 frog=REP 3sg call-search-DECL
 ‘He was calling and searching for the frog.’ (txt)

Examples (42–43) illustrate the case-marking of animal objects; this marking probably reflects a relatively higher topicality or focus of the referent in the discourse (but is nevertheless also judged here to be optional).

- (42) **mǝh-ǎn** = mah cǎp tih hitǎé?ǎéh
 inambu-OBJ=REP other 3sg imitate-DYNM
 ‘The inambu is another that he imitates.’ (txt)

- (43) tinǎh **cǎpu-ǎn** = yí? tih ǎéy-cud?úhníy
 3sg.POSS frog(Pt)-OBJ=TEL 3sg call-INFR2.maybe
 ‘He’s apparently calling for his frog.’ (txt)

When animals figure as main characters in stories, their names are almost invariably object-marked. This is undoubtedly due to the fact that they are specific personalities and key participants; moreover, the animal name often functions essentially like a personal name in this context (for example, it may take the honorific-type ‘old/respected’ markers *-wəd* and *-wa*, as in example 44).

- (44) tih pəd-hi-y’ǎt-yí?-pó?-ay-áh,
 3sg roll-descend-lay-TEL-EMPH1-INCH-DECL

tih = *tǎhǎp* = *pog-ǎn*,

mǝhǎy = wəd-ǎn

3sg=child.father=EMPH1-OBJ Deer=RESP-OBJ

‘She rolled him out onto the ground, her husband, the Deer.’ (txt)

- (45) **tǎh-ǎn** = mah j’ám tih wǝn-máh-ǎh
 tapir-OBJ=REP DST.CNTR 3sg follow-REP-DECL
 ‘He followed the tapir, long ago, they say.’ (txt)

The names of spirit beings pattern like those of animals in Hup.

E. Inanimates

For inanimate entities unmarked for number, Object case marking is ungrammatical (and note that number is usually unmarked on inanimates even if conceptually plural; see §4.4.1).

- (46) hidnǎh **húptok** yít = yí? píd b’ǝh-ham-pǝm-yí?-ay, ǎǎh-ǎw-ǎh
 3pl.POSS caxiri thus=TEL DIST pour-go-sit-TEL-INCH 1sg-FLR-DECL
 ‘I kept pouring out their caxiri (lit. person-belly) as I sat there.’ (cv)

(47) *yikán mǝy hid biʔ-píd-ih, póg !*
 over.there house 3pl make-DIST-DECL big
 ‘There they built a house, (it was) big!’ (txt)

(48) *děh hi-wǎy hám = d’əh yúp, hǝpkǝk,*
 water FACT-go.out go=PL that.ITG fish.pull

mǝm-b’ǝk hid tǝn-hám-ǎh
 iron-pot 3pl hold-go-DECL
 ‘Those who go out in the igapó (to fish), they take along fishhooks and pots.’ (txt)

F. Plural nouns

Object marking is always required when the Plural/collective marker =*d’əh* is present, regardless of the animacy or definiteness of the noun. Typologically, this appears to be a highly peculiar twist on Hup’s otherwise straightforward system of differential object marking. However, it in fact makes sense for Hup in light of the fact that Hup number marking involves essentially the same semantic parameters as does differential object marking, conforming to an animacy/definiteness hierarchy (see §4.4.1 below). Moreover, Hup is not alone among languages in displaying an interaction of plural with case marking. For example, animate nouns in Russian have a different way of forming the accusative case in the plural, as do male human nouns in Polish (cf. Comrie 1989: 132) – which may reflect an interaction between differential object marking and an animacy-based plurality ‘split’ like that found in Hup.

The combination of Plural marker + Object marker in Hup is usually realized as the fused form =*n’ǎn*, although the unreduced form =*d’əh-ǎn* is heard occasionally and is typical of exaggeratedly slow speech.⁶¹ This unreduced form is also always found with plural demonstratives (see Table 22), and corresponds to their unique stress pattern (i.e., unstressed stem and stressed plural marker, the opposite of the normal stress pattern). The order of the Plural and Object markers in this form is important; compare the distinct form *-ǎn-d’əh* (Associative plural, §4.4.6 below), which is apparently formed from the same two morphemes in the opposite order.

⁶¹ Note that the fusion results in a phonologically monomorpheme-like form which is fully nasalized, in keeping with nasality’s role as a morpheme-level prosodic feature in Hup generally (see §2.3.1).

Examples of plural-marked animal objects with obligatory case marking are given in (49–50). While inanimate nouns are almost never marked for plural in ordinary discourse, they may be – and are then Object-marked – as in example (51).⁶²

(49) *bĩʔ = n'ǎn = mah yúp tih hāʔ-ʔě-h*
 rat=PL.OBJ=REP that.ITG 3sg search.inside-PERF-DECL
 'He searched out rats with his hands.' (txt)

(50) *b'öy = n'ǎn ʔin kək-nǎŋ-ay !*
 traira=PL.OBJ 1pl pull-COOP-INCH
 'Let's go fish for traira!' (txt)

(51) *ʔāh cug'ǎt = n'ǎn pūhūt-d'əh-hi-yíʔ-íy*
 1sg leaf/paper=PL.OBJ blow-send-descend-TEL-DYNM
 'I blew the papers down.' (el)

4.3.1.3. Object marking on noun phrases and relative clauses

Case marking in Hup is not limited to the individual nominal word, but also occurs on noun phrases and relative clauses. In these cases, it marks the phrase as a whole, rather than attaching to phrase-internal nominal heads or other constituents, and occurs phrase-finally – even following nominal enclitics.⁶³ In this section, I provide a short discussion of the patterning of object marking with demonstrative and adjective noun phrases (which are discussed in more detail in §6.3 and §6.6.), and with headless relative clauses (see §18.2.3). The typical pattern seen here, by which the case marker attaches to the final constituent of the noun phrase, also applies to noun compounds (§5.1).

⁶² Whether the use of the optional Plural + Object marking in such examples conveys a difference in semantics from the unmarked case is not clear. While the analysis given above might suggest that it would add a distributive sense of 'one by one', this interpretation is not as easily accessible in examples like (50) (which varies with the unmarked case in the text in which it appears).

⁶³ This ability of Hup case markers to attach to whatever constituent is phrase-final gives them a resemblance to enclitics themselves, although they bear the (somewhat language-specific) label 'suffixes', in keeping with their other properties (see §3.4).

A. Demonstrative noun phrases

Just as object marking is required on all demonstratives acting as nominal heads, noun phrases containing a demonstrative also receive obligatory object marking, regardless of their animacy or number. The case marker usually attaches to the final constituent of the noun phrase, as in examples (52–55).

- (52) **yúp** **yũd-ǎn** = mah yúp tĩh cud-d'ó?-ay-áh
 that.ITG clothes-OBJ=REP that.ITG 3sg be.inside-take-INCH-DECL
 ‘It was these clothes that he put on’ (txt)
- (53) **cáp** = ?ĩh = b'ay **yúp** **tĩhĩy-ǎn** mæh-píd-íp = b'ay
 other=MSC=AGAIN that.ITG snake-OBJ kill-DIST-DEP=AGAIN
 ‘Then someone else killed that snake (after it had killed so many people).’ (txt)
- (54) **núp** = g'æt-ǎn key-tú-y = hõ ?ám ?
 this=LEAF-OBJ see-want-DYNM=NONVIS 2sg
 ‘Do you want to see this book?’ (el)
- (55) **yã?ambõ?** = b'ay póh **núp** **yõ?** = b'ak-ǎn key-d'əh-cak-g'ét...
 dog=AGAIN high this wasp=CLUMP-OBJ see-send-climb-stand
 ‘As for the dog, (he’s) standing up (against the tree), looking at this wasp nest.’ (txt)

The noun-phrase-final marking of case applies even when both members of the NP are individually marked as plural:

- (56) “**có?** **nĩj** **cæg-?áy** **hám!**” **nɔ-d'əh-d'ób-óh,**
 shrimp 2pl net-VENT go.IMP say-send-go.to.river-DECL
- yí-d'ǎh** **?ǎy = n'ǎn-áh**
 that.ITG-PL FEM=PL.OBJ-DECL
 ‘‘You all go net shrimp!’’ (he) said, sending those women to the river.’
 (txt)

However, if a demonstrative and non-human noun themselves form distinct, co-referential noun phrases in an appositional relationship, the demonstrative alone may take the case marker, with the non-human noun remaining unmarked.

- (57) a) **núp hǒp-ǎn** ?in wæd-té-h
 this fish-OBJ 1pl eat-FUT-DECL
 ‘We’ll eat this fish.’
- b) **núw-ǎn, hǒp**, ?in wæd-té-h
 this-OBJ fish 1pl eat-FUT-DECL
 ‘We’ll eat this one, the fish.’ (el)

Unlike demonstratives, numerals in noun phrases (without overt plural-marking) do not require the presence of the Object marker:

- (58) **bodáca ?óytu = b’ah**, yít píd j’áh
 cookie eight=SPLIT thus DIST DST.CNTR
- ?in-ǎn tih nǒʔ-ǒy**
 1pl-OBJ 3sg give-DYNM
 ‘Eight cookies, that’s what she gave to each of us.’ (txt)

B. Adjective noun phrases

Object marking on (N + Adj) noun phrases follows the general animacy/definiteness-related rules, as illustrated by (59–60). When it occurs, *-ǎn* typically attaches to the adjective, as the last member of the noun phrase (example 60). Case marking can optionally occur on both members of the noun phrase only when the adjective modifier is nominalized by the bound preform *tih* = (example 60).

- (59) **j’ám nř b’éj tih = pǒg**
 yesterday 1sg.POSS jandia.fish 3sg=big
- hid d’oʔ-way-yiʔ-ní-h !**
 3pl take-go.out-TEL-INFR2-DECL
 ‘Yesterday they took my big jandiá fish!’ (cv)
- (60) **tiyǐʔ(-ǎn) (tih =)pǒg-ǎn túk-úy = mah**
 man-OBJ (3sg=)big-OBJ want-DYNM=REP
 ‘She likes the big man, it’s said.’ (el)

In general, adjectives standing alone as nominal heads require the default 3sg pronominal form *tih* = (just like bound nouns in Hup), and are obligatorily object-marked, regardless of number marking or animacy, as in (61–62). The same is true for numerals appearing alone as heads.

- (61) *tih* = *pög-ǎn* *tih* *túk-úy* = *mah*
 3sg=big-OBJ 3sg want-DYNM=REP
 ‘He wants the big one, he says.’ (el)
- (62) *tih* = *nǎw = n’ǎn* *b’íyi?* *tih* *túk-úh*
 3sg=good=PL.OBJ only 3sg want-DECL
 ‘He only wants the good ones.’ (txt)

C. Headless relative clauses

As discussed in §18.2.3, relative clauses in object position may occur either with or without a head noun. While object marking follows the normal rules relating to animacy and definiteness when this noun is present, the object marker is obligatory when the noun is absent (i.e., the relative clause is headless), regardless of the identity of the referent. Furthermore, with headless relative clauses the Object marker is always separated from the verb by the ‘Filler’ form *-Vw-* (see §18.2.3); an example is given in (63).

- (63) *ba?tǐb’* *ham-?e?-ní-ǐw-ǎn* *?ám-ǎn* *?ǎh* *?id-té-h*
 spirit go-PERF-be-FLR-OBJ 2sg-OBJ 1sg speak-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’ll tell you the one (story) about the spirit that was going along.’ (txt)

4.3.2. Directional oblique case *-an*

The form *-an* is phonologically almost identical to the Object case marker *-ǎn*, differing from its sister suffix only in its lack of stress. The two are probably closely related historically, but synchronically they are distinct, not only in their form but also in their functions and semantic patterning. The preferred use of Directional *-an* is to express allative/ablative case, relating to directional goals and sources; but it can also function to express location in general, where it seems largely interchangeable with Oblique *-Vt* (see §4.3.4).

Examples (64–67) illustrate the use of *-an* in marking directional goals (allative case).

(64) *n'ikán* *ʔam ʔid-d'əh-hám-ãp = b'ay, hayám-an*
 over.there 2sg speak-send-go-DEP=AGAIN town-DIR
 'You called on the telephone to the town.' (txt)

(65) *yág-an* *g'ãʔ-ʔáy* *hám !*
 hammock-DIR suspend-VENT.IMP go.IMP
 'Go lie in the hammock!' (cv)

(66) *tih* *kit-j'ap-d'əh-hi-yíʔ-ay-áh,* *děh-an*
 3sg cut-divide-send-descend-TEL-INCH-DECL water-DIR
 'He cut (the cord) and sent her down, into the water.' (txt)

(67) *núp = b'ay* *hőd-an* *tih* *waŋ-yæt-ní-b'ay-áh*
 this=AGAIN hole-DIR 3sg spy-lie-be-AGAIN-DECL
 'He is lying there spying into this hole.' (txt)

Example (68) illustrates a directional source, or ablative use of *-an*, while location-related uses like those in (69–70) appear to involve a point along a real or conceptual path (i.e., a perlocative use).

(68) *mátʔah-an* *hid* *næn-d'oʔ-ní-p = b'ay*
 downstream-DIR 3pl come-take-INFR2-DEP=AGAIN
 'They come from downriver.' (txt)

(69) *yikán* *yǎh* *mǎy-an* *ʔǎn* *hid* *y'ǎt-ǎh*
 over.there medicine house-DIR 1sg.OBJ 3pl leave-DECL
 'There they left me at the hospital.' (txt)

(70) *næn-d'oʔ-yóʔ...* *ʔinǎh* *j'áh* *nút,* *n'ikán...*
 come-take-SEQ 1pl.POSS land here over.there

hío yapú-an, *b'öy kəd-an*
 Rio Japu-DIR traíra bench-LOC.OBJ
 '(They) came... our land was (between) here and there... (over by) the Rio Japu, (at the place) Traíra-Bench.' (txt)

Directional *-an* is very common on locative postpositions (see §10.3), as in expressions like *káʔ g'od-an* (box inside-DIR) 'inside the box', *híd máh-an* (3pl near-DIR) 'near/with them', and example (71) (as well as example 72 below).

- (71) *mǔy g'od-an j'ɔç-y'æt-níh = yi? niŋ níh !*
 house inside-DIR spit-leave-NEG=TEL 2sg be.IMP
 'Don't spit inside the house!' (ru)

Directional *-an* can also combine with verb phrases in adverbial clause constructions relating to location (see §18.2.6.2), as illustrated in example (72). Unlike complement clauses (which often take Object *-ǎn*, see §4.3.1.3.C above), adverbial clauses do not require the 'Filler' form *-Vw-*.

- (72) *děh hǔy-an = mah, [tíh j'ǔm]-an = mah, tíh tóç-óh*
 water in.water-DIR=REP 3sg bathe-DIR=REP 3sg break.wind-DECL
 'In the water, where he was swimming, it's said, he broke wind.' (txt)

That the Object marker *-ǎn* and the Directional marker *-an* may have been one and the same form in the past is supported by several observations, in addition to their segmentally identical forms. First, to subsume both the syntactic role of direct object and the semantic role of destination under a single case specification is cross-linguistically common; this is found in Latin (Blake 2001: 32), as well as in Spanish and Portuguese (where the directional *a* was the historical source of the object marker). Second, although stress plays an important role in defining different types of constructions in Hup, it is already subject to flexibility on the synchronic level, which in turn can lead to diachronic changes (for example, the plural morpheme is stressed when it occurs in fused demonstrative forms, whereas it is elsewhere always unstressed). Finally, Directional *-an* does not occur with animate referents, pronouns, or demonstratives, whereas (as discussed in §4.3.1.2 above) Object *-ǎn* is found almost exclusively with animate referents, pronouns, and demonstratives; accordingly, the two suffixes are essentially in complementary distribution. Finally, with human referents, the locational sense of 'to them/where they are' is often functionally the same as 'affected/relevant participant' (§4.3.1.1), marked by the stressed Object marker, as illustrated by (73).

- (73) *dó? = n'ǎn = mah cáp tíh wid-yé-éh*
 child=PL.OBJ=REP other 3sg arrive-enter-DECL
 'Someone came in to the children.' (txt)

4.3.3. Other constructions involving *-an*

The formative *-an* can co-occur with several other morphemes in a number of distinct constructions; these combinations are all discussed in detail in the sec-

tions relating to the respective second morphemes, but are summarized briefly here. It is not always clear which variant of *-an* (Object or Directional) occurs in these forms (or even whether it is not some other, homonymous form) – a question which may be irrelevant from a historical point of view, if the two diverged after these constructions had already come into being. Note that the nominal forms resulting from these constructions can themselves take Object case, as illustrated in examples (74) and (75) below, suggesting that the fused/combined forms are functionally quite distinct from the marking of case within the clause.

The forms in question include the ‘Associative plural’ *-ǎn-d’əh* (*an* + PL/COLL; see §4.4.6 below), as in example (74); a form of the ‘Indefinite Associative’ construction *-an = ʔǔy* (*an* + ‘who’; see §7.5), as in (75); and the ‘temporal adverbial’ construction *-an-ay* (*an* + INCH; see §18.2.6.2), as in (76).

- (74) *yũ-ǎn-n’ǎn hid ʔéy-éy*
 João-OBJ-PL.OBJ 3pl call-DYNM
 ‘They’re calling John and his group.’ (el)

- (75) *ʔectádu ʔunídu-an = ʔǔy = ʔǎy-ǎn ʔǎh hicocó-op*
 estados unidos-DIR=who=FEM-OBJ 1sg happy-DEP

ʔǐd ʔǎh ʔid-té-h
 speech 1sg speak-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’ll tell about how I am happy with the girl from the USA.’ (txt)

- (76) *yikán bǐg ʔǎh ní-an-ay yúp,*
 over.there long.time 1sg be-DIR-INCH that.ITG

yĩn ʔh wiʔ-yóʔ ʔǎh ʔid-ay-áh
 all.that hear-SEQ 1sg speak-INCH-DECL
 ‘During the long time I was there, having heard these (Portuguese and Tukano), I began to speak (them).’ (txt)

4.3.4. Oblique case -*Ǒt*

A variety of non-core participants in the clause are marked with the catch-all oblique case form *-Ǒt*. The Oblique marker is always required where applicable; unlike the Object marker, its presence is not dependent on the animacy, definiteness, or number specification of the noun. Nonetheless, the interpretation of the semantic role of the Oblique-marked referent is necessarily some-

what dependent on the parameter of animacy. The semantic roles indicated by this form include locative (inanimates), instrumental (inanimates), and comitative (animates);⁶⁴ such an overlap of semantic roles and grammatical relations is not particularly uncommon cross-linguistically (cf. Blake 2001: 63); compare, for example, the Semitic preposition *bi-* (Arabic), *bē* (Hebrew), etc.⁶⁵

In certain cases (see discussion in §18.2.6.2), the ‘Filler’ form can intervene between the noun stem and the Oblique marker (although elsewhere this is usually found only between verb stem and case marker in a relative clause). When the ‘Filler’ form is present, an optional variant of *-Vt* is *-ĥt* (or, with some speakers, nasal *-ĥ̃t*), as in example (83) below. The two forms appear to be in free variation in this context.

The different semantic roles indicated by the Oblique case are discussed below.

4.3.4.1. Semantic roles and Oblique marking

A. Comitative

The comitative use of the Oblique indicates that X carries out an activity together with Y, where Y is animate, as in examples (77–80). Examples (77–78), in particular, also illustrate the fact that the comitative semantics actually subsumes a locative association as well.

- (77) *ʔāh = ʔíp-ĥt ʔāh ni-ʔeʔ-ní-h*
 1sg=father-OBL 1sg be-PERF-INFR2-DECL
 ‘I lived with my father.’ (txt)

- (78) *wǎh = d’əh-śt ʔāh há-m-tǎn,*
 River.Indian=PL-OBL 1sg go-COND

wǎh ʔāh ʔid-tǎʔ-ǎh
 River.Indian 1sg speak-CNTRFACT-DECL
 ‘If I went with River Indians, I’d speak Tukano.’ (txt)

⁶⁴ Body parts are treated as inanimate entities.

⁶⁵ Thanks to Georg Bossong for this example.

- (79) *ʔin-íʔ = yiʔ ʔam wid-b'ay-yíʔ-b'ay-áh*
 1pl-OBL=TEL 2sg arrive-return-TEL-AGAIN-DECL
 'You returned together with us.' (txt)

- (80) *tedé = d'əh-ǫʔ tih biʔ-ni-cíp-íh,*
 three=PL-OBL 3sg work-be-COMPL-DECL

haymídu-úʔ, henátu-úʔ, yocedítu-úʔ

Ramirez-OBL⁶⁶ Renato-OBL Joselito-OBL

'He's already worked with three (people), with Ramirez, with Renato, with Joselito.' (sp)

B. Instrumental

The instrumental use of the Oblique indicates that X performs an activity by means of inanimate Y (an animate Y would essentially result in comitative semantics).

- (81) *m'əc-ǎʔ píʔ hid bib'-ní-h, dəh = teg-éh*
 mud-OBL DIST 3pl close-INFR2-DECL water=tree-DECL
 'They would stop it up again with mud, the water tree.' (txt)

- (82) *ʔám ʔid d'əh-d'əh-hám = teg-éʔ*
 2sg speech send-send-go=THING-OBL

ʔám ʔid d'əh-d'əh-hám-b'ay-áh

2sg speech send-send-go-AGAIN-DECL

'With the thing you send speech with (i.e., telephone) you sent your words.' (txt)

- (83) *yú-uw-íʔ = yiʔ = mah tih*
 that.ITG-FLR-OBL=TEL=REP 3sg

coh-tud-kədcak-yíʔ-ay-áh

use.cane-support-pass.climb-TEL-INCH-DECL

'With that (staff) he propelled himself up (and out of the fight).' (txt)

⁶⁶ The speaker appears to be generalizing the vowel-final pattern typical of Portuguese names to include 'Ramirez'.

Example (84) illustrates two Obliques in a single clause, one marking an instrumental role, the other a locative role. Note that the case marker occurs on the final constituent of the (N + Adj) noun phrase and of the compound nominal, as is standard for all case markers in Hup (see §4.3.1.3).

- (84) *pídiya* *pǒg-ǫt* *ʔúh* *j'ám* *hǎy=hɔb-ǫt*
 battery(Pt) big-OBL EPIST DST.CNTR um=HOLLOW-OBL
- tæʔ-yóʔ* *j'ám* *tih* *wíʔ-ih*
 be.end.to.end-SEQ DST.CNTR 3sg hear-DECL
 ‘It was with big batteries, I suppose, stuck end-to-end in a
 whatchamacallit-hollow-stick that he listened (to his radio).’ (cv)

C. Locative

The Oblique’s locative function indicates that X is at the place of Y. In this semantic role (but not in the comitative or instrumental), consultants usually judge Oblique -*V́t* to be grammatically interchangeable with the (object-like) Directional marker -*an*, and can give no insights into any semantic difference between the two options (this is the case, for example, in 85–89 below).⁶⁷ Nevertheless, a comparison of how the two pattern naturally in discourse suggests that -*an* is preferred where the spatial range in question extends beyond the point of reference, while -*V́t* is preferred when the event is carried out completely within the given location, without reference to directional movement from, to, or through it.

- (85) *ʔāh* *yamhidóʔ-óh*, *cāw-yucé-ǫt*
 1sg sing-DECL São.José-OBL
 ‘I sang at São José Village (during a drinking party).’ (txt)
- (86) *nup* *tīhǎy=d'əh*, *j'ǔg-út*, *nút* *ʔin-ǎn* *másh=d'əh* *ní-ih*
 this poison.snake=PL forest-OBL here 1pl-OBJ kill=PL be-DECL
 ‘Here in the forest, the poisonous snakes, here those who kill us live.’
 (txt)

⁶⁷ Note, however, that Oblique -*V́t* is virtually never found in place of -*an* on locative postpositions.

- (87) *cáp húp = d'əh nǝh j'áh-át, yæt-tuk-kéy yǎéh ?áh = nih*
 other people=PL POSS land-OBL lie-want-see FRUST 1sg=EMPH.CO
 'I will be buried in another people's land.' (txt)
- (88) *pídiya-ap núw-út b'iyí?-ay*
 battery(Pt)-DEP this-OBL only-INCH
 'As for batteries, I have only what's in this (box).' (sp)
- (89) *tég = hod-ót hid d'oʔ-yǎéh-yí?-ay-áh*
 wood=hole-OBL 3pl take-roast-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'They baked it in the fireplace (lit. 'wood-hole').' (txt)

These examples can be compared with those involving the Directional locative *-an* (see also §4.3.2 above):

- (90) *b'ət-an ham-yóʔ, kayǎk g'oʔ-yé-éh*
 roça-DIR go-SEQ manioc pull.up-enter-DECL
 'Having gone to the roça, (they) pull manioc and bring it back.' (txt)
- (91) *mǝhǎy tíh-ǎn tíh = cǎn'-an nukán*
 deer 3sg-OBJ 3sg=horn-DIR here
- d'oʔ-cǎcǎŋ-wob-ham-yí?-ay = cud*
 take-straddle-rest.atop-go-TEL-INCH=INFR
 'The deer has put him up here astraddle his antlers and gone off, apparently.' (txt)

In example (92), the body part 'anus' is marked as Oblique, in a locative role, while the raised human 'possessor' is Object-marked (and 'thorn' has an instrumental role).

- (92) *cípmǎh = n'ǝh ?út-út = mah tíh-ǎn tíh yók-óh, yǝmǎy-ǎt*
 small=NMZ thorn-OBL=REP 3sg-OBJ 3sg poke-DECL anus-OBL
 'With a smallish thorn, they say, he poked him, in the anus.' (txt)

Although Directional *-an* seems to be preferred to express directional movement to/from a location, *-Vt* is also acceptable in this function, as the examples in (93–94) illustrate.

- (93) *yúp wáb-át w'ob-ʔéʔ=n'ǎn d'əh-d'əh-hí-ǐh*
 that.ITG smoking.platform set.on-PERF=PL.OBJ send-send-descend-DECL
 '(He) brought down those that had been put on the smoking-platform.'
 (txt)

- (94) *núp nř yǎh = ʔǎy = d'əh-ét, tát deh hayám-át,*
 this 1sg.POSS affine=FEM=PL-OBL taracuá.ant water town-OBL

ʔǎh wid-nǎn-ǎh

1sg arrive-come-DECL

'To my female affinal relations, to Tat Deh village, I came.' (txt)

There is some evidence that the instrumental function is in some sense more basic to Oblique *-Vt* than is the locative function. In cases where the interpretation of the noun's semantic role is potentially ambiguous between instrumental and locative, *-Vt* is preferred for the instrumental role, and Directional *-an* for the locative, as in example (95a) and (b). That this preference only surfaces in cases of ambiguity is illustrated by the related but locative *-Vt*-marked example in (96).

- (95) a) *həhtěg děh-an tih j'id-íy*
 canoe water-DIR 3sg wash-DYNM
 'He washes the canoe at the water (i.e., the port).' (el)

- b) *həhtěg děh-ét tih j'id-íy*
 canoe water-OBL 3sg wash-DYNM
 'He washes the canoe with water.' (el)

- (96) *búg' tuʔ-póg-óy = mah, děh-ét*
 pile be.in.water-EMPH-DYNM water-OBL
 'There was a big pile (of it), in the water.' (txt)

D. Temporal

Oblique *-Vt* can also have a temporal function with a very small set of nouns denoting specific points in time, as in examples (96–97). This function is very similar to its use with verbs to form temporal adverbial clauses (see §4.3.4.2 below and §18.2.6.2).

- (97) *ceťembudu-úť ʔãh maca-ní-h*
 September-OBL 1sg come.to.senses-INFR2-DECL
 ‘I was born in September.’ (ru)
- (98) *n’íp g’i-ťť tih naʔ-yiʔ-ní-h*
 that hot.season-OBL 3sg die-TEL-INFR2-DECL
 ‘He died last year.’ (el)

E. Inanimate actor of a reflexive (passive) construction

One further use of the Oblique marker *-Vť* is to mark the inanimate actor (i.e., that which would be the agent in the corresponding active clause) in a passive-type reflexive construction (see §11.1.2). While *animate* actors in passive constructions take the Object marker *-ãñ* (§4.3.1.1.D), inanimates must take the Oblique:

- (99) *mɔhǎy hup = mǎh-ǎy tegd’ũh-úť*
 deer RFLX=kill-DYNM tree-OBL
 ‘The deer was crushed by the tree (that fell in the wind).’ (el)

4.3.4.2. Oblique marking and subordinate clauses

Like the other case markers in Hup, Oblique *-Vť* is also used to form adverbial and relative clauses (see §18.2.3 and §18.2.6.2 for more discussion). In its adverbial function, Oblique *-Vť* can have either a temporal or a spatial function. As such, it usually attaches directly to a verb root, as does Directional *-an* (§4.3.2 above); however, it can occasionally appear as its variant *-it*, with the intervening ‘Filler’ syllable *-Vw-*. It signals either a temporal overlap (examples 100–101) or a location (example 102).

- (100) *wǎh = d’əh ʔãñ hid ʔid-ťť ʔãh ʔid-bí-h*
 River.Indian=PL1sg.OBJ 3pl speak-OBL 1sg speak-HAB-DECL
 ‘When the River Indians speak to me, I always speak (Tukano).’ (txt)

- (101) *tih hɔp-hí-ít-ay = mah j'ám...*
 3sg dry-descend-OBL-INCH=REP DST.CNTR

tu-d'oʔ-kədpá-áy = mah

push-take-pass.go.upstream-DYMN=REP

'When it (the water) was nearly gone... he pushed (the fish) quickly upstream, they say.' (txt)

- (102) *tinñh mǎy, tih g'é-t-ét, pǎ-ay*
 3sg.POSS house 3sg stand-OBL NEG:EX-INCH
 'His house, where he stays, (he was) not there.' (txt)

Oblique *-Vt* also combines with verb phrases to form relative clauses (see §18.2.3), as described in §4.3.1.3 above for Object *-ǎn*. When no relative-clause-final bound nominal is present for the case marker to attach to, it attaches directly to the verb stem. The intervening 'Filler' form *-Vw-* and Oblique variant *-ít* are required for headless relative clauses used as oblique arguments, whereas *-Vt* is usually preferred for adverbial clauses.

- (103) *tih hɔhtǝg-ét hám-áy, [tih = báb' biʔ-ʔé]-ew-ít*
 3sg canoe-OBL go-DYMN 3sg=brother make-PERF-FLR-OBL
 'He's going in the canoe, in the one his brother made.' (el)

4.4. Number

Hup marks non-singular number on nouns and noun phrases with the form *=d'əh*. Formally, *=d'əh* is unstressed, and is best considered part of the set of relatively peripheral inflectional forms in Hup which are labeled clitics. The form *=d'əh* is homonymous with the verb 'send', but there is no indication that this resemblance is due to anything other than chance.

The Hup plural construction is largely regular. However (as discussed below), it does not usually occur with the masculine or gender-neutral animate bound noun *=ʔih*, and the fused plural object marker *=n'an* (§4.3.1.2) is marginally phonologically exceptional. All nouns that have a non-singular form also have a singular form; there are no morphologically marked *pluralia tantum*, although some nouns may take both a bound noun (which, like a measure term, can individuate a single entity from a mass; see §5.5) and the Plural marker, even at the same time.

Hup *=d'əh* usually acts as a general marker of plurality, but it can also serve a specifically collective function; as such, it signals that a group of items

should be “considered together as a unit” (Corbett 2000: 118). The collective use of =*d’əh* in Hup, as distinct from the general plural use, is most obvious in cases where a lexically plural or singular noun optionally takes =*d’əh* to signal a conceptually grouped association of entities, as in the examples discussed in §4.4.1.A and §4.4.2 below.

4.4.1. Differential plural marking (plurality split) and animacy

Plural marking in Hup conforms to an animacy hierarchy, and follows essentially the same parameters as does differential object marking. This accounts for the fact that object marking and number marking pattern together, as discussed in §4.3.1.2 above; that is, if an entity is conceptually distinctive enough to be number-marked, then it should also be case-marked.

Smith-Stark (1974) uses the term ‘plurality split’ to describe the phenomenon of differential plural marking, and observes that “plurality *splits* a language in that it is a significant opposition for certain categories but irrelevant for others” (Smith-Stark 1974: 657). Plurality splits are almost always closely linked to animacy. They occur in many of the world’s languages (Corbett 2000: 55) and are common in North America (cf. Mithun 1988: 212), appearing in languages such as Tarascan (isolate) and Yucatec Maya (cf. Lucy 1992).

In Hup, nouns with inanimate referents are generally unmarked for number, although – unlike the restrictions governing differential object marking – number marking on inanimates is possible. When counting inanimates, the numeral alone usually suffices to indicate plurality (e.g., *kaʔap mɔy* [two house] ‘two houses’); classifiers are also used in certain cases (see §4.4.3). Nouns referring to animals are found both with and without number marking, whereas it is required for humans. While languages with split plurality systems have many options in arranging their systems of number marking, languages like Comanche and Kannada (Corbett 2000: 70) exhibit patterns very much like that found in Hup.

A. Humans

For plural nouns referring to humans, number marking is generally obligatory, as in (104–105).

- (104) *nǎ* *tukáno = tǎh = d’əh* *pǎ*
 NEG:R Tukano(Pt)=offspring=PL NEG:EX
 ‘There are no Tukano children.’ (sp)

- (105) *tiyĩʔ = d'əh-əwəc ʔəg-náʔ-ǎy !*
 man=PL-FLR-EXCL2 drink-lose.senses-DYNM
 'Only the men got drunk!' (cv)

Number marking is always used with the names of ethnic or other human groups, as in examples (106–109); this is essentially a collective specification.

- (106) *kóh = d'əh, j'ǎç = d'əh, cəkʷ'ət = d'əh,*
 Wanano=PL Tariana=PL Tukanano=PL

yãʔám = tǎh = d'əh... nihũʔ !

Jaguar=clan=PL all

'There were Wananos, Tarianas, Tukanos, Jaguar-Clansmen, everyone!' (txt)

- (107) *yĩ-nih-yóʔ j'ám núp húp = n'ǎn = b'ay*
 that.ITG-be.like-SEQ DST.CNTR this person=PL.OBJ=AGAIN

yóʔóm = ʔih tih d'əh-d'əh-yé-éh

powerful=MSC 3sg send-send-enter-DECL

'Then for the Hupd'əh he picked out a leader.' (txt)

- (108) *nutǎn-ay teghǎ = d'əh nĩh yág-ay, nutǎn-ǎp*
 today-INCH Non.Indian=PL POSS hammock-INCH today-DEP
 'Nowadays we use the hammocks of the Non-Indians, these days.' (txt)

- (109) *cudádu = n'ǎn hid ʔid-ʔay-píd-ay-áh*
 soldier(Pt)=PL.OBJ 3pl speak-VENT-DIST-INCH-DECL
 'They went to speak to some soldiers.' (txt)

With the names of human groups, as in the examples above, the singular form is typically marked by the bound nouns =*ʔih* 'masculine or unspecified gender' or =*ʔǎy* 'feminine', which effectively act as a kind of singulative marker. Whereas most bound nouns (including female =*ʔǎy*) are pluralized simply by the addition of =*d'əh*, the masculine or gender-neutral nominal =*ʔih* is usually replaced altogether by plural =*d'əh*; in other words, a plural masculine or gender-unspecific noun like 'Hup person' is simply realized *húp = d'əh*, rather than *húp = ʔih = d'əh*. This idiosyncrasy can probably be explained by the fact that the basic value of =*ʔih* is simply 'animate', whereas

that of =*d'əh* is (in most cases) ‘animate plural’; thus a combination of the two is under normal circumstances redundant.

The regular plural variant =*?ih = d'əh* is nevertheless possible, although rarely used. In general, it indicates maximally specific reference; for example, while *húp = d'əh* means ‘men or people in general’, *húp = ?ih = d'əh* could be used to refer to ‘those (specific) men’, as in the case of a group of men from another village who arrive in our village to visit relatives. This variant can be explained as a reflection of the individuating function of the bound construction, as discussed in §5.5.

The obligatory number marking of humans is subject to one major exception: non-specific human referents do not generally take number marking – just as they are exempt from the object marking requirement (§4.3.1.2) and from obligatory participation in the bound construction (§5.5.2). This is illustrated in examples (110–111). Note, however, that the non-specific noun ‘person’ in (111) is then referred back to with a plural pronoun, whereas unmarked inanimate nouns are more often referred to by a singular pronoun, regardless of their underlying number (see section C, example 131 below).

- (110) *húp-ǎn tǎw-óy, húp-ǎn dóh-óy...*
 person-OBJ scold-DYNM person-OBJ curse-DYNM
 ‘(Some people) scold people, cast curses on people...’ (txt)

- (111) *hup dǎb, hid bí?-ih*
 person many 3pl work-DECL
 ‘Lots of people worked.’ (txt)

Another minor exception is found with kin terms. In their vocative form (i.e., as a form of address), the plural marker is not grammatical, as illustrated in example (112). However, the plural *possessed* form of the kin term is acceptable as a vocative; e.g., *nǎ / ?ǎh = tǎh = d'əh* [1sg.POSS / 1sg=offspring=PL] ‘my children’.

- (112) *niŋ j'əm-?áy-áy tǎh ! (*tǎh = d'əh)*
 2pl bathe-VENT-INCH.IMP offspring
 ‘You all go bathe, children!’ (txt)

On the other hand, kin terms used referentially – like any other specific human noun – require number marking, as in (113–114). With parental kin terms, the plural (or the Associative plural; see §4.4.6) refers to classificatory fathers and mothers (i.e., the male siblings and parallel cousins of the father, or the female siblings and parallel cousins of the mother), as in example (114).

(113) *nĩ* *báb' = d'əh* *təhə-hũʔ-yíʔ-íy*
 1sg.POSS sibling=PL end-finish-TEL-DYNM
 'My siblings are all dead.' (txt)

(114) *ʔin = ʔip = d'əh*, *tih = wəhád = d'əh...*
 1pl=father=PL 3sg=old.man=PL
 'Our classificatory fathers, the old ones...' (txt)

In some cases, the number marker does not indicate a plural number of referents of the noun with which it occurs, but rather a group of animate (usually human) entities that are *associated* with the noun. As such, it serves a primarily collective function. This function is illustrated in example (115), which relates to the group of stars, mythologically embodied by a group of young men, that make up the Pleiades ('Star-Hollow') constellation.

(115) *wədhəʔm'əħ* *tod = d'əh-əh*, *cəħdeh* *ham-tég = d'əh-əh*
 star hollow=PL-DECL rainy.season go-FUT=PL-DECL
 'The Star-Hollow (Pleiades) ones, those that go (across the sky) during the rainy season.' (txt)

This collective function of the number marker is also manifested when it occurs with (nominalized) verb roots, such as *ʔid = d'əh* (speak=PL) 'those who speak the same language'.

It should also be noted here that while almost all generic nouns referring to humans are obligatorily bound (usually preceded by the default 3sg pronoun *tih =*), they (like most other bound nouns) may appear unbound in plural form. For example, the form *tāʔǎy* 'woman (sg)' (a reduced form of *tih = ʔǎy*, involving the bound noun = *ʔǎy*) can appear as *ʔǎy = d'əh* in the plural, as in example (116). The explanation for this phenomenon presumably lies in the individuating function of the bound construction (discussed in §5.5).

(116) *ʔǎy = n'ǎn* *ʔāh* *kéy-ep*, *yúp* *hayám-át-ǎh*
 FEM=PL.OBJ 1sg see-DEP that.DST town-OBL-DECL
 'I saw women in that town.' (txt)

B. Animals

Number marking is common on nouns referring to animals, as in examples (117–119), but it may be absent (examples 120–121). In general, an animal-

referring noun that is conceptually plural but lacks number marking is judged grammatical by speakers, whereas most human nouns in this context are not. In discourse, the presence or absence of number marking on animal nouns patterns according to specificity; more specific references to animals are usually marked, whereas more generic references are not – this is especially typical for game animals, as in (120–121). This is consistent with the pattern of differential object marking on animal nouns (§4.3.1.2), as well as with the absence of number marking on certain generic human nouns, as in examples (110–111) above.

(117) *hid nɔ-píd-íh, yúp, yãʔám = d'əh cɔʔ-óy-óh*
 3pl say-DIST-DECL that.ITG jaguar=PL LOC-DYNM-DECL
 'They were saying, those jaguars.' (txt)

(118) *núp nutǎn yãʔám = d'əh hid wæd-níh-ay-áh*
 this today jaguar=PL 3pl eat-NEG-INCH-DECL
 'So today jaguars don't eat (people).' (txt)

(119) *j'am-áp děh mí-ít, hǒp wæd = n'án*
 DST.CNTR-DEP water creek-OBL fish eat=PL.OBJ

ʔáh nɔ-ǒp, yók = d'əh
 1sg say-DEP otter=PL
 'I'm talking about those that eat fish in the river, the otters.' (txt)

(120) *hũyǎw mæh-yóʔ, hăt mæh-yóʔ, tǒhód'*
 paca kill-SEQ alligator kill-SEQ collared.peccary

mæh-yóʔ, hid ʔũh = nɔʔ-ǒy
 kill-SEQ 3pl INTRC-give-DYNM
 'Having killed paca, alligator, collared peccary, they gave (meat) to each other.' (txt)

(121) *hǒp tíh g'et-wæđ, mǒh tíh g'et-wæđ, ní-íy = mah*
 fish 3sg stand-eat inambu 3sg stand-eat be-DYNM=REP
 'He provided (her) with fish to eat, inambu to eat, it's said' (txt)

A referent may be inherently non-specific in a negative clause, and in this case number marking may be judged ungrammatical, as in (122) (but see example 104 above). This may be compared with the negative clause in (123), which makes reference to a specific bunch of fish, and is therefore marked for number.

(122) *hǒp ʔǎh kək-d'oʔ-náh* (**hǒp = d'əh*)
 fish 1sg pull-take-NEG
 'I didn't catch any fish.' (el)

(123) *hǒp = d'əh pǎ*
 fish=PL NEG:EX
 'The fish are not there.' (specific fish) (cv)

Certain nouns referring to types of insects that typically occur in large swarms are essentially mass nouns. These may occur in a bound construction with the singulative bound noun = *ʔǎw* 'swarming insect', or with the Plural marker, or even with both, as illustrated in (124).

(124) *yǒʔ* 'wasp' (number unspecified: can refer either to an individual or to a swarm)
yǒʔ = ʔǎw 'single wasp'
yǒʔ = d'əh 'wasps'
yǒʔ = ʔǎw = d'əh 'wasps'

C. Inanimates

Although number marking is not ungrammatical on countable nouns with inanimate referents (unlike object marking), these nouns are almost always formally unmarked for number in discourse, as illustrated in (125–130). This is the case regardless of whether or not number is otherwise specified with a numeral or other quantifier. Like non-specific humans and animals, inanimate entities are typically of relatively low conceptual salience, and differentiation for number is thus apparently of low importance.

(125) *dadánya tíh-ǎn ʔǎh nǒʔ-b'ay-áh*
 orange 3sg-OBJ 1sg give-AGAIN-DECL
 'I gave her the oranges (that I'd brought).' (txt)

(126) *pídaya = hin nutǎn pǎ-ay, ʔǎh-ǎp*
 battery=also today NEG:EX-INCH 1sg-DEP
 'Batteries too are all gone today, for me.' (sp)

- (127) *hůt, hōpkǎk-ǎh, díbma, b'ǎh-ǎh, tih nǎǎ-ǎh*
 tobacco fish.pull-DECL file salt-DECL 3sg give-DECL
 'He gave tobacco, (there were) fishhooks, files, (there was) salt.' (txt)
- (128) *náǎap hupáǎ = mah pǎǎ-ǎh, dapúh = d'ǎh pí d = mah*
 this.many flat.basket=REP present-DECL hand=PL DIST=REP
hid pǎǎ-píd-ih
 3pl present-DIST-DECL
 'This many baskets they presented, two hands' worth (i.e., ten) they presented.' (txt)
- (129) *kaǎap tít, nú-cáǎah d'ǎh-d'ǎh-hám, nú-cáǎah*
 two string this-side send-send-go this-side
 'Two strings, coming down on this side, and on this (other) side.' (txt)
- (130) *cínku fórnú tih d'ǎh-hám-ǎh*
 five(Pt) griddle(Pt) 3sg send-go-DECL
 'He brought five griddles.' (sp)

Note, moreover, that even when their referents are non-singular, inanimate entities unmarked for number are typically referred back to with a singular pronoun, as in (131) – unlike non-specific unmarked human nouns like 'people' in example (111) above, which take a plural co-referential pronoun.

- (131) *yíníy hid d'oǎ-ham-yǎǎ-ay-áh... tih = g'ǎg-ǎh,*
 thus 3pl take-go-TEL-INCH-DECL 3sg=bone-DECL
mǎh g'ǎg-ǎh... tih hi-yǎt-yǎǎ-ay-áh
 turtle bone-DECL 3sg descend-lie-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'Thus they make (them) go up... the bones, the turtle bones... (then) it (i.e., they) comes down.' (txt)

4.4.2. Number and other noun types: demonstratives, numerals, and pronouns

As nominal heads referring to non-singular entities, demonstratives occur as the lexicalized free-pronoun forms *ni-d'ǎh* 'these', *n'i-d'ǎh* 'those (distal)', and *yǎ-d'ǎh* 'those (intangible)' (see Table 22 in §4.1.2 above), as in examples (132–133). Note that the lexicalized stress pattern of these forms results in stress fal-

ling on the Plural marker, whereas $=d'əh$ is always unstressed elsewhere in Hup. The Plural marker can also occur with various other derived demonstrative forms, such as that in (134). It is important to note that the combination of a bound demonstrative morpheme with the Plural marker results in a nominalization; in other words, $=d'əh$ has a nominalizing effect on these forms.

- (132) $ʔəg = wag$ ***ni-d'əh*** *nih-nih-ay = pog'*, *páy-ay*
 drink=day this-PL be.like-NEG-INCH=EMPH1 bad-INCH
 'On drinking days, these (people) don't do like this, (it's) no good.' (txt)
- (133) *hí* *j'ek-yəhəy-yíʔ-íy*, ***yi-d'əh-əh*** !
 only steal-search-TEL-DYNM that.ITG-PL-DECL
 'They're just looking (for something) to steal, those ones!' (cv)
- (134) *yáʔəp = d'əh = yíʔ*
 that.ITG.QTY=PL=TEL
 'That's all of them (her siblings).' (txt)

Hup's animate/inanimate distinction in number marking applies to adnominal demonstratives. When occurring within a noun phrase, the (DEM + $d'əh$) forms above are usually restricted to animate referents, and can only modify an inanimate referent when the inanimate-referring noun is explicitly number-marked with $=d'əh$ (which, as we have seen, is almost never the case in natural discourse). For inanimate referents, corresponding fused forms built on the nominalizer $-n'ih$ (see §4.6.3 below and §18.2.5) are used. These (DEM + $n'ih$) forms are realized as *ni-n'ih* 'these', *n'i-n'ih* 'those (DISTANT)', and *yí-n'ih* 'those (INTANGIBLE)', and are never used for animate referents. For a countable inanimate noun like 'fruit', the $-n'ih$ demonstrative form requires a plural interpretation; thus *ni-n'ih = tat* means 'these fruits', whereas *núp = tat* means 'this fruit' (compare *ni-d'əh dóʔ = d'əh* 'these children'). For a mass noun, the demonstrative may be either inanimate plural or singular; e.g., *ni-n'ih j'ík*; *núp j'ík* 'this smoke'.

Numerals (other than 'one'), like demonstratives, also require the Plural marker when acting as nominal heads, i.e., when they stand for an explicitly plural (usually animate) referent, as in examples (135–137). Also as in the case of demonstratives, Plural $=d'əh$ has a nominalizing function here, and may take the place of a head noun. This is supported by the fact that numerals representing inanimate referents are usually accompanied by a bound or classifying noun (see §4.4.3 below, especially example 154 *koʔap = tég* 'two [helicopters]'), whereas adnominal numerals need not, but may, take $=d'əh$ (see §4.4.4 below).

Numerals themselves are discussed in detail §6.5.1, while their use as adnominals within the plural noun phrase is covered in §4.4.4 below.

- (135) *kaʔǎp = d'əh-ay = cud, tinñh* *hɔhɔh = d'əh*
 two=PL-INCH=INFR 3sg.POSS frog=PL
 'There are two of them apparently, his frogs.' (txt)

- (136) *tedé = d'əh-ət tih* *biʔ-ni-cǎp-ǎh*
 three=PL-OBL 3sg work-be-COMPL-DECL
 'He's already worked with three of them.' (sp)

- (137) *nř* *báb' = d'əh mɔtaʔǎp = d'əh*
 1sg.POSS sibling=PL three=PL
 'My siblings are three.' (txt)

In (138), the number marker occurs at the end of a numeral string, uttered as the speaker counted a row of frogs in a picture.

- (138) *dóy, cínku, cé...* *ʔóytu = d'əh = cudʔũhníy*
 two(Pt) five(Pt) six(Pt) eight(Pt)=PL=INFR.maybe
 '(There are) 2, 5, 6, 8 of them, apparently.' (txt)

The Plural marker's collective function is especially clear when it follows the numeral 'one' in reference to a single set of countable entities, as in (139–141).

- (139) *ʔayǎp = d'əh ʔin-ǎh !*
 one=PL 1pl-DECL
 'We are of one set!' (referring to clan membership) (cv)

- (140) *mɔdaʔǎp = d'əh nř* *báb' = d'əh cáp-áh;*
 three=PL 1sg.POSS sibling=PL INTS1-DECL

ʔayǎp tǎh = d'əh... ʔin-ǎh
 one offspring=PL 1pl-DECL
 'My siblings are three; we are of one clan / one father.' (txt)

- (141) *ʔayǎp (hup) yöy = d'əh*
 one person line=PL
 'A line of people' (el)

Note this collective use of =*d'əh* with 'one' does not occur with inanimate nouns, which are not expected to be specified for number, as in (142).

- (142) *ʔayup mʷ(*=d'əh) kɔw-ɔh*
 one mound(*PL) hot.pepper-DECL
 'One pile of hot peppers' (el)

The use of the Plural marker with pronouns also illustrates its collective function. Although the first, second, and third person plural pronouns are already lexically specified for number, they can nevertheless occur with =*d'əh*, indicating a well-defined set or group of individuals, as illustrated in examples (143–145). On the other hand, =*d'əh* is ungrammatical with the first, second, and third person singular pronouns.

Corbett (2000: 118) observes that collectives derived from pronouns appear to be very rare in the world's languages, but the Hup collective pronoun construction does seem to be a bona fide collective in Corbett's sense of a group of items "considered together as a unit". As the examples below illustrate, the collective is not spatial so much as conceptual; it is usually used in reference to an ethnic group, as distinct from a more contextually defined group of referents (which would be referred to with the simple pronominal form), and from a more narrowly defined group (indicated by the Associative plural, §4.4.6).

- (143) *nɪŋ = d'əh wɪd-næn-tæn = hin, ʔāh ʔid-tuk-yæh-æp*
 2pl=PL arrive-come-COND=also 1sg speak-want-FRUST-DEP
 'When you types (Non-Indians) come here, I'd like (in vain) to talk (with you).' (but can't speak Portuguese) (txt)

- (144) *ʔɪn = d'əh húp = d'əh j'ʉg-an ní-íy*
 1pl=PL person=PL forest-LOC.OBJ be-DYNM
 'We Hup'ah live in the forest.' (el)

- (145) *hɪd = d'əh wɔh = d'əh dɛh = mí cóʔ ní-íy*
 3pl=PL River.Indian=PL water=creek LOC be-DYNM
 'The River Indians live by the river.' (el)

Similarly, =*d'əh* can occur as a collective marker on the interrogative pronoun *hɪn'ɪh* 'what', in reference to a set (but only the Associative plural *-ən-d'əh* is possible with *ʔɪy* 'who'):

- (146) **hřn'řh = d'əh** *núp* *řăn = b'ay,* *matěw?*
 what=PL this 1sg.POSS=AGAIN Mateus
 'What's this bunch of things on me, Mateus?' (cv)

4.4.3. Uncountable or mass nouns

Inanimate nouns conceived as a mass cannot, in general, receive plural marking at all (whereas countable inanimate nouns usually do not, but in principle can):

- (147) **řadócu**(* = *n'ăn*) *řin* *wăd-ăy*
 rice(*=PL.OBJ) 1pl eat-DYNM
 'We're eating rice.' (el)

- (148) **kăřn = măh,** **kăřn** *d'oř-yóř* *řăg-əp* *řáp*
 farinha=REP farinha take-SEQ drink-DEP NEG:ID
 'A little farinha, having taken farinha (and) drinking; not doing this.' (txt)

An inanimate mass noun can be made countable by specifying a unit; this is usually done by means of a bound noun (see §5.4), as in the following example:

- (149) *peyăw* 'beans'
peyăw = wig 'bean seed' (=individual bean)
peyăw = tat 'bean fruit' (=bean pod)

For a few mass nouns, the plural marker may in fact be grammatical, but only in a collective-like sense:

- (150) *păt* 'hair'
păt tăt 'strand of hair'
păt = d'əh 'lots of hair'

The use of measure terms (which are frequently bound nouns) is required when mass nouns are modified with numerals, as in examples (151–152).

- (151) **kořap** **b'ďř** **d'ůř** **deh** *tih* *řăg-yîř-ay-áh,* **kořap** **b'ďř**
 two cuia timbó water 3sg drink-TEL-INCH-DECL two cuia
 'He drank **two cuias of timbó juice**, two cuias (full).' (txt)

- (152) *hõp kək tít pót ʔayũp, hõpkǎk ʔayup dúciya,*
 fish pull string roll one fish.pull one dozen(Pt)
kũnyēh ʔayũp, yaʔáp = yiʔ tih nót-ǎh
 spoon(Pt) one that.much=TEL 3sg give-DECL
 ‘One roll of fishing line, a dozen fishhooks, one spoon, she gave all this.’ (txt)

This use of measure terms has a formal parallel in the common (though not obligatory) use of noun classifiers or other bound nouns when numerals modify *countable* inanimate nouns, as in examples (153–154). This supports the notion that nouns unmarked for number in Hup are conceptually akin to mass nouns; in the same way, it suggests that the function of the bound construction – and more specifically, the noun classifiers – is one of individuation, closely linked to that of measure terms (see §5.5–5.6).⁶⁸

- (153) *ʔin-ǎn cúku tih nót-ǎh, bodáca ʔóytu = b’ah*
 1pl-OBJ juice(Pt.) 3sg give-DECL cookies(Pt.) eight(Pt)=SPLIT
 ‘She gave us juice, and eight cookies...’ (txt)

- (154) *kaʔap = tǎg !*
 two=THING
 ‘Two of them!’ (helicopters: *pipih = teg*) (cv)

Finally, there are a few other uncountable nouns in Hup which are truly conceptually unitary, rather than simply uncountable; these include *páč* ‘sky’ and *pǎy* ‘thunder/lightning’.⁶⁹

⁶⁸ Also compare the use of the ‘singulative’ bound noun =*ʔǎw* ‘swarming insect’ (§4.4.1.B above) with mass-like insect nouns, and the obligatory participation of human nouns in the bound construction (§5.4.2 and §5.5).

⁶⁹ Interestingly, almost all of these conceptually singular nouns have homonymous (though possible historically connected) variants with quite distinct meanings, which are countable – for example, *páč* also means ‘rock’, and *pǎy* is the name of a species of fish.

4.4.4. Number marking and the noun phrase

In the noun phrase, number marking – like object marking – generally occurs on the final element. However, if the plural-marked noun is preceded by a demonstrative, the demonstrative is virtually always number-marked as well, as in example (155). Consultants judge a plural-marked noun phrase preceded by a singular demonstrative to be only marginally acceptable.

- (155) *hī-có?* ***yí-d'ǎh*** ***vínte = d'ǎh*** *hám-ā?* ?
 INT-LOC those(ITG)-PL twenty(Pt)=PL go-INT
 'Where did those twenty go?' (sp)

In the case of noun phrases involving numerals, number marking is preferred on both the numeral and the remainder of the noun phrase (especially for human referents), and appears to be required if the numeral follows the rest of the noun phrase. This, and the fact that the interpretation may be partitive (as in 158), suggests that these are actually two distinct appositional noun phrases:

- (156) *móta?ǎp(=d'ǎh)* *tiyí?* *pǒg = d'ǎh*
 three(=PL) man big=PL
 'Three big men' (el)

- (157) *tiyí?* *pǒg = d'ǎh* *móta?ǎp = d'ǎh*
 man big=PL three=PL
 'Big men, three of them' (el)

- (158) *ko?ǎp = d'ǎh* *tih = tǎh = d'ǎh* *ná?-ǎh*
 two=PL 3sg=offspring-PL die-DECL
 'Two of his children died.' (cv)

When nouns are modified by adjectives, number marking usually occurs only once, at the end of the noun phrase, as in [*tiyí?* *pǒg*] = *d'ǎh* (man big=PL) 'the big men', and in example (159). However, the noun and its modifier can also occur as two appositional nominal forms with number marked on both, as in [*tiyí?*] = *d'ǎh* [*tih = pǒg*] = *d'ǎh* 'the men, big ones'. In this case, the bound nominalizing form *tih =* is required on the adjective.

- (159) *hǎp = mah* *hid* *tǎn-ní-h,* ***hǎp*** ***tih = pǒg = n'ǎn*** *b'iyi?!*
 fish=REP 3pl hold-INFR2-DECL fish 3sg=big=PL.OBJ only
 'They carried fish, it's said, all big fish.' (txt)

The general rule that number must be marked on the final member of the noun phrase is waived if this element is a quantifier, in which case the (noun phrase-initial) head noun usually is the only number-marked entity. Some quantifiers (in particular, *dšb* ‘many’ and *nihū?* ‘all’) are nevertheless able to take the plural marker =*d’əh* (although others, such as *ʔápyi?* ‘all’, cannot), with the same variable combinations as those described in the preceding paragraph for adjective noun phrases. The noun phrase-final number-marking rule also seems to be waived for number-marked inanimate referents, if and when these occur at all (so, for example, *mšy = d’əh tih = pög* [house=PL 3sg=big] ‘the big houses’ is said to be grammatical) – but evidence for this is restricted to consultants’ grammaticality judgements, since number marking of inanimates is so rare in actual discourse.

Given the multiple positions which number marking can fill in the noun phrase, it is grammatically possible for it to be morphologically marked on every constituent (though potentially very odd, as in 160). It is not altogether clear whether this phenomenon should be taken as multiple appositional noun phrases, or as an actual (although extremely marginal) case of agreement within the noun phrase; but it is clear that each of the number-marked elements has its own distinct nominal identity (compare the similar phenomenon found with noun classifiers, discussed in §5.6.4).

(160) *nid’əh* *tiyʔ = d’əh* *nih* *yāʔamböʔ = d’əh*
 this.PL man-PL POSS dog=PL

tih = pög = d’əh *kaʔəp = d’əh*
 3sg=big=PL two=PL
 ‘Those men’s two big dogs’ (el)

4.4.5. Number marking and the subordinate clause

The (clause-final) boundary slot of a relative clause may be filled by a bound noun or a full noun phrase. When this head is a bound noun and the referent is animate, the bound noun is most frequently the masculine or gender-neutral bound noun =*ʔih* (although it can also be the feminine form =*ʔáy*). Given the fact that number marking typically does not occur on nominals with inanimate referents at all, most plural-marked relative clauses therefore involve the plural equivalent of =*ʔih*. In these cases, the number marker =*d’əh* usually replaces both the bound noun =*ʔih* (as mentioned above in §4.4.1.A), but also the Dependent marker -*Vp* of the relativized verb. Thus *V-DEP = ʔih* ‘one who Vs’ virtually always appears in the plural as *V = d’əh* ‘those who V’, and occasion-

ally this pattern is extended (optionally) to bound nouns other than =ʔih as well. Moreover, this construction has an alternative function as a converbal (adverbial) clause, and in many cases both the relative and the converbal interpretations are accessible, as illustrated by (161); this probably reflects a historical reanalysis of the relative construction as an adverbial, as discussed in more detail in §18.2.3-4 and in Epps (2007c).⁷⁰

- (161) ʔecáp cóʔ híd nǎn-ay-áh, [híd = n'ǎn mǎh] = d'əh-śh
 tomorrow LOC 3pl come-INCH-DECL 3pl=PL.OBJ kill=PL-DECL
 'The next day they arrived, those who (would) kill them.' [RELATIVE]
 'The next day they arrived, in order to kill them.' [CONVERB]

4.4.6. Associative plural -ǎnd'əh

The 'Associative plural' morpheme in Hup probably derives from -ǎn 'OBJECT' and =d'əh 'PLURAL', and has as its primary meaning 'N and those closely associated with him/her'. As such, it occurs only with nouns having human referents, usually proper names and kin terms, as in examples (162–164). Associative plural constructions comparable to that found in Hup are relatively common cross-linguistically (cf. Moravcsik 2003).

- (162) ʔána-ǎnd'əh híd-ǎn g'óp-śh
 Ana-ASSOC.PL 3pl-OBJ scoop-DECL
 'Ana-and-they (her children) were serving them.' (cv)

With 'father' and 'mother', the Associative plural usually refers to classificatory fathers and mothers (which can also be conveyed by the simple plural form =d'əh, see §4.4.1A above):

- (163) j'ǔg-út, yǎk pǎt-ǎt... ʔíp-ǎnd'əh w'ob-ʔě-h
 forest-OBL macaw hair-OBL father-ASSOC.PL set.on-PERF-DECL
 'In the forest, with macaw feathers...(our) classificatory fathers used to put (them on themselves).' (txt)

⁷⁰ It is tempting to speculate that a situation like that found in Hup might represent an early stage in the historical development of verbal number agreement.

- (164) *ʔəg ʔəg-yóʔ, ʔíʔ-ǎnd'əh yínih-yóʔ yamhĩdɔʔ-wáy-áy*
 drink drink-SEQ Mom-ASSOC.PL that-be.like-SEQ sing-go.out-DYNM
 ‘Having drunk drink, with that (our) classificatory mothers would go out singing.’ (txt)

The Associative plural can also have the comitative sense ‘together with N’, and can even occur on non-human nouns, although this is considerably less common. Example (165) comes from a telling of ‘The Frog Story’ (Mercer Mayer’s *Frog, Where Are You?*), in which the boy was accompanied (and even assisted) by his dog in his search for his missing frog.

- (165) *tih ham-yǎh-b'ay-áh, tinĩh yãʔamböʔ-ǎnd'əh*
 3sg go-FRUST-AGAIN-DECL 3sg.POSS dog-ASSOC.PL
 ‘He went (in vain), together with his dog.’ (txt)

Finally, *-ǎnd'əh* can function as a kind of ‘interactive plural’ form: it occurs on the second of two coordinated participants to indicate their association with *each other*, vis-à-vis the event specified in the predicate – even where the first is a plural pronoun like ‘we’ that subsumes both referents, as in example (166). In this usage, the Associative plural does not indicate a group that acts independently, as one of two distinct participants; rather, this form crucially has to do with the interaction or relationship between the two named participants. This use is especially common with the Interactional construction (see §11.2).

- (166) *ʔin tǎh = mǎh-ǎnd'əh hup = d'oʔ-tubúd-úh*
 1pl offspring=DIM-ASSOC.PL RFLX=take-INTS3-DECL
 ‘My son and I were made to take a lot (of beer).’ (cv)

Comparative note

Several aspects of the number-marking system in Hup may be identifiable as areal features common to Vaupés languages in general. In particular, both Tukanoan languages and Tariana (apparently under Tukanoan influence) distinguish plural primarily for humans and animates (Aikhenvald 2002a: 96), as does Hup. In addition, an ‘associative plural’ form that is functionally similar to that found in Hup occurs in a number of Tukanoan languages, as well as in Tariana, into which it is argued to have spread by diffusion (Aikhenvald 2002a: 98). The fact that the Hup form appears to be morphologically transparent – involving the combination of the Object (or Directional) marker *-ǎn* and the Plural form *=d'əh* – also suggests that it may be a relatively new grammatical

category in the language, and therefore a likely candidate for a diffusional origin (from Tukano into Hup). Moreover, although the ‘associative plural’ forms in Tukano and Tariana are both derived from these languages’ respective words for ‘also’, they resemble the Hup form in that the final syllable in all three languages is identical to the plural marker in these languages.

4.5. Reduplication in the noun stem

Reduplication in noun stems is essentially unproductive, but is almost certainly related to the morphological process that is semi-productive in verbs and encodes iterative aspect (§12.9.3). While the nominal forms are all frozen, and only in one case can a non-reduplicated root be identified, they may be the remnants of a process that was more productive in the past. As discussed in §7.1, moreover, it is quite common in Hup that verbal aspectual forms have an additional, often distinct, function with nouns. There is only one other environment in which reduplication is found in Hup; this is in certain nominal compounds, in which it has an attributive function (see §5.1.4).

Below is given a near-exhaustive list from my corpus of those noun stems that appear to involve reduplication (and are not derived transparently from reduplicative verb roots). The majority of these reduplicated forms are the names of small living creatures that tend to have quick, repetitive movements. This is clearly reminiscent of the iterative aspectual function that reduplication serves with verbs, and is a cross-linguistically common feature of nominal reduplication. The largest group comprises names of insects, as in (167), while the names of birds (168) and small animals like squirrels, opossums, and a few fish (169) are also represented. Other subsets (170–173) include the names of a few plants, some musical instruments (which may reflect the repetitive nature of the music and dances they are used for), and body parts⁷¹. Only in one or two cases can a non-reduplicated root be suggested (as indicated below).

(167) Insects:

<i>yíyǐw</i>	‘ant sp.’
<i>b’eb’ěp</i>	‘butterfly’
<i>nunút</i>	‘moth’

⁷¹ It is possible that some of these forms are historically truncated forms of nominal compounds in which reduplication occurs, where it apparently serves to link the first element of the compound to the second, and does not seem to relate to aspect (see §5.1.4).

kɔdɔhɔhɔg ‘morpho butterfly’ (also *kɔdɔhɔg*)
j’ij’ib ‘small fruitfly sp.’
j’aj’ap ‘fly sp.’ (type that buzzes around eyes)
bobób ‘ant sp.’
b’ob’óy ‘tocandira (ant) sp.’
wowōw ‘mamanga (biting fly sp.)’
pũpũy ‘fly/bee sp.’
huhũy ‘lightning bug’
mæmæñ ‘insect sp.’
d’id’i? ‘cricket sp.’

(168) Birds:

bobó ‘bird sp.’
bebé ‘small bird sp.’
pəpəp ‘small owl (generic)’
totób’ ‘Black-Tailed Trogon (bird)’
mæmæç ‘Grey-Winged Trumpeter (jacamim bird)’
pɔpɔ ‘Marbled Woodquail’

(169) Small animals:

b’ib’ib ‘small squirrel (generic)’
wɔwɔy ‘opossum’
kukúy ‘Night Monkey’
b’ab’ăw ‘usu snake’
bəbəð ‘toad sp.’
kākăy ‘daquirú (fish sp.)’
wowöd ‘mandi type (fish sp.)’

(170) Plants:

b’ab’á? ‘imbaúba (tree sp.)’
bəbəg ‘cubiu (plant sp.)’
wɔwɔm núh ‘broad-leafed epiphyte sp.’ (from *wɔm núh* ‘squirrel head’?)
yəyăw tít ‘vine sp.’

(171) Musical instruments:

- hehěh* ‘pan-flute (instrument), its music, and/or accompanying dance’
wowó ‘mawaco’ (small tube-shaped whistle held vertically)

(172) Animal and human body parts:

- (tĭh =)cĭcĭn* ‘fish spine’
g’ag’ăw ‘lymph nodes’
j’ib kăkăw ‘ankle bone’
hahád ‘underarm’
păpáŋ ‘hip’
cĭcĭŋ ‘lower back’
j’əj’əg ‘chin’
cĭcĭp ‘vein’
hohóŋ b’ah ‘rib cage’

(173) Other:

- ʔaʔáb* ‘wave’
hohód ‘clearing in forest’ (from *hōd* ‘hole’?)

4.6. Nominal derivation

Hup has several strategies for deriving nominals from other parts of speech. These are summarized here briefly; most are discussed in more detail elsewhere.

4.6.1. Nouns formed from free verb stems

Many verb stems are capable of shedding their otherwise obligatory bound morphology and appearing as bare stems acting as nouns, as discussed in §3.1. To the extent that the verb stem can be characterized as more ‘basically verbal’ than its nominal counterpart – i.e., it is in much more frequent use as a verb and has more prototypically verbal semantics – this process can be characterized as derivational. However, it is not fully productive.

This strategy is most regular in the case of verbs related to activities or tasks, where the nominalization usually has the meaning ‘activity, work of doing V’. In such cases, the derived nouns typically have rising tone. Arguably, however,

this is better considered a default tone assignment rather than a defining morphological feature of the derivational process, because it does not apply in all cases. In particular, when those verb stems that have a CV syllable structure (phonetically [CVV] when word-final) act as nouns, they always receive high (phonetically falling) tone, as is typical of CV noun stems generally in Hup.

Examples of derived nominals include *bĩʔ* ‘work to be done’, from *bĩʔ-* ‘work’; *gʔʔ* ‘work of pulling manioc’, from *gʔʔ-* ‘pull up manioc’; and *hæp* ‘work of sweeping’, from *hæp-* ‘sweep’. Nouns derived in this way may also have the meaning ‘thing produced by activity V’, as in *hĩʔ* ‘writing’, from *hĩʔ-* ‘write’ – for example, in referring to a piece of paper that a child has been pretending to ‘write’ on, as in example (174):

- (174) *tĩnh* *hĩʔ* *yúw-úh*
 3sg.POSS writing that.ITG-DECL
 ‘That’s his writing.’ (cv)

In other cases, however, it is not so clear which member of the pair should be the ‘derived’ one – is the noun derived from the verb, or vice versa? Examples include *bĩ* ‘domesticated animal, animal raised to be tame’ and *bĩ-* ‘rear an animal’; *b’ǎh* ‘split piece of wood, any flat thing’ (bound/classifying noun with semantic extension) and *b’ah-* ‘split lengthwise’; *cǒh* ‘cane (for walking)’ and *cǒh-* ‘use a cane for walking’. Only the fact that noun > verb zero-derivation is otherwise essentially unattested in Hup indicates that the nominal form of these words may be (at least historically) derived.

Other stems are even more idiosyncratic, and are best considered as simply listed twice in the lexicon – once as a verb and once as a noun – rather than as derived one way or the other. While they may have been derived historically, neither stem has synchronic priority. Examples of such pairs include *wæd* ‘food’ and *wæd-* ‘eat’; *ʔǎg* ‘drink (n.)’ and *ʔǎg-* ‘drink (v.)’; and *tǎh* ‘offspring (human or animal)’ and *tǎh-* ‘be pregnant (animal only)’. The latter stem can also occur as an adjective modifier, *tǎh* ‘small’; note too that the nominal form does not have the typical rising tone of a derived nominal. Such stems that occur as both nouns and verbs were labeled by Moore and Franklin (1979: 9) as ‘free radicals’, and may be best analyzed as polyvalent roots (see also the discussion in §3.1).

For many other verbs, consultants say that no derived nominal form exists at all. Examples of these include *b’ay-* ‘return’, *j’ap-* ‘render into pieces’, etc. Likewise, this zero derivation strategy is not productive for verb compounds.

4.6.2. Derivational uses of bound nouns

The addition of a bound (usually a classifying) noun to a verb stem often serves a nominalizing function, as discussed in more detail in §5.6. This produces either an instrument nominalization ('thing for doing V'), as in (175a), or an object nominalization ('thing that does V'), as in (175b). The default classifying noun *teg* 'tree, stick, thing in general' is the most common of the bound forms found in these constructions. It is not altogether clear to what extent the addition of a bound noun to a verb stem actually *derives* a noun, however, since (via the strategy described above) a bare verb stem can itself act as a nominalization.

- (175) a) *hĩʔ = teg* (write=STICK/THING) 'pencil' (stick for writing)
 tăc = tat (kick=ROUND) 'soccerball' (round thing for kicking)
- b) *pəpəd = teg* (roll=THING) 'tractor, car' (thing that rolls)

4.6.3. Other nominalizations

Subordinated clauses, formed by the addition of Dependent marker *-Vp* or the Plural/collective marker *=d'əh*, function as nominalizations, as discussed in §18.2.3–4. Addition of the bound preform *tih =* to adjective modifiers also produces a nominalization, as discussed in §6.6. Finally, as addressed in §18.2.5, the form *-n'ĩh* follows verb stems and nominalizes entire clauses, which usually appear as complements:

- (176) *ʔăh wiʔ-ʔéʔ-n'ĩh, ʔăh ʔid-té-h*
 1sg hear-PERF-NMZ 1sg speak-FUT-DECL
 'That which I heard, I will tell.' (txt)

Chapter 5

The complex noun: compounding, possession, and noun classification

Hup has several strategies for combining full nouns, pronouns, or nominal elements into complex or compound nouns (i.e., noun combinations that act as phrasal constituents). Syntactically, all involve the juxtaposition of two or more nominal components, and these combinations serve a range of semantic functions. The slot sequence for the Hup complex noun is the following: (Possessor [+Alienable possession marker]) [N1...[N1 N2]]

On the most basic, productive level, we find simple noun compounding, which can be used to express several distinct relationships between the associated entities. The expression of alienable possession likewise involves the combination of nouns in an noun phrase, but in this case the possessor is crucially marked with an additional possessive morpheme. Hup also has a heterogeneous set of obligatorily bound and/or inalienably possessed nouns, which must be preceded by some other nominal element, usually within a compound construction. Finally, a subset of these bound nouns occur in combination with other nouns and serve a primarily classificatory function, by which they categorize the noun they occur with on the basis of some abstract semantic component.

In Hup, the phenomena of compounding, possession, and noun classification are all functionally closely related. I therefore consider them together in this chapter, while other word classes (adjectives, demonstratives, etc.) that occur as modifiers with nouns and form noun phrases are considered in Chapter 6. Below, I discuss each of the three nominal construction types in turn, and also address clausal alternatives in the expression of possession. Finally, I consider the classificatory function of certain bound nouns in terms of an incipient system of noun classification.

5.1. Noun compounding

Noun compounding in Hup is a highly productive process. In general, it creates a syntactic construction composed of two juxtaposed nominal forms, the second of which acts as the head:

N1 N2
[Modifier Head]

Semantically, the compound construction can indicate relationships of three types: a possessor-possessed relationship, a whole-part relationship, or a property-entity relationship. The use of compounding to indicate possessor-possessed or whole-part (meronymic) relationships is reported to be common in South American languages; as exemplified by such compounds as *laka lawe* (chin hair) ‘beard’ in Pilagá, and *pike lamo* (arm trunk) ‘upper arm’ in Toba (Klein 2000: 85–86).

In compounds expressing a possessor-possessed relationship, the two entities are understood to be directly associated with each other, such that the N1 can be considered in some sense the possessor or proprietor of the N2 (examples 1–2; the order of constituents in these examples corresponds to their order in the translations).

- (1) *bɔyɔʔ yág* ‘spider web’
cadakǎʔ mɔy ‘chicken house’

- (2) *póg = mah tǐhǐy tód-óh, w’ǎt = mah*
 big=REP snake hole-DECL long=REP
 ‘The snake’s hole was big, they say, long.’ (txt)

In compounds expressing a whole-part relationship, the N2 is a part of the whole expressed by the N1 (example 3).

- (3) *mǔy túʔ* (house sink-in) ‘house post’
tój mǔy (nose hole/house) ‘nostril’

Finally, property-entity compounds encode the relationship between an inherent or defining property and an entity defined by that property, as in examples (4–6).

- (4) *hǔp cǎg* ‘fish net’
hǔp wáb ‘fish jirau’ (grid above fire for smoking fish, meat)
b’ók mác ‘pot clay’ (clay for making pots)
tǔk cǔd ‘pants’ (lit. thigh-contain[er])

- (5) *kǎd tǐh y’ǎt = mah-ǎh, yám mɔy-an*
 bench 3sg leave=REP-DECL dance house-DIR
 ‘He left (them) on a bench, it’s said, in the dance house.’ (txt)

- (6) *hɔp cæŋ d'oʔ-yiʔ-iy = mah !*
 fish net take-TEL-DYNM=REP
 '(Someone's) taken the fish net!' (cv)

Either the N1 (example 7) or N2 (examples 8–9) in a compound may be a verb stem. These verb stems are nominalized simply by their lack of otherwise obligatory tense-aspect inflection; they require no overt marker of nominalization.

- (7) *nút, pandoré-ét, wɔç hod = mah yúw-úh*
 this Ipanoré-OBL **boil** hole=REP that-DECL
 'There at Ipanoré was the Boiling Hole, it's said.' (place of creation) (txt)

- (8) *hɔp tæh yø pay-nih mún yæh núw-úh !*
 fish small **dangle** bad-NEG INTS2 FRUSTthis-DECL
 'This would make a not-bad minnow fishing-line!' (cv)

- (9) *nuh-kəbɔk = d'əh wáy-áh*
 head-**break**=PL go.out-DECL
 'The sauva ants (lit. head-breakers) were coming out.' (txt)

A nominal form in which both components were verb stems would simply be a nominalized verb compound. However, while semi-productive zero derivation of single verb roots to nouns does exist (see §4.6.1), this is not the case for compound verbs; thus nominal compounds composed entirely of verb stems are essentially nonexistent in Hup.

Nominal compound constructions can involve multiple nested or embedded components. Example (10a) juxtaposes a compound expressing a property-entity relationship (iron pot) and a deverbal form '(that which) is made to grab' to form the compound 'pot lid'. Example (10b) embeds a whole-part compound into a property-entity compound.

- (10) a) [*mɔm b'ɔk*] *hi-cũʔ*
 [iron pot] FACT-grab
 'pot lid' (lit. 'thing that is made to grab the metal pot')
- b) [*j'ak j'ɔ*] *yág*
 buriti flower hammock
 'buriti-flower hammock' (made from fibers of the buriti palm)

Hup's use of a single construction to encode possessor-possessed, whole-part, and property-entity relationships is not uncommon cross-linguistically (cf. Heine 1997: 143–145). Such a functional overlap also occurs in English, which can encode all of these relationships via the 'of' construction; for example, 'a book of mine' (possession); 'the leg of the table' (part of a whole), and 'a ball of rubber' (property/entity).

5.1.1. Hup compounds and metaphorical extensions

Klein (2000: 94) observes that the metaphorical expression of whole-part relations is common in South America; for example, Pemon (Cariban) uses the compound *yei-yenu* (tree eye) to mean 'burl'. In Hup, such metaphorical semantic extension is common in compounds.

It is usually the N2 that undergoes the semantic extension:

- | | | | |
|------|----------------|---------------------|-------------------|
| (11) | <i>nɔ cúg</i> | (mouth hummingbird) | 'moustache/beard' |
| | <i>děh tǎh</i> | (water tapir) | 'capybara' |
| | <i>pǔd núh</i> | (breast head) | 'nipple' |
| | <i>tǎh yud</i> | (offspring clothes) | 'uterus' |

Note that the lack of a possessive marker in the last compound in (11) prevents it from being taken literally as a normal (alienable) possessive construction; compare example (12).

- | | | |
|------|--------------------|----------------|
| (12) | <i>?ǎh = tǎh</i> | <i>nǎh yǔd</i> |
| | 1sg.POSS=offspring | POSS clothes |
| | 'my son's clothes' | |

While semantic extension normally involves the N2, it may apply to the N1 instead:

- | | | | |
|------|-----------------|----------------------------|----------------|
| (13) | <i>pǔh mɔyɔ</i> | (water.foam house.opening) | 'glass window' |
|------|-----------------|----------------------------|----------------|

Finally, the entire compound may have a meaning that is clearly distinct from either that of N1 or N2:

- | | | | |
|------|----------------|----------------|----------|
| (14) | <i>húp núh</i> | (person head) | 'radio' |
| | <i>húp tok</i> | (person belly) | 'caxiri' |

5.1.2. Two types of compounds

Hup compound constructions fall into two general types, best conceived as poles of a continuum: lexically specific compounds and productive compounds. These are defined by formal and semantic features, in particular productivity and stress (word-accent).

5.1.2.1. Lexically specific compounds

The lexically specific noun compounds must be learned as individual units, and in most cases the compound has an idiomatic meaning that is more than the sum of its parts. Prototypically, stress (word-accent) falls on the second noun; this pattern mirrors that typical of monomorphemic, bi-syllabic Hup words, such as *məhǝy* ‘deer’ and *bəʔbǝg* ‘cubiu fruit’. Examples of these compounds are provided in (15):

- | | | | |
|------|-------------------|------------------------|---------------------|
| (15) | <i>kayak dəh</i> | (manioc water) | ‘tucupí, manicuera’ |
| | <i>dapũh d’ák</i> | (finger stick.against) | ‘ring’ |
| | <i>hǝp kǝk</i> | (fish pull) | ‘fish hook’ |
| | <i>məm b’ók</i> | (iron pot) | ‘cooking pot’ |

5.1.2.2. Productive compounds

The second type of compound involves those that occur in productive, paradigm-like sets, in which one member of the compound can be substituted for by a member of an entire set of nouns. In most cases, it is the first slot (N1) that is more variable, while the second noun (N2) is more predictable. These compounds are almost always semantically transparent. Prototypically, their stress pattern is the opposite of that of the lexically specific compounds: stress falls on N1, rather than N2. These productive compounds are thus formally less like Hup monomorphemic words than are the compounds in (15) above.

Productive compounds usually refer to a type of something, of which numerous variants are available; for example, subtypes of certain plants (example 16), types of fish (example 17), names of creeks (18), the names of juices or fermented drinks made from various kinds of fruit (19), and even the names of different kinds of clothes (example 20).

- (16) *d'ũç* 'timbó' (fish-poison plant):
pěd d'uç 'cunuri timbó'
m'ǎř? d'uç 'dye-plant timbó'
wǎř? d'uç 'vulture timbó'
j'ũg d'uç 'forest timbó'
 etc.
- (17) *hõp* 'fish':
wĩh hõp 'hawk fish'
tát hõp 'taracuí (ant sp.) fish'
yǎk hõp 'macaw fish'
 etc.
- (18) *děh* 'water':
tát deh 'Taracuí (ant sp.) Water'
cǎř? deh 'Slug Water'
přŋ deh 'Cucura (wild grape sp.) Water'
yiyřw deh 'Ant sp. Water'
pæj j'řh deh 'Unripe Umari (fruit sp.) Water'
 etc.
- (19) *děh* 'water':
mřh deh 'ucuqui fruit juice'
canǎ deh 'pineapple juice/beer'
j'řw deh 'pupunha beer'
múh = teg deh 'sugar cane beer'
 etc.
- (20) *yũd* 'clothes':
tiyř? yud 'men's clothes'
tǎřǎy yud 'women's clothes'
j'óm yud 'bathing clothes'
bř? yud 'work clothes'
b'õy yud 'school/church clothes'

Especially when such a set already exists, it appears to be flexible in allowing the formation of new or non-typical compounds on the same template (i.e., with the same N2). For example, the compound ‘clothing of sores’ (worn as a disguise by a mythical hero) in (21) corresponds to the compounds in (20).

- (21) *yíkán = mah yúp, tinñh hšm yud ni-ʔé-ew-ăn,*
 over.there=REP that.ITG 3sg.POSS wound clothes be-PERF-FLR-OBJ

tih poʔ-d'əh-hi-yiʔ-ay-áh

3sg open-send-descend-TEL-INCH-DECL

‘Out there, they say, that which had been his **clothing of sores**,
 he stripped it off.’ (txt)

Why do the productive compounds and the lexically specific compounds have opposite stress patterns? The most plausible answer to this question is that when a compound is perceived as part of a variable, paradigmatic set, the second or constant component is in some sense perceived as given or backgrounded information, while the first or variable component is relatively foregrounded. The stress pattern reflects the speaker’s perception of this difference, in that he/she naturally pays more attention to the variable component (this point is taken up again in §5.4.2).

It is important to note that, because the compound-initial and compound-final stress patterns represent the two poles of a continuum between maximally lexically specific and maximally productive compounds, compounds that fall in between may have either of these patterns, or may take stress on both elements, representing their transitional status. For example, *kayak dēh* ‘tucupi, maniocera’ (the liquid left over from processing manioc, or the boiled drink made from this liquid) takes stress on N2 (the pattern typical of lexically specific compounds), despite its resemblance to the vegetable/fruit-drink paradigm in (19) above. From a syntactic point of view, there is no reason why manioc liquid should not be part of this paradigm and have N1 stress. However, that this particular compound should be more lexicalized is no surprise considering its frequency – the preparation and consumption of *kayak dēh* is a daily focus of Hup life, whereas the other fruit drinks are only available intermittently, on special occasions and when the fruits are in season; thus its name is more lexicalized.

Other compounds appear to be simply idiosyncratic. For example, *húp tok* ‘caxiri (manioc beer)’, literally ‘person belly’ (example 22) and *cšh deh* ‘rainy-season period’ (*cšh* ‘island produced by high water’; *dēh* ‘water, rain’) have lexically specific meanings but receive N1 stress, like productive compounds.

- (22) **húptok** ʔəg-níh-ay bíg ʔáh-áh
 caxiri drink-NEG-INCH HAB 1sg-DECL
 ‘I never drink caxiri’ (lit. ‘person belly’). (cv)

5.1.3. Lexification and phonological reduction of compound forms

As noted in §5.1.2.1 above, lexically specific compounds resemble monomorphemic Hup words in their stress pattern. In fact, they appear to be under some pressure to *become* monomorphemic Hup words, and in many cases have undergone phonological processes that bring them closer to the prototypical monomorphemic Hup word, including vowel harmony (usually N2 > N1), medial consonant cluster simplification, and nasal spreading (see §2.5). In (23), for example, the N2 in the compound has become relatively opaque. The form in (23a) has undergone vowel harmonization among some speakers (particularly from the Tat Deh/Japu dialect areas), while other speakers reduce the consonant cluster in (23b) to be homorganic.

- (23) a) *b’ɔk káb* (*b’ɔk* ‘clay, pot’; *káb* ?) ‘griddle’
 (sometimes pronounced [ᵐb’ak-kâbᵐ])
- b) *tegᵈ’úh* (*těg* ‘tree/wood’; *d’úh* ?) ‘tree’
 (sometimes pronounced [tegᵈg’úh])

In other cases, lexemes that are now essentially monomorphemic forms were probably once compounds, but they have become etymologically obscure and no longer vary across speakers in their pronunciation. One example is *pũʔũk* ‘coca’. In the Vaupés region, coca is consumed regularly as a powder, produced from toasted coca leaves, and the name may be formed from the verb root *ʔuk-* ‘handle a loose substance’ (e.g., manioc flour, seeds, etc.), in combination with an unidentified N1. If this is correct, the N1 probably underwent vowel harmonization to the vowel of the N2 (the most common direction), but may have contributed its nasal quality to the N2.

5.1.4. Nominal compounds involving adjectives: attributive uses of aspect

Certain complex nominal expressions in Hup are formed from the combination of a noun and an adjective. This role of adjectives is distinct from their typical use as productive modifiers in noun phrases (see §6.6), in that they do not sim-

ply modify a nominal head within the noun phrase, but themselves are an intrinsic component of a complex nominal head, which in most cases can itself be modified. The adjectives in this distinct role are morphologically marked, setting them apart from the more conventional modifiers. It is a peculiar feature of Hup grammar that there is a formal overlap between the morphological means for marking these compound-internal attributives, and the marking of aspect (primarily on verbs) elsewhere in the language.

Hup has two types of these compounds or complex nominals, which both form very small, closed sets; the productivity of these strategies appears to be extremely limited. In one, the adjective follows the noun (the typical order for adjective modifiers and nouns in Hup), and the adjective is marked as a compound-internal attributive by reduplication. In the other, the adjective precedes the noun, and is marked by the suffix *-V̄y*, which appears elsewhere as a Boundary Suffix on verbs and marks Dynamic aspect.

A near-comprehensive list (for my corpus) of the nominal compounds involving reduplication is given below (24–25). Elsewhere in Hup, reduplication appears semi-productively in Hup verbs (see §12.9.3) and in Hup nouns (see §4.5), and relates to iterative aspect; its use in compounds, however, appears to be unrelated to this aspectual function. In these noun-adjective compounds, the reduplication signals that the adjective is involved in a nominal unit with its own specific semantics, rather than simply modifying a noun; for example, the reduplicated form *cob popōg* ‘thumb’ can be contrasted with the modified noun *cob pōg* ‘big finger’. Primary stress in reduplicated compounds is on the N2, as expected for lexically specific compound forms.

- | | | | |
|------|----------------------|-----------------------|----------------------|
| (24) | <i>cob tãtãh</i> | (finger RED-small) | ‘pinky finger’ |
| | <i>cob popōg</i> | (finger RED-big) | ‘thumb’ |
| | <i>nuh totōy</i> | (head RED-support) | ‘neck’ |
| | <i>kākāy j’ij’ig</i> | (fish sp. RED-sharp) | ‘mandi (fish) sp.’ |
| | <i>tōj yayăg</i> | (fish.sp. RED-spotty) | ‘jacundá (fish) sp.’ |

To the extent that the second (reduplicated) component of these forms is identifiable, it is always an adjective or adjectival verb root (i.e., a verb root that expresses a property or characteristic). However, there are also a number of forms in which the reduplicated component cannot be identified (example 25); most are names of animals (note that animal names represent one of the most common domains for ostensibly aspect-related reduplication in Hup nouns; see §4.5).

- (25) *nuh yəyóǵ* (head RED-?) ‘upper neck in back’
yɔʔ j’ǎj’ǎp (wasp RED-?) ‘wasp sp.’
yãʔam wãwǎt (jaguar RED-?) ‘bush dog’
j’ib’ih j’új’úy’ (bat RED-?) ‘Sheath-Tailed Bat’
j’ib’ih kəkǎc (bat RED-?) ‘Fruit bat (?)’
cǔǵ pǔpǔ = mǎh (hummingbird RED-?=DIM) ‘hummingbird sp.’

The second attributive strategy for complex nominals involves the opposite order of modifier + noun, in which the modifier is marked by the suffix *-V̇y* (elsewhere a Boundary Suffix on verbs and predicate adjectives indicating Dynamicity; that is, temporal continuity, usually vis-à-vis the speech moment; see §12.2). This strategy differs from that involving reduplication in several respects. Perhaps most importantly, this construction seems to bear a greater resemblance to a relative clause than to a compound, in that it involves a modifier + subordinating morphology + head noun (compare the prototypical relative clause: verb + Dependent marker *-Vp* + head noun; see §18.2.3). Unlike relative clauses, the first element of the construction is not a verb; however, it is also not invariably an adjective, but in a few cases is a nominal form, or even an interrogative pronoun, as in (28) below. Finally, some of these complex nominals are marginally productive in the sense that the same adjective + *V̇y* can appear with different head nouns, as is the case of *póh-óy* ‘high’ in example (26) below. In keeping with this semi-productivity, stress in these constructions falls on the first component rather than on the second. However, these forms are semi-lexicalized, and are not productive in the sense that any adjective can combine freely in this way with any noun.

A near-comprehensive (for my corpus) list of complex nominals involving *-V̇y* is given in (26–28).

- (26) *póh-óy deh* (high.place-DYNM liquid) ‘water from roof’
j’ób-óy wǎdhɔ (night-DYNM sun/moon) ‘moon’
wág-áy wǎdhɔ (day-DYNM sun/moon) ‘sun’
nutǎn-ǎy wag (now-DYNM day) ‘nowadays’
núp j’ób-óy = d’əh (this night-DYNM=PL) ‘those of tonight’
núp póh-óy = d’əh (this high-DYNM=PL) ‘those high-up ones’
j’am-yiʔ-áy = ʔih (past-TEL-DYNM=MSC) ‘someone from long ago’

- (27) ...*nó-ǒy* = *mah yúw-úh*, *tíh* = *yāwám-ǎn*,
say-DYNM=REP that-DECL 3sg=younger.brother-OBJ

hǔy-ǔy = *?íh-ǎn-ay*

following-DYNM=MSC-OBJ-INCH

‘...Said that one, to his younger brother, to **the one who came after.**’

(txt)

- (28) *hǐkán-ay* = *?ǎy* *?ám ?*
where-DYNM=FEM 2sg
‘A **woman-from-where** are you?’ (i.e., ‘where are you from?’) (cv)

It is not entirely clear why the complex forms in (26) that involve nominals in the N1 are not expressed like normal Hup compounds, in which N1 and N2 are simply juxtaposed. However, this looser morphological integration of the -*Vý* compounds appears to be reflected in their semantics: all involve temporal or spatial concepts, and all are in some way transitional, temporary, or otherwise dynamic – in keeping with the aspectual identity of -*Vý* as a marker of dynamicity. Thus water may come from high up (off a roof), but once it is collected it is not really different from any other water; the sun and moon lose their tangible identity every twelve hours; and the time understood as ‘nowadays’ is constantly in flux. In contrast, compounds formed by the juxtaposition of N1 + N2 typically do not change or lose their identity with the time of day, place of storage, or temporal or spatial reference point; for instance, a jaguar tail (*yā?am d’úb* [jaguar tail]) can never be anything but a jaguar tail, and a food dish (*wǎd b’ók* [food dish]) will have this identity as long as it retains its original form. The difference in morphological complexity may reflect a more general tendency in Hup (and cross-linguistically, as expressed by the principle of iconicity in language [Haiman 1985]), in which a looser conceptual relationship between entities is morphologically more marked than a tighter conceptual relationship. This also occurs in the expression of nominal possession between alienable (possession-marked) and inalienable (unmarked) relationships (§5.2 and §5.4 below), and it also occurs with verb-based relative clause vs. compound constructions, in which the looser relationship requires a full relative clause, while a tighter relationship reduces the relative clause to a compound form; for example, *tíh g’ét-ep mǎy* (3sg stand-DEP house) ‘the house where she stays’, vs. *tíníh g’ét = mǎy* (3sg.POSS stand=house) ‘her staying-house; the house she stays in all day, every day’ (see §18.2.3.1).

5.2. Alienable possession

Like noun compounding, the expression of possession in Hup involves the conjunction of two nouns to form a noun phrase. Most Hup nouns are non-inherently (i.e., non-obligatorily) possessed; that is, they can appear by themselves as complete noun phrases. For nouns of this type, their possession by another entity requires an additional morphological indicator of the possessive relationship, defining the relationship as alienable (but note that the converse is not quite true: not all inherently possessed nouns must be inalienably possessed, although all can be; see §5.4). In contrast, an inalienable relationship is indicated by the simple juxtaposition of possessor and possessed, as discussed in §5.4 below (a cross-linguistically typical distinction).

This possessive marker is the postpositional particle *nǎh* (which receives stress and rising tone). This particle is associated with the possessor (phonologically so in the case of pronouns), and usually precedes the possessum, as in examples (29–30). (Note that this form is segmentally identical to the clausal Negative suffix *-nǎh* and the verb root ‘be like’ *nǎh-*.)

- (29) *tǎ = d’əh nǎh, yi-d’əh nǎh dǎh*
 ant.sp=PL POSS that-PL POSS water
 ‘The water (saliva) of those ones, those *tǎ* ants.’ (txt)

- (30) *tinǎh mǎy g’əd-ót, hib’ah-tǎh = ?ǎh nǎh mǎy g’əd-ót...*
 3sg.POSS house inside-OBL created-son=MSC POSS house inside-OBL
 ‘Inside his house, the created one’s house...’ (txt)

The possessive pronouns are formed from the fusion of the subject pronoun and the possessive suffix. These forms are somewhat phonologically reduced (via simplification of consonant clusters) in the Tat Deh and Barreira dialects, but are almost fully transparent in the dialect spoken in Umari Norte, with the exception of the first person singular form. The paradigm for the possessive pronouns is given below in Table 24 (restated from §4.1.2), and examples of their use in text are provided in (31–33).

- (31) *nǎ* *kayak = tǎg, nǎ = yi? ?ǎh wǎd-ǎh !*
 1sg.POSS manioc=stem 1sg.POSS=TEL 1sg eat-DECL
 ‘My manioc plants, I eat only mine!’ (txt)

- (32) *n'ikán, téw, ʔamñh teg-cáʔ páh,*
 over.there Thelma 2sg.POSS wood-box PRX.CNTR

ʔáh d'oʔ-ʔáy-áh !

1sg take-VENT-DECL

'Over there, Thelma, your matches (lit. wood-box), I went and took them!' (cv)

- (33) ...*tinñh hõp kæk cúk, tinñh mũh, tinñh kapíʔ b'õk;*
 3sg.POSS fish pull pole 3sg.POSS arrow 3sg.POSS caapi pot

těg təʔ-yóʔ = mah tih d'oʔ-yæʔ-yæñh-æñh

wood light-SEQ=REP 3sg take-singe-FRUST-DECL

'His fishing pole, his arrow, his caapi pot; having lit a fire, he burned (them) (in vain).' (txt)

Table 24. Hup possessive pronominal paradigm

	Subject PN	Possessive PN	
		Tat Deh/Barreira dialects	Umari Norte dialect
1sg	<i>ʔáh</i>	<i>nñ</i>	<i>nñh</i>
2sg	<i>ʔám</i>	<i>ʔamñh</i>	<i>ʔam-nñh</i>
3sg (M or F)	<i>tih</i>	<i>tinñh</i>	<i>tih-nñh</i>
1pl	<i>ʔin</i>	<i>ʔinñh</i>	<i>ʔin-nñh</i>
2pl	<i>nñŋ</i>	<i>nñŋñh</i>	<i>nñŋ-nñh</i>
3pl	<i>híd</i>	<i>hidnñh</i>	<i>hid-nñh</i>
		<i>hidñh</i> [hirih]	
		(Tat Deh only)	

The marked possessor usually precedes the possessum, as in (34a), but it can also follow it, as in (34b) and examples (35–36). Although the possessive particle is phonologically more or less free, it is obligatorily associated morphosyntactically with the possessor, as demonstrated by the ungrammaticality of (34c–34d).

- (34) a) *pedú nñh cug'æť*
 Pedro POSS book
 'Pedro's book'

- b) *cug'æť pedú nĩh*
 book Pedro POSS
 'Pedro's book' (el)
- c) **cug'æť nĩh pedú*
 book POSS Pedro
- d) **pedú j'ug'æť nĩh*
 Pedro book POSS
- (35) *ʔãh ni-ʔeʔ-yæħ-æħ, yúp = b'ay tinĩh,*
 1sg keep-PERF-FRUST-DECL that=AGAIN 3sg.POSS
- j'ek-hũʔ-yiʔ-iy keyóʔ*
 steal-finish-TEL-DYNMCAUSE
 'I put it away (for safekeeping, in vain), that (stuff) of hers, since they were stealing it all.' (txt)
- (36) *ʔectúdu-da-bówca tinĩh-ĩw-ĩh*
 study.grant(Pt) 3sg.POSS-FLR-DECL
 'The study-grant (*bolsa de estudo*) of hers.'⁷² (cv)

Possessive forms in Hup can occur independently of a possessum, although this is relatively uncommon. They may be used as nominal heads in their own right, and can take nominal morphology such as the Reflexive Emphasis marker (example 37), the Telic/emphasis marker =*yiʔ* (example 38), and the Dependent and Declarative markers (example 39).

- (37) *ʔamĩh = hup núp = b'ay*
 2sg.POSS=RFLX.INTS this=AGAIN
 'This one is your own.' (ru)
- (38) *nĩ kayak = tĩg, nĩ = yiʔ ʔãh wæd-æh !*
 1sg.POSS manioc=plant 1sg.POSS=TEL 1sg eat-DECL
 'My manioc plants, I eat only my own!' (txt)

⁷² *Bolsa de estudo* ('study grant') is a nonce borrowing; the speaker's accidental inversion of the words can be attributed to his limited knowledge of Portuguese.

- (39) *moycé nǐh-ĩp pǎ=mah kǎh, b'õy=d'õh nǐh-ĩw-ĩh*
 moisés POSS-DEPNeg:EX=REP ADVR study=PL POSS-FLR-DECL
 'But that which belongs to Moises (i.e., his money) isn't there;
 the teachers' (money).' (cv)

A possessive pronoun in object position conforms to the general restrictions on object marking for Hup nouns (see §4.3.1); accordingly, it takes the Object marker *-ǎn* (and its plural form *-n'ǎn*), as in (40).

- (40) *nǐ = n'ǎn páy muhún ?am bí?-ih*
 1sg.POSS=PL.OBJ bad INTS2 2sg make-DECL
 'You've done bad things to my (creations).' (txt)

Historical note

It is likely that the Possessive marker *nǐh* in Hup is of relatively recent origin. Yuhup has what appears to be a cognate possessive suffix *-nǎh*, which likewise associates with the possessor (Ospina 2002: 243), but Dâw has instead an optional genitive marker *-ẽj* (Martins 1994: 34), and Nadëb is reported to have no specific morphological marker of possession at all (Weir 1984: 86).

Two possible sources for the Hup Possessive marker are proposed here. The first is the verb *nĩ-* 'keep, put away' (see §5.3 below). However, this may be an unlikely source for the Possessive, despite its semantics; this verb itself appears to be a borrowing from Tukano (*nĩrô* 'keep, put away'), and it would have had to undergo a /ø/ > /h/ sound change to derive *-nǐh*. While a /h/ > /ø/ sound change is attested in Hup (e.g., the change from the verb root *hõh-* to the Non-visual evidential *hõ*), no examples of the reverse have been encountered in the language, and furthermore are typologically unusual.

The second possible source candidate is the simulative verb *nǐh-* 'be like' (§10.2.2.1), which could perhaps have become reanalyzed as associated with the preceding subject, rather than with the following verbal material (other compounded roots or bound formatives). Use of the verb 'be like' in examples where a possessive interpretation might be accessible is illustrated in (41–42).

- (41) *yít tih nǐh-?ẽ-y=yi?, tegd'uh = ?ág wǎd-ǎh*
 thus 3sg be.like-PERF-DYNM=TEL tree=fruit eat-DECL
 'That's what he would do (i.e., his habit); eat the fruits of trees' (txt)

- (42) *nɔh-kədhi-yóʔ, hít tih nɪh-ít...*
 fall-pass.descend-SEQ how 3sg be.like-OBL

tih nɪh-cudʔũhníy, nóyhaʔ...

3sg be.like-INFR.maybe say.ALT.INT

‘After falling, what did he do then (i.e., what was his doing)...he did like... I guess...’ (txt)

5.3. Other possessive constructions: clausal strategies

In expressing possession, Hup has several alternatives to the noun-phrase-building strategies that are the focus of this chapter. These all belong to the general phenomenon of ‘external possession’, defined loosely by Payne and Barshi (1999: 8) as the expression of a possessor in a distinct constituent from a possessum.

5.3.1. Clausal possession (possessor ‘raising’)

Primarily with humans (and some other animates), Hup exhibits the strategy commonly known as ‘possessor raising’ or ‘possessor ascension’, by which the possessor is treated as a distinct constituent from the possessed entity (as a direct object). However, it has been pointed out in the literature on possession (Blake 1990, Chappell and McGregor 1995, Mithun 2001, etc.) that calling this phenomenon ‘raising’ or ‘ascension’ is something of a misnomer, since it is “based on an assumption that the possessor nominal has been removed from its basic position as a modifier within the noun phrase” (Mithun 2001: 287), but there is no reason to assume such movement. In fact, the clausal strategies generally have the specific function of signaling the intimate or significant affect- edness of a participant (Mithun 2001). Examples (43–46) illustrate this phenomenon in Hup.

- (43) *tɪh-ǎn tih cuj-d’ak-way-pó-ay-áh...*
 3sg-OBJ 3sg have.diarrhea-stick.against-go.out-EMPH1-INCH-DECL

tɪh-ǎn tǎh hi-cuj-d’ák-aw-ay

3sg-OBJ tapir FACT-have.diarrhea-stick.against-FLR-INCH

‘He (tapir) caused her (arm) to be expelled by covering her with diarrhea... the tapir caused her to be covered with diarrhea.’ (txt)

(44) *yít = mah tǐh-ǎn nuh kit-j'ap-b'uy-d'əh-ham-yí?ay-áh*
 thus=REP 3sg-OBJ head chop-divide.in.two-send-go-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'Then, they say, (they) cut her (i.e., off her) head and threw it away.' (txt)

(45) *yít = mah tǐh-ǎn tih g'əç-d'o?póg-b'ay-áh,*
 thus=REP 3sg-OBJ 3sg bite-take-EMPH1-AGAIN-DECL

hăt = b'ay-áh, tǐnǐh mumǔy = cúm
 alligator=AGAIN-DECL 3sg.POSS arm=beginning
 'Then, they say, it bit him, the alligator, (on) his upper arm.' (txt)

(46) *?ám-ǎn ?āh yomoy yók tán-áh !*
 2sg-OBJ 1sg anus stab FUT.CNTR-DYNM
 'I'll stab you in the anus!' (txt)

This external possession strategy appears to be limited strictly to body parts, through which the animate possessor is directly affected and is thus more relevant or salient than the actual possessed body part itself. This possession strategy can be contrasted with the more typical possession strategy involving a noun phrase as a single constituent, as in (47), where the action of setting fire to the house can only indirectly affect the house's possessor, Vulture.

(47) *tǐnǐh mǔy tih tuj-d'ak-yǎh-ay-áh*
 3sg.POSS house 3sg set.alight-stick.against-FRUST-INCH-DECL
 'He (Bone-Son) set his (Vulture's) house on fire (in vain).' (txt)

When the object nominal is present in the clause (examples 44 and 46), it often – though not obligatorily – directly precedes the verb, whereas in other types of transitive clause the pronominal subject typically comes between the object and the verb. The object nominal is also typically unstressed. These facts are evidence that the external possession strategy in Hup involves a limited form of noun incorporation, reminiscent of the process of incorporation found in Nadëb (Weir 1990); however, the OSV word order in Nadëb allows for a clearer interpretation of the phenomenon as incorporation than is available in Hup (see §9.6 for further discussion).

A further important point here regarding the external possession or 'raising' strategy in Hup is that while it apparently involves only body parts, human body parts do not in fact belong to the set of inalienably possessed nouns (see §5.4.5 below). Discussions of clausal possession ('possessor raising') strategies generally have tended to consider inalienability as the key distinction underlying the

choice between the nominal and the clausal possessive constructions. However, Mithun (2001: 291) argues on the basis of clausal constructions in a set of North American Indian languages that this distinction is not in fact one of inalienability, but of affectedness: “the clausal construction is used when the individual translated as a possessor is considered the most significantly affected participant in an event or state”. The Hup case supports Mithun’s argument – clausal possession in Hup is distinct from the phenomenon of inalienability.

5.3.2. Other possessive strategies

Hup has several ways of expressing possession by means of a predication involving a verb of possession. One of the most common of these is the verb *tɔn-*, literally ‘hold in hand’, but used more generally as ‘have possession of’ (examples 48–51).

- (48) *hũt = teg tɔn-ɔ̃y ʔãh-ãh*
 tobacco=STICK hold-DYNM 1sg-DECL
 ‘I have/am holding a (blessed) cigar.’ (cv)

- (49) *dóc teg-cáʔ tɔn-pó-y = cud !*
 Jocemar wood-box hold-EMPH1-DYNM=INFR
 ‘Jocemar has the matches (lit. ‘wood-box’), apparently!’ (cv)

- (50) *ʔamáandu ʔãn tɔn-ɔ̃y*
 Armando 1sg.OBJ hold-DYNM
 ‘Armando has me (as his wife).’ (cv)

- (51) *hĩ-n’ĩh ʔin, hup = ʔãy = d’əh, yũm tɔn-nĩh ʔin ní-ĩʔ ?*
 Q-NMZ 1pl Hup=FEM=PL plant hold-NEG 1pl be-INT
 ‘Why do we Hup women have nothing to plant?’ (cv)

The verb *ni-* ‘keep, put away’ (probably borrowed from Tukano *nirô* ‘keep, put away’) is also used to express possession, especially in the sense of keeping or looking after something temporarily, as in (52–53). The verb *ni-* is also used in reference to marriage to a second spouse, especially in cases where the first has died; compare use of *tɔn-* ‘hold, have’ for the first spouse (50 above). In (52), the speaker was referring to his (partially unsuccessful) attempt to safeguard someone else’s things against pilferers.

- (52) *ʔāh ni-ʔeʔ-yǎh-ǎh*
 1sg keep-PERF-FRUST.DECL
 ‘I kept/put it away (for her) in vain.’ (txt)
- (53) *ʔāh b’iyiʔ cáp ni-nih tih tɔn-nǎn-ǎw-ǎn, ʔāh-ǎh !*
 1sg only INTS1 keep-NEG 3sg hold-bring-FLR-OBJ 1sg-DECL
 ‘I don’t keep what she brings all to myself!’ (sp)

The verb *ni-* ‘be’ (see §8.4) is also commonly used in expressions of possession; these can be translated as ‘my N exists’, or ‘N exists to me’, as in (54–55).

- (54) *ʔāh = báb’ = d’əh ní-íy*
 1sg=sibling=PL be-DYNM
 ‘I have siblings/my siblings are alive.’ (txt)
- (55) *hǐp = hin ní-áh ʔin-ǎn hǒʔ*
 grater=also be-FOC 1pl-OBJ TAG2
 ‘We have manioc graters too, you know?’ (lit. ‘graters also are there for us, huh’) (sp)

Predicative possession strategies (marked with Perfective aspect and the Frustrative ‘in vain’) are often used in reference to an entity that was once possessed but is no longer, as in (56–57); alternatively the possessum can act as a nominal predicate and take the Perfective and Frustrative markers directly, as in (58).

- (56) *j’ám = yiʔ yǎʔamböʔ ʔāh tɔn-ʔeʔ-yǎh-ǎh*
 DST.CNTR=TEL dog 1sg have-PERF-FRUST-DECL
 ‘I used to have a dog.’ (el)
- (57) *núp nř mɔmb’ǎk ni-ʔeʔ-yǎh-ǎh*
 this 1sg.POSS pot be-PERF-FRUST-DECL
 ‘This used to be my pot.’ (ru)
- (58) *núp = ʔih ʔāh = tǎhʔip-ʔeʔ-yǎh-ǎh*
 this=MSC 1sg=child.father-PERF-FRUST-DECL
 ‘This man is my ex-husband.’ (el)

5.4. Syntactically bound nouns

The majority of nouns in Hup – including most of those that occur in the compounds in §5.1 and the alienably possessed nouns discussed in §5.2 – are able to occur as free nominal constituents in their own right, outside of a compound construction (with the exception of certain nouns that appear to be archaic forms, now preserved only in certain semi-lexicalized compounds). However, Hup also has a heterogeneous class of nouns which *must* occur in an N2 slot, preceded by another nominal (or functionally equivalent) modifier (which can in most cases be a pronoun, noun, demonstrative, numeral, or relative clause). The members of this set are the ‘bound nouns’, which are lexically specified as such. Bound nouns in Hup fall into several semantic subsets (and, with a few exceptions, comprise all the members of these sets): kin terms, human nouns, plant parts, animal body parts, and a few other nouns.

While bound nouns almost always occur within noun compounds, this is not exceptionless. Certain nouns, particularly kin terms, are bound in the sense that they must appear together with a possessor, but the relationship optionally involves the Possessive marker *nǎh* (resulting in a noun phrase [N1 *nǎh* N2]). In other words, these nouns are possessed inherently but not always inalienably (see §5.4.1 below).

The phenomenon of the bound noun in Hup is closely related to that of possession. The inability of bound nouns to appear by themselves can in many cases be considered a form of inherent (obligatory) possession. The juxtaposition of nouns within the bound construction is also essentially equivalent to the expression of inalienable possession. In their semantics, most of the bound-noun sub-types – kin terms, plant parts, and body parts – are likewise cross-linguistically typical candidates for inalienable possession, which has as its semantic core possession that is “inborn, inherent, not conferred by purchase”, as opposed to alienable possession, which is “roughly, ownership, socially and economically conferred” (Nichols 1988: 568).

However, the syntactic construction of the obligatorily bound noun in Hup cannot be fully explained in terms of a semantic basis of inalienable possession, or even possession in general. The bound construction in Hup does not necessarily signal possession per se, as in the case of the bound human nouns (discussed in §5.4.2 below). In addition, Hup *excludes* human body parts from the set of obligatorily bound nouns, even though human body parts are – especially from a typological perspective – semantically inalienable *par excellence*.

The literature on inalienable possession points out that the difficulty in matching the formal identity of inalienable possession – as a “purely structural type” – with a consistent semantic core applies cross-linguistically (cf. Nichols 1988, Chappell and McGregor 1995). As Nichols (1988: 561) observes, the terms ‘alienable’ and ‘inalienable’ are fairly standard in the literature, but “their

reference is highly variable". They are used to refer to a "broad range of structural types...and to a considerable range of semantic properties, some of them irreducible to any common denominator". For example, the set of inalienably possessed or bound nouns in Boumaa Fijian (Dixon 1988) includes referential kin terms, primary body part terms, and nouns having to do with abstract qualities of things; in Tinrin (Oceanic; Osumi 1995) it includes kin terms, external body parts, and parts of plants; and in Nanai (Tungusic, Nichols 1988: 573) body parts, relational terms, and domestic animals (but not kin terms) are treated as inalienable.

To reconcile this cross-linguistic variability, Nichols (1988: 572) suggests the following hierarchy of inalienable possession:

Kin terms and/or body parts < Part-whole and/or spatial relations < Culturally basic possessed items

Crucially, body parts and kin terms occur at the top of the hierarchy (together with plant parts, which are considered as "analogs to body parts for inanimate beings" [Nichols 1988: 573]), and Nichols observes that "if a language includes nouns other than kin terms and body parts among its 'inalienables', usually it includes both kin terms and body parts as well" (1988: 572), although exceptions exist. A similar hierarchical characterization is given in Haiman (1985). However, Chappell and McGregor (1995: 8) point out that this hierarchy is far from universal; for example, spatial orientation terms in Ewe and Mandarin appear alone at the top of the hierarchy as the most inalienable category. Accordingly, they suggest that the characterization of inalienability within a given language is crucially dependent on the socio-cultural and pragmatic knowledge of its speakers, and cannot be adequately captured by a universal hierarchy.

Hup is clearly another case of a language which violates this hierarchy of inalienable possession, particularly in its treatment of human body parts as being alienably possessed. Hup's inclusion of generic human nouns in the set of obligatorily bound nouns is likewise typologically unusual and is not predicted by the hierarchy. In the following sections of this chapter, I present each of the subsets of the Hup bound nouns in turn, and I argue – in agreement with the statement by Chappell and McGregor (1995) – that the set of inalienably possessed or bound nouns in Hup must be understood in terms of language-specific and culturally specific factors.

5.4.1. Referential kin terms

Referential kin terms in Hup (as opposed to vocative kin terms)⁷³ are obligatorily possessed, and usually bound (inalienably possessed). They are typically preceded by a subject pronoun (i.e., a pronoun that is not morphologically marked as a possessor), a proper name, or another kin term. This combination essentially produces a compound encoding a possessor-possessed relationship, like the type described in §5.1 above. The kin terms can form paradigmatic sets (where one member is held constant and the other varied) that are based either on N1 (as in 59 below) or on N2 (as in 60). The possessor (N1) and the kin term (N2) both receive essentially equal stress; this stress pattern may reflect the fact that – unlike most ‘productive’ compounds in Hup – the bound kin term is conceived as belonging more or less equally to both kinds of paradigm (i.e., Hup speakers arguably conceptualize a given kin noun in terms of a set varying either N1 or N2 with similar frequencies). Example (59) also gives a comprehensive list of Hup kin terms; note that many of these can be used for classificatory kinsmen (i.e., members of the speaker’s clan), as well as for immediate relatives.

(59) <i>ʔǎ́h = ʔíp</i>	‘my father’
<i>ʔǎ́h = ʔín</i>	‘my mother’
<i>ʔǎ́h = tǎ́h</i>	‘my (classificatory) son; offspring’
<i>ʔǎ́h = tóg</i>	‘my (classificatory) daughter’
<i>ʔǎ́h = ʔǔw</i>	‘my (classificatory) grandfather’
<i>ʔǎ́h = ʔóh</i>	‘my (classificatory) grandmother’
<i>ʔǎ́h = dú</i>	‘my (classificatory) grandchild’
<i>ʔǎ́h = báb’</i>	‘my (classificatory) brother, sibling’
<i>ʔǎ́h = ʔǔ́h</i>	‘my brother’ (female speaker)
<i>ʔǎ́h = ʔǔ́h-ʔǎ́y</i>	‘my sister’ (male speaker)
<i>ʔǎ́h = cǎ́t</i>	‘my (classificatory) older brother’

⁷³ Vocative kin terms are unpossessed. They are otherwise the same as the referential kin terms (to the extent that these have vocative counterparts), with the following exceptions:

<i>yǎ́</i>	‘mama’
<i>pǔ́y’</i>	‘little brother’
<i>mǎ́h</i>	‘little sister’

<i>ʔáħ = cót-ʔáy</i>	‘my (classificatory) older sister’
<i>ʔáħ = yāwám</i>	‘my (classificatory) younger brother’
<i>ʔáħ = yāwám-ʔáy</i>	‘my (classificatory) younger sister’
<i>ʔáħ = bab’-ʔáy</i>	‘my (classificatory) younger sister’
<i>ʔáħ = g’ót</i>	‘my (classificatory) mother’s brother; father-in-law’
<i>ʔáħ = páç</i>	‘my (classificatory) father’s brother’
<i>ʔáħ = pæyʔæý</i>	‘my (classificatory) father’s sister; mother-in-law’
<i>ʔáħ = ʔinháč</i>	‘my (classificatory) mother’s sister’
<i>ʔáħ = yǝh</i>	‘my cross-cousin; relative by marriage’
<i>ʔáħ = tæhʔíp</i>	‘my husband’
<i>ʔáħ = tæhʔín</i>	‘my wife’
<i>ʔáħ = togtúg</i>	‘my son-in-law’
<i>ʔáħ = tæhʔæm</i>	‘my daughter-in-law’
<i>ʔáħ = ʔintúg</i>	‘my stepfather’
<i>ʔáħ = ʔipʔæm</i>	‘my stepmother’
<i>ʔáħ = ʔæmtæh</i>	‘my stepson’
<i>ʔáħ = ʔæmtóg</i>	‘my stepdaughter’

- (60) *tíh = ʔóh* ‘his/her grandmother’
ʔín = ʔóh ‘our grandmother’
ʔám = ʔóh ‘your grandmother’
ʔáħ = ʔóh ‘my grandmother’

Further examples of bound kin terms are given in (61–64):

- (61) *núp tíh = yāwám,* *pæý = wəd-óh*
 this 3sg=younger.brother thunder=RESP-DECL
 ‘This was his younger brother, Full-of-Thunder.’ (txt)
- (62) *cíb = tæhʔíp* *nĩh-ĩʔ ?*
 Cíb=offspring.father POSS-INT
 ‘Cib’s husband’s?’ (husband=‘offspring’s father’) (cv)

- (63) *n'ip cidídu = tóg ham-ʔay-ní-h*
 that Cirino=daughter go-VENT-INFR2-DECL
 'And that daughter of Cirino's went and returned.' (sp)

- (64) *híd = ʔín = wa, tĩhíy = d'əh = ʔín = wa*
 3pl=mother=old.woman snake=PL=mother=old.woman
 'Their respected mother, the snakes' mother.' (txt)

Like the compounds in (§5.1.3) above, bound kin term nouns can combine to produce lexicalized or semi-lexicalized compound expressions – themselves inalienably possessed, forming nested compounds – such as those in (65–67).

- (65) = *təh-ʔíp* (offspring-father) 'husband' ([təʔíp] or [təíp] in fast speech)
 = *təh-ʔín* (offspring-mother) 'wife' ([təʔín] or [təín] in fast speech)
 (regardless of whether children have been born)
- (66) = *tog-túg* (daughter-[form cognate with 'husband' in Dâw]) 'son-in-law'
 = *təh-ʔám* (son/offspring-[form cognate with 'wife' in Dâw and Yuhup])
 'daughter-in-law'
- (67) *yít ʔám = ʔín = təh wid-ye-hǔ-h*
 thus 2sg=mother=son arrive-enter-NONVIS-DECL
 'So your kinsman (lit. mother's son) has arrived, I think.' (txt)

As noted above, participation in the bound construction and in expressions of alienable possession (i.e., those involving morphological marking of possession on the possessor) are not mutually exclusive for kin term nouns in Hup, which suggests that the Hup bound noun in general cannot be taken simply as a prototypical inalienably possessed form. In the case of the referential kin terms in particular, the 'bound' noun must be preceded by/possessed by some other noun, but this is sometimes expressed as an alienable possessor, marked with the Possessive *nĩh*, as in examples (68–71). It is not fully clear why Hup speakers choose one form of possession over the other, and consultants accept both forms interchangeably (as in 68–71 below, which were judged grammatical when phrased as inalienably possessed as well as alienably possessed). However, certain kin terms are more likely to be expressed alienably than others, particularly those relating to children. The choice probably has to do with the relative salience (to the speaker) of the possessor as opposed to the possessum, as discussed in §5.5 below.

- (68) *tíh-ǎn tĩnĩh tǒg d'əh-nǎn-ǎp = mah yúw-úh*
 3sg-OBJ 3sg.POSS daughter send-come-DEP=REP that-DECL
 'His (brother's) daughter sent it to him, it's said.' (cv)
- (69) *nĩ tǎ'ǎh = d'əh ʔəg-naʔ-yíʔ-íy,*
 1sg.POSS offspring=PL drink-lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM
hup-hipǎh-nĩh !
 RFLX-know-NEG
 'My kids got drunk, (they were) out of their senses!' (cv)
- (70) *hidnĩh ʔĩntúg = tǎ'ǎh-ǎn, tiʔcik-nĩh*
 3pl.POSS stepfather=son-OBJ dislike-NEG
nĩŋ-ĩp j'ám = b'ay
 2pl-DEP DST.CNTR=AGAIN
 'You all didn't dislike their step-brother (mother's husband's son) either!' (cv)
- (71) *pedú nĩh ʔíp, nĩ báb' yúw-úh, ʔín ʔayǔp = d'əh !*
 Pedro POSS father 1sg.POSS sibling that-DECL 1pl one=PL
 'Pedro's father, that's my (classificatory) brother, we are of one set!' (txt)

Whatever the alienable/inalienable distinction as morphologically defined, the kin terms in these examples nevertheless remain bound. As illustrated in (72), the kin term must be *preceded* by the (marked or unmarked) possessor – unlike the non-bound nouns in (34–36) above, where the possessor + *nĩh* can (though rarely does) follow the possessum.

- (72) a) *tǎʔǎy nĩh ʔíp w'ǎt*
 woman POSS father tall
 'The woman's father is tall.' (el) [morphologically alienable]
- b) *tǎʔǎy = ʔíp w'ǎt*
 woman=father tall
 'The woman's father is tall.' (el) [inalienable]
- c) **ʔíp tǎʔǎy nĩh w'ǎt*
 father woman POSS tall

- d) *ʔíp tãʔǎy w'ǎt
 father woman tall

5.4.2. Human nouns

Almost all generic human nouns (i.e., excluding proper names) are, like kin terms, obligatorily bound to a preceding form; the only basic human nouns encountered that are exempt from this are *hõwǎ* 'infant' (probably a Tukano borrowing) and (somewhat more variably) *húp* 'human, person'. The most common N1 with human nouns is the default third person singular pronoun *tih* =, which in this case – as opposed to its use with the kin terms in §5.4.1 – does not indicate an inalienable third person *possessor* per se. It essentially acts as a dummy N1, although a clue to its meaning – that of an unspecified, associated group – is given in §5.5.C. Designations corresponding to human groups or types of humans – such as *teghõ* 'non-Indian'⁷⁴, *húp* 'Hup Indian, human in general' (this form can also mean 'a person'; see above), and *p'ǎy* 'priest', among others – are also common as N1s in combination with bound human nouns, e.g., *p'ǎy = ʔǎy* (priest=FEM) 'nun' (and are also usually able to stand alone, with the exception of 'non-Indian').

As with most of the bound nouns described in this chapter (but with the exception of the kin terms), the primary stress of the bound human-noun construction falls on the N2 or bound noun when this is preceded by the default *tih* = (or, in some cases, a numeral), but with all other preceding nominals the N1 receives the primary stress. Crucially, this stress pattern for bound nouns corresponds to the *type* of paradigm-like set in which the noun typically occurs, in that the stress-bearing form tends to be the most paradigmatically marked or variable form in the compound. In other words, the pronominal N1 (most often *tih* =) is in some sense the most predictable or 'given' information vis-à-vis the paradigm set of pronominally possessed bound nouns (so in this case N2 is stressed), whereas the bound noun itself is the least variant form in all other cases (so N1 is stressed). This supports the analysis of stress for productive compounds generally, presented in §5.1.2.2 above.

Examples of human nouns in the obligatorily bound construction are given in (73) and (74). This can be contrasted with animal names, which do not occur in the bound construction, as illustrated by (75).

⁷⁴ Literally 'fire-people', and a calque of the corresponding Tukano form. Non-Indian people probably got this name because of their firearms, according to Teresa Monteiro Socot (Mün).

(73) **tih = dól?** = *mæh = d'əh = mah...* *hid* *?ðh-yá?-ih*
 3sg=child=DIM=PL=REP 3pl sleep-TEL-DECL
 'The little children, it's said, they went to sleep.' (txt)

(74) a) **tih = pæcæw** *ní-íy*
 3sg=adolescent.boy be-DYNM
 'A/the boy is there.' (el)

b) ***pæcæw** *ní-íy*
 adolescent.boy be-DYNM

(75) a) **yã?ambð?** *ní-íy*
 dog be-DYNM
 'A/the dog is there.' (el)

b) ***tih = yã?ambð?** *ní-íy*
 3sg=dog be-DYNM

The bound human nouns themselves fall into two subsets. The forms for 'male' and 'female' pattern somewhat differently from the other 'generic human' nouns.

5.4.2.1. 'Generic human' nouns

A comprehensive list of these is given in (76). They occur most frequently with the default third singular pronominal form *tih =*, as illustrated in examples (77–79). (Note that *tih =* may appear regardless of whether the noun is singular or plural, although in plural forms – marked with the Plural enclitic =*d'əh* – these nouns may appear without *tih =* or any N1 form at all. See §5.5.2 for discussion of this phenomenon.)

(76) *tih = cəw* 'shaman'
tih = dól? 'child'
tih = wá 'old woman'
tih = wəhəd 'old man'
tih = pæcæw 'teenage boy'
tih = ?acáw 'teenage girl' (usually pronounced *ta?acáw*)

- (77) **tih = wá** *hɔn-g'ãʔ-kədway-hám-áh !*
 3sg=old.woman vomit-be.suspended-pass.go.out-go-DECL
 'The old woman ran staggering out to throw up!' (cv)
- (78) **tih = dɔʔ = mæh** *ʔɔh-wób-óy = mah*
 3sg=child=DIM sleep-rest.on-DYNM=REP
 'The little child went to sleep (on the bed), they say.' (txt)
- (79) *yíníy,* *tãʔáý = d'əh,* **taʔacáw = d'əh** *ʔăn* *náén-æh*
 then women=PL adolescent.girl=PL 1sg.OBJ come-DECL
 'Then women and girls came to me.' (txt)

In (80), the human noun combines with a kin term to form a more complex compound.

- (80) [**tih = wəhśd**] = *tæhʔín* *g'ɔh-ɔy = nih,* *hűt = teg*
 3sg=old.man=child.mother be-DYNM=EMPH.CO tobacco=STICK
- ʔam* *tɔn-pæm-æh*
 2sg hold-sit-DECL
 'Since you're the wife of the old man (shaman), you're sitting there with a (blessed) cigar.' (cv)

Bound human nouns can be preceded by a group term such as 'River Indian' or 'Non-Indian' (as in 81), a demonstrative, a numeral, or a relative clause.

- (81) **wəh = pæcæw = d'əh** *b'íyíʔ* *ní-íy*
 River.Indian=adolescent.boy=PL only be-DYNM
 'There are only River Indian boys (there)!' (cv)

In (82), *cəhdeh* 'rainy season' acts as a type of group term, relating to those entities that are present during/defined by the rainy season.

- (82) *núp* **cəhdeh = wəhśd = n'ăn** *tih* *y'æt-ní-h*
 this rainy.season =old.man=PL.OBJ 3sg leave-INFR2-DECL
 'He (the creator) left these old rainy-season lords (constellations).' (txt)

As discussed in detail in §7.4, the forms 'old woman' and 'old man' have undergone semantic extension, accompanied by phonological reduction in the case of 'old man' (from =*wəhśd* to =*wəd*; note reduction to one syllable and

loss of stress). These ‘old man’ and ‘old woman’ terms are used both referentially and vocatively to indicate respect (real or joking/endearing). A further use of the male forms =wəhəd and =wəd is to indicate ‘one who is characterized by a great deal of N’, where N is the host noun (see §7.4). These ‘respect’ markers may co-occur with another (preceding) bound human noun, kin term, proper name, or other nominal form.

5.4.2.2. ‘Male’ and ‘female’ nouns

These bound forms are given in (83). The bound form ‘female’ has an exceptional stress pattern, in that it always takes stress equal to that of the N1, regardless of the latter’s identity; ‘male’ is like most other bound nouns in that it is unstressed. This phonological markedness of the female form corresponds to its semantic markedness: the masculine form is typically used in reference to an entity of unspecified gender (see 86 below, for example), whereas the female form is only used for specifically female referents.

- (83) =ʔǎy ‘female’
 =ʔih ‘male’

The male and female terms commonly occur with a wide variety of N1s – to a greater extent than the other human nouns discussed above (§5.4.2.1), and often in their place. These include group names and clan names, as in (84–85).

- (84) wəh = ʔǎy ‘River Indian woman’
 húp = ʔih ‘Hup man’

- (85) cəkʷət = nɔg’od = tǎh = ʔǎy
 toucan=mouth=offspring/clan=FEM
 ‘Toucan’s-Beak Clanswoman’

The bound male and female forms are also common with numerals and demonstratives, as in (86–87). Note that the masculine form in (86) is actually used gender-neutrally, in reference to a woman.

- (86) *yúp ʔayǔp = ʔih-ǎn = mah... tih*
 that one=MSC-OBJ=REP 3sg

g'əc-j'ap-d'oʔ-yǎh-kamí = mah...

bite-divide.in.two-take-FRUST-moment.of=REP

'Then to **one person**, they say... at the moment he fell on (her) and bit her...' (txt)

- (87) *yi-nih = mǐʔ = mah póh cáp = ʔih wób-óh*
 that.ITG-be.like=UNDER=REP high other=MSC be.set.on-DECL
 'At the same time, **another person** was sitting up high (in a tree).' (txt)

They also occur with nouns indicating the person's identity, as in (88–89).

- (88) *tinǐh hūt túj = ʔih nu-cóʔ-óh*
 3sg.POSS tobacco light=MSC here-LOC-DECL
 'His **cigar-lighting-man** was over here.' (txt)

- (89) *yub = ʔǎy = d'əh = mah yúw-úh*
 cipó.vine=FEM=PL=REP that-DECL
 'They were **cipó-vine women**, it's said.' (txt)

Finally, they are common with relative clauses, as in (90–91). In example (91), the speaker allowed two bound N2 forms to share a single relative-clause N1; however, consultants differ in their judgements of this construction's acceptability.

- (90) *děh máh [hǔp kək-pǎm-ǎp] = ʔih-íh*
 water near fish pull-sit-DEP=MSC-DECL
 'Beside the water there was **a man who was sitting there fishing**'
 (txt)

- (91) *yi-nih yúp, [tǎh-ní-ǐp] = ʔih,*
 that.ITG-be.like that.ITG offspring-be-DEP=MSC

= ʔǎy... hup-hi-cíh-íh

=FEM RFLX-FACT-observe.restrictions-DECL

'So, the **man and woman who have a new baby** observe ritual restrictions' (txt)

The free lexemes for ‘man’ and ‘woman’ (examples 92–93) appear to be lexically reduced forms that incorporate the *tih* = preform. As such, they resemble the other human forms given above in (76), in particular *taʔacáw* ‘girl’. However, there is no evidence of an etymological link between =*ʔih* ‘masculine’ and -*yíʔ* (cf. *tiyíʔ* ‘man’).

- (92) *tāʔǎy* (< *tih* = *ʔǎy*) ‘woman, female’
tiyíʔ (< *tih* = *yíʔ*) ‘man, male’

- (93) *m’ác... tāʔǎy-ǎn, tiyíʔ-ǎn*
 mud woman-OBJ man-OBJ
 ‘(With) mud... (he made) a woman, a man.’ (txt)

Further evidence that the lexemes ‘man’ and ‘woman’ involve the bound preform *tih* = comes from their plural variants, in which the *tV-* syllable may be optional, as in (94).

- (94) (*tā*) *ʔǎy-d’əh* ‘women’
 (*ti*) *yíʔ-d’əh* ‘men’ (limited to some dialects)⁷⁵

This ability of the *plural* bound noun to appear without an N1 is a feature of the bound construction generally (see §5.5.2), but in the case of the ‘man’ and ‘woman’ terms this is subject to dialectal variation, reflecting their relatively more lexicalized, monomorpheme-like status. A textual example of these unbound plural nouns is provided in (95), which also illustrates the ability of two human bound nouns (= *ʔǎy*, = *dóʔ*) to co-occur in a single compound.

- (95) *ʔin ʔǎy = dóʔ = d’əh yíʔ = n’ǎn*
 1pl FEM=child=PL MSC=PL.OBJ

ʔūh-nəh-d’ák-n’ih ʔǎp
 INTRC-fall-stick.against-NMZ NEG:ID
 ‘We as girls weren’t ones to go running after men like that!’ (cv)

⁷⁵ But **ʔih = d’əh* is not grammatical. Rather, if the bound masculine form = *ʔih* (in association with N1) is pluralized, it is usually *replaced* by the Plural marker = *d’əh*; e.g., *teghǎ = ʔih* ‘non-Indian man/person’, *teghǎ = d’əh* ‘non-Indian people’. Other bound forms are usually followed by the Plural marker, including = *ʔǎy = d’əh*.

Table 25. Summary of forms for ‘male’ and ‘female’

	Bound	Free	Plural
FEM	= ʔǎy	tǎʔǎy	ʔǎy = d’əh tǎʔǎy = d’əh
MSC	= ʔih	tiyĩʔ	yiʔ = d’əh (some dialects) tiyĩʔ = d’əh

While the free lexemes ‘man’ and ‘woman’ almost certainly include the preform *tih* = historically, they have also become lexicalized to the point that they are distinct from transparent *tih* = N2 compounds like those relating to the other human nouns in (76) above. Accordingly, *tih* = can also combine directly with the bound forms = ʔih and = ʔǎy, according to the productive, transparent pattern, yielding an unreduced, non-lexicalized form in a construction indicating emphasis and definiteness, as in (96–97).

- (96) *tih* = ʔǎy ‘that female person’
tih = ʔih ‘that male person’

- (97) ʔok-nih key-ham-g’et-yiʔ-ay, **tih** = ʔǎy-ǎh !
 stir-NEG see-go-stand-TEL-INCH 3sg-FEM-DECL
 ‘(She) stood there looking, without moving, **that girl!**’ (cv)

5.4.2.3. Possession and human nouns

In contrast to kin terms, the nominal form preceding bound human nouns (especially the default third singular pronoun *tih* =) does not usually indicate possession per se, i.e., the relationship between a possessor and a possessum. On the other hand, the N1 in these constructions *can* indicate a possession-like relationship, as in examples (98–99); these indicate ‘one of us’ and ‘our children’, i.e., people belonging to our group, Hupd’əh. The relationship encoded in these bound constructions is best characterized as that of whole to part, just as we saw in a subset of the noun compounds in §5.1 above, rather than one of ‘possession’ per se; i.e., not so much ‘our children’ as ‘children in our group’.

- (98) ʔin = ʔih ʔǎp *tih*-ih
 1pl=MSC NEG:ID 3sg-DECL
 ‘He’s not **one of us.**’ (txt)

- (99) *?in = dɔʔ = d'əh-ay* *yúp nutǎñ = yiʔyám = hin* *yam-níh-ay-áh*
 1pl=child=PL-INCH that today=TEL song=also sing-NEG-INCH-DECL
 'Our kids today don't sing the *kapiwaya*.' (txt)

In the case of 'shaman', alienable possession is considered preferable, regardless of the presence of the *tih* = preform (a further illustration that participation in the bound construction is not identical to inalienability), as in (100).

- (100) a) *?iníh cɔw níh biyǎw = n'ám' = tǎh = ?ih*
 1pl.POSS shaman POSS blood=lick=offspring/clan=MSC
 'Our shaman's Blood-Lick-Clansman.' (txt)

- b) *?iníh tih = cɔw = wəd ní-ty*
 1pl.POSS 3sg=shaman=old be-DYNM
 'We have a (respected/old) shaman here; our (resp./old) shaman is here.' (el)

In many cases, the expression of any direct possessor-possessed relationship between two human referents is judged ungrammatical or inappropriate; this usually depends both on the noun itself, and on the intended possessor. Similarly, in certain cases where human terms may be possessed by an alienable, morphologically marked possessor, the construction may yield a very specific interpretation. Some of these variations are compared in Table 26.

Table 26. Semantics of pronouns and possession with human referents

	1sg Inalienable: <i>ʔǎh</i> + Noun	1sg Alienable: <i>nǎ</i> + Noun	1pl Alienable: <i>ʔinǎh</i> + Noun
<i>dóʔ</i> ‘child’	‘my child’	‘my childhood’	‘our childhood’
<i>pæcǎw</i> ‘adolescent boy’	*	‘my youth (msc)’	‘our youth (msc)’
<i>ʔacáw</i> ‘adolescent girl’	*	‘my youth (fem)’	‘our youth (fem)’
<i>wǎhǎd</i> ‘old man’	<i>ʔǎh = wǎd</i> ‘old me (msc)’	‘my old age (msc)’	‘our old age (msc)’
<i>wá</i> ‘old woman’	<i>ʔǎh = wá</i> ‘old me (fem)’	‘my wife/girl- friend’ (joke)	‘our old lady’
<i>ʔih</i> ‘man, male’	‘person of my clan (msc)’	‘my boyfriend’	‘person (msc) of our clan’
<i>ʔǎy</i> ‘woman’	‘person of my clan (fem)’	‘my girlfriend’	‘person (fem) of our clan’
<i>cǎw</i> ‘shaman’	*	*	‘our (group’s) shaman’ cf. * <i>ʔin = cǎw</i>

5.4.3. Plant parts

Almost all terms for plant parts are obligatorily bound nouns; i.e., they must be preceded by an N1 form. This is often a full noun – the plant name – but it can also be a demonstrative, numeral, relative clause, or the default *tǎh=*, as we saw for the human nouns in §5.4.2. The stress pattern (stressed N1 except where this is *tǎh=* or a numeral) is the same as that found with human and other (non-kin-term) bound nouns.

A near-comprehensive list of bound plant parts is given in (101).

- (101) = *g’ǎt* ‘leaf’
 = *tég* ‘tree, stick’
 = *b’ǎh* ‘split section of tree’
 = *tát* ‘fruit’ (preferred for edible fruit; includes pods and bananas as well as round fruits)
 = *b’ǎk* ‘bark’

= <i>wíg</i>	‘seed; small individual-seed fruit’
= <i>b’ák</i>	‘clump of fruits’ (i.e., lump clinging to tree)
= <i>tíh</i>	‘root’
= <i>tíg</i>	‘stem’
= <i>tók</i>	‘stalk’
= <i>?s?</i>	‘segment’ (of cane-like stalks)
= <i>nów</i>	‘branch’
= <i>hǒb</i>	‘hollow’ (stiff curled thing that grows behind the flower on certain trees)
= <i>?ág</i>	‘fruit’ (any fruit, regardless of edibility, other than small seed-like fruits in clumps)
= <i>dǎé</i>	‘tuber’

The only known plant part terms that can occur outside of a bound construction as free lexemes are *j’ó* ‘flower’ and *tít* ‘vine’. These are bound when used in reference to a particular plant, but when free they function as generic forms. Also, *děh* ‘water’ can be optionally used in a bound plant part construction, where it means ‘sap’.

Lexicalized or semi-lexicalized generic forms also exist for ‘leaf’ and ‘tree’ (example 102). These involve bound forms, but are phonologically reduced, and only partially etymologically transparent. Note that they take stress on the second syllable, like most monomorphemic lexemes and lexically specific compounds in Hup, but unlike the productive compounds or the typical bound construction.

- (102) *cug’ǎt* ‘leaf’ (possible etymology: *j’ǔg g’ǎt* ‘forest leaf’)
tegd’úh ‘tree’ (*d’úh* does not occur elsewhere in Hup)

The presence of the default third person singular pronoun *tíh* = refers (directly or implicitly) to the ‘possessing’ entity, the whole to which the part belongs:

- (103) *tíh = g’ǎt* ‘its leaf’ (of some plant)
tíh = tát ‘its fruit’ (of some plant)

- (104) *yúw-ǎn, tih = nɔw ní-n'ih cək-hũ?-yi?-yó?...
 that-OBJ 3sg=branch be-NMZ cut.off-finish-TEL-SEQ
 'Having cut off its little branches that are on it (a sapling)...'* (txt)

Very often, the N1 in plant part compounds is the name of the plant. These can be understood in terms of paradigms based either on the N1 (which is stressed), as in example (105), or on the N2, as in example (106). In (105), the paradigm is clearly expressing the various parts that make up the whole, the plant. In (106), on the other hand, the N2-based paradigm – here a list of different types of leaves – closely resembles the productive compounds formed from free nouns given in (16–20) above, expressing various types of fish-poison plant, etc. In this type of paradigm, the whole-part relationship of the leaf (or other part) to the plant is also a property-entity relationship, relating to the identity of the leaf (i.e., as having a certain quality, defined by the plant).⁷⁶ As discussed in §5.1, both the expression of whole-part relationships and property-entity relationships are typical of the Hup compound construction in general.

(105) Parts of a banana tree

- pihît* 'banana' (fruit or whole plant)
pihît = g'æt 'banana leaf'
pihît = teg 'banana tree'
pihît = b'ak 'clump of bananas'
pihît = tat 'banana fruit'
pihît = tih 'banana root'
pihît = b'ɔk 'banana peel/skin; bark of banana tree'
pihît = hɔb 'banana flower hollow' (stiff curled part that grows behind the flower)

(106) Different kinds of leaves

- cug'ǎt* 'leaf' (generic)
pihît = g'æt 'banana leaf'
b'ab'ǎ? = g'æt 'imbaúba leaf'
pũ?ũk = g'æt 'coca leaf'

⁷⁶ Virtually any whole-part relationship can likewise be cast as a property-entity relationship; however, conceiving of the relationship in this way is an especially important feature of plant parts, as discussed below.

púp = *g'æt* 'paxiuba leaf'
pehé = *g'æt* 'palm (sp.) leaf'

While expression of a whole-part relationship as inalienable possession makes sense from a theoretical point of view, the paradigm in (105) that foregrounds this relationship (different parts of a single plant) is actually less central in Hup life than is that in (106), which foregrounds the identity of different kinds of leaves. The identity of a leaf, stick, seed, etc. is a frequent topic of discussion in the daily life of the Hupd'əh, since these are the raw materials that the Hupd'əh use to manufacture the things they need, as can be seen from the examples in (107–109). This is consistent with the proposal offered in §5.1.2.2 above, that the stress pattern of these productive types of compounds reflects the speaker's attention to the foregrounded component.

(107) *nihũ?*, *b'ǝ?* = *tat*, *naháw* = *tat*, *núp* *g'ǝb* = *tat*...
 all gourd=fruit macucú=fruit this tucumá=fruit

hid *d'o?-píd-ih*

they take-DIST-DECL

'All (kinds), gourds, mucucú-fruit, these tucumá-fruit... they took them all.' (txt)

(108) *yúp* = *mah* *yáh* = *g'æt* *d'ó?-?ay-áh*
 that=REP vacú=leaf take-VENT-DECL
 'Then, it's said, he went and got the vacú leaf.' (txt)

(109) *himǔn* = *hǝb* *d'o?-d'ǝh-?áy* *hám* !
 paxiuba=hollow take-send-VENT.IMP go.IMP
 'Go fetch a paxiuba-palm hollow!' (txt)

To refer to the entire plant, only the free lexeme (N1) is used, as in example (110). The simple plant name may also be used by itself in reference to the fruit, with the optional addition of the bound form =*tat*.

- (110) *ʔayǔp* ***píhǫt*** = *mæh* = *hín*... ***canǻ*** = *mæh* = *hín*,
 one banana=DIM=also pineapple=DIM=also

yaʔáp = *yiʔ* *ʔinǫh-ǫh*

all.that=TEL 1pl.POSS-DECL

‘One little banana (plant)... a little pineapple (plant), that’s all that’s ours.’ (i.e., that’s all we plant) (sp)

5.4.4. Other obligatorily bound nouns

There are a handful of other obligatorily bound nouns in Hup, in addition to plant parts, human terms, and kin terms. These include eggs, jars and other hollow items, holes belonging to insects, rivers, and a generic term for swarming insects, as listed in (111) (and illustrated in example 112). Most of these occur in paradigms like those in (106) above, where the bound N2 can be modified by a range of N1s (of which examples are given in 111).

- (111) = *típ* ‘egg’
 (*cadakǻʔ* = *tip* ‘chicken egg’)
- = *tód* ‘can, jar, hollow thing’
 (*áwkow* = *tod* ‘alcohol bottle’)
- = *nɔ* ‘hole in ground (insects)’
 (*hǫd* = *nɔ* ‘sauva ant hole’)
- ‘mouth (of stream)’
 (*yiyǫw deh* = *nɔ* ‘mouth of Yiyǫw Creek’)
- = *mí* ‘stream, river’
 (*deh* = *mí* ‘stream, river’;⁷⁷ *ciwib-nɔwá* = *mí* ‘Bacaba-Sprout-Creek’)
- = *ʔǻw* ‘swarming insect’ (refers to a single member of a species that typically occurs in groups)
 (*yɔʔ* = *ʔǻw* ‘(one) wasp’; *cɔw* = *ʔǻw* ‘(one) biting ant sp.’)

⁷⁷ This bound form is usually found in the semi-lexicalized compound *deh* = *mí*, with stressed N2 (a non-standard pattern for bound nouns).

- (112) **pǎŋ deh = nɔ** pótʔah... wəhád = d'əh
 cucura water=mouth above old.man=PL

j'ɔm-b'eh-ʔeʔ-ní-p

swim-cross.water-PERF-INFR2-DEP

'Above the mouth of Cucura Igarapé... the Ancestors swam across.' (txt)

Example (113) illustrates the obligatorily bound nature of a noun like 'egg', in comparison to a noun like 'fish'.

- (113) a) **tih = típ** (*típ) ʔāh d'oʔ-té-ay-áh
 3sg=egg 1sg take-FUT-INCH-DECL
 'I'm going to get the egg.' (el)

- b) **hǒp** (*tih = hǒp) ʔāh d'oʔ-té-ay-áh
 fish 1sg take-FUT-INCH-DECL
 'I'm going to get the fish.' (el)

Terms for the more abstract parts of a whole (spatial or temporal) are also obligatorily bound in Hup, as listed in (114) and in examples (115–117).

- (114) (*tih*) = *g'æt d'ðh* 'its end'
 (*tih*) = *cúm* 'its beginning, first'
 (*tih*) = *pǒw* 'its edge'
 (*tih*) = *tú-an* 'its depth, bottom (+DIR)'

- (115) *yít = mah* *tih-ǎn* *tih* *g'əç-d'oʔ-póg-b'ay-áh...*
 then=REP 3sg-OBJ 3sg bite-take-EMPH1-AGAIN-DECL

tínǎh ***mumuy = cúm***

3sg.POSS arm=beginning

'Then it (alligator) bit him, his **upper arm**, it's said' (txt)

- (116) *hõpkǎk d'oʔ-d'ak-yóʔ píd... hid d'oʔ-g'et-hám-áh,*
 fish-pull take-stick.against-SEQ DIST 3pl take-stand-go-DECL

ʔaté tih = tú-an

until(Pt) 3sg=bottom-DIR

'Having set out all the fishhooks... they go along setting them, until they run out (lit. until **the bottom**).' (txt)

- (117) *tih = cúm tih bíʔ-píd-ih, núp háwig tih bíʔ-iw-ay*
 3sg=beginning 3sg make-DIST-DECL this heart 3sg make-FLR-INCH
 'First he made (them), he made our hearts.' (txt)

5.4.5. Body parts: both bound and free realizations

Body parts provide an intriguing twist on the question of inalienable possession in Hup. Contrary to the implicational hierarchy suggested by Nichols (1988: 572), whereby kin terms and body parts are cross-linguistically the most basic members of the class of 'inalienable' entities, body parts in Hup are treated as more 'alienable' than are kin terms, plant parts, human nouns, and the other entities listed above. Moreover, it is paradoxically *human* body parts that do not participate in the bound construction, while animal body parts are normally treated as bound. This is exactly contrary to the cross-linguistically typical patterning of possession, where human body parts – which normally stay on their 'possessors' – are treated as more inalienable than animal body parts, which are routinely physically separated when butchering game and when encountered in the stewpot (cf. Chappell and McGregor 1995; compare e.g., Paamese, Crowley 1995).

A. Game animal body parts

A search of my Hup text corpus revealed game animal body parts to be almost invariably bound, as illustrated in examples (118–121). The body part nouns usually take the N1 stress pattern (when N1 is a full lexical noun), but this is considerably more variable than it is with the other bound nouns.

- (118) *tih = tők* 'its belly' (gutting fish) (txt)
mæt = b'ók 'cutia-skin' (cv)
hčp = tok 'fish-stomach' (cv)
tih = tæg cá? 'its chin' (lit. its chin-box) (when stringing fish) (txt)
- (119) *tih = těj* *tih* *ʔún'-úh,* *bú?* = *toj-oh*
 3sg=nose 3sg suck-DECL anteater=nose-DECL
 'She sucked its nose, the anteater's nose.' (txt)
- (120) *yǎk = pāt* *pǎ-ay* *nutǎñ-ǎh*
 macaw=feather NEG:EX-INCH today-DECL
 'There are no more macaw feathers these days.' (txt)
- (121) *nút* *tűg = pāt* *wób-óh*
 here howler.monkey=hair set.on-DECL
 'Here howler-monkey fur would be placed.' (txt)

In elicitation contexts, consultants judge elicited phrases involving possession of animal body parts by a morphologically alienable possessor to be grammatical, but these are rarely a first choice. In the examples above, consultants noted that were 'feather' or 'hair' alienably possessed, this would imply that the part came from a *specific* individual animal. This is corroborated by the relatively rare examples of such alienable constructions in natural discourse, where attention is focused on the animal, as well as on its body part (example 122). Compare the fact that obligatorily bound nouns such as kin terms may occasionally be preceded by an alienable possessor (which may indicate that the possessor is more salient; §5.4.1).

- (122) *yĩnih-yó?* = *mah* *núp,* *tĩñh* *hó,* *kiw'i?-d'əh-hi-yó?*...
 thus-SEQ=REP this 3sg.POSS liver split-send-descend-SEQ
- núp* *yawǎç* *hó* *tih* *dó?-óh*
 this capuchin.monkey liver 3sg take-DECL
 'Thus, it's said, his (the capuchin monkey's) liver, having split (him) open and pulled (it) out... he got the monkey's liver.' (txt)

B. Human body parts

A text search revealed human body parts to be consistently alienably possessed – the exact opposite of animal body parts – as illustrated in (123–126).⁷⁸ In these and other examples, consultants judge the expression of these human body parts as inalienably possessed to be ungrammatical.

(123) *tinħh núh* ‘her head’ (txt)

tinħh păt ‘her hair’ (txt)

(124) *?amħh tők yúp hăy-ăp*

2sg.POSS belly that wide-DEP

‘Your belly is this wide!’ (txt)

(125) *tinħh mumÿy-an d’o?-cud-yó?*

3sg.POSS arm-DIR take-be.inside-SEQ

‘Having dressed his arm (with bark)...’ (txt)

(126) *tinħh tĭb tih yoyɔp-j’ap-tu?-d’əh-hám-b’ay-áh*

3sg.POSS penis 3sg rub-break.off-immersesend-go-AGAIN-DECL

‘His penis, it rubbed and fell off into the water and went away’ (txt)

Compare the reference to both a person’s forehead (alienably possessed) and a monkey’s forehead (inalienably possessed) in the following passage, which comes from a traditional tale in which a hunter encounters a spirit who wants to eat him, and tricks the spirit into eating pieces of his game instead:

(127) “*?amħh kág’* ĩn *be-kăĕm,*” *tih nó-ǝ?ĭh... yúp = mah*

2sg.POSS forehead 1sg.OBJ show-IMP 3sg say-MSC that.ITG=REP

yawăç kág’ = mah batib’-ĩn tih bé-éh

capuchin.monkey forehead=REP spirit-OBJ 3sg show-DECL

‘“Show me your forehead,” he (the spirit) said... So he (the man)

showed the monkey’s forehead to the spirit.’ (txt)

⁷⁸ Note that most body parts terms can refer to human and animal body parts alike; there are very few actual lexical differences. Thus the syntax of the construction can actually be said to carry lexical information relating to the type of body part involved.

That the body part is not bound (or inherently possessed) is revealed by the fact it can occur with no possessor at all, as illustrated by example (128). Compare this to the occasional examples of obligatorily bound nouns (especially kin terms) that can nevertheless be preceded by an alienable possessor.

- (128) *wæd-j'ap-y'æt-yi?-pid-ih, núh, núh b'íyi?*
 eat-divide-leave-TEL-DIST-DECL head head only
 'He ate up all that and left the head, only the head.' (txt)

At least two apparent exceptions to the rule of alienably possessed human body parts have turned up in my corpus, but all involve *disembodied* parts. Example (129) refers to a human head left over by feasting jaguars (but compare the non-bound example of the same in [128]). Example (130) was uttered regarding a 'disembodied' skin, as a joke to a small child who had just had his insides 'sucked out' by a teasing adult. In example (131), first the body part 'lower leg' is stated with no possessor at all (compare 128 above), and then is referred to again by the bound construction 'human foot'.

- (129) *tih = núh, hid b'uy-tu?-ní-h, húp núh*
 3sg=head 3sg throw-immers-DECL person head
 'They (jaguars) threw the head into the water, the person's head.' (txt)

- (130) *tih = b'ók b'íyi?-ay !*
 3sg=skin only-INCH
 'Only his skin is left!' (cv)

- (131) *cí? w'a?w'a?-kæd-cak-yi?-pó-ay, húp = j'ib = pog !*
 lower.leg stick.out-pass-climb-TEL-EMPH1-INCH human=foot=EMPH1
 'A lower leg was poking out (of the pot), a human foot!' (txt)

C. Sentient, mythical animal beings' body parts

While the body parts of spirit entities are treated like those of humans in my corpus, the treatment of mythical animals' body parts as alienably or inalienably possessed in Hup texts is variable. This corresponds to the identity of these beings in Hup myth as conceptually midway between animal and human. This variation is tellingly illustrated by the two pairs of examples from the same texts, given in examples (132–133). Examples (133a) and (b) are even taken from the same paragraph, and refer to the same participants, with no particular contextual difference. It is likely that this variation correlates with the degree to

which the narrator is currently thinking of the animal as a human-like and agent-like entity, with special salience relative to the body part in question.

(132) a) Inalienable:

tih = hatipwig *yoyo-yæt-pó-t = maām*
 3sg=testicles dangle-lie-EMPH1-OBL=REP.DST.CNTR
 ‘There where his (Tapir’s) testicles were lying, dangling’ (txt)

b) Alienable:

wid-ham-kéy-éy = maām, **tinñh** **hatipwig-ít**
 arrive-go-see-DYNM=REP.DST.CNTR 3sg.POSS testicles-OBL
 ‘(Turtle) came looking at his (Tapir’s) testicles’ (txt, UN dialect)

(133) a) Inalienable:

tih = yomǫy *máh tih wók-ay-áh*
 3sg=anus near 3sg rub-INCH-DECL
 ‘She rubbed (the hot pepper) around his (Tapir’s) anus.’ (txt)

b) Alienable:

tih yok-d’əh-ham-yǣh-kamí = mah **tinñh** **yomǫy...**
 3sg poke-send-go-FRUST-moment.of=REP 3sg.POSS anus
 ‘At the moment that she poked his (Tapir’s) anus (in vain).’ (txt)

Example (134) appears to combine a clausal possession strategy (third person plural affected participant as direct object [*híd-ǎn*]) with a bound construction involving the default third person singular pronoun.

(134) *híd-ǎn* **tih = ké** *cīy’-hū?-cīw-īy = cud = mah* *híd = hin-īh*
 3pl-OBJ 3sg=wing poke-finish-COMPL-DYNM=INFR=REP 3pl=also-DECL
 ‘They also (the birds) had already stuck their wings full (of feathers).’
 (txt)

I return to the question of why human and animal body parts should be treated in this typologically backwards-seeming way in §5.5.D below.

5.5. Making sense of the bound noun construction

Why should such a heterogeneous group of phenomena – kin terms, humans, plant parts, game animal body parts, and a few other entities – be expressed by a

single syntactic construction type? And why should human body parts not be encoded in the same way?

Taking a step back, we can ask what the bound construction has in common with the nominal compound construction in general (§5.1). Syntactically, these are clearly equivalent; both involve a N1 N2 combination in which N2 is the head noun, N1 the modifier or possessor. I propose that the formal and constructional similarity among all of these forms in fact reflects a functional unity: all of the Hup compound constructions (including the bound construction) have to do with the individuation of the head noun out of the indeterminate mass of potential referents.

In the case of the noun compounds composed of free lexemes, this individuation is signaled via a possessive relationship, a whole-part relationship, or qualification by a certain property; in the case of the bound nouns discussed above, the relationship between them is likewise that of possessor-possessed or whole-part (or more loosely, an inherent association between two entities). The set of bound nouns in Hup thus bears a resemblance to the class of inalienable nouns in the Australian language Mayali, which Evans (1995) describes as characterized by the existence of some other entity, a ‘whole’ to which they belong or are associated. In Hup, these relationships between the components of the compound construction all entail that the N2 or head of the compound is defined and specified by the N1, or modifier. The functional relationship between this individuating function and the more general phenomena of definiteness and specification is illustrated by the use of forms like *tih = ?áy*, *tih = ?ih* (3sg-FEM ‘that woman’; 3sg-MS ‘that man’) in examples (96–97) above.

Furthermore, I argue that this individuating function of the bound construction in Hup applies specifically in the context of human interaction. While Chappell and McGregor (1995: 8) propose a cross-linguistic characterization of the inalienable construction as a function of the ‘personal domain’, this is not in itself enough to explain the patterning of the bound construction in Hup, since human body parts are not included in the set. Finally (in keeping with Chappell and McGregor 1995), a full account of the membership of the set of bound nouns in Hup must appeal to the socio-cultural context of its speakers.

Below, each of the subsets of obligatorily bound nouns is considered in turn, vis-à-vis the proposal that their participation in the bound construction is determined by their association with another entity, and that this in turn relates to their individuation relative to a set of potential referents.

A. Kin terms

In the case of kin terms, the inherent association between the ‘possessor’ and the ‘possessed’ is obvious. In addition, the characterization of one particular person (N2) by his/her relationship to another individuates this person from within the set of people who are characterized by the corresponding relationship to others. For example, ‘his father’ selects one particular referent from the set of all fathers.

B. Plant parts

For plant parts, the head of the compound (N2) is clearly involved in a whole-part relationship with the entity specified by N1. At the same time, the part is defined and identified by the whole, which thereby individuates the part from the mass of other potential referents that are equivalent parts. In other words, one picks out the banana leaf from the set of leaves in general. Other entities, such as eggs, are similarly specified by reference to the bird that produced them (i.e., the bird that they are both inherently associated with and defined by). As noted above, the most common paradigmatic associations of compounds involving bound plant parts (and most of the miscellaneous entities) reflect a higher importance of the identity function (i.e., type of leaf, etc.) vis-à-vis the whole-part function (i.e., part of plant) in Hup life. This has to do with the dynamics of human interaction with plant parts; in the rain forest environment of the Hupd’əh, plant parts provide the primary raw materials for making almost all the necessities of life.

C. Human terms

The inclusion of the set of human nouns (e.g., ‘male’, ‘female’, ‘child’, ‘shaman’; with the exception of ‘[Hup] person’ and ‘infant’; also compare ‘priest’ above) in the obligatorily bound class is perhaps the most difficult to explain. Why should human nouns be lexically specified as bound, just like parts of a whole and possessed or inherently associated entities? I stress that this is essentially a linguistic problem: Should we consider the participation of human nouns in this construction type to be a formally ad hoc feature of Hup?

I suggest that it is not ad hoc – there is in fact a semantic and cultural basis for the participation of human nouns in this formal set. All the other nouns that occur in these constructions involve the narrowing-down or individuation of a referent from an indeterminate mass of possible referents, defined in terms of their inherent association with some other entity or whole. Humans, arguably,

can be perceived in this way too: a human being in Hup culture is first and foremost part of a social group – whether it be the set of River Indians, Hup Indians, members of the Toucan’s Beak Clan, or the inhabitants of a particular house.

The fact that Hup grammar treats human beings as associated by *default* makes sense in the Hup cultural context. The Hupd’əh have a very different perspective on the role of the individual relative to the social group than that found in contemporary ‘Standard Average European’ culture. The Hupd’əh are almost never alone, and it is in fact considered socially peculiar or suspicious if a person spends much time alone without a good reason for it. In my experience, when a family goes on a trek and leaves the grandmother behind, she never stays on alone in the house by herself; instead she moves her hammock to another relative’s house – which may only be ten feet away, already crowded with perhaps a dozen people in a tiny space – and she stays there until her family returns, while their house stands empty. For the Hupd’əh, the human referent is obligatorily conceived as a part of a larger relational whole, the social group, which at the same time defines and individuates the referent.

Such a perception of the individual as first and foremost a member of the group is quite distinct from the atomized view of the individual that members of Standard Average European culture take for granted, but it is hardly unique to the Hupd’əh; many cultures around the world have been reported to take this perspective (e.g., Barnouw 1963, Schweder and Bourne 1984). However, Hup appears to be unusual in encoding this cultural fact into its grammar of inalienability.

One further piece of evidence in support of this explanation for the bound nature of human nouns comes from the only bound noun that relates to the animal world: =ʔǎw ‘swarming insect’. As discussed in §5.4.4, this form is used to indicate an *individual* insect that typically occurs in a swarm or colony, such as wasps, various kinds of ants, etc., as in yʒʔ = ʔǎw ‘one individual wasp’. Here, the form =ʔǎw clearly has an individuating function of picking one referent out of a group, and is both structurally and semantically parallel to the human bound nouns.

D. Body parts

Body parts present a different puzzle. Why should animal body parts be inalienably possessed, while human body parts are alienable?

The inclusion of animal body parts in the class of obligatorily bound nouns is easily explained, and is consistent with the Hup system of conceptualization vis-à-vis the other bound noun constructions. Like plant parts, animal body parts are associated with a whole. Also like plant parts, they are likely to be

characterized by Hup speakers in terms of a paradigmatic set-like relationship, vis-à-vis other equivalent referents from which they must be individuated. In other words, Hup speakers often choose among sets of potential materials to meet a specific requirement for personal adornment or use, such as a jaguar tooth, monkey tooth, and dog tooth, or a parrot feather, macaw feather, and vulture feather – in the same way that they select among a palm leaf, banana leaf, or a coca leaf for their cooking, wrapping, thatching, or eating needs. Similarly, one may encounter a range of legs in one's stewpot, which may be identified as paca legs, sloth legs, etc.

Human body parts, on the other hand – while undoubtedly an inherently associated part of a whole – are not often in need of individuation from a set of equivalent referents. While Hup speakers often refer to animal body parts in terms of sets of teeth, feathers, or fur that are all potential referents vis-à-vis some purpose or task, they have little need to talk about the teeth or hair of different people in this way.

This lack of a need to individuate and define body parts arises precisely *because* they are always attached to their 'possessor', and not available as objects of manipulation (other than by the possessor him/herself). Moreover, it is the human possessor who is usually conceived as the primary participant or most salient referent, not his/her body part. This is not really compatible with the bound construction, in which the N1 (here, the human possessor) is the modifier of the N2 head and therefore is relatively backgrounded. Thus the alienable construction with the full possessive pronoun is iconic in that it reflects the greater importance of the human possessor as distinct from the body part – though it is not iconic in the sense conventional to inalienable possession, i.e., the sense of reducing the conceptual distance between the possessor and the entity. The same rationale – salience of the possessor rather than the possessum – is probably also behind the occasional possession of kin terms with alienable possessor forms, as discussed in §5.4.1.

This formal separation of the possessor and the possessed body part is also reflected in the clausal possession ('possessor raising') strategy in Hup, as discussed in §5.3.1, which likewise appears to be used exclusively with human (or sentient, mythical animal) body parts, and profiles the 'possessor' as the most significantly affected participant. As noted above, the Hup case provides additional evidence for the argument presented by Mithun (2001) that clausal possession relates crucially to the salience of the affected participant, rather than to the phenomenon of inalienable possession. Moreover, the clausal possession strategy and the (often accompanying) marginal noun incorporation (see §9.6) undergone by body part nouns in Hup may actually be part of what motivates the alienable and non-inherent possession of human body part nouns, since these other constructions so frequently leave body part nouns syntactically separated from their possessors.

Hup's strategy for possession of body parts may also not be as cross-linguistically unusual as it seems at first glance. English, in fact, has a comparable possession strategy, in that it can use compounding (the functional equivalent of inalienable possession) in reference to animal body parts (a dog tooth; a dog's tooth), but not usually in reference to human body parts (*?a boy tooth; a boy's tooth) – except for 'human tooth' and 'baby tooth', which are also acceptable as such in Hup. In other words, Hup grammar encodes a cross-linguistically common fact about our interaction with the world: a possessed animal body part (e.g., 'dog's tooth' or 'dog tooth') typically tells us about the *kind* of tooth, rather than about the individual canine possessor – whereas a possessed human body part ('boy's tooth') tells us primarily about the tooth's owner, and not about the kind of tooth.

Nevertheless, the fact remains that human body part nouns are among the most prototypical candidates for inalienable possession in other languages. The extent to which Hup is deviant, and the full story behind this deviation, must be left to future research.

5.5.1. Non-obligatorily bound nouns and the bound construction

The bound construction is not limited to the class of lexically specified bound nouns discussed above. Virtually any noun can occur in a bound construction; that is, it can optionally assume the same syntax as the obligatorily bound nouns. In other words, inalienability or bound-ness in Hup depends on how a phenomenon is construed, as well as being a lexical property of nouns.⁷⁹ This flexibility according to construal provides additional evidence for the claim that the bound construction has to do with an inherent association between entities.

In general, nouns appear bound or inalienably possessed when they are understood to be part of a whole, as in (135–136).

(135) Making a toy top:

<i>yi-nih-yó?</i> ,	<i>tih = cǝ?</i>	<i>hid</i>	<i>bí?-ih</i>
that.ITG-be.like-SEQ	3sg=stick	3pl	make-DECL
'Then, they made its stick. ' (txt)			

⁷⁹ Such flexibility is not unique to Hup, but occurs in a number of languages (cf. Chappell and McGregor 1995).

(136) Making a fishing pole:

tih = tĕt *d'oʔ-d'ak-yóʔ*, **tih = tǝg** *d'oʔ-d'ǎk*,
 3sg=string take-stick.against-SEQ 3sg=tooth take-stick.against

yi-nih-yóʔ **tih = paçtǔd** *d'oʔ-d'ǎk* *ní-ĭy*
 that.ITG-be.like-SEQ 3sg=sinker take-stick.against be-DYNM
 'Having put on **its line**, (and) put on **its hook**, after this **its sinker** gets
 put on.' (txt)

The bound form can also refer to an inherently associated, possessor-like entity, as in (137), and it may have a specific meaning, distinct from its meaning as a free lexeme, as in (138). Finally, the bound form may itself be a compound formed from a verb stem and an associated noun, as in (139) (see §18.2.3).

(137) **tih = ʔǔç** 'its sack' (referring to the thing that belongs inside; compare alienably possessed **tinĭh ʔǔç** 'his sack', referring to a human owner)

(138) **tih = dĕh** 'sap, juice of' (unbound= 'water')
tih = cĭh 'sliver of' (unbound= 'grass')
tih = mǝy 'hole of an animal, insect' usually in ground
 (unbound: 'house')

(139) **núp cǎhdeh** *wag*, *yǝk cǎhdeh*, **tih = hám = wag**
 this rainy.season day otter rainy.season 3sg=go=day
 'This rainy season time, the Otter Rain, the time when it goes (lit. 'its going-days') (across the sky; referring to a constellation) (txt)

5.5.2. Exceptions to obligatory participation in the bound construction

Further evidence that individuation of a referent from a mass is the basic function of the bound construction comes from the systematic exceptions to the phenomenon, whereby nouns that are lexically defined as obligatorily bound may nonetheless appear unbound.

An unbound plural form is acceptable (though not obligatory) with human nouns and kinship terms, as in (140–142) (although plural plant parts and some

other plural nouns, such as eggs, still require a preceding N1). In these cases, generic plurality intrinsically precludes individuation from a mass.⁸⁰

- (140) *dóʔ = d'əh* 'children'
ʔǎy = d'əh 'women'
tǒg = d'əh 'daughters in general'

- (141) ***dóʔ = d'əh*** *hid pɔhɔ-tég*
 child=PL 3pl grow.plump-PURP
 'In order for the children to grow plump and healthy.' (txt)

- (142) *dób, pæcæw = d'əh-əh !*
 many adolescent.boy=PL-DECL
 'There are lots of boys (there)!' (cv)

Similarly, a completely generic (singular) referent is also typically expressed as unbound, as in the compound *tǎh yud* 'uterus' (lit. 'offspring clothes'), and example (143) (note that in this expression the form *tǎh = tǎhʔín-ǎn*, which is bound/inalienably possessed and inflected for object case, would mean 'his [own] wife').

- (143) *wǎʔ tǎhʔín túk-úy = mah*
 vulture child.mother want-DYNM=REP
 'Vulture wants **a wife**, it's said.' (cv)

For most bound nouns (though with the exception of human nouns), negative existence expressions also render the singular unbound form grammatical (and obligatory in the case of kin terms), as in (144–145).

- (144) *tip pǎ* 'no eggs'
g'æt pǎ 'no leaves'

⁸⁰ When a preceding N1 is present with a plural form, it is generally singling out a specific group of referents vis-à-vis a larger group; e.g., 'those children' as opposed to 'children in general'.

- (145) *ʔíp pǎ̃ = mǎéh = d'əh hid ʔǔh = yíʔ-íy*
 father NEG:EX=DIM=PL 3pl sleep-TEL-DYNM
 'The little fatherless ones fell asleep.' (txt)

5.6. Bound nouns and semantic extension: noun 'classification'

As we have seen, obligatorily bound nouns relating to plant parts, eggs, and other entities tend to occur in paradigmatic sets, and individuate a referent out of a mass of potential referents. As such, particularly in the case of plant parts, the bound construction typically serves a classifying function – types of leaves, types of wood, types of feathers, etc. The bound N1 and N2 correspond either to a whole and its parts, or to two entities in a possessor-possessed or otherwise inherently associated relationship.

In other cases, the same bound construction, with the same set of bound nouns – most relating to plant parts – does *not* indicate a possessor-possessed or whole-part relationship between two entities, but instead serves merely to relate a property or other identifying feature to an entity (i.e., the third type of relationship that is typically encoded in the more general compound construction; §5.1). The examples of this subtype of bound noun construction all involve some level of semantic extension (which again is a typical property of noun compounds generally; see §5.1.1), usually of the head noun (N2).

These extended bound constructions can be characterized according to two types of extension: (a) extension involving the semantic type of the construction as a whole (from whole-part to property-entity) and (b) extension involving the N2 (from a literal part of a plant to an entity with some abstract semantic feature characteristic of that plant part). Like the non-extended plant-part compounds, these constructions also have to do with the classification of types of entities – but according to a distinct classification strategy, resembling that found in noun classification systems in other languages.

As Grinevald (2000: 54) has observed, a functional-typological perspective allows us to recognize the various grammatical systems encountered in the world's languages, such as noun classification, "as more or [as] less prototypical, and at various stages of development and disintegration". Accordingly, the following discussion will consider the arguments for characterizing the extended bound constructions in Hup as an incipient system of nominal classification, and as an example of how a noun classification system may arise in a language (see also Epps 2007b). For reasons that will become clear, I will examine names for native objects and for culturally foreign objects separately.

5.6.1. Semantically extended bound constructions and names for native items

Relatively few native items have names arising from the semantic extension of a bound construction; the list of examples below is close to exhaustive (in my corpus). In these compounds, the bound forms involved are almost always plant parts, and the degree of semantic extension varies widely.

One type of extended compound involves the use of the plant-part relationship (conventionally N1:whole – N2:part) to produce names for certain types of plants, but where the second component ('leaf') is not a part of N1 (example 144). In these cases, 'leaf' has been metonymically extended to refer to the plant as a whole.⁸¹

These compounds are lexically specific, yet still correspond in some sense to the plant-part paradigms in (105–106) above, in that they are primarily designations for types of leaves. However, instead of N1 being the whole (e.g., banana plant) and N2 the part (e.g., leaf of plant), here N1 is some other noun that is simply associated with the plant and identifies it in terms of a property-entity relationship (e.g., leaf for shelter). These compounds also maintain the productive-type stress pattern of the other plant-part constructions (primary stress on N1).

- (146) *tóp = g'æt* 'caraná' (lit. 'shelter-leaf'; used for thatching houses)
mohǎy = g'æt 'deer-leaf' (carurú or pokeweed; edible leaves)
yǎʔ = g'æt 'roast-leaf' (use unknown)
tahcěb = g'æt 'tick-leaf' (small thick leaves that resemble ticks, used for treating insect stings)

While the examples in (146) involve metonymic extension of N2, most such semantic extensions involve metaphor, as in (147).

- (147) *tih = b'ák* 'clump of fruits', extended to:
 'wasp or termite nest' (i.e., both are a lump clinging to tree)

Metaphorical semantic extensions are also used for the names of certain manufactured items. Some of these are only marginally semantically extended. For example, the use of 'tree, stick' in (148a) is based on the fact that canoes

⁸¹ But note that 'deer-leaf' (carurú or pokeweed) is calqued directly from Tukano (according to my bilingual consultants). It is possible that this particular kind of extension in Hup may have begun with calqued forms and spread by analogy.

are made from tree trunks; but (as in 146 above) the N2 is not actually a part of the N1. In (148b), the *hɔb* or ‘hollow thing’ is also not a naturally grown part of the buriti-palm in the usual sense of a plant part; in this case it has been carved out of a buriti log, which accordingly specifies and defines it.

(148) a) *hɔh = tɛg* ([canoe]=tree/stick) ‘canoe’
 (lexicalized, with N2 stress pattern; compare Dâw *hɔ*: and
 Nadëb *h'ɔɔh* ‘canoe’)

b) *j'ák = hɔb* (buriti.palm=hollow) ‘hollowed-out piece of a buriti-
 palm stick’

The examples in (149) are further extended semantically in a noteworthy way. Here the N2 plant part term does not refer to a plant part at all, but to an entity defined in terms of a particular abstract semantic feature, relating to shape (stick: long and thin; fruit: round).

(149) *hũt = teg* (tobacco=STICK) ‘cigar’
ták = tat (rubber=FRUIT) ‘rubber ball’ (made from native rubber)

Many of the extended compound forms combine a verb stem and a bound noun, as in example (150). This is a productive but much less common feature of (non-bound) noun compounds, as we saw in §5.1 (see examples 7–9). Since in many cases a verb stem needs no additional morphology to create a derived nominal, but can simply stand alone without tense-aspect inflection, such compounds can be considered to involve two nominal components. Note that while the examples in (150) involve a property-entity rather than a whole-part relationship, they again involve little or no semantic extension of the N2; bows and paddles are carved from split lengths of wood, and native flutes are made from hollow sticks (while flutes made from deer leg bones have a different, non-compound name, *ʔɛd'*).

(150) *g'íg = b'ah* (arrow-shooting=split.wood) ‘bow’
hǎy' = b'ah (paddle=split.wood) ‘paddle’
pĩh = teg (play.flute=stick) ‘flute’

Among the names of native items, the most productive realm for semantic extensions of N2 nouns is that of body parts, as in (151); most of these are highly lexicalized.

(151) [cǐʔ-deh]-tod'	'bladder'	([urinate-water]-container)
<i>hohǒʔ-b'ah</i>	'rib'	(ʔ-split.wood)
<i>cuj-tǐh</i>	'spine'	(diarrheaʔ-root)
<i>cǐʔ-tat</i>	'round part of calf of leg'	(calf-fruit)
<i>tok-tít</i>	'intestines'	(belly-vine/string)
<i>hatíp-wig</i>	'testicles'	(<i>wig</i> 'seed'; maybe <i>tip</i> 'egg')
<i>wɔn'-dǎé</i>	'knee'	(mingauʔ- <i>tuber</i>)
etc.		

A final productive domain for semantic extension involves the bound form =*tég* 'stick', which (unlike any other bound form) can be used in the purely generic sense of 'thing'. While this fully abstract use of =*tég* occurs in relatively few names for native manufactured items (as opposed to new cultural items, see below), it is found in certain compounds referring to abstract concepts, always in conjunction with a verb stem (example 152).

(152) <i>nǐ=tég</i>	'place to live, way of living'	(<i>ni-</i> 'be')
<i>hup-hipǎh=tég</i>	'consciousness, self-awareness'	(<i>hup</i> -Reflexive; <i>hipǎh-</i> 'know'; lit. 'self-knowing thing')

5.6.2. Semantically extended bound constructions and names for newly introduced cultural items

In contrast to the quite limited use of semantically extended compounds for names of native items, their use with recently introduced cultural items is highly productive. The list of examples offered in this section is far from exhaustive, and new names are constantly being coined. Like the examples in §5.6.1 above, however, virtually all the semantically extended N2 forms in these constructions are terms for plant parts.

The bound plant part terms that occur as N2s in these compounds are only a subset of the bound plant-part terms listed in (101) above. They comprise a limited set of recurring elements, which contribute a more or less consistent semantics and organize their referents on a conventionalized basis, based primarily on shape. In this respect, these 'bound nouns' resemble noun classifiers.

A comprehensive list of the plant parts that undergo metaphorical extensions, together with their core semantic features, is given in (153).

- (153) = *tég* ‘tree, **long thin shaft; thing in general**’
 = *b’ǎh* ‘split wood; **flat thing**’
 = *tát* ‘fruit; **round thing**’
 = *b’ók* ‘bark, skin, eggshell; **cooking pot or dish**’
 = *wíg* ‘seed, small individual-seed fruit; **any small roundish thing**’
 = *g’ǎt* ‘leaf; **paper, book**’
 = *hǒb* ‘concave hollow thing from certain trees; **any shallow receptacle** (with the exception of dishes)’
 = *tít* ‘vine; **string, cord**’

Example (154) lists some examples of such semantically extended compounds involving the bound plant part ‘leaf’. Where the more conventional plant part compounds classify various types of leaves, these compounds classify various types of papers, books, or ‘leaflets’. Both verb stems and nouns are used as N1s. The high productivity of this construction is illustrated by forms such as *ʔúrcu-g’ǎt* ‘bear book’, which was used in reference to a magazine of animals of Virginia; few if any of the Hupd’əh had ever heard of a bear before seeing this magazine.

- (154) = *g’ǎt*: Kinds of leaves → kinds of books

<i>cug’ǎt</i>	‘book, paper’	(also generic ‘leaf’; possibly from <i>j’ǔg = g’ǎt</i> ‘forest leaf’)
<i>b’ǒy = g’ǎt</i>	‘study book’	(<i>b’oy-</i> ‘learn/ teach’)
<i>hǐʔ = g’ǎt</i>	‘writing/notebook’	(<i>hǐʔ-</i> ‘write’)
<i>cǐy’ = g’ǎt</i>	‘vaccination leaflet’	(<i>cǐy’-</i> ‘poke in, vaccinate’)
<i>hup ʔid = g’ǎt</i>	‘Hup-language book’	(my notebook on Hup)
<i>pǐb = g’ǎt</i>	‘official documents’	(<i>pǐb</i> ‘strong; food supplies’)
<i>bǐʔ = g’ǎt</i>	‘rat book’	(for a booklet of animal pictures)
<i>ʔúrcu = g’ǎt</i>	‘bear book’	(for a magazine with pictures of bears; from Portuguese <i>urso</i> ‘bear’)

- (155) *cug’ǎt tih d’əh-ham-túk-b’ay-áh*
 paper 3sg send-go-want-AGAIN-DECL
 ‘She’s going to send the paper again.’ (cv)

Examples (156–157) list semantically extended compounds formed with the bound plant terms 'split wood', generalized to flat things, and 'fruit', generalized to round things. As these examples show, a high proportion of the NIs in such compounds are borrowed Portuguese lexical items. Note that this system lends itself to even finer layers of classification, by which individual cassette tapes can be distinguished.

(156) =*b'ah*: Split wood → flat things

<i>píta</i> = <i>b'ah</i>	'cassette tape'	(Port. <i>fita</i>)
<i>dabanáw</i> = <i>b'ah</i>	'Lambadão tape'	(Brazilian singer)
<i>yŭd</i> = <i>b'ah</i>	'neatly folded or flat square of cloth' (<i>yŭd</i> 'clothing')	
<i>wæđ</i> = <i>b'ah</i>	'spoon, plate'	(<i>wæd</i> 'eat, food')
<i>koyéra</i> = <i>b'ah</i>	'spoon'	(Port. <i>colher</i>)
<i>méca</i> = <i>b'ah</i>	'table'	(Port. <i>mesa</i>)
<i>j'žc</i> = <i>b'ah</i>	'flat-bladed planting tool'	
<i>dóna</i> = <i>b'ah</i>	'tarpaulin'	(Port. <i>lona</i>)

(157) =*tat*: Fruits → roundish things

<i>bóda</i> = <i>tat</i>	'ball'	(Port. <i>bola</i>)
<i>tăc</i> = <i>tat</i>	'soccer ball'	(<i>tac</i> - 'kick')
<i>badáw</i> = <i>tat</i>	'balloon'	(Port. <i>balão</i>)
<i>dŭc</i> = <i>tat</i>	'lightbulb'	(Port. <i>luz</i> 'light')
<i>hš</i> = <i>tat</i>	'lightbulb'	(<i>hš</i> - 'burn')
<i>motúdu</i> = <i>tat</i>	'outboard motor'	(Port. <i>motor</i>)

The plant part 'tree, stick' is generalized to long, thin, cylindrical things, as illustrated in (158a). From there, it has gone on to become the generic classifier form 'thing'. The set of entities in (158b) are still vaguely long and cylindrically shaped; but the use of =*teg* in (158c) is clearly not related to shape (also compare the use of =*teg* in words relating to abstract concepts in [152] above).

(158) =*teg*: Tree, stick → long thin thing → thing in general

a)	<i>hř?</i> = <i>teg</i>	'pencil'	(<i>hř?</i> - 'write')
	<i>véda</i> = <i>teg</i>	'candle'	(Port. <i>vela</i>)
	<i>cŭy'</i> = <i>teg</i>	'syringe'	(<i>cŭy'</i> - 'poke.in')

- b) *waydōʔ = teg* ‘airplane’ (*wayd’oʔ*- ‘fly’)
pəpəd = teg ‘car, tractor’ (*pəpəd*- ‘roll’)
- c) *nŭy’ = teg* ‘eraser’ (*nuy’*- ‘rub’)
wĩʔ = teg ‘headphones’ (*wĩʔ*- ‘listen’)

Examples of bound forms using =*hōb* ‘hollow’ (originally a stiff curled thing that grows behind the flower of certain trees), extended to shallow concave receptacles in general, are provided in (159–160).

(159) *kəwəg tŭʔ = hōb* ‘eyeglasses case’ (eye immerse=HOLLOW)

(160) ***tăh*** ***wăd = hōb-ōt = mah*** *tih* *hib’ah-ní-h*
 tapir/cow food=HOLLOW-OBL=REP 3sg be.created-INFR2-DECL
 ‘They say he was born in a cow-trough.’ (txt)

These paradigms are all based on a variable N1. However – to a lesser degree – semantically extended compounds can also form paradigms that vary the N2 component, as in examples (161–162).

(161) Types of medicine:

- yǎh = g’æt* ‘medicine leaf’ (medicine=leaf; a native term)
yǎh = wig ‘pill’ (medicine=SEED)
yǎh = deh ‘syrup’ (medicine=WATER)

(162) Flashlight and its parts:

- tŭj = teg* ‘flashlight’ (light.fire=STICK)
tŭj = wig ‘flashlight batteries’ (light.fire=SEED)

The semantically extended bound N2 forms can pile up within a single compound word, as in (163–164) (the multiple bound N2s are all unstressed).

(163) ***[[hi-m’æ = teg] = b’ah] = cuʔ***

- FACT-cool=STICK=SPLIT.WOOD=grab
 ‘refrigerator door handle’ (lit. ‘cooling-thing’s flat part’s grabber’)

- (164) *hǎ = tat = hɔb*
 burn=FRUIT=HOLLOW
 ‘light bulb socket’

As noted above, this compounding strategy based on semantically extended bound plant part terms is an extremely productive source for new lexical items in Hup. While many of the examples listed here are conventionalized (to varying degrees), speakers often coin nonce terms creatively. In (165), for example, we see two different speakers’ attempts at ‘solar panel’ (an unfamiliar object until I arrived in the village).

- (165) *mɔyǎk = b’ah* ‘mirror = SPLIT.WOOD’ > ‘solar panel’
pǎyǎy = b’ah ‘thunder/electricity = SPLIT.WOOD’ > ‘solar panel’

Example (166) lists two different ways to say refrigerator (which only a few Hupd’əh have seen).

- (166) a) *teghǎ = d’əh nǐh hǎp = yi? m’ǎ ca?*
 Non-Indian=PL POSS fish=TEL cool box
 ‘Non-Indian people’s fish-cooling box’ > ‘refrigerator’
- b) *hi-m’ǎ = teg* (FACT-cool=THING) ‘thing for cooling’ > ‘refrigerator’

Most N1s in these newly coined compound forms are either verb stems or Portuguese borrowings.⁸² The N1 can also itself be a compound (verb or noun, as in ‘eyeglasses case’ in example 159 above), or even a phrase, as in (166a) and (167). These verbal or phrasal forms of N1 are essentially more tightly integrated, lexicalized versions of the highly productive strategy of combining a relative clause with an N2 (which may be a free or bound form) (see §18.2.3).

⁸² The question of how these Portuguese loans enter Hup is an interesting one, since very few Hup speakers are fluent in Portuguese (see §1.5.3). Almost all of the loans refer to previously unknown (and thus unnamed) material objects, and many – perhaps the majority – have come via Tukano speakers. Others have probably entered children’s vocabulary in the context of the village schools or been introduced by the few Hup speakers who are fluent in Portuguese; a few have no doubt come from non-Indian visitors to the region (for example, I was responsible for introducing *ursu* ‘bear’; see above). For more discussion, see Epps (forthcoming a).

Such relative clause + bound noun forms are also used productively to refer to new objects, such as ‘ladder’ in example (168).

- (167) *kǎy b’uy-d’ǎh = hɔb*
 trash throw-send=HOLLOW
 ‘wheelbarrow’ (lit. ‘trash-throwing-out-hollow’)

- (168) *ʔin cák-ap = teg*
 1pl climb-DEP=THING
 ‘ladder’ (lit. ‘thing we climb up’)

Over 90% of these newly coined words involve a plant part as N2, but other N2s (both bound and free nouns) can also be used productively in such compounds, as in the examples in (169). Verb stems (as deverbalized forms) can also occur as N2s, as in (170).

- (169) *pǎyǎy ca?* ‘car battery’ (thunder/electricity box)
b’ǎh = tod’ ‘glass cup or jar’ (salt=container)
puh mɔyɔ ‘glass window’ (water.foam house.opening)
 (used by old people; younger prefer Port. loanword *janela*)

- (170) *tegd’uh hǎk* ‘chainsaw’ (tree saw)⁸³
kəwəg tǔ? ‘glasses’ (eye immerse)

It is worth noting that, while many Portuguese borrowings are accompanied by a bound (plant-part) N2, some items are borrowed ‘as is’ – as monomorphemic words – and do not occur in compounds:

- (171) *kópu* ‘cup’ (*copo*)
eskǒwa ‘brush’ (*escova*)
bówsa ‘backpack’ (*bolsa*)
dápi ‘pen’ (*lapisera*)

⁸³ ‘Chainsaw’ can optionally take an additional bound noun: *tegd’uh hǎk = teg* (tree saw=THING)

5.6.3. Animate entities

Almost all semantically extended or classifier-like forms in Hup refer to inanimate objects, and for the most part organize these according to shape. However, one set of bound forms is used for animate entities. These are the bound terms for man/male (= *?ih*) and woman/female (= *?āy*), which – though their prototypical use involves humans – can also be used in reference to animals, as in (172). However, the (marginal) semantic extension of these bound nouns differs from those above in that it serves only an anaphoric function; with non-human entities, the bound masculine/feminine form follows a numeral, demonstrative, or relative clause, rather than a full lexical noun as N1:⁸⁴

- (172) *g’ōg, ?āh káy-ep = ?ih*
 titi.monkey 1sg see-DEP=MSC
 ‘The titi monkey, the one I saw.’ (el)

5.6.4. A classifier system?

The bound constructions discussed above are clearly distinct from the plant whole-part compounds from which they derive. The bound plant part terms, semantically extended according to shape, now resemble noun classifiers.

Despite their differences, however, the two bound realizations of plant part terms (plant-part vs. noun-classifier) share a common functional and semantic basis. The classifying terms, like bound nouns generally, contribute to the individuation of a referent from the set of potential referents. In fact, this individuating function has been identified as a basic feature of noun classifiers generally: cross-linguistically, classifiers arguably serve to narrow down the semantic referent from an amorphous mass to a specified entity. In a classic paper on noun classification, Denny (1976: 130) observes that classifiers’ “semantic function is to place objects in classes having to do with human interaction with the environment”. Similarly, Broschart (2000: 264) notes that classifiers have a gestalt function: they give objects a kind of metaphorical “contour” (i.e., a capacity for manipulation, physical or otherwise) that is necessary for “the discrimination of units and for the possibility of recognizing units of a single

⁸⁴ To express the sex of an animal, the free lexemes *tīyī?* ‘man’ and *tā?āy* ‘woman’ (rather than the bound forms) occur together with the animal’s name in a compound, such that a male titi monkey would be *g’ōg tīyī?*; the semantic extension is thus essentially the same.

kind". A comparable phenomenon is the classifier-like function of 'measure terms', which individuate units of mass nouns in perhaps all languages; for example, 'a cup of tea', 'a pinch of salt' (see §4.4.3).

Given this function of classifiers, we might expect the N1 term in classifier constructions cross-linguistically to relate more specifically to a property or material than to a specific entity, as has been observed for classifier languages like Yucatec and Japanese (Lucy 1992, Lucy and Gaskins 2003). There is some evidence that this is indeed the case in Hup. For example, one Hup speaker referred to a cough drop as *ków* 'hot pepper'; when I asked why, her response was "because it burns" (i.e., a property, whereas specific hot-pepper entities can be differentiated as *ków=tat* 'pepper fruit'; *ków=b'ók* 'pot of pepper broth', etc.). Similarly, the Portuguese borrowing *wéda* ('candle', from *vela*) was used to refer both to a puddle of wax on my desk and to the entire candle – i.e., a word referring to an entity ('candle') in the donor language has been interpreted as an undifferentiated material ('wax') in the borrowing language. If necessary, the wax puddle and the candle can be distinguished as *wéda=cóg* 'wax piece' vs. *wéda=teg* 'wax stick; candle'. The Hup case is strikingly similar to the corresponding example given by Lucy (1997: 298) of noun classification in Yucatec Maya; in Yucatec, property or material concepts like 'wax' are differentiated into entities by numeral classifiers, whereby 'one candle' is designated by *un-tz'fit kib* 'one **long thin** wax'. In Yucatec, however, this strategy permeates the noun lexicon, whereas in Hup it is limited and is most common with neologisms.

5.6.4.1. *From bound nouns to classifiers: a grammaticalization story*

Clearly, a subset of bound nouns – mainly plant part terms – have become noun classifiers. But how did the shift from plant parts to classifying terms come about? Where and how, exactly, have the two diverged?

Most importantly, while both non-semantically extended plant-part compounds and classifying compounds have to do with individuation, they may differ as to *what* is being individuated. In particular, the simple paradigms of noun-noun compounds (in which no semantic extension is involved) have a certain ambiguity regarding which component is being specified. This is especially the case with the plant-part compounds.

As we have seen, a plant-part compound can be interpreted either as encoding a whole-part relationship, or as encoding a property-entity relationship – which is inherently one of classification. A speaker may be dealing either with a banana tree and focusing on its leaf, or with a pile of leaves and picking out a particular banana leaf. Does the Hup speaker start with 'banana' and restrict it to 'leaf-part-of', or with 'leaf' and restrict it to 'banana-type'? Is he or she fore-

grounding the property, as defined by the entity, or the entity, as defined by the property? The compound itself is neutral as to what counts as the 'figure' or new information, and what as the 'ground' or given information (cf. Talmy 1978).

In defining a given set of compounds, this question of figure and ground translates into the question of which slot in the compound – the slot expressing the different types of leaves, or the different parts of a tree – is likely to be more salient in speakers' daily lives. For Hup speakers, as discussed in §5.4.3, the most prototypical paradigmatic oppositions in plant-part compounds involve a constant form as the second member of the compound (N2) and a varied set of forms as the first member (N1); moreover, the stress pattern (where N1 receives primary stress) reflects the fact that the speaker's attention is more likely to correspond to the variable form than the constant one. This higher salience of one paradigm type over the other reflects the typical interaction of speakers with their environment: a Hup speaker is much more likely to be concerned about the identity of a leaf or stick, because that is crucial to what he or she can do or make with that object.

In the case of the classifier-type constructions, this tendency to foreground the (N1) property has become crystallized – it is now the only option. Just as 'banana-leaf' gives us information about the identity of the leaf, 'study-LEAF' gives us information about the type of book, but here no whole-part construal is possible. The first member of the compound (N1) has now become the focus of the construction; in some sense, it can now be considered the *semantic head*. The fact that *phonological* stress already falls on the N1 form in these constructions surely helps to reinforce the interpretation that it is also *semantically* stressed. At the same time, the bound N2 form in these classifying constructions is becoming a grammaticalized morpheme, and as such is becoming categorially distinct from 'regular' bound nouns. Its lack of stress and its compound-final position give it a resemblance to the unstressed enclitics that are extremely common elsewhere in Hup grammar. Finally, while metaphorical extension is a frequently encountered feature of compound constructions in Hup (especially metaphors involving N2), the existence of large plant-part paradigm sets of the variable N1 type (as in examples 105–106 above) probably fostered the conventionalization of *particular* metaphorical extensions, which in each case became codified along one specific semantic parameter, notably shape (cf. Lakoff's Idealized Cognitive Model, 1987).

There is also evidence that the reinterpretation of the semantic head in these classifying compounds is being played out in the syntax of these constructions as well. In some cases, the N1 of the construction is now arguably the *syntactic* head, as well as the semantic head. The most likely force behind this change is lexical borrowing from Portuguese and/or Tukano; this generated new terms, which Hup speakers would have organized according to the system already

present in their language for dealing with manufactured or manipulated items. However, since the new terms first came into the language as independent monomorphemic nominals, they naturally assumed the function of nominal heads, to which the classifying form was subsequently added. Given the large (and growing) number of these borrowed nominals, the classifying forms are gradually coming to be perceived as something extra, tacked on to the main entity. In some cases, the presence of the classifier is in fact optional:

- (173) *píta* (= *b'ah*) 'cassette tape' (Port. *fita*=SPLIT.WOOD)
mandádiya (= *wig*) 'medallion on necklace' (Port. *medalhão*=SEED)
wéda (= *teg*) 'candle' (Port. *vela* =STICK)
badáw (= *tat*) 'balloon' (Port. *balão*=FRUIT)

This 'tacked-on' effect of classifying terms is even found with a few native words, such as those in (174), in which the classifier appears optionally:

- (174) *nɔg'æd* (= *b'ah*) 'tongue' (tongue=SPLIT.WOOD)
núh(= *tat*) *pog* 'a big head' (head=FRUIT big)
 (when emphasizing shape/size of head)

5.6.4.2. *Functions of the Hup classifier system and the typology of noun classification*

The transitional appearance of the Hup classifier-like system brings us to the next question: How do the Hup noun classifying terms fit into a general typology of classifiers? Below, I consider the various functions of the Hup classifier-like bound forms vis-à-vis the functions of noun classifiers cross-linguistically, and evaluate the arguments for characterizing the Hup case as an incipient noun classifier system.

A. Derivation

To the extent that the N1 members of compounds can be considered heads of the noun phrase, the classifying nouns – in cases where N1 is a verbal stem – can be understood to have the derivational function of creating an object or instrument nominalization from the verb stem, as in (175) (although the verb stems may themselves already be understood as nominalized; see above). Such derivational functions are common for noun classifiers in other languages (see

Aikhenvald 2000b: 220), especially those of Western Amazonia (Grinevald and Seifart 2004).

- (175) *wĩʔ = teg* (listen=THING) ‘thing for listening’ > ‘headphones’
tác = tat (kick=FRUIT) ‘round for kicking’ > ‘soccer ball’
kæy b’uy-d’ǎh = hɔb (trash throw-send=HOLLOW)
 ‘hollow for throwing out trash’ > ‘wheelbarrow’

B. Anaphoric reference

One of the most common functions of classifier terms in Hup is that of anaphoric reference, as in examples (176–178). Classifying nouns can refer anaphorically back to the full compound (or directly to a physically present object) in constructions where the N1 is the default/possessor form *tih =*, a demonstrative (176), a numeral (177), or a relative clause (178). An anaphoric function is a common feature of noun classifiers generally, especially in Amazonian languages (cf. Derbyshire and Payne 1990: 243).

- (176) *yĩ-n’ih hid bíʔ-ih, núp = tat*
 that.ITG-NMZ 3pl work-DECL this=FRUIT
 ‘Thus they made it (a clay musical instrument), this size (round).’
 (showing with hands) (txt)

- (177) *kaʔap = tǎg !*
 two=STICK
 ‘(There are) two of them!’ (watching flying airplanes: *wayd’óʔ = teg*
 [fly=STICK])

- (178) *nup bóda = tat-ʔǎʔ, [núp d’ɔh-yǎt-æp] = tat*
 this ball=FRUIT-PERF this rot-lie.on.ground-DEP=FRUIT
 ‘This was a ball, this rotting round thing lying here.’ (el)

This anaphoric function is *not* specific to classifying nouns, however. In their non-semantically extended use, the plant-part forms and various other bound nouns can be used for anaphoric reference in just the same way:

- (179) *dǎg = wíg b’ah-yóʔ... tih = wíg wɔt-d’ɔh-way-yóʔ*
 vapisuna=seed split-SEQ 3sg=seed pull.out-send-go.out-SEQ
 ‘Having split a vapisuna seed, having pulled the seed’s insides out...’
 (txt)

(180) **deh = mǐ** *kěy = d'əh* *hám-b'ay-áh*,
 water=river see=PL go-AGAIN-DECL

cǎp = mǐ *pǎ-ay-áh*
 another=river go.upstream-INCH-DECL
 'They went again to see the river, and went up another river.' (txt)

With relative clauses, numerals, and demonstratives, the bound or classifier form may be interchangeable with a distinct monomorphemic head noun, depending on how specific the speaker chooses to be, as in (181). However, the slot cannot be filled by a full compound if a bound form is available. Thus either the lexeme *cug'ǎt* 'leaf, paper, book (generic)' or the bound form =*g'ǎt* 'leaf, paper, book' can follow a relative clause, but not *pihít = g'ǎt* 'banana leaf' or *hǐ? = g'ǎt* 'notebook'.

(181) a) [*?ǎh kéy-ep*] **g'og** *cak-yǐ?-ǐy*
 1sg see-DEP titi.monkey climb-DYNM
 'The titi monkey I saw climbed up.'

b) [*?ǎh kéy-ep*] = **?ǐh** *cak-yǐ?-ǐy*
 1sg see-DEP-MS climb-DYNM
 'The one I saw climbed up.' (el)

C. Agreement

Hup classifying terms can arguably serve a marginal agreement-marking function by virtue of appearing, optionally, on multiple constituents of the clause (as with noun class marking in Bantu, for example), as in (182). This concord has been identified by Grinevald (2002) as a hallmark of a true nominal classification system. However, this agreement-like phenomenon is extremely rare in natural discourse in Hup (being confined mostly to elicitation contexts), and may be better characterized as apposition of distinct noun phrases, rather than as marking concord within a single noun phrase.

(182) *núp = (g'ǎt)* *pihít = g'ǎt* *tih = pǒg = (g'ǎt)*
 this=LEAF banana=LEAF 3sg=big=LEAF
 'this big banana leaf' (el)

5.6.4.3. An incipient classifier system

Typologically, the Hup system is best characterized as an incipient classifier or 'class term' system (cf. DeLancey 1986, Grinevald 2000).⁸⁵ It falls near the lexical end of Grinevald's proposed scale of classifier grammaticalization:

<Lexical-----> <i>measure terms</i> <i>class terms</i>	----->Grammatical <i>noun classes, gender</i>
--	--

The arguments for considering the Hup system to be incipient are the following.

- a) Only a small subset of Hup bound nouns – and even of plant-part terms – are consistently used in metaphorically extended ways (see the list in example 153 above).
- b) For the most part, the contexts of semantic extension have to do with newly introduced cultural items, and the influx of these items is a relatively recent phenomenon – the majority have become available within the lifetime of adult speakers. Some bound nouns appear to have been only recently extended in semantically specific ways, in order to classify a particular variety of new item; the best example of this is *leaf* > *book*.
- c) The bound classifier nouns have undergone little grammaticalization and essentially no phonological reduction; they are all recognizable nouns that can act as heads elsewhere (cf. the incipient classifier systems in some Australian languages; e.g., Reid 1997, Wilkins 2000, Grinevald 2000: 84).
- d) The classifying terms are used for derivation, but are used only minimally for agreement-marking purposes (see §5.6.4.2 above).
- e) The presence of the classifying form is sometimes optional in the noun phrase (see §5.6.4.1 above), and is absent altogether from most nouns in Hup.

In the future, we might expect the Hup classifiers to become more grammaticalized and more obligatory. In the process, we might also expect the Hup

⁸⁵ Ospina (2002: 217–220) likewise identifies Yuhup classification as a class term system, i.e., a minimally grammaticalized nominal classification system. As is true for Hup, she notes that Yuhup class terms have a transparent lexical origin, can serve a derivational function, and have different degrees of productivity within the lexicon (but, unlike Hup, Yuhup's class terms are reportedly most productive with terms for animal types, plant types, and plant parts).

system to gradually come to resemble closely the classifier system of the East Tukanoan languages, which have probably already played an important role in shaping the Hup system's development via areal diffusion (see the Historical note below).

Historical note

The grammaticalization story of the Hup classifying nouns, from nominal heads to something resembling encliticized modifiers, has been outlined above in §5.6.4.1. In this Historical note, I consider the question of what may have served to trigger this process of metaphorical extension and reanalysis. Three main catalysts can be identified.

The first of these was a sudden influx of new cultural items requiring names. As noted above, this is a relatively recent phenomenon. The Hupd'əh have been in direct – though sporadic – contact with non-indigenous Brazilian culture for only about thirty-five years. Before this, they had access to some trade goods through their interaction with Tukanoan groups, but this undoubtedly amounted to nowhere near the variety of items that they are exposed to now.

Hup already had the necessary linguistic raw materials for a classifier system at hand – a system of noun compounding and bound nouns, which could be understood as paradigmatic sets based on manipulation of the materials in one's environment. These essentially comprised a highly specialized classification system.⁸⁶ The seeds of the classifier-like metaphorical extensions have also probably been present for some time. Several classifier-like terms exist in Hup's sister language Dāw (including extended plant terms in names for body parts; Martins 1994: 47–52, 181–82), but these are otherwise characterized by little or no semantic extension. Hup's most closely related sister Yuhup, like Hup, uses semantically extended plant-part terms for body parts and other objects, including some neologisms (Ospina 2002: 209–220). Such semantically extended terms seem to be lacking from the more distantly related language Nadëb, but Nadëb does have a limited system of possessor classifiers (Weir 1984). When suddenly faced with a flood of new items, Hup simply expanded its existing system for cataloguing manipulable or manufactured objects, which thus blossomed into a system of nominal classification.

Cross-linguistically, similar semantic extensions of nominal forms – often of existing classifiers – from native to newly introduced cultural items are quite

⁸⁶ Moreover, there is considerable cross-linguistic precedent for nominal compound constructions to develop conventionalized classifier-like functions; e.g., in Australian and even Indo-European languages (Hackstein forthcoming).

common. For example, the Australian language Ngan'gityemerri (Reid 1997) has a 'tree' class which includes all trees, tree products and wooden things, and hence manufactured objects of any substance; another Australian language, Gurr-Goni (Green 1995, cited in Aikhenvald 2000b: 408), has generalized a classifier for traditional wood canoes to other boats, and thence to airplanes. Jakaltek (Craig 1986, Grinevald 2000: 85) extended 'rock' to metal and glass, and 'corn' to wheat and wheat products, and the Thai classifier *khan* 'thing with handles' went from bicycles to all vehicles (Aikhenvald 2000b: 348).

In the Hup case, it is no great surprise that the shape-based semantic extensions of bound nouns all involve plant parts. Plant parts are a ubiquitous feature of the Amazonian rainforest environment, and provide the raw material for the great majority of native manufactured items – much more so than in many other parts of the world, where stone, leather, and other materials play a larger role.⁸⁷ In fact, noun classification is not the only manifestation of the importance of plant parts in Hup grammar; the bound noun =*teg* 'stick' did not stop when it became the generic classifier/nominalizer 'thing', but continued to grammaticalize into a marker of purpose, and thence to a verbal future-tense marker (see §13.1).

However, we may still ask why Hup would have recourse specifically to classifier forms in naming these new items, given that classifiers are not required on other nouns in the language generally. This question points to a second catalyst for the development of the system. This is linguistic conservatism – namely, the perceived need to *avoid* wholesale lexical borrowing in order to maintain linguistic identity. As discussed in (§1.5), it appears to be a feature of the Vaupés region as a whole (probably fostered by the linguistic exogamy system among River Indian groups) that speakers of various language groups consider their identity to be intrinsically connected to their primary (i.e., father's) language. This cultural focus on the emblematic function of language has led speakers of many Vaupés languages to consciously resist lexical borrowing, even while unconsciously allowing their languages to converge on a structural level (e.g., Sorensen 1967, Jackson 1983, Aikhenvald 2002a). Probably for this reason, Hup speakers often create a word from all-Hup components (verb/noun stem + classifier) for a new item, even when they are aware of its name in Tukanó or Portuguese (see §5.6.2 footnote above regarding Hup speakers' access

⁸⁷ The Hupd'əh do use animal bone, turtle shell, stone, and (untanned) animal hide for a few items (such as the deer-bone flute mentioned above), but these uses are minimal. Traditionally, plants have provided gourds and leaves for bowls and cups, bark (softened by pounding) for native 'cloth', the materials and venom for blowpipes and darts, bows and arrows, etc.

to Portuguese words). Likewise, when Hup speakers do use a borrowed word, they often tack on an extra piece of Hup morphology, a classifying term, to give the new name a clear Hup stamp.

Finally, language contact with Tukano was surely an additional motivating force behind the development of the classifier system. While at first glance this would seem to be diametrically opposed to linguistic conservatism as a catalyst, the two factors manifest themselves in different ways, which are not at all incompatible. It is a general fact among Vaupés languages that intense language contact has led to considerable *structural* convergence, despite speakers' conscious efforts to keep their languages free from *lexical* mixing. In fact, classifier systems in other Vaupés languages have been shown to be sensitive to language contact (Gómez-Imbert 1996 for Cubeo-Baniwa, Aikhenvald 2002a for Tukano-Tariana).

Classifiers are an important feature of Tukanoan grammar, and in many ways the Hup system looks like an incipient version of the Tukanoan one: Tukanoan languages classify physical objects principally on the basis of shape, and animate entities on the basis of gender (see Gómez-Imbert 1982, 1996, 2007b, Aikhenvald 2000b), just as we have seen for Hup. Moreover, classifiers in Tukanoan languages appear in noun phrases with numerals, adjectives, and demonstratives, with nouns as derivational markers, and with relativized verbal forms (Aikhenvald 2000b), just as they do in Hup.

From a typological point of view, the Hup case is particularly intriguing because it represents a classifier system in its initial stages of development. Moreover, this is one of the relatively rare cases in which the effect of an identifiable cultural change is clearly visible in the grammar of a language. Finally, despite the likelihood that culturally novel experiences have driven the development of the Hup noun classification system, its dependence on plant parts shows that the Hupd'oh have dealt with these new experiences in ways that make sense within their world view, in keeping with life in the rainforest.

Comparative note

In general, noun classification systems are fairly common in Amazonia, but vary considerably in their complexity. On the one hand are highly developed systems like those in the Tukanoan languages (as mentioned above), in which classifiers are ubiquitous and can occur on multiple elements of the clause (e.g., Barnes 1990, Aikhenvald 2000b); on the other, many systems appear to be in their incipient stages, like Hup. The link between possession and noun classification in Hup is also paralleled in Bora (Witotoan), where classifier constructions may be derived historically from possessive constructions (Weber 2002: 7). Seifart (2003) also points out the importance of the individuating and deriva-

tional functions of classifiers in Witotoan languages, particularly in reference to plant parts (fruit, tree, leaf); this is plainly reminiscent of the Hup case.

A number of Amazonian systems rely heavily on terms related to plant parts for nominal classification, just as Hup does (and likewise Yuhup, as noted above). For example, the Arawak language Apuriña (Facundes 2000) appears to have an incipient classifier system that bears remarkable similarity to the system in Hup: a subset of bound or inalienably possessed nouns, many relating to parts of plants, has taken on semantic extensions and classifier-like properties. Another example is Yanomam (a Yanomami language; Goodwin Gómez 2000), with a more fully developed classifier system in which phonologically reduced forms are required on most nouns; again, most of the classifiers terms are related to plant parts. This widespread reliance on plant parts in classification makes obvious sense vis-à-vis the Amazonian rainforest environment, which is characterized by an enormous variety of plants, but a relatively scarcity of stone and other raw materials. Thus most Amazonian peoples, like the Hupd'əh, rely heavily on plant parts as a source of raw materials for manufactured items. Their focus on this maximally salient part of their material world is borne out in the linguistic coding of their interaction with it.

Chapter 6

The noun phrase: modification and definiteness

This chapter deals with issues relating to the noun phrase and its behavior within the clause, with a particular focus on modification and definiteness. While Chapter 5 dealt with the compound noun, a noun phrase composed of two (or more) associated members of the open class of nouns, this chapter examines the closed classes of nominal modifiers – demonstratives, quantifiers, and adjectives – and their roles within the noun phrase. It also addresses the ability of members of these closed word classes to act as nominal heads in their own right, occurring in lieu of a noun or noun phrase as the argument of a verb. A few additional non-nominal functions (adverbial, determiner, etc.) of these closed word classes (specifically interrogative pronouns and demonstratives) are briefly considered here as well. In the final section of this chapter, I also briefly discuss noun phrase coordination. Issues relating to case marking have been dealt with in §4.3; locative postpositions, which typically combine with a noun to form an adverbial phrase within the clause, are discussed in §10.3.

A basic phrase structure template for the noun phrase (in which the noun stem N may be either compound or simple) is provided here. The order of the constituents is fairly rigid within the noun phrase itself; when numerals, demonstratives, or possessors follow the noun, they are probably best interpreted as appositional noun phrases in their own right, or even as predicate nominals.

NP → (Dem – POSS PN – Numeral) N (Adj)

6.1. Pronouns

While the form of the Hup personal pronouns and their inflected variants are covered in §4.1.2 (and §5.2), the present discussion deals briefly with their syntax – that is, their ability to represent noun phrases in the clause. A discussion of the differences in clausal constituent order between pronouns and full noun phrases relative to the verb is given in §17.3.1.

The subject pronouns are here re-summarized in Table 27. As can be seen in the more detailed paradigm given in Table 21, §4.1.2, Hup pronouns – like nouns in general – take basic inflectional and derivational forms relating to case, number, and possession, as well as various bound focus and discourse-marking forms (Chapter 7). With the exception of suppletive forms (formed via

phonological reduction) for the first person singular object (*ʔǎn*) and possessive (*nǎ*) pronouns, inflected pronouns are essentially regular.

Table 27. Hup subject pronouns

1sg	<i>ʔǎh</i>
2sg	<i>ʔám</i>
3sg (M or F)	<i>tíh</i>
1pl	<i>ʔǎn</i>
2pl	<i>nǎŋ</i>
3pl	<i>híd</i>

As can be seen in Table 27, a number distinction (singular/plural) is lexically encoded in pronouns. Although gender is not encoded, it can be specified if necessary; in such cases the pronoun has a determiner-like function: *híd ʔǎy = d'əh* (3pl FEM=PL) 'those women'.

The singular and plural forms of the 'Intangible' demonstrative (see §6.3 below) are common variants of the basic third person pronouns (and can appear as such in any grammatical role: subject, object, or oblique).⁸⁸ They are particularly preferred in clause-final (post-verbal) position in subject function, where they require the Declarative marker (like all post-verbal subjects; see §17.3.1). Thus post-verbally one typically finds the Intangible forms *yúw-úh* and *yi-d'əh-śh*, rather than *tíh-íh* and *híd-íh* (example 1).

- (1) *naw-nǎh mún ʔǎh-mǎh-ní-íy bíg yi-d'əh-śh !*
 good-NEG INTS2 INTRC-beat-be-DYNM HAB that.ITG-PL-DECL
 'There are always loads of them fighting!' (cv)

When they precede the verb in the clause, subject pronouns in Hup are typically immediately preposed to the verb. They appear to be developing a marginally procliticized status: in this position, they are unstressed, and in the Umari Norte dialect the third person singular pronoun (the most frequent in narrative) is phonologically dependent on its verbal host in some contexts (undergoing loss of final [h] and assimilating the vowel of the verb stem), as example (2)

⁸⁸ Such double-duty of a demonstrative form is quite common cross-linguistically. Dies-sel (1999: 119) observes that third person pronouns often derive historically from pronominal demonstratives; one example is Latin *ille* 'that, yon' > Romance third person pronouns such as Spanish *él* and Portuguese *ele* 'he' (e.g., Giusti 2001).

illustrates. This process may represent the incipient development of cross-referencing prefixes in the verb.

- (2) *yí-níh-íy* *ta-way-máh-āh*, *míh-íh*,
that.ITG-be.like-DYNM 3sg-go.out-REP-DECL turtle-DECL

táh *tš-ʔšh-št-šh*

tapir 3sg-sleep-OBL-DECL

‘So he went out, they say, the turtle, into the place where the tapir was sleeping.’ (txt, Umari Norte dialect)

As in most languages, Hup pronouns (including their possessive variants, as in example 3) are deictic forms that can occur as arguments of predicates, in lieu of a noun phrase; as such, they refer anaphorically to an entity that would otherwise be indicated by a full noun phrase, or else refer deictically to the physical context.

- (3) *tih = pög* *tiníh-íh*
3sg=big 3sg.POSS-DECL
‘The big one is his.’ (el)

Hup discourse relies heavily on pronouns. Any constituent may be referred to anaphorically by a pronoun (or by a demonstrative, see below) if its referent can be recovered from the context. The principal protagonist in a narrative is often referred to exclusively by the third person singular pronoun *tih* for the entire story. Even within the same clause, it is common to refer to multiple participants with the same third person pronoun. In (4), one participant is a subject and one an object; here case marking and context are enough to differentiate the referents. In (5), the first instance of *tih* refers anaphorically to ‘her husband’ – introduced as such immediately afterwards – and the second *tih* refers back to the spirit woman who was the subject of the previous clause.

- (4) *tih = tít* *pög-ót* *tíh-ǎn* *tih* *yók-ay-áh*
3sg=vine big-OBL 3sg-OBJ 3sg poke-INCH-DECL
‘With a big thorn he poked him.’ (txt)

- (5) *yup* *hūyʔah-ay = mah* *tih* *wid-yé-éh*, *tih = tǎhʔíp-íh*
that after-INCH=REP 3sg arrive-enter-DECL 3sg=child.father-DECL
‘After that he entered, her husband.’ (txt)

The third person pronoun in Hup is also used generically in reference to an idea, proposition, or some other relatively abstract referent which is not specified precisely. For example, together with the contrastive emphasis (Telic) marker =*yí?* (§7.1.2), it can mean ‘exactly that’ (as in 6, where the speaker is seconding another’s joking statement), or ‘relating specifically to X’, as in (7).⁸⁹

- (6) *tíh* = *yí?* *cáp*, *tíh* = *yí?* *cáp* !
 3sg=TEL INTS1 3sg=TEL INTS1
 ‘Exactly that, exactly!’ (cv)

- (7) *n’i-có?-óy = d’əh* *tíh* = *yí?* *?ǐd*,
 that-LOC-DYNM=PL 3sg=TEL speech

?ín = hin = b’ay *tíh* = *yí?* *?ǐd*
 1pl=also=AGAIN 3sg=TEL speech
 ‘The ones from over there have their own language, and we have our own language.’ (txt)

The third singular pronoun *tíh* has additional uses which have relatively little to do with its pronominal function: it occurs as the default N1 in most bound noun constructions, where it acts as a general specifier (see §5.4), and it similarly occurs with adjectives as a nominalizer (see §6.6). The second person plural form *níŋ* also occurs elsewhere as a ‘Cooperative’ verbal suffix and (in limited contexts) as a verbal stem (§14.5).

6.2. Question words

While they can functionally be considered as a single set, Hup question words formally fall into two distinct sets. They are built on only two basic forms, *?ǎy* ‘who’, used exclusively for animate (almost always human) referents, and the interrogative particle *hĩ*. In form, morphological patterning, and semantics, *?ǎy* is essentially a personal pronoun with properties closely resembling those of the other pronouns given in §6.1 above (i.e., primarily human reference, inflecting for case, possession, etc.). The interrogative particle *hĩ*, on the other hand, patterns formally with the demonstratives, as is evident from Table 22 in §4.1.2, and from the tables in §6.3 below. Depending on its inflection, it can act as an interrogative pronoun, determiner, and/or adverbial. A relationship between

⁸⁹ Here *tíh* = *yí?* appears to be used as an adnominal modifier.

demonstratives and interrogatives like that found in Hup is not uncommon cross-linguistically, according to Diessel (2003: 636), who notes that demonstratives and interrogative pronouns “tend to encode the same semantic features and have a number of morphosyntactic properties in common”. The Hup question words, in basic and inflected forms, are summarized in Table 28.

Table 28. Hup question words

Forms based on interrogative particle	Pronoun, determiner, adverbial?	‘Who’ (human referent)	Inflection
<i>hĩ-</i>		<i>ʔũy</i>	Uninflected form
<i>hĩp</i> ‘which?’	PN, DET		- <i>p</i> (from Dependent)
<i>hĩt</i>	ADV		- <i>t</i> (from Oblique)
‘where? in what way?’			
<i>hĩw-ǎn</i>	PN	<i>ʔũy-ǎn</i> ‘whom’	- <i>ǎn</i> Object
‘which one (obj)?’			
<i>hĩw-ĩt</i>	PN	<i>ʔũy-út</i> ‘with whom’	- <i>ĩt</i> Oblique
‘with which one?’			
		<i>ʔũy-úh</i> ‘who-DECL’	- <i>úh</i> Declarative
<i>hĩ-có?</i>	ADV	<i>ʔũy có?</i> ‘who LOC’ (focus)	<i>có?</i> Locative
‘at/to what location?’			
<i>hĩ-kán</i> ⁹⁰	ADV		- <i>kán</i> Directional (Unproductive elsewhere)
‘in/from what direction?’			
<i>hĩ-n’ih</i>	PN, DET		- <i>n’ih</i> Nominalizer
‘what, what kind?’			
<i>hĩ-ʔǎp</i>	DET		- <i>ʔǎp</i> Quantity, number
‘how many?’			
<i>hĩ-m’ǎé</i>	PN		- <i>m’ǎé</i> Amount, measurement
‘when, how much?’		<i>ʔũy nĩh</i> ‘whose’	<i>nĩh</i> Possessive

⁹⁰ Corresponding to a general morphophonological process in Hup, an epenthetic glottal stop or homorganic consonant marks the morpheme/syllable boundary, here and in all other cases (including the demonstratives in the tables below) where a bound form precedes an obstruent-initial inflectional morpheme (see §2.5). The glottal stop is not written in the transcription.

Forms based on interrogative particle	Pronoun, determiner, adverbial?	'Who' (human referent)	Inflection
<i>hĩ nih-</i> 'in what way?' ⁹¹	ADV		<i>nih-</i> 'be.like'
<i>hĩ nɔ-</i> 'saying what?' (<i>hiniy?</i> 'what did you say?') ⁹²	ADV		<i>nɔ-</i> 'say'
<i>hiniykeyó?</i> 'why' [<i>hĩ-nih-ĩy key-yó?</i> Q-be.like-DYNM see-SEQ]	ADV		<i>-nih-ĩy</i> 'be.like-DYNM' <i>-key-yó?</i> 'see-SEQ' ('cause')

Question words are always clause-initial, and their use generally requires a clause-final verb taking the interrogative marker *-V?* (see §17.4 for a full discussion of interrogative clauses and their syntax). These forms also occur in non-interrogative clauses as indefinite pronouns (§6.4 below).

Examples (8–10) illustrate the use of interrogative *?ũy* 'who'.⁹³ In (8–9), it stands in for a noun phrase, as subject and inflected object; in (10), it occurs in combination with a bound human noun in a compound construction, as a type of modifier or determiner. Note that – like the lexically singular personal pronouns – *?ũy* cannot inflect for number, but does take the Associative plural form *-ãnd'əh* (see §4.4.6). The form *?ũy* has one additional use, beyond its function as an interrogative pronoun; it occurs as an enclitic in constructions meaning 'one from/associated with' (see §7.5).

- (8) *?ũy yĩ nɔ-ɔ?* ?
 who that.ITG say-INT
 'Who said that?' (cv)

⁹¹ This use of *hĩ* with the verb 'be like' occurs in the Tat Deh dialect area, but not in that of Barreira Alta, where speakers use *hĩp = yi?* *nih-* instead.

⁹² This expression may be a reduced form of *hĩ nɔ-ɔy ?ám* 'what are/did you say(ing)?' or of *hĩ nih-ĩy?* 'in what way, how's that?'; compare *yiniy* 'thus, in this way' from demonstrative *yu-/yĩ-*.

⁹³ While it is cross-linguistically common to treat the interrogative pronoun referring to humans (i.e., 'who') distinctly, the distinction in Hup is also consistent with the special treatment of humans in Hup grammar generally; see §4.3.1.2, §4.4.1, and §5.4–5.5.

- (9) *ʔǔy-ǎn = yíʔ tih nɔ-ʔʔ ʔǔy-ǎn ?*
 who-OBJ=TEL 3sg say-INT who-OBJ
 ‘To whom did she say that? To whom?’ (cv)
- (10) *ʔǔy = ʔih tih ?*
 who=MSC 3sg
 ‘Who’s that?’ (el)

As a nominal, the interrogative particle *hĩ* usually appears in its derived form *hĩ-n’ih* ‘what’ (interrogative + nominalizer suffix), which can occur as a full noun phrase and take Oblique case marking (though not Object marking; example 11), and can modify another noun within a noun phrase (example 12). Other forms of *hĩ* commonly occurring in noun phrases include *hĩp* ‘which’ and *hĩ-ʔǎp* ‘how many’, which modify nouns as interrogative determiners.

- (11) *hĩ-n’ih-ĩt tih yɔhɔy-ɔʔ ?*
 Q-NMZ-OBL 3sg search-INT
 ‘With what is he searching?’ (txt)
- (12) *hĩ-n’ih hĩp yúp = b’ay ?*
 Q-NMZ fish that.ITG=AGAIN
 ‘What kind of fish is that?’ (cv)

Interrogative *hĩ* also has adverbial functions relating to direction, location, and time, as in examples (13–14).

- (13) *hĩkán ʔam hám-ãʔ ?*
 to.where 2sg go-INT
 ‘Where are you going?’ (cv)
- (14) *hĩ-m’æ tih y’æt-cɔp-ɔʔ ?*
 Q-MEAS 3sg lay-go.from.river-INT
 ‘When did he leave it by the river?’ (cv)

Like demonstratives (see below), interrogative *hĩ* is in general unable to stand alone as an uninflected form. The only exception is its occurrence with two verbal forms, *nɔ-* ‘say’ and *nih-* ‘be like’ (examples 15–16), where it occurs (unmarked) in object function; here it can be separated from the verb by a subject pronoun (16), an additional verb root in a compound, or other morphology.

(15) *hĩ nɔ-ɔ̃y tih ?*
 Q say-DYNM he
 ‘What did he say?’ (cv)

(16) *hĩ hid nĩh-ĩ? ? tih nĩh=cud ʔũhníy*
 Q 3pl be.like-INT 3sg be.like=INFR EPIST.be
 ‘What are they doing? He’s doing something, apparently.’ (txt)

6.3. Demonstratives

The Hup demonstrative system involves four basic terms, which combine with various bound inflectional suffixes and enclitics to create a large set of derived forms (summarized in Table 22, §4.1.2). The semantic distinctions encoded by the system are proximal, distal, ‘intangible’ (where physical accessibility is lacking or irrelevant), and alternative (i.e., ‘other’);⁹⁴ these are contrasted in example (17). Example (18) illustrates the same contrast, but with temporal rather than spatial reference. The interrogative particle *hĩ* (described in §6.2 above) also patterns like these demonstratives and can be considered part of a larger formal system.

- (17) Prox: *núp=g’æt* ‘this leaf’ (relatively close by)
 Dist: *n’íp=g’æt* ‘that leaf’ (relatively further away)
 Intg: *yúp=g’æt* ‘that leaf’ (esp. if out of sight or not physically present)
 Alter: *cǎp=g’æt* ‘another, a different leaf’
- (18) Prox: *núp g’i* ‘this year’
 Dist: *n’íp g’i* ‘last year’
 Intg: *yúp g’i* ‘that (some other) year’
 Alter: *cǎp g’i* ‘next year’

Syntactically, the various derived forms fulfill all of the major functions of demonstratives, as identified by Diessel (1999: 57–58). They occur as independent pronouns in argument positions of verbs and adpositions (where they

⁹⁴ Determining the parameters of use for these demonstratives was aided by Wilkins (1999).

are used in lieu of nouns or noun phrases and inflect for case, number, and so on just as nouns do), and they occur together with nouns in noun phrases as determiners (Hup has no definite/indefinite articles *per se*). Demonstrative forms can also occur as adverbs modifying a verb, and as demonstrative ‘identifiers’ in copular and nonverbal clauses.

This discussion focuses on the semantics, morphology, and syntax of the Hup demonstratives. The Proximal, Distal, Intangible, and Alterative terms are discussed in turn.

A. Proximal demonstrative

The basic form of the Proximal demonstrative is *nu-*, with variant *ni-* (see C below for a discussion of this phonemic variation). Its proximal value is of course relative, pertaining to any referent that is within the immediate range of the speaker, according to a given frame of spatial reference. In conversation, its use is frequently accompanied by a deictic pointing gesture. Temporally, it is used for time periods which are simultaneous with or include the speech moment. The most common derived forms are summarized in Table 29.

With all four demonstratives, the most common nominal form is the *-p* form, which is very frequent as a demonstrative determiner (example 19). As is the case with the Distal, Intangible, and Alterative forms as well, the Proximal demonstrative determiner usually gets the primary stress of the noun phrase.

- (19) ***núp*** *təg* *ʔǎn* *péʔ-éy = hǔ*
 this tooth 1sg.OBJ hurt-DYNM=NONVIS
 ‘This tooth hurts.’ (lit. ‘hurts me’) (el)

The demonstratives derived with *-p* are also common as pronominals, standing in for an entire noun phrase, as in (20). Many of the other inflectional forms are used exclusively as pronominals, including all those inflected directly for case, and those taking the Declarative, Dependent, and Interrogative markers.

- (20) ***núp*** *ʔǎn* *péʔ-éy = hǔ*
 this 1sg.OBJ hurt-DYNM=NONVIS
 ‘This (one) hurts.’ (el)

Table 29. Hup Proximal demonstrative forms

Form	Meaning	Inflection
<i>nu-</i> (<i>ni-</i>)	Proximal	Uninflected form
<i>núp</i>	‘this’	- <i>p</i> (from Dependent marker)
<i>nút</i>	‘here’	- <i>t</i> (from Oblique)
<i>núw-ǎn</i> (<i>nú-ũw-ǎn</i>)	‘this-(FLR)-OBJ’	- <i>ǎn</i> Object
<i>núw-úť</i> (<i>nú-ũw-úť</i>)	‘this-(FLR)-OBL’	- <i>úť</i> Oblique
<i>núw-up</i> (<i>nú-ũw-ũp</i>)	‘this-(FLR)-DEP’	- <i>Vp</i> Dependent marker
<i>núw-úh</i> (<i>nú-ũw-úh</i>)	‘this-(FLR)-DECL	- <i>Vh</i> Declarative
<i>núw-ũ?</i>	‘this-INT’	- <i>V?</i> Interrogative
<i>nu-có?</i>	‘in this place here’	- <i>có?</i> Locative
<i>nu-kán</i> ⁹⁵	‘to here’	- <i>kán</i> Directional (Occurs only in DEMs)
<i>ni-d’ǎh</i>	‘these’	- <i>d’ǎh</i> Plural/collective
<i>ni-n’ǎh</i>	‘all these, about here’ (pl. inanimate, approximate)	- <i>n’ǎh</i> Nominalizer
<i>na?ǎp, núp-?ǎp</i>	‘this many’	- <i>?ǎp</i> Quantity, number
<i>nu-m’ǎ</i>	‘this much, (at) this time’	- <i>m’ǎ</i> Amount, measurement
<i>nú-wag</i>	‘these days’	<i>wag</i> ‘day’
<i>nú-wəd</i>	‘this old/respected one’	- <i>wəd</i> ‘old/respected’
<i>nú-wa</i>		- <i>wa</i> ‘old/respected woman’
<i>ni nih-</i>	‘in this way, like this’	<i>nih-</i> (Verb) ‘be like’
<i>ni nɔ-</i>	‘saying this’	<i>nɔ-</i> (Verb) ‘say’

In example (21), the ‘measure’ form occurs with a bound nominal, and example (22) illustrates the derived ‘quantity’ form, which also occurs as a modifier in the noun phrase.

- (21) *wǎn = mah tih tón-ǎh, nú-m’ǎ = b’ah*
 knife=REP 3sg hold-DECL this-MEAS=SPLIT
 ‘She held a knife, a blade this size.’ (txt)

⁹⁵ See the footnote in §6.2 above regarding the phonetic realization of this and similar forms.

- (22) *naʔǎp hupáʔ = mah hid pəʔ-əh,*
 this.QTY flat.basket=REP 3pl present-DECL

dapúh = d'əh píd = mah hid pəʔ-píd-ih
 hand=PL DIST=REP 3pl present-DIST-DECL
 'They ritually presented this many baskets, they presented both hands'
 worth (i.e., ten).' (txt)

Example (23) illustrates the plural-marked demonstrative acting as a pronominal. As discussed in (§4.4.1), this Plural form (=d'əh) is usually found with animates, whereas the *n ʔh* derivation is preferred for plural inanimates and mass nouns. Diessel (1999: 48) notes that an animacy distinction in demonstratives appears to be a relatively common feature of American Indian languages.

- (23) *ʔəg = wag ni-d'əh nih-nih-ay = póʔ, páy-ay*
 drink=day this-PL be.like-NEG-INCH=EMPH1 bad-INCH
 'On drinking days, those (people) don't do like this, (it's) no good.' (txt)

Adverbial uses of the proximal demonstrative include temporal expressions, such as *núp = mæh = yíʔ* [this=DIM=TEL] 'right this minute', and (probably) the lexicalized form *nutǎn* 'today, currently'. The derived form *nu-m'æ* can serve both temporal and locational adverbial functions, as illustrated in examples (24–26), as well as a nominal modifier function (example 22 above). Example (26) illustrates the co-occurrence of both a locational adverbial and a demonstrative determiner in the same clause.

- (24) *tán nu-m'æ ʔǎh næn-té-h*
 later this-MEAS 1sg come-FUT-DECL
 'I'll be right back.' (txt)

- (25) *hidnǎh húptok yít = yíʔ píd b'əh-ham-pæm-yíʔ-ay,*
 3pl.POSS caxiri thus=TEL DIST pour-go-sit-TEL-INCH

ʔǎh-ǎw-ǎh, nu-m'æ-ay-áh
 1sg-FLR-DECL this-MEAS-INCH-DECL
 'I kept pouring out their caxiri as I sat there, (I poured it out) right here.'
 (pointing to ground next to her) (cv)

- (26) *nukán núp j'ah-át nř ĩn ĩǎn*
 over.here this land-OBL 1sg.POSS mother 1sg.OBJ

g'et-næn-g'ét-ét = b'ay...

stand-come-stand-OBL=AGAIN

'When my mother brought me over here to live in this land...'

(txt)

In (27), the form *núp* is used adverbially, in anaphoric reference to an idea just presented in the discourse:

- (27) *g'ǎg = tǎh ĩn-ǎn y'ǎt-yǎ?ay-áh, j'ǔg có?*
 bone=son 1pl-OBJ leave-TEL-INCH-DECL forest LOC

núp ĩn ni-nih-tég-éh

this 1pl be-be.like-FUT/PURP-DECL

'Bone-Son left us in the forest (area); this is the way we are supposed to live.' (txt)

The uninflected variant *nř* appears in adverbial constructions with – exclusively – the verbs *nɔ-* 'say' and *nih-* 'be like' (examples 28–29). As noted above, the combination of the uninflected demonstrative forms with *nih-* 'be like' is limited to certain dialect areas; in *Barriera Alta*, in particular, speakers use *núp = yǎ? nih-* rather than *nř nih-*.

- (28) *nř ĩǎh nɔ-yɔhɔy-pǎm-hǔ-ǔp tíh*
 this 1sg say-search-sit-NONVIS-DEP EMPH2
 'Like this I am sitting looking for something to say.' (txt)

- (29) *nř nřh-ǎy bíg j'áh b'ǔy ĩǎh cúh-tǎn-ǎh*
 this be.like-DYNM HAB DST.CNTR traíra 1sg string-COND-DECL
 'I always do like this when I string traíra fish.' (txt)

Finally, example (30) illustrates the use of *nu-* as a demonstrative identifier (i.e., a demonstrative that occurs in a non-verbal, identificational clause; cf. Diessel 1999). This is found in copular and nonverbal (predicate nominal and adjective) clauses, and serves to "focus the hearer's attention on entities in the surrounding situation or in the universe of discourse" (Diessel 1999: 79).

- (30) *nĩ* *dápi* *núw-úh*
 1sg.POSS pencil this-DECL
 ‘This is my pencil’ (el)

It should also be noted that while Table 29 above (like the tables below) includes all the most common derived demonstrative forms, it is not exhaustive; other derivations are also occasionally encountered. For example, (31) illustrates the adverbial demonstrative form ‘this side/area’.

- (31) *nu-cá?áh-áy = n’án* *?áh* *hup-?id-mũhú?-úti?*
 this-side-DYNM=PL.OBJ 1sg RFLX-speak-play-EMPH.TAG
 ‘By the people around here I am scolded.’ (txt)

B. Distal demonstrative

The basic form of the Distal demonstrative is *n’i-*. It is used for referents that are relatively far from the speaker, but still within the immediate frame of reference. Spatially, this is often limited to the visible area, although it can also include the area just outside the immediately accessible perimeter; temporally, it refers to a specific time period which is separated from the present, and is in general specifically past, rather than future. Like the Proximal form, its use is frequently accompanied by pointing. The Distal demonstratives are summarized in Table 30.

Morphologically and syntactically, the Distal demonstrative is almost the same as the Proximal form; there is, however, no association of the bare uninflected form *n’i* with the verbs ‘say’ and ‘be like’. Examples (32–33) contrast the use of both Proximal and Distal demonstratives in one sentence. In (33), the alternation reflects the fact that the relevant parameter is the relative frame of reference, which may vary even within the context of a single speech event and with a single unchanging referent – here the immediate location of the speaker *within* the village (‘there’) is contrasted with the location of the village (‘here’) vis-à-vis the rest of the surrounding forest. Finally, example (34) illustrates the temporal adverbial use of the distal demonstrative, in reference to a past event.

- (32) *nu-có? pǎ,* *n’ikán* *hid* *ní-íy*
 this-LOC NEG:EX over.there 3pl be-DYNM
 ‘Here there are none (of my siblings), they live over there.’ (txt)

- (33) *n'ít tih g'əç-ní-h, n'ít! núť tih-ăn*
 there 3sg bite-INFR2-DECL there here 3sg-OBJ
- tih mæh-ní-h, n'ít*
 3sg kill-INFR2-DECL there
 'Over there it (snake) bit him, over there! (just across village central area; points); here (i.e., within village) it killed him, there (points across).' (txt)
- (34) *maca-ní-h... n'í-wag-an*
 be.born-INFR2-DECL that-day-DIR
 '(I) was born...in earlier days.' (doesn't know year) (txt)

Table 30. Hup Distal demonstrative forms

Form	Meaning	Inflection
<i>n'í-</i>	Distal	Uninflected form
<i>n'íp</i>	'that'	- <i>p</i> (from Dependent marker)
<i>n'ít</i>	'there'	- <i>t</i> (from Oblique)
<i>n'íw-ăn</i> (<i>n'í-íw-ăn</i>)	'that-(FLR)-OBJ'	- <i>ăn</i> Object
<i>n'íw-ít</i> (<i>n'í-íw-ít</i>)	'that-(FLR)-OBL'	- <i>ít</i> Oblique
<i>n'íw-íp</i> (<i>n'í-íw-íp</i>)	'that-(FLR)-DEP'	- <i>Vp</i> Dependent marker
<i>n'íw-ít</i> (<i>n'í-íw-ít</i>)	'that-(FLR)-DECL'	- <i>Vh</i> Declarative
<i>n'íw-í?</i>	'that-INT'	- <i>V?</i> Interrogative
<i>n'í-có?</i>	'in that place there'	- <i>có?</i> Locative
<i>n'í-kán</i>	'over there, that way'	- <i>kán</i> Directional (occurs only in DEMs)
<i>n'í-d'əh</i>	'those'	- <i>d'əh</i> Plural/collective
<i>n'í-n'ih</i>	'those, about there' (pl. inanimate/mass, approximate)	- <i>n'ih</i> Nominalizer
<i>n'íp-?ăp</i>	'that many'	- <i>?ăp</i> Quantity, number
<i>n'í-m'ă</i>	'that much, (at) that time'	- <i>m'ă</i> Amount, measurement
<i>n'í-wag</i>	'those days; earlier days'	<i>wag</i> 'day'
<i>n'í-wəd</i>	'that old/respected one'	- <i>wəd</i> 'old/respected'
<i>n'í-wa</i>		- <i>wa</i> 'old/respected woman'

C. Intangible demonstrative

The ‘Intangible’ demonstrative form is *yu-*, with variants *yí-* and *yĩ-* (the latter via nasal spreading from the bound inflectional endings). The phonemic variants *yu-* and *yí-* appear to correspond generally (though not fully) to stressed and unstressed syllables, respectively, suggesting that *yí* owes its form to vowel reduction; the parallel (but less prevalent) variation between the Proximal *nu-* and *ní-* above probably has the same explanation. Semantically, the Intangible gram is the most flexible of all the demonstratives; in general, it points to a referent that is physically absent, out of sight, or in some other way outside the immediate frame of reference (hence the label ‘Intangible’).⁹⁶ For example, *yu-* is the usual choice for indicating a place that is far away (especially if the location is approximate or not really known), a thing or person that is not present, or an abstract entity. However, it can also be used somewhat generically for something that is physically present but is being less actively pointed out by the speaker; in other words, an entity whose physical accessibility is somehow irrelevant. In comparison to the other demonstratives, *yu-* is rarely accompanied by a deictic gesture of pointing.

The Intangible demonstrative is somewhat distinct from the other demonstratives in Hup. In keeping with its more tenuous connection to the physical world, one of the deictic functions of *yu-* is predominantly discourse-related: it is extremely common as a reference-tracking device, and has developed a somewhat specific use as a demonstrative identifier, as discussed below (this section). Another development is its common extension as a third person plural pronoun (see §6.1 above). Inflected Intangible *yu-* has also changed formally: when it occurs as a clause-final subject in interrogative clauses (e.g., ‘what’s that?’ ‘is that an X?’), it appears as the phonologically reduced *yu* in the Tat Deh dialect area, whereas it remains *yup* in the more conservative Barreira dialect area.

⁹⁶ According to Diessel (1999: 41), visibility is relatively common as a deictic category in Native American languages.

Table 31. Hup ‘Intangible’ demonstrative forms

Form	Meaning	Inflection
<i>yu-</i> (<i>yi</i> , <i>yĩ</i>)	Intangible distal	Uninflected form
<i>yúp</i>	‘that’ (inaccessible)	- <i>p</i> (from Dependent marker)
<i>yít</i>	‘thus, then, there’	- <i>t</i> (from Oblique)
<i>yúw-ǎn</i>	‘that-FLR-OBJ’	- <i>ǎn</i> Object
<i>yúw-út</i> (<i>yú-uw-út</i>)	‘that-(FLR)-OBL’	- <i>Út</i> Oblique
<i>yúw-up</i> (<i>yú-uw-up</i>)	‘that-(FLR)-DEP’	- <i>Vp</i> Dependent marker
<i>yúw-úh</i> (<i>yú-uw-úh</i>)	‘that-(FLR)-DECL’	- <i>Vh</i> Declarative
<i>yúw-u?</i>	‘that-INT’	- <i>V?</i> Interrogative
<i>yi-có?</i>	‘in that place’	- <i>có?</i> Locative
<i>yi-kán</i>	‘over/out there, that way’	- <i>kán</i> Directional (Occurs only in DEMs)
<i>yi-d’ǎh</i>	‘those’	- <i>d’ǎh</i> Plural/collective
<i>yĩ-n’ǎh</i>	‘all those’ (inanimate)	- <i>n’ǎh</i> Nominalizer
<i>yi-?ǎp</i> (<i>ya?ǎp</i>)	‘this many, all that’	- <i>?ǎp</i> Quantity, number
<i>yú-wag</i>	‘those days’	<i>wag</i> ‘day’
<i>yú-wəd</i>	‘that old/respected one’	- <i>wəd</i> ‘old/respected man’
<i>yú-wa</i>		- <i>wa</i> ‘old/respected woman’
<i>yĩ nǎh-</i>	‘in that way, thus’	<i>nǎh-</i> (Verb) ‘be like’
<i>yĩ nɔ-</i>	‘saying thus’	<i>nɔ-</i> (Verb) ‘say’

The following examples (35–37) illustrate the ‘intangible’ deictic function of *yu-*, in reference to some real, physical entity that is currently not present. In (35–36), the pronominal use of the demonstrative refers to a boat captain who has come and gone. In (37), the demonstrative determiner refers to the fish that sometimes appear in the speaker’s net.

- (35) *j’ám = mah yú-wəd d’o?-wid-nǎn-ǎh*
 yesterday=REP that.ITG-RESP take-arrive-come-DECL
 ‘Yesterday that (respected) one brought it’ (cv)

- (36) *ʔín-ǎn = yíʔ = nih* *yúp* *nɔʔ-níh mún*
 1pl-OBJ=TEL=EMPH.CO that.ITG give-NEG INTS2

tih ni-bí-h, *các !*

3sg be-HAB-DECL INTERJ

‘That one never gives us any (sugar) at all!’ (cv)

- (37) *cǎ-wag píđ g’áʔ-ǎy* *j’ám* *yí-n’íh* *hǒp hǒʔ*
 other-dayDIST suspend-DYNM DST.CNTR that.ITG-NMZ fish TAG2
 ‘Every now and then there are some fish in my net.’ (cv)

Examples (38–39) illustrate the discourse deictic use of *yu-*. A discourse deictic refers to “the propositional content of the preceding utterance... [or] focuses the hearer’s attention on its illocutionary force” (Diessel 1999: 91). In (38), the demonstrative refers to the entire story the speaker has just finished telling; in (39), it refers to the spirit’s techniques, in general, for fishing, stringing, and cleaning the ‘fish’ that appeared to the human speaker as jaguars.

- (38) *yaʔǎp* *j’ǎh* *yúp* *hám-ǎh,* *yú-uw-úh,* *yaʔǎp*
 that.ITG.QTY DST.CNTR that.ITG go-DECL that.ITG-FLR-DECL that.ITG.QTY
 ‘That’s how it happened, that; that’s it.’ (txt)

- (39) *ʔín-ĩp* *yí-n’íh = n’ǎn* *hipāh-níh* *yaǎh* *tí*
 1pl-DEP that.ITG-NMZ=PL.OBJ know-NEG FRUST EMPH.DEP
 ‘We don’t know about these things.’ (txt)

Example (40) shows the co-referential use of the ‘intangible’ demonstrative and third person pronoun for reference-tracking purposes, a common device in Hup discourse.

- (40) *ʔǎh wæy-muhún-tǎn,* *yúp* *tih* *wíd-nǎn-ǎh*
 1sg be.weak-INTS2-COND that.ITG 3sg arrive-come-DECL
 ‘When I was really small, that one, he arrived.’ (txt)

Adverbial uses of the ‘intangible’ demonstrative include the occurrence of the uninflected form (*yí*) with the verbs ‘be like’ (Tat Deh dialect only) and ‘say’, as in examples (41–42), where it refers back to the content of the entire story that has just been told. Interestingly, nasal spreading affects *yí* even when other morphological material comes between the demonstrative and the verb, which suggests that this is a basically fused form that can come apart in certain

circumstances. Note that were the demonstrative a direct object of the verbs ‘say’ and ‘be like’ (rather than an adverbial), we would expect the object form *yúw-ǎn*.

- (41) *yí* *nɔ-ɔ́y* *wǎʔ = d'əh* *n'úh-úh*
 that.ITG say-DYNM hear=PL CNTR-DECL
 ‘Thus speak the ones who have heard (Curupira).’ (txt)

- (42) *yí* *ham-níh-íy = cud* *yúw-úh*
 that.ITG go-be.like-DYNM=INFR that.ITG-DECL
 ‘It happened like that, apparently.’ (txt)

Various *yu-* forms are extremely common as discourse devices, especially when introducing a new topic in a narrative. One example is the form *yí níh-* ‘thus’, which appears (with the Dynamic suffix) as the reduced form *yíníy* (< *yí níh-íy*) ‘thus, and so’, and with the Sequential suffix to form *yínih-yóʔ* ‘having done that, after that’. Another frequent example is *yít* ‘thus, with that’; this form also occurs with the Telic (contrastive focus) marker =*yíʔ* in the expression *yít = yíʔ* ‘like that, exactly’. The form *yúp* is also especially frequent in these topic-introducing phrases; it can even occur multiple times within a single phrase, as in (43), often separated from the rest of the clause by a brief pause. As a semi-formulaic device, its reference is not always entirely clear, but in cases like (43) its first instance seems to be adverbial (‘thus, with that’), while its second instance is a proleptic pronoun referring to the subject of the clause (which is often not otherwise stated).

- (43) *yúp = mah* *yúp* *tih = yǒh = d'əh* *máh-an*
 that.ITG=REP that.ITG 3sg=affine=PL near-DIR

tih = tǎhʔíp *wid-b'áy-áh*
 3sg=child.father arrive-return-DECL
 ‘Then, it’s said, that one, her husband, returned from (visiting) his affines.’ (txt)

Adverbial uses of *yu-* are given in (44–45); example (44) refers to a *roça* in a myth (not anchored in the physical world), while (45) refers to a past and indefinite point in time.

- (44) **yikán** *kayak = tǐg = g'æt hid nɔʔ-ǎh*
 out.there manioc=stem=leaf 3pl give-DECL
 'Out there they gave (him) manioc leaves (to eat).' (txt)

- (45) *cug'ǎt d'əh-hám-ǎy = nih j'ám*
 leaf/paper send-go-DYNM=EMPH.CO DST.CNTR

yúw-úh, yi-tǎn-ǎw-ǎh
 that.ITG-DECL that.ITG-COND-FLR-DECL
 'She sent a letter, that other time.' (cv)

One of the most common functions of *yu-* is as a demonstrative identifier (in a non-verbal, identificational clause) – a role that is far more frequently filled by the Intangible demonstrative than by the Proximal, Distal, or Alterative forms. In this usage, *yu-* almost invariably appears clause-finally, and accordingly takes the Declarative marker *-Vh* that is required for any subject that follows the verb in Hup (see §17.3.2). Examples include (46) and (47), involving the 'old/respected man' inflected form of *yu-*, as well as *yu-* functioning as the subject of a verbal clause. The demonstrative identifier *yu-* also occurs in phonologically reduced form in the semi-formulaic expression *náw yúh* 'thank you', which derives from *náw yúw-úh* 'that is good'.

- (46) *madio = řih yúw-úh !*
 Mario=MSC that.ITG-DECL
 'That's Mario!' (cv)

- (47) *páy = pog páh yú-wəd-ǎh, "húptok 'ectragá'-áy*
 bad-EMPH1 PRX.CNTR that.ITG-RESP-DECL caxiri go.bad(Pt)-DYNM

yúw-úh, ʔacúka-áh," nɔ-ǎy páh yú-wəd-ǎh
 that.ITG-DECL sugar(Pt)-DECL say-DYNM PRX.CNTR that.ITG-RESP-DECL
 'That old guy was such a jerk just now, "sugar makes caxiri bad," he just said, that old guy.' (cv)

The demonstrative identifier function of clause-final *yu-* (or rather *yúw-úh*) appears to be almost automatic in many predicate nominal and adjective clauses. In fact, in keeping with Diessel's (1999: 79) observation that "a demonstrative identifier is easily confused with a copula that appears in a sentence with no overt subject," Franklin and Moore (1979) label the clause-final form *yúw-úh* (or its phonologically reduced variant *yúh*) as the copula verb 'be'.

While this form is clearly a demonstrative, and not a true copula, the demonstrative identifier realization of *yu-* does appear to be taking on an identity that is distinct from that of its other functions. In particular, *yu-* often appears at the end of clauses that already have a verbal predicate and that may even have an explicit subject (to which *yu-* then refers back). In these cases, the demonstrative almost always occurs following a verb-final enclitic or particle (usually an evidential or contrast marker). Examples of this copula-like demonstrative identifier function include (48–50) (following evidential and diminutive particles) and (51) (following a temporal contrast particle):

- (48) *g'i-níh = hṣ* *yúw-úh !*
 hot-NEG=NONVIS that.ITG-DECL
 'It's not hot!' (cv) (A joking contradiction of another's statement: *g'i = hṣ* [hot=NONVIS] 'it's hot')

- (49) *núh múj = yí? -ay = mah* *yúw-úh,* *nóh !*
 head stink=TEL-INCH=REP that.ITG-DECL say
 '(She says) her head stinks!' (cv)

- (50) *tú = mæh = yí? ?ám = ?íp* *mǎy-yok* *ní-ĩp = mæh* *yúw-úh,*
 low=DIM=TEL 2sg=father house-poke be-DEP=DIM that.ITG-DECL

tíh-ǎn *nó-ṣy = mah* *yúw-úh*
 3sg-OBJ say-DYNM=REP that.ITG-DECL
 'They are so low, the rafters of your father's house, she said to him (her child).' (txt)

- (51) *nɔg'öd* *pǎ = pog* *páh* *yúw-úh !*
 mouth NEG:EX=EMPH1 PRX.CNTR that.ITG-DECL
 'It has no mouth at all!' (cv)

Further evidence that the demonstrative identifier *yu-* has taken on a copula-like function that is somewhat distinct from its deictic one is its ability to occur with a *different* demonstrative in some predicate nominal or adjective clauses:

- (52) *n'íp* *teg* *póg* *yúw-úh*
 that tree big that.ITG-DECL
 'That tree is big.' (el)

D. Alternative

The demonstrative form *cã-* ‘other’ indicates alterity. It inflects much like the other demonstrative forms, although (like the Distal form) it lacks combinations with the verbal forms ‘say’ and ‘be like’, as well as several of the directional and quantity-related terms.

Table 32. Hup Alternative demonstrative forms

Form	Meaning	Inflection
<i>cã-</i>	‘Other’	Uninflected form
<i>cãp</i>	‘another’	- <i>p</i> (From Dependent marker?)
<i>cãw-ăn</i> (<i>cã-ãw-ăn</i>)	‘another-(FLR)-OBJ’	- <i>ăn</i> Object
<i>cãw-ăt</i> (<i>cã-ãw-ăt</i>)	‘another-(FLR)-OBL’	- <i>ăt</i> Oblique
<i>cãw-ăp</i> (<i>cã-ãw-ăp</i>)	‘another-(FLR)-DEP’	- <i>Vp</i> Dependent marker
<i>cãw-ăh</i> (<i>cã-ãw-ăh</i>)	‘another-(FLR)-DECL’	- <i>Vh</i> Declarative
<i>cãw-ă?</i>	‘another-INT’	- <i>V?</i> Interrogative
<i>cã-?ah-có?</i>	‘in another place’	- <i>?ah</i> (= <i>có?</i>) Locative
<i>cã-d’ăh</i>	‘others’	- <i>d’ăh</i> Plural/ collective
<i>cã-n’ăh</i>	‘whatever’	- <i>n’ăh</i> Comparative, nominalizer
<i>cã-wag</i>	‘some days’	<i>wag</i> ‘day’
<i>cã-wəd</i>	‘other old/respected one’	- <i>wəd</i> ‘old/respected man’
<i>cã-wa</i>		- <i>wa</i> ‘old/respected woman’

Like the other demonstratives, the syntactic functions of the Alternative form include pronominal, determiner, and adverbial functions, as illustrated in (53–57).

- (53) *n’íp pót?ah = có?-óy năh ?ăd*
 that upriver=LOC-DYNM POSS speech

cãp = *yă?* = *b’ay-ăh*, ***cãp*** *?ăd* = *yă?*
 other=TEL=AGAIN-DECL other speech=TEL
 ‘Those upriver people’s language is different, it’s a different language.’
 (txt)

- (54) **cã-d'ǎh** ?id-hipãh-nih = d'ǎh ni-bí-h
 other=PL speak-know-NEG=PL be-HAB-DECL
 'There are a few/others who don't know how to speak.' (txt)
- (55) **cã-wag** ?in háam-áh, patí !
 other-day 1pl go-DECL Pattie
 'Someday we'll go, Pattie!' (cv)
- (56) **cã-wəd**, tih = wəhád = wəd
 other-RESP 3sg=old.man=RESP
 'Another respected one, an old respected man.' (txt)
- (57) **cã?ah** có? **cã-d'ǎh** b'iyi?, hipãh-nih ?áh-áh, **cã?-d'ǎh-ǎn**
 other.side LOC other-PL only know-NEG 1sg-DECL other-PL-OBJ
 'In other places there is only a different kind of people, I don't know
 about those other people.' (txt)

E. Other demonstrative forms

In addition to the demonstrative paradigm discussed above, Hup has two further demonstrative forms. These involve the two temporal contrast particles *páh* 'proximate, recent past' and *j'am* 'distant past' (see §13.4), inflected with the Dependent -*Vp*.

In keeping with the temporal values of the bound particles, the demonstrative *pah-áp* 'that (recent)' is used in reference to entities that were recently mentioned or encountered (example 58), while *j'am-áp* 'that (past)' is used for entities that were mentioned or encountered some time ago (typically the day before or earlier; example 59).⁹⁷

⁹⁷ Note the idiosyncratic stress pattern; normally the Dependent marker is unstressed and the stem is stressed, while here the reverse is true.

- (58) *núp, pah-áp* *wædɔʔm'æħ = tod = tæħ = n'ăn,*
 this PRX.CNTR-DEP star=hollow=offspring=PL.OBJ

hid hɔh-ʔě-p wab

3pl smoke-PERF-DEP jirau

'Here is the smoking-platform where those recently mentioned Star-Hollow children were smoked (as meat).' (describing constellations) (txt)

- (59) *j'am-áp* *ʔin ham-ʔáy-ap n'ũh, húptok húp mĩʔ*
 DST.CNTR-DEP 1pl go-VENT-DEP CNTR caxiri good UNDER

j'áh *ʔin ʔəg-naʔ-póʔ*

DST.CNTR 1pl drink-lose.consciousness-EMPH1 EMPH.DEP

tí,

j'am-áp *patí ʔin-ĩt ham-ʔáy-ap tí!*

DST.CNTR-DEP Pattie 1pl-OBL go-VENT-DEP EMPH.DEP

'That other time we went, we got drunk on very good caxiri, that other time when Pattie went with us (the previous year).' (cv)

6.4. Indefinite reference

While demonstratives are the primary resource in Hup for expressing definite reference, Hup has several means for conveying indefinite reference.

New participants and entities are frequently introduced into discourse with the numeral *ʔayũp* 'one',⁹⁸ followed by the noun (which is bound, if a bound form is available), as illustrated in examples (60–62). In (60), for example, the narrator is beginning a story and introducing the protagonist; in (61), he switches the topic of conversation from poisonous snakes to a man who had been a victim of such a snake. The use of *ʔayũp = ʔih* in (62) can likewise be translated as 'someone', 'indefinite person'.

- (60) *ba'tĩb'-ʔáy = n'ăn = mah ʔayũp = ʔih yɔh-ní-ĩy*
 spirit-FEM-PL.OBJ=REP one=MSC affine-be-DYNM
 '(There was) a man (who) had spirits for in-laws.' (txt)

⁹⁸ Probably related to demonstrative *yúp*; see §6.5.1.

(61) *nút ?ayǔp = ?ih tǒhó-ǒh; yúp tǐhǐy máh-ǎw-ǎh*
 here one=MSC finish-DECL that.ITG snake kill-FLR-DECL
 ‘Right here a man died; one of those snakes killed him!’ (txt)

(62) *papudí có? = mah wǒh = d’ǒh hid náen-ǎh,*
 Papuri LOC=REP river.indian=PL 3pl come-DECL

nút = mah, ?ayǔp = ?ih ?id-ih
 here=REP one=MSC speak-DECL
 ‘(Someone) says River Indians came from the Papuri (River region)...
 she says someone from over here said so.’ (txt)

After first mention with *?ayǔp*, the participant is subsequently referred to by a demonstrative, as examples (63–64) illustrate, or (especially for humans) a pronoun.

(63) *nút j’áh yúp, yí hid nih-?e?-ní-íw-ih,*
 here land that.ITG that.ITG 3pl be.like-PERF-be-FLR-DECL

cí? deh = mah ?ayup = má, yúp = ma g’ætyǒh
 slug water=REP one=river that.ITG=river headwaters
 ‘It was around here that they did thus, at a creek called Slug Creek, at the headwaters of that creek.’ (txt)

(64) *nút hayám-ǎt ?ayup mǒy pǒg g’et-ní-h...*
 here town-OBL one house big stand-INFR2-DECL

mǒy pǒg j’ám yúp mǒy ni-ní-h
 house big DST.CNTR that.ITG house be-INFR2-DECL
 ‘In this town stood a big house... that house was a big house.’ (txt)

Another strategy for conveying indefinite reference makes use of the Alternative demonstrative *cã-* ‘other’ in combination with a noun (often bound) or the plural marker, especially in the nominalized form *cã-n’ih*:

(65) *cã-n’ih = ?ih = yí? yúp ?ám-ǎn bahád-áy = nih*
 other-NMZ=MSC=TEL that.ITG 2sg-OBJ appear-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘It was someone else who appeared to you.’ (txt)

- (66) **cã-n'ĩh wǎd**, *tih wǎd-tǎn*, *tih peʔ-ní-íy*
 other-NMZ food 3sg eat-COND 3sg sick-be-DYNM
 'Whatever food (it is), when he eats (it) he is sick.' (i.e., 'Anything makes him sick.') (el)

- (67) *yúp* **cã-d'ǒh** *wid-nǎn-ǎp = b'ay*
 that.ITG other-PL arrive-come-DEP=AGAIN
 'Then others arrived.' (txt)

The form *húp* can also refer to an indefinite human participant (see discussion in §11.1.1), as in examples (68–69).

- (68) *nutǎn* **húp-ǎn** *ʔǎh key-tuk-níh-ǎh*, *páy ʔǎh-ǎh*
 today person-OBJ 1sg see-want-NEG-DECL bad 1sg-DECL
 'These days I don't want to see anyone, I am bad.' (txt)

- (69) *yít = mah* *yúp* **húp = wǎd** *wiʔ-g'ét-éy*,
 thus=REP that.ITG person=RESP hear-stand-DYNM

mǒh *g'íg-ip = ʔih*

inambu arrow.shoot-DEP=MSC

'There, they say, an old man was standing listening, one who was shooting inambu.' (txt)

Yet another strategy for indefinite and non-specific reference makes use of interrogative pronominal forms. Examples (70–71) illustrate this use of the form *ʔǔy* 'who', which tends to occur with a restrictive relative clause and the masculine/animate bound noun =*ʔih*. (72–74) are examples of indefinite reference using the interrogative particle *hĩ*. Note that the interrogative pronouns occur clause-initially, just as they do in interrogative clauses, although most of these examples are clearly in imperative or declarative modes.

- (70) **ʔǔy** *yam-muhũʔ-túk-up = ʔih*, *niŋ yam-muhũʔ níŋ = hin*
 who dance-play-want-DEP=MSC 2pl dance-play.IMP 2pl=also
 'Whoever wants to dance, you all go ahead and dance.' (sp)

- (71) **ʔǔy** *ʔayúp = ʔih ʔid-túk-up = ʔih*, *niŋ ʔid-ʔáy*
 who one=MSC speak-want-DEP=MSC 2pl speak-VENT.IMP
 'Whoever wants to speak, you all come and speak.' (sp)

- (72) **híʔ** ʔāh hám-át, ʔāh ham-bí-h
 where 1sg go-OBL 1sg go-HAB-DECL
 ‘Wherever I (want to) go, I always go (there).’ (txt)
- (73) **hí-n’íh** pǎ-āp, tǎhʔíp pǎ-āp, tíh hám-āp
 Q-NMZ NEG:EX-DEP child.father NEG:EX-DEP 3sg go-DEP
 ‘Without anything, without a husband, she went.’ (txt)
- (74) **hí-ʔǎp** páy nihǔʔ
 Q-QTY baggage all
 ‘All kinds of merchandise’ (txt)

Finally, indefinite reference can also be expressed via a headless relative clause (see §18.2.3 and §18.2.5), as in the two synonymous versions in example (75). A related form is the expression *hí-ní-n’íh* ‘whatever it is’, a semi-lexicalized complement construction (example 76).

- (75) a) **ʔam túk-n’íh**, d’óʔ!
 2sg want-NMZ take.IMP
 ‘Take whichever you want.’
- b) **ʔam túk-uw-ǎn**, d’óʔ!
 2sg want-FLR-OBJ take.IMP
 ‘Take whichever you want’ (el)
- (76) **hí-ní-n’íh** ʔíd=yíʔ tíh tǎw-wáy-áh
 only-be-NMZ speech=TEL 3sg scold-go.out-DECL
 ‘Anything one says makes him angry.’ (el)

6.5. Quantification

In this section, I discuss the range of quantifiers available in Hup. These include numerals and a number of other forms.

6.5.1. Numerals

An interesting feature of Hup numerals is their relative etymological transparency. This applies even to the lowest numerical values (numerals 1–3), for

which such transparency is extremely rare cross-linguistically. The cardinal numerals 1–5 and their etymological sources (whose meaning in most cases is simply the literal translation of the least grammaticalized dialectal variant) are summarized in Table 33.

Table 33. Cardinal numerals 1–5 in Hup⁹⁹

	Numeral	Etymology?
1	<i>ʔayũp</i> (TD, B) <i>ʔæp</i> (UN)	compare demonstrative <i>yũp</i> ‘that (intangible)’ ¹⁰⁰
2	<i>koʔăp</i> (B) <i>kaʔăp</i> (TD, UN) <i>kəwăg-ʔap</i> (NF?)	‘eye-quantity’ (body part)
3	<i>mótwaʔăp</i> (B) <i>móraʔăp</i> (TD) <i>mót-wig-ʔăp</i> (NF?) <i>bab’ pă</i> (UN)	‘rubber.tree-seed-quantity’ ¹⁰¹ ‘sibling NEG:EX’ (‘without sibling’)
4	<i>hi-bab’-nĩ</i> (TD, B) <i>bab’-nĩ</i> (TD, UN)	‘(FACT)-have.sibling/accompany.NMZ’ (deverbal) OR ‘sibling exists’
5	<i>ʔayup dapũh</i> (TD, B) <i>ʔædapũh</i> (TD) <i>nap’ũh</i> (variant B) <i>ʔæp d’apũh</i> (UN)	‘one hand’

In the case of ‘two’ and ‘three’, the ‘quantity’ marker (*-ʔap*) is built into the numeral, whereas for ‘four’ and above this marker is optional.

One striking aspect of the Hup numeral system is the high degree of variation for a given term. The different variants correspond to different dialectal

⁹⁹ Dialectal variants are labeled TD (Tat Deh), B (Barreira), UN (Umari Norte), and NF (Nova Fundação).

¹⁰⁰ The plausibility of this etymology for ‘one’ was observed by Pozzobon (1997: 167).

¹⁰¹ The rubber tree (*hevea* sp.), known in Hup as *mót*, has a large, distinctive, three-lobed seed or nut (*mót wig*). This seed is culturally highly salient: it is used to make a popular children’s toy, and is associated with an edible fruit; the name *mót* is also a common personal name among Hup women (see Table 3, §1.4).

regions, but some variants currently coexist within the same community, and most speakers seem to be aware of the range of forms in use. Thus while the etymologies of ‘two’ and ‘three’ would not be obvious from the more phonologically reduced forms alone, these coexist with the non-reduced variants, and (at least some) speakers who regularly use even the most reduced forms are familiar with the fuller forms.

The etymology of ‘four’ has already been the topic of some discussion in the limited literature on Hup. Pozzobon (1997: 167) proposes that the lexeme ‘four’ is composed of the morphemes *hi-* ‘lie down’, *bab* ‘family’, and *ni* ‘have’, with the combined meaning ‘lie down (with a woman) in order to have a family’. Particularly in light of the form for ‘three’ (‘without a sibling’) in the Upriver (Umari Norte) Hup dialect, Pozzobon goes on to argue that this etymology for ‘four’ is motivated by the cultural salience of sister exchange as a marriage strategy among the Hupd’əh and in the Vaupés region generally. While Pozzobon’s suggestion regarding the cultural motivation behind these forms for ‘three’ and ‘four’ is intriguing (see discussion below and in Epps 2006), the actual internal composition of ‘four’ is best analyzed otherwise.

The morpheme *hi-* is undoubtedly the Factitive prefix (see §11.4), rather than the homonymous verb root ‘descend’. Evidence for this includes the fact that the verb *hi-* ‘descend’ virtually never occurs as the first root in a verb compound, and that one dialectal variant of ‘four’ lacks *hi-* (see Table 33), which as a prefix is sometimes optional. The remaining construction *bab’-ni* – which consists of the noun *báb* ‘real/classificatory brother’ or the gender-neutral ‘sibling’) and the verb root *ni-* ‘exist, be’ – can be analyzed in two ways. As two words, *báb’ ni-*, it forms an intransitive clause ‘sibling exists’ (compare the structurally non-ambiguous form *báb’ pǎ* ‘three’ [Umari Norte dialect], or ‘sibling does not exist’). The same construction also occurs as a noun-incorporating verbal stem *bab’-ni-* (see §9.6), which is used both in a literal sense ‘have siblings’ or ‘be among one’s clan members’ (example 77) and in a more figurative sense ‘accompany/be together’ (regardless of the type of relationship; example 78). Accordingly, acceptable literal translations of *hibab’ní* ‘four’ include both ‘be caused to have a sibling’ and ‘be caused to be accompanied’.¹⁰² I will return to this etymology below.

¹⁰² Ospina (2002: 462) similarly analyzes the Yuhup numeral ‘four’ as ‘accompany-quantity’, and likewise rejects Pozzobon’s proposed etymology.

- (77) *nu-cáʔ-áy = n'ǎn* *ʔǎh* *hup-ʔid-muhúʔ-útiʔ...*
 this-side-DYNM=PL.OBJ 1sg RFLX-speak-play-EMPH.TAG

bab'-ní-ĩp, *bab'-ni-níh* *j'ám* *ʔǎh-tiʔ*
 sibling-be-DEP sibling-be-NEG DST.CNTR 1sg-EMPH.TAG
 'I am made fun of by the people here... (who) have siblings; I have no siblings!' (txt)

- (78) *ʔin* *ʔũh-bab'-ni-d'oʔ-píd-íh,* *ʔin = yǎh = d'əh-ót*
 1pl INTRC-sibling-be-take-DIST-DECL 1sg=affine=PL-OBL

ʔin *bab'-ni-yóʔ...*
 1pl sibling-be-SEQ
 'We all accompanied each other; being accompanied by our affinal relations...' (txt)

While the forms for 1–5 are variable, even more variation is apparent in the numerals for 6–20, which are based on the hands and feet, and involve adding fingers and toes (summarized in Table 34). These forms are only marginally lexicalized; several options are available, and there is considerable variation within a given community and even among utterances by a single speaker. This system is probably more accurately characterized as a tally system, rather than a numeral system per se; note that there is ambiguity between the series 11–14 and that of 16–19, and speakers probably rely on gesture to differentiate between them. Unfortunately, we may never know to what extent these numerals were actually used beyond simple tallying, since today virtually all speakers prefer Portuguese numerals for 6+ (except occasionally for 'ten'). For 20+, consultants can only give Portuguese forms.¹⁰³

¹⁰³ This is general among Hup speakers, despite the fact that very few speak more than a few words of Portuguese; Portuguese numerals probably entered the language through the village school system and trade/monetary interactions with Tukanoans and non-Indians. Cross-linguistically, numeral systems are particularly prone to early shift to the dominant language (cf. Comrie 2005).

Table 34. Cardinal numerals 6–20 in Hup

	Numeral (and variants)	Gloss
6	<i>cǎp cob cakg'ět</i> <i>ʔayǔp</i> <i>ʔayǔp cob cakg'ět</i> <i>cǎp cob popǒg</i>	'other finger stands up one' 'one finger stands up' 'other finger RED.big (=thumb)'
7–9	<i>cǎp cob cakg'ět</i> (2,3,4) (2,3,4) <i>cob cakg'ět</i>	'other finger stands up (2,3,4)' '(2,3,4) fingers stand up'
10	<i>cǎp cob cakg'ět</i> <i>ʔædapúh</i> <i>ʔædapúh cob cakg'ět</i> <i>cǒb nihúʔ</i> <i>d'apúh nihúʔ</i> <i>d'apúh = d'əh píd</i>	'other finger stands up five' 'five fingers stand up' 'finger be.finish' 'hand be.finish' 'hand-PL both'
11–14	(another, 2, 3, 4) <i>j'ib</i> (<i>popǒg</i>) <i>cakg'ět</i>	'... toes/foot stand up' (Note same forms as 16–19)
15	<i>ʔayǔp j'ib húʔ</i>	'one foot finish'
16–19	(another, 2, 3, 4) <i>j'ib</i> (<i>popǒg</i>) <i>cakg'ět</i>	'...toes/foot stand up' (Note same as 11–14)
20	<i>j'ib nihúʔ</i> <i>j'ib = d'əh píd</i>	'feet be.finish' 'feet-PL both'

The forms given in Tables 33 and 34 are used strictly for cardinal numerals. There is no way in Hup to express precise ordinal values such as 'fourth' or 'seventh'; ordinality can only be indicated via non-numerical constructions ('the beginning', 'the following', etc.), as illustrated in (79). Note that any countable noun can be substituted for the animate (masculine) singular = *ʔih* given in the example; e.g., *mǒy* 'house', etc.

- (79) *kəcǎt-əp = ʔih* (ahead-DEP=MSC) 'the first man'
tih = cum-ní-ĩp = ʔih (3sg=beginning-be-DEP=MSC) 'the first man'
yúp húy-yiʔ-áy = ʔih (that follow-TEL-INCH=MSC) 'the next man'
yúp hótʔah-áy = ʔih (that beyond-INCH=MSC) 'the next man'

‘Half’ is typically expressed with the lexical *hæyó* ‘middle, midway’ (*hæyhó* in the Barreira dialect), used as an adjectival modifier. Other fractional values are conveyed by first indicating the number of pieces something is divided into (usually via a classifying noun such as =*b’ah* ‘split/flat thing’), then the number of these that are subsequently taken.

In the noun phrase, numerals can occur both as nominal modifiers and as nominal heads. As modifiers, they typically precede the noun, as do demonstratives (while adjective modifiers follow the noun); in this case, the numeral is usually unstressed, while the noun gets the primary stress of the noun phrase, usually recognized as rising tone (whatever the underlying tone of the noun).¹⁰⁴ The alternative order (N-Numeral) is also possible, but is much less common. The occurrence of numerals in the noun phrase is illustrated in examples (80–83).

- (80) ***d’apūh nihũ?*** ***wædhó*** = *cud?ũh hid b’ot-tubúd-úh*
 hand all moon=INFR2.EPIST 3pl chop.down-INTS3-DECL
 ‘For ten months, apparently, they were chopping down (the tree).’ (txt)

- (81) ***?ayup wǎg =yi?*** *hid ham-g’o?-bí-h*
 one day=TEL 3pl go-go.about-HAB-DECL
 ‘They always take just one day in getting there.’ (cv)

- (82) *?in wid-ham-bí-ay-áh...* *j’ák b’ok kád-áh,*
 1pl arrive-go-HAB-INCH-DECL buriti swamp pass-DECL

ko?ap b’ók

two swamp

‘We arrived as we always do... we passed the buriti-swamps, two swamps.’ (txt)

- (83) ***ko?ǎp =d’əh tih =tǎh =d’əh*** *ná?-áh*
 two=PL 3sg=offspring=PL die-DECL
 ‘Two of his children died.’ (cv)

Note that in (83) the numeral itself takes the Plural marker =*d’əh*, as does the noun; in such a case, they may be best considered two appositional noun phrases. When a numeral other than ‘one’ occurs on its own as a nominal head,

¹⁰⁴ Note that the opposite stress pattern applies to demonstrative noun phrases (‘DEM N).

it requires the Plural/collective suffix =*d'əh* as a nominalizer (example 84), whereas within the noun phrase this is optional (see §4.4.4).

- (84) *kaʔǎp = d'əh ʔin-ǎh, tǎʔǎy = d'əh*
 two=PL 1pl-DECL woman=PL
 'There are two of us women.' (txt)

Further discussion of the interaction of numerals and number marking is provided in §4.4.2, and of the use of bound nouns and measure terms with numerals in §4.4.3.

Comparative and Historical note

In this Note, I address some interesting parallels that exist between the numeral system of Hup and those of its sister languages, which may give us some insight into how these systems developed historically. Further discussion of these issues can be found in Epps (2006).

The Nadahup languages display a diverse range of numeral strategies. Na-dëb's system is the simplest, with lexical terms for 1–3 only; 'two' tends to be used only approximately (i.e., 'a couple'), and larger quantities are expressed via quantifying terms ('several', 'all', 'many'; Weir 1984: 103–104). Weir notes that the lexeme 'one' also means 'together, unity', but offers no insights into the etymologies of the other forms, which do not appear to have cognates within the family.

Dâw displays a slightly more complex system (S. Martins 1994: 93–95, 2004: 391–392). It has lexical terms for 1–3, of which *m'êʔ* 'one' is etymologically opaque, but (while Martins offers no insights into their etymologies) *tuúm'* (*tǎb*) 'two' bears a striking similarity to Dâw *tǎb* 'eye', and *mutwáp* 'three' appears to be cognate with the Hup form *mótɔʔǎp* or *mǎt-wig-ʔǎp*, 'rubber.tree-seed-quantity'.¹⁰⁵ For values over three (which speakers today usually express via Portuguese borrowings), the native Dâw system relies on gesture-bound tallying, supplemented by a 'fraternal' lexical strategy: fingers are added one by one to form pairs (such that 'ten' is indicated by five pairs of digits, with the thumbs placed side by side), while the even numerals (4, 6, 8, 10) are referred to as *m'êʔ mǎm'* 'one (has) brother', and odd numerals (5, 7, 9) as *m'êʔ mǎm*

¹⁰⁵ Note that Dâw *-wap* is a quantifier morpheme, almost certainly cognate with the Hup quantifier form *ʔǎp*.

mēh ‘one brother NEG’ (i.e., ‘one has no brother’). This strategy is identical to the one we find lexicalized in the Hup word ‘four’ (*hibab’ní* ‘having a sibling/companion’), and in the Umari Norte term for ‘three’ (*bab’ pǎ* ‘without a sibling’).

Yuhup (Ospina 2002: 455–459), like Hup, has a relatively complex numeral system, with basic lexical terms for 1–3, a ‘fraternal’ term (‘has a brother/sibling’ or ‘is accompanied’) for ‘four’, and a base-five system relying on the hands and feet for 5–20. The forms of the terms themselves are slightly different from those in Hup. The form for ‘one’ (*cāh* or *cāhyāpā*) appears – like ‘one’ in Hup – to be derived from a demonstrative, in this case ‘other’ (cf. Ospina 2005: 461). ‘Two’ (*b’ǎ?*) is etymologically obscure, but ‘three’ (*mōdig-w’ap*) is clearly cognate with the ‘rubber-tree-seed-quantity’ form in Hup and in Dâw. Finally, Yuhup expresses ‘four’ as *bab-ni-w’ap* (‘accompany-quantity’ or ‘has sibling-quantity’; cf. Ospina 2002: 462), and ‘five’ as *cāh-pōh-w’ap* ‘one-hand-quantity’ – semantically identical to their Hup parallels.

Given their common resemblance, the forms for ‘two’ and ‘three’ seem to be reconstructable across the Nadahup family, although they have retained semantic transparency. The ‘fraternal’ form for ‘four’ is perhaps even more intriguing, since it is common not only to three of the Nadahup languages, but also to the Vaupés region and beyond: calqued equivalents of ‘has a brother/companion’ for ‘four’ are found in the Tukanoan languages generally, and in Tariana (probably due to diffusion from Tukanoan, since it is *not* found in the related language Baniwa; cf. Aikhenvald 2002a: 107–108). A ‘fraternal’ term for ‘four’ also occurs in several Witotoan/Bora languages (spoken in southern Colombia), including Miraña (Frank Seifart, p.c.), Murui and Minica (Huber and Reed 1992: 183); some also use ‘without a brother’ for ‘three’ (Huber and Reed 1992: 183). ‘Three’ and ‘four’ are built on the word for sibling in Iquito, a Zaparoan language of Northern Peru (Hansen 2007), and the same is true for ‘four’ in Hixkaryana, a Carib language spoken far to the east (Derbyshire 1979: 154; cf. Hanke 2005). Finally, in Kakua and Nukak ‘two’ is literally ‘brother’, and the same word is contained in these languages’ other even numerals (Huber and Reed 1992: 180–184).

The ‘has a sibling’ strategy is thus clearly a widespread areal phenomenon, although it does not appear to be a more generally cross-linguistically common strategy for representing ‘four’ (cf. studies of numeral etymologies, e.g., Blažek 1999). It is possible that the ‘fraternal’ tally system present in Dâw might once have been a more widespread strategy, later superseded (in some cases) by a base-five system (also probably a tally system).

Why this particular strategy for indicating ‘four’ (and in some cases ‘three’, etc.) was so popular as an areal feature – even replacing an earlier term in the case of Tariana – is an intriguing question. One possibility is that the term ‘sibling’ is a widespread metaphor for ‘pair’, and that the term for ‘four’ is effec-

tively ‘two pairs’ – a relatively common etymology for ‘four’ cross-linguistically; its spread may be due simply to the ready diffusibility of numerals generally. Another intriguing, though considerably more speculative, possibility is that the widespread equation of ‘four’ with two pairs of siblings has an additional cultural component: in the Vaupés region (and beyond it), having and living among one’s actual and classificatory siblings is culturally extremely important; these are one’s fellow clan members (and in the case of the Vaupés River Indians, the fellow speakers of one’s language). Moreover, as Pozzobon (1997: 167) points out, sister-exchange is the ideal marriage pattern in the region, in part because this allows spouses to return to the community of one of their parents; thus if a person has an opposite-sex sibling, he/she is more likely to find a partner. This involves two sets of two; two married pairs of siblings, or four individuals – a culturally salient reason to associate the quantity three with a ‘failed’ set (‘without a sibling’) and four with a full set (‘has a sibling’).¹⁰⁶

Hup and Yuhup closely fit the Vaupés areal profile in having language-specific lexical forms for 1–3, a calqued form of ‘has a sibling / is accompanied’ for ‘four’, and terms based on hands and feet for five and up. Interestingly, the range of numeral strategies across the family corresponds to their geographical proximity to the Vaupés region: Nadëb (the most distant) has lexical forms for 1–3; Dâw (peripheral) adds a minimally lexical ‘fraternal’ system for 4–10; and Hup and Yuhup have these strategies plus a base-five system for 5–10. The current systems in Hup and Yuhup may represent historical layers of developing complexity, which are currently reflected in the geographical distribution of the Nadahup languages, as well as diachronically. The following stages of development for the Hup and Yuhup numeral systems therefore seem likely, as proposed in Epps (2006):

- 1) A basic 1–3 system (like that found in Nadëb);
- 2) Adoption of a ‘fraternal’ numeral ‘four’ (probably borrowed from Tukanoan), which may have been part of a minimally productive tally system (like the one in Dâw);
- 3) Adoption of a base-five system (probably borrowed from the Tukanoan languages); if the preceding stage had been an even-odd tally system, this new development would have stranded ‘four’, giving it a specific quantitative value to replace the general meaning ‘even number’;

¹⁰⁶ It is possible that the culturally salient practice of sister exchange has influenced Hup grammar in other ways, in particular the development of the Interactional marker from the noun ‘opposite-sex sibling’ (see §11.2).

- 4) Currently: adoption of Portuguese numerals for 6+ (a base-ten system), resulting in the stranding of ‘five’ as a distinct lexical item, rather than part of a more general system.

6.5.2. Distributive *píd* as a quantifier

Like many morphological forms in Hup, the particle *píd* is multifunctional and extremely promiscuous in its combinations with various parts of speech. In general, it can be understood to have the basic function of signaling multiple realizations of some focused entity or attribute. Following a nominal argument, *píd* indicates multiple instances of the argument vis-à-vis the predicate; i.e., it acts as a quantifier, as in examples (85–86).

- (85) *bodáca* *ʔóytu = b’ah, yít* ***píd*** *j’áh* *ʔín-ăn* *tih* *nóʔ-ǔy*
 cookie eight=SPLIT thus again DST.CNTR 1pl-OBJ 3sg give-DYNM
 ‘Eight cookies, that’s what she gave to each of us.’ (txt)

- (86) *tinñh* *tǎh = mǎh = d’əh = mah* *ní-íh,* *nút = mǎh = d’əh* ***píd***
 3sg.POSS offspring=DIM=PL=REP be-DECL here=DIM=PL DIST
 ‘Her children were there, both small ones like this’ (gestures to show height). (txt)

In example (87) – from a popular story in which a turtle follows a tapir and asks the leaves and other entities he encounters as to the tapir’s whereabouts – the quantifier modifies a locative clause:

- (87) *tih* *ʔǔh-ʔé-t* ***píd***, *tih* *wæd-ʔé-t* ***píd*** = *ma-ám*
 3sg sleep-PERF-OBL DIST 3sg eat-PERF-OBL DIST=REP-DST.CNTR

tih *ʔih-key-hám-mah*
 3sg ask-see-go-REP
 ‘At each place he (tapir) had slept, at each place he’d eaten, he (turtle) went asking.’ (txt, Umari Norte dialect)

The quantifier occurs in the common expression *ʔayup píd* ‘several, some, sometimes’, as in example (88).

- (88) *wǒh cáp ?id-níh, ?ayup píđ yúp ?āh ?id-iy*
 River.Indian INTS1 speak-NEG one DIST that.ITG 1sg speak-DYNM
 ‘(I) don’t speak a lot of Tukano; I speak a little of it.’ (txt)

Similarly, *píđ* occurs with the demonstrative *cā-* ‘other’ in expressions relating to ‘a few’, ‘occasionally, rarely’, as in (89–90);¹⁰⁷ this expression signals that the entities or instances are fewer or less frequent than that indicated by *?ayup píđ*, as example (89) illustrates.

- (89) a) *cā-wag píđ j’əb-tə-yi? ?āh j’óm-ǒh*
 other-dayDIST night-still-TEL 1sg bathe-DECL
 ‘I **occasionally/rarely** take a bath in the morning.’
 b) *?ayup wǎg píđ j’əb-tə-yi? ?āh j’óm-ǒh*
 one day DIST night-still-TEL 1sg bathe-DECL
 ‘I **sometimes** take a bath in the morning.’ (el)

- (90) *cā-d’ǒh píđ ?id-kád ?ūhníy*
 other-PL DIST speak-pass EPIST.be
 ‘Just a few speak better, maybe.’ (txt)

With human referents, an alternative quantifier to *píđ* is the form *hupnó* ‘each person’; this idiomatic form appears to be composed of *hup* ‘Reflexive’ or ‘human’ and *nó* ‘say’ (or ‘mouth’). The two forms may be used interchangeably, as in (91), or may co-occur, as in (92). Note the use of a classifying noun with *píđ* in (91b) (i.e., ‘bananas, one fruit apiece’), as in (85) above; this is not generally the case with *hupnó*.

- (91) a) *pihít hupnó tih nó?-ǒh, tā?ǎy = n’ǎn*
 banana RFLX.say 3sg give-DECL woman=PL.OBJ
 ‘He gave a banana to each of the women.’

¹⁰⁷ A similar meaning can be conveyed by the demonstrative ‘other’ in combination with the Habitual marker:

cā-wag g’et-g’o?-hám-ǎy bíg
 other-day stand-go.about-go-DYNMHAB
 ‘I sometimes go.’ (txt)

- b) *pihít* *ʔayup = tǎt* *píđ* *tih* *nóʔ-ǎh,* *tāʔǎy = n'ǎn*
 banana one=fruit DIST 3sg give-DECL woman=PL.OBJ
 'He gave a banana to each of the women.' (el)

- (92) *núp* *ʔayup* *hupnó* *píđ* *ʔin* *bahad-té-ay-áh*
 this one RFLX.say DIST 1pl appear-FUT-INCH-DECL
 'Thus we (humans) would appear (to form) each (of the different ethnic groups).' (txt)

The quantifier function of *píđ* is only one manifestation of its basic identity as a marker of multiplicity. Its various other uses are discussed at length in §12.9.1; for example, when it follows a predicate (whether verbal or nominal), *píđ* indicates a repeated instance of the event or of the entity (i.e., 'also', 'respectively', 'some/many'), as in examples (93–95). The overlap between this use and the quantifier function of *píđ* is illustrated by (95). Also, when brought into the verb word as an Inner Suffix, *-píđ-* typically signals that the event is characterized by iterative or durative aspect. (See §12.9.1 for a comparative paradigm of *píđ* in different combinations with various constituents of the clause – as quantifier, marker of repeated instance, and marker of iterative or durative aspect.)

- (93) *ʔǎh* *hipāh-níh* *píđ*
 1sg know-NEG DIST
 'I don't know either.' (cv)

- (94) *ʔíp,* *pǎ-ay,* *pǎç = yi?* *píđ,*
 father NEG:EX-INCH father's.brother=TEL DIST

pǎç = yi? *píđ,* *pǎç = yi?* *píđ*
 father's.bro=TEL DIST father's.bro=TEL DIST
 'Father's gone, and Uncle too, and (other) Uncle too, and (other) Uncle too.' (counting on fingers) (txt)

- (95) *dǎb-níh = yi?* *ní-íy,* *naʔ-hũʔ-yíʔ-íy* *píđ*
 many-NEG=TEL be-DYNM die-finish-TEL-DYNM DIST
 'There are only a few of them, many of them died.' (txt)

The frozen lexical form *ʔopíđ-yi?* (and variants *ʔapíđ-yi?*, *ʔũhpíđ-yi?*, and *ʔǎpíđ-yi?*) 'right away, immediately' (example 96) also appears to contain the morpheme *píđ*.

- (96) *ʔapí d = yiʔ tih d'oʔ-cɔp = yiʔ, nɔ-cud-yǽh-ǽh*
 immediate=TEL 3sg take-go.up.from.river=TEL say-INFR-FRUST-DECL
 ‘(I) would have advised him to bring (it) up from the river immediately.’
 (cv)

6.5.3. Other quantifiers

The ‘quantity’ marker *ʔǎp*¹⁰⁸ usually appears as a bound form, which – as discussed above – appears with the bound demonstrative and interrogative particles to form other quantity-related expressions, such as *hĩ-ʔǎp* ‘how many?’, *yaʔǎp* (*yi-ʔǎp*) ‘several, that many’ (and *yaʔǎp-ay* [INCH] ‘all gone’), etc. It also occurs in the cardinal numerals *koʔǎp* ‘two’ and *mótaʔǎp* ‘three’ (literally ‘eye-quantity’ and ‘rubber-tree-seed-quantity’), and can optionally occur with other cardinal numerals as well, as in example (97).

- (97) *ʔin hibab`ní-ʔap wág ni-yóʔ ʔin b`ay-yíʔ-ay-áh*
 1pl four-QTY day be-SEQ 1pl return-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘Having stayed there for four days, we returned (home).’ (txt)

The form *ʔǎp* is most commonly encountered in the quantifier *ʔǎp-yiʔ* ‘every, all’, which involves the Telic (contrastive emphasis) marker =*yiʔ* (see §7.1.2). This quantifier acts like an adjective in that it can follow the noun or pronoun that it modifies (as in examples 98–100), but it can also occur by itself as a nominal head (example 100). Objects modified by *ʔǎpyiʔ* do not take case marking.

- (98) *yuyú deh nɔ-ǎt = ʔǎy = d`əh, hid ʔǎp-yiʔ nɔ-ǎy*
yuyu water mouth-OBL=who=PL 3pl QTY-TEL say-DYNM
 ‘The people of Barreira, they all say (that).’ (txt)
- (99) *wág ʔǎp-yiʔ tih j`óm-ǎh*
 day QTY-TEL 3sg bathe-DECL
 ‘She takes a bath every day.’ (el)

¹⁰⁸ This form is homonymous with the ‘negative identity’ particle *ʔǎp*.

- (100) *hid* *noʔ-ʔě-h*, *ʔǎp-yiʔ = mah* *nutǎñ = hin*
 3pl say-PERF-DECL QTY-TEL=REP today=also

tih *wǎd-ǎh*, *mohǔy-ǔh*
 3sg eat-DECL deer-DECL

‘They gave him everything (on that day) that deer also eat today.’ (txt)

A semantically similar (and usually interchangeable) quantifier is the form *nihǔʔ* ‘all, all kinds’, a deverbal form of the compounded roots *ni-hũʔ-* ‘be-finish’. Like *ʔǎpyiʔ*, it can modify a preceding noun or stand alone as a nominal head, as illustrated in examples (101–103). Objects modified by *nihǔʔ* (such as the plural ‘animals’ in example 101) typically do not take the object marker, and consultants differ as to whether this is grammatically possible. The quantifiers *nihǔʔ* and *ʔǎpyiʔ* can co-occur to produce an emphatic statement, as in (103).

- (101) *hǔ = d’əh* *nihǔʔ = mah* *tih* *hitǎʔ-ǎh*
 animal=PL all=REP 3sg imitate-DECL
 ‘He imitates all kinds of animals.’ (txt)

- (102) *yág*, *b’ǒh-óh*, *wǎn-ǎh*, *mǔm-ǔh*, *nihǔʔ !*
 hammock salt-DECL knife-DECL axe-DECL all
 ‘There were hammocks, salt, machetes, axes, all (kinds of merchandise)!’
 (txt)

- (103) *tegcáʔ* *ʔǎh* *d’óʔ-óy*, *ʔadócu* *ʔǎh* *d’óʔ-óy*,
 wood.box 1sg take-DYNM rice(Pt) 1sg take-DECL

hĩ-ʔǎp *wǎd* *nihǔʔ* *ʔǎp-yiʔ*
 Q-QTY food all QTY-TEL

‘I took matches, I took rice, all of every kind of food...’ (txt)

Another commonly used quantifier is *b’yiʔ* ‘all, only’. This form probably contains the Telic (contrastive focus) form *=yiʔ* (like *ʔǎpyiʔ* ‘all’), but in this case the first syllable *b’i* cannot be identified as a morpheme by speakers. The quantifier *b’yiʔ* has two subtly different usage patterns: following the focused constituent of the clause (this constituent may itself be a complement clause, as in [110] below), it indicates ‘only’ (i.e., an exclusive group involving that entity), whereas when postposed to the predicate of a main clause it produces an

‘all’ interpretation (i.e., an inclusive group relating to the predication). The following elicited paradigm illustrates this formal and functional distinction:

- (104) a) [*?in*] ***b'íyí?*** *teghǎ-nɔg'ǒd* *?id-íy*
 1pl only fire.people-mouth speak-DYNM
 ‘Only we speak Portuguese.’
- b) *?in* [*teghǎ-nɔg'ǒd*] ***b'íyí?*** *?id-íy*
 1pl fire.people-mouth only speak-DYNM
 ‘We speak only Portuguese.’
- c) [*?in* *teghǎ-nɔg'ǒd* *?id-íy*] ***b'íyí?***
 1pl fire.people-mouth speak-DYNM only
 ‘We all speak Portuguese.’ (el)

Further examples of the ‘only’ function of *b'íyí?* are given in (105–109). Note that the quantifier itself can take the Inchoative suffix *-ay* to form a predication ‘be only, be alone’ (examples 105–106), and that objects modified by *b'íyí?* do take the object marker (unlike most other quantifiers; example 109). This quantifier is also commonly encountered in the expression *?ayup b'íyí?* ‘only one’ (essentially the same meaning as *?ayǔp = yí? -ay*).

- (105) *?āh* ***b'íyí? -ay*** *?āh-āh*, *?ayǔp = yí? -ay*
 1sg only-INCH 1sg-DECL one=TEL-INCH
 ‘I am all alone, all by myself.’ (txt)
- (106) *núh* ***b'íyí? -ay*** *mǎ? = mah*, *tih* *?id-ih*
 head only-INCH UNDER=REP 3sg speak-DECL
 ‘Although now only a head, he spoke.’ (txt)
- (107) *n'i-có?* ***b'íyí?*** *?āh* *hipāh-āh*, *tǎh* *có?* ***b'íyí?***
 that-LOC only 1sg know-DECL pig LOC only
 ‘I only know that region over there, around Serra dos Porcos.’ (txt)
- (108) *?áy = d'əh* ***b'íyí?*** *ham-té-h*
 FEM=PL only go-FUT-DECL
 ‘Only women will go.’ (not ‘all the women’ [*?apyí?*]) (cv)

- (109) *tiyĩ?* = *n'ǎn b'íyĩ?* *tih hi-kéy-éy*
 man=PL.OBJ only 3sg FACT-see-DYNM
 'He takes care of only the men' (el)

In example (110), *b'íyĩ?* (in its 'only' function as nominal modifier) has scope over an entire complement clause.

- (110) *tĩnñh húptok, [húptok tih ʔəg-tég] b'íyĩ?*
 3sg.POSS caxiri caxiri 3sg drink-FUT only

yúp tih hipáñ-ǎh
 that.ITG 3sg know-DECL
 'His caxiri, he thinks only about drinking caxiri.' (sp)

The 'all, completely' function of *b'íyĩ?* when postposed to the predicate is illustrated in examples (111–113). Note that the same predicate nominal use of *hóm b'íyĩ?* 'all sores' refers in (111) to all the people involved in the fight, whereas in (112) it refers to the completely affected state of a single person.

- (111) *hid hóm b'íyĩ?*
 3pl sore only
 'They *all* have injuries!' (goes on to list names of men involved in the fight) (cv)
- (112) *páy, hóm b'íyĩ?* = *mah*
 bad sore only=REP
 'Ugly, all (covered with) sores.' (describing a single person) (txt)
- (113) *ʔid-íy b'íyĩ?* *ʔin-ĩw-ĩp*
 speak-DYNM only 1pl-FLR-DEP
 'We all speak (Hup).' (txt)

The quantifier *dób* 'many, much' likewise occurs as both a nominal modifier (where it inflects much like an adjective) and a nominal head. It is usually used to describe a large quantity of discrete objects (multiplicity), rather than a mass amount (example 114), and occurs in at least one lexicalized construction (*mumŷ dób* [lit. 'arm many'] 'lower part of hand including fingers').

- (114) *yíkán dób = yí?-ay = cud, tǎh dób = yí?-ay = cud*
 over.there many=TEL-INCH=INFR offspring many=TEL-INCH=INFR
 ‘Over there a lot (have appeared), apparently, (he’s had) a lot of children.’ (txt)

Unlike the other quantifiers, *dób* shares several properties with the adjective class (although not all; for example, it does not require modification by *tih* = when standing alone as a nominal head; see §6.6 below). It can occur as a predicate (whether nominal or adjectival; examples 115–118), and can take verbal negation, as in example (117) and the quantifying expression *dób-nih = mǎh* (many-NEG=DIM) ‘a few’.

- (115) *dób yi-d’ǎh-ǎh !*
 many that.ITG-PL-DECL
 ‘There were a lot of them!’ (cv)

- (116) *dób yúp ?id-ih !*
 many that.ITG speech-DECL
 ‘This story is a long one’ (txt)

- (117) *dób-nih = yí? ní-íy*
 many-NEG=TEL be-DYNM
 ‘There are only a few of them.’ (txt)

Also, like the quantifier *píd* and many other modifiers in Hup (including adjectives), *dób* can be incorporated into the verb core as a compounded root, although this is not particularly common:

- (118) *yí-nih-mǐ? = mah j’ǎh tih ?id-dób-ǎh*
 that-be.like-UNDER=REP DST.CNTR 3sg speak-many-DECL
 ‘In spite of this he spoke a lot.’ (he had been reduced to just a head by a jaguar) (txt)

Finally, where *dób* appears in an object noun phrase, it *precedes* the noun it modifies, which then takes object case (compare the quantifiers *nihú?* ‘all’ and *?ǎpyi?* ‘every, all’, which follow the noun and preclude object case marking):

- (119) *dób húp-ǎn ?ǎh káy-éh*
 many person-OBJ 1sg see-DECL
 ‘I saw (spent time with) many Hup people.’ (txt)

6.6. Adjectival modifiers

As discussed in §3.1.3 and §10.1, adjectives in Hup can be defined as a distinct, though limited, word class on the basis of their formal properties; the semantics of this class corresponds closely to the cross-linguistic predictions of Dixon (1982). Nevertheless, when used as predicates, adjectives in Hup share many properties with verbs – in particular, the ability to take aspectual inflection and verbal negation – while as modifiers of nominal arguments, they share a number of properties with the sub-class of bound nouns. A list of the members of the adjective class and a discussion of the behavior of adjectives as predicates are provided in §10.1. This section is devoted to a discussion of adjectives in the noun phrase, where they appear both as nominal modifiers and as nominalized heads.

As noted in the noun phrase template in the introduction to this chapter, adjectives follow the nouns they modify. This is in contrast to other types of noun phrases containing a modifier: numerals, demonstratives, and compounded nouns precede the noun (but note that locative adpositions, like adjectives, follow nouns; see §10.3). Examples of adjectival noun phrases are given in (120–122).

- (120) *tih wɔn-hám-ay-áh, té tod pɔg*
 3sg follow-go-INCH-DECL until hollow.tree big

g'et-pó-ow-ít = mah

stand-EMPH1-FLR-OBL=REP

'She went after (the spirit), to where a big hollow tree stood, they say.'

(txt)

- (121) *hid nɔg'od j'á pæm-hi-ham-tég*
 3pl mouth black sit-descend-go-FUT
 'They'll all be sitting around with black mouths (from eating coca).' (cv)

- (122) *hɔh pɪb yúp n'ũh-ũh*
 sound strong that CNTR-DECL
 'That one has a strong (loud) sound.' (cv)

Adjectives can take the verbal Negative suffix *-nih* not only when they are used as predicates (see §10.1), but also when the adjective occurs within a noun phrase as a modifier, as in example (123) (a predicate nominal). Adjectival noun phrases can also be negated by nominal negators that have scope over the entire noun phrase (see Chapter 16).

- (123) *hōp tǎh yó pay-níh mún yǎh yúw-úh*
 [fish small dangle] bad-NEG INTS2 FRUST that.ITG-DECL
 ‘It would make a not-bad minnow-fishing line.’ (cv)

Adjectives can modify subordinate clauses acting as nominalizations (see §18.2):

- (124) [*ʔǎh nó-ōp*] *póg ʔǎh tón-ǎh, nutǎn-ǎh*
 1sg say-DEP big 1sg hold-DECL today-DECL
 ‘I have a lot to say today.’ (txt)

Non-predicate adjectives are *obligatorily* preceded by some nominal form. When not a full noun (as in the examples above), this may be a demonstrative (example 125) or similar form (such as the interrogative quantifier acting as indefinite pronoun; example 126).

- (125) *hup-hipǎh-níh núp = pay, céc !*
 RFLX-know-NEG that=bad INTERJ
 ‘That bad one has no sense, darn it!’ (cv)

- (126) *hí-ʔǎp páy = d’ǎh, baʔtǐb’ = d’ǎh, bicíw = d’ǎh...*
 Q-QTY bad=PL spirit=PL bisiw.spirit=PL
 ‘So many bad things, evil spirits, *biciw* spirits...’ (txt)

When an adjective occurs on its own as a nominal head, it is obligatorily preceded by the default preform *tih=*, elsewhere the third person singular pronoun, as in (127) (note that adjectives do not modify pronouns in noun phrases). The only exception to this rule appears to be the form *cípmǎh* ‘small’ (cf. Diminutive *mǎh*, §7.2), which does not occur as a nominal head at all and cannot take *tih=* (and may be better considered a kind of quantifier; compare the alternative form *tih = tǎh (= mǎh)* ‘small’, which patterns like a normal adjective).

- (127) *páh = yiʔ y’ǎt-pog-ʔě-y páh yúw-úh,*
 PRX.CNTR=TEL leave-EMPH1-PERF-DYNM PRX.CNTR that-DECL

céc, tih = j’á-aw-áh !
 INTERJ 3sg=black-FLR-DECL
 ‘Just recently (he) left it, darn it; (it was) a black one!’ (cv)

In (128), the interrogative form *hĩ-n'ih* 'what' (a derived nominal) occurs in place of an adjective (some unspecified color value), preserving the bound nominal construction.

- (128) *tih = hĩ-n'ih* ?am túk-u? ?
 3sg=Q-NMZ 2sg want-INT
 'Which type (i.e., which color beads) do you want?' (cv)

Stress and tone (word-accent) patterns for adjectival noun phrases are not fully consistent across speakers and speech events. The underlying lexical tone value for adjectives is almost always high tone, with the primary exception of *bĩg* 'old' (it is possible that this may be at least partially motivated by the contrast with *bĩg* 'tapir'). In general, a noun phrase composed of [N Adj] is treated phonologically as a single lexical unit, with primary stress on the second constituent. In the case of *tih*=Adj constructions, this stress pattern is quite consistent: tone always falls on the adjective and is realized as rising (except in the case of CV roots, which always have high [phonetically falling] tone). In noun phrases involving full lexical nouns, on the other hand, tone on the adjective may vary. The pattern in less careful speech tends to favor a pattern like that of the *tih*= form (including rising tone on the adjective), but in more careful speech (especially in cases of potential ambiguity, such as when the speaker is confronted with a minimal pair set contrasting by tone), the noun may receive equal stress and take tone. In these cases, the following adjective assumes its underlying tonal value (and so is usually high). In at least one case, this general pattern gives rise to a minimal pair contrast:

- (129) *tih = pög* (3sg=big) 'big one'
tih póg (lie big) 'liar' (literally 'big liar', although *tih* by itself is not generally used in this sense)

Note that this pattern for *tih*= adjectival noun phrases is consistent with the most frequent word-accent (stress/tone) pattern for bisyllabic (monomorphemic) lexical items in general (see §2.3.2), and bound nouns with *tih*= are also always stressed on the N2.

The fact that adjective modifiers must take an explicit preceding nominal, for which the default is the *tih*= preform, gives them a formal resemblance to bound (and inalienably possessed) nouns in Hup (see §5.4). Compare, for example, the human noun 'child' and the adjective 'big' in the nominal constructions in (130):

- (130) a) *tiyĩ? = dó?* ‘male child’
 tĩh = dó? ‘child’
- b) *tiyi? pǒg* ‘big man’
 tĩh = pǒg ‘big one’

Functionally, too, there are parallels between the two constructions. The prototypical bound noun construction signals an inherent relationship between two entities, where the first possesses and/or defines the second (e.g., in a whole-part relationship; see §5.5); likewise the adjective denotes a property that is inseparable from the entity that ‘possesses’ it, and may be difficult or impossible to even conceptualize without some kind of physical embodiment. Similarly, the association indicated by the bound noun construction also helps to individuate the entity in question from other entities like it (i.e., by restricting a set), just as the denotation of a property may have a restrictive function, helping to pick out an individual referent from the set of possible referents – although adjectives do not just restrict reference, but also enrich the semantics of a known entity.

Given the formal and functional parallels between the adjectival noun phrase and the bound noun phrase, could these actually be one and the same construction? If so, then the relative order of modifier and head in the adjectival noun phrase must be the opposite of what it seems, as defined earlier in this section: [(Nom) Head + (Adj.) Modifier], where the adjective is the modifier and the noun the head. As example (130) above illustrates, the bound noun construction involves the order [Modifier + Head]; is this actually the structure of the adjectival noun phrase as well? This does indeed seem to be the case for adjectival noun phrases taking the dummy nominal *tĩh* – which is both semantically contentless and phonetically unstressed, as in (130b) above (*tĩh = pǒg* ‘the big one’); here the adjective (and final element of the noun phrase) is a plausible head, at least semantically. This type of adjectival noun phrase really does appear to mirror the bound noun construction.

On the other hand, it seems much less plausible to assume that a noun-adjective phrase containing a full noun – such as *tiyi? pǒg* (man big) in (130b) – should have the order [(Nom) Modifier + (Adj) Head]; that is, that the adjective should be the head of the construction. Yet could the adjectival noun phrase in Hup be internally inconsistent, in that one type (*tĩh = Adj*) has one order of head and modifier, and the other (Noun Adj) the opposite order?

It is difficult to resolve these questions definitively, since there are few syntactic clues to headedness in Hup. However, to the extent that heads can be determined at all, there is actually no reason to think that head-modifier order

cannot vary within the Hup noun phrase; in fact, such syntactic inconsistency already exists among different subtypes of the bound noun constructions. In §5.6, I argue that the *semantic* head of the bound-noun NP may be ambiguous, and that for many noun phrases involving classifying bound nouns, this ambiguity has fostered a switch of the *syntactic* head of the construction from N2 to N1. Thus interpreting one type of adjectival noun phrase as having head-modifier order while the other has modifier-head order is not inconsistent with the facts of Hup more generally.

Given that significant differences among *subtypes* of bound-noun NPs and adjectival NPs are possible in Hup, the question of whether the two constructions should themselves be considered one and the same becomes less meaningful. Instead, it makes more sense to consider them as distinct types of noun phrase that simply share a number of features. In fact, upon closer inspection, quite a few differences between them can be identified.

First, were the parallel with the bound noun construction complete, we would have to assume that the ‘adjective’ head of the adjectival noun phrase is itself no more than a bound noun; however, the set of bound nouns and the set of adjectives in Hup do not actually pattern in the same way at all. Adjectives *must* be preceded by a nominal when acting as the argument of a predicate, but appear alone (i.e., bare) as predicates themselves; most bound nouns, on the other hand, can appear outside the bound construction in contexts where semantic individuation is irrelevant, but otherwise can only function as predicate (nominals) while bound. As the discussion in §3.1.3 illustrates, the identity of adjectives as a formal class of their own hinges on their possession of *both* nominal and verbal qualities, and their ability to move freely between argument and predicate constructions – usually retaining attributes of the one while functioning as the other, and vice versa.

Other features of adjectival noun phrases that differentiate them from purely nominal noun phrases include their stress pattern: while bound noun constructions with a full noun as N1 typically have primary stress either on the N1 only, or on both members of the compound construction (e.g., *tɪyĩʔ=dóʔ* [man=child] ‘male child’), stress in noun + adjective noun phrases usually falls on the adjective (this difference can be seen in example 130 above). Yet another difference involves the verbal negation strategy, which can be applied to adjective modifiers within noun phrases (see 123 above); in the case of bound nouns, on the other hand, the entire noun phrase (and not simply the bound noun within it) must be negated by a nominal negation strategy. Finally, another difference is the fact that unmodified adjectives – unlike bound nouns – do not directly follow a numeral acting as N1 (although they can follow a demonstrative, see above). Instead, the adjective appears in nominalized form with *tih=*, as in (131).

- (131) *koʔǎp tih = pǒg tih tón-ǎh*
 two 3sg=big 3sg hold-DECL
 ‘She has two big ones.’ (el)

The comparison between adjectives and bound nouns is summarized in Table 35.

Table 35. Adjective vs. bound noun in Hup

	Adjective	Bound noun
Appears as 2 nd element in NP	yes	yes
Can appear alone (bare) as NP	no	yes (if indefinite and non-specific)
Can appear alone (bare) as predicate	yes	no
Negator	verbal or nominal	nominal only
Can take numeral as N1	no	yes
Preferred stress pattern when N1 is a full noun	Adjective only (some variation)	Both N1 and N2, or N1 only

Another noteworthy feature of adjectives in noun phrases (which also helps to differentiate them from most bound nouns) is their ability to occur in an explicitly *nominalized* form in association with other nouns. This results in a noun phrase composed of [N *tih*=Adj]. Grammatically, this construction can sometimes (though not necessarily; see below) be considered as two appositional noun phrases, since both elements can take case and number marking separately; by contrast, in a noun phrase formed from [N Adj] without intervening *tih*=, inflection can only attach to the end of the noun phrase. Examples of appositional noun phrases involving nominalized adjectives are given in (132–133).

- (132) *?in tih = pǎb = d’ǎh hup-hipǎh = d’ǎh b’iyi?-ay*
 1pl 3sg=strong=PL RFLX-know=PL only-INCH
 ‘We adults all know better.’ (cv)

- (133) *yúp japudutú... pǎh, tih = w’ǎt tih !*
 that.ITG *japurutu* flute 3sg=long EMPH4
 ‘That *japurutu*... (it’s a) flute, the long (kind)!’ (txt)

Where *multiple* adjectival modifiers occur in reference to a given entity, consultants judge *tih* = to be obligatory on all of them:

- (134) *núp = tat tih = pǒg tih = pǎy nɔh-yí?-íy*
 this=fruit 3sg=big 3sg=bad fall-TEL-DYNM
 ‘This big ugly fruit fell.’ (el)

Adjectives taking *tih* = are nominalizations. A nominal negator is required when *tih* = is present (example 135a–b), whereas a predicate adjective (or a ‘bare’ adjective modifier within a noun phrase, see above) takes a verbal negator (136).

- (135) a) *cadakǎ? tih = pǒg ʔǎp*
 chicken 3sg=big NEG:ID
 ‘(That’s) not a big chicken’ (el)

- b) **ʔamĩh pǎt tih = w’ət-nĩh*
 2sg.POSS hair 3sg=long-NEG
 (Intended meaning: ‘Your hair is not long’)

- (136) *ʔamĩh pǎt w’ət-nĩh*
 2sg.POSS hair long-NEG
 ‘Your hair is not long’ (el)

While the [N *tih*=Adj] construction sometimes behaves as two appositional noun phrases (as in 132–133 above), it can also pattern like a single NP constituent. In these cases, inflectional marking occurs only once, at the end the unit, regardless of the presence of *tih* =. Moreover, in such cases neither pause phenomena nor consultants’ Portuguese translations of [N *tih*=Adj] constructions provide support for two distinct noun phrases, and consultants judge the variants ([N Adj] and [N *tih*=Adj]) to be interchangeable.

Within these apparent single noun phrases of the form [N *tih*=Adj], the main function of *tih* = seems to be one of placing additional focus on the quality conveyed by the adjective. In particular, the [N *tih*=Adj] construction always indicates a quality that is inherent or permanent, while an adjective modifier without *tih* = may be either permanent or temporary. (Note that this association of the more nominal form with a more time-stable attribute, and the more verbal form with a more fleeting attribute, parallels the prototypical semantic distinction between verbs and nouns across languages; it is also a characteristic of the bound nominal construction, which typically signals a whole-part or inalienably possessed relationship.) For example, a naturally dark-

skinned hand is described as *dapũh* (*tih* =) *j'á* (hand [3sg=]black); but *tih* = is ungrammatical when referring to a soot-blackened hand, which would be *dapũh j'á(-áy)* (hand black[-DYNM]). Some adjectives, such as color terms, almost always appear with *tih* =, and a few have even undergone phonological reduction (consonant cluster simplification and vowel harmony), e.g., *tuhúp* 'beautiful, new' and *tídó* [*tiró*] 'red' (Umari Norte dialect only). Examples of this type of adjectival noun phrase are given in (137–138).

(137) *j'ám nĩ [b'éj tih = pǒg] hid d'oʔ-way-yiʔ-ní-h !*
 yesterday 1sg.POSS jandia 3sg=big 3pl take-go.out-TEL-INFR2-DECL
 'Yesterday they took out my big jandia fish!' (cv)

(138) *nĩ-d'ǎh nɔh-tuʔ-key-yóʔ [tih = cáp tih = tohó] ní-ĩh*
 this-PL fall-immersed-see-SEQ 3sg=body 3sg=white be-DECL
 'Because those (people) jumped in, their body was white (lit. their white body existed).' (txt)

Where it occurs between noun and adjective in what appears to be a single noun phrase constituent, the marker *tih* = may be developing an identity as an attributive marker, functioning to signal the connection between the nominal and the modifier in the noun phrase. While the above discussion has argued that the bound noun and the adjectival noun phrase cannot be considered the same construction synchronically, it is very likely that they are historically and/or functionally related. Typological work has shown that the grammaticalization of possessive markers to attributive markers has occurred in other languages (e.g., Oceanic languages, Ross 1998; cf. Rießler 2004); in a number of cases, such as in Ural-Altaic languages, intermediate stages apparently include a nominalizer, marker of definiteness, and marker of anaphoric-demonstrative focus (Rießler 2004). In Hup, as this discussion has shown, one and the same marker *tih* = has the role of a marker of inalienable possession (and individuation, related to definiteness) with nouns, and of nominalization and – to some degree – focus and attribution with adjectives.

6.7. Coordination of noun phrases

Hup has a number of strategies for indicating coordination of multiple noun phrases within the clause. The simplest of these is a juxtaposition strategy, which requires no morphological indicator of the coordination (examples 139–140). This strategy is also used to express clausal coordination (see §18.1.1).

- (139) *nihú?*, *b'ǝ?* = *tat*, *naháw* = *tat*, *núp* *g'ǝb* = *tat*,
all gourd=fruit macucu=fruit this tucuma=fruit

hid *d'o?*-*píd-ih*

3pl take-DIST-DECL

They took all kinds: gourds, macucú fruits, (and) these tucumá fruits.'
(txt)

- (140) *hǝp*, *cǝc*, *wǎn*, *mǝm* *j'ám* *pǎ-ǎhó?*
grater hoe knife axe DST.CNTR NEG:EX-TAG2
'There used to be no graters, hoes, knives, (or) axes.' (sp)

A second mechanism that is used to link noun phrases within the clause (as well as entire clauses) is the Emphatic Coordinator =*nih*. It can appear on associated nominal constituents in a list, as in (141), but when =*nih* is used these linked noun phrases are more commonly expressed as entire linked predicates (see §18.1.3).

- (141) *yǎ?ám* *huh-út* = *?ǎy* = *d'ǎh* *hipǎh-ǎy* *b'iyi?* !
jaguar rapids-OBL=who=PL know-DYNM only

miná? = *d'ǎh* *hipǎh-ǎy*, *miná?* = *d'ǎh*...

Desano=PL know-DYNM Desano=PL

m'ǎc = *d'ǎh* *hid-áy* = *nih* *yúw-up-úh* !

Tuyuca=PL 3pl-INCH=EMPH.CO that.ITG-FLR-DECL

'The people from Iawareté (Jaguar Rapids) all know (the kapiwaya)! The Desanos know, the Desanos... the Tuyucas, it's so for them too!' (txt)

The Declarative suffix -*Vh* can also signal coordinated nominal entities (example 142), and is likewise sometimes used to indicate clause coordination (cf. §17.3.2 and §18.1.2)

- (142) *yág*, *b'ǝh-ǝh*, *wǎn-ǎh*, *mǝm-ǝh*,
hammock salt-DECL machete-DECL axe-DECL

nihú? *d'ǎh-d'ǎh-wáy-áh*

all send-send-go.out-DECL

'(He) brought out hammocks, (there was) salt, (there were) machetes, (there were) axes, everything.' (txt)

Other strategies for coordinating multiple nominal arguments include use of the ‘Parallel’ marker =*hin* ‘also’ (§7.7), which – among other related functions – is used as an optional emphatic coordinator (example 143), and the ‘Associative plural’ marker *-ǎnd’əh*, which links associated participants who are acting together (see §4.4.6). Note that these two markers cannot serve a clause-linking function, unlike the strategies above, but are limited to use with nominal arguments within the clause.

(143) *yúp = mah* *hid* *yǎhǎy-píd-ǎh*, *yǎ?ambǎ?* = ***hin*** *yǎhǎy*,
 that.ITG=REP 3pl search-DIST-DECL dog=also search

tǎh = hup = hǎn *yǎhǎy*, *ní-ǎy = mah*

3sg=RFLX.INTS=also search be-DYNM=REP

‘So they were searching, the dog also searching, and he himself (boy) also searching.’ (txt)

Chapter 7

Nominal discourse-marking morphology

This chapter presents the wide range of bound morphology associated with the noun phrase and having functions relating generally to discourse marking. The forms discussed here all associate primarily with nominal arguments, or else have specific functions in combination with nominals that differ from their functions with predicates. In general, these forms have functions relating to focus, emphasis, topicality, etc. Nominal morphology relating more narrowly to the semantic or syntactic status of the referent (primarily case and number marking) is covered in Chapter 4. Other forms in Hup that combine relatively freely with various parts of speech (including nominals) and undergo little or no change in function from one host to another are discussed in Chapter 15.

The forms, slot classes, and functions of the formatives discussed in this chapter are summarized in Table 36.

7.1. ‘Promiscuous’ verbal morphology and the noun class¹⁰⁹

In general, Hup bound morphology tends to be highly promiscuous, as discussed in §3.3. Even the forms that are most closely integrated phonologically with their hosts (i.e., the vowel-copying formatives defined as Boundary Suffixes in relation to verbs) are usually able to attach to various parts of speech, often occurring in a range of distinct constructions, and serving a variety of functions. Accordingly, very little nominal morphology in Hup is *strictly* nominal. As discussed in Chapter 4, even the markers of case and number – the main inflectional forms that can be considered *primarily* nominal – are not limited to nominal hosts; the case suffixes are capable of combining with verb stems to form adverbial clauses, and the case and number markers attach to verb stems to form headless relative clauses (producing nominalizations).

¹⁰⁹ Extra thanks to Orin Gensler for his especially helpful comments on this section.

Table 36. Nominal discourse-marking formatives in Hup

Form	Slot class (formative type)	Identity/word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form
-ay	Suffix	Nouns, various hosts	Inchoative focus	Inchoative aspect (Inner/Boundary suffix w/ verbs)
=y <i>i</i> ?	Enclitic	Nouns	Contrastive emphasis	Telic aspect (Inner Suffix w/ verbs)
=b'ay	Enclitic	Nouns	Topic-switch marker	Adverbializer (enclitic w/ adverbs, clauses) Repetition or return to a state; (Enclitic/Inner Suffix with verbs)
=hup	Enclitic	Nouns	Reflexive intensifier	Verb root 'return' Reflexive marker (prefix w/ verbs)
-Vp	Suffix	Nouns, various hosts	Topic marker	Noun 'person'; Adj. 'new, good' Dependent marker
=cud	Enclitic	Nouns	Deceased referent marker	(Boundary Suffix w/ verbs and clauses) Inferred evidential (enclitic w/ predicates)
=wəd	Enclitic	Nouns	Respect markers (male/gender-neutral and female)	Verb root 'be inside' Bound nouns wəhəd 'old man'; wá 'old woman'
=wá	Enclitic	Nouns	Indefinite associative 'one from X place; associated w/ X'	Interrogative pronoun ?üy 'who'
=?üy	Nominal enclitic	Noun + Oblique or Object case	Related instance marker	
tá?	Particle	Nouns	Parallel comparison	
=hin	Enclitic	Nouns, adverbials	Contrast between entities	
n'üh	Particle	Nouns	Locative; shift of attention among entities	
có?	Particle	Various hosts		

Bound formatives in Hup sometimes perform much the same function regardless of the word class of their host, but in other cases their function may be quite distinct depending on whether the host is a predicate, a nominal argument, or even a main or a subordinate clause. One of the most striking cases of this involves the set of markers that indicate aspect when occurring on verbs (and typically on predicate nominals and adjectives as well), but which on nominal arguments tend to serve discourse-related functions of marking focus, topic, or emphasis. Nevertheless, the distinction between these forms' functions with predicates (verbal, nominal, or adjectival) versus non-predicate constituents of the clause is often blurred. A single form is often able to convey a range of meanings, depending not only on its host and on the construction in which it occurs, but also on the pragmatic context.

Among verbal morphological forms, some can also combine directly with a non-verbal predicate (adjectival or nominal) with no change in either function or form, while others require a copula host. To the extent that these forms are predicative, they are treated together with verbal morphology (primarily in Chapter 12; also see Chapters 13 and 14).

In addition to the 'promiscuous' forms discussed in this section, there is one aspect-related verbal Boundary Suffix that also occurs with nominal forms, but in very limited contexts. This is Dynamic *-V́y*, which in a limited number of cases can attach as an attributive marker to the first element (which is usually an adjective) of certain nominal compounds, as discussed in detail in §5.1.4 (see also §12.2); examples include *j'áb-áy wædhɔ* (night-DYNM luminary) 'moon', *wág-áy wædhɔ* (day-DYNM luminary) 'sun', and *póh-óy děh* (high-DYNM water) 'water from the roof'. The use of the Dynamic suffix as an attributive appears to mark a dynamic but intrinsic association between the two entities in the compound.

7.1.1. Inchoative focus *-ay*

The form *-ay*, which acts as a marker of inchoative aspect on predicates (see §12.3), serves a focus function with nominal arguments. It can occur on either subject or object nominals, and typically highlights information as new, in keeping with its inchoative identity. In general, this highlighting of newness is a discourse phenomenon that relates to the entire clause; when the Inchoative marker occurs on a nominal argument, it usually *also* occurs on the predicate (i.e., twice in one clause), although not invariably.

The use of *-ay* with predicate nominals provides important context for understanding its use with arguments. Example (1) illustrates its relatively clear-

cut inchoative function, relating to an initiated or imminent event (much like its function with verbal predicates):

- (1) *děh-ay* *?ín-ǎh*
 water-INCH 1pl-DECL
 'We're about to get rained on.' (cv)

In other cases, the Inchoative marker also occurs with a nominal predicate, but here the 'inchoative' sense relates primarily to the beginning-point of the speaker's (and hearer's) engagement with a time-stable entity, rather than to the initiation of an event. This is illustrated in examples (2a) and (3a), and contrasted with the more aspect-neutral declarative inflection in (2–3b).

- (2) a) *núp* *pihít = teg-ay-áh*
 this banana=tree-INCH-DECL
 'This is a banana tree.' (we are walking by and commenting)

- b) *núp* *pihít = teg-éh*
 this banana=tree-DECL
 'This is a banana tree.' (el)

- (3) a) *núw-ay* *nǎ* *mǎy-ay-áh*
 this-INCH 1sg.POSS house-INCH-DECL
 'This is my house (we're arriving in).'

- b) *núp* *nǎ* *mǎy-ǎh*
 this 1sg.POSS house-DECL
 'This is my house.' (el)

Similarly, in the string of predicate nominals in (4) (which one might say when showing someone a photograph of one's family) the Inchoative marks each person as he/she is pointed out.

- (4) *?áh = ?ín-ay*, *?áh = ?íp-ay*, *?áh = cǎt-ay* *yúw-úh*
 1sg=mother-INCH 1sg=father-INCH 1sg=older.brother-INCH that.ITG-DECL
 'That's my mother, my father, my older brother.' (ru)

The function of Inchoative *-ay* with nominal arguments is similar to its function with predicates: it serves to highlight new information vis-à-vis the speaker's (and hearer's) immediate experience. As noted above, where it occurs

on an argument, it is frequently *also* present on the predicate, as in (3a) (but this is not always the case). Examples of the Inchoative marker's occurrence on the subject noun phrase (and in some cases on the predicate) are given in (5–7).

- (5) *mẵt ciwīb = wig-ay = mah, tih-ăn wid-hám-ay-áh...*
 cutia bacaba=seed-INCH=REP 3sg-OBJ arrive-go-INCH-DECL
 '(Then he tried) cutia-bacaba seeds, and they fit him.' (after trying a number of other seed types to replace his missing eyes) (txt)

- (6) *bahad-nih tih ní-ay-áh, yúp*
 appear-NEG 3sg be-INCH-DECL that.ITG

hid = ?in-tẵh-ay-áh

3pl=mother-offspring-INCH-DECL

'He did not appear, their mother's son.' (i.e., he had disappeared) (txt)

- (7) *dɔwɔh dɔ hǒp-ay = mah yúp d'o?-mɔy-d'ɔh-ɔh*
 cheek red fish-INCH=REP that.ITG take-hole-rot-DECL
 'It was that red-cheeked fish that made the hole in her.' (txt)

Inchoative *-ay* can only occur once within the noun phrase. Where a demonstrative is present in the noun phrase, it is usually the host for the Inchoative marker, while the noun it modifies is not. In example (8) – as in (3a) above – the Inchoative marks the clause-initial demonstrative, as well as the predicate.

- (8) *yúw-ay ?edí g'óp-ay-áh*
 that.ITG-INCH Edi scoop-INCH-DECL
 'There's Edi getting water now' (ru)

The Inchoative focus marker also appears on object noun phrases, where it follows any case marker, as in (9–10). However, *-ay* cannot occur on *both* A and O in a single clause.

- (9) *hǒp-ay tih wăd-ay-áh*
 fish-INCH 3sg eat-INCH-DECL
 'Now he's eating fish (after eating something else first).' (el)

- (10) *wă? (*-ay) ?ám-ăn-ay mæh-tég-ay-áh*
 vulture (*INCH) 2sg-OBJ-INCH beat-FUT-INCH-DECL
 'Vulture will beat you.' (el)

The focus function of Inchoative *-ay* is especially clear in those contexts where some focus marker is constructionally obligatory in the clause. This is the case, for example, with the ‘Exclusive’ *-Vyik* construction, which has a corresponding nominal focus slot; while this is usually filled by the generic Focus suffix *-áh*, *-ay* may take its place:

- (11) *yũ-ay* *tih-an* *cug’æt* *be-eyik*
 John-INCH 3sg-OBJ leaf/paper show-EXCL
 ‘**Only John** showed him the paper.’ (el)

7.1.2. Contrastive emphasis (Telic) =*yíʔ*?

The form *yíʔ* is one of the most ubiquitous morphemes in Hup; it is extremely frequent, and attaches to a variety of different parts of speech. In all of its realizations, it appears to have something to do with signaling focus, but its more specific function depends on the particular part of speech and type of construction with which it occurs. As an Inner Suffix with verbs, *-yíʔ-* indicates telic aspect (particularly relating to a wholly affected participant; §12.6); encliticized to adverbial clauses, it appears to have both the function of focus and that of marking the construction as an adverbial (§10.2); and encliticized to nominals it indicates contrastive emphasis. As such, its main function is to emphasize the nominal referent’s uniqueness vis-à-vis other entities.

While this discussion concentrates on the ‘contrastive emphasis’ use of =*yíʔ*, the various functions of this form are in many cases not clearly distinct, and blend into one another. For this reason, I have glossed all instances of *yíʔ* as ‘Telic’, although its uses with nominal arguments and adverbial clauses are certainly related more to emphasis than to aspect.

Another somewhat mysterious fact about contrastive constructions involving encliticized =*yíʔ* is their varying stress patterns. While in some cases =*yíʔ* is unstressed, in others it receives equivalent or even primary stress in relation to its host. Because stress plays an important role in determining construction types elsewhere in Hup, these differences may be shown to correspond to a meaningful pattern; it is hoped that the nuances of this bound form’s polyfunctionality will become more clear with future research.

Examples (12–14) illustrate the contrastive emphasis function of =*yíʔ* in connection with predicate nominals. The first two are common responses to teasing; for example, a joking allegation is often answered with (12), “It’s *you* (and not me!)”, and I was instructed to answer with (13) when teased that so-and-so was my husband. Example (14) comes from a story in which the partici-

pants in a ceremony had a large number of dance staffs, but had stacked them all one inside the other so that they appeared as a single staff.

(12) *ʔám = yíʔ yúw-úh !*
 2sg=TEL that-DECL
 ‘It’s *you!*’ (cv)

(13) *cǎp = yíʔ !*
 other=TEL
 ‘(He’s) a *different* one!’ (cv)

(14) *ʔayup = tĕg = yíʔ = mah hidnĭh kotõw = teg-eh*
 one=stick=TEL=REP 3pl.POSS dance.staff-stick-DECL
 ‘Their dance staff was *just one* staff.’ (txt)

The elicited pair of examples in (15) likewise illustrates the contrastive emphasis function of =*yíʔ*, which can occur on either the subject or the object argument of a clause.

(15) a) *ʔin = yíʔ teghč-nɔg’õd ʔid-íy*
 1pl=TEL non.Indian-mouth speak-DYNM
 ‘It is *we* that speak Portuguese (in contrast to other people).’

b) *ʔin teghč-nɔg’õd = yíʔ ʔid-íy*
 1pl non.Indian-mouth=TEL speak-DYNM
 ‘It’s *Portuguese* that we speak (in contrast to other languages).’ (el)

Further examples are given in (16–18). In example (18), =*yíʔ* occurs with an oblique argument.

(16) *ʔŷy-ǎn = yíʔ tih nɔ-õʔ ? ʔŷy-ǎn ?*
 who-OBJ=TEL 3sg say-INT who-OBJ
 ‘To *whom* did she say that? To *whom?*’ (cv)

- (17) *níŋ* *cóʔ=yiʔ* *bĩʔ=teg* *ham-ní-p=b'ay,*
 2pl LOC=TEL work=THING go-INFR2-DEP=AGAIN

tĩh = cúm-ũh

3sg=beginning-DECL

'As for *you* all (but not us), you all were making things in the beginning.'
 (i.e., Non-Indians have been the ones with merchandise since humans
 appeared) (txt)

- (18) *wǎh-d'ǎh-ǎt=yiʔ* *yúp* *?in* *bab'-ni-ní-h !*
 River.Indian-OBL=TEL that.ITG 1pl sibling-be-INFR2-DECL
 'We were together *with the River Indians!*' (txt)

In keeping with its contrastive emphasis function, the form =*yiʔ* can occur on elements in a list to mark expression of explicit contrastive difference between two or more entities, including the semi-idiomatic construction *tĩh =yiʔ* 'one's own', as in examples (19–20).

- (19) *níŋĩh* *hǎhtěg* *tĩh =yiʔ,* *?inĩh* *hǎhtěg* *tĩh =yiʔ,*
 2pl.POSS canoe 3sg=TEL 1pl.POSS canoe 3sg=TEL

cǎkw'ǎt = ?ĩh *nĩh* *hǎhtěg* *tĩh =yiʔ*

tukano=MSC POSS canoe 3sg=TEL

'Your (Non-Indian peoples') canoe was one, our canoe was another, the
 Tukanos' canoe was another (in the Creation)' (i.e., you all had your own
 canoe, we had our own...) (txt)

- (20) *húp = d'ǎh* *kedǎ =yiʔ* *nǎ-ǎy,*
 person=PL firefly=TEL say-DYNM

huhũy =yiʔ *nǎ-ǎy,* *ní-ĩy* *yí-d'ǎh-ǎh*

firefly=TEL say-DYNM be-DYNM that.ITG-PL-DECL

'There are those Hup people that say "kedo", and those (others) that say
 "huhuy" (to mean 'firefly').' (txt)

The form =*yiʔ* also marks adverbial expressions and clauses (mostly relating to time and location), as discussed in §10.2 and §18.2.6.1. In examples (21–24), =*yiʔ* (here optional) appears to serve a similar emphasis-related function with the adverbials as it does with nominals. However, as the discussion in

§10.2 (see also §18.2.6.1) clarifies, =*yíʔ* appears in other cases to have the more general role of simply marking a construction as adverbial.

- (21) *yíkán = yíʔ píđ wid-b'ǎy, yíkán = yíʔ píđ*
 there=TEL DIST arrive-return over.there=TEL DIST

wid-b'ǎy, ní-ǎy = mah

arrive-return be-DYNM=REP

'Each time he arrived, he arrived right back there again!' (a man trying to leave some spirits' house keeps finding himself returning to it as he wanders lost) (txt)

- (22) [*ʔamǎh yág g'ǎʔ-ǎt] = yíʔ tih g'ǎʔ-ǎh*
 2sg.POSS hammock suspend-OBL=TEL 3sg suspend-DECL
 'He kept his hammock right where your hammock hangs.' (cv)

- (23) *híd biʔ-ni-ní-h, hib'ah = tǎh = d'ǎh-ǎh...*
 3pl work-be-INFR2-DECL be.created=offspring=PL-DECL

cǎp = ma yít-yíʔ, cǎp = ma yít-yíʔ

other=river thus-TEL other=river thus-TEL

'They did (thus), the Ancestors... the next creek (was named) thus, (and) the next creek (was named) thus.' (txt)

- (24) *nutǎn = mǎh = yíʔ ʔǎh wiʔ-tuk-hǎh-yǎh-ǎh !*
 today=DIM=TEL 1sg hear-want-NONVIS-FRUST-DECL
 'Right this minute I'd like to listen to it!' (cv)

The marker =*yíʔ* also appears in expressions of comparison, probably through a reflex of its adverbial function (see §10.2.2). It typically combines with the nominal standard of comparison to indicate 'just like X':

- (25) *b'ǎy = yíʔ tǎg níh-ǎy yúw-úh*
 traira=TEL tooth be.like-DYNM that.ITG-DECL
 'Its teeth are just like the traira's.' (txt)

7.1.3. Topic-switch marker =*b'ay* ('again')

The enclitic =*b'ay*, which has the aspectual meaning of 'repeated instance' in verbal constructions (see §12.9.2), also occurs on nominal arguments and relates to a switch of topic in the discourse. Like most of the other bound forms discussed in this section, there is functional and conceptual overlap between its aspectual use with verbs and its use as a discourse marker with nominals (hence the gloss 'again' in both instances): just as the predicative use of =*b'ay* signals the repetition of an event or of its resulting state, its nominal use picks out one referent from a series of multiple entities (actual or hypothetical) that figure in repetitions of the same event or situation, or in different events that are rhetorically parallel. If an event is repeated with a different entity, that entity is often new information; thus by marking a switch of topic in the discourse, =*b'ay* can also act as a kind of focusing device within the clause itself (cf. Lambrecht 1994: 129).

The link between the verbal aspectual and the nominal topic-switch functions of =*b'ay* can be seen in examples (26–28), in which both functions treat a 'repeated instance' of a related event, in which different entities are involved. Examples (26–27) come from a story in which a person guts one game animal after another to feed a hungry spirit (26), then passes the knife out of his hiding place so that the spirit, in his turn, can feed the person (27). Example (28) is a follow-up request in a conversational exchange: the initial request – which a child made to me while I was playing the fiddle – was *cadakã? yám!* '(Play the) Chicken Song!'; I responded saying 'I've just played it', so he countered with the second suggestion.

(26) *yúp cãw-ãn =b'ay, tih kiwí?-b'ay-áh*
 that.ITG other-OBJ=AGAIN 3sg split.open-AGAIN-DECL
 'Then he split open another one.' (txt)

(27) *yúp =b'ay, húp =b'ay wan tãh d'əh-wáy-áh*
 that.ITG=AGAIN person=AGAIN knife small send-go.out-DECL
 'Then the person sent out the knife (so that the spirit could use it in his turn).' (txt)

(28) *məhǔy yám =b'ay*
 deer song=AGAIN
 'Deer Song then.' (cv)

Examples (29–30) illustrate the use of =*b'ay* to draw attention to a contrast between entities – i.e., a switch of topic – in the context of a rhetorically parallel event.

- (29) *tih =b'ay, cohó =b'ay, d'úç tih təd-g'ét-mř? =yi?*
 3sg=AGAIN crab=AGAIN timbó 3sg beat.timbó-stand-UNDER=TEL

hup-hi-cu?-ham-tú?-ay-áh

RFLX-FACT-cover-immersed-INCH-DECL

'As for him, the crab, while he (the jaguar) was beating timbó, (the crab) went and covered himself up in the water (to hide).' (txt)

- (30) *tih b'ót-an hám-áh, tih b'iyi?, yí-nih-mř? =mah*
 3sg roça-DIR go-DECL 3sg only that.ITG-be.like-UNDER=REP

tih =təh?íp =b'ay hǒp kók-əp hám-áh

3sg=child.father=AGAIN fish pull-DEP go-DECL

'She went to the roça by herself; at the same time her husband went fishing.' (txt)

The elicited example (31) contrasts the appearance of =*b'ay* as a topic-switch marker on both subject and object arguments of the clause (31a–b) with its typical verbal aspectual function in (31c).

- (31) a) *hid =b'ay hǒp wэд-эх*
 3pl=AGAIN fish eat-DECL
 'As for *them*, they are eating fish.' (i.e., in contrast/comparison w/us)

- b) *hid hǒp =b'ay wэд-эх*
 3pl fish=AGAIN eat-DECL
 'They are eating *fish*.' (i.e., relative to some other food)

- c) *hid hǒp wэд-эy =b'ay (wэд-b'ay-áh)*
 3pl fish eat-DYNM=AGAIN (eat-AGAIN-DECL)
 'They are eating fish again.' (el)

However, this division of labor is not clear-cut, as already suggested by example (26) above. In fact, =*b'ay* can realize its comparative/contrastive function even when occurring on a verb, as in (32–33). Note, however, that =*b'ay* can combine with a verb in two different ways; as an enclitic following the Bound-

ary Suffix (e.g., $\text{ʔəg-əy} = b'ay$ 'drink-DYNM=AGAIN'), or as an Inner Suffix preceding the Boundary Suffix (e.g., ʔəg-b'ay-áh). The more tightly integrated form involving $b'ay$ as an Inner Suffix can *only* have the aspectual reading relating to a repeated event (see §12.9.2), so it is unacceptable in these examples.

- (32) $núp$ $\text{ʔáh} = cət = b'ay$ $wən'$ ʔəg-nih ,
 this 1sg=older.brother=AGAIN mingau drink-NEG

$núp$ $\text{ʔāh} = tǎh\text{ʔip} = b'ay$ $wən'$ $\text{ʔəg-əy} = b'ay$
 this 1sg=child.father=AGAIN mingau drink-DYNM=AGAIN
 'My older brother drinks mingau; my husband does not.' (el)

- (33) $yít = yi?$ $g'et-pəm-yí\text{ʔ-íy}$, $cáp = ʔih$ $yé-mǎ? = b'ay$
 thus=TEL stand-sit-TEL-DYNM other=MSC enter-UNDER=AGAIN
 'While they stay thus sitting around, another one goes (to school).' (sp)

In conversation, $=b'ay$ is in extremely frequent use with interrogative clauses (both information [WH] and polar [yes-no] types), as illustrated in examples (34–38). As such, its use is probably motivated by the awareness of multiple possible but contrasting options vis-à-vis one referent or situation, or (conversely) of multiple possible referents vis-à-vis one event. It tends to occur clause-finally, in conjunction with clause-final subjects; by contrast, the verb-final interrogative strategy (see §17.4) rarely involves marking with $=b'ay$ (although this can occur, as in example 38 below).

- (34) ʔúy $yúp = b'ay ?$
 who that.ITG=AGAIN
 'Who's that?' (cv)

- (35) $hīn'ih$ $yúp = b'ay ?$
 what that.ITG=AGAIN
 'What's that (for)?' (cv)

- (36) $híp = b'ay$, $hī$ $key-nih-íy$ $tih-áh ?!$
 what=AGAIN how see-be.like-DYNM 3sg-FOC
 'What? How can it be (that you didn't leave any for me)?!' (txt)

- (37) $cúg$ $kət-tég$ $\text{ʔám} = b'ay ?$
 stringed.instrument play-FUT 2sg=AGAIN
 'Are you going to play the fiddle?' (cv)

- (38) *ʔǔy d'oʔ-yiʔ-póʔ = b'ay ?*
 who take-TEL-EMPH1=AGAIN
 'Who the heck took it?' (cv)

It is possible for =*b'ay* in an interrogative to occur both on a demonstrative question word and clause-finally, as in (39).

- (39) *hǐp = b'ay cană = b'ay, hǐp = b'ay pihít = b'ay ?*
 what=AGAIN pineapple=AGAIN what=AGAIN banana=AGAIN
 'Which is the pineapple, which the banana?' (el)

The enclitic =*b'ay* also occurs frequently on demonstratives, marking a constituent that is a new (or reactivated) topic (examples 40–41). This use probably has a similar motivation to that in interrogatives, that is, signaling a mild contrast or comparison among possible referents or options.

- (40) *núp = b'ay !*
 this=AGAIN
 '(Look at) this one!' (child showing me a bug) (cv)
- (41) *yúp ʔin = b'ay... núp j'áh cóʔ ʔin ni-tég*
 that.ITG 1pl=AGAIN this land LOC 1pl be-FUT
 'So as for us... this is the land we are to live in.' (txt)

7.1.4. Reflexive intensifier =*hup*

The form *hup* is extremely multifunctional; among other uses, it can be a marker of valency (as a reflexive) and of indefinite reference, as discussed in detail in §11.1. As an enclitic on nominal arguments, however, it functions as an intensifier (i.e., an 'emphatic reflexive'), focusing attention on the referent. Whereas Reflexive *hup*- always occurs with an animate subject, the intensifier =*hup* is acceptable on both animate referents (example 42) and on inanimate referents (examples 43–44).

- (42) *hũh-way-níh = yiʔ níh, tíh = hup tíh way-ʔũh*
 carry-go.out-NEG=TEL be.IMP 3sg=RFLX.INTS 3sg go.out-JUS
 'Don't carry him out, he can go out by himself.' (cv)

- (43) *nup-m'ǎ=poʔ hid weʔ-d'óʔ-óh... tíh =hup-ay*
 this-MEAS=EMPH1 3pl transfer-take-DECL 3sg=RFLX.INTS-INCH

hɔp-hí-ay-áh

dry.up-descend-INCH-DECL

'Just this little bit they pour out... it dries/settles out by itself (in the bottom of the pot).' (txt)

- (44) *nř húpnuh, tíh =hup tíh pay-yíʔ-íy*
 1sg.POSS radio 3sg=RFLX.INTS 3sg bad-TEL-INCH
 'My radio (lit. 'person-head'), it went bad by itself.' (ru)

The Reflexive intensifier =*hup* can also encliticize to nominals marked as objects or possessors, but it must follow these inflectional formatives, as in examples (45–47). It may itself be followed by additional focus markers, in particular the Telic/contrastive emphasis form =*yíʔ* (47).

- (45) *ʔám-ǎn =hup ʔáh mæy-té-h*
 2sg-OBJ=RFLX.INTS 1sg pay-FUT-DECL
 'I'll pay you yourself.' (el)

- (46) *ʔamřh =hup núp =b'ay*
 2sg.POSS=RFLX.INTS this=AGAIN
 'This one is your own.' (el)

- (47) *nutaǎn ʔín =hup =yíʔ-ay-áh ʔín =hin-řh,*
 today 1pl=RFLX.INTS=TEL-INCH-DECL 1pl=also-DECL

híd-n'ǎn hikəd-ní =d'əh-ay

3pl=PL.OBJ FACT.pass-be=PL-INCH

'Today it is just us; we have changed places with them (the Tukanos).'

(txt)

7.1.5. Dependent suffix -*Vp* as topic marker

The form -*Vp* has the primary role of a verbal suffix, used to indicate a dependent clause (principally a relative clause, but also a converbial clause, see §18.2.3–4); it also – more marginally – appears on main clauses (§18.2.4.2). This section focuses on an additional realization of -*Vp*: its use with a variety of

clausal constituents (see also §18.2.4.3). With these non-predicative elements, the primary function of *-Vp* is to indicate a reactivated topic or antitopic (i.e., a right-dislocated topic, cf. Lambrecht 1994: 203): it sets the nominal apart from the rest of the clause, highlighting it for the benefit of the hearer (example 48). The use of *-Vp* as both a subordinator (on clauses) and as a topic marker (on nominal arguments) has a common denominator (and a likely historical connection) in that both have to do with the theme of the sentence, rather than the focus or rheme, and both are scene-setting, rather than dealing with asserted new information.

- (48) *ʔāh-āp híd-ān=yi? nó-šy j'am=ti?*
 1sg-DEP 3pl-OBJ=TEL say-DYNM DST.CNTR=EMPH.TAG
 'As for me, I said (so) to them.' (cv)

Nominals marked by *-Vp* often occur clause-finally, following the verb. In some cases, particularly when these are objects or other nominal constituents, and are probably best considered antitopics. In other cases, however, they are subjects and do not appear to be external to the clause (i.e., right-dislocated; such placement of a pronominal subject after the verb is common in Hup, although these are more typically marked with the Declarative suffix *-Vh*, see §17.2). Moreover, when *-Vp*-marked subjects occur clause-finally, the preceding constituent is obligatorily marked with the Focus form *-áh* (see §15.2.3), and the Dependent marker is often preceded by the 'Filler' form *-Vw-* (see §15.2.4). The obligatory use of *-áh* in this context helps to create an explicitly stated, polarized opposition between the topic and focus (i.e., theme and rheme). This combination of strategies usually lends an emphatic tone to the entire utterance, and is illustrated in examples (49–50).

- (49) *patí-ān húp-út ʔāh ʔid-ihó?, ʔid-iy-áh ʔāh-āw-āp*
 Pattie-OBJ Hup-OBL 1sg speak-TAG2 speak-DYNM-FOC 1sg-FLR-DEP
 'I speak Hup to Pattie, you know, I really speak (it)!' (sp)

- (50) *hĩʔn'ih nɔ-tég-n'ih pā-áh yú-uw-úp,*
 what say-FUT/PURP-NMZ NEG:EX-FOC that.ITG-FLR-DEP

mandukorí-ān-āw-āp !

Mandukori-OBJ-FLR-DEP

'...Nothing like that (is said) to that one, to Mandukori!' (referring to children's begging, "Father, I want to eat bananas") (sp)

That the clause-final *-Vp*-marked subject *may* be right-dislocated is illustrated by the second subject nominal in (50) above. This is likely also the case in (51), where the clause-final subject is co-referential with an explicit subject pronoun within the clause.

- (51) *tĩh = hup hup-hipãh-yó? ní-ĩy tĩh*
 3sg=RFLX RFLX-know-SEQ be-DYNM 3sg

náen-ãp = cud-áh núw-ũp
 come-DEP=INFR-FOC this-DEP
 'She came of her own accord, this one!' (sp)

7.1.6. Comparison of 'promiscuous' nominal discourse markers

The bound forms discussed above are considered as a set, given that they all occur as aspectual markers with verbs and have a discourse-marking function with nominal constituents. The following elicited paradigm illustrates the differences in their patterns of nominal use and their semantic contributions.

Inchoative focus: The following sentence might be spoken by children who speak Hup, but whose father does not; the choice of the inchoative focus form stresses the chronological comparison between the children and their father.

- (52) *?ĩn-ay húp ?id-ih* (OR: *?id-ay-áh*)
 1pl-INCH Hup speak-DECL (speak-INCH-DECL)
 'But we speak Hup.'

Contrastive emphasis: This sentence contrasts the speaker's group, who speak Hup, with the majority of people in São Gabriel, who do not.

- (53) *?ĩn = yi? húp ?id-ih, hũh-an*
 1pl=TEL Hup speak-DECL São.Gabriel
 'Only we speak Hup in São Gabriel.'

Switch of topic: This sentence picks out the speaker's group as a new topic, in implicit or explicit comparison with other groups that speak other (sometimes multiple) languages.

- (54) *ʔɪn = b'ay húp ʔid b'iyiʔ ʔin ʔid-ih, ʔinñh hayám-ǎt*
 1pl=AGAIN Hup language only 1pl speak-DECL 1pl.POSS town-OBL
 'As for us (people of the forest), we speak only Hup in our village.'

Reflexive intensifier: This sentence emphasizes that the members of the speaker's group speak Hup among themselves, whereas they speak Tukano to River Indians, and Portuguese to Non-Indians.

- (55) *ʔɪn = hup húp ʔid ʔid-ih*
 1pl=RFLX.INTS Hup language speak-DECL
 'Amongst ourselves, we speak Hup.'

Dependent suffix as topic-marker: This sentence might be said to a person who does not speak Hup, on his/her arrival to the village (such as to one of the Hup people who understand Hup fully but insist on speaking Tukano); choice of *-Vp* marks the speaker's group as a reactivated or emphasized topic.

- (56) *ʔɪn-ǐp húp ʔid-iy*
 1pl-DEP Hup speak-DYNM
 'As for us, we speak Hup!'

7.2. Augmentatives and diminutives

Hup's augmentative and diminutive forms are best described as general markers of emphasis or affect. They are not limited to appearing on nouns as indicators of unusual size, but can attach to various parts of speech and carry information relating primarily to the speaker's attitude toward the referent. For this reason, the Augmentative emphasis form *pog* and the Diminutive emphasis form *mæh* are addressed in detail in Chapter 15, and only briefly discussed here.

The form *pog* – whose function as an emphatic enclitic is discussed in §15.2.1 – also acts as the adjective lexeme 'big'; as such, it naturally has an augmentative function with nouns. However, as a grammaticalized morpheme, its function is not largeness, but emphasis. The Diminutive form *mæh* (see §15.1.4), on the other hand, does occur as a bound morpheme with certain expressions of small size, closeness, or unimportance, and is semi-lexicalized in a few forms, particularly the adjective *cípmæh* 'small'.

Other than these forms, the form *tæh* has a limited function as a diminutive-like marker with nouns. It is essentially an adjective modifier, but – unlike other

members of the adjective class in Hup – it cannot appear as a predicate (except in the semantically distinct form *tǣh*- 'be pregnant [animal]'),¹¹⁰ and it is restricted to noun phrases. It occurs in nominalized form (*tih* = *tǣh* = *mǣh* 'little one', *ni-n'ih* (*tih* =)*tǣh* = *d'əh* 'these little ones'), and in a few semi-lexicalized nouns (*tegd'uh-tǣh* [tree=small] 'stick'; *widəm'əh-tǣh* [star=small] 'star', Umari Norte dialect only).¹¹¹ It is also a bound noun meaning 'offspring, son', and as such appears in compounds like *yǎʔambǒʔ* = *tǣh* 'puppy'.

7.3. 'Deceased' marker = *cud*

Hup uses the enclitic =*cud* with nouns to mark a referent as dead (compare English 'late'). This 'deceased marker' usually occurs with kin terms (examples 57–58), but can mark human referents in general (59–60), and is acceptable even with domestic animals (61). It is not required; dead people may be referred to (by name, kin term, etc.) without it.

- (57) *ʔin* = *pǎç* = *wəd* = ***cud*** *peʔ-ní-h*
 1pl=father's.brother=RESP=DCSD sick-INFR2-DECL
 'Our late uncle was sick.' (txt)

- (58) *ʔǎy* = ***cud*** *cəh-ʔě-h*
 older.sister=DCSD *cəh*-PERF-DECL
 'Late older sister used to *cəh*.' (txt)
 (The verb *cəh*- refers to the high-pitched singing delivered by a woman during the otherwise exclusively male performance of the kapiwaya ritual song cycle.)

- (59) *tiyǐʔ* = ***cud***-*ǎn* *n'ǔh* *b'uy-d'əh-əy* *bíg* *j'ám* *ʔǎh-tiʔ*
 male=DCSD-OBJ CNTR throw-send-DYNM HAB DST.CNTR 1sg-EMPH.TAG
 'I was always losing track of my late son (at a drinking party).' (cv)

- (60) *natá*, *naʔ-yíʔ-ip* = *ʔǎy* = ***cud***
 Natasia, die-TEL-DEP=FEM=DCSD
 'Natasia, the one who died' (el)

¹¹⁰ There is almost certainly a historical link between these forms; see §3.1.3.

¹¹¹ The final stress and the semantics of these forms indicate that *tǣh* has adjectival rather than bound-noun status.

- (61) *nĩ* *yaʔambóʔ=cud* *naw-ʔěʔ*
 1sg.POSS dog=DCSD good-PERF
 ‘My (dead) dog was a good one.’ (el)

The same form *cud* also occurs as an inferential evidential, and again as the verb root ‘be inside’. These constructions differ formally as well as functionally from each other: the deceased marker encliticizes directly to a nominal constituent, whereas the evidential encliticizes to (and has scope over) predicates, and the verb root is of course internal to the verb core. Nevertheless – as argued in detail in §14.9.3 (Historical note) – it is likely that all three of the different manifestations of *cud* are polysemous, despite their strikingly different functions.

While a historical link between a ‘deceased’ morpheme and an evidential appears to be typologically rare, it is not completely without parallel in South America. In the unclassified Colombian language Andoke, the reported evidential marker *-há* (on predicates) also attaches to personal names to mark a deceased referent (Jon Landaburu, p.c.; cf. Landaburu 1979: 119).¹¹² ‘Reported’ and ‘inferred’ evidential specifications have in common their reference to events or situations that are outside the direct (physical) experience of the speaker. It is presumably this function of signaling a lack of access to personal experience of something that has motivated both of these forms to extend their evidential function to one of marking deceased referents. (Extension in the opposite direction – from deceased referent to evidential – is unlikely; this transition is less easily semantically motivated, and is inconsistent with the patterns of morphosyntactic change in Hup more generally; see §3.7.)

A historical link between the Inferred evidential and the Deceased marking forms in Hup is also supported by the somewhat ambiguous use of *=cud* in example (62). Here the form attaches to a predicate adjective like an inferential evidential, but refers specifically to the dead father, uncles, and other relatives of the speaker (an old woman):

¹¹² Also compare the Bolivian isolate Mosestén, in which the morpheme *-win* has a completive meaning with verbs and some particles, and marks nominal referents as deceased or no longer existing (Sakel 2004: 75).

- (62) *dób ?ín-íh, dób-?ě? = cud, dób = cud ?ín-íh... ?íp,*
 many 1pl-DECL many-PERF=INFR many=INFR 1pl-DECL father

pǎ-ay, pǎç = yi? píd, pǎç = yi? píd,
 NEG:EX-INCH father's.brother=TEL also fa.bro=TEL also

pǎç = yi? píd, ?ǎy'...
 fa.bro=TEL also fa.sister

'There were many of us, there used to be many (apparently), we were many (apparently)... (but) Father is gone, and Uncle too, and (another) Uncle too, and Uncle too, and Aunt...' (txt)

An alternative, though rarely used, deceased-marking construction is given in example (63); here the verb root *na?* 'die' follows the nominal referent as a peripheral formative, just as =*cud* does in the examples above.

- (63) *?obídiu = wəd ná? ?ín-ǎn d'əh-nǎn-b'ay-áh*
 name=RESP die 1pl-OBJ send-come-AGAIN-DECL
 'The late old/respected Ovidio brought us (here).' (txt)

7.4. Respect markers

The enclitic =*wəd* can follow nouns referring to humans or spiritual beings as an optional marker of respect, especially for an older person or someone of higher social status (such as a Tukano teacher). It is clearly historically derived from the bound human noun =*wəhód* 'old man'. The feminine counterpart of this form (=wa 'old woman') is used in a similar way to indicate respect, but is less grammaticalized (see §5.4.2.1). These respect forms usually follow kin terms and personal names, both in direct address (including vocative kin terms) and in third-person reference. They also combine directly with demonstrative stems to produce derived demonstrative forms such as *yú-wəd* 'that old/respected man', *nú-wa* 'this old/respected woman', etc. (see §6.3).

Examples of the 'respect' forms include referential uses such as *tíh = cəw = wəd* (3sg=shaman=RESP) 'the respected shaman' and *?ǎh = ?óh = wa* (1sg=grandmother=old.woman) 'my old/respected grandmother'. Vocative uses include, for example, the Hup children's respectful form of address for their Tukano teacher, *moycé = wəd* 'Moisés (respectful)', and occasionally for me *patí = wa* 'Pattie (respectful)'. Similarly, my Hup classificatory 'mother' refers to me as *tóg = wa* 'respected daughter'. Further examples are (64) and (57, 63) above.

- (64) *yunícu = wəd-ǎn ʔǎh ʔíd-íh*
 Junilson=RESP-OBJ 1sg speak-DECL
 ‘I spoke to respected Junilson.’ (txt)

While they typically indicate that the referent is of greater age or higher social status than the speaker, these forms do not entail a positive perception. For example, =*wəd* is often used in reference to malignant or dangerous spiritual entities (such as the Rainbow Spirit and the Snake of the Star-Hollow story), as in example (65).

- (65) *yúp tǐhǐy = wəd nǐh tóg-óh !*
 that.ITG snake=RESP POSS daughter-DECL
 ‘It was old/respected Snake’s daughter!’ (txt)

A related use of the ‘Respect’ terms is to signal endearment or familiarity, and they are sometimes applied as such to children or friends:

- (66) *kayak dǎh ʔǎg-yǎh yú-wəd-ǎn*
 manioc water drink-request.IMP that-old-OBJ
 ‘Tell that old fellow to drink some manicuera’ (cv)

While this familiar use seems at first glance to be contrary to the ‘respect’ function, a similar phenomenon is quite common in languages such as English, where the respectful forms ‘Mister’ and ‘Miss’ can be used endearingly with children. An even more striking cross-linguistic parallel to Hup’s ‘Respect’ terms is Mandarin Chinese *lǎo*, which has a lexical source (‘old’) and range of functions (respect, even with malignant entities, and endearment) that closely resemble those of Hup =*wəd*.¹¹³

As noted above, the form =*wəd* is more grammaticalized than the corresponding feminine form =*wa*. Phonologically, the form has lost the internal [h] seen in the bound noun =*wəhǎd* ‘old man’; semantically, while =*wa* is limited to female referents, =*wəd* can be used for both males and females (primarily female kin terms) as in example (67). Still further evidence for grammaticalization is that =*wəd* can in fact co-occur with the nominal form =*wəhǎd* ‘old man’, as in *tǐh = wəhǎd = wəd* (3sg=old.man=RESP) ‘the respected old man’.

¹¹³ Thanks to Georg Bossong for this comparison.

- (67) *yǎʔ = wəd !*
 mother(Voc)=RESP
 ‘Mom!’ (cv)

The ‘old person’ nouns and their ‘respect’ derivations have an additional use: they can indicate that a person is characterized by (interaction with or ownership of) a large quantity of something, represented by the noun preceding the bound form. This function is usually reserved for =*wəhád* and =*wəd* (regardless of the sex of the referent), as in examples (68–69).

- (68) *ʔam yénu = wəhád !*
 2sg money=full.of
 ‘You’re loaded with money!’ (cv)

- (69) *pán = wəd*
 sloth=full.of
 ‘Many Sloths’ (i.e., one who encounters many sloths); ‘Lord of Sloths’
 (personal name)

The various uses of =*wəd* can probably be explained via the semantic and pragmatic links between old age, the social status accompanying it, and the large quantity of years, children, hunting-and-gathering experience, and the like that also are associated with it. While grammaticalized markers of respect, or honorifics, are not uncommon in the languages of the world, they are considerably less common in highly egalitarian, non-stratified societies like that of the Hupd’əh. Nevertheless, age is clearly a meaningful measure of social status in such societies. This is reflected linguistically not only in Hup, but also in languages such as Tunebo (Colombia) and Guugu-Yimidhirr (Australia; cf. Foley 1997: 326–328). Example (70) illustrates the co-occurrence and marginal ambiguity of the ‘respected’ and ‘full of’ manifestations of =*wəd*:

- (70) *hǒp = wəd = mah yúw-úh, có = wəd !*
 fish=full.of/lord=REP that=DECL rainbow=old/respected
 ‘He’s lord of / has lots of fish, Old Rainbow Man’ (txt)

7.5. Indefinite Associative = ʔǔy (‘who’)

The ‘Indefinite Associative’ construction involves the attachment of the interrogative pronoun ʔǔy ‘who’ to a lexical item, usually a noun but occasionally

an adjective or other part of speech, and in most cases following an intervening case marker. The construction is most frequently used to indicate physical source ('a person/thing from X') but it is also commonly used to signal a general association between the base lexical item and the referent of the construction.

The Indefinite Associative use of 'who' is probably linked to the more general function of interrogative pronouns to mark indefinite reference (see §6.4); however, it is more grammaticalized. In this construction, =ʔǔy is typically pronounced [dǔy] due to assimilation with the preceding dental stop [t] or [n] of the case marker. Some speakers maintain this assimilation in slow speech and do not even recognize a connection between the Indefinite Associative form of ʔǔy and the interrogative pronoun.¹¹⁴

The Indefinite Associative construction almost always contains a case marker; this is usually the Directional oblique (or possibly the Object) form *-an* (71), but in many cases the Oblique *-Vt* is also acceptable (examples 72–73). There are also a very few examples of this construction where no case marker is present, as in (74) below (note that in this environment =ʔǔy is *not* pronounced [dǔy]). Finally, the construction is almost always followed by a bound nominal form; this is usually the masculine, feminine, or plural enclitic, but may be another bound noun when the referent is inanimate, as in example (73), which refers to a piece of plastic pipe.

- (71) *n'i=cóʔ ni-yóʔ, núp ma-an = ʔǔy = ʔǎy = n'ǎn tɔn-yóʔ...*
 that=LOC be-SEQ this river-DIR=who=FEM=PL.OBJ hold-SEQ
 'Having lived there, having taken (in marriage) the women of this river...'
 (txt)

- (72) *núp = b'ay katányã-ǎt = ʔǔy = ʔih ʔin-ǎn hǔt w'ob-nih*
 this=AGAIN Castanha(Pt)-OBL=who=MSC 1pl-OBJ tobacco place-NEG

yǎh = nih tí

FRUST=EMPH.CO EMPH.DEP

'That guy from the Rio Castanha hasn't put any tobacco out for us.' (sp)

¹¹⁴ According to the morphophonological parameters defined for Hup formatives in §3.4, the peripheral formative =ʔǔy should be labeled a postpositional 'particle', rather than an 'enclitic', because it receives independent stress. However, I will consider it an enclitic because of its phonological dependence on its host.

- (73) *hǒp mǒh-ǒt = ?ǔy = teg*
 fish lake-OBL=who=THING
 ‘(It’s a) thing from the fish-pond.’ (cv)
- (74) *máh = yi? = ?ǔy = d’əh, w’éh-éy = d’əh*
 near=TEL=who=PL far-DYNM=PL
 ‘People from nearby, from far away’ (sg)

The Indefinite Associative construction can also follow a personal pronoun, as in the expression *?ǎh-an = ?ǔy = d’əh* (also *?ǎh-ǎt = ?ǔy = d’əh*) [1sg-DIR/OBL=who=PL] ‘my friends / those who are with me’. It is found with demonstratives (example 75) and with interrogative pronouns (example 76) as well.

- (75) *nút = ?ǔy = ?ǎy ?ǎp-áh yúw-up, mǎt?ah-an = ?ǔy = ?ǎy !*
 here=who=FEM NEG-FOC that.ITG-DEP downriver-DIR=who=FEM
 ‘She’s not from here, she’s from downriver!’ (cv)
- (76) *hǐt = ?ǔy = d’əh yú ?*
 where=who=PL that.ITG
 ‘Where are those people from?’ (cv)

While the Indefinite Associative construction is found primarily with nouns, there are a few examples of its occurrence with adjectives, where it similarly indicates ‘one associated with (Adjective)’:

- (77) *dób húp-ǎn ?ǎh kény-éh, ?ǎh nǎw-an = ?ǔy,*
 many person-OBJ 1sg see-DECL 1sg good-DIR=who

hicocó-an = ?ǔy, ?ǎh kény-éh, yǐnǐy
 happy-DIR=who 1sg see-DECL thus

hǐd = n’ǎn nǎw ?ǎh bí?-ǐh
 3pl=PL.OBJ good 1sg work-DECL
 ‘I spent time with many Hup people, I had goodness (from this), I was happy (with this); thus I did well for them.’ (txt)

In contrast with its strictly locational sense in examples (71–76) above, the Indefinite Associative construction is also occasionally used to indicate a more general association with the noun it modifies (but one that is crucial for the

identity of the entity referred to by the construction). In (78), for example, it combines with the noun ‘clothes’ to mean ‘a person characterized by having (a lot of) clothes’. The Indefinite Associative can also occur with a numeral to produce a meaning similar to that of the Associative plural construction (see §4.4.6), as in (79).

- (78) *tih = báb’ yǔd-an = ?ǔy = ?ih tih ní-mǎ?*
 3sg=sibling clothes-DIR=who=MSC 3sg be-UNDER
 ‘While his brother is one with clothes, he lives (without).’ (ru)

- (79) *?ayǔp-an = ?ǔy = d’əh ní-?é = d’əh = mǎ?... ?in*
 one-DIR=who=PL be-PERF=PL=UNDER 1pl

?ũh-d’o?-kawa-ní-h

INTRC-take-divide-INFR2-DECL

‘Being (originally) all one people, we separated.’ (txt)

Finally, it is not always necessary that a bound noun follow =?uy in this construction. This is illustrated in (77) above and in the following examples, which also display some of the semantic variations of the Indefinite Associative. In (82), the construction occurs in connection with a time period, apparently to convey a sense of approximation; consultants say that -an =?uy would be inappropriate for a more exact expression of the time period.

- (80) *cuh-hí-íy... nu-cá?ah-ay, nút, cǎp tit-an = ?ǔy*
 string-descend-DYNM this-side-INCH here other string-DIR=who
 ‘The (bones) are strung in a descending line, this side, this (other) side, (those that go on) the other string.’ (txt)

- (81) *hi-n’ih-an = ?ǔy ?*
 Q-NMZ-DIR=who
 ‘Which (story); (a story) about what?’ (i.e., what do you want to hear?)
 (txt)

- (82) *?ayup g’í-an = ?ǔy = mah tih g’ǎ?-ǎh, tih hɔp-níh-íh*
 one year-DIR=who=REP 3sg suspend-DECL 3sg dry-NEG-DECL
 ‘For about one year he floated in his canoe, it did not dry up.’ (txt)

7.6. ‘Related instance’ particle *táʔ*

This particle is commonly used in imperatives and interrogatives relating to another instance of an entity.¹¹⁵ For example, people would say (83) to me when asking to hear another fiddle tune, and (84) was uttered when soliciting translations of Hup words into English, after one or more preceding words had already been translated. Further examples are given in (85–86).

(83) *cǎp táʔ*

other REL.INST

‘Once again’; ‘Another one!’ (cv)

(84) *yág táʔ*

hammock REL.INST

‘What about “hammock”?’ (cv)

(85) *dudú nǎh táʔ ?*

Pedro POSS REL.INST

‘What about Pedro’s?’ (cv)

(86) “*nǎ ?ǎg táʔ, cǎw,*” *tǎh nǎ-ǎʔǎh*

1sg.POSS drink REL.INST Cǎw 3sg say-MS

‘“What about *my* drink, Cǎw?” was what he said.’ (Cǎw has just had a drink himself) (txt)

The Inchoative focus marker often follows *táʔ*, as in (87–88).

(87) *?ám táʔ-ay, j’ǎm-nǎh-ay ?ám ?*

2sg REL.INST-INCH bathe-NEG-INCH 2sg

‘Aren’t *you* going to bathe?’ (speaker’s or others’ bathing is presupposed) (ru)

(88) *manǎ táʔ-ay, híd-ǎn yamhídǎʔ-nǎh tǎh ?*

Margarita as.for-INCH 3pl-OBJ sing-NEG 3sg

‘What about Margarita, didn’t she sing to them?’ (cv)

¹¹⁵ This form is homonymous with the verb root *taʔ*- ‘block’ (e.g., tree across a path); also compare the Factitive form *hitaʔ*- ‘meet up with’.

7.7. Parallel marker = *hin*

The enclitic =*hin*¹¹⁶ attaches to non-verbal constituents. It signals a parallel between like entities – usually an additional or related instance of a participant role vis-à-vis the event – and in many cases has the meaning of ‘also’ in English. It occurs with nominal subjects and objects – following any plural and inflectional marking – as well as with adverbial expressions like ‘today’ (examples 89–91).

- (89) *tǽh = mæh = n'ǎn* *tiʔcák = d'əh* *j'ǎh* *níŋ = d'əh = hin-íh !*
 offspring=DIM=PL.OBJ dislike=PL DST.CNTR 2pl=PL=also-DECL
 ‘You all didn’t like my children either!’ (cv)

- (90) *ʔám = yíʔ* *nih-íp* *bíg* *j'ǎh* *ʔǎh = hin-íh*
 2sg=TEL be.like-DEP HAB DST.CNTR 1sg=also-DECL
 ‘I too always do just as you are doing.’ (cv)

- (91) *hid* *nɔʔ-ʔě-h,* *ʔǎp-yíʔ = mah* *nutǎn = hin*
 3pl give-PERF-DECL QTY-TEL=REP today=also

tih *wǎd-ǎh,* *mɔhǎy-ǎh*
 3sg eat-DECL deer-DECL
 ‘They gave him (on that day) everything that deer also eat today.’ (txt)

Coordination of nominal arguments in a clause can also be signaled by =*hin*, which acts as an optional, emphatic coordinator (examples 92–94). Note that =*hin* entails neither ‘separately’ or ‘together’; in a statement such as ‘X, Y conversed’, coordination of the subjects with =*hin* (and likewise without) can imply either that they converse with each other, or with different people (example 94).

¹¹⁶ Speakers in the Tat Deh dialect area tend to pronounce this form as [in], unless the host morpheme is a CV stem; this is consistent with the general morphophonemic pattern of dropping post-consonantal [h] in this dialect (see §2.5).

- (92) *yúp = mah hid yohöy-píd-ih, yã?ambö? = hin yohöy,*
 that.ITG=REP 3pl search-DIST-DECL dog=also search

tih = hup = hin yohöy, ní-íy = mah
 3sg=RFLX.INTS=also search be-DYNM=REP
 ‘So they were searching, the dog also searching, and he himself (boy) also searching.’ (txt)

- (93) *?ayup pihít = mæh = hin, ?ayup püd = mæh*
 one banana=DIM=also one breast/banana.sprout=DIM

yo-pæm-yó? ní-íy, canã = mæh = hin, ya?äp = yi? ?in- íh
 dangle-sit-SEQ be-DYNM pineapple=DIM=also all.that=TEL 1pl-DECL
 ‘A few bananas, having carried dangling and placed (in the ground) a few banana-tree sprouts, a few pineapples, that’s it for us.’ (sp)

- (94) *püh, möt = hin bab’-?id-íy*
 Puh Möt=also sibling-speak-DYNM
 ‘Puh and Möt conversed.’ (el)

In the following example, the use of =hin is compared to that of the Distributive form *píd*, which can likewise be translated as ‘also’ in some environments. Semantically, the two may be essentially synonymous, as in (95a–b); note also that they can co-occur (95c). However, they are *syntactically* distinct (as reflected in the English translations of 95a–b). While =hin has scope over a non-predicative constituent, the ‘also’ function of *píd* is restricted to predicates (thus the ungrammaticality of 95d; compare its quantifier use with nominals, §6.5.2).

- (95) a) *ham-tég ?ãh = hin-íh*
 go-FUT 1sg=also-DECL
 ‘I too will go.’ (cv)
- b) *?ãh ham-tég píd*
 1sg go-FUT DIST
 ‘I will go also.’ (ru)

c) ?áh = **hin** ham-tég **píd**
 1sg=also go-FUT DIST
 ‘I too will go also.’ (el)

d) *?áh **píd** ham-tég
 1sg DIST go-FUT
 (Intended meaning: ‘I too will go’)

A related function of the Parallel form =*hin* is primarily a discourse one: it draws a parallel between a newly introduced or activated, but topical, referent and a previously mentioned one. In (96), for example, the Hup speaker has just stated that there are no more Tukano children left in the formerly mixed Tukano-Hup village school, and that only Hup children are left. He now switches to the issue of Hup children: the school is now theirs alone, but they often fail to attend – even under the eyes of their parents. Similarly, in (97) the speaker is drawing a parallel between the position of the Hupd’əh of Barriera, who now live in what used to be a Tukano village, and that of the former Tukano inhabitants. Finally, the speaker in (98) has just been talking about how she is bereft of relatives, alone, old, and feeble. She then switches to a new topic, but uses =*hin* to keep it integrated with her previous one; she presents her inability to communicate with occasional non-Indian visitors as contributing to her state of aloneness.

(96) *yí-níh-mí?* *j’ám* *?ín = b’ay,*
 that.ITG-be.like-UNDER DST.CNTR 1pl=AGAIN

?ín = tǎh = n’ǎn = hin = b’ay, “*níŋ b’oy-?áy háam !*”
 1pl=offspring=PL.OBJ=also=AGAIN 2pl study-VENT go.IMP

nɔ-níh ?ín ni-bí-hó?
 say-NEG 1pl be-HAB-TAG2
 ‘Even so, we don’t tell **our kids** “go to school!”’ (sp)

(97) *nutǎn ?ín = hup = yí?-ay-áh* *?ín = hin,* *híd = n’ǎn*
 today 1pl=RFLX.INTS=TEL-INCH-DECL 1pl=also 3pl=PL.OBJ

hi-kəd-ní = d’əh-ay
 FACT-pass-be=PL-INCH
 ‘Today, **as for us**, it is just us (in relation to Tukanos); (we) have changed places with them.’ (txt)

- (98) *níŋ = d'əh wid-næn-tæŋ = hin, ?āh ?id-tuk-yæħ-æp,*
 2pl=PL arrive-come-COND=also 1sg speak-want-FRUST-DEP

yít ham-níh, teghǒ-nog'öd = hin wi?-níh, potugéc = hin
 thus go-NEG Non.Indian-mouth=also hear-NEG Portuguese=also

wi?-níh ?āh-āh
 hear-NEG 1sg-DECL

‘And when you all (Non-Indian people) **come here**, I’d like (in vain) to talk (with you), but it doesn’t go well; I don’t understand **Non-Indian language**, I don’t understand **Portuguese**.’ (txt)

7.8. Contrastive *n'ũh*

The particle *n'ũh* follows nominal arguments that are primary participants in the clause, and signals a contrast between the referent and other entities (compare =*hin* above, which patterns in similar ways but involves a parallel). Like peripheral formatives generally in Hup (cf. §3.4), *n'ũh* always directly follows the noun it modifies, without intervening pause phenomena or other morphology, but its independent stress gives it ‘particle’ rather than ‘enclitic’ status.

Use of *n'ũh* always implies a contrast between two or more entities, whether or not these are explicitly stated. In (99), the speaker is describing a girl from another village who has gotten married very young and seems to be doing poorly; she points out that the girl is the same age as a girl from her own village – who, in contrast, remains unmarried. In (100), the speaker and her reported interlocutor were both drinking caxiri, but with quite different results.

- (99) *n'íp = b'ay hǎy = mæh, hocádia n'ũh*
 that=AGAIN um=DIM Rosaria CNTR
 ‘(She’s) like that little what’s-her-name, Rosaria.’ (cv)

- (100) *hón-ǎy yæħ ?ám n'ũh-ũh, nó-ǎy, hɔn-níh*
 vomit-DYNM FRUST 2sg CNTR-DECL say-DYNM vomit-NEG

?āh n'ũh = ti?, nó-ǎy
 1sg CNTR=EMPH.TAG say-DYNM

‘You threw up, (I) said, I didn’t throw up, (I) said.’ (cv)

In (101), *n'ũh* occurs with a subordinate clause. The speaker is contrasting two trips made to the same village; the visitors were received with good beer on the first occasion, while on the second the beer was not very good. Further examples are given in (102–104).

- (101) *j'am-ǎp* *?in* *ham-?áy-ap* ***n'ũh***, *húptok* *húp*
 past.time-DEP 1pl go-VENT-DEP CNTR caxiri good

mĩ? *j'ǎh* *?in* *?ag-na?-pó?-tí*
 UNDER DST.CNTR 1pl drink-lose.consciousness-EMPH1-DEP.EMPH
 'That other time we went (as opposed to this time), we got drunk on very good caxiri.' (cv)

- (102) *yĩ* *nɔ-yó?* *j'ǎh* *wəhód = d'əh* ***n'ũh*** *?íd-ih*
 that.ITG say-SEQ DST.CNTR old.man=PL CNTR speak-DECL
 'Thus the old ones told it (in contrast to people today).' (txt)

- (103) *?in* *key-hipāh-nih-n'ĩh* *tih-ít* *nɔ?-nih* *bíg* *?in* ***n'ũh-ũh***,
 1pl see-know-NEG-NMZ 3sg-OBL give-NEG HAB 1pl CNTR-DECL

?in = yi? *nó-ǎh*
 1pl=TEL say-DECL
 'We can't read, so it doesn't go right (lit. 'give') for us (in contrast to those who can read), we say.' (sp)

- (104) *hǎh* *pib* *yúp* ***n'ũh-ũh***
 sound strong that CNTR-DECL
 'That one (someone else's radio) gives a really loud sound.' (in contrast to ours) (cv)

With human participants, the contrastive function of *n'ũh* lends itself easily to reproach or encouragement, in that it indicates the speaker's expectation, desire, or worry that the hearer – who is not currently performing the activity in question – will follow the example of the referent and engage in the activity. It is therefore frequently used for implicit urging or admonition (see discussion of 'social connectedness', §15.4). For example, my consultant said that he might say (105) when waking someone who had overslept, the implication being that the birds are awake, but the addressee is not. Similarly, one could say (106) to encourage others to speak out at a village gathering. Finally, (107) was uttered by my Hup classificatory 'mother' in response to her daughters' saying they

would like to go with me to visit the United States; she was reminded of another woman (J'ub) whose daughters went away from the village and never returned.

- (105) *hũtǎh n'ǔh ʔǔh-cəwǎʔ-ay = hǔ*
 bird CNTR sleep-awake-INCH=NONVIS
 'The birds are already awake.' (i.e., 'and you're not, but you should be.')

(ru)

- (106) *ʔǎh n'ǔh ʔid-íy*
 1sg CNTR speak-DYNM
 'I'm speaking (publicly).' (i.e., 'and you have not yet done so, but perhaps should') (el)

- (107) *j'ǔb tóg = d'əh n'ǔh wid-b'áy-áy = hǔ híd = b'ay*
 J'ub daughter=PL CNTR arrive-return-DYNM=NONVIS 3pl=AGAIN
 'I wonder if J'ub's daughters will ever come back?' (i.e., 'and maybe it would be the same with you') (cv)

7.9. Locative *cóʔ*

The most prototypical function of the particle *cóʔ* has to do with marking physical location, but it has additional functions relating to temporality, emphasis, and even to focusing attention on a particular participant in discourse. For this reason, *cóʔ* is considered in detail here in the context of nominal discourse-marking morphology, in addition to its mention in §10.3.1 with locative adpositions.

In its locative function, *cóʔ* follows a noun N – or combines directly with a demonstrative stem (see Tables 28–32, §6.3) – to yield the meaning 'in the location of N' (examples 108–109). It also frequently follows locative postpositions and locative adverbs (example 109; see §10.3). Hup does have other means of marking general location besides *cóʔ*, via the oblique case markers (-*V́t* and -*an*); in comparison, the locational use of *cóʔ* appears to be relatively emphatic, and especially useful when contrasting different locations (as in 109 and 110).

- (108) *cǎw-ǎn yǎwǎc-yíʔ, n'í-cóʔ = b'ay, tǔk cóʔ*
 other-OBJ meet-TEL that-LOC=AGAIN belly LOC
 '(She) had already gotten another (child), there, in the belly.' (txt)

- (109) *nút ?ũhníy cí? deh hayám ní-mǎʔ, nu-cóʔ*
 here maybe slug water town be-UNDER here-LOC

?ũhníy-ay yúw-úh, wáʔah cóʔ
 maybe-INCH that.ITG-DECL other.side.of.water LOC
 ‘While Slug Creek Village is about here, it (another village) is located
 maybe on this side, on the other side of the creek.’ (indicating by drawing
 in the sand) (cv)

As examples (110–111) illustrate, nominals marked with Locative *cóʔ* can themselves act as modifiers of other nouns, including bound nouns. In such cases, *cóʔ* is obligatorily followed by the Dynamic suffix *-Vý*, here acting as an attributive marker (see §5.1.4 and §12.2).

- (110) *tih =g’ætd’óh cóʔ-oy ?ǎy’, hũytú cóʔ-óy ?ǎy’*,
 3sg=end LOC-DYNM brace back LOC-DYNM brace

haktén-æ’y =d’əh ?ǎy’
 middle.MEAS2-DYNM=PL brace
 ‘A brace (of inambu) in front, a brace behind, and a brace on either side.’
 (txt)

- (111) *n’i-cóʔ-óy = ?ih nǎh*
 that-LOC-DYNM=MSC POSS
 ‘The guy from over there’s (thing).’ (cv)

In addition to marking physical location, *cóʔ* has less prototypical – but quite frequent – uses relating to temporality and emphasis. Examples (112–113) illustrate its use in adverbial constructions relating to time, where it is completely optional and functions to emphasize a particular time period (i.e., in contrast to some other time). Note that in (113) *cóʔ* appears to be incorporated into a verbal expression (compare the similar behavior of the ‘Following’ marker *hũy* and other locative postpositions in §10.3.1).

- (112) *yúp = mah tíh-ǎn ʔecáp cóʔ wag hí-íy*
 that.ITG=REP 3sg-OBJ tomorrow LOC day descend-DYNM

tíh ham-y'æt-kəðham-yíʔ-ay-áh

3sg go-lay-pass.go-TEL-INCH-DECL

'So, they say, early the next morning he left her and went quickly away.'

(txt)

- (113) *póh niŋ d'əh-cak-w'ob-yíʔ, ʔin*
 high 2pl send-climb-set-TEL 1pl

pəʔ-cóʔ-ay = nih, niŋ wáed !

hold.dabacuri-LOC-INCH=EMPH.CO 2pl eat.IMP

'You all put it up high; when the time comes for our dabacuri, you all eat (it)!' (txt)

The particle *cóʔ* has an additional function that is relatively distinct from its use to mark a location: it can act to emphasize a particular *participant* in an event, as examples (114–119) illustrate. This use has probably arisen through a semantic shift, through which physical location came over time to be associated with a participant. Such a shift is arguably functionally motivated: as noted above, the locative use of *cóʔ* is primarily one of emphasis of or contrast between locations (e.g., 109–110 above; also compare the temporal use in 112–113); this has the conceptual effect of shifting attention from one physical location to another. Accordingly, the effect of directing attention from one *participant* to another is apparently motivated by the shift of attention from one participant's *physical space* to that of the other. Note that the Dynamic marker *-Vý* often follows this realization of *cóʔ* (examples 116–119), and seems to single out the participant from the rest of the clause, as if forming a mini-predicate of its own.

- (114) *ʔám cóʔ ʔəg-key-kǎm !*
 2sg LOC drink-see-IMP
 'You try some yourself!' (cv)

- (115) *tih d'óʔ-óy yǎ́h = mah yúw-úh, tãʔǎ́y-ǎw-ǎp,*
 3sg take-DYNM FRUST=REP that.ITG-DECL woman-FLR-DEP

tiyĩʔ-ǎn cɔʔ key-peʔ-yóʔ

man-OBJ LOC see-sick-SEQ

'She would have taken him, that girl, having fallen in love with that man.' (txt)

- (116) *ʔǎ́h cɔʔ-óy kúpa ni-té-h*
 1sg LOC-DYNM blame(Pt) be-FUT-DECL
 'I'll be the one to get the blame (*culpa*).' (sp)

- (117) *ʔũy cɔʔ-óy, ʔána ?*
 who LOC-DYNM Ana
 'Who said that, Ana?' (someone asking who had said what she reported)
 (cv)

- (118) “*ʔǎn = yiʔ nɔ-ǎ́y = nih núp = tiʔ ?*” *nɔ-yóʔ = cudʔũh,*
 1sg.OBJ=TELSay-DYNM=EMPH.CO this=EMPH.TAG say-SEQ=INFR.EPIST

tãʔǎ́y cɔʔ-óy...

woman LOC-DYNM

“‘Is this one really saying this to me?’” (she) apparently said, this woman...’ (txt)

- (119) *tih cɔʔ-óy ʔin-ǎn d'oʔ-kawa-ní-h*
 3sg LOC-DYNM 1pl-OBJ take-divide-INFR2-DECL
 'It was he himself who separated us (into different ethnic groups).' (txt)

Chapter 8

The verb word

In contrast to the Hup noun, which is morphologically relatively isolating, the verb is morphologically complex. The verb word is typically made up of layered agglutinated forms, including roots (of which several may be joined together to form a compound; see Chapter 9) and bound formatives (affixes, clitics, and particles; see §3.4). While almost all of these verbal formatives follow the stem – as is the general rule in Hup morphology – there is a small set of verbal formatives which precede it; all of these relate to valence-adjusting. Hup verbs do not inflect for number or gender (although these may be marked in nominalized verbal constructions). There is also generally no marking of person on the Hup verb, but the third person pronoun *tih* may in some contexts be marginally procliticized to the verb stem, especially in the Umari Norte dialect (see §6.1). Verb stems in Hup are regular, with virtually no suppletive forms or other irregularities.

In this chapter, §8.1 deals with some of the defining features of the Hup verb class, while §8.2 treats the verb root and its valency. The verbal template is discussed in §8.3, and the uniquely multifunctional verb *ni-* (the closest thing in Hup to an irregular verb) is addressed in §8.4. Other aspects of the verbal construction and of predicates more generally (compounding, adjusting valency, tense and aspect morphology, modality, evidentiality, and affect marking) are covered in the following chapters.

8.1. Defining the Hup verb

As mentioned in §3.1, the morphological complexity of the Hup verb is the main feature that defines it vis-à-vis the noun and adjective classes. With only a few specific exceptions (imperative and apprehensive moods and a few subordinate clause types), the verb root can never appear ‘bare’ – i.e., in uninflected form – while heading a predicate. Minimally, it must be followed by a Boundary Suffix, which contributes information regarding the type of clause headed by the verb (see §3.4.1.2).

The other primary feature that distinguishes the verb class from other parts of speech is the relative unimportance of tonal contrast on verb roots. However, as discussed in §2.3.2.2, there are in fact a few minimal pairs of verb roots that are distinguished by tone, as in example (1):

- (1) *túk-* ‘want’
tǔk- ‘sting (insect)’

Furthermore, tone values are clearly distinguished on verb stems in the Apprehensive mood (see §14.6). As discussed in §2.3.2.2, it is likely that underlying tone values are in fact present for most verb roots in Hup (at least those that can act as the unique stem in a verb word, rather than being obligatorily part of a compound), but are simply much less salient than they are for other parts of speech. A probable reason for this low salience is the fact that verb stems are almost never word-final (because they usually require a following Boundary Suffix), whereas word-final position is the primary environment for distinguishing tonal contrasts generally in Hup. These questions of verbal tone in Hup await future research.

8.2. Verb root classes and transitivity

This section addresses the various types of verb roots, or simple stems, particularly with regard to transitivity. Many verb roots in Hup can be identified as lexically transitive, intransitive, or ditransitive on the basis of the maximum number of arguments they may take, as well as certain other syntactic indicators. However, this distinction is frequently not clear-cut on formal grounds, for two main reasons. First, arguments – especially objects – need not be explicitly stated when they are already established in the discourse, as we see in example (2), in which what appears to be a lexically transitive verb appears without an object. This dropping of objects can obscure the distinction between an ambitransitive verb (which may have a valence of one or two) and a transitive verb (which may appear with only one explicit argument while maintaining a valence of two).

- (2) *baʔtǐbʻ = dʻəh = hín* *cét-éy = nih = mah*
 evil.spirit=PL=also carry-DYNM=EMPH.CO=REP
 ‘Evil spirits also used to carry off (children).’ (txt)

Second, an affected, non-agentive participant may be morphologically marked as an object (see §4.3.1) regardless of whether it is semantically and syntactically ‘core’ (i.e., a direct object) or more peripheral (i.e., a recipient, beneficiary, or maleficiary). As illustrated in (3), for example, the verb *naʔ-* ‘die’, which normally takes only one argument, can also take a second, object-marked participant – such as first person singular ‘me’ – as a kind of maleficiary. In addition to this, direct objects themselves receive the Object marker *-ǎn*

only when they are animate, marked as plural, or are accompanied by a demonstrative, and never when they are singular, inanimate, and non-demonstrative (§4.3.1). The presence or absence of object marking on participants is therefore not necessarily a reliable indicator of the transitivity of the root. These characteristics can blur the distinction between a transitive and an intransitive verb in Hup.

- (3) *ʔǎh = ʔín ʔǎn náʔ-yiʔ-ní-h*
 1sg=mother 1sg.OBJ die-TEL-INFR2-DECL
 ‘My mother died (which affected me adversely).’ (txt)

The following discussion considers the arguments for classifying Hup verb roots according to their lexical valency, based on a number of formal cues.

Some Hup verbs are clearly able to take two core arguments, and no more than two (without the addition of valence-increasing morphology such as the Applicative marker) – although neither argument need be explicitly stated in the clause (this is particularly true for objects). Such verbs are considered to be transitive, and include roots such as *j’ɔŋ*- ‘punch’, *nɔm*- ‘poke’, *j’ɪp*- ‘tie’, and the examples in (4–6).

- (4) *tih kɔw b’ɔk y’æ̣t-æ̣h*
 3sg(A) hot.pepper pot(O) lay-DECL
 ‘He set down the pepper-broth pot.’ (txt)

- (5) *ʔám-ǎn cé mæ̣h !*
 2sg-OBJ Moisés(A) hit.APPR
 ‘Moisés will hit you!’ (cv)

- (6) *hidnǐh hɔhɔh, hid key-ʔé-w-ǎn, hid yɔhɔy-ɔp*
 3pl.POSS toad(O) 3pl see-PERF-FLR-OBJ 3pl(A) search-DEP
 ‘They were searching for their toad, the one they had been looking at.’
 (txt)

A third, peripheral argument appears in extended transitive constructions, and is usually marked with the Oblique marker, as in (7–8). Clauses with as many as three explicitly stated arguments are relatively rare in Hup discourse, since once participants are established by the context they are not required for the grammaticality of the clause.

- (7) **yúw-út**, *tih = túm* *weʔ-hũʔ-yóʔ-ay*
 that-OBL 3sg=settled.out.solid(O) transfer-finish-SEQ-INCH
 ‘(Using) that (leaf-cone), (they) have transferred all the settled-out solid part to another container.’ (txt)
- (8) *mɔhǔy hup mǎh-ǎy mǔh-út*
 deer(O) person(A) kill-DYNM arrow-OBL
 ‘The person killed the deer with the arrow.’ (el)

Other verbs in Hup can take as many as three core arguments without the addition of valence-adjusting morphology, and are therefore considered ditransitive. These include such roots as *be-* ‘show’, *nɔʔ-* ‘give’, *j’ek-* ‘steal’, and *g’ɔp-* ‘serve’, as in examples (9–11).

- (9) *niŋǎh dǎh b’ɔʔ ʔǎn niŋ be-kǎm báʔ !*
 2pl.poss water gourd(O) 1sg.OBJ(O₂) 2pl(A) show-IMP PROTST
 ‘You all show me your gourd dipper (of beer)!’ (sg)
- (10) *ʔǎyhiyóʔ = mah híd-ǎn ʔǎg híd g’ɔp-ǎh*
 together=REP 3pl-OBJ(O₂) drink(O) 3pl(A) serve-DECL
 ‘They served the drink to all them.’ (txt)
- (11) *ʔǎn híd j’ek-yiʔ kǎdd’ob-ní-h,*
 1sg.OBJ(O₂) 3pl(A) steal-TEL pass.descend-INFR2-DECL
- yǔp nǎ g’ǎç-áh*
 that 1sg.POSS beads-DECL(O)
 ‘Having stolen (them) from me they descended quickly to the river – those beads of mine.’ (txt)

In such ditransitive constructions, both objects may receive identical morphological marking. The direct object takes the case-marker *-ǎn* when its type permits (i.e., it is human, plural, or the noun phrase includes a demonstrative), and recipients are normally always object-marked (see §4.3.1), as in (12–13). However, since most such constructions involve human recipients of non-human objects, recipients are more commonly the only marked arguments.

- (12) *yúp = mah* *yawăç* *kág' = mah*
 that.ITG=REP capuchin.monkey forehead=REP(O)

baʔtīb'-ăn *tih* *bé-éh*

spirit-OBJ(O₂) 3sg(A) show-DECL

'So, it's said, he showed the top of the capuchin monkey's head to the spirit.' (txt)

- (13) *ʔáh* *tih = dóʔ-ăn* *mih-ăn* *bé-éy*
 1sg(A) 3sg=child-OBJ(O) Mih-OBJ(O₂) show-DYNM
 'I'm showing the child to Mih.' (el)

As in the case of verbs that can take up to two core arguments, those that can take up to three also frequently appear with fewer, and it is often unclear whether this involves lability of the verb itself (between transitive and ditransitive), or simply a dropped argument. For example, the verb *j'ek-* 'steal' can alternatively take two arguments 'someone stole something' or three 'someone stole something from someone' – or only one 'someone stole'.

Those verbs that normally can take only one core argument (i.e., a subject) without the addition of valence-increasing morphology are here considered intransitive. These include roots that are semantically active, stative, or involve a change of state, but since there appear to be no formal reflections of these semantic categories in the grammar, these are not treated as reified classes (the Factitive prefix *hi-* is most commonly found with stative roots, but not exclusively). Hup intransitive roots include activity verbs such as *j'om-* 'bathe', *tʔʔh-* 'run', *j'ək-* 'jump'; verbs of motion/path and manner such as *næn-* 'come', *ham-* 'go' (example 14), *hi-* 'go downstream'; verbs relating to states or transitions like *d'əh-* 'rot', *hitab-* 'full', *puhu-* 'swell', *peʔ-* 'be sick'; verbs of position such as *mam-* 'be in sideways-leaning position', *piŋ-* 'be stretched tight (string)', *g'et-* 'stand', *d'ak-* 'be supported by vertical surface', *g'āʔ-* 'be suspended', etc. Semantically stative verb roots in Hup are easily distinguished from members of the adjective class in that the stative verbs – like other verbs – generally require a Boundary Suffix when predicative, whereas predicate adjectives can occur with or without inflection (see §10.1).

- (14) *yĩ-nih-yóʔ = mah* *tih* *ham-yíʔ-ay-áh*
 that.ITG-be.like-SEQ=REP 3sg(S) go-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'With this, he went away.' (txt)

As noted above, one of the main difficulties in distinguishing between transitive and intransitive verbs in Hup is the fact that some verbs that are usually

used intransitively occasionally occur (with no changes to the verb itself) with a second argument, which (if animate) is Object-marked. As illustrated by example (15) and (3) above, this formally resembles a transitive construction, in which the object-marked argument is in some way affected by the action (and is therefore conceived as a semantic undergoer).

- (15) *dóʔ = d'əhǎn = mah j'ǎp tih wíd-yé-éh*
 child=PL.OBJ=REP other 3sg arrive-enter-DECL
 'Some other one, he arrived to the children.' (txt)

Other verbs – primarily those involving changes of state – can take either one or two core arguments freely, and thus could be considered as ambitransitive or labile verbs. Most of the verbs that are best characterized as having labile properties follow the pattern Subject=Patient (when converting from a one-argument construction to a two-argument construction), and include *pu-* 'wet, be wet', *poʔ-* 'open', *həb-* 'dry', *təh-* 'break', *cǎy'-* 'tear', *yǎʔ-* 'singe, roast', as in examples (16–17); the behavior of this class of verbs is similar to that of semantically similar verbs in many other languages (e.g., English *break, tear*).

- (16) a) Two arguments:

b'úʔ tih yǎʔ-ǎh
 anteater(O) 3sg(A) singe-DECL
 'She singed the anteater' (to remove the fur). (txt)

- b) One argument:

teghǒ-ǒt tih yǎʔ-yíʔ-íh
 fire-OBL 3sg(S) singe-TEL-DECL
 'He burned himself in the fire.' (el)

- (17) a) Two arguments:

nř yǔd ʔǎh cǎw'-yíʔ-íy
 1sg.POSS clothes(O) 1sg(A) tear-TEL-DYNM
 'I tore my clothes.' (el)

- b) One argument:

nř yǔd tuhúp = yíʔ cǎw'-yíʔ-íy
 1sg.POSS clothes(S) 3sg.RFLX=TEL tear-TEL-DYNM
 'My clothes tore by themselves.' (el)

However, the case for ambitransitivity is not as clear for verbs that do not equate subject and patient. This is particularly the case for active verbs, where

there is generally no formal indication as to whether the object argument is implicit and dropped (i.e., the verb is essentially transitive), or is really absent altogether (i.e., the verb is labile and used intransitively, such that Subject=Agent). Examples include *ʔid-* ‘speak; speak a language, speak to someone’ (example 18), *b’oy-* ‘study; teach’, and *tæʔnɔhɔ-* ‘laugh, smile (at)’.

(18) a) Two arguments (dropped subject):

yikán nǎ cɔkw’ət ʔid-nih-ĩp nǎ
 there NEG:R Tukanó speak-NEG-DEP NEG:R

potugéc wiʔ-nih-ĩp...

Portuguese understand-NEG-DEP

‘There, speaking neither Tukanó nor understanding Portuguese, (I)...’

(txt)

b) One argument:

ʔy ʔayũp = ʔih ʔid-túk-up = ʔih, níŋ ʔid-ʔáy
 who one=MSC speak-want-DEP=MSC 2pl speak-VENT.IMP
 ‘Whoever wants to speak (publicly), come and speak.’ (sp)

Despite these ambiguities, there are several syntactic tests in Hup to indicate whether a verb is being understood as transitive or intransitive. First, those verbs that cannot occur in any type of reflexive (or passive) construction are understood to be essentially intransitive (see §11.1), even if they can in certain circumstances take a second argument bearing object case marking. Also, as noted above, some verbs require valence-adjusting morphology if they categorize for more than one, two, or three arguments, thus establishing their maximum lexical valency. Mechanisms for changing valency include the Applicative suffix (§11.3), the Factitive prefix *hi-* (§11.4), and causative verb compounding (e.g., involving the causative initial stem *d’oʔ-* ‘take’; see §9.4.1.2). Verbs classified as intransitive, for example, normally *require* one of these strategies if they are to appear with two core arguments, as (19–20) illustrate:

(19) a) *kamíca ʔǎn hi-póg-óy*
 shirt(Pt) 1sg.OBJ FACT-big-DYNM
 ‘The shirt makes me (look) big/fat.’ (el)

b) **kamíca ʔǎn póg-óy*
 shirt(Pt) 1sg.OBJ big-DYNM
 (Intended meaning: ‘The shirt makes me (look) big/fat.’)

- (20) a) *tít-ít* *toáya* *g'ǎʔ-ǎy*
 string-OBL towel(Pt) hang-DYNM
 'The towel hangs from the string.'
- b) *pěd* *toáya* *d'oʔ-g'ǎʔ-ǎy*, *tít-ít*
 Ped towel(Pt) take-hang-DYNM string-OBL
 'Ped hangs the towel from the string.'
- c) **pěd* *toáya* *g'ǎʔ-ǎy*, *tít-ít*
 Ped towel(Pt) hang-DYNM string-OBL
 (Intended meaning: 'Ped hangs the towel from the string.')(el)

Furthermore, the *d'oʔ-* causative construction itself requires a stem that categorizes for only one argument to complete the compound, and is ungrammatical or has a non-causative meaning when combined with transitive stems. Examples of the construction include *d'oʔ-ʔət-* 'cause to cry', *d'oʔ-kiʔ-* 'make sticky', *d'oʔ-ʔǎh-* 'cause/put to sleep'. In contrast, the following forms involving transitive stems are ungrammatical: **d'oʔ-mæh-* (take-hit/kill), **d'oʔ-j'ɔŋ-* (take-punch), **d'oʔ-cuh-* (take-thread.onto.string). (Where transitive stems do occur in causative constructions, the causative meaning is conveyed via verb roots other than *d'oʔ-* 'take', e.g., *g'et-wæd-* [lit. 'stand-eat'] 'feed', and *wæd-yǎh-* [lit. 'eat-order/request'] 'request/compel to eat'; see §9.4.1.2.)

Some of these syntactic tests indicate that verbs like *naʔ-* 'die', which appear to be semantically intransitive but can appear with a second, Object case-marked argument (see 3 above), actually do pattern like intransitive roots rather than transitive ones. For example, *naʔ-* can occur in the *d'oʔ-* causative construction, resulting in *d'oʔ-naʔ-* 'cause to die'. It is also ungrammatical with the Reflexive prefix *hup-*, which would otherwise produce a passive reading (example 21; compare 22). This suggests that verbs like *naʔ-*, despite their ability to take an object-marked participant, can be classified as intransitive on formal grounds. In other words, their second argument may not be semantically 'core', even though it is identical to a core argument in its morphological marking.

- (21) **ʔǎh* *ʔǎh = ʔín-ǎn* *hup-naʔ-yíʔ-íy*
 1sg 1sg=mother-OBJ RFLX-die-TEL-DYNM
 (Intended meaning) 'I was died on by my mother.'

Compare:

- (22) *ʔám yãʔám-ăn* (*ʔam*) *hup-wæd-té-p* !
 2sg jaguar-OBJ (2sg) RFLX-eat-FUT-DEP
 ‘You’ll get eaten by a jaguar!’ (el/cv)

8.2.1. Transitive and intransitive variants distinguished by glottalization

At least two verbs in Hup have an additional indicator of transitivity. These verbs formally distinguish transitive and intransitive counterparts by the presence of glottalization on the initial consonant in the transitive form, and its absence in the intransitive form:

yæt- (intransitive) ‘be in lying position on ground’ (for any entity capable of an upright position; i.e., having legs or a long shape, like a pole); ‘be in direct contact with ground’ (for any other entity)

y’æt- (transitive) ‘lay (something) on ground; leave (something) behind’

- (23) *méca mĩʔ b’ǝʔ y’æt-áy*
 table under cuia lie-DYNM
 ‘The cuia is lying under the table.’ (el)

- (24) *těg pob-y’æt-yóʔ = mah, tih ye-yíʔ-ay-áh*
 wood split.up-lay-SEQ=REP 3sg enter-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘Having split up the wood and laid it (in a pile) on the ground, he entered (the house)’ (txt)

wob- (intransitive) ‘be resting on another object or surface (not ground)’

w’ob- (transitive) ‘place (something) on top of another object or surface’

- (25) *tĩw wid-ye-d’óʔ-ót = mah yúp, kukŷy wob-ní-h*
 path arrive-enter-take-OBL=REP that.ITG night.monkey rest-INFR2-DECL
 ‘At the entrance to the path, a night monkey was sitting (in a tree).’ (txt)

- (26) *d’ób-n’ăn tih kək-w’ob-pæ-ní-h*
 acará.fish-PL.OBJ he pull-set.on-go.upstream-INFR-DECL
 ‘He went along fishing for acará fish and setting them out (for someone else to find) as he went upstream.’ (txt)

Consonant glottalization appears to distinguish phonologically and semantically similar forms of a few other lexical items in Hup (see §2.1.2.6), but these two verb pairs are the only known cases in which the semantic difference is one of transitivity. It is noteworthy that phonologically similar forms are found in a number of languages for bodily position verbs and their causative variants, such as English *lie* and *lay*, *sit* and *set*; German *liegen* ‘lie’ and *legen* ‘lay’. Kemmer (1993: 58–59) notes that the causative forms of these pairs are frequently historically derived from the verbs referring to the bodily actions, as in the case of the Germanic languages, but that in other cases the derivation can take the opposite direction. In the Hup case, the semantics of other similar pairs distinguished by glottalization provides reason to suppose that the causative, glottalized variant is the historically derived form (e.g., *tóg* ‘daughter’, *hutóg* ‘niece’, in which the final consonant in the first case is released/post-nasalized /g/ [g^h] and in the second is glottalized /g’/ [g^ʔ]; cf. §2.1.2.6).

8.3. The verbal template

As noted in §8.1, the defining characteristic of verb stems in Hup is their inability to appear ‘bare’ – without affixes – as predicates of a clause. The only exceptions to this rule occur in apprehensive mood (§14.6), imperative mode (§17.5; but note that the stem receives high tone), and in certain (co-) subordinated clauses (§18.2.2). Otherwise, the verb word is multimorphemic: minimally, it involves a root and a Boundary Suffix; maximally, it may include a procliticized subject pronoun, up to two prefixes, multiple component stems, multiple Inner Suffixes, a Boundary Suffix, and a string of enclitics and particles. These different types of formatives all are considered to be morphosyntactically part of the verb word, although the particles are relatively phonologically free (see the discussion in §3.4).

This section deals with the verbal template as a combination of stem + formatives. Note, however, that the ‘stem’ may itself be made up of a string of stems forming a compound, as discussed in detail in Chapter 9. A basic template for the verb word is the following (note that generally obligatory elements appear in boldface):

(Proclitic) = Prefix(es) - **Stem** - Inner Suffix(es) - **Boundary Suffix** =
Enclitic(s) Particle(s)

In reality, this template is not quite as neat as it appears. First, the distinction between component verb stems (in compounds) and Inner Suffixes is somewhat blurry in Hup. This synchronic fuzziness has a diachronic explanation: Inner Suffixes typically grammaticalize from verbs within compounds, and some

forms are currently in a transitional phase (see §9.4.3). Second, some morphemes can appear in either an enclitic/particle slot or an Inner Suffix slot depending on the type of Boundary Suffix present, as discussed in §3.5. A few suffixes (Inchoative *-ay*, Negative *-níh*, and Future *-téǵ*) can optionally appear as either Boundary Suffixes or Inner Suffixes. Finally, two of Hup's three prefixes – Reflexive *hup-* and Interactional *?ũh-* – can optionally disassociate from the verb when occurring in a ditransitive construction with an explicit object; in this context, these precede the object nominal and are best considered particles or proclitics (see §11.1 and §11.2).

Each of the formative classes in the template above is itself divided into a series of slots, corresponding to the relative order of individual formatives that co-occur. Depending on the formative, there is some flexibility in this order (linked to the presence of different formative variants, and for which there is probably a historical explanation; see, for example, the discussion of the Completive aspect marker in §12.5). A general schema of the slot series that makes up the verbal template is given below, in which the numbers correspond to the order of formatives when moving from left to right in the verb word. Forms appearing under the same numbered slot are usually mutually exclusive (with certain exceptions), but many forms that fall in different slots also do not co-occur (often for reasons that are probably semantic, rather than morphosyntactic). For this reason the number of slots in the template is much higher than the number of morphemes present in a given word.

The sets of formatives that fill the various slots in the verbal template do not break down neatly by semantics or function, but tend to be a heterogeneous lot. However, it is possible to make some broad generalizations relating to form-function patterning (see §3.4). The small set of prefixes is functionally quite consistent in that its members all relate to adjusting the valency of the verb (although not all valency-adjusting forms are prefixes). Of the Inner Suffixes, many (though still not a majority) relate to aspect, and in general the aspectual markers tend to come earliest in the verb (i.e., closest to the stem), while Hup's tense suffix (the future marker) comes later. Markers of modality and discourse tend to appear later still in the verb, appearing as enclitics, particles, and in some cases Boundary Suffixes (while those that can optionally occur in Inner Suffix position typically fall into one of the final Inner Suffix slots when they do so). This relative order of aspect-tense-mood is consistent with the typical ordering of these morphemes relative to the verb stem cross-linguistically, according to the survey by Bybee (1985: 35); however, there are many individual exceptions to these patterns in Hup.

As discussed in §3.4, the Boundary Suffixes are semantically heterogeneous. However, they too have a near-common denominator, in that they are typically the primary indicator of the type of clause in which they appear. This is especially clear with those suffixes having the vowel-copying form *-VC*, which are

by far the most frequent of the Boundary Suffixes and in some cases are obligatorily clause-final (*-V̇y* ‘Dynamic’ and *-V̇h* ‘Declarative’ in declarative clauses; *-V?* in interrogative clauses; and *-Vp* in subordinate clauses, while imperative/apprehensive are marked by *-∅*; see §3.4.1.2 and §17.1). However, most of the other Boundary Suffixes also indicate kinds of clauses, such as the various subordinate types (e.g., complement, adverbial, relative, etc.), as well as finer distinctions of main clauses, such as the jussive, the hortative-like ‘cooperative’, and the ‘strong’ imperative (all of which can be considered subtypes of imperative clauses), and the ‘announcing’ function of the ‘acting alone’ markers.

Relative order of morphemes in the Hup verb:

1. *Proclitic*

(marginal procliticization of subject pronouns in some contexts, esp. 3sg)

Prefixes:

2. Interactional *?ũh-*

3. Reflexive *hup-*

4. Factitive *hi-*

5. *STEM* (may include multiple compound-internal stems, some of which can act as auxiliaries)

Inner Suffixes (some can also appear in peripheral positions; see §3.5):

6. Telic *-yi?*

7. Venitive *-?ay-*

8. Applicative *-?ũh-*

9. Completive *-c̃p- / -c̃w-*

10. Counterfactual *-tã?*

11. Perfective *-?e?* (variant *-?e-* must directly precede Boundary Suffix)

12. Clausal negative *-ñh-* (also as Boundary Suffix)

13. Emphasis *-pog-* (variant *-po-* must directly precede Boundary Suffix)

14. Habitual *-big-* (variant *-bi-* must directly precede Boundary Suffix)

Distributive *-pid-*

Future *-teg-* (also as Boundary Suffix; variant *-te-* directly precedes Boundary Suffix)

15. Evidentials *-h̃-, -cud-, -mah-*

Frustrative *-yǎh-*

Repetitive *-b'ay-*

16. Inchoative *-ay* (also as Boundary Suffix)

17. Inferred evidential 2 *-ni-*

18. Filler *-Vw-*

19. *Boundary Suffix:*

Main clauses:

Declarative (aspect-neutral) *-Vh*

Dynamic *-Vy*

Interrogative *-V?*

Clausal negative *-nih* (also as Inner Suffix)

Imperative (strong) *-kǎm*

Cooperative *-niŋ*

Future *-téǵ* (also as Inner Suffix)

Inchoative *-ay* (also as Inner Suffix)

Focus *-áh*

'Acting alone' markers *-ké?*, *-d'ǎh*

Jussive *-?úh*

Verbal diminutive *-kodé*

Intensifiers and tags *-Vcáp*, *-Vti?*, *-Vyá*, *-Vhó?*, *-V?ih*, *-Vyík*

Subordinate clauses:

Dependent marker *-Vp*, *-d'ǎh* (plural)

Conditional *-tǎn*

Purpose *-téǵ*

Case-markers (relative clauses, temporal/locational adverbials) *-ǎn*, *-Vt*, *-an*

Nominalizer *-n'ih*

Sequential *-yó?*

Simultaneous *-mí?*

Temporal adverbial *-kamí*

Enclitics (some can also appear in Inner Suffix position; see §3.5):

20. Counterfactual 2 = *tih*

Interrogative alternative = *ha?*

- 21. Emphatic Coordinator = *nih*
- 22. Inferred evidential = *cud*
- 23. Non-visual evidential = *hõ*
- 24. Repetitive = *b'ay*
- 25. Reportive evidential = *mah*

Particles (some can also appear in Inner Suffix position; see §3.5):

- 26. Habitual *bíg*
Distributive *píd*
- 27. Frustrative *yǎh*
- 28. Contrast: Distant past *j'ám, j'ǎh*; Temporally proximate *páh*; Future *tán*
- 29. Intensifier *mún*
Adversative conjunction *káh*
Persistentive *tǎ*
Epistemic modality *ʔǎh*

For the most part, the Boundary Suffixes cannot co-occur, but one is required on every verb stem (except in the contexts listed above). Unlike the Boundary Suffixes, Inner Suffixes, enclitics, and particles often pile up. The following examples illustrate some of the combinations. Although the actual number of formatives present on a verb is always much lower than the number of slots in the verbal template above, it is not uncommon to have as many as six bound forms attached to a stem (which may be no more than a single verb root), as in example (30).

(27) *ʔǎh wiʔ-tuk-hõh-yǎh-ǎh !*

1sg hear-want-NONVIS-FRUST-DECL
'I'd like to listen to it!' (txt)

(28) *ʔǎh hipāh-yíʔ-ay bígʔǎh-ǎh, nó-ǎy bíg = nih*

1sg know-TEL-INCH HAB 1sg-DECL say-DYNM HAB=EMPH.CO

ʔǎh-ǎp hóʔ ʔǎh ʔíd-iw-ay

1sg-DEP TAG2 1sg speak-FLR-INCH

'I always start thinking (of another story); I always keep talking once I get started.' (txt)

- (29) “*hi-nih-íy tih?*” *nɔ-yó?* = *mah j’áh*,
 Q-be.like-DYNM 3sg say-SEQ=REP DST.CNTR

tih ?ɔt-kədcɔp-yí?ay-áh

3sg cry-pass.go.from.river-TEL-INCH-DECL

‘Having said “what happened?” she hurried crying from the river.’ (txt)

- (30) *yi-d’əh-ăn pe?-nīh = pog bíg = nih j’ám hǎ?*
 DEM-PL-OBJ hurt-NEG=EMPH1 HAB=EMPH.CO DST.CNTR TAG
 ‘And (the insects) have never bothered those guys at all, huh?!’ (txt)

These ‘verbal’ formatives are a heterogeneous lot. Some are strictly verbal, but many are not restricted to verbs at all, and also associate with nouns, adjectives, and other parts of speech. Some can take scope over entire clauses (see §3.4, §7.1 and elsewhere). Also, while bound formatives do not in general come between verb roots within compounds, the valency-adjusting prefixes *hi-* (Factitive) and *hup-* (Reflexive) do so regularly, and as such take scope over the individual root they precede. They can also occur compound-initially, where they take scope over the entire string of compounded roots.

Productive derivational processes involving verbs are mostly limited to nominalizations of verb stems (see §3.1 and §4.6), rather than the creation of verb roots from other parts of speech. However, the addition of verbal TAM morphology to adjectives effectively creates a verbal predicate (see §10.1 and elsewhere), and there are some cases of noun > verb derivation via noun incorporation with the verb *ni-* (see §9.6).

8.4. The verb *ni-*

Almost without exception, Hup verbs are strikingly regular. However, there is one root that patterns very differently from the rest, although morphologically it too is fully regular. This is the verb *ni-*, which when used by itself as a predicate means ‘be, exist’ (example 31), and is quite ubiquitous.

- (31) *?ám = ?íp nī-íy tih ?*
 2sg=father be-DYNM 3sg
 ‘Is your father here?’ (cv)

In addition to this simple predicative function, the verb *ni-* appears in a wide variety of constructions in Hup, and is almost undoubtedly the most multifunc-

tional verb root in the language. First, it commonly functions as a copula, and as such is required in some predicate nominal and adjective clauses as the host for verbal TAM markers (see §17.3.4). It also acts as an aspectual auxiliary when it occurs as the final stem in verb compounds (see §9.4.2.4). It is unique among Hup verbs in that it licenses a particular kind of noun incorporation, in which it essentially serves a derivational, verbalizing function (see §9.6). In addition, *ni-* is required in certain cosubordinative constructions, where it occurs as a ‘light’ or ‘dummy’ verb following associated verbal predicates which lack the otherwise obligatory Boundary Suffix; this suffix appears instead on clause-final *ni-* (see §9.3). This special form of cosubordination with *ni-* is realized most often as the ‘reduplicative predicate’ construction (where an entire predicate is repeated several times in a serial-like format for iterative effect; see §18.2.2). Finally, the verb *ni-* is probably the source – via processes of grammaticalization – for an additional inferred evidential suffix (see §14.9.6).

The verb *g’ǝh-* is used as the functional equivalent of *ni-* ‘be, exist’ (example 32) in Tat Deh and elsewhere in the Eastern dialect region, as well as in Umari Norte (Western region), but is not in general used at all in the Central dialect. Currently, many speakers in Tat Deh use both *g’ǝh-* and *ni-* in predicate position, apparently interchangeably. At least some speakers who use *g’ǝh-* predicatively favor *ni-* as a copula, and use *ni-* in noun-incorporating and inferred evidential constructions.

(32) *hǝp wæd-tú-up g’ǝh-ǝy = nih, tæhʔíp*
 fish eat-want-DEP be-DYNM=EMPH.CO child.father

pǎ-ǎp g’ǝh-ǝy = nih...
 NEG:EX-DEP be2-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘Wanting to eat fish, and being without a husband...’ (txt)

Comparative note

The verb *ni-* is an areal feature. It exists in Tukano with essentially identical form, meaning, and many of the same functions as it has in Hup (particularly as a copula and in existence clauses; cf. Ramirez 1997a: 140), as well as in the East Tukanoan languages Wanano (Stenzel 2004: 327) and Desano (Miller 1999: 67) (although with somewhat varying functions and forms). It also occurs – again with virtually the same form and meaning – in several other Nadahup languages, including Yuhup (Ospina 2002: 138, etc.) and Dâw (V. Martins 1994: 154). A similar form *ni-* ‘do’ in Tariana (Aikhenvald 2003a: 606–608) may also be related.

The verb *ni-* thus appears to be a case in which an actual form – rather than a grammatical category – has diffused, probably moving from Tukanoan into the Nadahup languages and possibly into Tariana. For a form, as well as a grammatical function, to spread by contact is relatively rare in the Vaupés region, where borrowing of forms tends to be actively resisted (cf. §1.5). That a variety of languages have apparently adopted this form may be due in part to its extremely common occurrence in discourse (e.g., in Tukano; cf. Ramirez 1997a: 116).

It is noteworthy, however, that a verb *nɪŋ* exists in Nadëb which, like Hup *ni-*, is used as a predicate meaning ‘to exist’ and to signal possession, reportedly via incorporation, as in the following example from Weir (1990: 326):

- (33) Nadëb:
subih txaah nɪŋ
 Subih son exist
 ‘Subih has a son.’ (Lit. ‘Subih son-exists.’)

This suggests that the areal pattern to which the Hup verb *ni-* corresponds is likely more widespread than just the Vaupés, and that some features of this unusual verb in Hup may in fact be independent of recent Tukanoan contact.

Chapter 9

The compound verb

Verb compounding is an extremely productive process in Hup. Out of a cross-section of narrative and conversational texts, over 50% of verbs in the sample contained more than one root. This chapter defines the Hup compound and the principles by which the order of roots is determined.

9.1. The verb compound and its component roots

Several different classes of compound verbs can be distinguished by the degree to which the events or states encoded in roots (or combinations of roots) are integrated with each other. These form a continuum that ranges from the least integrated, where the order of roots reflects a temporal sequence of conceptually linked events, to the most integrated, where some roots serve only to modify others by supplying aspectual or modal information. In addition, some compounds are highly lexicalized forms – presumably learned as units by speakers – whereas others represent fully productive combinations of roots. Because of these differences from one compound verb to another, compounds in general are not easily classified as either essentially lexical or essentially phrasal items. In other words, some compounds are essentially lexical items (to be learned as units), while others are freely coined word-level ‘phrases’. A similar situation is reported for Yuhup (see Ospina 2002: 334).

Individual compound words have been found to include as many as five verb roots, which I refer to as the ‘component’ roots. These may correspond to different conceptual levels of event integration, thus giving rise to compounds within compounds. This ‘nesting’ effect is increased by the ability of verb roots within compounds to take valency-adjusting prefixes. The individual verb roots and root combinations themselves separately encode various ‘semantic entities’ (“elements, relations, and structures”; cf. Talmy 1985: 57), and reflect distinct elements of meaning such as motion and path, manner, cause, and position.

An example of an internally complex compound verb is given in (1), which comes from a story in which a malignant spirit forces his way into a house in search of a woman and her children.

- (1) *yít tih hi-j'íp-?é-w-ǎn*,
 then 3sg FACT-tie-PERF-FLR-OBJ

tíy-[hi-j'ap]-[b'uy-d'əh]-ye-yí?-ay = mah, ba?tīb'-ih !
push-[FACT-snap]-[throw-send]-enter-TEL-INCH=REP evil.spirit-DECL
 'Then, to that which she had caused to be tied up (i.e., the door), (he)
 pushed it until it snapped, threw it out of the way, and entered, they say,
 (did) the evil spirit!' (txt)

An interesting feature of Hup compound verbs is that they often combine both transitive and intransitive stems, producing a construction with complex valency. With causative compounds (see §9.4.1.2 below), in particular, the subject of the intransitive verb may double as the object of the transitive verb. Cross-linguistically, such transitive-intransitive combinations in verb compounds may be more typical of VO languages, such as Chinese and some languages of West Africa, rather than of verb-final languages like Hindi-Urdu and Quichua, which require component stems to have the same valency (Liang and Hook, forthcoming). Hup, which is OV, appears to differ from the typological norm, although more cross-linguistic studies may be necessary to ascertain this definitively.

Hup verb compounds are subject to two diachronic processes, which are responsible for the generation of many new forms in the Hup grammar and lexicon. These are lexicalization, whereby two verb roots become lexicalized into one stem, and grammaticalization, whereby component roots take on a more and more grammatical function and become aspectual or modal auxiliaries. Some grammaticalized roots eventually become Inner Suffixes, and may later move out to the verbal periphery to be enclitics or particles (see §3.4 and §9.4.3). These new formatives are functionally and semantically distinct from the corresponding (and usually segmentally identical) verb stems, and the multiple forms often continue to co-exist alongside each other in the grammar. The fact that many compounds and the roots that comprise them appear to be straddling two categories (lexeme and phrase, verb and auxiliary, root and formative) can be better understood in the context of these diachronic processes and their transitional phases.

Comparative note

Verb compounding is an areal feature in the Vaupés region. It is a very productive process in East Tukanoan languages, in which – as in Hup – verb compounds make up a single phonological word, and roots tend to follow a fixed

order, inseparable by other morphemes (cf. Aikhenvald 2002b: 137; Gómez-Imbert 1988, 2007a; Miller 1999: 88). Tukanoan verb compounds likewise often involve the combination of both a transitive and an intransitive root, resulting in a construction with complex valency – and like Hup, the Tukanoan languages are verb-final. Verb compounding in East Tukanoan languages also diachronically yields markers of aspect, valency-changing, and Aktionsart. Unlike Hup compounds, on the other hand, compounds in Tukano normally have no more than two co-occurring verbs (Ramirez 1997a: 375, Aikhenvald 2000a: 9). Both productive verb serialization and limited verb compounding exist in Tariana (Aikhenvald 2002b: 136–137). Some of the parallels between Hup verbal constructions and the compound verbs in the Tukanoan languages, as described by Ramirez (1997a: 375), Miller (1999) and Gómez-Imbert (1988, 2007a), as well as the serial and compound verbs in Tariana (Aikhenvald 2003a), will be mentioned in the course of this discussion.

In Hup's sister languages, verb compounding in Yuhup is similar to that found in Hup, and is described in detail in Ospina (2002: 333–402). Many of the semantic classes involved in Hup compounds (motion, position, etc.) have close parallels (and cognates) in Yuhup, as discussed by Ospina. Dâw likewise employs chains of verb roots, although these are reported by Martins (2004: 623) to be distinct phonological and morphological words, and therefore serial verb constructions but not compounds. However, the semantic classes of the Dâw roots and the patterns of their combination (Martins 2004: 623–650) also look much like those found in Hup.

9.2. Defining the verb compound as ‘word’

The main criterion for defining a verb compound in Hup is the fact that it forms one phonological word, determined by stress patterns and pause phenomena. Primary stress occurs only on the last verb root and/or the following suffix material (depending on the types of Inner and Boundary Suffixes present; see §3.4), whereas non-final stems do not receive word-level stress, and component stems are also not separated by pauses. Phonological word-hood is frequently cited as a defining feature of a compound, particularly in relation to other forms of serialization – both across languages and within a single language, as in Paamese (see Durie 1997: 304, with reference to Crowley 1982) and Tariana (Aikhenvald 2003a).

The other crucial defining feature of the Hup verb compound is that no morphological material can come between the component roots – with the exception of the valency-changing pre-forms *hi-* (Factitive) and *hup-* (Reflexive) – while maintaining the status of the compound as a single predicate. One illustration of this fact comes from negation. Clausal negation can take scope over the entire

compound; as such, the negative suffix *-nih* is compound-final, as in *ʔəg-pæm-nih* (drink-sit-NEG) 'not sitting drinking', the negative form of the compound *ʔəg-pæm-ǎy* (drink-sit-DYNM) 'sitting and drinking' (here given with the Dynamic suffix in typical elicitation form). When only one verbal constituent of a compound is negated, however, this typically produces two separate predicates. Thus 'sitting and not drinking' must be expressed via two coordinated predicates: *ʔəg-nih pæm-ǎy* (drink-NEG sit-DYNM). Each of these forms a distinct phonological and grammatical word: they receive independent stress, and while the subject (e.g., 3pl *hid*) cannot be inserted between elements of the compound (**ʔəg hid pæm-ǎy*), it can come between the coordinated predicates in the negative construction (*ʔəg-nih hid pæm-ǎy*). Further examples are provided in (2–3).

- (2) *tinñ ʔid [wiʔ-nih] [g'et-g'o-tú-ay]*
 3sg.POSS language understand-NEG stand-go.about-(want)-INCH

yi-d'əh = nih

that.ITG-PL-EMPH.CO

'(We) would go about not understanding anything of her language.' (txt)

- (3) *[ʔok-nih] [key-ham-g'et-yíʔ-ay], tih = ʔǎy-ǎh*
 move-NEG see-go-stand-TEL-INCH 3sg= FEM-DECL
 'She stood there looking, without moving, that girl.' (txt)

Other defining criteria for the Hup verb compound include the fact that it takes a single grammatical subject, and its stems share a single compound-final Boundary Suffix, as well as other formatives. Semantically, the verb compound refers to an event that has conceptual unity (although the degree of this 'unity' is relative to the degree of stem integration). Like compounds cross-linguistically, Hup verbal constructions may become lexicalized and undergo corresponding phonological and semantic changes (cf. T. Payne 1997: 233). For example, the compound *b'uy-d'eh-* (throw-send) 'throw out' (itself nested within the larger compound in example 1 above) is frequently pronounced [ʷb'uyč'əh], in which the palatalization from the /y/ is carried over to change the /d'/ to a palatal stop (realized phonetically as a affricate).

While compounds form phonological words, they are not necessarily unitary lexical items (i.e., memorized forms). As noted above, compounding is a highly productive process in Hup, and compounds are made up of multiple roots whose combination need have no conventionalized coherence or meaning. Speakers can creatively generate novel strings of roots, according to specific rules and conventions (a grammatical process), just as they also rely on many conven-

tionalized multi-root forms (lexical items). (Ospina [2002: 334–335] makes a similar observation for Yuhup.)

Accordingly, individual roots or combinations of roots vary with respect to their degree of autonomy, i.e., whether they can appear without other roots to form predicates in their own right (while maintaining a consistent semantics). In relatively loosely integrated compounds, roots encode distinct events or components of an event, and can be considered maximally autonomous. One illustration of their autonomy is that such roots can be replaced by the ‘whatchamacallit’ form *hãy* within a compound. In contrast, *hãy* cannot stand in for grammatical formatives, and has not been found to replace roots that are acting as auxiliary-type modifiers to other stems in compounds. Example (4) illustrates the replacement of one root of a compound with *hãy* – whereupon the utterance is corrected by repeating the entire compound, demonstrating the integrity of the entire combination.

- (4) *núp hid hãy-ní-b’ay-áh, hid yãwãc-ní-b’ay-áh*
 here 3pl um-be-AGAIN-DECL 3pl meet-be-AGAIN-DECL
 ‘At this point they watchamacallit-ed again, they met up again.’ (txt)

Similarly, autonomous individual verb roots may be singled out of a longer compound for special narrative emphasis, involving raised intensity and pitch, followed by a pause before the rest of the verb compound is uttered. Example (5) comes from a climactic moment in a tale by a master storyteller, in which, just as the young girl vengefully struck the tapir in his anus with her knife, he sucked her entire arm up into his rectum and ran off with her, his prisoner, bumping along behind him. Both compound verbs have one emphasized root (‘poke’ and ‘suck in’); then the second part of the compound – ‘take quickly off’ – is repeated to emphasize the distance and speed of their journey.

- (5) *tih yók! d’əh-hám-yãh-kamí = mah tinñh yomdy,*
 3sg **poke!** send-go-FRUST-at.time.of=REP 3sg.POSS anus
- tih hi-ʔóm’...d’oʔ-kəðham- d’oʔ-kəðham-yíʔ-ay-áh !*
 3sg FACT-**suck.in**...take-pass.go take-quick.go-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘Just as she POKED (the knife) in vain into his anus, they say, he SUCKED (her arm) inside and took her quickly, took her quickly off!’

In contrast, non-autonomous roots can occur only within compounds, and are judged ungrammatical as predicates by themselves. An example of such a root is *g’oʔ* ‘move in no specific direction’, which occurs in such compounds

as *g’et-g’oʔ-* (stand-go.about) ‘wander about on foot’, *g’ãʔ-g’oʔ-* (hang.suspended-go.about) ‘go about in canoe’ or ‘hang around in a hammock’.

In still other cases, roots may appear as predicates in their own right, but have very different semantics depending on whether they are alone or in a compound – especially where they are becoming lexicalized to the extent that they are undergoing phonological reduction. An example of this is the verb *wid-*, which by itself is translated as ‘fish-spawn’ (i.e., arriving of spawning fish), but functions in compounds such as [*wiram-*] (*wid-ham-* ‘arrive-go’) ‘arrive at a place (from point of view of traveler)’, [*wiræn*] (*wid-næn-* ‘arrive-come’) ‘arrive at a place (from point of view of residents)’, etc. (see §9.4.2.4C below).

9.3. Compounds as serial verb constructions

Cross-linguistically, serial verb constructions are defined as involving a “sequence of verbs which act together as a single predicate, without any overt marker of coordination, subordination, or syntactic dependency of any other sort” (Aikhenvald 2006: 1; cf. Foley and Olsen 1985, Givón 1991). The Hup verb compound is here understood as a type of serial verb construction that involves contiguous ‘nuclear’ serialization, resulting in a single phonological word (cf. Aikhenvald 2006: 37, Crowley 2002: 15–17, Durie 1997: 302–303). As such, it differs from serial verb constructions found in languages of Africa and other parts of the world, in which the verbs involved are independent phonological words and can in most cases take intervening morphology, such as a direct object. It also differs (although more marginally) from the Dâw serial construction, in which roots are contiguous but are independent phonological words (see Martins 2004: 623, 625.)

Hup verb compounding, which produces neither fully lexical nor fully phrasal entities, has much in common with other processes of verb serialization cross-linguistically. First, as detailed in the following subsections, the range of more or less conceptually unified events reflected in Hup compound verbs resembles the ‘iconic’ and ‘non-iconic’ types of serial verbs defined by Durie (1997: 330–340). In those Hup compounds that follow clear iconic principles, verb order corresponds to temporal succession of actions, including sub-events in a cause-effect relationship. Those Hup compounds that are less iconic (though perhaps not completely non-iconic, as discussed below) encode coincident motion, posture, and manner (cf. Durie 1997: 336). Similarly, Hup verb compounds can be defined as ‘symmetric’ (involving components from semantically and grammatically open classes) or ‘asymmetric’ (involving components from at least one closed class), according to Aikhenvald’s (2000a: 4–5, 2006: 21–22) typology. Finally, Hup verb compounds do not allow duplicate participant roles, such as two agents or two objects (although an exception for the

latter exists in causative constructions; see examples 33 and 40 below); this is typical of serial verb constructions cross-linguistically (Durie 1997: 341; but note that cross-linguistic exceptions do exist, cf. Aikhenvald 2006: 13).

A number of features of Hup compound verbs are more typical of the cosubordination processes found in verb serialization than they are of compounding generally (i.e., cross-linguistically and across word classes). These features include the high productivity of Hup compounds and their tendency to encode multiple events – even relatively distinct events – in temporal succession. They also include compounds’ internal bracketing, especially the ability of certain prefixes to occur together with the particular stems over which they have scope. Finally, the productive verbal constructions on the ‘less-integrated’ side of the spectrum in Hup do not conform to T. Payne’s (1997: 233) description of the prototypical compound as having “bleached” semantics, i.e., a distinct lexical meaning beyond that encoded in its parts. Although verb serialization, according to Durie (1997: 322), is “universally characterized by heavy lexicalization”, this exists alongside productivity of serialization “because many events can be typed in terms of certain predictable internal structures and structural components”.

While serialization in Hup is almost exclusively realized as compounding, Hup has one additional process that bears a marginal resemblance to serialization, although it is probably best described as cosubordination on the predicative level (see the detailed discussion in §18.2.2). Constructions of this type are composed of a series of independent verbs (which may themselves be compounds), which obligatorily ends with the verb *ni*- (see §8.4). This final verb *ni*-alone takes the Boundary Suffix and any other inflectional marking; the preceding verbs are bare, lacking a Boundary Suffix or peripheral formatives (although they may take certain Inner Suffixes). This absence of otherwise obligatory inflectional morphology on all but the last verb indicates these stems’ co-dependence. However, they are clearly distinct phonological words; they take independent stress, and are often preceded by nominal subject or object arguments. The most common realization of this phenomenon involves the repetition of the *same* bare verb to form a ‘reduplicative predicate’ (example 6); however, it can also involve different verbs, as in example (7). This last case rarely occurs, but it seems to be the preferred choice when expressing an event that is perceived as relatively conceptually unitary, while doing so using transitive verbs having different patients; such verbs cannot be expressed as a compound (cf. example 16 in §9.4.1.1 below). That these cosubordinate constructions are distinct from serial verbs – despite their shared inflectional morphology and TAM values – is suggested by their status as neither clearly monocausal nor single predicates, and by their allowance of duplicate participant roles.

- (6) *híd-ǎn wæd-nǝʔ, híd-ǎn wæd-nǝʔ,*
 3pl-OBJ eat-give 3pl-OBJ eat-give

ni-yóʔ píđ=mah tíh way-yiʔ-píđ-ih
 be-SEQ DIST=REP 3sg go.out-TEL-DIST-DECL

‘(He) would give them food, (always) give them food, having done thus he would go out again, it’s said.’ (txt)

- (7) *yǔb d’ǔp, kayak=tǐg cǐy’, ʔin ni-té-h*
 cipó pull.down manioc=stem poke.in 1pl be-FUT-DECL
 ‘We’ll both pull cipó and plant manioc.’ (el)

9.4. The Hup compound and levels of sub-event integration

As a single-predicate, cosubordinate construction, a compound verb in Hup must encode an event that has a degree of conceptual unity. When this unity is not judged to be present, the events are necessarily represented by two predicates, linked by subordination or coordination strategies. However, among compound verbs, the linked stems can encode a variety of more or less conceptually integrated sub-events. These range from the least integrated, in which the component stems of the compound represent a series of distinct sub-events in temporal succession, to the most integrated, where some stems act as auxiliaries to modify others.

9.4.1. Low integration

These Hup compounds are in general ‘iconic’ in the ordering of their stems (cf. Durie 1997: 330), and ‘symmetrical’ (cf. Aikhenvald 2003a: 424, 2006: 28–30) in that the component stems all come from a large open class. They also resemble the class of Barasana and Tatuayo (Eastern Tukanoan) compound verbs that encode a “direct relationship” between stems, as described by Gómez-Imbert (1988).

Compounds of this type represent a set of distinct sub-events (each indicated by a component stem) that are conceptualized (often loosely) as a single, unified event. By definition (and in contrast with the relatively more integrated compounds discussed in §9.4.2 below), the events encoded by the stems are temporally distinct; that is, they are not simultaneous. The order of verb stems reflects the chronological order of sub-events, or a cause-effect relationship between them. In many cases the compound can be broken up into a series of multiple,

coordinated predicates without significantly changing the general meaning of the utterance.

While many of the events encoded in Hup serial verbs would be likely candidates for serial verb constructions in other languages, it is widely recognized that the type of event that may be conceptualized as unitary varies from language to language and culture to culture (Bruce 1988: 30, Durie 1997: 326–329). For example, the chain of events represented in the compound in (8) below could not be represented in a single serial verb construction in some African languages, such as Fongbe (Lefebvre 2002 and p.c.).

9.4.1.1. Temporal sequence

These compounds are the lowest on the scale of conceptual integration of events. The order of stems reflects the temporal succession of events, and often incorporates ‘nested’ compounds (here indicated by brackets). In (8), for example, the mythical figure’s penis was rubbed, broke off, fell into the water, and was sent away by the current. Other examples are given in (9–12).

- (8) *tinĩh tĩb, tih yoyɔp-j’ap-tu?-[d’əh-hám]-b’ay-áh*
 3sg.POSS penis 3sg rub-snap-go.into.water-send-go-AGAIN-DECL
 ‘His penis rubbed until it broke off, fell into the water, and was swept away.’ (txt)
- (9) *?əytæn=yí? hid mæh-[b’uy-d’əh-ham]-yí?-ay-áh !*
 together=TEL 3pl kill-throw-send-go-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘Together they killed them and threw them out.’ (txt)
- (10) *yú-uw-ít=yí?=mah tih coh-tud-[kədcak]-yí?-ay-áh*
 that-FLR-OBL=TEL=REP 3sg pole-push-pass.climb-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘With this (stick) he poled, pushed, and sent himself flying up into the air.’ (txt)
- (11) *n’ikán ?ühníy næn-g’et-yó?=mah...*
 there maybe come-stand-SEQ=REP
 ‘Having come and stood about there, maybe...’ (txt)
- (12) *?in-ăn ci?-mæh-yí?-íy=mah !*
 1pl-OBJ urinate-kill-TEL-DYNM=REP
 ‘He (Curupira) urinates on us and (thereby) kills us, they say!’ (txt)

According to the temporal-sequence compounding strategy, the order of the verb stems must iconically reflect the order of events:

- (13) a) *kayak = tǐg təh-cīy'-yǐʔ-ǐy*
 manioc=stem break-poke.in-TEL-DYNM
 '(Someone) planted the manioc.' (el)
 (Manioc is planted by breaking the woody stems of adult plants into sections, which are then thrust into the ground to root)
- b) * *kayak = tǐg cīy'-təh-yǐʔ-ǐy*
 manioc=stem poke-break-TEL-DYNM
- (14) a) *hǔd núh j'ap-wæd-ǎy*
 sauva.ant head divide-eat-DYNM
 'Breaking the heads off sauva ants and eating (the ants' bodies).' (el)
- b) * *hǔd núh wæd-j'áp-áy*
 sauva.ant head eat-break-DYNM

It is common for transitive, ditransitive, and intransitive stems to occur together within a single compound, and for the different stems to take different objects. In example (14), the verbs 'break' and 'eat' cannot be understood as taking the same object, since the activity involves breaking the heads off sauva ants in order to eat the rest of the ant (while the head is not eaten). In (15), the stem 'pull up' has the object 'manioc', while the ditransitive stem 'give', within the same compound, has the object 'her' (3sg):

- (15) *tǐh-ǎn kayak tǔʔ hid g'ɔʔ-nɔʔ-ǔy*
 3sg-OBJ manioc tuber 2pl pull.up-give-DYNM
 'They've pulled up manioc and given it to her.' (el)

In many cases, however, it is ungrammatical for multiple transitive component stems to take different objects (although this is common in certain causative compounds; see §9.4.1.2 below). As noted in §9.3 above, an alternative is a cosubordinating construction with the verb *ni-* 'be'. The ungrammatical form in (16a) is contrasted with the grammatical, non-compound construction in (16b) (repeated from 7 above):

- (16) a) **kayak = tǐg*, *yǔb hid cǐy'-d'úp-úh*
 manioc=stem cipó 3pl poke.in-pull.down-DECL
 (Intended meaning: 'We'll both plant manioc and pull cipó.')
- b) *yǔb d'úp*, *kayak = tǐg cǐy' ?in ni-té-h*
 cipó pull.down manioc=stem poke.in 1pl be-FUT-DECL
 'We'll both pull cipó and plant manioc.' (el)

9.4.1.2. Compounds encoding a cause-effect relationship

In causative compounds, stems encode multiple events that are usually not temporally simultaneous. They are thus here treated as relatively low on the scale of conceptual integration, although they are clearly more integrated than are those compounds that simply encode a series of events. Although the causative compound construction has only one grammatical subject, the actions themselves necessarily have different underlying actors. Thus while they are constructed like many compound verbs, involving a transitive stem plus an intransitive stem, these stems have a particular valency relationship whereby the object of one is the subject of the other. The constructions usually involve a relationship between two verb stems (although more are possible), in which one component encodes a causative action (often involving manner), and the other encodes the resulting event (as is typical of cause-effect serial constructions cross-linguistically; cf. Aikhenvald 2006: 14–16, Talmy 1985: 62–64). See also §11.5 for further discussion of derived causative/non-causative pairs.

A. Compound-initial causative stems

Hup has a small class of conventional causative stems, each with its own semantic content and restricted patterns of use. These involve the combination of a transitive causative stem with an intransitive stem, and the result is a transitive construction involving two (or more) participants.

The most productive causative stem is the verb *d'oʔ-*, which by itself means 'take'. This is a cross-linguistically common lexical source for a causative marker; for example, Lefebvre (1991) notes that in Fon the semantic contribution of *take* in many serial constructions is 'cause'. In Hup causative constructions with 'take', the causer is directly (though not necessarily immediately) involved in bringing about the causee's performance of the activity; accordingly, 'take' appears to be contributing its active semantics to the compound. In many cases, this implies direct physical involvement between the participants

throughout the duration of the event. Examples of such causative forms include *d'oʔ-naʔ-* (take-die) 'cause to die' (used in situations where killing is not direct; e.g., abortion or infanticide by abandoning a newborn, as in example (17) below; compare lexical causative *mæh-* 'kill, hit'); *d'oʔ-cak-g'et-* (take-rise-stand) 'stand something/someone up' (compare *cak-g'et-* 'stand up of one's own accord', and *g'et-* 'be in standing position'); *d'oʔ-cud-* (take-be.inside) 'put (something) inside (something else)'; *d'oʔ-ʔʂh-* (take-sleep) 'put (child) to sleep'; *d'oʔ-yʂʔʔm-* (take-be.frightening) 'frighten'. In examples (18–20), the causative stem takes scope over multiple stems within a compound.

- (17) *tih hæk-ʔě-p tǎh-ǎn d'oʔ-naʔ-yíʔ-íy*
 3sg sleep.around-PERF-DEP child-OBJ take-die-TEL-DYNM
 '(She) brought about the death of the child she got by sleeping around.'
 (ru)

- (18) *denícon tih-ǎn d'oʔ-ʔót-śh !*
 Denilson 3sg-OBJ take-cry-DECL
 'Denilson made him cry!' (cv)

- (19) *nút tíhǎn d'oʔ-[cæŋpe-g'et]-yíʔ-íy = mah...*
 here 3sg-OBJ take-straddle-stand-TEL-DYNM=REP

d'oʔ-[hɔy-g'et]-yíʔ-íy

take-bum.stuck.out-stand-TEL-DYNM

'He made him stand with his legs spread apart... made him stand with his bum stuck out' (in order to poke an anus in the spirit, who lacked one).

(txt)

- (20) *cǎw-ǎn d'oʔ-[cak-wob]-yíʔ, ní-íy = mah*
 other-OBJ take-rise-rest.on-TEL be-DYNM=REP
 '(He) set another one up high.' (txt)

In other causative-like constructions, the verb *d'oʔ-* has not lost its 'take' semantics:

- (21) *yuyú hid d'oʔ-hi-g'ǎʔ-yam-ʔě-p = mah*
 ritual.object 3pl take-FACT-hang-dance/sing-PERF-DEP=REP
 'They would hold the *yuyu* (ritual object) hanging down while they sang/danced, they say.' (txt)

- (22) *těghod-ót* *hid* *d'oʔ-yǎʔ-yíʔ-ay-áh*
 wood.hearth-OBL 3pl take-roast-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'They put it (clay) into the fire to bake.' (txt)

Similarly, distinct causative and non-causative interpretations of 'take' can co-exist for a given compound. In other words, the underlying actor can be the same ('Y take X and do V [with it]') or different ('Y make X do V') for the two stems without changing the overall meaning. For example, *d'oʔ-næn-* 'bring (toward deictic center)' can be interpreted as 'Y take X and Y come', while it necessarily also has the causative meaning 'Y make X come'. The same applies to *d'oʔ-ham-* 'bring (away from deictic center)'. (Note that making X come or go without full physical control – e.g., by throwing it – requires a different causative marker, as described below.)

Causative verbs can take scope over multiple roots plus valency-changing markers, producing a 'nested' compound, as in (21) above and example (23):

- (23) *wǒh = n'ǎn (...)* *d'oʔ-[hup-hipāh-næn]-ní-h*
 River.Indian=PL.OBJ take-RFLX-know-come-INFR2-DECL
 'He brought the River Indians to be educated.' (lit., he caused them to come and have knowledge) (txt)

Another causative root is *d'əh-*, which on its own means 'send, (cause to) move', and combines productively with direction and movement verbs. Its use in causative compounds involves a situation where the object of the causative action has a degree of control or autonomy in carrying out the activity. Usually, it implies the absence of physical involvement between causer and causee beyond the initial impetus for the event, as illustrated by examples (24–26). In these examples, the causative verb compound is nested inside a larger compound, such that the manner or action by which the causative event was carried out is encoded in the initial element.

- (24) *ʔāh* *bóda = tat* *tac-[d'əh-yé]-éy,* *mǒy* *g'od-an*
 1sg ball=FRUIT kick-send-enter-DYNM house inside-OBJ
 'I kicked the ball into the house.' (el)

- (25) *tih* *yok-[d'əh-ham]-yǎh-kamí = mah*
 3s poke-send-go-FRUST-time.of=REP
 'At the moment when she poked (the knife) in...' (txt)

- (26) *ʔāh tegd'úh hōk-[d'əh-hi]-yíʔ-íy*
 1sg tree sawing.motion-send-descend-TEL-DYNM
 'I felled the tree by sawing it.' (el)

An idiosyncratic feature of this particular causative root is its tendency to be repeated; this occurs when *d'əh-* is the first stem in the compound, and is not preceded by a stem encoding manner, as in examples (27–29). Consultants say that the unrepeated variant is also acceptable, although textual uses consistently involve the doubled form. This may be a case of reinforcement (cf. Hopper and Traugott 1993: 58), in which the semi-lexicalization of the initial causative construction has motivated the restatement of the causative element. Another possible explanation is that, in these cases, only the second *d'əh* expresses causation, while the first *d'əh* is a sort of 'dummy' manner specification, on the model of examples (24–26) above.

- (27) *ʔāh pāt j'ǐp d'əh-d'əh-yé-éy*
 1sg hair tie send-send-enter-DYNM
 'I'm putting in the hairclip.' (cv)
- (28) *tih d'əh-d'əh-d'ob-píd-ay-áh*
 3sg send-send-descend.to.river-DIST-INCH-DECL
 'He sent them all down to the river.' (txt)
- (29) *yúp wáb-át w'ob-ʔéʔ=n'ǎn d'əh-d'əh-hí-íh*
 that jirau-OBL set.on-PERF=PL.OBJ send-send-descend-DECL
 '(He) caused those who had been placed on the smoking-grid to descend.' (txt)

Still another causative root is *g'et-* 'stand'. This root has more limited use than 'take' or 'send', but it is also fairly productive. Its use indicates that the causative agent is instrumental in bringing about an animate participant's carrying out of the event, often conceived to be for his/her own good; however, its semantics are much less active than those of *d'oʔ-* 'take'. The 'causer' is in the position of caring for, chaperoning, or helping the 'causee', and the 'causer' is usually understood to participate to some degree in the joint activity. This type of construction is most commonly used in reference to children, as in examples (30–33). (Note that in 33 both verb roots are used transitively.)

- (30) *nĩ = nih* *?ãh g'et-wæd-macã-cák-áh,*
1sg.POSS=EMPH.CO 1sg stand-eat-grow-rise-DECL

núp nĩ *dó? = n'ãn-áh*

this 1sg.POSS child=PL.OBJ-DECL

'With my own (produce) I fed and raised my children.' (txt)

- (31) *kedõ* *kedõ!* *nó-õy* *nĩ* *tæh = d'əh-əh,*
firefly firefly say-DYNM 1sg.POSS child=PL-DECL

?ãh g'et-ham-g'ó?-ót-óh, *j'ũg-an*

1sg stand-go-go.about-OBL-DECL forest-DIR

'"Firefly, firefly!" my children would say, when I took them to the forest.' (txt)

- (32) *tát* *deh-an* *?áh = ?íp* *?ãn* *g'et-næn-ní-h*
taracúá (ant) water-DIR 1sg=father 1sg.OBJ stand-come-INFR2-DECL
'My father brought me to Taracúá Igarapé (as a young child).' (txt)

- (33) *yúb* *?ín-ãn* *hid* *g'et-bí?-íy*
cipó 1pl-OBJ 3pl stand-work-DYNM

'They (Tukanos) made us (Hupd'əh) work cipó (i.e., gather vines in forest for sale).' (txt)

Note that the different causative constructions are not usually interchangeable, but differ in important ways, both according to the degree of control and the overall semantics of the clause. For example, only *g'et-* 'stand' is grammatical in an expression such as 'feed a child' (example 34a), whereas *d'o?-* 'take' can only be interpreted literally (i.e., non-causatively) in this context (34b):

- (34) a) *?áh* *tih = dó?-ãn* *g'et-wæd-æh*
1sg 3sg=child-OBJ stand-eat-DECL
'I fed the child.' (el)

- b) *?áh* *tih = dó?-ãn* *d'o?-wæd-æh*
1sg 3sg=child-OBJ take-eat-DECL
'I took and ate the child.' (el)

While the roots described above (*d'oʔ-* 'take', *d'əh-* 'send', and *g'et-* 'stand') are by far the most productive in forming causative compounds, the class of causative roots that can function in these constructions is essentially open. For example, the verb *hũh-* 'hold' is often used in causative constructions involving babies, such as *hũh-j'ɔm-* 'bathe an infant' (i.e., holding the child in the water of the stream or river; does not entail that the caregiver also bathes), and *hũh-ʔõh-* 'put child to sleep by holding it' (i.e., by lying with child in hammock).

Other causative combinations involve initial verbs that do not occur regularly in causative constructions at all, but form causatives by virtue of their position in the verb compound and the pragmatic interpretation. Such causative combinations include *ʔey-way-* (call-go.out) 'cause to go out by calling' (example 35), and *b'əh-ham-* (pour-go) 'cause to go away by pouring out' (example 36). Various transitive stems can combine with the intransitive verb *naʔ-* 'die' to yield a causative reading ('cause to die'), such as *g'əç-naʔ-* 'cause to die by biting', *hi-g'et-naʔ-* 'cause to die by stepping on', as in example (37), or even the hypothetical *key-naʔ-* 'cause to die by looking at'.

- (35) *yãʔambõʔ-ăn* *yũ* *ʔey-way-yíʔ-íy*
 dog-OBJ João call-go.out-TEL-DYNM
 'João calls the dog out (of the house).' (el)

- (36) *hidnĩh* *húptok* *yít=yíʔ* *b'əh-ham-pæm-yíʔ-ay*, *ʔãh-ãw-ãh !*
 3pl.POSS caxiri thus=TEL pour-go-sit-TEL-INCH 1sg-FLR-DECL
 'I had begun pouring out their caxiri like this, as I was sitting there!' (txt)

- (37) *cadakãʔ* *tãh-ăn* *ʔãh* *hi-g'et-naʔ-yíʔ-íy !*
 chicken child-OBJ 1sg FACT-stand-die-TEL-DYNM
 'I stepped on the chick and killed it!' (by accident) (cv)

B. Compound-final causative roots

Hup has an additional compounding strategy for forming causative constructions, in which the intransitive stem describing the resulting event is the first element in the compound, and is *followed* by the transitive causative root. It is also possible in these compounds for both roots to be transitive – with two different objects – as in (40).

Only two causative roots are used productively and regularly in these constructions: *-bĩʔ-* 'make, work' (example 38), and *-yãh-* 'order, request, compel' (examples 39–40). These compounds resemble the relatively less 'iconic' con-

structions described below in §9.4.2.3, in that the order of roots/stems does not reflect the order of events; even though the causative force is usually initiated before the resulting state is attained, the roots occur in the opposite order.

One explanation for this apparently non-iconic order is that these causative stems (unlike those discussed above) do not entail that the effect actually occurs; the action of requesting, for example, may remain ungratified. The same explanation also accounts for the other apparently ‘inverse’ ordering of stems discussed in §9.4.2.3 below. These compounds are thus consistent with the iconic principles outlined below (§9.4.2.2) in that the more time-stable or temporally grounded stem comes last. However, it is noteworthy that cognate forms of these two roots have a similarly causative function in Yuhup verb compounds, but *precede* the stems with which they co-occur (Ospina 2002: 350, 399–402), suggesting that the Hup order may be to some degree historically arbitrary, rather than a reflection of essential principles.

- (38) *tih = dɔʔ-ǎn peʔ-bíʔ-íy*
 3sg=child-OBJ sick-make-DYNM
 ‘(Someone) is (working to) make the child sick (i.e., via a spell).’ (el)
- (39) *tegd’úh ʔág tih hop-key-yǎ́h-ǎp*
 tree fruit 3sg immerse-see-request-DEP
 ‘He sent (the water-roach) into the water to see the fruits on the trees.’
 (txt)
- (40) *tih = dɔʔ tih = báb’-ǎn wǎǎg wǎd-yǎ́h-ǎy*
 3sg=child 3sg=sibling-OBJ sand eat-request-DYNM
 ‘The child made his sibling eat sand.’ (also: ‘told his sibling to eat sand’)
 (el)

9.4.2. High integration

Hup compounds of this type have much in common with the ‘non-iconic’ serial verb constructions described by Durie (1997: 336). In contrast to the relatively less-integrated compounds described above, the multiple roots in these constructions encode various pieces of information about a conceptually and temporally more unitary event. The order of roots reflects conventions in information packaging, but they are not organized in terms of any temporal sequence of sub-events. Many of the compounds in this class resemble the ‘asymmetrical’ serial verbs described by Aikhenvald for Tariana (2003a: 424), in that at least one root in the set may come from a closed class (encoding motion, posture,

etc.). The temporal concurrence of the roots in these compounds has also been described for the Tukanoan languages Barasana and Tatuyo by Gómez-Imbert (1988), who refers to the relationship of the roots within the compound as ‘simultaneous’.

These compounds do not form a unified class of their own, but themselves manifest different degrees of conceptual integration. At one end of the scale we find semi-autonomous sub-events that are happening at the same time; at the other end, component roots directly modify other roots, usually contributing aspectual information.

In some cases, integrated compounds have developed idiomatic meanings that are distinct from the sum of their roots, and are partially lexicalized. Some display phonological reduction that goes along with their reanalysis as one lexeme. As discussed above (§9.2), certain roots may be obligatorily bound forms, or may develop very different meanings depending on whether they occur as independent predicates, in compounds, or even in initial vs. final position within a compound. Other roots have become grammaticalized until they have become auxiliaries or even formatives. Examples of forms that have undergone these processes will be encountered below.

9.4.2.1. Multiple sub-events: semantic classes of verb roots

On the lower end of the scale of event integration, some compounds encode multiple components of an event. These range from distinct but concurrent activities to more conceptually indivisible parts of an activity. In (41–42), the activities encoded in the compounds could be expressed as separate predicates without significantly changing the overall meaning of the utterance.

- (41) *tʃw-ít hám-âp = ʔih ʔid-ʔækɔh-wæd-hám-ǎy*
 path-OBL go-DEP=MSC speak-make.commotion-eat-go-DYNM
 ‘The man who is going along the path is eating and gossiping while walking.’ (el)

- (42) *yúp = yiʔ níh-ĩw-ĩt tih ʔey-yɔhɔy-ní-h*
 thus=TEL manner-EMPH-OBL 3sg call-search-INFR2-DECL
 ‘Thus in this way he went calling and searching.’ (txt)

This type of compound blurs into a slightly more integrated type, in which the different roots encode semantic components of a conceptually still more unitary event. Here, the roots cannot easily be separated into separate predicates without changing the overall meaning of the clause. The semantic components

they encode include distinct elements of motion and path, manner, and position (as in the “coincident motion or posture” verb serialization described by Durie 1997: 336). The surface structure of the Hup verb closely reflects many of the units of meaning identified by Talmy (e.g., 1985), in a much more one-to-one correspondence than we find in languages such as English.

The event components encoded in Hup verb roots can be separated into several semantically defined groups. These include the small, closed classes of (A) motion/path and (B) position, and the open classes of (C) manner/activity, and (D) states and transitions. The highly integrated compound verbs can be made up of all closed-class or all open-class roots, but they usually involve at least one root from an open class and one from a closed class, and are accordingly ‘asymmetric’ in Aikhenvald’s (2006) terms. It is noteworthy that Yuhup verb roots fall into similar semantic classes and follow comparable combinatory conventions, as discussed in detail by Ospina (2002: 357–390).

Below, I introduce the different semantic classes of roots. While there is no formal indication in the root itself regarding its semantic class, the class membership does play an important role in determining the order of roots in a compound (when temporal sequence is not a factor). There is thus a language-internal formal reality behind the semantic class assignments listed here. These ordering principles are discussed in the following section (§9.4.2.2).

A. Motion/path. Closed class.

The verbs in this class are all intransitive, and encode both motion and path relative to a reference point (which in many cases involves water – an interesting semantic feature which seems quite natural given the ecology of the Hup environment). They include the following:

næn- ‘go towards reference point (speaker); come’

ham- ‘go away from reference point (speaker)’

hi- ‘descend’ (from height or downstream)

pæ- ‘go upstream’

d’ob- ‘go toward river/downhill’

cɔp- ‘go away from river/uphill’

tuʔ- ‘go into liquid’

cak- ‘go in upward direction’ (climb, grow, raise)

b’ay- ‘return’

ye- ‘enter bounded space’

way- ‘leave bounded space’

tu- ‘go down (toward ground/water)’

kəd- ‘pass’

b’eh- ‘cross a waterway’

kot- ‘go in circles’

g’oʔ- ‘wander about’; i.e., motion with no defined path (this is an obligatorily bound stem that can only occur in a compound)

Path, vis-à-vis a reference point, is a more central feature than actual motion in these verbs; for example, *hi-* ‘descend’ is used to describe the static position of a dangling string, as is *ham-* ‘go’ for strung wire, etc.

B. Position. Closed class.

These intransitive stems include the following:

wob- ‘rest on another object’

pæm- ‘sit’ (animate entities only)

d’ak- ‘be attached to/in contact with a surface without the help of gravity’ (esp. to a vertical surface or stuck to the underside of a horizontal surface)

g’et- ‘stand; be in upright position (for long thin object); stay’

g’āʔ- ‘hang, be suspended with free movement’
(used for hammocks and floating canoes)

yæt- ‘lie on ground; be in contact with ground’

(for any object that does not have a specific upright standing position)

cud- ‘be inside something else’

C. Manner/activities. Large open class.

This is something of a ‘catch-all’ class, which contains most ‘activity’ verbs. All transitive roots are in this class, but it also includes many intransitive and ditransitive roots. Manner (according to Talmy’s [1985] characterization of semantic entities) is the main parameter for distinguishing these verbs from each other and from the other verb classes. For example, there are a number of semantic sub-classes of Hup verbs that encode types of actions, and manner is

an important part of their internal differentiation. One such group includes verbs for different ways of carrying or supporting:

- hūh-* 'carry in arms or on shoulder'
- tɔn-* 'carry in hand'
- hitoy'-* 'carry on head'
- cet-* 'carry on back'
- kæmæm-* 'carry against body or under one arm'
- tɔw-* 'carry between two or more people' (e.g., a bench)
- yo-* 'carry dangling from hand' (e.g., a pot)

Verbs for ways of hitting form another semantic sub-class, and include:

- mæh-* 'beat, hit, kill'
- tab'ah-* 'slap with flat of hand; hit head against something'
- tən'-* 'pound against something' (e.g., hammer, hard fruit to break it)
- kotow-* 'hit with end of stick, held vertically'
- tāw-* 'beat with length of stick'
- pæç-* 'hit with flat, flexible thing' (e.g., bark, hand, notebook)
- ci?wip-* 'beat with thin flexible thing' (rope, string, or vine)
- tok-* 'pound with mortar and pestle'

Verbs relating to bodily functions, sensations, and emotions are considered part of the manner/activity class as well, and include:

- ?əg-* 'drink'
- wæd-* 'eat'
- ?ōh-* 'sleep'
- hɔn-* 'vomit'
- ?ɔt-* 'weep'
- hohot-* 'cough'
- key-* 'see'
- wi?-* 'hear; understand'

ʔɔm- ‘fear’

wɔy- ‘be stingy with; love’¹¹⁷

Verbs relating to posture can also be considered a sub-set of the larger ‘manner’ class. These stems are uniformly intransitive, and differ from the ‘position’ verbs in set B above in that they encode finer-grained distinctions in position that relate to manner. As discussed below, a posture verb typically precedes a position verb (or sometimes a motion/path verb) in a compound, and almost never occurs by itself. The posture verbs include:

minuk- ‘be doubled over’

tuk- ‘be face down’¹¹⁸

caj- ‘be right side up’

mam- ‘leaning sideways’

kimin- ‘arms wrapped around (something)’

yoyo- ‘suspended from above’

(by hands, a rope, etc.; entails one fixed end only)

yɔw- ‘straight, in alignment’ (especially for the human body)

nuc- ‘bent’ (body)

Still other manner/activity verbs include those relating to weather, such as *d’oj-* ‘rain’ and *bohót-* ‘be windy’, and the following:

doy- ‘bend down, duck’

cɔ̃y- ‘slither’

yoy’ ‘swing back and forth’

¹¹⁷ The verb *wɔy-* is used to mean both ‘be stingy’ (with something) and ‘love’. Stinginess is considered a quite negative trait in Hup culture. The ‘love’ sense of *wɔy-* is more neutral, but refers primarily to ‘selfish’ love; for example, it can be used in reference to parents’ love for their children, but particularly in the context of a parent’s desire to keep his/her children close by, rather than allowing them to wander, get married, etc. While this verb is used to translate Portuguese *amar* ‘to love’, it does not encode the concept of selfless or self-sacrificing love that European cultural tradition associates with more selfish love.

¹¹⁸ Transitive forms resembling this root are *túk-* ‘want’ and *tǔk-* ‘sting (insect)’.

- hɔ̃k-* ‘saw back and forth’ (especially when cutting)
tɔʔɔh- ‘run’
yam- ‘dance/sing’
dɔʔ- ‘count’
jʔək- ‘jump’
nɔh- ‘fall; hit against (no downward motion entailed)’
tac- ‘kick, hit against with feet’
dʔoʔ- ‘take’
ʔih- ‘ask’
tih- ‘tell lie’
nɔ- ‘say’

D. States and transitions. Open class.

These roots all appear to be intransitive. This set also includes members of the adjective class (which can form independent predicates without the Boundary Suffix required for true verbs). The roots in this class combine relatively infrequently in highly integrated compounds with the other verbs described in this section, but occur more often with auxiliary-type forms or causative roots (see §9.4.1.2A above and §9.4.2.4 below). Verbs in this class include:

- təm-* ‘having close-together vertical components’ (e.g., a wall made of poles)
tɔtɔdʔ- ‘spotted with small sores’
ciʔ- ‘be sticky/stuck together’
gʔi- ‘be hot’
mʔæ- ‘be cool (liquid)’
həb- ‘dry, be dry’
dʔɔh- ‘be rotten’
naʔ- ‘lose consciousness/die’

9.4.2.2. *Order of roots in compounds*

Integrated compounds formed from the roots in the classes above are very common in Hup. The order of combination of roots follows specific conven-

tions based on their class membership. Since these are semantically defined classes, it is possible to make a semantic generalization about the ordering conventions: the most time-stable, permanent, or resultative concept is the last in the string of roots. This root-ordering principle for integrated compounds is thus closely related to the principle of temporal succession that dictates the formation of less integrated compounds.

That the final element in a compound is in some sense the ‘main’ verb is supported semantically, since it provides a kind of matrix or context for the other events. It is also supported formally, since Hup is a verb-final language; that is, being head-final at clause level seems to be mirrored by being head-final at word level. Finally, as in the case of causative compounds, a combination of a transitive and an intransitive stem results in a transitive construction.

Below, I offer examples of the various possible combinations of these verb classes. Note that the reverse order of roots in the examples below is ungrammatical for virtually all; in the very few cases (noted in the text) where it is grammatical, it usually results in a different meaning.

A. Manner/activity + Motion/path (open + closed class).

Examples of this type of compounding include *nɔ-ham-* (say-go) ‘go along saying’, *tac-[kəd-hi-]* (kick-pass-descend) ‘go downstream fast, hitting against things’, *j’ɔm-ham-* (bathe-go) ‘swim’, *j’ɔy-næn-* ‘slither along ground toward deictic center’ (i.e., a snake), *kək-w’ob-ham-* (pull-set-go) ‘catch and set out (fish) while going along’, and the following:

- (43) *ʔāh ʔəg-g’óʔ-óy*
 1sg drink-go.about-DYNM
 ‘I would go around drinking.’ (as a young woman, the narrator often traveled from place to place to attend drinking parties) (txt)
- (44) *tih j’ək-kədhám-áh*
 3sg jump-pass.go-DYNM
 ‘He jumped quickly forward.’ (txt)
- (45) *tih waŋ-yé-ay-áh*
 3sg spy-enter-INCH-DECL
 ‘He entered, spying around.’ (txt)

- (46) *tīw pat-hám-ǎy, nuh = kəbók = d'əh*
 path clear.path-go-DYNM head=break=PL
 'The sauva (lit. 'head-breaker') ants cleared the path as they went.' (txt)

Example (47) is from a story about a man who takes revenge on a spirit who has cooked his children; the man tricks the spirit into letting him puncture him with a thorn, upon which the man pulls out the spirit's insides and kills him.

- (47) *?inǎh háwig = tæn tih [kək-[d'əh-way]]-hũ?-yí?-ay-áh*
 1pl.POSS heart=MEAS2 3sg pull-send-go.out-complete-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'Right up to where our heart is, he pulled everything out.' (txt)

B. Manner/activity + Position (open + closed class).

Examples of these compounds include *nɔh-d'ak-* (stick.against) 'fall/hit against a vertical surface', *hũh-g'ǎ?* (hold.against.body-be.suspended) 'hold against body while suspended (in hammock)', *?əg-pæm-* (drink-be.seated) 'drinking while seated', *key-g'et-* 'stand watching', *bug'-g'et-* 'pile into a heap', and those given in (48–50).

- (48) *?ǎh ?ám-ǎn key-g'ǎ?-ǎy*
 1sg 2sg-OBJ see-hang.suspended-DYNM
 'I'm lying in a hammock and watching you.' (el)

(Note that *g'a?-key-* is grammatical, but means 'trying out a new hammock'; *key-* is thus acting as an auxiliary, as discussed in §9.4.2.4 below.)

- (49) *g'ɔp-yó?, ?ǎh nɔ?-d'ák-áh*
 dip.out-SEQ 1sg give-stick.against-DECL
 'Having dipped (out the beer), I gave it to her.' (txt)

- (50) *hũt = teg ?am tɔn-pæm-ǎh*
 tobacco=stick 2sg hold-sit-DECL
 'You're sitting there with a cigar.' (txt)

The roots within the compound in example (51) illustrate the compatibility of the stem-ordering conventions of semantic elements with the logical temporal succession of events, as mentioned above. Here, the components of the woman's action (manner, motion, and locational goal) parallel the successive positions of the frog:

- (51) *woʔ-hi-wób-an = mah* *tih*
 remove.groundcover-FACT-be.set.on-DIR=REP 3sg

yo-b'uy-wób-óh

dangle-throw-set.on-DECL

'She swung (the frog) onto the rubbish pile, it's said.' (txt)

The intransitive manner verbs that relate to posture (i.e., manner of position) are often found preceding verbs of the position class. Such compounds include *tuk-wob-* (face.down-rest.on) 'lie face down on something', *tuk-yæt-* (face.down-lie) 'lie face down', *yow-g'et-* (straight-stand) 'stand straight (arms and legs in alignment)', *caj-wob-* (right.side.up-rest.on) 'lie face up on something', *caj-d'ak-* (right.side.up-stick.against) 'be leaning against something, face up', *minuk-pæm-* (head.bowed-sit) 'crouch in huddled position', *yoyo-g'ãʔ* (hang.from.above-dangle) 'hang by hands or a rope', *mam-d'ak-* (lean.to.side-stick.against) 'stand leaning to one side with shoulder against something', and example (52).

- (52) *nút tihăn... d'oʔ-hoy-g'et-yiʔ-iy*
 here 3sg-OBJ take-bum.stuck.out-stand-TEL-DYNM
 'He made him stand with his bum stuck out.' (txt)

C. Position + Motion/path (closed + closed class)

Compounds made up of members of both closed classes occur, although they are not particularly common. The order of elements corresponds to the time-stability of the events; in (53), for example, the position – being in contact with the wall – is intermittent, while the motion/path – wandering about (the bound stem *g'oʔ-*) – is constant.

- (53) *tih peʔpeʔ-d'ak-g'óʔ-óh*
 3sg grope-stick.against-go.about-DECL
 'He was groping around along the wall.' (txt)

In example (54), the wire's vertically supported position is likewise (spatially) intermittent, whereas its path (strung along an area) is constant:

- (54) *ʔarámi tít núp=yiʔ d'ak-ham-nih-íy*
 barbed.wire cord this=TEL stick.against-go-be.like-DYNM
 'Barbed wire was strung across like this.' (txt)

D. Motion/path + Position (closed + closed class).

An alternative order for the compounded members of these two closed classes, in contrast to (C) above, is illustrated in examples (55–56). Both of these examples come from a rendition of the Origin Story,¹¹⁹ which describes the long voyage in a mythical canoe taken by the forebears of the region's peoples, after their creation. The travelers remained seated in the canoe throughout the journey, as the canoe traveled up and down river after river. The relative time-stability of their sitting, as opposed to the more short-term event of exiting a location, probably explains the order of the stems.

- (55) *yawadaté-ét = mah hid way-pæm-píd-ih*
 Yawaraté-OBL=REP 3pl go.out-seated-DIST-DECL
 'From Yawaraté also, they say, they all went out sitting.' (txt)

- (56) *yít hid way-g'ãʔ-ní-h*
 thus 3pl go.out-suspended-INFR2-DECL
 'Thus they went out suspended (in the canoe).' (txt)

The order of the roots in compounds like example (57) can also be understood as temporally motivated, since the second root represents the stable position that resulted from the motion/path event (and the final verb *g'et-* functions as an auxiliary; see §9.4.2.4B below). This is comparable to the role of temporal sequence in motivating the combination of two motion/path roots or root combinations in a compound (e.g., example 8 above, *yɔyɔp-j'ap-tuʔ-[d'əh-ham]* = *b'ay-ah* '[his penis] rubbed, broke off, fell into the water, and was swept away').

- (57) *tih cak-wob-g'ét-éh*
 3sg ascend-rest.on-stand(=stay)-DECL
 'He climbed back in to stay (in the canoe).' (txt)

¹¹⁹ This Origin Story is widespread in the Vaupés and is generally considered by ethnographers to be a Tukanoan myth; currently, however, the Hupd'əh also tell it as their own.

E. Motion/path + Motion/path (closed + closed class).

This combination is rare but occasionally occurs, as in example (58). Here, the speaker is emphasizing the fact that the person in question has gone away from the village (the speaker's deictic center), in the direction away from the river. The final root 'go' is thus more resultative (i.e., he's gone away from here), while the person's direction is less time-stable or important in the long run.

- (58) *kaniní* *cɔp-ham-pó-h !*
 'sleepy' (Tuk) go.away.from.river-go-EMPH1-DECL
 '“Sleepyhead” has gone away (into the forest)!' (cv)

F. Activity/manner + Transition/resulting state (open + open class).

Examples of compounds formed from members of these two classes involve situations where an activity/manner verb brings about a resulting state (although both the activity and the transition may be occurring simultaneously). Such compounds (which are not very frequent) include *?ɔc-həb-* (squeeze.in.tipiti-dry) 'make manioc mash dry by squeezing in tipiti' and example (59).

- (59) *?āh* *?əg-ná?-á'y*
 1sg drink-lose.consciousness-DYNM
 'I'm drunk.' (i.e., 'I've reached a state of semi-consciousness through drinking') (cv)

G. Manner/activity + Manner/activity (open + open class).

As with most of the other types of compounds described here, the final root in a compound formed from two manner/activity verbs also tends to be the most time-stable component. Thus the last root in example (60) refers to the on-going activity (serving) that provides the context for the more sporadic activity (singing) within the context of the drinking party,¹²⁰ while the final component in examples (61–62) is the one that best characterizes the resulting state.

¹²⁰ But note that in this example the opposite order *g'ɔp-yamhidɔ?* is also accepted by consultants, possibly reflecting the fact that the repeated action of serving cuias of beer can be conceptualized as more intermittent if the timeframe in question is scaled down to the activity of singing. The verb 'sing' is a lexicalized form containing the root *yam-*

- (60) *ʔãh yamhidɔʔ-g'ɔp-ɔh*
 1sg sing-serve-DECL
 'I was singing while serving beer.' (cv)
- (61) *tih kit-cicih-yiʔ-ih*
 3sg chop-divide.into.bits-TEL-DECL
 'He chopped (the spirits) into many pieces.' (i.e., 'divided them into bits by chopping') (txt)
- (62) *mɔy nɔmɪh = d'əh ʔãn mæh-təh-yiʔ-iy*
 house house.dweller=PL 1sg.OBJ hit-break-TEL-DYNM
 'The people who live here have hit and broken me (my bones).' (txt)

In summary, compounds in Hup tend to correspond to the following ordering conventions, based on the four primary semantic categories of the component roots:

Manner/activity + Motion/path
 Manner/activity + Position
 Position + Motion/path
 Motion/path + Position
 Motion/path + Motion/path
 Manner/activity + Transition/resulting state
 Manner/activity + Manner/activity

These conventions, and those governing the order of roots where flexibility exists vis-à-vis these classes, correspond to the relative time-stability or resultative status of the sub-events. In addition to – and probably as a result of – these general semantic ordering principles, a combination of a transitive root (all of which belong in the manner/activity class) with an intransitive root always requires the transitive root to precede the intransitive.

9.4.2.3. *Complex compounds: ordering of multiple roots*

These ordering principles interact with the temporal succession principle discussed above to organize compounds that are made up of more than two roots.

'dance, sing kapiwaya'; the rest of the compound may be *hi-dɔʔ*- 'FACT-count, keep track of'.

In (63), for example, the manner/activity root *j'ip-* ‘lash (tie) to’ precedes the manner/activity root *m'æc-* ‘squeeze tight’, which in turn precedes the position root *d'ak-* ‘stick against, be against a vertical surface’ – an ordering that iconically mirrors the ordering of events and corresponds to the manner/activity + position ordering convention:

- (63) *túʔ-út hid j'ĩp-m'æc-d'ak-yíʔ-ay-áh*
 house.pole-OBL 3pl lash-squeeze.tight-stick.against-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘They tied (his basket) tightly against the house-pole.’ (txt)

More integrated compounds are often ‘nested’ inside larger, less-integrated compounds. Thus the organizing principles discussed above can apply on several levels within the same verb word, as the following examples illustrate.

[Manner-Position]-Motion/path:

- (64) *tih [nɔh-d'ak]-kót-op*
 3sg [fall-stick.against]-travel.in.circles-DEP
 ‘It went knocking around (inside the box)’.

Manner/activity-[Manner-Motion/path] (the nested manner-path form is semi-lexicalized; see discussion in §9.4.2.4C below):

- (65) *dóʔ-n'án tih cet-[wid-ye]-píd-ih*
 child-PL.OBJ 3sg carry.on.back-[arrive-enter]-DIST-DECL
 ‘He always entered carrying (food) for the children.’ (txt)

[Manner-Position]-Activity/manner linked in temporal sequence:

- (66) *hid [nɔh-d'ak]-g'ɔç-ay-áh*
 3pl [fall-stick.against]-bite-INCH-DECL
 ‘They (jaguars) would fall on (the people) and bite them.’ (txt)

[Activity/manner-Activity/manner]-AUX (see below for discussion of auxiliary stems):

- (67) *tinñh mumŷy táh yɔmɔy-an [yaŋ-m'æc]-d'oʔ-yíʔ-ih*
 3sg.POSS arm tapir anus-DIR [suck.in-squeeze.tight]-take-TEL-DECL
 ‘Her arm had been swallowed up and stuck in the tapir’s anus.’ (txt)

In example (68), two nested compounds are linked together in temporal sequence:

- (68) [**way-d'ol?**]-[**nɔh-d'ǎk**] = d'əh, dĕh dadáp = d'əh
 [go.out-take]-[fall-stick.against]= PL water roach=PL
 'The ones who had taken flight and hit against (the sky), the water-roaches...' (txt)

In a few cases, however, roots or root combinations appear to follow the *opposite* order from that of the temporal sequence of the events. This resembles the “inverse relationship” of roots in Barasana and Tatuyo compounds, as described by Gómez-Imbert (1988: 103). In Hup, these are all compounds whose roots have a relationship based on purpose, as we see in (69–71). All the examples of this ‘inverse’ ordering type encountered have a position or motion/path verb as the final root.

- (69) *hid* [**yam**]-[**cak-g'et**]-ʔĕ-h
 3pl dance/sing-[raise.up-stand]-PERF-DECL
 'They used to stand up in order to sing/dance.' (txt)
- (70) *ʔayŭp = ʔih* [**key**]-[**wɔn-hám**]-ay-áh
 one=MSC see-[follow-go]-INCH-DECL
 'A man followed after in order to see (where the spirit went).' (txt)
- (71) *wǎh = n'án (...)* *d'ol?*-[**hup-hipāh**]-[**næn**]-ní-h
 River.Indian=PL.OBJ take-[RFLX-know]-[come]-INFR2-DECL
 'He made the River Indians come in order to be educated.'
 (txt; repeated from 23 above)

These examples are probably not as exceptional as they might appear at first glance. First, since the compounded meaning is one of purpose, and the compound itself is neutral as to whether or not the intended activity was actually carried out, the final verb is actually more grounded in real time and real events, hence in a sense more ‘stable’. This explanation also accounts for the compound-final placement of certain causative stems (resulting in an effect-cause stem ordering), as discussed in §9.4.1.2B above. Moreover, the order of stems in compounds like (69–71) corresponds to the formal conventions based on the semantic classes above, in which position and motion/path information tends to occur last.

A few other exceptional cases of root ordering exist in my corpus, although these are not common. They illustrate that – for certain compounds – the order

of stems may be relatively flexible, and probably depends largely on the speaker's construal of the event, particularly which aspect he/she considers more salient or more continuous (compare English 'they cried going out' and 'they went out crying'). In (72) (from the Origin Story), for example, the simultaneous events of exiting-while-seated and crying are presented in an order opposite to that which their semantic classes would predict – the activity/manner verb 'cry' would be expected to come first, but is compound-final. Consultants judge the more expected variants *ʔɔt-way-pæm-* (cry-go.out-sit) and *ʔɔt-pæm-way-* (cry-sit-go.out) to be grammatically and semantically comparable; other combinations are considered to be more questionable.

- (72) *hid way-pæm-ʔɔt-ɔp = mah j'áh yúw-úh*
 3pl go.out-seated-cry-DEP=REP DST.CNTR that-DECL
 'They went out seated, crying.' (txt)

9.4.2.4. Auxiliary and 'vector' roots: aspect, mode, and Aktionsart in compounds

The most highly integrated type of verbal compound involves a root whose main function is to modify another root (or multiple roots within a compound), thereby usually providing aspect, Aktionsart, or modal information. The prototypical position of these modifying roots is compound-final (although the resulting compound may itself be nested inside a larger, less-integrated compound). These compounds have much in common with the 'ambient' serial constructions that Aikhenvald (2003a: 424) describes for Tariana, in which one verb serves as a modifier to the other.

The verb roots in this class range from those that are much like normal verbs in compounds to those that resemble real auxiliaries. This corresponds to a cline of grammaticalization (viewed from a synchronic perspective), ranging from roots that are ordinary main verbs, to those that have an auxiliary-like function when they appear in compound-final position but retain their original semantics, to those roots that are semantically quite clearly only auxiliaries – that is, their function in compound-final position is semantically distinct from their function as main verbs (i.e., verbs that appear in non-compounded form), and in a few cases they cannot act as a main verb at all. While the most grammaticalized examples represent a fairly small class, these auxiliary-like verbs cannot be said to form a closed group; especially since the compound-final position itself may signal an auxiliary interpretation, there is no strict division between those compound-final forms that are no more than normal verb roots, and those that perform some modifying function. For example, a compound such as *ʔid-muhũʔ-*

(speak-play; see example 77 below) has the semi-idiomatic meaning ‘joke’, but there may be little difference pragmatically between interpreting this as ‘a unitary event of speaking and playing’, or as ‘playing through speaking’.

Because these compound-internal verb roots can be understood to correspond to a continuum or cline of grammaticalization between verb and auxiliary, many can be best characterized as ‘vector verbs’ (Hook 1991, cf. Hopper and Traugott 1993: 112–114) – i.e., verbs that are at an intermediate point of grammaticalization between main verb and auxiliary (itself part of a larger cline between main verb and affix). Like the Hindi compounds described by Hook (1991), Hup compounds of this type contain a verbal complex of a ‘main verb’ followed by a ‘vector’. These vector verbs impart aspectual, modal, or other information to the clause, and belong to a large, diverse class, with a low degree of specialization. In Hup, vector verbs appear to represent one stage in the grammaticalization process from verb root to true auxiliary to Inner Suffix or other formative.

The following subsections provide an illustration of verb roots in compounds that act as modifiers, and their variation as more and less similar to their function as independent main verbs.

A. Roots within compounds that are more like independent main verbs

Roots which perform an auxiliary-like function when compound-final but retain their original verbal semantic identity include *-tuk-* ‘want to do V’, *-hipãh-* ‘know how to V’, *hũ?* ‘finish, use up (something) through doing V’, *hũtũy-* ‘do V industriously’, and *muhũ?* ‘play at/through V’:

(73) *wæd-hũ?-yí?-íy*

eat-finish-TEL-DYNM

‘(He’s) eaten (it) all up.’ (cv)

(74) *yít=mah tih [yo-d’o?]-hipãh-nih*

thus=REP 3sg [hang.from.above-take]-know-NEG

g’õh-g’et-g’ó?-op = b’ay

be-stand-go.about-DEP=AGAIN

‘So he was standing around, not knowing how to carry (the fish).’ (txt)

(75) *?ín-ăn [bi?-hitam]-tuk-yó?...*

1pl-OBJ work-cooperate-want-SEQ

‘Having wanted to help us...’ (txt)

(76) *ʔāh ʔəg-hūtūy-nih káh, ʔináč !*
 1sg drink-be.industrious.NEG DISJ mother's.sister
 'But I don't have any stomach for drinking, Aunt!' (txt)

(77) *ʔid-muhǔʔ-úy yúw-úh !*
 speak-play-DYNM that.ITG-DECL
 'He's joking!' (cv)

B. Roots within compounds that are less like independent verbs

Some of the most common of the more grammaticalized auxiliary or vector verbs are presented here. These forms tend to be semantically distinct from their variants as independent verbs.

-d'oʔ- Auxiliary meaning: 'do V in an abrupt or goal-oriented way'. Free verb: 'take' (compare the non-literal use of 'take' in many of the English translations of these compounds). Note that this verb also functions as a causative element (as the first element in the compound; see §9.4.1.2 above).

(78) *g'et-d'oʔ-nih = hō ʔāh-áh*
 stand-take-NEG=NONVIS 1sg-DECL
 'I can't stand up.' (txt)

(79) *doy-d'oʔ !*
 bend.down-take-IMP
 'Duck!'; 'Take a duck!' (cv)

(80) *ʔān hid g'et-hipāh-d'oʔ-ay-áh*
 1sg.OBJ 3pl stand(CAUSATIVE)-know-take-INCH-DECL
 'They reminded me.' (txt)

(81) *hǎy-ǎn key-d'oʔ-ów-ay ʔāh-āw-áh*
 um-OBJ see-take-FLR-INCH 1sg-FLR-DECL
 'I've seen what-his-name.' (caught a glimpse of illicit behavior). (cv)

- (82) *yúp g'əç-j'ap-d'oʔ-yóʔ, tinñh yɔmǔy máh*
 that bite-snap-take-SEQ 3sg.POSS anus near

tih wók-ay-áh

3sg rub-INCH-DECL

'Having bitten off a piece of it (hot pepper) she rubbed it around (the tapir's) anus.' (txt)

-key- Auxiliary: 'experience/try to do V'. Free verb: 'see' (cf. English 'see if you can V' = 'try to V').

- (83) *biʔ-key-kǎm !*

work-see-IMP2

'Try to do it!' (cv)

- (84) *g'āʔ-kéy-éy*

hang.suspended-see-DYNM

'Trying out a new hammock' (el)

- (85) *d'oʔ-hōh-key-kǎm = b'ay !*

take-make.sound-see-IMP2=AGAIN

'Play it back so I can "see" how it sounds.' (txt)

- (86) *ʔám cóʔ-óy ʔəg-key-kǎm !*

2sg LOC-DYNM drink-see-IMP2

'You try some (drink)!' (cv)

-tu- Auxiliary: 'want; proximative (imminent future)'. This is a bound, phonologically reduced variant of *tuk-* 'want', which itself can also act as a auxiliary-type root (see example 75 above). In morphophonological contexts where *-tu-* is possible (i.e., a vowel-initial suffix directly follows), a speaker's choice of unreduced *-tuk-* results in a more emphatic and insistent expression of desire, whereas *-tu-* expresses more neutral desire (compare 89a and b). Both *-tuk-* and *-tu-* are also used to express imminent future regardless of volition (example 90; see also §13.2). Note that the grammaticalization of volition to future is cross-linguistically common (e.g., English 'will').

- (87) *yi-nih-yóʔ = mah hǔp wæd-tú-up g'ōh-ōy = nih*

that-be.like-SEQ=REP fish eat-want-DEP be-DYNM=EMPH.CO

'So, being in a situation of wanting to eat fish...' (txt)

(88) *hít ?āh [ham-g'o?]-tú-t... ham-g'ó?-op*
 where 1sg go-go.about-want-OBL go-go.about-DEP
 'Wherever I wanted to go... I'd go there.' (txt)

(89) a) *cúg ?āh wi?-túk-úy=hō*
 fiddle 1sg hear-want-DYNM=NONVIS
 'I want to hear the fiddle!' (emphatic) (cv)

b) *cúg ?āh wi?-tú-y=hō*
 fiddle 1sg hear-want-DYNM=NONVIS
 'I'd like to hear the fiddle.' (non-emphatic) (cv)

(90) *tih g'et-g'o?-tú-ay*
 she stand-go.about-want-INCH
 'She's almost walking.' (a toddler) (ru)

-tubud- Auxiliary: 'completely; intensification' (see also §15.1.3.1). In independent form, this root can be used to mean 'die, lose consciousness', but this use is rare and is not attested in my text corpus.

(91) *cet-ham-tubud-yí?-íy, hup=?ǎy-ǎn*
 carry.on.back-go-INTS3-TEL-DYNM person=FEM-OBJ
 '(He) carried the girl a long way off!' (txt)

(92) *?ǎn mæy-tubud-pó-y páh*
 1sg.OBJ owe-INTS3-EMPH1-DYNM PRX.CNTR

yú-wa-áh, céc !
 that.ITG-old.woman-DECL INTERJ
 'That old girl really owes me, dang it!' (txt)

-ni- Auxiliary: indicates that the subject has entered a state in which the event is occurring or has relevance; often serves to set the stage for a description of other concurrent events. Free verb: 'be'. The verb *ni-* is used in a number of non-canonical ways in Hup (see §8.4).

- (93) *tih-ăn yǒʔ=d'əh tuk-ní-ay-áh*
3sg-OBJ wasp=PL sting-be-INCH-DECL

...núp *tih tǒʔəh-ham-ní-ay-áh*

... here 3sg run-go-be-INCH-DECL

'The wasps are stinging him... here he's running away.' (looking at a picture) (txt)

- (94) *tiyǐʔ=b'ay key-d'ob-g'et-ní-ay-áh*
man=AGAIN see-descend.to.river-stand-be-INCH-DECL

'There was a man standing on the bank looking down at her.' (txt)

- (95) *tih=tǎhʔín nǐh hupáh=mah tih*
3sg=child.mother POSS back=REP 3sg

tawak-g'ǎʔ-pog-ní-ay-áh

be.stiff-hang.suspended-EMPH1-be-INCH-DECL

'He was stuck stiffly against his wife's back.' (txt)

- (96) *tedé=d'əh-ət tih biʔ-ni-cǐp-ǐh*
three=PL-OBL 3sg work-be-COMPL-DECL
'He's worked with three of them.' (sp)

-g'et- Auxiliary: 'stay'. Free verb: 'stand'.

- (97) *j'ǎp mi-ít pæ-g'ét-ep=b'ay*
other river-OBL go.upstream-stand-DEP=AGAIN
'They went and stayed up another river.' (txt)

- (98) *hǒh mǐʔ=yiʔ d'ak-g'oʔ-key-yóʔ=mah*
canoe UNDER=TEL stick.against-go.about-see-SEQ=REP

tih cak-wob-g'ét-éh

3sg climb-rest.on-stand-DECL

'After being under the canoe for a while, he climbed in again (to stay)' (txt)

- (99) *nænó* *tǎh = d'əh* *n'ikán* *d'ob-g'et-ní-ay-áh*
 Miriti.Tapuyo offspring=PL over.there go.to.river-stand-be-INCH-DECL
 'The Miriti-Tapuyo people went down (to river) and stayed' (txt)

-j'ap- Auxiliary: 'stop doing V'. Free verb: 'break/snap in two' (cf. English 'break off doing V'). Use of this verb as an auxiliary is relatively infrequent; it is much more common as a free verb root.

- (100) *nupm'ə* *ʔāh* *ʔəg-j'ap-yíʔ-íy*
 at.this.time 1sg drink-snap-TEL-DYNM
 'I quit drinking at about this time (of day).' (cv)

- (101) *hi-miʔ-g'ět* *ʔin* *biʔ-j'ap-yíʔ-ih*
 FACT-UNDER-stand 1pl work-snap-TEL-DECL
 'We'll stop working at noon.' (ru)

C. Compound-initial auxiliary-type forms

There are at least two cases of auxiliary-like forms that occur compound-initially, rather than compound-finally. Unlike the compound-final forms listed above, which tend to develop into Inner Suffixes or clitics with grammatical functions, these pre-forms are becoming lexicalized together with the verbs with which they regularly occur to form a new set of fused lexical items.

The verb *kəd-* can be used as an independent verb meaning 'pass (by)', as well as a compound-final auxiliary-type form acting as an Elative marker (see §15.1.3.3), but when it precedes motion/path verbs in compounds it indicates speed. Verb compounds with *kəd-* tend to be phonologically reduced, but most speakers are able to separate them in slow speech. Phonological processes involve the reduction of the consonant cluster and the harmonization of the initial vowel with the following vowel. Such forms include: *kəd-ham-* [karam] 'go quickly'; *kəd-d'ob-* [kod'ob^m] 'go down to water quickly'; (*d'oʔ-*)*kəd-næn-* [kænæn] '(bring) come quickly'; *kəd-way-* [karay] 'go out quickly'; *kəd-hi-* [kiri] 'descend quickly'; *kəd-cak-* [kaʃak] 'ascend quickly'; and *kəd-wag* [kawag^m] 'dawn' from the 'verby' noun 'day' (cf. §4.1.3).

The verb *wid-* likewise precedes motion/path verbs in compounds, and contributes the meaning 'arrive'. As an independent verb, its semantics are quite distinct: 'fish-spawn', i.e., the arrival and passing of large numbers of fish during their upriver journey. Addition of the Factitive prefix *hi-* gives rise to a distinct main verb, the form *hi-wid-* 'arrive (to where someone is), meet (someone)'. Despite their more opaque semantics, these forms are less phonologically

reduced than the compounds with *kəd-*; consonant clusters are simplified, but vowel quality varies between V and /i/. These compounds include: *wid-ham-* [wɪram] ‘arrive (going)’ (from travelers’ point of view); *wid-næn-* [wɪræn] ‘arrive (coming)’ (from residents’ point of view); *wid-ye-* [wɪdye] ‘arrive inside’ (also ‘arrive in village from a short foray’); *wid-d’ob-* [wɪd’ob^m] ‘arrive down at river’; *wid-cɔp-* [wɪʃɔp] ‘arrive up from river’; *wid-hi-* [wɪri] ‘arrive downstream’, *wid-pæ-* [wɪdpæ] ‘arrive upstream’.

In the context of ‘nested’ compounds, the ability of *kəd* to be repeated illustrates the distinct identity of the relexicalized, compound-internal form from its function as a main verb:

- (102) *tih hup-kəd-[kədhi]-yiʔ-ní-p = b’ay*
 3sg RFLX-pass-pass.descend-TEL-INFR2-DEP=AGAIN
 ‘She turned around (lit. REFLEXIVE-pass) and went back down quickly.’
 (txt)

9.4.3. Maximal integration: stems and formatives

As discussed in §3.4.1, Hup has a class of formatives, the Inner Suffixes, which occur in exactly the same position in the verb word as do compound-final verb stems (whether main verbs or auxiliary/vector stems) – that is, following the other verb stems in the word, but preceding the Boundary Suffix and peripheral formatives. An example of an Inner Suffix is the Venitive marker *-ʔay-* (cf. §12.7):

- (103) *b’ʒt-an ham-ʔáy-áy ʔám ?*
 roça-DIR go-VENT-DYNM 2sg
 ‘Have you just returned from the roça?’ (cv)

In addition, Hup’s several ‘fluid’ formatives are able to occur in either peripheral or Inner Suffix position, as discussed in §3.5. Many of these forms are formally identical to – although semantically distinct from – verb stems. This flexibility between peripheral and Inner Suffix position is illustrated by the Frustrative marker *yǎh* (cf. §14.4) in examples (104a–b); the same form also occurs as the verb stem ‘request, order, compel’ in (104c):

- (104) a) *núw-ǎn ʔǎh túk-úy yǎ́h*
 this-OBJ 1sg want-DYNM FRUST
 ‘I’d like this one (but I don’t expect to get it).’ (el)

- b) *núw-ǎn ʔǎh tuk-yǎ́h-ǎ́h*
 this-OBJ 1sg want-FRUST-DECL
 ‘I’d like this one (but I don’t expect to get it).’ (cv)
- c) *deh cǎy-ǎn tih hop-yǎ́h-ǎ́h*
 water beetle-OBJ 3sg immerse-request-DECL
 ‘He sent the water-beetle down into the water.’ (txt)

Clearly, these Inner Suffix forms resemble verb roots within compounds – both by virtue of their place within the verb word, and of the fact that a number of formatives are formally identical, or near-identical, to verb roots. As discussed in detail in §3.7, these formal overlaps between roots and formatives are indicative of a grammaticalization cline in Hup: verb root > vector/auxiliary stem > Inner Suffix > (peripheral formative). Aikhenvald (2002a: 127) observes that the grammaticalization of a compounded verb is a typical process among Eastern Tukanoan languages as well, so its presence in Hup may be part of a larger areal phenomenon.

Like the distinction between verb root and auxiliary, that between auxiliary and Inner Suffix is not black and white. Essentially, most Inner Suffixes can be understood as highly grammaticalized auxiliaries, which in many cases have no counterparts that can act as main or independent verbs – or if they do, the two are fully distinct semantically. Many of these forms have undergone phonological reduction of their final consonant, although this is limited to the context of a following vowel-initial Boundary Suffix. Many morphemes in Hup appear to be in a transitional stage between verb root and formative. The variants *tuk-* / *-tu-* ‘want, imminent future (proximative)’, listed with the auxiliaries in §9.4.2.4B above, are an example of such a borderline case. Another example is the Completive aspect marker *-cǐp-* / *-cǐw-* (cf. §12.5), as in examples (105–106). The form *cǐp-* also occurs as a verb stem, but in an extremely limited context (which also has to do with completing), referring to the final stage of making a basket. Despite their distinct semantics, both forms probably derive from a common verb stem. The grammaticalization process may have involved both semantic generalization in the case of the inflectional affix and specification in the case of the independent stem.

- (105) *b’öy=d’əh tih=pög=d’əh wæd-d’oʔ-næn-cǐw-ǐy*
 traيرا=PL 3sg=big=PL eat-take-come-COMPL-DYNM
 ‘The big traيرا have already come to eat (take the bait).’ (txt)

- (106) *yinih-yó?*, *ʔəg-hi-cĩp-yó?* *ní-íy,*
 thus-SEQ drink-FACT-COMPL-SEQ be-DYNM

pəʔ-hi-cĩp-yó? *ní-íy...*
 present-FACT-COMPL-SEQ be-DYNM
 ‘So, having finished drinking, having finished presenting the ritual gift...’ (txt)

Just as the distinction between auxiliary and Inner Suffix is blurred, so is that between Inner Suffix and peripheral formative, due to the ability of fluid morphemes to appear in either slot. Those forms that are formally identical to a main verb stem blur the distinction even further, as illustrated by example (104) above. In addition to Frustrative *yǎh*, fluid formatives that resemble existing verb stems are the Repetitive marker *b’ay* ‘again’ (verb stem ‘return’), the Nonvisual evidential *hǎ(h)* (verb stem ‘make noise’), and the Inferred evidential *cud* (verb stem ‘be inside’; see discussion in §3.5–3.7 and the sections devoted to these morphemes). While usually quite distinct semantically from their verbal realizations, some of these forms can occasionally be semantically ambiguous when they appear in Inner Suffix position. For example, the Nonvisual evidential *hǎ* in example (107) lacks the final *h* of the verb stem *hǎh* ‘make noise’, but both an evidential and a verbal interpretation are semantically/pragmatically appropriate:

- (107) *himǔn = hǎb* *d’oʔ-d’əh-ʔáy* *hám,*
 paxiuba.tree=hollow take-send-VENT go.IMP

yúp *nǎh-kəd-hi-hǎ-ǎn*
 that.ITG fall-pass-descend-Noise-OBJ
 ‘Go fetch a paxiuba-tree-hollow, that one that I just heard fall (OR: that just fell, making noise).’ (txt)

Despite such fuzzy boundaries, these fluid morphemes are clearly far diverged from verbhood. Many, such as the Nonvisual and Inferred evidentials, can occur with non-verbal hosts, and most of these formatives can co-occur with their verbal look-alikes within the same verbal construction:

- (108) *hid* *key-b’áy-b’ay-áh*
 3pl see-return-AGAIN-DECL
 ‘They go back again to see.’ (txt)

- (109) *ʔin-ǎn bʔiyiʔ tih dʔob-yǎh-cud-yǎh-ǎh*
 1pl-OBJ only 3sg descend.to.river-order-INFR-FRUST-DECL
 ‘He told only us to come down to the river (in vain).’ (txt)

9.5. Restrictions on compounding

Durie (1997: 326–329) observes that in serializing languages, it is not always obvious (to the non-native speaker) when and why an event must be coded as two distinct predicates; one commonly encounters “examples of ungrammatical sentences where the writer is at a loss for explanation” (Durie 1997: 326). However, he notes, the explanation is usually simple: ungrammatical sentences are “less plausible event-types” than the grammatical cases. Moreover, what is considered a plausible event-type may vary with the language and the culture of its speakers.

Ungrammatical verb compounds in Hup can likewise usually be explained as representing less plausible event types. However, the grammaticality of the compound (and the exact type of event encoded) also has much to do with the semantic category of the roots (especially the final root), as discussed in §9.4.2.1 above. For example, in compounds where the first root is a manner/activity verb, the compound is much more likely to be grammatical if the second root is of the closed motion/path or position class, and ungrammatical if the second root is another manner/activity verb, even if the difference in meaning between the roots appears to be negligible. Thus to describe children shrieking while bathing, one can form a compound with *pĩk-* ‘shriek’ and the motion/path verb *tuʔ-* ‘go into water’, but one cannot combine these with the manner/activity verb *jʔm-* ‘bathe’, as we see in examples (110–111).

- (110) *dóʔ = dʔəh pĩk-túʔ-úy,* *jʔm = dʔəh*
 child=PL shriek-go.into.water-DYNM bathe=PL
 ‘The children are shrieking in the water while bathing.’ (el)

- (111) **pĩk-jʔm-ǎy*
 shriek-bathe-DYNM

Similarly, both *jʔm-* ‘bathe’ and *pĩk-* ‘shriek’ can combine with the motion/path verb *ham-* ‘go’, but the three cannot co-occur to form a compound meaning ‘shriek while swimming’. Such information must be conveyed via an adverbial construction. The possibilities are illustrated in example (112).

- (112) a) **j'om-hám-ǎy**
 bathe-go-DYNM
 'swimming'
- b) **pĩk-hám-ǎy**
 shriek-go-DYNM
 'going along shrieking'
- c) ***pĩk-j'om-hám-ǎy**
 shriek-bathe-go-DYNM
- d) **pĩk-ĩp = yĩ?** **j'om-hám-ǎy**
 shriek-DEP=TEL bathe-go-DYNM
 'Shrieking while swimming' (el)

Likewise, *ʔey-yɔhɔy-* (call-look.for) is grammatical (see example 42 above), since calling and looking for someone/something is easily conceived as a unitary event, but 'call' and 'run' can only combine in an adverbial clause, as in example (113).

- (113) a) **ʔey-ep = yĩ?** **ʔǎh** **tɔʔɔh-ɔy**
 call-DEP=TEL 1sg run-DYNM
 'I'm calling while running.' (el)
- b) ***ʔǎh ʔey-tɔʔɔh-ɔy**
 1sg call-run-DYNM

Compounded forms are likewise ungrammatical when roots have different subjects and there is no causation involved, as in example (114).

- (114) a) **tĩh way-yĩʔ-mĩ?**, **ʔǎh yú-té-h**
 3sg go.out-TEL-UNDER 1sg wait-FUT-DECL
 'I'll wait for him to go out.' (el)
- b) **ʔǎh tĩh-ǎn way-yu-té-h**
 1sg 3sg-OBJ go.out-wait-FUT-DECL
 'I'll go out to wait for him.' (el)

- c) *ʔāh tih-ǎn **yu-way-té-h**
 1sg 3sg-OBJ wait-go.out-FUT-DECL
 Intended meaning: ‘I’ll wait for him to go out.’

9.6. Noun incorporation

Noun incorporation, here defined as the combination of a noun stem with a verb stem “to yield a more specific, derived verb stem” (Mithun 1986: 32), is not widely productive in Hup. However, it does appear to exist in limited form.

First, there are a few frozen expressions that combine both noun and verb roots and are on their way to becoming lexicalized as single words. These include *hũ-mæh-* (game.animal-kill) ‘hunt’, and *cĩh-wiʔ-* (scent-hear-) ‘smell’. In the latter example, the lexicalization of the noun-verb compound into a monomorphemic verb is illustrated by phonological reduction: it is usually pronounced *cĩwĩʔ-* (with vowel harmony and nasal spreading), especially in the Tat Deh dialect region. Others are idiomatic and more fully lexicalized, such as *hɔ-wæd-* (apparently ‘liver-eat-’) ‘be thirsty’, and the (zero-nominalized) epithet of the mythical snake character *ʔin-wæd* (mother-eat[NMZ]) ‘Mother-Eater’. There are also a few forms built on the kin term *báb* ‘sibling’, of which the most common is *bab’-ʔid-* (sibling-speak) ‘chat together’ (cf. §11.2 Historical note). Since objects usually precede verbs in Hup clauses, these incorporated forms may represent lexicalization of frequently co-occurring forms, rather than an actual morphosyntactic process of noun incorporation. However, they may also be a fossilized remnant of a strategy that was more productive in the past (see the ‘Comparative note’ below).

One of the only forms of noun incorporation that are in some sense productive in Hup appears to be limited to body part nouns, and is associated with the strategy of external possession in Hup (see §5.3.1). When the possessed body part is stated explicitly in the clause, it often (though not obligatorily) directly precedes the verb, and may be unaccented, suggesting that the noun + verb conjunct constitutes a single phonological word (example 115). In contrast, in Hup transitive clauses more generally the pronominal subject typically comes between the (accented) object and the verb – which is also possible in the context of external possession (example 116).

- (115) ʔám-ǎn ʔāh **yɔmɔy** yók tán-áh !
 2sg-OBJ 1sg anus stab FUT.CNTR-DYNM
 ‘I’ll stab you in the anus!’ (txt)

- (116) *mumuy cúm núť tih-an tih kit-d'əh-næn-ní-h !*
 arm beginning here 3sg-OBJ 3sg cut-send-come-INFR2-DECL
 'Right here on the upper arm he cut her!' (cv)

The incorporation of body part nouns also occurs in contexts that do not clearly involve possession, as in (117). However, since Hup's basic word order is AOV and unfocused pre-verbal arguments are often unaccented anyway, it is in most cases unclear whether a body part noun is really incorporated by the verb or simply precedes it, especially when the possessor is not explicitly stated (body part terms in Hup are in general neither obligatorily nor inalienably possessed; see §5.4.5). Example (118) is such an unclear case; the interpretation of (117) is likewise not entirely straightforward, but the fact that the subject pronoun precedes the (unaccented) object nominal, rather than appearing in the (more canonical) opposite order, suggests that this example does indeed involve incorporation.

- (117) *yí-n ʔh = mah yúp hid pãť way-píd-ih*
 that.ITG-NMZ=REP that.ITG 3pl hair go.out-DIST-DECL
 'Thus, it's said, hair came out on them.' (txt)

- (118) *nuh b'ɔʔ kit-b'ah-d'əh-hí-íy píd = mah, yiʔ-d'əh-əh !*
 head gourd cut-split-send-descend-DYNM DIST=REP that.ITG-PL-DECL
 'They split right through (his/the) skull!' (cv)

The incorporation of body-part nouns in Hup is reminiscent of the noun incorporation strategy found in Hup's sister Nadëb, which is limited to possessed entities generally, though not exclusively to body parts (Weir 1990; see 'Comparative note' below).

Another phenomenon in Hup that resembles noun incorporation is limited to the context of reciprocal/interactional or reflexive expressions that involve a ditransitive verb with an explicitly stated nominal object. In this environment, the Interactional marker *ʔũh* and the Reflexive *hup*, normally verbal prefixes, optionally detach from the verb and precede the object, while taking on the phonologically independent status of prepositional particles (example 119). That the object in this construction cannot inflect or be modified in any way, and that it lacks independent stress, suggest that it forms a grammatical and even phonological unit with the verb (see §11.1 and §11.2).

- (119) *hid ʔũh nam nɔʔ-ɔy*
 3sg INTRC poison give-DYNM
 'They give poison to each other.' (txt)

Locative postpositions also occasionally appear incorporated within the Hup verb word, although this is rare and not fully productive. There is only one example in my corpus of a postposition preceding the verb root (as do all cases of incorporated nouns in the language; example 120). A few other postpositions follow the root (§10.3.1). (Note that incorporation of postpositions is reported to be productive in Nadëb and Dâw; see below.)

- (120) *tinĩh mah-g'ět=d'əh*
 3sg.POSS near-stand=PL
 'The ones that go with him (work for him).' (boys on a river-merchant's boat) (cv)

Certain other constructions in Hup may resemble incorporation at first glance, but are better characterized as verb root compounding. These cases involve those roots that can occur as independent nouns (with the contrastive tone characteristic of Hup nouns), but can also receive inflection and act as verbs (which do not in general contrast for tone); an example is *wæd* 'food' and *wæd* 'eat' (see §3.1). These flexible roots are distinct from the nominal components of the forms in the examples above, which cannot inflect as verbs. An example of a flexible root's use in a compound is given in example (121). Here the root *wã?* – also a noun meaning 'vulture' – is used as a verb meaning 'make an infant sick by engaging in sexual relations too soon after its birth' (the diarrhea and vomiting of the sickness is presumably reminiscent of a vulture's defense mechanism of vomiting half-digested food). That this should be considered root compounding and not incorporation is supported by the ability of the root *wã?* to inflect and act as a predicate (*wã?-ăy*) in its own right.

- (121) *tĩh-dó?-ăn wã?-pay-yæt-yí?-íy...*
 3sg-child-OBJ make.vulture.sick-bad-lie-TEL-DYNM
 '(She) made the child 'vulture-sick' ... (txt)

Hup has one further strategy that can be considered an example of productive noun incorporation. It is strictly limited to verbal constructions involving the stem *ni-* 'be' – a non-canonical verb in a number of ways, as discussed in §8.4. In general, these constructions involve a nominal root which – unlike *wã?* and other flexible noun-verb roots – cannot receive inflection and act as a verbal predicate by itself; however, when followed by *ni-*, the combination produces a true verbal form.

These incorporating constructions are not fully productive, and in many cases have conventionalized, idiomatic meanings. In others, the verbal incorporating form has the meaning 'have N'. Examples from my corpus are *yãh-ni-*

(medicine-be) ‘give medicine’; *cǝh-ni-* (?-be)¹²¹ ‘dream’; *doʔ-ni-* (child-be) ‘be a child’, *tok-ni-* (belly-be) ‘be pregnant’ (used only with humans), and the following:

tǝh-ni- (offspring/son-be) ‘give birth; have a child’

- (122) *ʔám-ǎn ʔǎh tǝh-ní-íy, tǝh*
 2sg-OBJ 1sg offspring-be-DYNM son
 ‘You are my son, Son.’ (lit. ‘I son-have you’) (txt)

hɔm-ni- (sore-be) ‘have sores’

- (123) *ʔǎh hɔm-ni-pó-y = nih páh-áh, cǝc !*
 1sg sore-be-EMPH1-DYNM=EMPH.CO PRX.CNTR-DECLINTERJ
 ‘I really have some sores, dang it!’ (cv)

cum-ni- ‘begin’ (compare *tih = cúm* ‘the beginning, first part’)

- (124) *ʔin b’oy-cum-ni-yǎh-ǎh*
 1pl study-beginning-be-FRUST-DECL
 ‘We began studying (in vain).’ (txt)

hɔ-ni- ‘to think about something’ (*hɔ* ‘liver’)

- (125) *cǎ-wag ʔǎh hɔ-ní-íy, w’éh-éy = ʔǎy = mǎʔ j’ám...*
 other-day 1sg liver-be-DYNM far-DYNM=FEM=UNDER DST.CNTR
 ‘Sometimes I think sadly, “I’m a woman from far away”...’ (txt)

doʔ-d’əh-ni- (child-PL-be) ‘have children, be a parent’ (uses a plural incorporated noun regardless of the number of the referent)

- (126) *ʔíp ʔǎn doʔ-d’əh-ni-yóʔ*
 father 1sg.OBJ child-PL-be-SEQ
 ‘After father had me...’ (txt)

¹²¹ There is no verb *cǝh-* in Hup. There is also no noun meaning ‘a dream’. The form *cǝh* also appears in the directional *cǝh-cóʔ* (-LOC) ‘left-hand’ (side, direction), and the noun *cǝh* refers to the islands formed in the areas of flooded forest during the rainy season.

yɔh-ni- ‘have as in-laws’

- (127) *baʔtʰbʰ = nʰǎn ʔayǔp = ʔɪh yɔh-ní-ǐh*
 spirit=PL.OBJ one=MSC in.law-be-DYNM
 ‘A man had spirits for in-laws.’ (i.e., he had married a spirit woman) (txt)

babʰ-ni- ‘accompany, be accompanied by; be consanguinally related to’

- (128) *ʔapóncu-ǎn ʔǎh babʰ-ni-té-h*
 Alfonso-OBJ 1sg sibling-be-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’ll be accompanied by Alfonso.’ (cv)

kəd-ni- (bench-be) ‘be seated on a bench’

- (129) *núp ʔǎh kəd-ni-ye-pæm-ʔě-p = yíʔ*
 this 1sg bench-be-enter-sit-PERF-DEP=TEL
 ‘There on the bench where I’d sat when I entered...’ (txt)

hat-ni- (name-be) literally ‘having a name’; used in nominalized form to mean ‘an important person’

- (130) *hat-ní-ǐp = ʔǎy*
 name-be-DEP=FEM
 ‘An important woman’ (txt)

There is considerable evidence that these constructions involve the incorporation of a noun into a verbal construction, and that they form a distinct, probably closed class vis-à-vis the open, fully productive set of intransitive clauses of the type [noun *ni-*], which have the meaning ‘N exists’, ‘N is here’. First, the incorporated [noun + *ni-*] compounds form single phonological words: they take a verbal stress pattern (where stress falls on the final stem and/or inflectional affix), there is no pause phenomena dividing the noun from the verb, and the incorporated noun lacks distinctive tone (contrastive tone is characteristic of Hup nouns, but is not usually realized on Hup verbs; see §2.3.2.2). Second, the idiomatic meanings of some of these constructions supports their analysis as a set of compounds distinct from intransitive clauses; for example, *babʰ-ni-* (sibling-be) ‘be accompanied by; accompany’ may refer specifically to relatives, but need not; also compare *hɔ-ni-* (liver-be) ‘think about something’, etc.

In addition to these differences, incorporating forms are syntactically unlike intransitive clauses with *ni-*. For example, the resulting verbal construction takes a nominative pronoun, whereas non-incorporated nominal constructions can only take a possessive pronoun. This is illustrated in example (131) for *cəh-ni-* ‘dream’ and (132) for *wan ni-* ‘knife exists’:

- (131) a) *ʔāh cōh-ní-íy*
 1sg dream-be-DYNM
 ‘I dreamed.’ (cv)
- b) **nř cōh ní-íy*
 1sg.POSS dream?? be-DYNM

- (132) a) **ʔāh wǎn ní-íy*
 1sg knife be-DYNM
- b) *nř wǎn ní-íy*
 1sg.POSS knife be-DYNM
 ‘My knife exists / is here.’ (i.e., ‘I have a knife.’) (el)

However, some nouns can occur both in intransitive clauses with *ni-* and in incorporated constructions, as illustrated in example (133–134).

- (133) *ʔāh hɔm-ní-íy*
 1sg sore-be-DYNM
 ‘I have a sore/sores.’ (el)
- (134) *nř hóm ní-íy*
 1sg.POSS sore be-DYNM
 ‘My sore exists.’ (i.e., ‘I have a sore.’) (el)

Another syntactic indication of incorporation is the fact that non-incorporated *ni-* clauses are intransitive, whereas many incorporated constructions can take a direct object which is distinct from the incorporated noun. That the incorporated noun is itself not an ordinary direct object is evidenced by the fact that it *cannot* be marked for case, despite its number and animacy, whereas case-marking is obligatory for plural and human direct objects. Examples (135–136) show plural, human incorporated nouns that are unmarked for case, with and without (case-marked) direct objects in the clause; example (137) shows an incorporated form used as a nominalized, headless relative clause, in which the object-marking occurs on the entire nominalized verb form but not on the incorporated noun.

- (135) *kaʔǎp tǎʔǎy = d’əh tǎh-ní-íh*
 two woman=PL child-be-DECL
 ‘Two women gave birth / had children.’ (el)

(136) *kaʔəp = n'ǎn tih tǎh-ní-íy*
 two=PL.OBJ 3sg child-be-DYNM
 'She had twins.' (el)

(137) *ʔǎh hɔm-ní = n'ǎn hi-kéy-éy*
 1sg sore-be=PL.OBJ FACT-see-DYNM
 'I take care of those with sores.' (el)

In contrast, examples (138–139) show non-incorporated direct objects with obligatory case marking.

(138) ... *ʔǎh nɔ-ǎh, ní tǎh = n'ǎn*
 1sg say-DECL 1sg.POSS child=PL.OBJ
 '...I said to my children.' (txt)

(139) *ní hɔm = n'ǎn ʔǎh hi-kéy-éy*
 1sg.POSS sore=PL.OBJ 1sg FACT-see-DYNM
 'I take care of my sores.' (el)

More evidence that the incorporated compound forms a single lexical item comes from one example – that of *doʔ-d'əh-ni-* 'have children, become a parent' – in which an incorporated noun is obligatorily marked for plural. This plural-marking is frozen into the compound construction and does not change with the pragmatics of the situation (i.e., it appears regardless of whether the entities in question are actually single or multiple, as in example (126) above and in (140). Note that the incorporated singular form has a completely different meaning, *doʔ-ni-* 'be a child' (example 141).

(140) *ʔǎh doʔ-d'əh-ní-íy*
 1sg child-PL-be-DYNM
 'I have children; I am a parent.' (even if only one child) (el)

(141) *ʔǎh doʔ-ní-íy*
 1sg child-be-DYNM
 'I am a child.' (el)

In addition, incorporating *ni-* constructions act as units in derivation and other verb-related processes. They appear in the middle of longer verb compounds, such as *b'oy-cum-ni-* (study-beginning-be-) 'begin to study' in example (124) above, and can take verbal valency-adjusting prefixes like any other verb:

(142) *hi-bab'-ni*

FACT-sibling-be

'four' (lit. 'caused to have a sibling/companion')

(143) *ʔũh-bab'-ni-d'oʔ-yíʔ-íy*

INTRC-sibling-be-take-TEL-DYNM

'Come to live with relatives (after having lived away)' (el)

Finally, still more evidence that the [noun + *ni*-] forms involve incorporation comes from negation strategies, which are different for predicate nominals and for verbal predicates (see Chapter 16). Nominals may be negated with the 'negative existence' particle *pǎ* ('is not present, does not exist'; example 144a), while verbal negation requires the suffix *-níh* on the verb (144b). Incorporating forms typically take verbal negation (example 145).

(144) a) *hǒp pǎ*

fish NEG:EX

'There are no fish; I have no fish.' (cv)

b) *hǒp kək-níh*

fish pull-NEG

'(He's) not fishing.' (el)

(145) *bab'-ni-níh j'áh ʔáh=ti?!*

sibling-be-NEG DST.CNTR 1sg=EMPH.TAG

'I have no one / no siblings to accompany me.' (txt)

As noted above, the productivity of incorporation with *ni*- appears to be limited; most incorporated forms are conventionalized and many have developed idiosyncratic meanings. However, there are one or two examples in my corpus where speakers use incorporating forms that are highly lexically specific and unusual, suggesting that the process may occasionally be used to produce new, non-conventionalized forms, as we see in example (146):

(146) *ní-íy = mah, pód'd'ah cóʔ, d'ub-ní = d'əh*

be-DYNM=REP upriver LOC tail-be=PL

'They exist, they say, upriver; those (people) who have tails.' (txt)

Comparative and historical note

The development of Hup's noun incorporation strategy with *ni-* was probably motivated in part by contact with Tukano. The verb *ni-* is almost certainly a loan form in Hup (see §8.4), and the *ni-* verbalizing construction closely resembles the Tukano use of a verbalizer *-ti* to make a noun into a verb meaning 'have N' (Ramirez 1997a: 353). For example, the Tukano noun *põ'ra* 'children' (generic suppletive plural) is verbalized with the *-ti* suffix to produce *põ'ra-ti* 'have children', just as Hup *dóʔ=d'əh* 'children' (generic regular plural) occurs in the compound *dóʔ-d'əh-ni-* 'have children' (140 above).

However, this construction in Hup can probably not be attributed wholly to Tukanoan influence. Hup's sister Nadëb has a phonologically similar verb *nɨng* that functions not unlike Hup *ni-*: it has the basic meaning 'exist' and appears in constructions which Weir (1990: 326) considers to involve incorporation:

(147) Nadëb:

subih txaah nɨng

Subih son exist

'Subih has a son.' (lit. 'Subih son-exists.')

[compare Hup example 122 above, *təh-ni-* 'have a son/child']

That such a similar construction exists in Nadëb may imply that the verbalization of nouns to form existential constructions is a wider areal phenomenon, and that Hup may have used incorporation for this purpose prior to its contact with Tukano; this must remain a question for future research.

Further comparison between Hup and its sister languages suggests that the marginal status of noun incorporation in Hup may be a relatively recent development. As noted above, the phenomenon is productive in Hup's sisters Dâw and Nadëb, whereas the Tukanoan and Arawak languages of the Upper Rio Negro region generally lack noun incorporation. In Nadëb (Weir 1990: 322), noun incorporation is limited to possessed nouns and postpositions; more than one nominal may be incorporated, and the incorporated entity is preposed to the verb. Incorporation in Dâw is similar, but includes both possessed and non-possessed nouns, as well as postpositions, and only one entity can be incorporated in a given verb (Martins 2004: 654–662). In Yuhup, which like Hup is involved in the Vaupés linguistic area, noun incorporation is described by Ospina (2002: 407–413) as essentially unproductive, occurring only in a relatively small set of what appear to be frozen lexical items.

While the incorporation-lacking Tukanoan and Arawak languages in the region may have provided the model for the marginalization of noun incorporation in Hup, it is possible that a word order shift was the catalyst. Basic word order is currently variable across the family: OSV in Nadëb, SVO in Dâw, and

SOV in Hup and Yuhup (although all are relatively flexible). This variability, and the fact that Hup/Yuhup word order is identical to that of the Tukanoan and Arawak languages of the region, together might suggest that Hup (and Yuhup) have undergone a word order shift that brought them closer to the areal template (perhaps via a markedness shift enabled by the relatively free word order that still exists among the Nadahup languages). If Hup did change its basic word order to adopt an OV pattern, then this could have easily allowed incorporated objects to be reanalyzed as free constituents. However, the fact that other features of Hup are on the whole typologically consistent with OV word order (e.g., Hup's ordering of Noun and Relative clause, its strong preference for postpositions, etc.), whereas Dâw and Nadëb are less internally consistent, casts doubt on this scenario; perhaps it was Hup's sister languages, and not Hup, that underwent a shift in basic word order at some point in the past.

Chapter 10

Adjectives and adverbial expressions

This chapter addresses those parts of speech that are functionally and/or formally related to the verb. These are the adjectives, which form a small, closed class of their own, and the adverbial expressions, which are not a distinct word class in Hup, but are derived from other parts of speech and function as modifiers of the verb phrase. Because Hup's adjectives and adverbials are best understood in their relation to the verb, and – in the case of the adjectives – they act much like verb roots for morphosyntactic purposes and take many essentially verbal markers of aspect, mode, and valency (which are discussed in the following chapters), they are treated at this point in the grammar.

In addition to the more simple adverbials, Hup's strategies for expressing comparison – which typically use an adverbial phrase to present the standard of comparison – are discussed in this chapter. Finally, locative postpositions, which combine with nouns to form adverbial phrases (or in some cases stand alone as spatial adverbs) are treated in the last section.

10.1. Adjectives

The class of adjectives is distinct from the classes of nouns and verbs in Hup (see §3.1.3). Adjectives' most crucial defining characteristics are the following: as predicates, they pattern much like verbs in their ability to take most verbal inflection, but unlike verbs they appear regularly in predicative position without a Boundary Suffix. As modifiers of nouns, adjectives are distinct from nominal modifiers in compounds in that they follow the head noun (N[head] + Adj[mod]), whereas nominal modifiers precede the head noun (N[mod] + N[head]).

Adjectives in Hup make up a closed class, while other adjectival meanings are expressed by verbs. Semantically, a large proportion of the Hup adjectives denote dimension, color, age, and value – the range of meanings that Dixon (1982) notes as cross-linguistically most likely to be included in the adjective class (cf. Schachter 1985: 14–15). The following list of forms comprises the majority of the adjective class:

<i>náw</i>	‘good, beautiful’
<i>húp</i>	‘new, beautiful’ ¹²²
<i>páy</i>	‘bad, ugly’
<i>póg</i>	‘big’
<i>w’ót</i>	‘long’
<i>w’ěh</i>	‘far, distant’
<i>g’ǎ?</i>	‘thick’
<i>dáb</i>	‘many’
<i>wán</i>	‘deep’
<i>cípmæh</i>	‘small’ ¹²³
<i>tǎh</i>	‘small’
<i>bǐg</i>	‘old (non-human)’ ¹²⁴
<i>títí?</i>	‘dirty’
<i>yíb</i>	‘slippery, slick’
<i>tab’á?</i>	‘hard, dense’
<i>píb</i>	‘strong, fast’
<i>póh</i>	‘high’
<i>tú</i>	‘low’
<i>yów</i>	‘straight’
<i>tút</i>	‘cold’
<i>m’ǎé</i>	‘cold (water)’
<i>g’ǐ</i>	‘hot’
<i>yiwík</i>	‘heavy’
<i>cǐg</i>	‘sharp’

¹²² Occurs more often in fused nominal form *tuhúp* (from *tih* = *húp*).

¹²³ This adjective is distinct from the others; it contains Diminutive *mæh*, and lacks the ability to take most verbal inflection. It also cannot take the bound nominal form *tih* =, and is accordingly does not occur as the head of a noun phrase (see also §6.6).

¹²⁴ The forms *wəhǎd* ‘old (man)’ and *wá* ‘old (woman)’ can be used as adjectives, but are also members of the noun class and are typically used as bound nouns (see §4.1.1).

Color terms:¹²⁵

- (*tih* =) *dó* ‘red, pink’ (also used for some yellow/orange things, particularly ripe fruits and flames)
 (*tih* =) *cój* ‘brilliant red’ (esp. face or body paint)
 (*tih* =) *tohó* ‘white’
 (*tih* =) *pǒpǒh* ‘blue, green’ (also used for yellow leaves)
 (*tih* =) *pohó* ‘yellow’
tih = *pǎy-j’ó* ‘yellow’ (lit. ‘thunder-flower’, a common, bright yellow flower)
 (*tih* =) *j’á* ‘black ; dark colors in general’
 (*tih* =) *tíh* ‘black, dark’

The behavior of adjectives appearing as modifiers in noun phrases has already been covered in detail in §6.6. The most important features of adjectival modifiers are the [N Adj] word order within the noun phrase, as mentioned above, and the fact that they are obligatorily bound to a preceding nominal (example 1). The adjective can itself head the noun phrase, but as such it must take a default preceding nominal, the bound 3sg pronoun *tih* = (example 2). Adjectival modifiers are an integral part of a noun phrase, and accordingly function (together with the head noun) as nominalizations.

- (1) *tih wɔn-hám-ay-áh, té tod pǒg*
 3sg follow-go-INCH-DECL until hollow.tree big

g’et-pó-ow-ít = mah

stand-EMPH1-FLR-OBL=REP

‘She went after (the spirit), to where a big hollow tree stood, they say.’

(txt)

- (2) *tih = pǒg nɔh-yí?-íy*
 3sg=big fall-TEL-DYNM
 ‘The big one fell.’ (el)

¹²⁵ The color terms typically appear in nominalized form with *tih* =₁ even as predicates, but this is not obligatory.

The remainder of this discussion focuses on defining the properties of the adjective as a predicate. These properties are essentially verbal, yet are distinct from those of verbs in a number of important ways. Note that the more general clause-level properties of adjectival predicates – particularly in comparison to nominal predicates – are not addressed here, but are covered in §17.3.3.2.

Predicate adjectives typically appear in ‘bare’ form, lacking the Boundary Suffix that is obligatory for members of the verb class, as in examples (3–4). In this respect, they are not unlike predicate nominals (see §17.3.3.1), which likewise appear without inflection, and do not usually require a copula.

- (3) *wowó = hin náw píđ, hehé = hin náw píđ*
 wowo.flute=also good DIST pan.flute=also good DIST
 ‘The *wowo* flute is also nice; the pan-flute is also nice.’ (txt)

- (4) *póg = mah tĩhíy tód-óh, w’ót = mah*
 big=REP snake hollow-DECL long=REP
 ‘The snake’s hollow log was big, long, it’s said.’ (txt)

Crucially, however, predicate adjectives (with the exception of *cípmæh* ‘small’; see footnote above) differ from nominals in that they can optionally take any Boundary Suffix, particularly those aspect-marking inflectional forms that are normally associated only with verbal predicates, as well as most other verbal formatives. In most cases, the use of verbal aspectual inflection (most often a Dynamic or Inchoative marker) with an adjective indicates a dynamic state, relating to change or impermanence (see also §12.2):

- (5) a) *yúp tegđ’uh póg*
 that.ITG tree big
 ‘That tree is big.’
- b) *yúp tegđ’uh póg-óy*
 that.ITG tree big-DYNM
 ‘That tree is getting bigger.’ (el)
- (6) a) *tiyĩ? náw*
 man good
 ‘The man is good/handsome.’

- b) *tiyĩ?* ***náw-ay***
 man good-INCH
 ‘The man is well/satisfied after eating.’ (el)

Also like verbs, adjectives must be negated via a clausal negation strategy, rather than a nominal negation strategy (see §16.1.4). Examples of this process include *yiwik-níh* ‘not heavy; light’, *dəb-níh* ‘not many; a few’, and the following:

- (7) ***g’i-níh*** = *hõ* *yúw-úh* !
 hot-NEG=NONVIS that-DECL
 ‘It’s not hot!’ (cv)

- (8) *ʔamñh* *pát* ***w’ət-níh***
 2sg.POSS hair long-NEG
 ‘Your hair is not long’ (el)

Moreover, adjectives can appear in verb compounds, as if they were just another verb root:

- (9) *nĩ* *mõy* *ʔãh* *hæp-naw-yĩ?*-*ay-áh*
 1sg.POSS house 1sg sweep-good-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘I swept my house well’ (txt)

Finally, predicate adjectives can co-occur in bare form, as in (10); when they co-occur as modifiers, on the other hand, they require the bound form *tíh* = (see §6.6).

- (10) ***toho náw hidnñh*** *hohõd-óh*
 white good 3sg.POSS clearing-DECL
 ‘It’s beautiful and white, their clearing.’ (because it is sand) (cv)

A final property of adjectives that distinguishes them from both nouns and verbs is their association with the Intensifier morpheme *muhún* / *mún* (dialectal variants; §15.1.2). This intensifier virtually never associates with nouns, and occurs with verbs only when these are negated by the clausal negator *-níh*; however, it is very common with adjectives in affirmative (as well as negative) utterances:

- (11) *títíʔ muhún yúw-úh !*
 dirty INTS2 that.ITG-DECL
 ‘It’s really dirty!’ (cv)

- (12) *cáp̃ yíʔ-ǎn = b’ay ʔam háy’-tǎǎn,*
 other man-OBJ=AGAIN 2sg mess.around-COND

yúp tih = páy muhún cáp-áh !
 that.ITG 3sg=bad INTS2 INTS1-DECL
 ‘If you (i.e., a woman) mess around with another man, that’s really really bad!’ (txt)

The Elative morpheme *-kəd* also occurs with verbs and adjectives, but in the latter case, [adjective + Elative *kəd*] form a compound adjectival unit, lacking a Boundary Suffix (see §10.2.2.2A below). Elative *-kəd* is always followed by a Boundary Suffix when it associates with verbs (i.e., it appears as part of the verbal compound).

While adjectives in Hup are best understood as comprising a closed class, there are a few cases in which uninflected verb stems follow nouns as modifiers. Although this is in general a diagnostic of adjectives as opposed to verbs or nouns, these uninflected verbal variants are not productive, but are frozen into specific lexicalized forms such as *kæn pú* ‘shibé’ (a drink of farinha and water). They are therefore not considered to be part of the adjective class. Another unusual case is *dɔʔkey* ‘correct’, a lexicalized adjectival form derived from the verb compound *dɔʔ-key-* (‘count-see’); this form is a (historically) derived adjective, but its etymological components are clearly members of the verb class.

10.2. Adverbs and adverbials

Adverbial expressions in Hup function as modifiers of the verb phrase, or in a few cases, of other adjectives (note that adjectives are more often modified by bound emphasis and intensifier morphemes; see §15.1–15.2). There is no distinct word class of adverbs; many adverbial expressions are simply adjectives used in an adverbial role, but nouns, verbs, and entire clauses can also function as modifiers of a verb phrase, as can ideophones (§15.7). This section focuses on simple adverbial expressions in Hup, as well as Hup’s strategies for expressing comparison – which generally rely on adverbials to indicate the standard of comparison. The variety of strategies that are used for deriving adverbial expressions from full clauses are discussed in §18.2.4.1 and §18.2.6.

Adverbial expressions in Hup are very frequently marked with the enclitic =*yíʔ*. This form is ubiquitous in the language, and has a number of functions which appear to be synchronically quite distinct – in addition to its role with adverbials, it appears as a verbal Telic suffix (§12.6), and as a marker of contrastive focus on nominal arguments (§7.1.2).¹²⁶ On adverbials, =*yíʔ* plays a marginally derivational role (extending to adverbial clauses; see §18.2.6.1). In some adverbial expressions, =*yíʔ* is obligatory and appears to have the primary function of marking the phrase as adverbial, especially where its syntactic identity and function might be otherwise in doubt because of its membership in another word class. It is also present in many frozen adverbial lexical items. However, it is not obligatory on adverbial expressions generally.

Many adverbials in Hup are adjectives that do ‘double duty’ as verbal modifiers; they are simply used as adverbs as is, and occur without any overt derivation such as the presence of the adverbial marker =*yíʔ*. The most common of these adjectival adverbs include *píb* ‘fast’ (compare adjective ‘strong, fast’), *náw* ‘well’ (adjective ‘good, beautiful’), *páy* ‘badly’ (adjective ‘bad, ugly, strange’), *dɔʔkɛy* ‘correctly’ (adjective ‘correct’), and *w’éh* ‘far’:

(13) *náw ʔãh ni-níh-íp*
good 1sg be-be.like-DEP
‘I do not live well’ (txt)

(14) *tih ʔɔg-əw-ay, náw cuʔ-yíʔ-iw-ay = mah-áh tih-íp*
3sg drink-FLR-INCH good grab-TEL-FLR-INCH=REP-FOC 3sg-DEP
‘When he drinks, he ‘takes’ well (i.e., he doesn’t shake)’ (cv)

(15) *yúw-up w’éh cíʔ-íy bíg j’ám-ãp*
that.ITG-DEP far urinate-DYNM HAB DST.CNTR-DEP
‘That one, (he) always urinates far away (from the house)’ (cv)

(16) *píb tih way-yíʔ-íy*
fast 3sg go.out-TEL-DYNM
‘He went out fast.’ (el)

While these forms do not in general require the adverbial form =*yíʔ* when used as adverbs, =*yíʔ* does appear to be necessary when the adverb directly follows the subject nominal, and distinguishes it from an adjectival modifier

¹²⁶ The historical and/or functional relationship (or even whether one actually exists) between these different manifestations of *yíʔ* is not yet understood.

within the noun phrase. The following examples can be compared with (16) above:

- (17) a) *tiyĩ? píb = yi?* *way-yĩ?-íy*
 man fast=TEL go.out-TEL-DYNM
 ‘The man went out fast.’

- b) [*tiyĩ? píb*] *way-yĩ?-íy*
 man fast/strong go.out-TEL-DYNM
 ‘The fast/strong man went out.’ (el)

In contrast to ‘fast’, ‘well’, ‘badly’, etc., many other adjectives normally take derivational =*yi?* in order to act as adverbs in any context; these include ‘big’ and ‘small’ (examples 18–20). This tendency of adjectives to appear as adverbs with or without overt derivational morphology is determined largely on a lexically specific basis.

- (18) *póg = yi?* *wá d !*
 big=TEL eat.IMP
 ‘Eat a lot!’ (commonly said upon invitation to share someone’s meal)
 (cv)

- (19) *cípmæh = yi?* *d’ó?*
 little=TEL take.IMP
 ‘Take just a little bit.’ (cv)

- (20) *tih = yāwám = ?á’y = b’ay* *cípmæh = yi?* *náw-áh*
 3sg=yng.sibling=FEM=AGAIN little=TEL good=DECL
 ‘His younger sister is only a little bit beautiful.’ (el)

In a negative predicate, most of these adjectival adverbials tend to occur inside the verb compound, realized simply as a component verb root in the compound (see §16.1.4):

- (21) a) *tih tɔʔɔh-píb-níh*
 3sg run-fast-NEG
 ‘He doesn’t run fast.’

- b) **píb tih tɔʔɔh-ɔy**
 fast 3sg run-DYNM
 ‘He runs fast.’ (el)

In addition to adverbials derived from adjectives, Hup has a range of other adverbial expressions. These include the locative postpositions, discussed in 10.3 below. These appear together with nouns to form adverbial phrases relating principally to location in space, and can in some cases act as adverbials in their own right (particularly the subset ending in *-ʔah*, an etymologically unidentifiable morph), or in combination with the adverbial marker *=yiʔ*:

- (22) **máh =yiʔ tih ní-ĩy**
 near=TEL 3sg be-DYNM
 ‘He’s close by.’ (cv)

Hup also has a number of time adverbials, which include *nutǎn* ‘today’, *j’ǎb* ‘(at) night’, *d’úʔ-ay* ‘(in the) afternoon’, *himiʔg’ět* ‘(at) midday’, *tán* ‘later (today)’, and *j’ám* ‘yesterday’. Other time adverbials are lexicalized or semi-lexicalized expressions that obligatorily involve *=yiʔ*, such as *núp-mǎh-yiʔ* (this-DIM-TEL) and *nutǎn-mǎh-yiʔ* (today-DIM-TEL) ‘right now’ (example 23), *j’ǎb-tǎ-yiʔ* (night-still-TEL) ‘early morning’ (lit. ‘still night’), *d’ǎw-yiʔ* ‘today’ (possibly from the stative verb *d’ǎw-* ‘be new’), *j’ám-yiʔ* (yesterday/DST.CNTR-TEL) ‘a long time ago’, and *páh-yiʔ* (PRX.CNTR-TEL) ‘a short time ago’ (example 24).

- (23) **nutǎn = mǎh = yiʔ ʔǎh wiʔ-tuk-hǔh-yǎh-ǎh !**
 today=DIM=TEL 1sg hear-want-NONVIS-FRUST-DECL
 ‘Right this minute I’d like to listen to it!’ (txt)

- (24) **páh-yiʔ y’ǎt-pog-ʔě-y páh yúw-úh**
 PRX.CNTR-TEL leave-EMPH1-PERF-DYNM PRX.CNTR that-DECL
 ‘Just recently he left it.’

The form *=yiʔ* is obligatorily present in a number of other frozen adverbial expressions in Hup, some of which (like *páh-yiʔ* above) involve morphemes which exist elsewhere only as grammatical formatives. For example, *=yiʔ* is almost certainly etymologically present in the frozen quantifier forms *ʔǎpyiʔ* ‘all’ (compare quantifier *ʔǎp*), *b’íyiʔ* ‘all, only’ (**ʔb’í*) (see §6.5.3), and the locative postposition *yǔhyiʔ* (*ʔʔyǔh* ‘affine’) ‘intersecting and on top’.

Adverbials formed from verbs are relatively common in Hup. These are created according to a variety of strategies, many of which typically involve entire

predicates or clauses (see §18.2.4.1 and §18.2.6). However, a single verb or compound verb can also form an adverbial. In a very few cases, this may be no more than an uninflected verb root:

- (25) *ʔan-túk-d'ǎk* *ʔāh* *g'ǎʔ-g'óʔ-óh*
 make.love-want-stick.against 1sg be.suspended-go.about-DECL
 'Wanting to make love, lying up against (her), I'm always like this (in
 hammock).' (cv)

Also relatively rarely, adverbials formed from verbs can involve an uninflected stem which is marked as non-predicative by Adverbial =*yíʔ*.¹²⁷

- (26) *yúp* *baʔtīb'* *g'ǔh-pog-ʔé-w-ǎn* *hid* *wæd = yíʔ*
 that spirit be-EMPH1-PERF-FLR-OBJ 3pl eat=TEL

kədhám-ǎy = mah

pass.go-DYNM=REP

'They came quickly to eat the one who really was an evil spirit.' (txt)

- (27) *tih-ǎn* *tih* *cet-b'uy-yæt = yíʔ* *kədham-ní-ay-áh,*
 3sg-OBJ 3sg carry.on.back-throw-lie=TEL pass.go-be-INCH-DECL

tih *tʔʔh-hám-ǎw-ǎt*

3sg run-go-FLR-OBL

'Throwing him down, he went away, all the while running.' (txt)

More common mechanisms for forming adverbials from verb phrases require the inflection of the verb stem by the Dependent marker *-Vp*, Oblique case *-Vt*, etc.; these strategies typically involve entire clauses and are discussed in §18.2.4.1 and §18.2.6. Also, negative imperatives are obligatorily phrased as adverbial expressions (usually with =*yíʔ*); see §16.1.1.

¹²⁷ The adverbial identity of these verb + *yíʔ* expressions is at this point still in some doubt; the fact that they were pronounced without stress suggests that they may actually be part of the compound verbal predicate. Were this the case, however, *yíʔ* would have to be interpreted as the verbal Telic suffix, rather than as an adverbial marker, and normally in Hup Inner Suffixes such as the Telic do not come between verb roots within compounds. It is possible that these constructions represent a bridging context between two synchronically distinct functions of the form *yíʔ*.

10.2.1. ‘No reason’ adverbial *hĩ*

The adverbial expression *hĩ* ‘for no reason’, unlike most other adverbials in Hup, cannot be broken down etymologically and has no other role in the grammar; it also never occurs with the adverbial marker *yĩ?*. The adverbial form *hĩ* is exclusively clause-initial, and is a morphosyntactically and phonologically free form, which may be followed by the verb, subject, or other constituent of the clause. It indicates an action performed with no specific reason, outcome, or related action in mind, as illustrated in the following examples:

- (28) *hĩ* *ʔāh* *piniŋ-yohɔy-yĩ?-té-h*
 no.reason 1sg tell.story-search-TEL-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’m just going to tell the story as best I can (although I don’t really know it well).’ (txt)
- (29) *hĩ* *hid* *ʔəg-tég*
 no.reason 3pl drink-FUT
 ‘They’re just going to drink.’ (even though there is no particular occasion to celebrate, such as a party or workday) (cv)
- (30) *hĩ* *j’ek-yohɔy-yĩ?-íy,* *yí-d’ǎh-ǎh,* *céc !*
 no.reason steal-search-TEL-DYNM that.ITG-PL-DECL INTERJ
 ‘They’re always just out to steal stuff, darn it!’ (txt)

The adverbial form *hĩ* is often used in responses to ‘why’ questions, particularly when the speaker is unable or unwilling to give a reason for his/her action. For example, (31) was uttered by a teenage boy in answer to my question ‘why did you quit school?’. Similarly, the speaker in (32) had been telling me how she had fallen out with the people of another village, but would give no more details when I asked ‘why did they scold/yell at you?’.

- (31) *hĩ* *ʔāh* *way-yĩ?-íy = nih*
 no.reason 1sg go.out-TEL-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘I just left (school; for no particular reason).’ (cv)
- (32) *hĩ* *hid* *təw-yĩ?-íy = nih*
 no.reason 3pl scold-TEL-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘They just scolded.’ (txt)

Finally, the ‘no reason’ adverbial *hĩ* occurs in a few semi-formulaic relative-clause expressions used to describe people, such as *hĩ ham-g’óʔ-op = ʔǎy* (no.reason go-go.about-DEP=FEM) ‘a woman who is just passing through’ (typically used in songs to describe a woman who has married into a group where she has few relatives), and *hĩ-ni-mún-up = ʔǎy / ʔih* (no.reason-be-INTS2-DEP=FEM / MSC) ‘someone who is really just existing’, i.e., worthless or good-for-nothing.

10.2.2. Comparative strategies

Hup has a variety of strategies for indicating a comparison between entities, whether one of similarity or contrast. These strategies typically rely on an adverbial phrase or clause to mark the entity that is the standard of comparison. This adverbial is usually marked as such by the Telic/adverbial form *=yiʔ* (see discussion above).

10.2.2.1. ‘Like’ comparison

Hup has a number of strategies for expressing similarity or ‘like’ comparison. In addition to those discussed below, the Nominalizer *-n’ih* can be used to form a comparative expression; this is in keeping with its more general function of marking dependent or complement clauses:

- (33) [*ʔam biʔ-n’ih mɔy*] *ʔāh biʔ-té-h*
 2sg work-NMZ house 1sg work-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’ll build a house like the one you’re building.’ (el)

A. Comparative verb *nih-* ‘be like’

By far the most common means in Hup for expressing a ‘like’ comparison is the verb *nih-* ‘be like’, which frequently appears with other verb roots in a compound. In comparative expressions with *nih-*, the standard of the comparison (usually a noun) is marked as an adverbial phrase with the adverbial/Telic marker *=yiʔ*. Note that *=yiʔ* bears the primary stress in this construction, whereas in its more standard adverbial usage it is usually unstressed (see above).

Comparison with *nih-* frequently involves the compound verb forms *bahad-nih-* ‘appear like’ and *key-nih-* ‘look like’:

- (34) *ʔayǔp = ʔih tih-ǎn wid-nǎn-ay-áh, [tih = tǎh ʔíp = yíʔ]*
 one=MSC 3sg-OBJ arrive-come-INCH-DECL 3sg=child.father=TEL

key-níh-íy = mah

see-be.like-DYNM=REP

‘A man came to her, (who) looked like her husband.’ (txt)

- (35) *g’əwd’ók yúp [b’ǒy = yíʔ] bahad-níh-íh*
 tubo.fish that.ITG traira=TEL appear-be.like-DECL
 ‘The tubo fish looks like the traira fish.’ (txt)

Comparative *nih-* also frequently occurs alone as the only verb in the clause:

- (36) *[wǎd = yíʔ] níh-íy níŋ-ǎn tih ?!*
 eat=TEL be.like-DYNM 2pl-OBJ 3sg
 ‘Is it (liquor) just like food for you all?!’ (cv)

- (37) *[tát deh = yíʔ] níh-íy*
 taracúa.ant water=TEL be.like-DYNM
 ‘It’s like Tat Deh (village).’ (cv)

- (38) *[b’ǒy = yíʔ] tóg níh-íy yúw-úh*
 traira=TEL tooth be.like-DYNM that.ITG-DECL
 ‘Its teeth are like the traira’s.’ (lit. ‘like a traira’) (txt)

The standard of comparison can be expressed as a numeral or interrogative pronoun, in addition to a noun:

- (39) *[ʔayǔp = yíʔ] hid níh-íy*
 one=TEL 3pl be.like-DYNM
 ‘They seem alike.’ (el)

- (40) *[híp = yíʔ] tih níh-íy = nih ?*
 which=TEL 3sg be.like-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘How is it (the coca)?’ (cv)

The standard of comparison is also often expressed deictically as a demonstrative, particularly (but not exclusively) to indicate manner. In *Barriera*, this is realized as the full (inflected) demonstrative form plus adverbial =*yíʔ* (examples 41–42); in the *Tat Deh* dialect area, the uninflected demonstrative variants

ní (this) and *yĩ* (that.ITG) can combine directly with the verb *nih-* (examples 43–44), as discussed in §6.4.

- (41) [*núp = yĩ?*] *níh-ĩp* *tih ná?-ǎh*, [*natǎ-nĩh = yĩ?*]
 this=TEL be.like-DEP 3sg die-DECL Natasia-POSS=TEL

níh-ĩp = mah *tih ná?-ǎh*
 be.like-DEP=REP 3sg die-DECL
 ‘Being about this (size) she died, being about like Natasia’s (child) she died.’ (cv)

- (42) *wædácku* [*núp = yĩ?*] *níh-ĩy*
 Valasco this=TEL be.like-DYNM
 ‘Valasco is like that.’ (cv)

- (43) *?ín-ǎn yĩ* *níh-ĩy = cud* *?ín = ?ín-ĩh*
 1pl-OBJ that.ITG be.like-DYNM=INFR 1pl=mother-DECL
 ‘Our mother is doing all this to us, apparently.’ (txt)

- (44) *ní níh-ĩy* *bíg j’ǎh* *b’öy ?ǎh* *cúh-tǎn-ǎh*
 this be.like-DYNM HAB DST.CNTR traira 1sg string-COND-DECL
 ‘Like this I always string fish.’ (txt)

Alternatively, the inflected adverbial demonstrative *yít* ‘thus’ (*yí-t*) can act as a standard of comparison relating to manner, in the place of a demonstrative or other adverbial phrase marked with *=yĩ?*:

- (45) *yít hid* *níh-ĩt = yĩ?*, *yít hid* *níh-ĩt = yĩ?*
 thus 3pl be.like-OBL=TEL thus 3pl be.like-OBL=TEL
 ‘They did like this, like that.’ (txt)

Like any other Hup verb, *nih-* ‘be like’ takes verbal Inner and Boundary suffixes. These include the counterfactual (example 46), and also the negative suffix *-nĩh*, which is homonymous with the comparative verb *nih-* (example 47):¹²⁸

¹²⁸ In general, confusion is avoided because the verb ‘be like’ must be followed by a Boundary Suffix (like verbs generally), whereas the Negative marker itself usually occurs as a Boundary Suffix and does not require inflection.

- (46) *mæh-yi?-tæñ-æh*, *yĩ* ***nih-tæ?-æy*** *?ãh-ãh*
 kill-TEL-COND-DECL that.ITG be.like-CNTRFCT-DYNM 1sg-DECL
 ‘If they killed him, I’d do like that.’ (txt)
- (47) *nutæñ-æy=d’əh-əh*, ***nih-nih-ay*** *j’am-áh*, *nutæñ-æh*
 today-DYNM=PL-DECL be.like-NEG-INCH DST.CNTR-DECL today-DECL
 ‘People of today, they don’t do like this anymore, these days.’ (txt)

B. ‘Measure’ *m’æ*

The ‘measure’ term *m’æ* is used for comparisons involving similarity in amount of time, physical size, or distance. The standard of comparison – a noun phrase – together with *m’æ-yi?* forms an adverbial phrase; *m’æ* signals both the quality indicated by the comparison (amount, size) and also (together with =*yi?*) functions to mark the clause as a comparative construction. Examples are given in (48–50):

- (48) *yũ* *tih = ?íp* ***m’æ-yi?*** *?id-iy*
 João 3sg=father MEAS-TEL speak-DYNM
 ‘John speaks for the same amount of time as his father.’ (el)
- (49) *tih = ?íp* ***m’æ-yi?*** (*tih*) *w’ət-əy*
 3sg=father MEAS-TEL (3sg) long-DYNM
 ‘He’s as tall as his father.’ (el)
- (50) *tih = báb’-nĩh* *b’ət* ***m’æ-yi?*** *tih* *bĩ?-ih*
 3sg=sibling-POSS roça MEAS-TEL 3sg work-DECL
 He made a garden the size of his brother’s.’ (el)

Hup speakers use comparative *m’æ* most frequently for deictic comparison – relating a referent to something present in the surroundings – often accompanied by a gesture to illustrate the size or amount. This use typically involves the demonstratives *nu-m’æ* (this-MEAS), *n’i-m’æ* (that-MEAS), and interrogative *hĩ-m’æ* (Q-MEAS), as in examples (51–53). In these cases the adverbial marker =*yi?* is optional and is usually left off; this may be because the demonstrative + *m’æ* forms a lexicalized unit (also note that any possibility of confusion with the homonymous adjective *m’æ* ‘cold [water]’ is minimized).

- (51) *nú-m'æ* *ʔāh* *ʔəg-j'ap-yíʔ-íw-ay*
 this-MEAS 1sg drink-break-TEL-FLR-INCH
 'At this same time (of night) I stopped drinking.' (cv)
- (52) *nu-m'æ = mæh = póʔ* *nām hid* *w'ób-óh báʔ*,
 this-MEAS=DIM=EMPH1 curare 3pl set-DECL PROTST

nu-m'æ = mæh *tíh !*
 this-MEAS=DIM EMPH2
 'They put just this little bit of poison (on their darts), just this little bit (is enough to kill)!' (txt)

- (53) *n'íp* *g'é-t-ep = teg* *m'æ tíh* *ni-kamí*
 that stand-DEP=tree MEAS 3sg be-moment.of
 'When she was as far away as that tree standing there.' (txt)

The form *m'æ* also appears with the interrogative marker *hĩ-* to mean both 'at what time' and 'whereabouts, how far' (see also §6.2):

- (54) *hĩ-m'æ-ay* *tíh ?*
 Q-MEAS-INCH 3sg
 'How far is he now?' (txt)

C. 'Degree' marker =*tæn*

The 'degree' marker =*tæn* has a function similar to that of *m'æ*. It signals a 'like' comparison relating to physical or temporal amount, and is often interchangeable with *m'æ*. Like *m'æ*, =*tæn* usually combines with a noun phrase to form an adverbial expression, which may be marked with =*yíʔ*. The primary difference between these two comparative markers is that =*tæn* tends to relate more specifically than *m'æ* to a *point* in time or space, rather than to an *amount* of time or space.

The form *tæn* occurs elsewhere in Hup as a verbal suffix indicating a conditional (forming a dependent clause); see §14.1. Degree =*tæn* differs formally from Conditional -*tæn* in that the degree marker is unstressed and usually follows nouns, whereas the Conditional is stressed and combines with verbs. While it is possible that the two uses are historically related, they are clearly fully distinct synchronically, and are glossed separately.

The Degree marker =*tæn* is favored (over *m'æ*) for comparisons relating to height, and frequently occurs with body parts to indicate a level of the human body as a standard of the comparison:

- (55) *tih* = *ʔip* = ***tæn*** = *yíʔ* *w'ót-áy*
 3sg=father=MEAS2=TEL long-DYNM
 'He's as tall as his father.' (el) (cf. example [49] with *m'æ*)

- (56) *ʔamih* *b'otɔk* = ***tæn*** *tih* *ní-íy*
 2sg.POSS ear=MEAS2 3sg be-DYNM
 'She comes up to your ear.' (cv)

- (57) *papáj* = ***tæn*** *wǎʔ* *d'ák-áy*
 waist=MEAS2 belt stick.against-DYNM
 'The belt is at the waist (hip-level).' (el)

- (58) *ni-n'ih*, *ʔinih* *háwig* = ***tæn***, *tih*
 this-NMZ 1pl.POSS heart=MEAS2 3sg

kək-d'əh-way-hũʔ-yíʔ-ay-áh !

pull-send-go.out-finish-TEL-INCH-DECL

'(Up to) about here, at our heart level, he pulled out everything (all the evil spirit's insides)!' (txt)

It also occurs in the frozen postposition *háktæn* (*hakʔ*) 'in the middle of', and *nút* = *tæn* (*nút* 'this') 'right here' (used, for example, when showing where to cut something).

In other constructions, the Degree marker =*tæn* is used for comparisons relating to degree, direction, time, age, and manner. In example (59), =*tæn* (here meaning 'in the same direction/area as') can be contrasted with *m'æ* (size of, see example 50 above):

- (59) *tih* = *báb'-nih* *b'ót* = ***tæn*** = *yíʔ* *tih* *bíʔ-ih*
 3sg=sibling-POSS roça=MEAS2=TEL 3sg sibling-DECL
 'He made a roça in the same area as his brother's roça.' (el)

In comparative constructions relating to manner, age, etc., =*tæn* often takes the Factitive prefix *hi-*. This produces a verbal form meaning approximately 'be as much as, be similar to'. In addition to taking =*yíʔ* to act as an adverbial (its most common realization), it can stand alone as a predicate, can occur in a verb

compound as a compounded element, and can optionally take verbal Boundary Suffixes:

- (60) *tih = báb' hi-tæñ = yi?* *tih bi?-ih*
 3sg=sibling FACT-MEAS2=TEL 3sg work-DECL
 'He works as hard as his brother.' (el)
- (61) *híd hi-tæñ = yi?* *?id-d'ák-áy,* *?áh = hin-ih*
 2pl FACT-MEAS2=TEL speak-stick.against-DYNM 1sg=also-DECL
 'I too was saying just the same as them (back to them)!' (cv)
- (62) *tihíy = tog = mæh n'úh, yúp hi-tæñ-ǎy = mah*
 snake=daughter=DIM CNTR that.ITG FACT-MEAS2-DYNM=REP

j'áh yúw-up tí
 DST.CNTR that.ITG-DEP DEP.EMPH
 'Compared to Snake's daughter, she is just the same age as that one!'
 (cv)
- (63) *?in yám-hi-tæñ = yi?* *?am yám-ǎy*
 1pl dance-FACT-MEAS2=TEL 2sg dance-DYNM
 'You dance the way we do/in our way.' (el)

Like *m'æ*, the Degree marker =*tæñ* can occur in demonstrative expressions relating to time: *nutæñ* 'today' (in relation to other days; compare *nút = tæñ* 'right here') and *yitæñ* 'that day' (past tense reference only). It also appears in the expression *?ǎyhitæñ = yi?* 'together'.

D. 'Same as' *n'íyi?*

Another strategy for expressing similarity involves the element *n'íyi?* 'same as', which follows a noun – the standard of comparison – to form an adverbial phrase. The form *n'íyi?* may be made up of the demonstrative form *n'i-* 'that', and almost certainly contains adverbial =*yi?*. It is preferred for comparisons relating to size and amount (and as such is interchangeable with *m'æ*), but can also be used for general comparison, as examples (64–66) illustrate.

- (64) *tíh = báb' nĩh b'žt n'íyí? tíh bí?-ih*
 3sg=sibling POSS roça same.as 3sg work-DECL
 'He made a garden the size of his brother's.' (i.e., as his brother's garden is, he made (his)' (el)
- (65) *tíh = ?íp nĩh n'íyí? tinĩh wæd-æh*
 3sg=father POSS same.as 3sg.POSS eat-DECL
 His food is the same amount as his father's.' (i.e., as his father's is, is his food) (el)
- (66) *yáy yúp b'öy péc n'íyí?*
 fish.sp. that.ITG traira scales same.as
 'The yáy fish has scales like the traira fish.' (txt)

10.2.2.2. Contrastive comparison

Hup has fewer morphological strategies to express contrast than similarity when comparing two entities, and only one of these, the Elative, is really in common use. In addition to these morphological means, which are discussed below, contrast between two entities can be conveyed by a conditional expression 'if you look at X', with no other explicit comparative markers, as in (67), or simply by a coordinated pair of clauses pointing out the contrast (example 68).

- (67) *núp = ?ih = mæh tíh = tæh = mæh = cud,*
 this=MSC=DIM 3sg=small=DIM=INFR

tíh = pög = ?ih-ăn key-hipó?-tæn-æh
 3sg=big=MSC-OBJ see-in.front.of-COND-DECL
 'This man seems small if you look over at the big one.' (el)
- (68) *núp kópu póg-óh, núp tód' = mæh cípmæh muhún = mæh*
 this cup(Pt) big-DECL this container=DIM small INTS2=DIM
 'This cup is big; this glass is really small.' (el)

A. Elative -kəd

Hup's most commonly used strategy for contrastive comparison makes use of the Elative marker *-kəd*, which derives from the verb root 'pass'. This mor-

pheme can fulfill both a comparative and a superlative function. It combines frequently with adjectives, resulting in a compound adjectival expression lacking a Boundary Suffix; it can also appear in verbal compounds as an Inner Suffix form. In addition to its function in expressions of contrast, it is used as a general intensifier (see §15.1.3.3). The Elative can only express contrast in terms of ‘more than, greater than’, and never ‘less than’; Hup speakers typically do not phrase contrasts as ‘less than’ expressions at all. Elative *-kəd* cannot be used together with the adjective *cípmæh* ‘small’ to indicate ‘smaller’ or ‘smallest’; this is probably due to the idiosyncratic, non-verb-like character of this adjective (see §10.1 above).

Unlike the comparative strategies described above, use of the Elative does not usually involve an adverbial to express the standard of comparison. Where both the compared entity and the standard are explicitly stated (rare in natural discourse), the comparison involves linked clauses. In examples (69–70), the first clause is a verbal or adjectival predicate involving the Elative; the second is the conditional ‘if (you) look at that one’ (as in example 67 above).

- (69) *núp mɔmb’ók pog-kəd = cud, núw-ǎn káy-tǎn-ǎh*
 this iron.pot big-PASS=INFR this-OBJ see-COND-DECL
 ‘This pot seems bigger if (you) look at that one.’ (i.e., ‘This pot is bigger than that one.’) (el)

- (70) *núp = ?ǎy hipǎh = teg tɔn-kəd-ay = cud, núp = ?ih-ǎn*
 this=FEM know=THING hold-PASS-INCH=INFR this=MSC-OBJ

key-hipó?-tǎn-ǎh

see-in.front.of-COND-DECL

‘This girl seems to have more intelligence (lit. know-thing) if (you) look at that boy’ (i.e., ‘This girl is smarter than that boy.’) (el)

The comparison can also be expressed with two coordinated clauses, in which ‘a little bit’ or ‘not much’ is contrasted with the Elative:

- (71) *tih = tǎh?ín naw-kəd-śh, tih = yawám = ?ǎy = b’ay*
 3sg=child.mother good-PASS-DECL 3sg=yng.sibling=FEM=AGAIN

cípmæh = yi? náw-ǎh

little=TEL good-DECL

‘His wife is really beautiful; his younger sister is only a little bit beautiful.’ (i.e., ‘His wife is more beautiful than his sister.’) (el)

- (72) *deh pǒh = mí tut-náh dǐʔ-áh,*
water bubble.up=river cold-NEG remain-DECL

ʔectádu-ʔunídu-an = mah tut-kǒd-əcáp-áh
Estados-Unidos-DIR=REP cold-PASS-INTS I-DECL
'It's not very cold on the Rio Tiquié; they say that in the US it's really cold.' (i.e., 'It is colder in the US than on the Rio Tiquié.') (el)

Yet another option expresses the standard via the postpositional phrase 'beyond, ahead of':

- (73) *táh = tǎhʔíp = báb = ʔǎy hótʔah = mah, táh = tǎhʔín naw-kǒd-áh*
3sg=husband=sibling=FEM beyond=REP 3sg=wife good-PASS-DECL
'More than her husband's younger sister, his wife is exceedingly beautiful.' (i.e., 'His wife is more beautiful than his sister.') (el)

In normal discourse, however, it is usually unnecessary to make the standard of comparison explicit in the sentence; here the elative function of *-kǒd* is primarily superlative, merging with its intensifier function (§15.1.3.3):

- (74) *nút = ʔǎy = d'əh ʔid-kǒd-áh*
here=who=PL speak-PASS-DECL
'People from here speak best/better.' (txt)

- (75) *mǔc = yíʔ yúp naw-kǒd-áh !*
flute.type=TEL that.ITG good-PASS-DECL
'The *muc* flute is the best one!' (txt)

- (76) *núp j'áh-an = ʔǎy = d'əh mǎy w'ət-kǒd-əp-ʔéʔ = cudʔühníy*
this land-DIR=who=PL house long-PASS-DEP-PERF=INFR.maybe
'They maybe were the tallest buildings in the world.' (lit. 'houses-of-this-land') (cv)

Finally, the Elative is also used to express 'too many':

- (77) *tegd'úh ʔin d'oʔ-kǒd-yíʔ-íy*
tree 1pl take-PASS-TEL-DYNM
'We got too many wood poles.' (el)

B. Other contrastive strategies

A contrast can also be indicated with the marker *díyi?*, as illustrated in examples (78–80). The etymology of this term is unclear, but it certainly involves the adverbial marker =*yí?*, and a likely candidate for the first syllable is the verb root *dí?*, meaning ‘remain’ or ‘be lacking’, or the (probably related) ‘Verbal diminutive’ form *dí?* (see §12.10). The form *díyi?* indicates ‘a little more’; no explicit standard is usually specified, and it may therefore be best considered a type of intensifier. This strategy is used relatively infrequently in daily Hup discourse. Unlike the Elative marker *-kəd*, *díyi?* can be used in combination with the adjective *cípmæh* ‘small’ to indicate ‘smaller’ or ‘less than’ (example 80).

(78) *náw díyi? tih kəd-ní-h*
 good CMP 3sg pass-INFR-DECL
 ‘He got better (after being sick).’ (el)

(79) *tih =bí? díyi? yohoy =kǎm*
 3sg=work CMP search.for=IMP
 ‘Look for one who does more work.’ (el)

(80) *cípmæh díyi? nó?*
 little CMP give.IMP
 ‘Give less.’ (el)

Another strategy for indicating a ‘greater than’ comparison is to use the locative postpositions *buycó?* ‘above’ or *hót?ah* ‘beyond’. Either is acceptable in comparisons having to do with size, quantity, or volume, but *buycó?* is limited to this function; note that the Elative can also be used here (83 and 73 above):

(81) *tih =?íp buycó? / hót?ah w’át-áy*
 3sg=father above / beyond long-DYNM
 ‘He’s taller than his father.’ (el)

(82) *tih =?íp buycó? / hót?ah tih ?íd-íy*
 3sg=father above / beyond 3sg speak-DYNM
 ‘He speaks more (or louder) than his father.’ (el)

- (83) *tih = ʔip hótʔah tih b'óy-óy (tih b'oy-kád-śh)*
 3sg=father beyond 3sg study-DYNM (3sg study-PASS-DECL)
 'He is a better teacher than his father.' OR 'He studied more than his father' (el)

As noted above, morphological comparative strategies in Hup cannot in general be used to express 'smaller than, less than', and even the expression of 'more small' is restricted. However, some speakers borrow the Tukano verb *dihá* 'be small', which in Tukano is used to form 'smaller than' comparative expressions:

- (84) *núp dihá = mæh*
 this small(Tuk)=DIM
 'This one is smaller/less than another.' (el)

10.3. Locative postpositions

Hup has a large set of locative postpositions.¹²⁹ Morphologically, these are probably best considered to be free particles, although some appear to be marginally encliticized. With the exception of *g'odan* 'inside', all receive independent stress. They make up a closed class of lexicalized forms, which in some instances appear to be composed of identifiable lexical items, but are in many cases not easily broken down etymologically. Locative postpositions typically have an adverbial function within the clause.

While locative postpositions are important in expressing spatial relations in Hup, the rich positional verbal semantics of the language also contributes a great deal. Usually, a spatial relationship is expressed via a combination of a positional verb (such as *cud-* 'be inside') and a locative postposition. This can be seen in the examples below.

A number of the locative postpositions are used to encode temporal relations in addition to spatial relations, and in some cases they have further, more abstract discourse-related functions. The use of locative adpositions to express temporal concepts is cross-linguistically common (e.g., compare English 'before', 'after'), and the particularly salient semantic overlap between spatial, temporal, and conceptual relations is also a feature of Hup grammar more gen-

¹²⁹ Determining the semantic parameters of the locative postpositions in Hup was aided by the Bow-Ped elicitation materials (Bowerman and Pederson 1993).

erally. The semantic extensions of the locative adpositions are included in the tables below.

The Hup locative postpositions fall into two sets, based primarily on their morphological properties.

10.3.1. Basic locative postpositions

The forms in the set of basic locative postpositions, given in Table 37, are relatively heterogeneous. They are all morphologically frozen forms, although some appear to contain identifiable inflectional markers that occur elsewhere in the language (such as Directional/object *-an*, Locative *cóʔ*, Sequential *-yóʔ*, Telic/adverbial *=yíʔ*, and Measure *=tæn*). Most can also take additional inflectional markers, particularly Directional *-an*, and the Diminutive intensifier *=mæh* can follow the locative postposition to emphasize closeness in the spatial relationship; e.g., ‘just above’, ‘just below’, etc. (see §15.1.4). The postpositions in this set are akin to adjective modifiers or bound nouns, in that they follow nouns in noun phrases, and case marking and other inflection occurs noun phrase-finally. The locative noun phrase as a whole typically functions adverbially. Most of these postpositions must be preceded by a noun, and cannot appear ‘bare’ (i.e., with no object at all), as adverbs; minimally, they take the default nominal form *tih* = (as do adjectives and bound nouns).

Two of the locative postpositions listed in Table 37 behave somewhat idiosyncratically in comparison to the other members of the set. The first of these is the Locative particle *cóʔ*, whose relatively wide range of uses is discussed in more detail in §7.9. While it most frequently marks physical location, it tends to do so emphatically or contrastively; furthermore, it occurs with expressions of temporality and to shift attention among participants in discourse. It (like Directional *-an*) can also co-occur with many of the other locative postpositions, as well as being part of the lexically frozen forms of several. The second idiosyncratic postposition, the ‘Following’ particle *hũy*, is considered in detail in §10.3.1.1 below.

Table 37. Locative postpositions in Hup¹³⁰

Locative postposition	Spatial meaning	Temporal meaning or other semantic extension	Etymological observations (Many forms include inflectional material: <i>-an</i> DIR; <i>-yi?</i> TEL; <i>có?</i> LOC; etc.)
<i>có?</i>	in the location of; at	approximate time period; shifting attention among participants	
<i>hũy</i>	following (animate)		
<i>g'od-an</i> <i>g'od</i> (variant TD)	inside 3-dimensional container; also within fire, water, etc.		appears in various body part terms (e.g., <i>nɔg'od</i> 'mouth', <i>mig'od</i> 'face')
<i>buycó?</i> (<i>-an</i>)	above, on top of (touching or suspended above)		?? Tukano <i>bu'i</i> 'above' + Locative = <i>có?</i>
<i>hiyó?</i>	above, on top of (touching). (Preferred for something on side of hill rather than at highest point). Esp. for liquids; also used for water touching banks.	fault, error as cause of something	?? <i>hi-</i> 'descend' (or Factitive <i>hi-</i> ?) + <i>yo?</i> (SEQ) 'having descended'
<i>yǎhyi?</i>	on top of and stuck in or running among other things		?? compare <i>yǎh</i> 'affine' and <i>deh-g'æt-yǎh</i> 'igapo' (flooded forest); common semantic basis of mixing in among something else? <i>yi?</i> Telic, adverbializer ?? <i>hũy</i> 'following' particle + <i>-an</i> Directional oblique
<i>hũyan</i>	submerged (specifically) in water (all other liquids: <i>g'od-an</i>)		
<i>hæhɔ</i> (<i>-tæn</i>) <i>hæyɔ</i> (TD)	midway; middle of		(<i>-tæn</i> 'level', comparative form; also conditional; see §14.1 and §10.2.2.1)
<i>tök-tæn</i>	mid-level		<i>tök</i> (body part) 'stomach'
<i>håktæn</i>	side (esp. at middle height)		

¹³⁰ Variants occurring in the speech of Tat Deh village are labeled 'TD'.

Locative postposition	Spatial meaning	Temporal meaning or other semantic extension	Etymological observations
<i>hupáh</i> (-at/-có?)	at back of [relatively close]		(body part) 'upper back'
<i>widăy</i>	coming out of, at entrance		verbal form <i>wid-way</i> 'arrive-go.out' ?
<i>tú</i> (-an/-có?)	next to [close]		
<i>máh</i> (-an/có?)	near, next to [little further away]		
<i>hipó?</i>	next to [still further away]; in front of	entire period (occurs in few expressions)	?? compare <i>hi-</i> (factive) and <i>po?</i> 'open'
<i>cúm</i> (-an)	base of, initial section of (from a reference point)	beginning, first	
<i>g'æt?ðh</i> (-an/có?)	at furthest point, end	end of a time period	
<i>mř?</i> (-an)	under; inside house ¹³¹	at same time; in spite of	
<i>kakáh</i> (-an)	among, between		(reduplicated?)

Examples of locative postpositions as they appear in noun phrases are given in (85–91). Note that while *buycó?* 'above' appears to involve a frozen form of the Locative marker *có?*, it can additionally take this particle as well (example 88).

(85) *děh hũyan = mah, tih j'óm-an = mah, tih tóç-óh*
 water in.water=REP 3sg bathe-DIR=REP 3sg break.wind-DECL
 'In the water, where he was swimming, he broke wind.' (txt)

(86) *b'ó? g'odan ?ág cúd-úy*
 cuia inside fruit be.inside-DYNM
 'The fruit is inside the cuia.' (el)

¹³¹ 'Inside a house' is *mőy mř?*, literally 'under a house'; this is undoubtedly because many Hup houses (and probably all in the past) are composed of little more than a roof. The same phenomenon is reported in the Carib language Tiriyó (Meira 2006).

- (87) *cã-d'əh mǔy tú b'ay-yí? = d'əh-əh*
 other-PL house next.to return-TEL=PL-DECL
 'Others turned back (when) close to the (school) building.' (txt)
- (88) *tĩnh núh buycó? có? !*
 3sg.POSS head above LOC
 '(He's) on top of his head!' (txt)
- (89) *cecádiu = mah n'ikán d'ó?-óh, tĩnh*
 Cesario=REP over.there take-DECL 3sg.POSS
- ycó?óm = ?ih máh-an = ?ũhníy*
 powerful=MSC near-DIR=EPIST.be
 'Cesario takes it there, they say, maybe to where her boss is.' (cv)
- (90) *nú-m'əc kakah hid bí?-íh*
 this-MEAS between 3pl make-DECL
 'They made as much as this (space) between (my hands).' (referring to a pile of little ocarina flutes made from ucuqui seeds) (txt)
- (91) *yúp = mah tíh mǔ? = cud?úh teg = b'ók pǔg*
 that.ITG=REP 3sg UNDER=INFR.EPIST tree=bark big
- bug'-g'et-pó? = ?ih*
 pile-stand-EMPH1=MSC
 'Meanwhile beneath her (hammock) apparently there was a big pile of bark.' (txt)

Some of these locative forms are not limited to noun phrases, but can also be incorporated into verbal compounds. As such, they do not directly follow a nominal object (so are no longer functioning as postpositions), but they do maintain their spatial semantics. Examples include the expression *hi-mǔ-g'ět* (FACT-under-stand) 'midday', which presumably refers to the sun being directly overhead, *key-hipó?* (see-in.front.of) 'opposite' as in (92) (compare examples 94–95 below), and *máh* 'near' in example (93). See also the more idiomatic uses of *hǔy* (example 100 below) and of *có?* (§7.9). This process of incorporation does not appear to be fully productive, and the placement of the postposition before or after the verb stem is variable across constructions. It is possible that this process of incorporation is connected historically to the more produc-

tive processes of incorporation of nouns and (in some cases) postpositions found in Hup's sister languages; see §9.6.

- (92) *núp = ?ih cípmæh = cud tih = pög = ?ih-ǎn key-hipó?-tǎn-ǎh*
 this=MSC small=INFR 3sg=big=MSC-OBJ see-in.front-COND-DECL
 'This guy seems small compared to the big guy.' (lit. 'if you see him in front of the big guy') (el)

- (93) *tinǎh mah-g'ět = d'əh*
 3sg.POSS near-stand=PL
 'The ones that go with him (work for him).' (boys on a river-merchant's boat) (cv)

Hup's locative postpositions have primarily spatial semantics, but several also have temporal or other extensions. Examples (94–95) contrast spatial and temporal uses of the postposition *hipó?*, which can mean 'in front of', or 'entire period of time':

- (94) *bóda = tat cá? hipó? yǎt-ǎy*
 ball=FRUIT box in.front lie-DYNM
 'The ball is in front of the box.' (el)

- (95) *?ǎh = íb' hipó? ?ǎh hí?-ih*
 1sg=life in.front 1sg write-DECL
 'I've been writing all my life.' (ru)

Examples (96–97) illustrate a distinct use of *hiyó?* ('on top of') as a full noun meaning 'cause, fault'. While homonymy has not been ruled out, this may have involved a semantic extension based on a metaphorical association such as 'physical burden' > 'responsibility' (social and mental burden); compare English 'charge' (i.e., give responsibility), from French *charger* 'load'.¹³²

- (96) *tinǎh hiyó? yúw-úh*
 3sg.POSS fault that.ITG-DECL
 'It's his fault!' (ru)

¹³² Thanks to Eve Danziger for suggesting this association.

- (97) *ʔáħ cóʔ-óy yúp hiyóʔ tɔn-té-h*
 1sg LOC-DYNM that.ITG fault hold-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’ll be the one at fault / to be blamed.’ OR ‘I’ll carry it above (something else)’ (ru)

10.3.1.1. ‘Following’ marker *hǔy*

The particle *hǔy* is distinct from Hup’s other locative postpositions in several ways. First, it associates only with nominals having animate referents. The resulting adverbial construction indicates that the actor (the subject of the clause) is physically following behind another participant (the noun modified by *hǔy*); accordingly, *hǔy* cannot associate with the subject of the clause. Secondly, the ‘Following’ marker *hǔy* crucially involves directional movement, as opposed to close proximity in static location (in contrast to the other locative forms discussed here). However, in inflected form *hǔy* apparently forms the basis for two distinct, more canonical locative postpositions, which do not necessarily involve movement or animate referents: *hǔyʔah* ‘behind’ (spatial) and ‘after’ (temporal), and *hǔyan* ‘in water’; this latter form may derive from the flowing nature of bodies of water, such as streams, although it can be used for still water as well. The use of ‘Following’ marker *hǔy* is illustrated in examples (98–99).

- (98) *ʔin hǔy hám !*
 1pl FLW go.IMP
 ‘Follow us!’ (txt)

- (99) *tíh hǔy = yiʔ = mah tíh j’ək-wɔn-kəd-hám-áħ*
 3sg(Cəw) FLW=TEL=REP 3sg(J’ew’ew’) jump-follow-pass-go-DECL
 ‘He (J’ew’ew’) jumped after him (Cəw).’ (txt)

The ‘Following’ marker *hǔy* has one additional function: it occurs in verbal compounds following the verb ‘go’, where it conveys the figurative sense of ‘going well’ or ‘working out’ as planned:

- (100) “*hĩ* = *yĩ*? *nɔ-nĩh-ĩy* *?ám* ?” *tih* *nɔ-ʒt*,
 INT=TEL say-be.like-DYNM 2sg 3sg say-OBL

?id-d’əh-ham-hũy-nĩh

speaK-send-go-FLW-NEG

‘When she says, “what does this word mean?”, it is hard to explain.’
 (i.e., ‘talking about it doesn’t go well’) (sp)

A cognate form *-hũy* can be identified in Dâw; this is reported to involve a comitative relationship between the actor and some other participant who is the leader of the activity (S. Martins 1994: 143). In Hup, however, the function of *hũy* involves only an indirect link to the status of the participant leading the activity, since a leader is typically the one who physically heads the expedition and whom others follow. That Hup has a distinct grammatical form to express one participant’s following after another probably has to do with the fact that their rainforest environment encourages people to walk in single file along paths – a habit which holds even in the open village spaces.

10.3.2. Locative postpositions with *-?ah*

The members of the second set of locative postpositions are listed in Table 38 below. They all involve the bound form *-?ah*, which has not been encountered anywhere else in Hup, and has no identifiable meaning of its own. While some of these forms are composed of *-?ah* and an identifiable root, many are etymologically unanalyzable. In a number of cases, the first syllable apparently ends in a dental stop, which may be related to the Oblique marker *-t* (compare the locative forms of the Proximal and Distal demonstratives *nu-t*, *n’i-t*).¹³³ Like the forms in Table 37 above, these locative postpositions follow nouns; however, most (such as ‘upriver’, ‘downriver’, and ‘underneath’) also frequently occur by themselves as spatial (or temporal) adverbs. Many can take the Locative particle *có?*, but they rarely receive case marking.

¹³³ This dental stop assimilates to the following glottal stop, producing what is phonetically a homorganic stop cluster [td]; similarly, /yʔ/ clusters are pronounced [yʔy] (see §.2.1.2.1). Nasal spreading (from root to suffix) has also occurred in some cases where the root shares the vowel quality /a/ with the suffix.

Table 38. Hup locative postpositions formed with *-ʔah*

Locative postposition	Spatial meaning	Temporal meaning or other semantic extension	Etymological observations
<i>hũyʔah</i> (<i>cóʔ</i>) (<i>hũytú-cóʔ</i>)	behind [further away than <i>hupah-coʔ</i>]	after (at a later time)	<i>hũy</i> ‘Following’ particle (see above)
<i>kótʔah</i> (<i>cóʔ</i>) [káda] (TD)	in front of	before	* <i>kot</i>
<i>hótʔah</i> (<i>cóʔ</i>) [háda] (TD)	beyond, on other side of something		<i>hot</i> ‘out there, beyond (far off)’
<i>hǎyʔah</i> (<i>cóʔ</i>)	outside		?? <i>hǎy</i> ‘forest’
<i>cǎʔǎh-mah</i> (<i>cóʔ</i>)	on other side; in another place		<i>cǎ-</i> ‘other’
<i>hǎtʔǎh</i> (<i>hǎtʔah</i>)	by here, close by		* <i>hǎt</i>
<i>cáʔah</i>	side, area	with temporal nouns (e.g., ‘day’) indicates position within period of time	* <i>ca(h)</i>
<i>póʔah-cóʔ</i>	high above, not touching		<i>póh</i> ‘high’
<i>míʔah-cóʔ</i>	underneath		<i>míʔ</i> ‘under’ (see above)
<i>pótʔah</i>	upriver		?? possibly related to <i>póh</i> ‘high’; compare <i>poʔah</i>
<i>mǎtʔah</i>	downriver		?? possibly related to <i>míʔ</i> ‘under’; compare <i>míʔah</i>
<i>déʔah</i>	at waterway (associated with some landmark)		<i>děh</i> ‘water’
<i>wáʔah</i>	on other side of waterway		* <i>wa(h)</i>
<i>deh páʔah</i>	at edge or bank of waterway		* <i>pa(h)</i>

Examples of these postpositions' spatial uses are given in (101–103).

- (101) *té hib'ah = tǎh = d'əh b'ay-ní-h, pótʔah-an*
 until create=offspring=PL return-INFR-DECL upriver-DIR
 'Until the ancestors returned, upriver.' (txt)
- (102) *yĩ-n'ih = hin hí niŋ key-yíʔ, mǔy-ǔt hid y'ǎt-n'ih,*
 that.ITG=also only 2pl see-TEL.IMP house-OBL 3pl lay-NMZ
hidnǐh b'ǔt déʔah hid d'oʔ-túʔ-n'ih
 3pl.POSS roça by.water 3pl take-immersed-NMZ
 'Only look at (i.e., don't steal) these things, that they've left in a house,
 or put into the water at their roça-side stream.' (sp)
- (103) *tinǐh b'ǔt cáʔah = hin tíh = hin maç-g'et-yóʔ,*
 3sg.POSS roça side=also 3sg=also cut.brush-stand-SEQ
tih b'ot-tég tíh = hin-ih
 3sg cut.trees-FUT 3sg=also-DECL
 'He also, having cut the underbrush from his roça area, he too will clear
 trees.' (sp)

Examples of their temporal use are provided in (104–107).

- (104) *wag cáʔah = mah ní-n'ih = mah, tih yé-ay-áh*
 day side=near be-NMZ=REP 3sg enter-INCH-DECL
 'When it was close to daylight (i.e., day-side), he entered.' (txt)
- (105) *?in dú = d'əh kótʔah cóʔ = yiʔ*
 1pl ancestor=PL before LOC=TEL
 'Before the time of our ancestors' (txt)
- (106) *yúp hǔyʔah cã-d'əh wid-nǎn-ǎw-ǎh*
 that.ITG after other=PL arrive-come-FLR-DECL
 'After that, others arrived.' (txt)
- (107) *?ayup g'í hǔyʔah*
 one year after
 'The year after next' (el)

Chapter 11

Adjusting valency

This chapter focuses on Hup's morphological strategies for adjusting the valency of a verb; i.e., the number of core arguments for which the verb categorizes. These strategies include two mechanisms for decreasing valency: the Reflexive and the Interactional constructions; as well as two mechanisms for increasing valency: the Applicative and the Factitive (but note that the Interactional and the Factitive do not always entail a change in valency). All of these except the Applicative involve prefixation; they exhaust the entire set of preverbal grammatical markers in Hup, which generally favors the suffixation or otherwise post-stem attachment of bound material. Additional valency-adjusting strategies – in particular the expression of causation via verb compounding – are summarized at the end of this chapter, and are also discussed in Chapters 8 and 9.

11.1. Reflexive *hup-*

The prefix *hup-* defines a grammatical construction that is here labeled 'Reflexive'; however, it has a broader range of functions than that of the prototypical reflexive situation of an actor acting on him/herself, including a passive interpretation and a marginal reciprocal function. In general, the occurrence of *hup-* on the (obligatorily transitive) verb stem could be said to signal that the grammatical subject is being acted upon in some way, i.e., is him/herself an undergoer of the event.

In addition to its use as a valency-adjusting verbal preform, the form *hup* has various other manifestations, including its use as a free lexeme meaning 'human, person' or 'Hup Indian' (hence the name of the language; see §1.2.1), and as an enclitic on noun phrases. Because of this multifunctionality, it can often be difficult to determine which use of *hup* we are faced with in a given sentence – undoubtedly reflecting the contexts for reanalysis that led historically to some of these different uses in the first place. Hence these other uses are relevant to the present discussion of Reflexive *hup-* as a valency-adjusting form, and they will therefore be introduced here as a preface to the Reflexive construction. How *hup* is to be interpreted, functionally and even formally (as free form, enclitic, or prefix), depends on its place in the clause, the transitivity and lexical identity of the verb, and even the context.

A. Free lexeme ‘human, person, Hup Indian’; adjective ‘beautiful, new’

In addition to its frequent use as an ethnonym meaning ‘Hup Indian’ (feminine *húp* = *ʔǎy*, masculine *húp* = *ʔih*, plural *húp* = *d’əh*), *húp* can be used as a noun meaning ‘person’, particularly in reference to an indefinite human participant. As such, it is a free lexical item; it typically takes independent stress (but note that subjects that directly precede verbs are often unstressed in Hup) and it is clearly separate from the verb and other clausal constituents. In combination with a transitive or intransitive verb, *húp* may act as an indefinite pronominal agent (examples 1–2) or object (in which case it takes the object-marking that is obligatory for human referents; example 3). The noun *húp* may also appear as the first constituent of a nominal compound, with the sense ‘relating to people, Hup Indians’ (e.g., *húp ʔid* ‘Hup language, speech’). A noun meaning ‘body’ or ‘person’ is a very common historical source for reflexive markers cross-linguistically (cf. Heine 2000, Schladt 2000).

- (1) *hõp cǎg húp d’oʔ-yíʔ-íy* = mah
 fish net person take-TEL-DYNM=REP
 ‘Someone’s taken the fish net (it’s said).’ (el)
- (2) *húp pǎ*
 person NEG:EX
 ‘There was no one.’ (txt)
- (3) *húp-ǎn tǎw-óy, húp-ǎn dóh-óy...*
 person-OBJ scold-DYNM person-OBJ curse-DYNM
 ‘(They) scold people, put curses on people...’ (txt)

In addition to this nominal use, the free lexeme *húp* can act as an adjective meaning ‘good, beautiful, new’, as in expressions such as *b’ǎʔ húp* ‘fresh bei-ju’. As such, it usually occurs with the nominalizing third singular proclitic *tih* = (see §6.6), resulting in the phonologically reduced form *tuhúp*, as in *yǎd tuhúp* ‘new clothes’.

B. Enclitic: Reflexive intensifier

As discussed in detail in §7.1.4, the form *hup* also appears as an enclitic, which attaches to noun phrases and acts as a Reflexive Intensifier, as illustrated in examples (4–5). As opposed to its use as a free lexical noun in examples (1–3) above, the enclitic =*hup* forms a phonological unit with its host; it is un-

stressed, has no pause separating it from the preceding noun phrase, and its frequent combination with the third person singular and plural pronouns (*tíh = hup* and *híd = hup*) has given rise to the semi-lexicalized variants [‘túhup] and [‘hírup] (note the stress on the first syllable, whereas the adjective form [tu‘húp] above has stress on the second). Such a formal identity between verbal reflexive markers and nominal intensifiers is cross-linguistically very common; compare English ‘N itself’ (cf. König and Siemund 2000).

- (4) *níŋ = hup* *píd* *biʔ-yóʔ*, *níŋ = hup* *dúh*
 2pl=RFLX.INTS DIST work-SEQ 2pl=RFLX.INTS buy.IMP
 ‘All of you yourselves having worked, you yourselves buy (things).’
 (i.e., we will no longer give you these things as gifts) (txt)
- (5) *tegd’uh* *tǎéh* *túhup* *j’ap-yíʔ-íy*
 tree small 3sg.RFLX.INTS divide.in.parts-TEL-DYNM
 ‘The stick broke by itself.’ (el)

In contrast to these uses of *hup* as a free lexical noun and as a nominal enclitic, it appears strictly as a verbal preform in its manifestation as a valency-decreasing Reflexive marker. As a Reflexive, *hup-* indicates generally that the grammatical subject is being directly acted upon. Interpretations of the constructions in which it occurs can vary; the use of *hup-* can result in a standard reflexive reading (i.e., the subject acts on him/herself directly), a passive (some other participant acts on the subject), or – more marginally – a reciprocal (coordinated subjects act on each other), depending on the semantics of the verb and on the general context. These different functions of *hup* are outlined in the subsections below.

A correlation between passive, reflexive, and reciprocal constructions is not uncommon cross-linguistically. Shibatani (1985: 826) observes that many languages exhibit such a correlation, including Spanish, Russian, Quechua, and Yavapai, and he offers the explanation that this similarity “arises largely from a semantic property of these constructions: in all of them, surface subjects are affected” (1985: 840). In other words, these constructions all involve a reduction in the Transitivity of the clause (in the sense of Hopper and Thompson 1980), in that the grammatical subject is in some way also a semantic patient.

Formally, the Reflexive form *hup-* displays properties common to *Hup*’s two other preforms: it is unstressed and is not separated from its verbal host by pause phenomena. In addition, no other constituents can come between it and the verb, with the exception of an object of a ditransitive verb (a property that it shares with the Interactional gram; see below).

Syntactic requirements for the use of Reflexive *hup-* include the stipulation that it can occur only with a transitive or ditransitive verb; it is ungrammatical with an intransitive verb, as illustrated in example (6a). In any case where the form *hup* does occur in a clause with a subject nominal and an intransitive verb, it can *only* be interpreted as a Reflexive intensifier, encliticized to the noun, as in (6b); it cannot act as an impersonal subject, since a subject is already present.

- (6) a) **híd hup-g'ǎʔ-ǎý*
 3plRFLX-be.suspended-DYNM
- b) *híd = hup g'ǎʔ-ǎý*
 3pl=RFLX.INTS be.suspended-DYNM
 ‘They themselves lie in their (own) hammocks.’ (el)

Finally, subjects of clauses containing the verbal Reflexive are almost always animate; exceptions appear to be limited to reflexive forms that are semi-lexicalized and/or semi-idiomatic, such as the following:

- (7) *cug'ǎt hup-kád-ǎý*
 leaf/paper RFLX-pass-DYNM
 ‘The leaf turns over.’ OR ‘The leaf got turned over (by someone).’ (el)
- (8) *hup-túk, yúp mǎm-ǎh !*
 RFLX-want that axe-DECL
 ‘That axe is valuable!’ (lit. ‘makes itself be wanted’) (sp)

11.1.1. Reflexive reading of *hup-*: subject acts on self¹³⁴

Depending on the semantics of the verb, the interpretation of the Reflexive form *hup-* can be that of a prototypical reflexive, in which the subject acts on him/herself (examples 9–10). This use is quite productive. As is the case elsewhere in Hup, the subject noun phrase need not be explicitly stated, particularly when the reflexive meaning is clear from the semantics of the verb. This is illus-

¹³⁴ Note that while the use of *hup-* is not *restricted* to a true reflexive reading (subject acts on self), it is the only available strategy for producing such a reading. The co-occurrence of an explicit co-referential subject and object in the clause is ungrammatical; e.g., **?ǎh ?ǎn yád-ǎý* (1sg 1sg.OBJ hide-DYNM) Intended meaning: ‘I hide myself’.

trated in example (10) (here an additional object-marked participant *ʔǎn* ‘me’ is present, but is understood not to be the direct object of the clause).

- (9) *náw = yíʔ dǐʔ-mǐʔ bíʔ, ʔam hup-hǒk !*
 good=TEL remain-UNDER work.IMP 2sg RFLX-cut.APPR
 ‘Go carefully on that last bit, you’ll cut yourself!’ (cv)
- (10) *ʔǎn hup-yəd-cǐw-ǐy = cud núp-tiʔ ?*
 1sg.OBJ RFLX-hide-COMPL-DYMN=INFR this-EMPH.TAG
 ‘This one’s already hidden (himself) from me, huh?’ (txt)

The true reflexive use of *hup-* also can be seen in a number of semi-lexicalized or idiomatic verbal forms, such as *hup-hæb-* ‘be in a state of bereavement, loss’ (**ʔhæb-*); *hup-hipāh-* ‘have good sense (i.e., according to one’s social responsibilities), be aware of oneself and one’s surroundings’ (lit. ‘know oneself’, from *hipāh-* ‘know, think’, itself a lexicalized Factitive verb, see §11.4 below), as in example (11); and *hup-kəd-* ‘turn over; turn (oneself) around’ (*kəd-* ‘pass, overtake’), as in example (12) and in (7) above. It also appears word-internally in some expressions involving the Completive aspect suffix *-cǐp-/cǐw-*, as in *wəd-hup-cǐw-ǐy / cǐp-ǐy* (eat-RFLX-COMPL-DYMN) ‘already eaten’ (see §12.5).

- (11) *nǐ tǎh = d’əh ʔəg-naʔ-yíʔ-ǐy,*
 1sg.POSS offspring=PL drink-lose.consciousness-TEL-DYMN

hup-hipāh-nǐh...

RFLX-know-NEG

‘My kids got drunk, they were out of their senses...’ (cv)

- (12) *tǐh hup-kəd-kədhi-yíʔ-ní-p = b’ay*
 3sg RFLX-pass-pass.descend-TEL-INFR-DEP=AGAIN
 ‘She turned herself around and went down again quickly.’ (txt)

Another apparently idiomatic use of Reflexive *hup-* relates to pregnancy (examples 13–14). Here the expression ‘the woman is pregnant’ could perhaps be interpreted literally as ‘the woman interiorizes herself’ (but note the presence of the object ‘offspring’ in 13). Alternatively, this example could be an idiosyncratic case of noun incorporation (see §9.6).

- (13) *tāʔáy tǎh hup-cúd-úy*
 woman offspring RFLX-be.inside-DYNM
 ‘The woman is pregnant.’ (el)
- (14) *ʔāh hup-cúd-uw-ǎn wóy-óy ʔám ?*
 1sg RFLX-be.inside-FLR-OBJ love-DYNM 2sg
 ‘Do you love the one I am pregnant with?’ (txt)

Reflexive *hup-* is also a component of several derived non-verbal constructions, such as *hup-hipǎh = teg* ‘consciousness, intelligence’ (lit. ‘self-knowing thing’), and the idiomatic *hup-nó* ‘alone’ (possibly from *nó-* ‘say’), as in (15). In the idiomatic expression ‘show oneself (to others)’, *hup-* occurs together with the form *cap*, which is used elsewhere as a noun meaning ‘body’ (and as an intensifier, see §15.1.1); hence ‘self’s body’, or ‘oneself’ (example 16).

- (15) *hup-nó píđ wǎđ-ǎy*
 RFLX-say DIST eat-DYNM
 ‘They each eat by themselves.’ (txt)
- (16) *ʔǎh = togtúg nǎh mǎy g’od-ót,*
 1sg=son.in.law POSS house inside-OBL
- ʔam hup-cap-be-tǎʔ-n’ih*
 2sg RFLX-body-show-CNTRFACT-NMZ
 ‘Inside my son-in-law’s house, you would show yourself thus.’ (txt)

The status of *hup-* as a verbal preform – as opposed to a nominal enclitic – is the single formal criterion that differentiates it from the Reflexive intensifier form. However, its status as prefix or enclitic (both normally unstressed forms), or even as free lexical noun (unstressed in some contexts) can be ambiguous, especially in fast speech where pause phenomena are less salient. In examples (17a–b) of the following elicited paradigm, the identical ordering of constituents (subject, *hup*, verb) can lead to the interpretation of *hup* as either a Reflexive intensifier or a verbal Reflexive, depending on pause phenomena and intonation, as well as on the context and the transitivity of the verb. In examples (17c–d), on the other hand, the presence of object-marking on one of the participants forces or encourages the interpretation of *hup* as a full noun phrase; however, (17d) (especially given the lack of stress common on Hup preverbal subjects) can also be interpreted as involving the Reflexive intensifier (with essentially the same meaning), or the passive form of the Reflexive (cf. §11.1.2 below).

Finally, example (17e) shows that when the clause includes an inanimate object noun phrase, *hup* is interpreted as a full nominal subject, since the Reflexive and Reflexive intensifier forms of *hup* favor an animate subject (so ‘tree’ cannot be interpreted as the subject).

(17) a) *tíh = hup kít-íy, (tegd’úh-úh)*

3sg=RFLX cut-DYNM tree-DECL

‘He himself cut (the tree).’

b) *tíh hup-kít-íy*

3sg RFLX-cut-DYNM

‘He cut himself.’

also: ‘He got cut (by someone else).’ (cf. §11.1.2 below)

c) *tíh húp-ăn kít-íy*

3sg person-OBJ cut-DYNM

‘He cut someone.’

d) *tíh-ăn hup kít-íy*

3sg-OBJ person cut-DYNM

‘Someone cut him.’

Or: *tíh-ăn = hup kít-íy*

3sg-OBJ=RFLX.INTS cut-DYNM

‘(Someone) cut him-himself.’

Or: *tíh-ăn hup-kít-íy*

3sg-OBJ RFLX-cut-DYNM

‘(Someone) got cut by him.’ (cf. §11.1.2 below)

e) *tegd’úh hup kít-íy*

tree person cut-DYNM

‘Someone cut the tree.’

The nominal Reflexive intensifier and the verbal Reflexive prefix often co-occur in Hup, as in examples (18–19). Their co-occurrence can help to clarify that a reflexive activity is indeed involved, particularly in contexts where a single occurrence of *hup* could be ambiguous between interpretations as a nominal and verbal formative. The addition of the contrastive emphasis (Telic) marker =*yí?* to the Reflexive intensifier helps to stress the uniqueness of the referent.

The resulting ‘by oneself’ construction can reinforce the reflexive reading of the clause in potentially ambiguous cases, such as example (19) (as opposed to the alternative passive reading of verbal *hup-*, as in ‘he got cut’; see §11.1.2 below). However, note that the PN=*hup=yi?* construction can also be used with reciprocals (e.g., 36 below), so is not strictly reflexive.

- (18) *?ám =hup hup-hipáħ !*
 2sg=RFLX.INTS RFLX-know.IMP
 ‘You (yourself) think (for) yourself.’ (i.e., ‘it’s up to you; you decide’)
 (txt)

- (19) *tíh =hup =yí? hup-kít-íy*
 3sg=RFLX.INTS=TEL RFLX-cut-DYNM
 ‘He (himself) cut himself.’ (el)

The Reflexive preform *hup* – like its companion valency-adjusting preform, the Interactional (reciprocal) *?ūh* – has a curious morphosyntactic property: while normally phonologically and morphosyntactically attached to the verb as a prefix, it can – in the context of a ditransitive verb with a distinct, stated object – optionally appear separated from the verb by the object nominal, as in (20).

- (20) *tíh =hup =yí? hup =yág w’ít-íy*
 3sg=RFLX=TEL RFLX=hammock tie.hammock-DYNM
 ‘He’s tying his hammock for himself.’ (el)

As discussed below for the Interactional (§11.2), the object and verb may be in a noun-incorporating relationship in this construction, as evidenced by the inability of otherwise grammatical nominal morphology (e.g., demonstratives, plural marker, etc.) to modify the noun. In the case of the Reflexive preform, *hup* is unstressed in this pre-object position just as it is in pre-verbal position (and thus continues to resemble a prefix phonologically), whereas *?ūh* in this context takes independent stress as a phonologically free particle. Consultants judge both options (RFLX OBJ-V and OBJ RFLX-V) to be semantically equivalent and equally grammatical; thus *yág hup-w’ít-íy* (hammock RFLX-tie.hammock-DYNM) ‘tying his hammock for himself’ is judged to be the acceptable counterpart of (20) above.

As an additional note on the morphosyntax of reflexive constructions, they may involve causative verb compounds (which have internally complex valency but result in fully transitive verb forms; see §9.4.1.2 and §11.5.1 below):

- (21) *těg-ét ʔāh hup-hūh-b'uy-wōb-op*
 wood-OBL 1sg RFLX-carry-throw-set.on-DEP
 'I got it (lit. put [the sore] on myself) from carrying and throwing down
 wood.' (referring to a sore on his foot) (cv)
- (22) *tīh = dóʔ = d'əh tīh = ʔíp-ǎn mǒy hup-g'et-yǎh-ǎy*
 3sg-child=PL 3sg-father-OBJ house RFLX-stand-request-DYNM
 'The children are sent home by their father.' (el)

11.1.2. Passive reading of *hup*: subject is acted upon by another participant

In other pragmatic contexts, or with verbs for which a single-participant reflexive reading is semantically unlikely, the verbal preform *hup-* can produce a passive reading, in which the subject (the semantic undergoer) is acted upon by some other participant (the semantic actor). In these cases, the animate actor (which would be the agent of the corresponding active clause) may be explicit, whereby it obligatorily takes the Object case-marker *-ǎn* (even if it is an animal, despite the fact that case-marking with *-ǎn* is *optional* for animal objects in active Hup clauses, see §4.3.1.2), as in examples (23) and (26) below. Alternatively, the actor may be dropped, as in (24) and (25). A reflexive construction of this type can only have a *core* participant appear in subject position, as opposed to a participant that is apparently non-core but is nevertheless object-marked, i.e., an affected participant appearing as the 'object' of a normally intransitive verb (see §8.2). As in the case of the single-participant reflexive reading, the grammatical subject in these passive-like clauses is almost always animate, and tends to be human; this is in keeping with the cross-linguistic tendency for subjects (semantic undergoers) in passive constructions to be high on the animacy/empathy hierarchy.

When the grammatical subject has a high level of responsibility and agency in bringing about the event, the semantic overlap between the reflexive and passive interpretations is particularly clear. For example, (23) is frequently said as a warning to someone – especially a child – who is venturing out in the forest alone:

- (23) *ʔám yāʔám-ǎn hup-wæd-té-h*
 2sg jaguar-OBJ RFLX-eat-FUT-DECL
 'You'll get (yourself) eaten by a jaguar.' (el)

Constructions with Reflexive *hup-* are nevertheless often neutral as to the degree of the subject's agency in bringing about the event, and may take a quite

straightforward passive interpretation. Further examples are provided in (24–26). Example (24) comes from a story in which the jaguars have just thrown their victim’s head into the river, only to witness it floating in the current and making a spooky sound, foretelling their own coming demise.

- (24) *híd-ǎn tih nín’-ĩw-ay*
 3pl-OBJ 3sg bad.omen-FLR-INCH
 “**hup**-nín’-íy, ?ín-ǎh,” *nɔ-yóʔ = mah*
 RFLX-bad.omen-DYNM 1pl-DECL say-SEQ=REP
 ‘It ‘bad-omened’ them; “we’ve gotten ‘bad-omened’,” they said...’ (txt)

- (25) *hup-hipoʔ-nih-ay = nih = mah yi-d’ǎh-ǎh*
 RFLX-meet-NEG-INCH=EMPH.CO=REP that-PL-DECL
 ‘And they were not caught, they say (by their mother).’ (txt)

- (26) *nu-cáʔ-áy = n’ǎn ?ǎh hup-?id-muhǔʔ-ǔtiʔ*
 this-side-DYNM=PL.OBJ 1sg RFLX-speak-play-EMPH.TAG
 ‘I get scolded by the people around here.’ (txt)

Note that the occurrence of the preform *hup-* as separated from the verb by a stated direct object is acceptable with the passive interpretation, as in the more prototypical reflexive case (see §11.1.1 above):

- (27) *hid = báb’ hup = yág w’ít-íy*
 3pl=sibling RFLX=hammock tie.hammock-DYNM
 ‘Their brother is having his hammock tied (by someone else).’ (el)

The passive reading of the reflexive also occurs with ditransitive constructions:

- (28) *?ín tǎh = mǎh-ǎnd’ǎh hup-d’oʔ-tubúd-úh*
 1pl son=DIM-ASSOC.PL RFLX-take-INTS3-DECL
 ‘My son and I were taken (i.e., served) a lot (of caxiri).’ (cv)

- (29) *?ǎh cecádio-ǎn hǎh hup-nóʔ-ǎy*
 1sg Cesario-OBJ merchandise RFLX-give-DYNM
 ‘I was given merchandise by Cesario.’ (el)

As discussed above, the interpretation of *hup* as a prefixed verbal Reflexive or an encliticized nominal Reflexive intensifier may be ambiguous. Where the subject undergoer of the (passive) clause outranks the actor (agent of the corresponding active clause; now an oblique argument) in terms of person or animacy, a passive reading is typically the default interpretation of a clause with *hup* (regardless of word order, as in example 23 above). On the other hand, in the case where the oblique actor outranks the subject undergoer, the interpretation of *hup* can be sensitive to variation in word order. This is illustrated in the elicited paradigm in example (30); the clause receives a reflexive/passive reading in (30a–b), but when the morphologically unmarked (i.e., nominative-case) participant immediately precedes the reflexive marker (30c–d), the default interpretation of the clause is active, and *hup* is understood as the Reflexive intensifier.

- (30) a) Preferred or default interpretation: Reflexive (passive)

yã?ám tiyĩ?-ǎn hup-mǎh-ǎy
 jaguar man-OBJ RFLX-kill-DYNM
 ‘The jaguar was killed by the man.’

- b) Only possible interpretation: Reflexive (passive)

hup-mǎh-ǎy tiyĩ?-ǎn yã?ám-ǎh
 RFLX-kill-DYNM man-OBJ jaguar-DECL¹³⁵
 ‘The jaguar was killed by the man.’

- c) Preferred or default interpretation: Reflexive intensifier

tiyĩ?-ǎn yã?ám = hup mǎh-ǎy
 man-OBJ jaguar=RFLX.INTS kill-DYNM
 ‘The jaguar itself killed the man.’

- d) Preferred or default interpretation: Reflexive intensifier

yã?ám = hup mǎh-ǎy tiyĩ?-ǎn-ǎh
 jaguar=RFLX.INTS kill-DYNM man-OBJ-DECL
 ‘The jaguar itself killed the man.’ (e1)

As noted above, animate actors or ‘perpetrators’ (the agents of the corresponding active clauses) of events expressed as reflexive (passive) constructions are marked with the Object case suffix *-ǎn*. However, while actors in these constructions are usually animate, they are not obligatorily so. When an actor is

¹³⁵ Declarative *-Vh* is required on clause-final subjects (see §17.2).

inanimate, it *cannot* take the Object marker *-ǎn*, in keeping with the restrictions relating to animacy (i.e., differential object marking) that govern the use of the Object marker in Hup (see §4.3.1.2). Instead, inanimate actors must take the Oblique case-marker (*-Vít*), as we see in example (31), reading (a). Alternatively, the fact that animal objects in active (non-reflexive) clauses are *optionally* marked with Object *-ǎn* permits the interpretation in reading (b), in which ‘deer’ is understood as the (unmarked) grammatical object of the killing event, rather than the subject undergoer – making *hup*, in turn, the indefinite human subject, and not a verbal Reflexive at all.

(31) *mɔhǔy tegd’úh-út hup (-) mǎh-ǎy*

Reading a: deer(S) tree-OBL RFLX- kill-DYNM

Reading b: deer(O) person(A)

a: ‘The deer got killed by a (falling) tree.’¹³⁶

(i.e., the wind blew it down, no human involved)

b: ‘Someone (human) killed the deer with a tree/log.’

(note that if ‘deer’ takes overt object-marking, this is the only possible interpretation)

Such a default interpretation of *hup* as an indefinite subject is also likely to occur with change-of-state verbs (which can easily take one or two core arguments), as in example (32a), since the subject in the simple clause without *hup* may already be understood to be the undergoer of the event (32b):

(32) a) *bǐʔ(-ǎn) dǎh-ét húp pu-yíʔ-íy = cud*

rat(-OBJ) water-OBL person(A) wet-TEL-DYNM=INFR

‘Someone wet the rat with water.’

b) *bǐʔ dǎh-ét pu-yíʔ-íy = cud*

rat(S) water-OBL wet-TEL-DYNM=INFR

‘The rat got wet in the rain/water.’ (el)

The use of *hup* as an impersonal subject and as a Reflexive marker (in a reflexive construction with a passive interpretation) may in some contexts be

¹³⁶ The preferred way to express the same concept involves the Factitive prefix *hi-* (see §11.4):

mɔhǔy tegd’úh-út nɔh-hitǎʔ-ǎy

deer tree-OBL fall-FACT.crush-DYNM

‘The deer was crushed by the (falling) tree.’ (el)

pragmatically equivalent. For example, (33) (which had neither of the first person forms in parentheses when originally uttered) may be grammatically ambiguous, if the intonation and pause clues defining *hup* as a free or bound form are not clear (as is often the case in fast speech). The clause may be understood either as a straightforward ditransitive construction with a pro-dropped (object) recipient ‘me’ and impersonal subject ‘someone’ (as in 33a), or as a reflexive (passive) construction with a pro-dropped subject ‘I’ (as in 33b). Pragmatically, however, the same message is conveyed by either reading.

- (33) a) *těg = mæh (ʔǎn) hup hũh-nih*
 wood=DIM (1sg.OBJ) person(A) carry-NEG
 ‘No one carries any wood (for me).’
- b) *těg = mæh hup-hũh-nih (ʔǎh-ǎh)*
 wood=DIM RFLX-carry-NEG (1sg[S]-DECL)
 ‘(I) don’t get any wood carried (for me).’ (txt)

11.1.3. Reciprocal reading of *hup*: subjects act on each other

When a Reflexive construction occurs with a plural subject, or with multiple coordinated singular subjects, a reciprocal reading may also be possible (in addition to the reflexive and passive readings), as in (34).¹³⁷ However, the Interactional marker *ʔũh-* is normally preferred in this context, and a reciprocal reading of *hup-* appears to be available only when when the subject of the clause is perceived as a group acting on itself.

- (34) *tǎʔǎy = d’əh hup-kəmən-d’óʔ-óy*
 woman=PL RFLX-encircle.with.arms-take-DYNM
 ‘The women embrace each other.’ (el)

In cases where Reflexive *hup-* can take a reciprocal interpretation, it is interchangeable with the Interactional preform *ʔũh-*:

¹³⁷ To indicate a coordinated reflexive action on the part of multiple subjects (i.e., ‘doing V to themselves, together’), an alternative strategy involves the Interactional marker *ʔũh-* and the Reflexive intensifier form *híd = hup = yiʔ* (see §11.2 below).

- (35) *tát deh-ét = ʔũy = d'əh ʔũh-nɔʔ-níh...*
 Ant Water-OBL=who=PL INTRC-give-NEG

bahéra-át = ʔũy = d'əh wæđ hup-nɔʔ-níh

Barreira-OBL=who=PL food RFLX-give-NEG

'The people of Tat Deh don't give (food) to each other... the people of Barreira don't give food to each other.' (txt)

In example (36), a reflexive construction has a reciprocal interpretation – but an asymmetrical one, since it is unlikely that two piranhas would actually eat each other in a true reciprocal sense. As discussed in §11.2 below, such an asymmetrical interpretation is a normal possibility for reciprocal constructions generally in Hup.

- (36) *ʔít = d'əh híd = hup = yíʔ hup-wæđ-áy = cud*
 piranha=PL 3pl=RFLX.INTS=TEL RFLX-eat-DYNM=INFR
 'The piranhas themselves are eating each other.' (ru)

Comparative and Historical note

Dâw uses the form *xup* both as a reflexive intensifier, a reflexive marker, and as a noun meaning 'human body'; the related form *xub* precedes the verb and acts as a reciprocal marker. Note that Dâw has a different word for 'human being' (S. Martins 2004: 379–383), whereas Hup uses the distinct form *cáp* for 'body' (and *hup* for 'human being'). No information is available on the reflexive construction in Yuhup, but Nadëb uses the apparently unrelated reflexive/reciprocal/passive form *ka-* (Weir 1984: 107).

The formal similarity and (in some contexts) the functional ambiguity of the noun 'person', the nominal intensifier, and the verbal reflexive marker (with its several functions) is undoubtedly an indication of their historical relationship. Such a relationship is cross-linguistically common, and has been attributed to the following general path of grammaticalization, which seems to be attested in a number of the world's languages (cf. Heine 2000, Knjazev 1998, König and Siemund 2000: 56):

Nominal source (usually 'body') → Intensifier → Reflexive → Reciprocal → Middle → Passive

In Hup, the form *hup* reflects all of these semantic areas (except perhaps the middle voice). It is hoped that further study will shed more light on the processes of grammaticalization that led to the present system.

11.2. Reciprocal relations and Interactional *ʔũh*-¹³⁸

Hup's primary strategy for indicating reciprocal relations involves the verbal preform *ʔũh*-, the focus of this section. Aside from this preform, secondary reciprocal strategies are limited, but also exist; these are the Reflexive preform *hup*- (as discussed in §11.1.3 above) and the lexically specific use of the noun *bab* 'sibling' as a preform, as discussed (in comparison with *ʔũh*) in the 'Historical note' below. Hup has few natural lexical reciprocals, in the sense of a verb that entails a reciprocal reading; even verbs like *kay*'- 'embrace' and *təw*- 'scold, speak angrily to' tend to be interpreted in a neutral context as non-reciprocal (transitive with a dropped object) if not overtly marked as reciprocal/interactive. The Interactional marker *ʔũh*- is nonetheless frequently optional when a reciprocal reading can be recovered from the discursive or pragmatic context. Further discussion of Hup's reciprocal strategies can be found in Epps (forthcoming b).

The most common use of the preform *ʔũh*- is to signal a reciprocal interaction, and it is the preferred means for doing so in almost all cases. As such, it decreases valency. However, *ʔũh*- is not limited to a strictly reciprocal function, but is also used to indicate a more general interaction of two or more agentive co-participants in the performance of an activity (hence the gloss 'Interactional'); this use does not necessarily involve a change in valency.

Examples of the more prototypical, symmetric reciprocal use of *ʔũh*- include *ʔũh-cob*- (INTRC-point) 'point at each other', and the semi-lexicalized forms *ʔũh-g'əç*- (INTRC-bite) 'fight' (especially dogs; example 37) and *ʔũh-mæh*- (INTRC-beat/kill) 'fight' (especially in the latter form, speakers frequently drop the /h/ in *ʔũh*-). Another example is provided in (38). Asymmetric and non-reciprocal examples of *ʔũh*- are given in the subsequent discussion.

¹³⁸ This discussion was informed by materials from the *Reciprocals across languages* project (Evans and Nordlinger 2004), and the elicitation materials (including video clips) produced by the Max Planck Institute for Psycholinguistics (Evans et al. 2004). Thanks to Nick Evans, Stephen Levinson, and other participants in the Reciprocals Workshop at MPI Nijmegen (April 21, 2006) for helpful comments on the material discussed in this section.

- (37) *yãʔamböʔ = d'əh ʔũh-g'əç-əy*
 dog=PL INTRC-bite-DYNM
 'The dogs are fighting.' (lit. 'biting each other') (el)
- (38) *pəʔ hid ʔũh-pəʔ-əy, hũ hid*
 dabacuri 3pl INTRC-dabacuri-DYNM game.animal 3pl
- ʔũh-pəʔ-əy, hõp hid ʔũh-pəʔ-əy...*
 INTRC-dabacuri-DYNM fish 3pl INTRC-dabacuri-DYNM
 'They (the Ancestors) had dabacuris for each other; they ritually
 presented game to each other; they ritually presented fish to each other...'
 (txt)

The formal characteristics defining Interactional *ʔũh-* include the fact that it usually appears as a verbal prefix (cf. §3.4.1.1), realized as a phonological unit together with its host: it is unstressed, and is not separated from the verb by a pause. However, in the context of a ditransitive verb with a stated direct object (i.e., a non-beneficiary/recipient), it may optionally occur as a phonologically free prepositional particle, detached from the verb stem (a similar phenomenon is attested for the Reflexive prefix *hup-*; see §11.1 above). In this context (and only this context), *ʔũh-* may be separated from the verb stem by the object nominal, and (unlike *hup-*) it receives independent stress (rising tone). Consultants describe this construction as semantically equivalent to the alternative order of [Obj *ʔũh*-Verb] (e.g., *hid nám ʔũh-nəʔ-əy*). The phenomenon is illustrated in example (39); see also (57) and (58) below.

- (39) *hid ʔũh nám nəʔ-əy*
 3sg INTRC poison give-DYNM
 'They give poison to each other.' (txt)

Where *ʔũh* occurs as a free prepositional particle, it is likely that the object noun is undergoing a unique form of incorporation into the verb that follows it (although noun incorporation is otherwise largely unproductive in Hup; see §9.6). Evidence for this is the fact that the object nominal is always unstressed (like all non-final compounded elements in verbs), that the pronominal subject of the clause cannot intervene between the object nominal and the verb (as it can in a simple transitive clause), and that the object cannot be modified by the Plural marker =*d'əh*, the Object case marker *-ən*, a demonstrative, an adjective, or any other modifier – unlike object nominals that precede [*ʔũh* + Verb] or occur anywhere else in a clause:

- (40) a) *hid ʔūh* [**núp*] *nam nɔʔ-ǎy*
 3pl INTRC this poison give-DYNM
 ‘They give each other [**this*] poison.’
- b) *hid kaʔáp=d’əh ʔūh tog* [**=d’əh, *-ǎn, *-n’ǎn*] *bé-éy*
 3pl two=PL INTRC daughter [**PL *OBJ *PL.OBJ*] show-DYNM
 ‘The two of them show each other their daughters.’
- c) *hid ʔūh hɔp* [**pǒg*] *nɔʔ-ǎy*
 3pl INTRC fish big give-DYNM
 ‘They give each other [**big*] fish.’ (el)

Other features of Interactional *ʔūh-* include the fact that almost all examples of its use – in keeping with the semantics of reciprocal or interactive action – involve a transitive verb (either mono-transitive or ditransitive). However, consultants do judge certain intransitive Interactional constructions to be grammatical, with the interpretation that they involve fully interactive co-participants (example 41).

- (41) *ʔūhhiwīh hid ʔūh-g’ǎʔ-ǎy*
 between.associates 3pl INTRC-be.suspended-DYNM
 ‘They are together in the same hammock.’ (lit. ‘They are suspended [in a single hammock] interactively’; i.e., bodies are in contact, especially with limbs intertwined.) (el)

Also in keeping with its semantics, Interactional *ʔūh-* usually requires a plural subject; a singular subject is normally ungrammatical:

- (42) **yúp = ʔīh ʔūh-nɔm’-ǎy*
 that.ITG=MSC INTRC-poke-DYNM

However, in a few cases where the Interactional marker is semi-lexicalized together with the verb stem, consultants judge a singular subject to be grammatical (but an explicit object such as *cāp = ʔīh-an* (other=MSC-OBJ) ‘someone else’ is not permitted):

- (43) a) *yúp = ʔīh ʔūh-mǎh-ǎy*
 that.ITG=MSC INTRC-hit/kill-DYNM
 ‘That man is fighting (with someone).’

- b) *yúp* *yãʔambõʔ* ***ʔũh-g'****éç-éy*
 that.ITG dog INTRC-bite-DYNM
 ‘That dog is fighting (with some other dog).’ (el)

Where the subject of the clause is a conjunction of two (or more) singular entities (rare in natural discourse), consultants prefer the use of the ‘Associative plural’ suffix *-ãnd'əh* (see §4.4.6) on both:

- (44) *tiyĩʔ-ãnd'əh* *tãʔãy'-ãnd'əh* *hõp* ***ʔũh-nóʔ-éy***
 man-ASSOC.PL woman-ASSOC.PL fish INTRC-give-DYNM
 ‘The man and woman give fish to each other.’ (el)

Although subjects of the Interactional construction are almost always animate, this is not a requirement. For example, two trees may reciprocally hit each other in the wind, or two canoes bump against each other in the waves:

- (45) *hõhtěg=d'əh* *ʔaʔáb'-át* ***ʔũh-nõh-d'ák-áy***
 canoe=PL wave-OBL INTRC-fall-be.against.vertical-DYNM
 ‘The canoes are hitting against each other in the waves.’ (el)

A further formal aspect of Interactional *ʔũh-* is its use in verbal compounds. In this context, it precedes the entire compound, as in (46); no cases have been encountered in which *ʔũh-* occurs compound-medially (i.e., with scope over a single compound-internal root), in contrast to the other two valency-adjusting preforms, Reflexive *hup-* and Factitive *hi-*. However, *ʔũh-* need not take scope over the entire compound if the final verb root has a causativizing effect (see example 47).

- (46) *húp=d'əh* ***ʔũh-tab'ah-g'et-d'əh-hí-íy***
 person=PL INTRC-slap-stand-send-descend-DYNM
 ‘The people are standing in a row slapping each other.’ (el)

The Interactional gram can interact with other valence-adjusting mechanisms. It feeds a causative verb compound in example (47), and is fed by an applicative (to which it is identical in form; see §11.3 below) in (48):

- (47) *b'õy=ʔĩh* *híd-ăn* [***ʔũh-biʔ-hitam***]-*yãéh-áéy* = *mah*
 study=MSC 3pl-OBJ [INTRC-work-help]-request-DYNM=REP
 ‘The teacher ordered/made the children help each other, it’s said.’ (el)

- (48) *Pěd, Mət hũ-d'áp hid ʔũh-ciw-ʔũh-ũy*
 Ped Mət animal-meat 3pl INTRC-cook-APPL-DYNM
 'Ped and Mət cooked meat for each other.' (el)

The Interactional construction can also be fed by some reflexives:

- (49) *hid ʔũh-hup-yəd-óy*
 3pl INTRC-RFLX-hide-DYNM
 'They are hiding from each other.' (el)

Finally, Interactional *ʔũh-* occurs with certain non-verbal predicates, but this is limited to terms which are two-place predicates and their own converses. All examples encountered to date involve kin relationships, as in constructions like (50) (in which *ʔũh-* is strongly preferred):

- (50) *ʔũh-yǝh = d'əh yi-d'ǝh-śh*
 INTRC-affine=PL that.ITG-PL-DECL
 'They are affinal relatives/cross-cousins.'

The semantics of *ʔũh-* is relatively flexible. While examples of its more symmetric reciprocal use are given above (e.g., 37–38), it is also used in cases of asymmetric reciprocity, as in examples (51–52). In (51), the participants' speaking amongst themselves is an example of a 'mêlée'-type reciprocal event, in which an activity is performed among a group of people, with no necessarily symmetric interaction between pairs of actors. Example (52) illustrates a 'chain' type situation, in which the first entity acts on the second, the second in turn acts on the third, and so on.

- (51) “*ʔĩn = ʔín = tǝh = cud yúw-úh...*” *hid ʔũh-nó-ay-áh*
 1pl=mother=son=INFR that-DECL 3pl INTRC-say-INCH-DECL
 '“That's our mother's child...” they were saying amongst themselves.'
 (txt)

- (52) *cug'ǝt = d'əh ʔǝy-hiyó? ʔũh-nəh-wób-óy*
 book=PL together-on.top.of INTRC-fall-rest.on-DYNM
 'The books fell on top of each other.' (el)

The use of *ʔũh-* to signal asymmetric reciprocity, as in the examples above, blends into an even more generally pluractional function. As such, *ʔũh-* typically indicates the general interactive involvement of multiple agentive participants in an event. In the second occurrence of *ʔũh-* in (53), for example, the

spirits' chasing after a girl (who is being carried away by another spirit) is necessarily asymmetrical and barely reciprocal at all (compare English "on each others' heels"); moreover, 'that girl' is the case-marked direct object of the clause, indicating that Interactional *?ũh-* has no effect on valency here. Similarly, in the second part of (54), the use of *?ũh-* is linked to a general reciprocal *situation* (that of interacting together, by sharing coca, on the basis of affinal relationships), whereas the actual event signaled by the verb is not itself reciprocal at all. Note that in this case there appears to be no actual change in valency.

- (53) *?ũh-nɔ-hám-ǎy = mah* *yí? -d'ǎh-ǎh,* *yúp = ?ǎy-ǎn*
 INTRC-say-go-INCH=REP that-pl-DECL that=FEM-OBJ

?ũh-toh-hám = d'ǎh

INTRC-chase-go=PL

'("Mine, mine!"), those (spirits) all went saying to each other, chasing after that girl (together).' (txt)

- (54) *?in* *?ũh bab' -ni-d' o? -píd-ih;* *?in = yǎh = d'ǎh-ét*
 1pl INTRC companion-be-take-DIST-DECL 1pl=affine=PL-OBL

?in *bab' -ni-yó?...* *pũ?ũk* *b'ǎ?*
 1pl companion-be-SEQ coca gourd

?ũh-næm' -key-yó?, *?in* *ni-píd-ih*

INTRC-lick-see-SEQ 1pl be-DIST-DECL

'We all joined company with each other; having joined company with our affines... having tasted the coca together, we stayed thus.' (txt)

Interactional *?ũh-* may be used in this sense even when only two entities are involved in the event. For example, (55) comes from a description of a scene in a picture story¹³⁹ in which the boy and dog have just fallen into a stream; both are trying to get out, and in the process the dog has climbed onto the boy's shoulders. This use of the reciprocal is probably best understood as a characterization of the general scene of their struggle to leave the stream (much like the English 'climbing over each other').

¹³⁹ Frog, Where Are You? (Mayer 1969).

- (55) *ʔǎy-buycól, yíkán dǎh-an nǎh-tuʔ-yól,*
 together-on.top over.there water-DIR fall-immersed-SEQ

hid ʔũh-hitoy'-cak-ní-b'ay-áh

3pl INTRC-support.on.head-climb-be=AGAIN-DECL

'On top of each other, having fallen there in the water, they are climbing up on each other.' (txt)

In cases like (55), use of an interactive expression with *ʔũh-* appears to be canonically *non*-reciprocal, involving two participants in an essentially agent-patient relationship to each other. Where the Interactional construction is used in this way, it is interchangeable with a straightforward transitive clause. The choice of the Interactional form seems to be motivated by the speaker's desire to characterize the event simply as an interaction between participants, while de-emphasizing their identity and who does what to whom. For example, after watching a video clip of one person taking off his watch and giving it to another person (i.e., a prototypically non-reciprocal event), consultants phrased their description of the event as a reciprocal (example 56); they did the same for a clip of two people sitting side by side, with one turning repeatedly to look at the other.¹⁴⁰ Conversely, Interactional *ʔũh-* is *not* grammatical when there is no interaction between participants in the scene, such as in a clip of people sitting side by side and looking straight ahead.

- (56) *húp=d'əh hedógio ʔũh-poʔ-nǎʔ-pǎm-ǎy*
 person=PL watch INTRC-open-give-sit-DYNM
 'The people are taking off and giving a watch while sitting.' (el)

While such uses of the Interactional construction are rare in natural discourse (where events are contextualized and who does what to whom is normally significant), two examples are encountered in my text corpus (57–58). In these, a construction involving *ʔũh-* refers to an event that is not reciprocal at all – one participant is strictly the agent, the other strictly the patient. Both examples come from stories in which one participant plays a nasty trick on the other, and in both cases the storyteller is 'foreshadowing' the event before it actually takes

¹⁴⁰ These video clips were part of a series (Evans et al. 2004) designed to elicit reciprocal constructions, so the events pictured were decontextualized and speakers were primed to think in terms of reciprocity/interaction. In a different context, their first response to events like the watch-giving in (56) would normally involve a transitive construction with a clear agent and patient.

place. It is probably the teller's desire to hint at the event to come – without going into too much detail too early – which leads him/her to use the reciprocal construction to convey a general interactive sense. In addition, in both cases the 'victim' of the action (pulling out of eyeballs or piercing of an anus) is complicit in that he is tricked into requesting it, so that the event can be conceived as symmetric in that the participants share equal willingness or responsibility; the narrator may be exploiting this for artistic purposes. In (57), we see *?ũh-* used both in its standard reciprocal sense (with 'say') and in a more generally interactional sense (with 'pierce').

- (57) “*máy j'ɔm-ʔay-nǎŋ, ʔiʔ = tǎǎh !*” *hid*
 let's.go bathe-VENT-COOP mother=son 3pl

?ũh-nɔ-d'ób-ay-áh... *hid ʔǎh yɔmɔy yók-ay-áh*
 INTRC-say-go.to.river-INCH-DECL 3pl INTRC anus pierce-INCH-DECL
 “‘Let's go bathe, mother's son!’ they said to each other, going down to the river... they would engage in anus-piercing together’ (i.e., one would poke out an anus for the other). (txt)

- (58) *hid ʔǎh kəwəg wɔt-té-ay-áh*
 3pl INTRC eye pull.out-FUT-INCH-DECL
 ‘They will engage in eye-pulling-out together.’ (i.e., one would pull out the other's eyes) (txt)

Because of this functional flexibility of Interactional *?ũh*, its interpretation is potentially vague. Fixed lexical expressions may help to reinforce one or the other interpretation (true reciprocity vs. other interaction) of a predicate marked with *?ũh-*. In fact, even a kind of interactive *reflexive* interpretation is possible when lexically specified. Both (59) and (60) involve the Interactional marker, but the preferred interpretation is that the two participants are acting jointly to poke their own bodies, not the other person's.

- (59) *tǎʔáy, tiyĩ? híd = hup(= yíʔ) ʔũh-nóm'-ǎy*
 woman man 3pl=RFLX.INTS(=TEL) INTRC-poke-DYNM
 ‘The man and woman together are each poking themselves.’ (el)

- (60) *tǎʔáy, tiyĩ? hidnǎh cáp-át ʔũh-nóm'-ǎy*
 woman man 3pl.POSS body-OBL INTRC-poke-DYNM
 ‘The man and woman together both poke on their own bodies.’ (el)

A true reciprocal interpretation can be reinforced with an explicit lexical reciprocal expression, as in (61).

- (61) *tiyĩʔ tãʔǎy (ʔūhhiwĩh) ʔūh-nóm'-ǎy*
 man woman (between.relative) INTRC-poke-DYNM
 'The man and woman poke each other.' (el)

This lexical expression *ʔūh-hiwĩh* is translated as 'between relatives/close associates', and also occurs in nominalized form as a generic kin term, *ʔūh-hiwĩh = d'əh* 'relatives, close associates'. It is apparently formed from the Interactional marker¹⁴¹ and the verb *hiwĩh-* (itself made up of the Factitive prefix *hi-* and a root that consultants say is meaningless on its own), which means 'restrain from fighting or danger'. The kin term *ʔūh-hiwĩh = d'əh* would thus be a (semi-lexicalized) headless relative clause meaning 'those who restrain each other from trouble'.

Another expression is the collocation *ʔǎy-hi-póʔ = yiʔ* (together-FACT-open/take.out=TEL), which involves the morphologically complex form *hipóʔ* 'opposite'. This collocation can be used to express opposite or facing spatial orientation, but often acts to reinforce a reciprocal interaction:

- (62) *tiyĩʔ = d'əh ʔūhhiwĩh hǎp ʔūh-nóʔ-ǎy,*
 man=PL between.relative fish INTRC-give-DYNM

ʔǎy-hi-póʔ = yiʔ
 together-FACT-open=TEL
 'The men are giving fish to each other, reciprocally.' (el)

Other expressions involving the bound form *ʔǎy-* 'together' also encode togetherness and interaction, but are not necessarily reciprocal; these include *ʔǎy-hiyóʔ* and *ʔǎy-buycóʔ* (together-on/above) 'on top of each other' (see example 55 above), *ʔǎy-ǎt(=yiʔ)* (*ʔǎy-OBL[=TEL]*), and *ʔǎy-tæn(=yiʔ)* (*ʔǎy-comparative[=TEL]*) 'together', as in (63).

- (63) *ʔǎy-tæn = yíʔ hid mæh-b'uy-d'əh-ham-yíʔ-ay-áh !*
 together-MEAS2=TEL 3pl kill-throw-send-go-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'Together they killed (them) all and threw (them) out of the way!' (txt)

¹⁴¹ But see the related use of *ʔūh* as 'sibling of opposite sex' (described below).

In addition to its realization as a Interactional marker, the bound form *?ũh* has a remarkable number of other uses in Hup (cf. §3.3). As an Inner Suffix, it creates an applicative construction (see §11.3 below); it also appears as a verbal Boundary Suffix marking jussive mood and as a particle (not limited to verbs) marking epistemic modality (§11.3 and §14.7–14.8).¹⁴²

Yet another realization of *?ũh* is as a free lexical noun meaning ‘sibling of opposite sex’. As such, it may be alienably possessed (as in 64 and 66) or inalienably possessed (as in 65); it also receives the bound nominal =*?ǎy* ‘female’ when the referent is female (*?ũh* = *?ǎy* ‘sister’; examples 64–65). Note that other, different words for ‘sibling’, ‘close relative or companion’, and ‘older/younger brother/sister’ (real or classificatory) also exist in Hup, and are in fact more frequently used kin terms than *?ũh*.

- (64) *núp ?in=dú nñh, hũt túj=?ĩh nñh ?ũh=?ǎy,*
 this 1pl=ancestor POSS tobacco light=MSC POSS sibling=FEM

?ũh=?ǎy ní-ĩy b’iyi?=mah

sibling=FEM be-DYNM only=REP

‘There was our ancestor Cigar-Lighter’s classificatory sister, everyone’s sister was there.’ (txt)

- (65) *nĩŋ=?íp=?ũh=?ǎy=hõ ní-ĩy yǎh ?ǎh-ǎh*
 2pl=father=sibling=FEM=NONVIS be-DYNM FRUST 1sg-DECL
 ‘I guess I actually am your father’s sister.’ (cv)

- (66) *nñ ?ũh=n’ǎn núp j’ah-át kək-næn-g’et-yó?,*
 1sg.POSS sibling=PL.OBJ this land-OBL pull-come-stand-SEQ

cɔkw’ət nɔg’od tǎh=d’əh nñh j’áh-át..

toucan mouth offspring=PL POSS land-OBL

‘Having brought my siblings to stay in this land, the land of the Toucan’s Beak Clansmen...’ (sg)

¹⁴² It is also likely that the same form *?ũh* occurs in the lexeme *dap?ũh* ‘hand’ (possibly from *d’ap* ‘flesh’ + *?ũh*; i.e., ‘togetherness of flesh’); compare Tukano *amû pa?ma* ‘hand’ (lit. ‘superior.part group’).

Historical note

There is considerable evidence that a historical relationship exists between the Interactional marker and the nominal form *ʔūh* ‘sibling of opposite sex’. From a comparative perspective, a connection between a reciprocal marker and a kin term ‘sibling’ or ‘brother’ has been demonstrated for other languages, including Biblical Hebrew (in which reciprocity can be expressed as ‘(a) man [(to) his-brother]’; Jouion 2000: 546) and possibly Tok Pisin (Fedden 2005). Similarly, reciprocal expressions are built on ‘fellow’ or ‘comrade’ in Welsh, Koromfe (Niger-Congo), and Sechellois (Evans and Nordlinger 2004). Thus the semantic leap from ‘sibling’ or ‘comrade’ to reciprocal interaction is not so great that a number of languages could not make it independently; this is undoubtedly because interaction among siblings is – in many or most cultures – prototypically cooperative, relatively egalitarian, and therefore reciprocal.

In Hup, moreover, there is a comparable language-internal transition from the expression of ‘sibling’ to reciprocity or interaction. The kin term *báb* ‘real or classificatory sibling’ is incorporated in a few lexically specific verb forms (cf. §9.6 on noun incorporation), all of which have reciprocal or more generally interactive semantics. The most common are *bab’-ni-* ‘accompany; be consanguinally related to’ and *bab’-ʔid-* ‘chat together’. As example (67) illustrates, the interpretation of the clause containing *bab’* may in certain contexts be ambiguous:

- (67) a) *híd bab’-ʔid-íy*
 3pl sibling-speak-DYNM
 ‘They are chatting (together).’
- b) *híd=báb’ ʔid-íy*
 3pl=sibling speak-DYNM
 ‘Their sibling is talking.’ (el)

While these two verbal forms of *bab’* (‘accompany’ and ‘chat together’) are the only ones in really common use, there is actually some evidence that the incorporation of *bab’* into verbs is marginally productive. One speaker used the verbal *bab’-g’et-* (sibling-stand) and even the variant *bab’-bab’-g’et-* (in which ‘sibling’ is repeated) to describe a picture of several pairs of books standing on end on a table, with each pair propped together at the top to form an acute angle. Similarly, another speaker used *ʔūh-bab’-pæm-* (INTRC-sibling-sit-) to describe a video clip of two men sitting side by side, with one turning repeatedly to look at the other.

It is therefore likely that the Interactional marker derives historically from the noun *ʔũh* ‘opposite-sex sibling’. According to one possible historical scenario, the kin term would have undergone an initial process of incorporation into the verb, much like that experienced by *bab*’ ‘classificatory sibling’. This would presumably have initially involved only a few specific lexical items, as is currently the case with *bab*’. Unlike *bab*’, however, *ʔũh* would have become generalized by analogy until it was fully productive as a noun-incorporated form in the language. This phase of noun incorporation would have been fleeting, however, probably because noun incorporation is a largely unproductive process in Hup generally; thus *ʔũh-* would have become reanalyzed as a verbal formative, rather than a bound root. In the process, it would have retained a degree of independence from the verb, such that it still occurs as a free form in the context of a pre-verbal object in a ditransitive clause.

Evidence for this scenario includes the fact that, as with *bab*’ in example (67) above, a clause may be syntactically ambiguous between the two interpretations of *ʔũh* (‘they did V reciprocally’ and ‘their opposite-sex sibling did V’), especially when Interactional *ʔũh* appears as a free particle:

- (68) a) *híd ʔũh [cug’æt nɔʔ-šy]*
 3pl INTRC leaf/book give-DYNM
 ‘They give each other a book.’
 (Or: ‘They are engaged in book-giving.’)
- b) *híd = ʔũh cuk’æt nɔʔ-šy*
 3pl=os.sibling leaf/book give-DYNM
 ‘Their brother gives (someone) a book.’ (el)

That an expression like (68b) (in which the object of ‘give’ is dropped) might have been reanalyzed as (68a) is pragmatically plausible in the context of Hup culture, where the canonical reciprocal activity is the giving of meat and other items among close kin; likewise a close kin relationship presupposes such an on-going exchange.

But, assuming this scenario is the correct one, why was it ‘*opposite-sex sibling*’ – of the several words for ‘sibling’ in Hup – that underwent this grammaticalization to a general marker of interaction and reciprocity, rather than *báb*’ ‘real or classificatory sibling’, or some other sibling term? One possible explanation is the region-wide cultural importance of opposite-sex siblings in marriage exchange. In the Vaupés region generally, the preferred marriage pattern is sister exchange – ideally involving blood siblings, not simply classificatory siblings – such that a brother-sister pair (of one clan/family) is matched to a brother-sister pair (of another clan/family). This is a strong prerogative among

many of the region's groups, and the close relationships that sometimes arise between blood brothers and sisters are said to have the "purpose" of providing for their marriage (cf. Goldman 1963: 122–123, Chernela 1993: 66, Jackson 1983: 126–127). While the Hupd'əh are generally more lackadaisical about marriage rules than are the River Indians, they are certainly aware of this regional ideal, and conform to it when possible or convenient.

There are several examples from my text corpus in which *ʔũh-* occurs as an Interactional marker in relation to affinal relationships and sister exchange (examples 69–70). Here *ʔũh* precedes a kin term, which may or may not be incorporated into the verb; this is formally little different from a construction in which nominal *ʔũh* 'sibling' precedes another kin term as an inalienable possessor.

- (69) *ʔũh-yɔh-ní-íy,* *yúp* *mɔhǎy = kəʔ = tǎh = d'əh,*
 INTRC-affine-be-DYNM that deer='bone'=offspring=PL

hǎy, *yúp* *cɔkw'ət = nɔg'od = tǎh = d'əh*
 um that toucan=mouth=offspring=PL
 'Affinally associated with each other, those Deer-Bone clansmen, um,
 and those Toucan's-Beak clansmen.' (txt)

- (70) ...*ʔũh yawám = ʔáy* *ní-íy,* *cɔkw'ət = nɔg'od = tǎh = ʔih...*
 INTRC younger.sibling-FEM be-DYNM toucan=mouth=offspring=MSC
 '...Having each others' younger sisters, that Toucan's-Beak clansman...'

It may also be relevant that Interactional *ʔũh-* has been encountered with kin terms acting as predicate nominals (as in 71 and in 50 above), but with no other nouns.

- (71) *pedú-ǎnd'əh* *ʔũh-báb' = d'əh*
 Pedro-ASSOC.PL INTRC-sibling=PL
 'Pedro and he/they are brothers.' (el)

The comparative data that is currently available from Hup's sister languages offers relatively few clues to this historical puzzle. The pre-verbal form *ʔũh-* appears to have a reciprocal function in Yuhup, but there is no indication in Ospina (2002) that it is used as a free lexeme. Dâw's reciprocal marker is *hub*, and in Nadëb the reciprocal/reflexive construction is reportedly quite distinct from that found in Hup (see §11.1 above). However, Dâw is reported to have a verb *ʔuh* 'be equal/equivalent to' (Martins 2004: 61, 662), which is phonologically quite similar to Hup *ʔũh* (differing only in its lack of nasalization), and is

also comparable semantically. If the Dâw and Hup forms are indeed related, it is possible that the Hup noun ‘opposite-sex sibling’ was itself derived from a historically prior verbal form (via productive processes of nominal derivation; see §4.6) before it gave rise to the Interactional preform, or that the Interactional gram and the kin term are each independently derived from this verb. It is hoped that further investigation into the history of the form *ʔũh*, particularly as new data from Hup’s sister languages becomes available, will shed more light on this story.

11.3. Applicative -*ʔũh*-

Unlike the other valence-adjusting forms described in this chapter, the Applicative marker is not a prefix, but an Inner Suffix. This is the form -*ʔũh*-, which is otherwise formally identical to the Interactional preform described above (§11.2). Like all Inner Suffixes in Hup, the Applicative marker is normally obligatorily followed by a Boundary Suffix (except in imperative and apprehensive moods; cf. §3.4.1.2).

In contrast to the Interactional preform *ʔũh*-, which often functions to decrease valency, Applicative -*ʔũh*- is a valency-*increaser*: it always adds a participant, which is crucially animate. The most common use of the Applicative involves creating a ditransitive construction from a transitive verb by adding a recipient or a beneficiary/maleficiary, as in examples (72–75). In these examples, the Applicative suffix is in general required for a ditransitive reading to be possible.

(72) *tih* = *dehwăh* *tih* = *tăĕh* = *n’ăn* *tih* *b’əh-g’et-ʔũh-ũh*
 3sg=bad.manicuera 3sg-child=PL.OBL 3sg pour-stand-APPL-DECL
 ‘She fixed bad manicuera for her children.’ (txt)

(73) *ʔăh* = *tăĕh ʔíp* *ʔăn* *tih* *d’oʔ-ʔũh-ũh*, *yěw...*
 1sg=child.father 1sg.OBJ 3sg take-APPL-DECL armadillo

ʔăn *tih* *măh-ʔũh-ũh*, *hăt*
 1sg.OBJ 3sg kill-APPL-DECL, alligator
 ‘My husband took armadillos for me... killed alligators for me.’ (txt)

(74) *ʔám-ăn* *d’oʔ-ʔũh-nih-áh* *ʔăh-ăp*
 2sg-OBJ get-APPL-NEG-FOC 1sg-DEP
 ‘I’m not going to get any (cookies) for you!’ (cv)

- (75) *ʔǎn tǝg hũh-ʔũh*
 1sg.OBJ wood carry-APPL.IMP
 ‘Carry some wood for me!’ (cv)

If the semantics of the verb does not allow for a recipient, then the additional participant introduced by the applicative is by default understood to be a beneficiary or maleficiary – someone who is affected by the action, or in whose place the action is being performed. This is always the case with lexically intransitive verbs, as in examples (76–77).

- (76) *híd nɔm’-ʔũh-ũy*
 3pl poke-APPL-DYNM
 ‘They are poking (someone) for him.’
 OR: ‘They are poking (someone’s stuff, without that person’s knowledge or request).’ (el)

- (77) *g’ãʔ-ʔũh-nih níh !*
 be.suspended-APPL-NEG be.IMP
 ‘Don’t lie in (my/someone else’s) hammock!’ (ru)

If explicitly stated, this participant is (as we have already seen) marked as an object (provided the animacy/number requirements for object-marking permit):

- (78) *híd (tǝh-ǎn) g’ãʔ-ʔũh-ũy*
 3pl 3sg-OBJ be.suspended-APPL-DYNM
 ‘They’re lying in (someone’s) hammock.’ (i.e., without his knowledge or approval) (el)

The Applicative also occurs with ditransitive verbs, where it adds a fourth (usually unnamed) participant. The default interpretation of these constructions is usually benefactive; the agent is performing the action in the place of another person, as a service:

- (79) *híd-ǎn hǝp tǝh nɔʔ-ʔũh-ũy*
 3pl-OBJ fish 3sg give-APPL-DYNM
 ‘He’s giving them fish (as a service to someone else, probably the owner of the fish).’ (el)

- (80) *núw-ǎn tǎh-ǎn wi-ʔǔh*
 this-OBJ 3sg-OBJ give.back-APPL.IMP
 ‘Give this back to him (for me).’ (ru)

11.3.1. Additional functions of postverbal *ʔǔh*

As mentioned in §3.3, *ʔǔh* is one of the most polyfunctional forms in Hup. In addition to its uses as a Interactional prefix, a free lexical noun ‘sibling of opposite sex’, and an Applicative suffix, *ʔǔh* has two other post-verbal realizations, with distinct uses not related to valency.

As a verbal Boundary Suffix, it functions to express jussive or optative mood (see §14.7):

- (81) *tán pátima wæd-ʔǔh*
 later Fatima eat-JUS
 ‘Let Fatima eat (it) later.’ (cv)

As a particle following nominal, adjectival, and verbal predicates, *ʔǔh* indicates epistemic modality (see §14.8):

- (82) *hǒp yǎéʔ=d’əh ʔǔh !*
 fish roast=PL EPIST
 ‘Maybe it’s people cooking fish.’ (discussing a smell) (cv)

The Jussive and Applicative uses of *ʔǔh*, and likewise the Jussive and Epistemic uses, are mutually incompatible; consultants judge their co-occurrence ungrammatical. This complementary distribution likely has a historical explanation, as discussed below and in the Historical notes in §14.7 and §14.8.

*Historical note*¹⁴³

Despite the impressively wide range of functions demonstrated by the form *ʔǔh*, there is good reason to suppose that some or all of these may be historically related. As discussed above, a relationship between the use of *ʔǔh* as a reciprocal or interactional prefix and as a kin term ‘sibling of opposite sex’ is cross-linguistically plausible, and is arguably motivated in Hup. Likewise, positing a

¹⁴³ Thanks to Mark Donohue for his comments on the material in this section.

historical chain of grammaticalization connecting the various post-verbal uses of *?ũh* – from Applicative to Jussive to Epistemic modality, in that order – appears to be justified, as argued in the Historical notes in §14.7 and §14.8 (and explains the inability of the Jussive, as the medial link, to co-occur with either the Applicative or the Epistemic form).

But does a relationship exist between the pre-verbal and the post-verbal uses of *?ũh*? There are significant differences between them, in addition to their distinct formal realizations. In particular, pre-verbal Interactional *?ũh-* often causes valency to decrease, while post-verbal Applicative *-?ũh-* causes it to increase. Also, the participants in a prototypical reciprocal relationship – the most canonical function of the Interactional construction – are both equally agentive, whereas in an applicative relationship one participant is typically an agent and the other a recipient/beneficiary.

Nevertheless, there is reason to think that the Applicative and the Interactional constructions may be historically related, although homonymy cannot at this point be definitively ruled out. First, their semantics have an important overlap: in both cases, *?ũh* signals an interactive, coordinated, and often cooperative relationship between multiple participants, which are almost always human. Moreover, the Interactional construction in Hup is semantically flexible, and can be used to refer to events that actually do involve an agent's acting on a patient (e.g., examples 56–58 above); that is, it is not restricted to events with equally agentive participants. Finally, there is some cross-linguistic evidence that a historical relationship between reciprocal and applicative or other valency-increasing constructions may exist – although this seems to be relatively rare among the world's languages. The Austronesian language Nias (Indonesia) uses the same morpheme for both reciprocal and applicative functions (Brown 2001), and there is evidence that a reciprocal marker developed into a morphological causative in Asheninka (Arawak family, Peru; D. Payne 2002: 501–502).

How could such a relationship between the Interactional preform and the Applicative suffix have come about in Hup? Of several possibilities, two paths of development seem to be the most likely options.

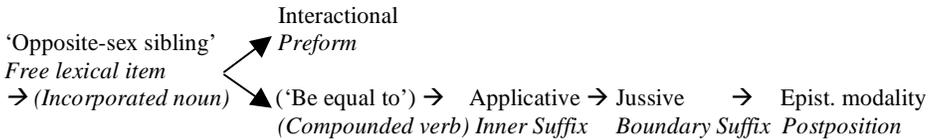
In the first, schematized in Figure 13a below, the incorporated kin term 'opposite-sex sibling' would have been reanalyzed as an Interactional preform. At the same time, the incorporated kin term could have been fleetingly reanalyzed as a component verb root within a compound – perhaps motivated in part by Hup's avoidance of noun incorporation (or historical move away from it; see §9.6) in such an environment. This new verbal identity would have allowed speakers to move *?ũh* to compound-final position in some contexts – the usual place for verb roots that contribute aspectual, modal, and other types of information to the compound as a whole (see §9.4.2.4) – where it would have had

the semantics of ‘act cooperatively’ or ‘act in a beneficial manner’. From there, it was a short step to an Inner Suffix (see §3.7 and §9.4.3).

The second (see Figure 13b), assumes that the verb *?uh* ‘be equal/ equivalent to’ that is reported for Dâw (see Martins 2004: 61, 662) is related to Hup *?ũh*, and that this verbal function is historically prior to the nominal one (but has since been lost in Hup). If this is the case, then the kin term ‘opposite-sex sibling’ is most likely derived from this verb (such verb > noun derivation is attested elsewhere in Hup; see §4.6), and probably developed subsequently into the Interactional preform via noun incorporation (as mentioned in §11.2, Historical note, above). The verb itself could easily have developed into the Applicative suffix independently via the compounding mechanisms discussed in §9.4.3.

Determining which – if either – of these two scenarios actually occurred will probably have to await further comparative data from Hup’s sister languages.

a)



b)

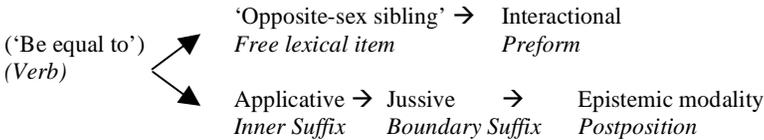


Figure 13. Possible grammaticalization paths for *?ũh*

11.4. Factitive *hi-*

The Factitive prefix *hi-*¹⁴⁴ is the least productive of the valency-adjusting operations discussed in this chapter. Many of the constructions in which it occurs are fully lexicalized, and have idiosyncratic, highly specific meanings relative to

¹⁴⁴ Factitive *hi-* is homonymous with the verb root *hi-* ‘descend’. This does not in general lead to confusion, since the verb *hi-* (like other motion/path verbs) typically appears compound-finally in any verb compound (cf. §9.4.2), whereas the Factitive is always followed by a verb root.

the stems from which they are apparently formed; in other cases these stems do not even occur as independent verbs¹⁴⁵. Both phonologically and morphosyntactically, the prefix *hi-* is relatively tightly bound to its host stem, in comparison to the Reflexive and Interactional preforms (see §2.5 and §3.4.1.1). A dialectal variant *mi-* of Factitive *hi-* is encountered among some speakers from the Vaupés river region (around Fatima and Santa Atanasio villages).

The *hi-* prefix most commonly combines with intransitive roots having stative or state-change semantics, and acts as a valency-increaser. However, *hi-* can also combine with active stems and those that typically take two arguments, and – especially in the latter case – does not necessarily add a syntactic argument to the clause. In such cases, *hi-* often functions rather to adjust the Transitivity of the clause without actually affecting its grammatical valency, by making the syntactic agent in some sense a semantic undergoer, or the syntactic patient/object relatively agentive (i.e., somehow responsible for inducing the event). Transitivity is here understood as a graded or relative phenomenon in the sense of Hopper and Thompson (1980); as they put it, the idea of Transitivity, or the “carrying-over or transferring an action from one participant to another”, can be broken down into “component parts”, such as the telicity and punctuality of the verb, the volitionality and agency of the subject (S), and the affectedness of the object (O) (1980: 253). From this perspective, clauses may exhibit a range of Transitivity values, regardless of the actual valency of the verbs involved. Most of the constructions with *hi-* have a causative contour and/or a focus on the resulting state that the event brings about or causes in one participant; *hi-* is for this reason glossed ‘Factitive’.

Crucial to the use of *hi-* are the *semantic* roles of actor and undergoer, in addition to the syntactic roles of agent and object. In many cases *hi-* is essentially signaling that these roles do not match up according to the prototypical model.¹⁴⁶ To the extent that this construction relates to “subject affectedness”, or that it is “intermediate in transitivity between one-participant and two-participant events”, it bears some resemblance to the middle voice (Kemmer 1993: 2–3). However, it is unlike a typical middle voice form (which tends to reduce valency) in that it normally results in a multi-valent construction. The following discussion outlines the various functions and contexts of use for *hi-*.

¹⁴⁵ The semi-productive and idiosyncratic nature of the Factitive construction in Hup is reminiscent of the ‘causative’ *hiph’il* forms in Biblical Hebrew and of the fourth and other ‘stems’ of Arabic (thanks to Orin Gensler and Georg Bossong for this observation).

¹⁴⁶ In this, *hi-* resembles an inverse marker, but this is not its primary function.

Factitive *hi-* most often occurs with roots that normally take only one argument, particularly adjectives and stative or state-change verbs. In most cases it adds a participant, increasing the valency of the clause, and has a causative reading. In (83–84), the Factitive adds an agent; the grammatical object O would be the subject S_0 – semantically the undergoer – of the corresponding intransitive, non-Factitive clause ($S_0 > O$), as the examples in (b) illustrate.

- (83) a) *núw-ǎn hi-d'ɔk-ʔé?!*
 this-OBJ FACT-go.out-PERF.IMP
 'Put out this one!' (cv)
- b) *teghǒ d'ɔk-yí?-íy*
 fire go.out-TEL-DYNM
 'The fire has gone out.' (cv)
- (84) a) *ʔǎh cug'ǎt hi-ciʔ-d'ák-áy*
 1sg leaf/paper FACT-stick-stick.against-DYNM
 'I stuck the paper to something.'
- b) *cug'ǎt ciʔ-d'ák-áy*
 leaf/paper stick-stick.against-DYNM
 'The paper is sticking to something.' (el)

The same is true for adjective roots – here receiving verbal inflection and acting as stative verbs:

- (85) *kamíca ʔǎn hi-póg-óh*
 shirt(A) 1sg.OBJ FACT-big-DECL
 'The shirt makes me look big/fat.' (el)
- (86) *baktǐb' tíh-ǎn hi-páy-áy*
 evil.spirit(A)3sg-OBJ FACT-bad-DYNM
 'An evil spirit is making him bad.' (el)
- (87) *ʔǎh = ʔíp-ǎn ʔǎh hi-píib-íy*
 1sg=father-OBJ 1sg(A) FACT-strong-DYNM
 'I'm helping my father.' (lit. causing my father to have [more] strength/capacity) (el)

While the causative contour in the examples above is typical of the Factitive construction, it is not entailed. This is illustrated by examples such as (88) (which might be said of a young girl suspected of illicit affairs), in which a participant is added without producing a causative reading. Here, the Factitive indicates that the grammatical object carries out the activity *under the supervision* of the subject.

- (88) *tih = ?in tih-ǎn hi-?ǎh-ǎy*
 3sg=mother 3sg-OBJ FACT-sleep-DYNM
 ‘Her mother is watching over her sleeping.’ (ru)

The Factitive examples with causative semantics can be contrasted with causative constructions created via verb-compounding of transitive and intransitive stems (see §9.4.1.2 and §11.5.1 below), such as those involving the verb *d’oʔ-* ‘take’ (example 89). In the Factitive cases, the undergoer of the event (i.e., the person being made to look big, or being made bad [85–86 above]) possesses more or at least as much capacity for agency as does the actor, whereas the verb-compounding strategy requires an animate agent (as semantic actor) which is almost always of higher agency than the object (semantic undergoer). The functional distinction between the events expressed by the Factitive and causative constructions in (86) vs. (89) is comparable to that encoded by passive vs. active voice in English and other languages; it would be natural to express the event in (86) in either active voice (‘the spirit is making the man bad’) or passive voice (‘the man is being made bad by the spirit’), but (89) is best expressed by an English active voice (‘I ruined my radio’, but ??‘my radio was ruined by me’).

- (89) *nǎ hupnúh ?ǎh d’oʔ-pay-yíʔ-íy*
 1sg.POSS radio(O) 1sg(A) take-bad-DYNM
 ‘I’ve ruined my radio (lit. person-head).’ (el)

Factitive constructions such as those in the examples above are clearly transitive (while based on an intransitive root), as evidenced by their ability to occur in reflexive form with a passive reading (which requires a verb with at least two arguments, see §11.1):

- (90) *tiyíʔ hup-hi-páy-áy baʔtǐb’-ǎn*
 man(S) RFLX-FACT-bad-DYNM evil.spirit-OBJ
 ‘The man is being made bad by the evil spirit.’ (el)

Alternatively, the Factitive construction may add a *semantic* participant, but the clause retains only one core syntactic argument. In these cases, S_O (the subject undergoer) of the non-Factitive form is the same as the S_O of the Factitive form, as (91a) and (b) illustrate (whereas in the above examples S_O > O):

(91) a) *m'æ = teg-ét* *děh* *hi-m'æ-ǎý*
 cool=THING-OBL water(S) FACT-cool-DYNM
 'The water is made cold by the freezer.'

b) *m'æ = teg-ét* *děh* *m'æ-ǎý*
 cool=THING-OBL water(S) cool-DYNM
 'The water is cold in the freezer.' (el)

(92) *kamíca-át* *tiyĩ?* *hi-póg-óy*
 shirt-OBL man(S) FACT-big-DYNM
 'The man is made to look big/fat by the shirt.' (el)

(93) *tiyĩ?* *hi-páy-áy*
 man(S) FACT-bad-DYNM
 'The man is being made bad.' (el)

The interpretation of these Factitive constructions (91–93) is much like that of a passive, which also expresses a semantic undergoer as a grammatical subject (and in which inanimate semantic agents likewise receive the Oblique case-marker *-Vít*); compare passive-like reflexive constructions with *hup-* in §11.1. However, unlike these there is no particular preference for animate subjects. Moreover, Hup Factitive constructions with *hi-* usually involve intransitive verb stems, but reflexive constructions require stems having two arguments.

It is also possible for the participant added by the Factitive construction to be a semantic undergoer phrased as a syntactic object. In such cases, the subject undergoer S_O of the intransitive non-Factitive verb (which is usually one of state-change, such as 'enter') corresponds to the agent of the transitive Factitive construction (S_O > A):

(94) *děh* *?ǎn* *hóm-ǒt* *hi-yé-éy = hǒ*
 water 1sg.OBJ wound-OBL FACT-enter-DYNM=NONVIS
 'The water is going into my sore.' (ru)

- (95) *těg g'uk hi-yé-éy tih ?*
 wood bundle FACT-enter-DYNM 3sg
 'Did the wood form (tie up into) a bundle all right?' (ru)

In (96), the Factitive derives transitive 'step on (something)' from intransitive 'stand':

- (96) *ʔám [hi-g'et]-d'oʔ-ʔũh-ũy, kéy-hə, nóh !*
 2sg FACT-stand-take-APPL-DYNM look.IMP-TAG2 say
 'Hey, watch out, you're about to step on (the tape-recorder, thus adversely affecting its owner)!' (cv)

The object need not be made explicit in the clause, as is typical for the Factitive *hi-way-* 'flood, (liquid) spilling out of container' (from *way-* 'go out'), as in (97). Note the semantic difference between the Factitive ('A goes out into [O]' or 'A causes [O] to be gone-out-into') and more standard causative forms of this verb: e.g., *d'oʔ-way-* 'A causes O to go out', in which the object of the derived causative is the subject of the intransitive verb *way-* 'go out'.

- (97) *děh hi-wáy-áy*
 water FACT-go.out-DYNM
 'The water is flooding.' (i.e., 'going out into something') (cv)

Example (98) (which comes from a story about a girl's altercation with a tapir) illustrates a similar but relatively creative use of Factitive *hi-*, in which it has scope over an entire compound verb:

- (98) *tih-ăn tãh hi-cuj-d'ák-aw-ay*
 3sg-OBJ tapir FACT-have.diarrhea-stick.against-FLR-INCH
 'The tapir covered her (lit. stuck her all over) with diarrhea.' (txt)

In addition to occurring with more prototypical intransitive roots, the Factitive construction can occur with verbs that can – at least optionally – take two core arguments. It is not always clear whether these should be considered ambitransitive roots that are being treated as intransitive for the purposes of the Factitive construction (such that the Factitive is adding a participant), but in some cases the verbs in question pattern consistently as transitive elsewhere in Hup (e.g., *hi-cuʔ* [FACT-grab] and *hi-jʔp* [FACT-tie] below). In most of these instances, the Factitive form of the verb differs from the verb's straightforward (non-Factitive) transitive use in that the Factitive syntactic agent is perceived as being in some way a semantic undergoer, and/or the syntactic object is under-

stood as relatively agentive, often bearing some responsibility for bringing about the event. This constitutes an adjustment of the Transitivity of the clause.

In (99), for example, the Factitive is used with an active root, the verb *ʔɔt-* ‘cry’, which by itself is usually used intransitively but can take an object-marked second participant, which represents the animate entity who is understood to be the ‘object’ or reason for the crying. Here the presence of Factitive *hi-* is optional; the example can be translated as ‘the child is crying for his mother’ with or without the Factitive, but *hi-* adds the further sense that the child’s crying is a direct result of the mother’s actions (such as leaving him behind when she goes to the roça). In other words, the state of crying has in essence been induced in the child *by* his mother, whereas the non-Factitive form focuses on the child’s crying as an activity, with the mother conceived as a goal. This passive-like function of the Factitive is much like that described in (91–93) above.

- (99) *tih = ʔin-ãn* **(hi-)***ʔɔt-ɔy*
 3sg-mother-OBJ (FACT-)cry-DYNM
 ‘(The child) is crying for/because of his mother.’ (el)

Another example is *tãʔno-* ‘smile, laugh’, which without the Factitive can occur with either one or two arguments. The Factitive form *hi-tãʔno-* ‘laugh at/because of someone’ in (100a) conveys the sense that the laughter is induced by something the object of the laughter does – his appearance, his jokes, his mistakes – whereas (100b) need not have an identifiable stimulus.

- (100) a) *yũ* *ʔãn* **hi-tãʔno-ɔy**
 João 1sg.OBJ FACT-laugh/smile-DYNM
 ‘João is smiling/laughing because of me.’ (el)
- b) *yũ* *ʔãn* **tãʔno-ɔy**
 João 1sg.OBJ laugh/smile-DYNM
 ‘João is smiling/laughing toward me.’ (el)

Further examples include *hi-key-* ‘look after, take care of’ (101a), typically used in reference to children and sick people; this may be motivated by the fact that such people by nature require care from others around them. The root *key-* ‘see, look (at)’ (101b), on the other hand, is neutral as to whether or not it is actively induced by its object. Also compare Factitive *hi-ʔey-*, used in reference to a dog’s barking (102a), whereas the transitive or ambitransitive root *ʔey-* refers to the human activity, ‘call’ (102b); this Factitive form possibly derives from the fact that a dog’s barking is typically directly triggered by some present

entity, such as an animal or a strange person, whereas a person's calling may be conceived as more independent and self-directed. Another case is *hi-təw-* 'be jealous of, angry at' (i.e., 'be made to scold/angry by O'), formed from the verb *təw-* 'scold, yell at, be angry at'.

- (101) a) *ʔǎn hi-kéy-ep = ʔǎy*
 1sg.OBJ FACT-see-DEP=FEM
 'The woman who looked after me' (when I was a child) (txt)
- b) *ʔǎn kéy-ep = ʔih*
 1sg.OBJ see-DEP=MSC
 'The man who saw me' (el)
- (102) a) *tinǎh yǎʔambǒʔ = b'ay tú hi-ʔey-kəcát-áy*
 3sg.POSS dog=AGAIN nearby FACT-call-be.in.front-DYNM
 'As for his dog, he is running ahead barking.' (txt)
- b) *ʔám-ǎn ʔéy-éy = hǒ*
 2sg.OBJ call-DYNM=NONVIS
 '(I hear them) calling for you.' (cv)

Still other examples are somewhat more difficult to explain. One of these is the Factitive *hi-cuh-* 'sew' (or literally, 'make strung'; example 103a), based on *cuh-* 'string (something)', typically used to describe stringing beads, as in (103b), or fish that one has caught and plans to carry home. Possibly, as in the examples above, in (103a) the nature of the object to be sewn is conceived as inducing or requiring the event (especially since, among the Hupd'əh, sewing usually involves repair rather than making from scratch) – just as in English one might say that a torn piece of clothing 'needs' sewing.

- (103) a) *nǎ yǔd ʔǎh hi-cúh-úh*
 1sg.POSS clothes 1sg FACT-sew-DECL
 'I sewed my clothes.' (el)
- b) *tít w'ǎt-át ʔǎh cuh-ʔeʔ-yǎéh-ǎéh*
 cord long-OBL 1sg string-PERF-CNTRFACT-DECL
 'I had strung (the beads) on a long string (in vain).' (txt)

Like *cuh-* 'string', the Factitive *hi-j'ǐp-* 'tie up, cause to be tied up' is formed from a verb that is almost always used transitively: *j'ǐp-* 'tie (something to

something else)’. This Factitive form is usually used in reference to house doors, which (when they exist) are often tied shut with vines when the residents leave. As in (101–103) above, the Factitive may be motivated partly by the relative conceptual foregrounding or importance of the resulting state the activity produces in the object. For example, the important information in (104a) is the resulting state of the object (a secured house), whereas in (104b) the final state of the basket itself is relatively unimportant, while the relevant point is the effect on the spirit.

(104) a) *mǔy tih hi-j’ip-yǎh-ǎh*
 house(O) 3sg(A) FACT-tie-FRUST-DECL
 ‘She had tied up the house (in vain).’ (txt)

b) *túʔ-út hid j’ip-m’æc-d’ak-yíʔ-ay-áh*
 pole-OBL 3pl(A) tie-tight-be.against.vertical-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘They tied (his basket) tightly against the house-pole.’ (txt)

Still another example of a Factitive form of a (normally) transitive verb is *hi-cuʔ-* (from *cuʔ-* ‘grab’). This form has two alternative meanings in common use: (1) ‘cover (something) up’ (especially to protect it from rain, etc.), such as a child, a book, etc. (see example 106b below; also compare the derived nominal *mǔmb’ɔk hi-cúʔ* ‘pot lid’), and (2) ‘get touched by’ (e.g., a stinging insect), as in (105a) (the non-Factitive is presented in 105b for comparison). While the former use (‘cover’) relates to the agency or foregrounding of the object, the latter (‘get touched by’) appears to have more to do with a high level of affectiveness and low level of agency on the part of the agent.

(105) a) *j’uk=tǎh ʔǎh hi-cúʔ-úh*
 itch=caterpillar 1sg FACT-grab-DECL
 ‘I touched an itch-caterpillar.’ (i.e., by accident); ‘I got touched by an itch-caterpillar.’ (el)

b) *j’uk=tǎh ʔǎh cúʔ-úh*
 itch=caterpillar 1sg grab-DECL
 ‘I touched an itch-caterpillar.’ (i.e., on purpose) (el)

Factitive verbs can undergo additional adjustments of valency with the Reflexive marker *hup-*. The following elicited paradigm contrasts unmodified, Factitive, Reflexive, and Factitive Reflexive variants of the transitive stem *cuʔ-* ‘grab’:

- (106) a) *?ãh cú?-úy*
 1sg grab-DYNM
 ‘I grab (something)’ [Unmodified]
- (b) *?ãh hi-cú?-úy*
 1sg FACT-grab
 ‘I cover (something else; e.g., against rain).’ (lit. ‘cause (it) to be covered/secured’) [Factitive]
- (c) *?ãh hup-cú?-úy*
 1sg RFLX-grab-DYNM
 ‘I grab onto myself.’ [Reflexive]
- (d) *?ãh hup-hi-cú?-úy*
 1sg RFLX-FACT-grab-DYNM
 ‘I cover myself.’ (‘cause myself to be covered’) [Factitive Reflexive]
- (e) *n’ip = ?ih-ãn tih = dó? hup-hi-cú?-úy*
 that=MSC-OBJ 3sg=child RFLX-FACT-grab-DYNM
 ‘The child got covered by that man.’ [Factitive Reflexive=passive]

Many examples of Factitive *hi-* occur in expressions that are idiomatic or have very specific or idiosyncratic contexts of use, especially relative to their component verb roots, when these can be identified; some Factitive forms are frozen lexical items. In most cases, the Factitive verb relates to a state which has been triggered or induced in the undergoer by some other participant, often having to do with emotion or cognition (in which these resemble middle voice forms, see Kemmer 1993: 19). Examples are listed in (107):

- (107) *hi-coco-* ‘be happy’ (lit.? ‘be induced to relax’ + reduplication)
co- ‘rest’
hãwíg hi-hũ?- ‘be sad’ (lit. ‘have one’s heart be ending’)
hũ?- ‘end, finish’ (*hãwíg* ‘heart’)
hi-pãh- ‘know, think, believe’
pãh- ‘make high-pitched sound’ (certain small animals: paca, cutia;
 resemblance may be homonymy only)
hi-ciñ- ‘look after, take care of (something)’ (esp. to prevent theft);
 (lit.? ‘be made tired/taxed by continuous observation of thing’)

cih- ‘be tired’ (through exertion)

Also compare Reflexive *hup-hi-cih-* ‘observe ritual restrictions’

hi-g’iʔ- ‘heat up (pot, etc.)’

?? Root unclear: *g’iʔ-* ‘heat certain fruits in water to make edible’;

g’i- ‘hot’

hi-b’ay- ‘get come-back-to’ (used in reference to a girl’s second menstruation); or: ‘be induced to come back (by/because of someone)’

b’ay- ‘return’

Further examples of idiomatic Factitives include *hi-kəd-* ‘turn over’ (e.g., drying clothes; lit.? ‘cause to change location/side’), (*kəd-* ‘pass, overtake’), and *hi-poʔ-* ‘meet’ (*poʔ-* ‘open, expose’). Another is *hi-b’ah-* ‘be created’, which is usually used in reference to the creation of the world by the creator-figure (108); it appears to derive from *b’ah-* ‘split (lengthwise), flat side’.¹⁴⁷

- (108) *wæd tih d’oʔ-hi-b’ah-ní-h, ʔág-áh*
 food 3sg take-FACT-divide-INFR2-DECL fruit-DECL
 ‘He created food, fruits.’ (txt)

The Factitive prefix can also be used semi-productively but somewhat idiosyncratically with certain verb compounds like those in (109–110), relating to bringing a supernaturally induced illness upon oneself through contact with a cursed item:

- (109) *kăd-ót ʔāh hi-pæm-d’óʔ-óy*
 bench-OBL 1sg FACT-sit-take-DYNM
 ‘I got (it) from sitting on the bench’ (which was cursed). (el)

¹⁴⁷ The semantic link between these two senses is opaque (and their actual connection speculative), but it may have to do with the fact that one can easily derive many pieces from one by splitting wood lengthwise, whereas it is much more difficult to do so by chopping a log into sections (especially in the days before metal tools). Thus the factitive form ‘create’ may mean more literally ‘derive many from one; be made to multiply’.

- (110) *nĩ* *yũd-út* *?ãh* ***hi-cud-d'óʔ-óy***
 1sg.POSS clothes-OBL 1sg FACT-be.inside-take-DYNM
 'I got (it) from wearing (lit. being inside) my clothes' (which were
 cursed). (el)

In addition to these idiosyncratic or context-specific Factitive forms, there are many others for which consultants can give no meaning to the 'basic' root at all. Some of these are summarized here:

- (111) *hi-kĩk-* 'knead or grate a soggy substance' * *kĩk-*
hi-taʔ- 'meet' * *taʔ-*
hi-tãʔ- 'crush, fall on' * *tãʔ-*
hi-tab- 'be full' * *tab-*
hi-yaw'- (v) 'squeeze to extract' (e.g., dye from genipapo leaves)
 (n) 'strong manioc beer' * *yaw'*-
hi-wih- 'hold back from fighting, chastise' * *wih-*
hi-mihin- 'forget' * *mihin-*
hi-bi- 'be angry/jealous regarding a spouse or lover' * *bi-*
hi-tamaʔ- 'think or speak well of someone' * *tamaʔ-*

Still other examples of *hi-* constructions are idiosyncratic in that they involve stems that function elsewhere in Hup not as verbs, but as bound formatives (with a purely grammatical function) or other parts of speech.¹⁴⁸ In their Factitive form, however, they are fully verbal. For example, the expression *hup-hi-tég-* 'be sad' (which combines Reflexive *hup-* with Factitive *hi-*) appears to involve the root *teg*, which occurs elsewhere as a future suffix, a free noun 'wood, sticks', and a bound noun 'stick, thing' (see §13.1):

- (112) *?ãh* ***hup-hi-tég-éy = hõ***
 1sg RFLX-FACT-DYNM=NONVIS
 'I'm sad.' (el)

Similarly, the *hi-* prefix occurs with the Counterfactual form *-tãʔ* (which could be glossed 'be as if') in the expression *hi-tãʔʔ-* 'imitate; try out' (example 113, a

¹⁴⁸ Also compare the occurrence of *hi-* with the Completive aspect suffix *-cĩp-* / *-cĩw-*; see §12.5.

description of the methods Curupira uses to lure humans into his clutches). It is also found with Sequential *-yóʔ* in the locative postposition *hiyóʔ* ‘on top of’ (see §10.3.1), and in the comparative construction *hi-tæñ = yiʔ* ‘as much as, just as’ (example 114); *tæñ* occurs elsewhere as a dimension or measurement particle, and as a conditional marker; see §10.2.2.1).

(113) *mǎh-ǎn = mah* *cǎp* *tih* *hi-tæʔ-ǎh*, *dohʔǎy-ǎh*
 inambu-OBJ=REP other 3sg FACT-CNTRFACT-DECL Curupira-DECL
 ‘The inambu is another that he **imitates**, that Curupira.’ (txt)

(114) *yág...* *tih* *w’ít-ít = yiʔ*, *tih* *hi-tæñ = yiʔ*
 hammock 3sg tie-OBL-TEL 3sg FACT-MEAS2-TEL

píd *tih* *w’ít-cák-áh*
 DIST 3sg tie.rope-ascend
 ‘Exactly as he tied his hammock, each time **just as he did** she would tie (hers) higher and higher.’ (as he kept moving his hammock up to get away from her) (txt)

Finally, the *hi-* prefix occurs with the nouns *wág* ‘day’ and *j’ǎb* ‘night’ in the expressions *hi-wag-* ‘stay up until dawn’ and *hi-j’ǎb-* ‘go on until nightfall’ (but such temporal expressions have aspects of both nouns and verbs; see §4.1.3).

11.5. Other valency-related operations

This section summarizes Hup’s other strategies for adjusting valency, which are all discussed elsewhere in this grammar as well.

As discussed in §8.2.1, Hup has two pairs of verb roots for which transitive and intransitive variants are distinguished by the presence or absence of glottalization on the initial consonant, but this strategy is not productive. These verbs are *yæt-* ‘rest on ground’ and *y’æt-* ‘place in resting position on ground’, and *wob-* ‘rest on object’ and *w’ob-* ‘place on object’.

11.5.1. Derivation of causatives

As described in detail in §9.4.1.2, Hup makes productive use of verb compounding to create expressions of complex valency. These compounds are formed via the combination of transitive and intransitive stems, and result in a transitive verb. In general, Hup is a ‘transitivizing language’ in the terminology

of Nichols et al. (2004); that is, causatives are usually the derived member of causative/non-causative lexical pairs such as ‘drop and ‘fall’ (derivation is carried out via either verb compounding or Factitive *hi-*, as discussed in §11.4 above).

The most commonly used causativizing roots in verb compounds are somewhat grammaticalized, and contribute a semantics to causative constructions that is distinct from their meanings as independent verbs. Among the most productive of these are the compound-initial transitive roots *d'oʔ-* (literally) ‘take’ (causation with direct involvement), as in *d'oʔ-ʔʒh-* (take-sleep) ‘put to sleep’ (i.e., a child); *d'əh-* ‘send’ (causation with less direct control over the event), as in *tac-d'əh-ye-* (kick-send-enter) ‘cause to go into (house, etc.) by kicking’; and *g'et-* ‘stand’ (oversee, bring about another’s action), as in *g'et-biʔ-* (stand-work) ‘lead/oversee in working’. Several compound-final roots are also used productively to create causative verb compounds; these include *biʔ-* ‘work’ (bring about through effort), as in *peʔ-biʔ-* (sick-make) ‘make (someone) sick’; and *yəh-* ‘request, order’ (force or request another’s action), as in *wəd-yəh-* (eat-request) ‘compel, request, or invite to eat’. Note that different causative verb roots can sometimes also be substituted for each other, resulting in variations in meaning, such as *g'et-wəd-* (stand-eat-) ‘feed, provide with food’, vs. *wəd-yəh-* (eat-request) ‘request/order to eat’.

The pattern for forming causative and non-causative variants of verbs varies across lexical items.¹⁴⁹ The majority of intransitive roots must participate in a causative verb compound in order to have a causative interpretation, such as *pəəm-* ‘sit’, *wəd-* ‘eat’, and *wəç-* ‘boil’:

(115) a) *děh wəç-əy*
 water boil-DYNM
 ‘The water is boiling.’

b) *pəd dēh d'oʔ-wəç-əy*
 Ped water take-boil-DYNM
 ‘Ped is boiling water.’ (el)

In other cases (mostly involving stative verbs; cf. §8.2), the derived form of the causative is optional, and the underived form may be used both as a causative and a non-causative, without any apparent semantic difference:

¹⁴⁹ Many of these elicited couplets were informed by Nichols 2003.

- (116) a) *hĩʔ = teg təh-yĩʔ-íy*
 write=stick break-TEL-DYNM
 ‘The pencil broke.’ (el)
- b) *pěd hĩʔ = teg (d’oʔ-)təh-yĩʔ-íy*
 Ped write=stick (take-)break-TEL-DYNM
 ‘Ped broke the pencil.’ (el)

Occasionally, the causative form is basic, and the non-causative is derived via the addition of the Reflexive prefix *hup-*:

- (117) a) *pěd hup-yśd-śy*
 Ped RFLX-hide-DYNM
 ‘Ped hides.’ (el)
- b) *mōt pěd-ăn yśd-śy*
 Mōt Ped-OBJ hide-DYNM
 ‘Mōt hides Ped.’ (el)

In one or two cases both forms are derived, as in ‘turn over’, from the verb *kəd-* ‘pass’:

- (118) a) *cug’ăť hup-kśd-śy*
 leaf RFLX-pass-DYNM
 ‘The leaf turned over.’ (el)
- b) *ped cug’ăť d’oʔ-(hup-)kśd-śy*
 Ped leaf take-(RFLX-)pass-DYNM
 ‘Ped turned the leaf over.’ (el)

Finally, suppletive causative and non-causative pairs are rare in Hup, but there are a few examples, such as *naʔ-* ‘die’ and *mæh-* ‘kill’; *key-* ‘see’ and *be-* ‘show’.

In some cases, more than one derivational option is available in creating a causative form, with corresponding semantic distinctions. For example, the causative form *tuj-d’ak-* [light.fire-be.against] ‘set alight’ is preferred as the counterpart of the non-causative *hǎ-* ‘burn’ (e.g., for a house, clothes, possessions, wood, etc.; example 119), but the root *hǎ-* may also be used causatively in very particular circumstances where there is no normal setting of a fire – e.g., by means of a bomb (example 120). The morphological causative form *d’oʔ-hǎ-*

can be used in reference to letting someone's food burn while it is cooking (example 121).

- (119) *tinňh mǔy tih tuj-d'ak-yǎh-ay-áh*
 3sg-POSS house 3sg light.fire-be.against-FRUST-INCH-DECL
 'He set fire to/burned down his house (in vain).' (txt)

- (120) *pěd hǔ-yí?-íy, tinňh mǔy*
 Ped burn-TEL-DYNM3sg.POSS house
 'Ped caused his house to burn down (e.g., by means of a bomb).' (el)

- (121) *pěd tinňh wǎd d'o?-hǔ-yí?-íy*
 Ped 3sg.POSS food take-burn-TEL-DYNM
 'Ped made/let his food burn.' (el)

Chapter 12

Aspect

The majority of verbal formatives in Hup have to do with tense, aspect, or mood, since Hup verbs do not inflect for person or number. This chapter focuses on formatives relating to aspect. In contrast to tense, which locates the event in “situation-external time”, aspect is concerned rather with the “internal temporal constituency of the one situation” (Comrie 1976: 5). The expression of aspect – far more than that of tense – plays a central role in Hup grammar.

12.1. Hup’s aspect markers and their properties

The basic aspectual distinctions expressed in Hup are dynamic, inchoative, perfective, completive, telic, habitual, and iterative (of which there are several subtypes). Other aspect-related forms include verbal diminutives and a ‘Persistentive’ or ‘on-going event’ marker. In addition, Hup has one inflectional form that deals with the location of the event in space. Although its semantic contribution is not a temporal one, this ‘Venitive’ suffix is functionally parallel to the markers of aspect, and is therefore discussed together with them in this chapter.

The bound formatives discussed in this chapter, as elsewhere in the grammar, are treated here primarily on the basis of their semantics rather than their form-class (as Boundary Suffixes, Inner Suffixes, etc.). As regards their formal identity, the aspectual formatives are generally heterogeneous, and include Inner Suffixes, Boundary Suffixes, enclitics, and particles; a number are fluid morphemes, which can appear alternatively as peripheral formatives or as Inner Suffixes (see §3.4–5). These formative types correspond to the following verbal template (repeated from §8.3):

(Proclitic) = Prefix(es) - **Stem** - Inner Suffix(es) - **Boundary Suffix**
= Enclitic(s) Particle(s)

While there is no strictly formal indicator that a given formative relates to aspect in Hup, the set of Inner Suffixes is nevertheless particularly well-represented among the Hup aspect-marking formatives (see §3.4 and §8.1). Even the majority of those aspectual forms that appear as enclitics or particles also have an alternative identity as Inner Suffixes (they are fluid morphemes), and several have phonologically reduced variants that can *only* appear as Inner Suffixes (see §3.6) and are in many contexts preferred over their peripheral

counterparts. This general tendency to mark aspect in the morphological slot directly adjacent to the verb stem iconically reflects aspect's integral semantic association with the verb (see Bybee 1985: 35).

As discussed in §3.7 and §9.4.3, many bound formatives in Hup – particularly Inner Suffixes – probably derive historically from compounded verbs, and some morphemes currently appear to be in a historically transitional phase between verb root and Inner Suffix. Accordingly, some compound-final verb roots can act as auxiliaries and contribute aspect-related information to the verb (e.g., *j'ap-* 'break, divide in parts', used occasionally in compounds to mean 'quit doing Verb'). Because these are still identified primarily as verb roots rather than formatives, however, they are discussed in §9.4.2.4 rather than in this chapter.

Such processes of grammaticalization are probably also responsible for the highly 'promiscuous' nature of many of Hup's aspect-marking formatives. Although the forms discussed in this chapter are considered to be primarily verbal, many can also attach to nouns and other parts of speech as well. Sometimes this is limited to predicates (i.e., predicate nominals as well as verbal and adjectival predicates), but in other cases the markers can attach to nominal arguments and other non-predicative constituents as well. The meanings conveyed by the bound forms may in some cases be semantically similar or even the same regardless of the word class of their host, and can sometimes be supposed to have a vague semantics which is largely dependent on context. However, many identical forms have very different meanings depending on their morphosyntactic environment – so different in some cases that even a historical relationship between the variants may not be obvious.

Despite these differences, the fact that so many aspectual markers perform additional functions suggests that most of these uses do not simply involve chance homonymy. In particular, the parallelism between verbal aspect and nominal discourse-marking morphology (see §7.1) may be best explained as a reflection of a general characteristic of Hup grammar – it often uses the same strategies to express the relationships between events and time periods as it uses to express the relationships between entities. (Note that this is also reflected in Hup's parallel treatment of many spatial and temporal concepts, such as using a single form to express 'under' and 'at the same time', 'in front of' and 'before', and 'behind' and 'after', as discussed in §10.3; the use of spatial resources to talk about time is likewise cross-linguistically common). The alternative non-verbal uses and meanings of the aspectual formatives are summarized briefly in the relevant sections of this chapter, and most are discussed in more detail in §7.1 and other chapters.

As noted in §8.3, the aspect-related formatives discussed in this chapter – like other formatives in Hup – are subject to various co-occurrence restrictions. Other than those restrictions limiting Boundary Suffixes to one per verb (out-

side of exceptional circumstances), these restrictions appear to be motivated mainly by semantics, rather than by morphological slot restrictions. The incompatibility of each morpheme with others is mentioned in the relevant sections of the discussion; however, the restrictions noted here may not be exhaustive.

As a final note, the glosses given to the various aspectual formatives ('Inchoative', 'Perfective', etc.) should be understood as very general characterizations of these morphemes' uses, which are to some degree language-specific, and do not necessarily coincide exactly with the way these categories are expressed in other languages. As observed in §1.7, this is reflected in their capitalization.

The various aspect-related distinctions and forms discussed in this chapter are summarized in Table 39:

Table 39. Verbal aspect markers in Hup

	Semantics	Form(s)	Formative type	Gloss	Occurrence with other parts of speech
Dynamic	On-going event (with relation to speech moment or context of utterance)	- $\check{V}y$	Boundary Suffix	DYNM	Nouns, etc. in some coordinative contexts, esp. with Emphatic Coordinator = <i>nih</i> (restricted uses)
Inchoative	Beginning an event or entering a state	- <i>ay</i>	Boundary or Inner Suffix	INCH	Nouns: Inchoative focus
Perfective	Event viewed with respect to endpoint	- $\check{?}e\check{?}$ - $\check{?}e$ -	Inner Suffix	PERF	Predicate nominals
Completive	Event completed prior to the speech act	- <i>c$\check{?}p$</i> - - <i>c$\check{?}w$</i> -	Inner Suffix	COMPL	
Telic	Entity (S/O) is completely involved or affected; do completely	- $\check{y}i\check{?}$	Inner Suffix	TEL	As enclitic on nouns: Contrastive emphasis. As enclitic on adjs, Vs, entire clauses: adverbializer.
Venitive	Movement between current location of participant and location where event occurs	- $\check{?}ay$ -	Inner Suffix	VENT	
Habitual	Customary, recurrent event (no endpoint)	<i>b$\check{?}g$</i> - <i>bi</i> -	Particle or Inner Suffix Inner Suffix	HAB	

	Semantics	Form(s)	Formative type	Gloss	Occurrence with other parts of speech
Iterative	‘Over and over’; also durative ‘for a long time’ (has endpoint)	<i>píd</i>	Particle or Inner Suffix	DIST (Distributive)	Nouns: quantifier
	Single repetition of an action or some aspect of a resulting state	<i>b’ay</i>	Enclitic or Inner Suffix	AGAIN (‘Repeated instance’)	Nouns: Topic-switch marker
	Event or state has multiple intrinsic realizations	(reduplication)	reduplication of verb root: CV-CV(C)	RED	Nouns (similar use; frozen lexical forms only)
Verbal ‘diminutives’	Do activity a little bit	<i>-kodé</i> (Tukano)	Boundary Suffix	VDIM	
		<i>dí?</i>	Particle	VDIM2	
Persistent marker	Activity or state is still in process	<i>tǎé</i>	Particle	YET	Some predicate nominals

As the verbal template above clarifies, the relative order of formative types in the verb is Inner Suffix – Boundary Suffix = Enclitic Particle. Within these formative groups, the relative order of the individual aspect markers in the verb word is listed below (see also the complete template in §8.3). This order is subject to a certain degree of flexibility, primarily involving formatives having phonologically reduced variants (and probably due to historical processes of grammaticalization; see for example §12.5 below). As mentioned above, a number of the formatives discussed here – including but not limited to those listed in the same slot – cannot co-occur. Fluid morphemes are listed twice (in Inner Suffix and peripheral positions).

Inner Suffixes:

1. Telic *-yí?*
2. Venitive *-?ay-*
3. Completive *-cĩp-* (variant *-cĩw-* must directly precede *-Vý* Boundary Suffix)
4. Perfective *-?e?* (variant *-?e-* must directly precede vowel-copying Boundary Suffix)

5. Habitual *-big-* (variant *-bi-* must directly precede vowel-copying Boundary Suffix)
Distributive *-pid-*
6. 'Repeated instance' = *b'ay*

Inner or Boundary Suffix:

7. Inchoative *-ay*
8. *Boundary Suffix:*
Dynamic *-V'y*
Verbal 'diminutive' *-kodé*

Enclitic:

9. 'Repeated instance' = *b'ay*

Particles:

10. Habitual *bíg*
Distributive *píd*
11. Persistentive *tæ*
Verbal 'diminutive' *dí?*

12.2. Dynamic -*V'y*

The vowel-copying Boundary Suffix *-V'y*, also discussed in §17.3, is functionally complex. When it occurs on a clause-final verb, it acts as the primary marker of clause type – in mutual exclusion on the clausal level with the other vowel-copying Boundary Suffixes, the Declarative marker *-V'h*, the Interrogative *-V'?*, and the Dependent marker *-Vp* – and indicates a declarative clause in which the event described is concurrent with the temporal frame of reference. When marking a clause-internal verb, on the other hand, it can co-occur with these other (more exclusively clause-final) markers, and simply exercises its 'dynamic' function of indicating temporal continuity rather than marking a specific clause type. As such, *-V'y* involves viewing a situation as a dynamic process, as opposed to conceiving it as a more time-independent state or inherent characteristic. This 'dynamic' function of *-V'y* is largely aspectual, and is related to what is cross-linguistically identified as imperfective aspect.

According to Comrie (1976: 41), imperfective aspect as a cross-linguistic category has to do with “viewing a situation with regard to its internal structure”. This generally implies what Chung and Timberlake (1985: 214–215) characterize as aspectual dynamicity; that is, the capacity of an event or state to change over time. This may involve an actual process, or the possibility of change in some potential future world. The use of Dynamic $-V\acute{y}$ in Hup is consistent with these characterizations in that it indicates an action in progress, an ongoing process, or a dynamic state – in relation to a given temporal frame of reference, usually that of the speech moment.

Dynamic $-V\acute{y}$ is the default verbal inflectional form in Hup. As discussed in §8.3 and elsewhere, Boundary Suffixes are in general mutually exclusive, such that only one is usually present on a verb at a time; $-V\acute{y}$ is among the most common of all of these. In elicitation contexts, verbs are normally given with the $-V\acute{y}$ ending in response to the Portuguese infinitive. However, given its dynamic sense, it is usually best translated as ‘be V-ing’.

While the $-V\acute{y}$ suffix belongs to the small set of vowel-copying Boundary Suffixes listed above (whose other core members are Declarative $-V\acute{h}$, Interrogative $-V?$, and Dependent $-Vp$), it is unlike these others in a number of ways. As verbal suffixes, the forms other than $-V\acute{y}$ are normally found only clause-finally (although some can serve a focus-related function on clause-internal arguments), whereas $-V\acute{y}$ can occur on any verb regardless of its place in the clause. As discussed in §3.5, this difference in patterning affects the placement of fluid formatives, which always follow $-V\acute{y}$ (as enclitics or particles), but normally precede the other vowel-copying Boundary Suffixes.

On clause-final verbal predicates, $-V\acute{y}$ has several features in common with Declarative $-V\acute{h}$ (see §17.3.2): both of these suffixes occur clause-finally on declarative clauses, and in many contexts can be interchanged with little effect on the semantics of the clause. Nevertheless, they pattern in very different ways: in particular, Declarative $-V\acute{h}$ is *always* clause-final, is not restricted to verbs, and occurs *only* in declarative clauses, whereas Dynamic $-V\acute{y}$ is almost exclusively verbal, occurs on the verb regardless of its place in the clause, and when not clause-final has little to do with clause type. Moreover, while Declarative $-V\acute{h}$ and the other vowel-copying suffixes in this set are essentially semantically empty beyond their marking of clause type – Declarative $-V\acute{h}$ is best understood as *unmarked* for aspect (or tense) altogether – $V\acute{y}$ makes a distinct semantic contribution to the verb, relating to temporally on-going or ‘dynamic’ aspect. Functionally, however, the factors governing speakers’ choices between aspect-neutral Declarative $-V\acute{h}$ and the aspectually Dynamic $-V\acute{y}$ are complex; these are touched on in the examples in this section, and discussed again in more detail (with a focus on the Declarative marker) in §17.3.2.

Examples (1–3) below illustrate the prototypical use of Dynamic $-V\acute{y}$ to mark events as current and on-going in the context of the moment of speech,

and they also outline some of the factors governing the choice of the Dynamic over the Declarative. As example (1) illustrates, on-going events, marked with the Dynamic suffix, can be contrasted with events that took place at some point in the past and are not currently on-going, which are typically unspecified for aspect and marked with the Declarative suffix *-V̄h*. Example (2a) is a typical yes-no question, in which the verb appears clause-medially in its Dynamic form (note that the Declarative is ungrammatical here both because the verb is not clause-final and because the clause is interrogative); (2b) is the expected response given that the event that is currently in progress. Finally, (3) illustrates the co-occurrence of the Dynamic and Declarative markers within the same clause, where *-V̄h* marks the end of the clause and Dynamic *-V̄y* marks the verb itself. This non-verb-final clause structure is especially common in discourse relating to current, on-going events, and allows the marking of both Dynamic aspect on the verb and Declarative mode on the clause itself (see §17.3).

(1) a) (Q: Do you speak Tukano?)

A: *wǎh-ɔʔ ? wǎh = mæh... ʔid-ɪy*
 River.Indian-INT Riv.Indian=DIM speak-DYNM
 ‘Tukano? I speak... a little Tukano.’

b) (Q: How did you learn?)

A: *ni-d’ǎh-ét cɔkw’ət = d’əh-ét ham-g’oʔ-yóʔ, ʔāh ʔid-ɪh*
 this-PL-OBL Tukano=PL-OBL go-go.about-SEQ 1sg speak-DECL
 ‘Having gone around with those Tukanos, I spoke.’ (i.e., learned to speak) (txt)

(2) a) *těg tǎʔ-ɪy ʔám ?*
 wood light.fire-DYNM 2sg
 ‘Are you lighting a fire?’ (cv)

b) *hǎʔ, tǎʔ-ɪy*
 yes light.fire-DYNM
 ‘Yep, I’m lighting one.’ (cv)

(3) *tih tih-ɪy yúw-úh, tóg !*
 3sg lie-DYNMthat-DECL daughter
 ‘He’s lying, that one, daughter!’ (cv)

The dynamic or imperfective-like aspectual function of the *-V̄y* suffix is especially apparent with predicate adjectives. As discussed in §3.1.3 and §10.1, adjectives pattern much like verbs in their inflectional properties, although un-

like verbs they do not require a Boundary Suffix. When an adjective is inflected by the Dynamic suffix, the state or characteristic it indicates is understood to have a dynamic quality, whereas the adjective by itself (or when nominalized by the 3sg preform *tih* =, see §6.6) is more likely to represent a permanent or inherent characteristic. This conforms to Chung and Timberlake's observation (1985: 216) that a state may be conceived as dynamic and expressed by means of progressive or other imperfective morphology when it is "accidental, temporary, or subject to change". The examples in (4–6) illustrate the dynamic interpretation of adjectives marked by *-V̄y*. This is contrasted with their uninflected forms; expressing the inherent softness of someone's feet or the redness of a flower with the Dynamic marker is judged extremely odd by consultants.

- (4) a) *?āh wǽy-ǽy, ?āh-āh*
 1sg soft-DYNM 1sg-DECL
 'I'm getting feeble.' (txt)
- b) *tin̄h j'ib wǽy = mæh*
 3sg.POSS foot soft=DIM
 'Her feet are soft!' (cv)
- (5) a) *dapūh dó-óy*
 hand red-DYNM
 'The hand is red.' (e.g., painted with urucu)
- b) *j'ó tih = dó-óh*
 flower 3sg=red-DECL
 'The flower is red.' (inherent characteristic) (el)
- (6) a) *náw-ǽy tǽ*
 good-DYNM YET
 'Still doing well' (state/process conceived as temporary)
- b) *náw tǽ*
 good YET
 'Still good' (inherent characteristic) (el)

As a Boundary Suffix, Dynamic *-V̄y* co-occurs with most other aspectual distinctions. This is formally possible since the majority of these are realized as Inner Suffixes (obligatorily followed by a Boundary Suffix) or as peripheral formatives (obligatorily preceded by a Boundary Suffix). Semantically, when

-V̄y co-occurs with other aspect or time-related markers, it functions primarily to indicate the currently dynamic and on-going nature of the proposition or the event's result, usually within the temporal context of the speech act – rather than the internal temporal consistency of the event itself. Thus while *-V̄y* itself relates to aspect, its function is more basic than that of most other aspect markers in Hup. In contrast to Dynamic *-V̄y*, other Boundary Suffixes that occur in its place (and in mutual exclusion with it) may indicate a different temporal context; e.g., Declarative *-V̄h* often implies (but does not entail) a past event, and the Future marker *-teg / -te-* indicates a future event.

Examples (7–9) illustrate the occurrence of the Dynamic marker with aspectual Inner Suffixes (Telic, Perfective, and Completive), and contrasts these with the Declarative marker – which is not marked for aspect, but typically relates to events that are *not* currently dynamic and on-going; in this case, they are relatively further removed in the past from the moment of speech.

- (7) a) *tih ʔəg-yíʔ-íy*
 3sg drink-TEL-DYNM
 'He's drunk it all.' (cv)
- b) *tih ʔəg-yíʔ-íh*
 3sg drink-TEL-DECL
 'He drank it all (some time ago).' (cv)
- (8) a) *děh d'oj-ʔě-y*
 water rain-PERF-DYNM
 'It's raining (temporarily)' (cv)
- b) *děh d'oj-ʔě-h*
 water rain-PERF-DECL
 'It rained (and stopped)' (el)
- (9) a) *j'ɔm-yiʔ-cíw-íy ʔáh-áh*
 bathe-TEL-COMPL-DYNM 1sg-DECL
 '(I've) already bathed.' (cv)
- b) *tedé = d'əh-ət tih biʔ-ni-cíp-íh*
 three=PL-OBL 3sg work-be-COMPL-DECL
 'He's already worked with three of them (in the past)' (sp)

For a verb like *naʔ*- ‘die, lose consciousness’, for which the internal temporal consistency of the situation may not be easily conceptualized, speakers rarely use the Dynamic marker alone, but prefer the Telic marker (or simply the Declarative), as in (10). However, the simple Dynamic may be used if a gradual, on-going death can be supposed, as in the case of a fish pulled out of the water (11). The simple Dynamic form of the compound verb *ʔəg-náʔ-ǎy* (drink-die-DYNM) ‘get/be drunk’ (i.e., ‘be losing some of one’s sensibilities due to drinking [alcohol]’) is also commonly used, presumably because one can be in the semi-conscious state of drunkenness for a period of time, whereas *naʔ*- ‘die, lose consciousness’ by itself refers to a more abrupt transition.

- (10) *tih = tǎh* *naʔ-yfʔ-fy*; *koʔǎp = d’əh* *tih = tǎh = d’əh náʔ-ǎh*
 3sg=child die-TEL-DYNM two=PL 3sg=child=PL die-DECL
 ‘His child died; two of his children died.’ (cv)

- (11) *náʔ-ǎy* *tih ?*
 die-DYNM 3sg
 ‘Is it dying?’ (esp. a fish) (el)

The Dynamic suffix is most often used with present-tense events, but not exclusively. Its association with the present is best understood as an epiphenomenon of its aspect-related function of signaling the dynamic nature of an event, state, or result as concurrent with the temporal frame of reference (usually the moment of the speech act) – just as the comparably common use of Declarative *-Vh* for past events is related to its aspectually unmarked identity (contra Moore 1977; see §17.3.2). Although in elicitation contexts involving a distant past or future time adverbial (‘a long time ago’; ‘tomorrow’), speakers prefer the Declarative or Future suffixes to the Dynamic on clause-final verbs, in discourse the Dynamic and Declarative markers are to some degree independent of tense, and certainly do not entail a particular tense value; note also that the two frequently co-occur in the clause when a clause-internal verb (+ *-Vy*) is followed by a clause-final subject nominal (+ *-Vh*); see example (9a) above and §17.3. For example, verb-final constituent order with the Declarative suffix is typically preferred in past-tense or procedural (i.e., tense-neutral) narrative, but the Dynamic also occurs (or co-occurs) in this context, as examples (12–14) illustrate. The factors determining speakers’ choices of these markers are not yet fully understood, but they are linked to a complex mix of phenomena, such as constituent order (i.e., the Declarative can only occur clause-finally, whereas the Dynamic can occur on any verb), position of fluid formatives (which must follow the Dynamic, but precede the Declarative), etc., in addition to whether or

not the event is marked as concurrent with the speech moment or temporal frame of reference.

- (12) “*yí-níh-íw-áy = nih* *?ám-ăn ?áh-áh,*
 that.ITG-be.like-FLR-INCH=EMPH.CO 2sg-OBJ 1sg-DECL

púy’,” nó-ǫ́y = mah
 younger.brother say-DYNM=REP
 ‘“I wanted it thus for you, little brother,” he said.’ (txt)

- (13) *g’ǣg = tǣh mǣt?ah có? tiy-g’et-d’əh-hí-íy = mah*
 bone=son downriver LOC push-stand-send-descend-DYNM=REP
 ‘Bone-Son pushed all (the Non-Indian people) downriver.’ (txt)

- (14) *ní-n’íh wǣd-yí?-íy. có = wǣd ?ín-ăn wǣd-ǣh;*
 this-NMZ eat-TEL-DYNM rainbow=old/RESP 1pl-OBJ eat-DECL

dapúh tǣg-ǫ́y !
 hand tooth.rot-DYNM
 ‘(He) eats this part up. Old Rainbow-Man eats us; makes (our)
 hand/finger rot out!’ (txt)

Similarly, consultants can identify no semantic or functional difference between many clause variants involving fluid formatives and the Dynamic and Declarative markers, as in (15). There is certainly no entailment that one is past and the other non-past.

- (15) a) *ye-tǣ?ǣy yǣh*
 enter-CNTRFACT-DYNM FRUST
 ‘(It) almost went in!’ (ball into goal) (cv)
- b) *tíh ye-tǣ?-yǣh-ǣh*
 3sg enter-CNTRFACT-FRUST-DECL
 ‘It almost went in!’ (ball into goal) (el)

In past-tense narrative, the Dynamic often occurs in relation to events that are framed within the context of another event, which is itself expressed with a Declarative or other aspectual or clausal marker. The Dynamic may function here to bring into focus the internal dynamicity of the framed event(s) with respect to their context within the narrative event sequence:

- (16) *yíkán* *ʔin ní-ay-áh*, *bɔyɔh* *ʔin bíʔ-ɣy*;
 over.there 1pl stay-INCH-DECL tapiri.shelter 1pl make-DYNM

yi-nih-yóʔ, *ʔɔk* *ʔin yót-ɔy*, *ʔin ní-ay-áh*
 that.ITG-be.like-SEQ giant.armadillo 1pl follow-DYNM 1pl be-INCH-DECL
 ‘There we stayed (a while; while we were there), we built a tapiri shelter.
 Having done this, we followed an armadillo; we stayed there.’ (txt)
- (17) ...*hiyǎw*’ *ʔāh ʔəg-g’óʔ-ɔy*, *j’ɣw kǎʔ deh ʔāh*
 strong.caxiri 1sg drink-go.about-DYNM pupunha bury liquid 1sg
 ‘I went drinking strong caxiri, I drank buried-pupunha beer,

ʔəg-ɔy, *ʔəg-yóʔ ʔāh yamhidɔʔ-g’óʔ-ɔy*, *ʔāh ni-ʔǎ-h*
 drink-DYNM drink-SEQ 1sg sing-go.about-DYNM 1sg be-PERF-DECL
 having drunk I would go singing; I lived (thus).’ (txt)
- (18) *yít tih tɔw-ɔy wiʔ-yóʔ j’ám...*
 so 3sg scold-DYNM hear-SEQ DST.CNTR
 ‘So, having heard that he was scolding (i.e., listened to his scolding)...’
 (txt)

Like many other formatives in Hup, Dynamic -*Vy* has other uses that appear to be in some way distinct from its primary function as a verbal Boundary Suffix related to aspect. As is the case with so many of Hup’s multifunctional formatives, it is difficult to prove that these multiple uses involve polysemy, as opposed to homonymy. However, especially in light of the frequency of this polyfunctionality among verbal aspect markers and other forms generally in Hup (see, for example, the discussions in §3.3 and §7.1), polysemy – at least in a diachronic sense – seems likely.

In addition to its use as an aspect-marking Boundary Suffix, Dynamic -*Vy* appears to have a function relating to clause coordination, as discussed in more detail in §18.1.2. As such, it occurs in contexts that are non-canonical given its normal properties as a Boundary Suffix, such as following the Negative suffix -*nih* in example (19); because -*nih* also normally occurs as a Boundary Suffix, under most circumstances these two forms are mutually exclusive.

- (19) *tih ʔɔh-nih-ɣy*, *tih mǎh-ǎh*
 3sg sleep-NEG-DYNM 3sg kill-DECL
 ‘He didn’t sleep, he killed (fish).’ (ru)

Dynamic $-V_y$ also tends to precede the Emphatic Coordinator enclitic $=nih$,¹⁵⁰ used primarily to signal coordination (see §18.1.3). Most notably, whereas Dynamic $-V_y$ is limited almost entirely to association with verbs, in the context of $=nih$ it may occur following virtually any part of speech, including a verb stem (example 20), a bound noun bracketing a relative clause (21), a negative marker (and ‘Filler’ syllable) (21), and a Telic/adverbializer enclitic (22).

- (20) *tih kéy-éy = nih*
 3sg see-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘He’s seen too.’ (a boy who has been initiated to see the Yurupari flutes)
 (ru)

- (21) *tih = dó wón-ōp = ?ih-īy = nih, tih = tohó*
 3sg=red follow-DEP=MSC-DYNM=EMPH.CO 3sg=white

wón-nih-īw-īy = nih
 follow-NEG-FLR-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘The brown (dog) chases animals, the white one does not.’ (el)

- (22) *núp ?inñh = hin cáp = yi?-īy = nih káh*
 this 1pl.POSS=also other=TEL-DYNM=EMPH.CO ADVR
 ‘Also ours (i.e., language) is different, too.’ (after listing various other dialects) (txt)

The $-V_y$ suffix has an additional non-aspectual function: it acts as an attributive marker in a small set of nominal compounds, many of which involve an adjective as the first element (see §5.1.4):

- (23) *núp j’ób-ōy = d’əh*
 this night-DYNM=PL
 ‘Those of tonight’ (cv)
- (24) *hīkán-āy = ?āy ?ám ?*
 where-DYNM=FEM 2sg
 ‘A woman-from-where are you?’ (i.e., ‘where are you from?’) (cv)

¹⁵⁰ The $-V_y$ suffix receives extra stress and vowel lengthening in these constructions, as it does in the nominal compound forms below.

- (25) *póh-óy dĕh*
 high-DYNM liquid
 ‘Water from the roof’ (cv)

Despite their profound differences, there is a possible semantic link between these various realizations of the *-V́y* suffix. Like the verbal Dynamic marker, which signals a dynamic and concurrent relationship between coordinated events, time frames, and/or the current speech moment, *-V́y* used as a coordinator and even as an attributive marker may be signaling a dynamic connection between two or more events, propositions, or entities – i.e., they are intrinsically associated, interdependent, and temporally consistent. Such a conceptual and/or historical link between temporal, spatial, and propositional or abstract concepts appears in many aspects of Hup grammar.

12.3. Inchoative *-ay*

The suffix *-ay* combines with predicates to mark inchoative aspect, and indicates a transition into a state or the initiation of an event. Inchoative *-ay* is independent of tense; when occurring alone with no other aspect or tense markers, its interpretations can vary as to whether an event or a transition into a state has just begun, is currently beginning, or is about to begin, vis-à-vis a given temporal reference point.

Formally, Inchoative *-ay* is unusual in that it can act either as a Boundary Suffix or as an Inner Suffix, followed by another Boundary Suffix. Like several other vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes, *-ay* is unstressed, while the stem it follows receives stress. Also – like all other vowel-initial suffixes in Hup – Inchoative *-ay* conditions consonant-gemination on stems, as discussed in §2.1.2.1. Because it is consistently oral, this results in a homorganic nasal-oral consonant cluster when the stem is nasal, such that the surface realization of a form like *hám-ay* (go-INCH) is [hám-bay] (compare *hám-ạ́y* (go-DYNM) [hám-máy]).

In direct combination with verb roots, *-ay* typically indicates that an event is about to take place:

- (26) *b'ĕh-ay*
 cross.stream-INCH
 ‘(I'm) going across the stream.’ (i.e., home to the other end of the village)
 (cv)

- (27) *hám-ay*
 go-INCH
 ‘(We’re) going.’ (said on the point of leaving; equivalent to ‘goodbye’)
 (cv)

It can also indicate that the event has just begun to take place:

- (28) *děh d’ǒj-ay*
 water rain-INCH
 ‘It’s beginning to rain.’ (OR: ‘It is about to rain.’) (cv)
- (29) *n’i-có? tih ní-ay*
 there-LOC 3sg be-INCH
 ‘He’s living there now.’ (recently left previous home) (cv)
- (30) *yú-ay = mah, tih-īw-ih*
 wait-INCH=REP 3sg-FLR-DECL
 ‘She’s waiting, she says.’ (she has just started) (cv)
- (31) *húp-ǎn tih wæd-tú-ay, pík-īw-ay = mah*
 person-OBJ 3sg eat-want-INCH scream-FLR-INCH=REP
 ‘(When) he wants to eat a person (i.e., upon entering a state of wanting),
 he begins screaming (to attract them).’ (txt)

The Inchoative is common in imperative mood (see §17.5), especially for slightly impatient imperatives. In these constructions, both *-ay* and the preceding stem (or Inner Suffix) take the stress and high tone of the imperative mood:

- (32) *húptok g’ǒp-áy !*
 caxiri serve-INCH.IMP
 ‘Start serving caxiri!’ (i.e., it’s ready, go ahead)
- (33) *?ǒh-yí?-áy !*
 sleep-TEL-INCH.IMP
 ‘Go to sleep!’

In negative clauses, Inchoative *-ay* is typically used to indicate a negative *future* event (as in example 34), and is among the few grammatical means for doing so, since the Future suffix *-teg / -te-* is ungrammatical in negative clauses (see §13.1). Presumably, the idea of entering into or initiating a negative state is

semantically akin to the expectation that the negative state will exist at some time in the future. However, use of *-ay* in a negative construction is not restricted to future reference, and may also be used to describe a current transition into such a state, as in (35).

- (34) *ʔāh ham-níh-ay*
 1sg go-NEG-INCH
 ‘I’m not going to go.’ (cv)

- (35) *peʔ-níh-ay*
 sick-NEG-INCH
 ‘(I’m) not sick anymore.’ (cv)

The Inchoative marker co-occurs with (and typically follows) many other aspect markers. It is particularly common following the Telic marker (an Inner Suffix that indicates complete involvement of the participants, see §12.6). In (36), the same utterance with Dynamic *-V̄y* in place of the Inchoative would be translated as ‘are you (fully) used to’, whereas the Inchoative lends the sense of a transition; similarly, the Inchoative in example (37) indicates the transition to a state of being cool (whereas the Dynamic would mean that it was completely cool and may have been so for some time).

- (36) *húp=d’əh máh ni-hipāh-yíʔ-ay ʔám?*
 Hup=PL near be-know-TEL-INCH 2sg
 ‘Are you getting used/have you gotten used to living with the Hupd’əh?’
 (cv)

- (37) *kapé m’æ-yíʔ-ay*
 coffee cool-TEL-INCH
 ‘The coffee is cooling off; is just cool enough to drink.’ (cv)

When the Inchoative is itself followed by a Boundary Suffix, this is most frequently Declarative *-V̄h* – although this is of course restricted to clause-final environments (in keeping with the rules governing *-V̄h*, see §17.3.2). However,

the Inchoative and the Boundary Suffix *-V̄y* (Dynamic) do not normally co-occur.¹⁵¹ This fact may have a semantic explanation: the Inchoative itself encodes an element of dynamicity (vis-à-vis the temporal reference point) that is otherwise conveyed by Dynamic *-V̄y*; the final *-y* of the Inchoative may even be a formal reflection of this. Thus while the Declarative is preferred on clause-final *-ay* when the event is not concurrent with the speech moment, *-ay* occurs by itself when the event is on-going (as in the examples above).

The combination of Inchoative and Declarative is very common in past-tense narrative and in general descriptive discourse, where it tends to alternate with clauses marked by the Sequential *-yóʔ*, chaining events together in a sequence. The event is introduced with Inchoative *-ay-áh*, then re-summarized with Sequential *-yóʔ*, and then the next event is introduced, as in example (38) (see also §18.2.6.3). This use of the Inchoative has to do less with the actual aspectual nature of the event than with the packaging of information within the text.

- (38) *yɔj-yiʔ-yóʔ... tih = tít hid d'oʔ-d'ák-ay-áh*
 peel-TEL-SEQ 3sg=string 3pl take-stick.against-INCH-DECL
 'Having peeled it, they attach its string.'

tih = tít d'oʔ-d'ák-yóʔ...
 3sg=string take-stick.against-SEQ
 'Having attached its string...' (txt)

The Inchoative + Declarative form *-ay-áh* is also used in other contexts in which the simple Declarative appears, such as with the first person plural pronoun to create an inclusive future sense (examples 39–40; see §13.3), and following the Future suffix *-te-* (where it yields a progressive or prospective future; compare English “going to do V”), as in example (41).

- (39) *?in ?ǎh-ay-áh*
 1pl sleep-INCH-DECL
 'We're (all) going to sleep.' (i.e., 'good night') (cv)

¹⁵¹ However, one apparent exception to this rule has been encountered:

děh hóp-ɔy-ay
 water dry.up-DYNM-INCH
 'The water is starting to subside.' (cv)

- (40) *ʔin du-wæd-ʔáy-ay-áh*
 1pl buy-eat-VENT-INCH-DECL
 ‘We’ll go and buy something to eat.’ (txt)
- (41) ... *ʔin hi-ciʔ-wob-té-ay-áh !*
 1pl FACT-stick-rest.on-FUT-INCH-DECL
 ‘...We’ll stick (her hair) on!’ (cv)

The Inchoative suffix also combines with predicate nominals (including some relative clauses, as in 46), where it performs the same inchoative functions as with the verbal predicates above:

- (42) *tih b’ók b’íyiʔ-ay*
 3sg skin only-INCH
 ‘Only his skin is left now.’ (cv)
 (said to tease a small child, after the “monster” adult has just pretended to suck out his insides)
- (43) *děh-ay ʔin-áh*
 water-INCH 1pl-DECL
 ‘We’re about to get rained on.’ (cv) (cf. example 28)
- (44) *tih nüh-ay, nup = m’æ tih cadáp-áh*
 3sg tapioca/solid matter-INCH this=MEAS 3sg settle.out-DECL
 ‘It develops the solid matter (as the water boils off), just this much settles out.’ (txt)
- (45) *tih núh-ay mĩʔ = mah tih ʔid-áh, tih báb’ = n’ăn*
 3sg head-INCH UNDER=REP 3sg speak-DECL 3sg sibling=PL.OBJ
 ‘Despite having become only a head, he spoke to his relatives.’ (a jaguar had eaten the man’s body) (txt)
- (46) *híd = n’ăn hikəd-ní = d’əh-ay*
 3pl=PL.OBJ change-be=PL-INCH
 ‘It’s we (the Hupd’əh) who have now taken their place.’ (txt)

It does the same with predicate adjectives; for example, when asked how one is after an illness, or whether one has had enough to eat after a meal, one responds *náw-ay* (good-INCH) ‘I’m well/satisfied’, whereas the response *náw* ‘good’ is appropriate in circumstances where no transition from a less-well state is in-

volved. Similarly, *pǎ-ay* (NEG:EX-INCH) means ‘all gone, none left’, whereas *pǎ* means ‘none, does not exist’. A further example is given in (47).

- (47) *gʻi-ay ʔin-ǎh*
 hot-INCH 1pl-DECL
 ‘We’re about to get hot.’/ ‘It’s getting hot on us.’ (cv)

Inchoative *-ay* has the same function with other kinds of predicates as well, such as the adverbial expression *máh = yiʔ* (near=TEL) ‘close by’:

- (48) *ʔin máh = yiʔ-ay*
 1pl near=TEL-INCH
 ‘We’re getting close; nearly there.’ (cv)

In what is probably a related function, Inchoative *-ay* follows the Directional marker *-an* (resulting in the form *-an-ay* [an-day]), to form a temporal adverbial in a dependent clause (see §18.2.6.2):

- (49) *tih hɔp-hí-an-ay = mah jʻám, núp pɔtʔah...*
 3sg dry.up-descend-DIR-INCH=REP DST.CNTR this upriver

tu-dʻoʔ-kəd-pǎ-ǎy = mah
 go.down-take-pass-go.upstream-DYNM=REP
 ‘As it (the water) went down, there upriver... he pushed (a fish-trap) upstream.’ (txt)

A distinct – but undoubtedly related – function of Inchoative *-ay* is its use as a marker of Inchoative focus, especially with nominal arguments (see §7.1.1), as in (50). This can perhaps be compared with the use of ‘now’ with nominals in English as a marker of contrastive topic or focus.

- (50) *híd-ǎn tih máh-ǎw-ay... híd = ʔin-ay*
 3pl-OBJ 3sg kill-FLR-INCH 3pl=mother-INCH
 ‘She beat them, their mother (did).’ (txt)

A very common use of Inchoative *-ay* involves its combination with the ‘Filler’ syllable *-Vw-*. While the Filler syllable has a range of functions in Hup, and in general appears to be itself semantically empty (see §15.2.4), its combination with the Inchoative suffix results in an inchoative form (*-Vw-ay*) with marginally distinct semantics from *-ay*. The primary function of this form is to

signal entry into a relatively long-term or (semi-) permanent state. With an active verb, this long-term state is understood to be the result of the event in question.

Examples of the use of this long-term state use of *-Vw-ay* include *hipãh-ãw-ay* (know-) ‘knows it completely’ (e.g., a language in which one has attained fluency); *b’óy-ow-ay* (study-) ‘studying’ (e.g., has begun for the day and will continue all day); *næn-ǣw-ay* (come-) ‘coming to stay for good or long-term’; *macá-ãw-ay* (get.strong-) ‘fully recovered’ (after an illness; compare *macá-ay* (get.strong-INCH), used to mean ‘getting better’); and *kéy-ew-ay* (see-), used in reference to a boy who has been initiated into the Yurupari tradition (i.e., he has entered the stage of seeing the instruments, from which there is no going back).

Other examples include (51), which was uttered in response to my question of why a dog had died; it was starving, and had entered the stage of being on the edge of death, with no recovery expected. The same thing is sometimes said of people who are very old or terminally ill, once they reach the stage of being bed-ridden. Likewise, example (52) was in reference to a small child who had reached the stage of having learned to walk. Further examples are given in (53–55).

- (51) *tih náʔ-ãw-ay*
 3sg lose.consciousness-FLR-INCH
 ‘He was dying.’ (cv)
- (52) *tih g’et-g’óʔ-ow-ay*
 3sg stand-go.about-FLR-INCH
 ‘She’s walking.’ (cv)
- (53) *pěd tǣhʔíp ni-túk-uw-áy = nih = cud = mah*
 Ped child.father be-want-FLR-INCH=EMPH.CO=INFR=REP
 ‘It looks like Ped (has come to the stage of) wanting (i.e., being ready for) a husband, they said.’ (cv)
- (54) *tih ʔəg-náh tá = yíʔ, wíʔwíʔ-íy = mah... tih*
 3sg drink-NEG YET=TEL tremble-DYNM=REP 3sg
- ʔəg-əw-ay, nájw cuʔ-yíʔ-iw-ay = mah-áh tíh-íp !*
 drink-FLR-INCH good grab-TEL-FLR-INCH=REP-FOC 3sg-DEP
 ‘When he hasn’t drunk yet, they say he trembles... once he starts drinking, he’s fine, they say, that one!’ (cv)

- (55) *yũd ?in cúd-uw-ay*
 clothes 1pl be.inside-FLR-INCH
 ‘We wear clothes now.’ (in reference to the days when the Hupd’əh wore loincloths) (el)

Whereas the simple Filler + Inchoative form is used for a current, on-going state, the Declarative is typically added for a state that is not concurrent with the present moment, as it is with the simple Inchoative (see 38–41 above):

- (56) *tih cak-g’á?~ãw-ay-áh*
 3sg climb-be.suspended-FLR-INCH-DECL
 ‘He climbed up and lay down in the hammock (never to wake again).’
 (txt)

- (57) *tih-ăn wid-hám-ay-áh, dɔ?kěy hám-ãw-ay-áh*
 3sg-OBJ arrive-go-INCH-DECL right go-FLR-INCH-DECL
 ‘They fit him, went just right.’ (txt)

The ‘long-term’ Inchoative also figures in contexts of clause coordination, indicating that when X begins, Y will occur (see §18.1.2):

- (58) *hũh-an wid-hám-ãw-ay, wág kəd-nih*
 São.Gabriel-DIR arrive-go-FLR-INCH day pass-NEG

‘verdúra’ ?ãh wæd-té-h
 greens(Pt) 1sg eat-FUT
 ‘When I go to São Gabriel, I will eat green vegetables every day.’ (el)

In some contexts, the use of the ‘long-term’ Inchoative appears to be linked not to aspect, but to emphasis. This probably relates primarily to the ability (elsewhere in Hup) of the Filler syllable to mark emphasis (see §15.2.4), as well as that of the Inchoative to mark focus. This is illustrated in the following examples (from a conversation among several men who had perhaps had a little too much to drink); note that the use of Filler -Vw- here is general, occurring on both verbs and nouns, in keeping with its emphatic use.

- (59) *?an-yãh-nih-ĩw-ay máh-ãw-ay ?ãh-ãw-áh, cóc !*
 make.love-allow-NEG-FLR-INCH hit-FLR-INCH 1sg-FLR-DECL INTERJ
 ‘If she doesn’t let me make love to her I hit her, darn it!’ (cv)

- (60) *hǎy-ǎn key-d'óʔ-ow-ay ʔǎh-ǎw-ǎh,*
 um-OBJ see-take-FLR-INCH 1sg-EMPH-DECL

nút tǒk j'óŋ ! hi-yǎt-æw-ay !

here hip hit descend-lie-FLR-INCH

'I've caught a glimpse of what's-his-name, he hits her hip here! and gets down from the hammock!' (cv)

12.4. Perfective *-ʔeʔ* / *-ʔe-*

The formative *-ʔeʔ-* and its phonologically reduced variant *-ʔe-* indicate a type of perfective aspect: they focus attention on an event *via-à-vis* its final endpoint, such that the event is conceptualized as a single, bounded situation with a limited duration. This function is generally consistent with the definition of perfectivity provided by Comrie (1976: 16), who states that “perfectivity indicates the view of a situation as a single whole, without distinction of the various separate phases that make up that situation”. In Hup, expression of perfectivity is independent of tense (although it is most commonly used for past events); an event can be perceived as temporally bounded regardless of whether it occurred in the past, is currently on-going, or will occur in the future.

While the function of the *-ʔeʔ-* / *-ʔe-* suffix seems to be best captured by the label ‘perfective’, its use does not actually *exclude* additional reference to the internal temporal structure of the event. This is in keeping with Comrie’s observation (1976: 21) that “perfectivity involves lack of explicit reference to the internal temporal consistency of a situation, rather than explicitly implying the lack of such internal temporal consistency”. In Hup, the Perfective marker itself does no more than define the event as temporally bounded, and can co-occur with various other verbal aspectual forms that provide further aspectual information about the event, such as the Dynamic suffix *-V́y*, the ‘long-term’ Inchoative form *-Vw-ay*, and the Distributive marker *-pid-*. The Distributive marker, for example, indicates repetition of an event within a specific period of time; thus its combination with the Perfective marker signals that the event is repeated within a bounded time frame.

Formally, the Perfective marker is usually realized as an Inner Suffix on verbs, although it can also occur with predicate nominals and other parts of speech. It belongs to the set of formatives that have both a full (CVC) variant and a phonologically reduced (CV) variant. As is true of all the phonologically reduced variants in this set, the CV form can occur only as a verbal Inner Suffix, and must be followed by a member of the set of vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes (see §3.6); the Boundary Suffix itself drops its copied vowel in this

context and contributes only its consonant C (such that the combination of the Perfective form with Dynamic -*V́y*, Dependent marker -*Vp*, and Declarative -*Vh* yields -*?ě-y*, -*?e-p*, -*?ě-h*).

The combination of the Dynamic suffix with Perfective -*?e-* typically relates to a currently on-going event that is expected to be of limited duration, as the following examples illustrate. Although the two labels appear to be mutually exclusive, these forms in Hup are perfectly compatible – the Perfective fixes the event as bounded and having an endpoint, but is neutral as to whether that endpoint has been reached; the Dynamic indicates that the event is on-going or relevant with respect to the moment of speech or other reference point. For example, a speaker might utter (61) in a situation where rain has arrived and disrupted plans to go out, and the speaker intends to wait for the rain to subside before leaving. If the speaker had planned to stay in all day anyway, he would be more likely to use only the Dynamic to remark on the rain.

- (61) *děh d'oj-?ě-y, tán ?in hám-ǎh*
 water rain-PERF-DYNM later 1pl go-DECL
 'It's raining (for now), later we'll go.' (i.e., when it stops) (ru)

Similarly, example (62) was uttered by a woman who was washing clothes when I came along and greeted her by asking 'are you washing clothes?'¹⁵² (using the Dynamic aspect: *yǔd j'id-íy ?ám?* [clothes wash-DYNM 2sg]). She responded with the Perfective, apparently as an indication that she was nearly done and looking forward to the end of the task:

- (62) *yǔd j'id-?ě-y !*
 clothes wash-PERF-DYNM
 'I'm washing clothes!' (i.e., at the moment; almost done) (cv)

The Perfective also occurs with the Dynamic to announce an initiated activity that is not intended to last very long, or an activity of which the outcome will be of limited duration. This use can be contrasted with the similar 'announcing' function of the Inchoative -*ay* (see §12.3), which is open-ended with respect to an end-point. For example, in *Barriera Alta*, where a stream cuts through the village, the Perfective form in (63) is typically used by someone who is announcing his/her intention to go across the stream to visit someone on the other side (i.e., crossing only to stay briefly), whereas the same visitor would later use

¹⁵² Hup greetings conventionally involve an inquiry into a current (and obvious) activity, and the responses are usually an affirmative statement of the same.

the Inchoative – *b'éh-ay* (cross.water-INCH) – to express his/her intent to return home (i.e., crossing to stay for some time, with no expected soon return) when the visit is over. In (64), the speaker was likewise announcing his intention to carry out the activity in a quick, brief fashion.

(63) *b'eh-ʔě-y*

cross.water-PERF-DYNM

'(I'm) going across the creek (to other side of village, and will be back).'

(cv)

(64) *j'om-yiʔ-ʔě-y* *ʔáh = hin-íh !*

bathe-TEL-PERF-DYNM 1sg=also-DECL

'I'm going to take a quick bath too (and I'll be right back)!' (cv)

Similarly, the Perfective may be used in an interrogative clause involving an initiated or immediate future event whose duration is expected to be short-term:

(65) *j'om-ʔě-y* *ʔám ?*

bathe-PERF-DYNM 2sg

'Are you going to bathe?' (cv)

The Perfective + Dynamic combination is also occasionally used with verbs like *ham-* 'go' to announce that one intends to go into an area quickly and for a very brief time, such as when warning people chopping down a tree that one is going to walk across the path of its intended fall (example 66) (compare Inchoative *hám-ay* 'going [away for a longer period]', typically used to announce one's departure).

(66) *ham-ʔě-y*

go-PERF-DYNM

'(I'm) going (there, just for a minute)!' (ru)

The combination of the Perfective and the Inchoative marker *-ay* (normally in its 'long-term' variant *-Vw-ay*) indicates the transition to a state that is characterized by the full extent of the event, whereas the absence of the Perfective implies that the event is/was still in progress:

(67) a) *tegd'úh cap-ʔé-ew-ay* *nɔh-yíʔ-íy*

tree grow-PERF-FLR-INCH fall-TEL-DYNM

'The tree that had already grown big has fallen.'

- b) *tegd'úh cáp-aw-ay nɔh-yí?-íy*
 tree grow-FLR-INCH fall-TEL-DYNM
 'The tree that was growing big has fallen.' (el)

In combination with the Sequential marker *-yó?*, the Perfective focuses on the endpoints of a sequence of planned events:

- (68) *hæŋ-níh-áh ?áh-ãp, ?áh b'a?-?e?-yo? píd, ?áh*
 fast-NEG-FOC 1sg-DECL 1sg make.bread-PERF-SEQ DIST 1sg
wɔn'-?e?-yo? píd; hæŋ wid-ay-níh tán
 make.mingau-PERF-SEQ DIST fast arrive-INCH-NEG FUT.CNTR
b'ýt-an ?áh-áh
 roça-DIR 1sg-DECL
 'I won't be quick; I have to make manioc bread, and I have to make mingau too; I won't get to the field very soon.' (woman listing things she has to do) (ru)

The Perfective is especially common when describing events that occurred in the past, provided that they are no longer occurring, and appears most often with events that occurred in the relatively distant past. This use can involve the Dynamic marker (examples 69–70), but its appearance in a verb-final clause with the Declarative *-Vh* is more common, as in (71).

- (69) *?in-ăn yüd = mæh d'o?-nó?-šy, candádia d'o?-nó?-šy,*
 1pl-OBJ clothes=DIM take-give-DYNM sandals take-give-DYNM
ni-?ě-y píd ?in-ăn, yi-d'ěh-áh
 be-PERF-DYNM DIST 1pl-OBJ that.ITG-PL-DECL
 'They gave us some clothes, gave us sandals, they used to do this for us.'
 (but no longer) (txt)
- (70) *hicocó ?in ní-íh; ni-?ě-y j'ám ?áh-áh*
 happy 1pl be-DECL be-PERF-DYNM DIST.CNTR 1sg-DECL
 'We were happy; I used to be happy in those days.' (txt)

- (71) *ʔāh yamhidɔʔ-g'oʔ-ʔě-h*
 1sg sing-go.about-PERF-DECL
 'I used to go around singing (at drinking parties).' (when I was young)
 (txt)

In a sentence like (72), choice of the Perfective implies that the sleeping event was in some way temporary – e.g., the sleeper was a traveler and slept there only one night before moving on:

- (72) *j'ám tih ʔəh-ʔě-h*
 yesterday3sg sleep-PERF-DECL
 'He slept (here) last night.' (e.g., was just passing through) (ru)

In (73–74), the Perfective occurs in subordinated clauses in reference to past events:

- (73) *mih ʔăn nɔʔ-ʔě-p*
 Mih 1sg.OBJ give-PERF-DEP
 '(This is one that) was given to me by Mih.' (some time ago) (cv)

- (74) *těg ʔam hūh-ʔay-ʔě-p b'ɔt-ɔt*
 wood 2sg carry-VENT-PERF-DEP roça-OBL
 'In the roça from which you carried wood' (some time ago) (cv)

In the following examples, the temporal frame of reference of the relative clause is given the context of a narrative:

- (75) *yāʔám... wɔy-píd-ih, tih-ăn kəwəg d'oʔ-tuʔ-ʔě-ew-ăn-ăh*
 jaguar love-DIST-DECL 3sg-OBJ eye take-dunk-PERF-FLR-OBJ-DECL
 'The jaguar... loves (him), the one who had put his eyes in for him.' (txt)

- (76) *yúp tih = ʔây, hup = ʔây g'əh-ʔe-yăh-ăp mřʔ, baʔtřb'*
 that 3sg=FEM person=FEM be2-PERF-FRUST-DEP UNDER spirit

tih ni-g'ăh-ăy = nih
 3sg be-be2-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 'This woman, though she had been human, she was (now) an evil spirit.'
 (txt)

- (77) *yúp baʔtǐbʻ gʻǔh-pog-ʔé-ew-ǎn hid wæd-yiʔ*
 that spirit be2-EMPH-PERF-FLR-OBJ 3pl eat-TEL

kəd-hám-áý = mah

pass-go-DYNM=REP

‘Then that spirit that she really had become, they ate (her) up.’ (txt)

The Perfective marker also occurs in reference to future events, usually with the Future suffixes *-teg / -te-* (and in this context it takes the unreduced form *-ʔeʔ-* because it is not followed by a vowel-initial suffix). The use of the Perfective in (78a) draws attention to the fact that the event is expected to be of limited or brief duration (compare the lack of the Perfective in (78b). In the contexts of requests, as in (79), the Perfective’s focus on the short-term can serve the pragmatic function of downplaying the imposition on the other person (as with imperatives; see below).

- (78) a) *tih tuh-ʔeʔ-tég = mah*
 3sg stay-PERF-FUT=REP
 ‘He’ll stay, it’s said.’ (for a short time) (el)

b) *tih tuh-yiʔ-tég = mah*
 3sg stay-TEL-FUT=REP
 ‘He’ll stay, its said.’ (maybe long-term) (el)

- (79) *nin tən-ʔay-kǎm, ʔǎh piniŋ-ʔeʔ-té-t, núp wá-ǎn*
 2pl hold-VENT-IMP2 1sg tell.story-PERF-FUT-OBL this old/resp.FEM-OBJ
 ‘You all come hold (the baby) while I tell a story to this one.’ (txt)

Other examples of the Perfective (in its unreduced form *-ʔeʔ-*) are given below:

- (80) *yíníy, gʻǎg-tǎh = dʻəh ní-ní-h,*
 that.ITG.be.like.DYNM bone-son=PL be-INFR2-DECL
 ‘So, the deities did thus;

póh, dǎh = teg cǐy-ʔeʔ-ní-h

high water=tree poke-PERF-INFR2-DECL

high up, they poked into the water-tree.’ (txt)

- (81) *ʔāh j'ɔm-ʔeʔ-mǎʔ, tih yú-úh*
 1sg bathe-PERF-UNDER 3sg wait-DECL
 'While I was taking a bath, he waited.' (el)

Use of the Perfective in imperative mood tends to create a kinder or more polite imperative form, as in examples (82–83) (see §17.5.1). Nevertheless, it is in general only used where a Perfective meaning is possible in the first place, and not for commands of open-ended duration (such as in inviting someone to take something that they would keep indefinitely). The unreduced form *-ʔeʔ* is always used in the imperative mood because it lacks a following vowel-initial suffix.

- (82) *n'i-cóʔ way-ʔéʔ!*
 there-LOC go.out-PERF.IMP
 'Go on out for a while!' (gently telling a child to leave the house) (cv)

- (83) *j'ǎk ʔǎn nɔʔ-ʔéʔ!*
 buriti 1sg.OBJ give-PERF.IMP
 'Give me a buriti palm fruit, please!' (cv)

There are certain restrictions on the use of the Perfective aspect marker in Hup: it cannot occur in negative clauses, and does not combine with the Habitual *big* / *-bi-* (which is by definition not temporally bounded, see §12.8), or (with a few exceptions) with the Completive aspect marker *-cǐw-* / *-cǐp-* (presumably because this marker already encodes perfectivity, see §12.5). In combination with certain verbs and adjectives, the Perfective may be ungrammatical or restricted to a very specific interpretation. For example, it is not acceptable with the verb *naʔ-* 'die, lose consciousness' when this refers to actual death (presumably because death as a transition is inherently perfective, and the resulting state by definition lacks an endpoint); the Perfective is only grammatical with this verb when it has the sense 'lose consciousness':

- (84) *tih naʔ-yiʔ-ʔě-y*
 3sg lose.consciousness-TEL-PERF-DYNM
 'He lost consciousness (but has woken up again).' (ru)

In addition to its use as an Inner Suffix with verbs, the Perfective marker can also occur with predicate nominals (always in its unreduced form *-ʔeʔ*, and with

the formal qualities of an enclitic, specifically lack of stress).¹⁵³ The occurrence of Perfective *-ʔeʔ* with predicate nominals is fully productive, and involves both prototypical nouns (as in examples 85–86) and nominalizations (example 87). In most cases, the perfective meaning has to do with a previous identity of the referent, which no longer holds true. Note that an alternative way to express the same information involves a copula with a Perfective (verbal) Inner Suffix and following Boundary Suffix (86b) (see §17.3.4).

- (85) a) *tih = tǎh̃ tih = cǎw = ʔeʔ*
 3sg=son 3sg=shaman=PERF
 ‘His son used to be/was a shaman.’ (but is no longer) (el)
- b) *tih = tǎh̃ tih = cǎw*
 3sg=son 3sg=shaman
 ‘His son is a shaman.’ (el)
- (86) a) *ʔédia kapitǎw = ʔeʔ*
 Elias capitão=PERF
 ‘He used to be the village leader (*capitão*).’ (but gave up his post) (el)
- b) *ʔédia kapitǎw ni-ʔǎ-h*
 Elias capitão be-PERF-DECL
 ‘Elias used to be *capitão*.’ (el)
- (87) *j’ám = yiʔ yúp, dú = teg = ʔǎʔ = cud-uh*
 yesterday=TEL that barter=THING=PERF=INFR-DECL
 ‘A long time ago, it apparently used to be something that one could sell.’
 (referring to little ucuqui-seed flutes; once there was a Brazilian river-
 merchant who bought them.) (txt)

Adjectives can take either the nominal or the verbal form of the Perfective, depending on their identity as predicates or as nominal modifiers (see §17.3.3.2):

¹⁵³ Pronounced [w’eʔ] in the Tat Deh dialect area; the [w] may be related to the ‘Filler’ form -Vw- (see §15.2.4), or may be epenthetic.

- (88) a) *tih = tǎh [náv]-ʔǎ-h*
 3sg=son good-PERF-DECL
 ‘His son used to be good.’
- b) *[tih = tǎh náv] = ʔeʔ*
 3sg=son good=PERF
 ‘(He) used to be his good son.’ (el)

Perfective *-ʔeʔ* also occurs with certain parts of speech that are not typical nouns (although they may share certain features of nouns); these include the ‘what’ question word, as in (89), and the nominal ‘Negative Existence’ form *pǎ* (example 90):

- (89) *hĩ-n ʔh-ʔǎʔ yú ?*
 Q-NMZ-PERF that
 ‘What (thing) was that?’ (child asking about food scrapings on a plate)
 (cv)
- (90) *pǎ-ʔǎʔ j’ám yúw-úh*
 NEG:EX DIST.CNTR that-DECL
 ‘At one time they did not exist.’ (txt)

12.5. Completive *-cĩp-* / *-cĩw-*

The verbal Inner Suffix *-cĩp-* and its phonologically reduced variant *-cĩw-* indicate completive aspect, and signal that an event is over or no longer in progress. They are typically indicated in translation by ‘already’ or ‘finish’.

Other formatives in Hup that have phonologically reduced variants (such as Perfective *-ʔeʔ-* / *-ʔe-*) have reduced a CVC morpheme to CV in the presence of vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes generally (as discussed in §3.6). In the case of the Completive suffix, however, the reduced form *-cĩw-* involves a stop > glide (/p/ > /w/) change, rather than the complete loss of the final consonant. Moreover, this phonological reduction is restricted to contexts in which Dynamic *-V̄y* follows the Completive marker,¹⁵⁴ whereas the unreduced form *-cĩp-*

¹⁵⁴ This form *-cĩw-ĩy* is often pronounced *-cĩy* in the Tat Deh dialect area, with the full loss of the final consonant and the accompanying reduction of the vowel-initial Boundary Suffix that characterize other phonologically reduced formatives.

normally occurs when any other Boundary Suffix follows. The Completive is probably a case in which the grammaticalization of the reduced variant from the full form is still in a relatively early stage; it has occurred in the context of the Boundary Suffix that it most frequently precedes (*-V̄y*), but has not yet spread to other Boundary Suffix environments.

The Completive marker is very common in spontaneous speech, but is relatively rare in narrative (with the exception of quoted speech). In narrative, the function of the Completive marker is in most cases superseded by that of the Sequential marker *-yó?* (see §18.2.6.3), which links events together in a sequence – although Completive *-cīp-* / *-cīw-* can be used together with the Sequential to emphasize the actual completion of the event.

Examples of the Completive form *-cīw-*, followed by the Dynamic, are given in (91–95):

- (91) *biʔ-key-cīw-īy* *yúw-ǎn, ʔáh-ǎh*
 work-see-COMPL-DYNM that-OBJ 1sg-DECL
 ‘I’ve already tried that work.’ (sp)
- (92) *ʔédia hipāh-cīw-īy* *ʔūhníy*
 Elias know-COMPL-DYNM maybe
 ‘Elias already knows, maybe.’ (sp)
- (93) “*b’öy = deh tih = pög = d’əh wæd-d’oʔ-næn-cīw-īy*” *nó-ǒy = mah*
 traira-PL 3sg=big=PL eat-take-come-COMPL-DYNM say-DYNM=REP
 ‘The big traira (fish sp.) have already come to eat (the bait), he said.’ (txt)
- (94) *key-cīw-īy, cecí... ʔin key-cīw-īy píd !*
 see-COMPL-DYNM Cecilia 1pl see-COMPL-DYNM DIST
 ‘Ceci’s already seen it (a village)... we’ve see it too.’ (cv)
- (95) *ʔōh-yiʔ-cīw-īy* *híd, ʔin = tǎh = d’əh ?*
 sleep-TEL-COMPL-DYNM 3pl 1pl=child=PL
 ‘Have they already gone to sleep, our children?’ (txt)

Other formatives frequently occur between the verb stem and the Completive suffix. For example, where *wæd-cīw-īy* (eat-COMPL-DYNM) means ‘already ate, finished eating’, the addition of the Telic Inner Suffix *-yiʔ-* (see §12.6) yields *wæd-yiʔ-cīw-īy* (eat-TEL-COMPL-DYNM) ‘already ate all of something’; similarly, the Venitive Inner Suffix *-ʔay* (see §12.7) produces *wæd-ʔay-cīw-īy* (eat-VENT-COMPL-DYNM) ‘already went somewhere, ate there, and returned’.

The semantics of the Completive form can be contrasted with those of other Hup forms that convey some sense of termination, namely the the Perfective marker *-ʔeʔ-* / *-ʔe-* (§12.4) and the Telic marker *-yiʔ-* (§12.6). Whereas the Perfective indicates that the event has a final endpoint and that it or its outcome is in some way temporary or of brief duration, the focus of the Completive is on the actual *completion* of the activity, as example (96) illustrates. The Completive form, on the other hand, can be understood to be inherently perfective (i.e., the completion of an activity assumes that it has been brought to an end); it is probably because of this semantic overlap that the Perfective and Completive do not normally co-occur within the verb word (but see 99 below for an exception to this general rule).

- (96) a) *ʔāh j'ɔm-ʔeʔ-té-h*
 1sg bathe-PERF-FUT-DECL
 'I'll have a quick bath.'
- b) *ʔāh j'ɔm-hi-cĩp-té-h*
 1sg bathe-FACT-COMPL-FUT-DECL
 'I'll finish bathing.' (el)

The focus of the Telic marker is also distinct from that of the Completive. While the Telic relates specifically to a *goal* that brings an activity to an end, and/or to the full involvement and affectedness of the participants in the activity, the Completive is neutral regarding these concerns. The contrast between the Telic and the Completive is pursued in more detail in §12.6 below.

In addition to these other aspect-related formatives, the Completive suffix is often preceded by either of the valency-adjusting forms *hup-* (Reflexive, see §11.1) and *hi-* (Factitive, see §11.4), as in *wæd-hup-cĩp-* (eat-RFLX-COMPL-) and *wæd-hi-cĩp-* (eat-FACT-COMPL-). Consultants claim that there is no difference in meaning among these latter two forms and the simple (stem-COMPL-) form. A likely possibility for the existence of these variants is that they are held over from an earlier, more verb-like form of the Completive marker, which may have at one time required some valency-adjusting mechanism that is now becoming lost.

This hypothesis is supported by a number of considerations. First, use of *hi-* and *hup-* with the Completive marker appears to vary considerably among dia-

lects¹⁵⁵ and among speakers, suggesting a transitional stage. They are also very often present when the unreduced variant *-cĩp-* occurs, but appear considerably less often with the reduced form *-cĩw-*. Furthermore, the Factitive *hi-* prefix can co-occur with the Completive marker when the latter is in its unreduced form *cĩp-*, to form an independent verb stem (i.e., *not* a bound formative) meaning ‘finish’. Like any other verb, this stem can combine with other stems in the middle of a longer compound (example 97), and can stand on its own, as in (98):

- (97) *ʔapíd nutkán puhu-hi-cĩp-kəd-cak-yĩʔ-iy = mah*
 right.away to.here swell-FACT-COMPL-pass-climb-TEL-DYNM=REP
 [swell-FINISH-climb.quickly-TEL-DYNM=REP]
 ‘Right away it had already swelled up and spread quickly up to here (on her leg).’ (txt)

- (98) *ʔecáp ʔin hi-cĩp-té-h*
 tomorrow 1pl FACT-COMPL-FUT-DECL
 ‘Tomorrow we’ll finish.’ (el)

Finally, there is evidence that quite a few of Hup’s Inner Suffixes began as compound-internal verb roots and passed through an auxiliary stage before becoming what are essentially bound formatives (see §9.4.3), and it is very likely that this was the case with the Completive marker. In fact, a formally identical verb root *cĩp-* exists today in Hup, and is used to mean ‘finish off a basket’ (specifically by binding the rim; compare the form *j’ĩp-* ‘tie, wrap around’); this verb may be the ultimate source of the Completive marker. Presumably, its grammaticalization to an aspect marker would have entailed its semantic generalization; at the same time, however, the semantics of the surviving verb root may have grown more specific over time.

The following examples provide further illustration of the use of the Completive suffix, this time in its unreduced form *-cĩp-* (and accordingly followed by some other Inner or Boundary Suffix than the Dynamic), and in several cases preceded by one of the valency prefixes. Note that the Completive is *followed* by the Telic suffix in example (102), just as any normal verb stem would be – in contrast to examples such as *wæd-yĩʔ-cĩw-ĩy* (eat-TEL-COMPL-DYNM) ‘already ate all of something’ mentioned above, in which the Telic Inner Suffix *precedes*

¹⁵⁵ The *hi-* Completive form is most common in the Barreira dialect; the *hup-* form is more often encountered in the Tat Deh area, where it is often reduced to *hũ-* (undergoing consonant loss and nasal spreading from the following Completive form).

the Completive. Similarly, it is followed by the Perfective suffix in (99), whereas consultants normally judge this combination ungrammatical. This is further evidence to support the claim that the variant *-c̣w-* is more grammaticalized as an Inner Suffix, whereas in other contexts the Completive marker retains a more verb-like identity.

- (99) *ni biʔ biʔ-hup-c̣p-ʔě-y*
 1sg.POSS work work-RFLX-COMPL-PERF-DYNM
 ‘I’m going to finish my work.’ (el)

- (100) *tedé = d’əh-ət tih biʔ-ni-c̣p-ih*
 three=PL-OBL 3sg work-be-COMPL-DECL
 ‘He’s already worked with three (of them).’ (sp)

- (101) *yinih-yóʔ, ʔəg-hi-c̣p-yóʔ,*
 that.ITG.be.like-SEQ drink-FACT-COMPL-SEQ

pəʔ-hi-c̣p-yóʔ ní-ty...
 dabacuri-FACT-COMPL-SEQ be-DYNM
 ‘So, having finished drinking, having finished the dabacuri (ritual presentation)...’ (tell our helper to go get wood, he said) (txt)

- (102) *hid yinih-mĩʔ mɔy*
 3pl that.ITG.be.like-UNDER hole

hat-hup-c̣p-yiʔ-iy = cud = mah hid-iw-ih
 dig-RFLX-COMPL-TEL-DYNM=INFR=REP 3pl-FLR-DECL
 ‘Meanwhile they had already dug their holes.’ (txt)

As discussed in §10.2, verbs can occasionally appear in the clause without a Boundary Suffix, forming an adverbial phrase. There are a few examples in my text corpus in which a verb involving the Completive form, preceded by one of the valency markers, occurs in this function:

- (103) *ʔot-hi-c̣p, tih d’ob-yiʔ-ay-áh*
 cry-FACT-COMPL 3sg go.to.river-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘After she had finished crying, she went to the river.’ (txt)

(104) *yinih-yó?* = *mah* *yúp* *tih* *ʔág-ay-áh* *yúw-ǎn*,
 that.ITG.be.like-SEQ=REP that 3sg drink-INCH-DECL that-OBJ

wæd-hup-cǐp, *yúp* *hid*
 eat-RFLX-COMPL that 3pl

g'oʔwow'-tuʔ-y'æt-yiʔ-pog-ʔé-w-ǎn-áh
 squeeze-dunk-leave-TEL-EMPH1-PERF-FLR-OBJ-DECL
 'So he drank it, upon finishing eating, that which they had squeezed,
 dunked and left.' (fish-poison vine in his drink) (txt)

12.6. Telic *-yiʔ-*

The verbal Inner Suffix *-yiʔ-* serves a basic function of telicity. A 'telic' situation is defined as "one that involves a process that leads up to a well-defined terminal point, beyond which the process cannot continue" (Comrie 1976: 45), and as "an action viewed from its endpoint" (Hopper and Thompson 1980: 252). In Hup, the Telic marker relates to a goal which necessarily brings the activity to an end, such as that conveyed by telic 'eat up' (vs. eat) in English. In particular, the Hup Telic form signals that a participant is completely involved in or affected by the event.

Like most Inner Suffixes generally in Hup, the Telic suffix is most frequently followed by the Dynamic suffix *-Vý*; the resulting combination (*yiʔ-iy*) typically indicates a *current state* of having attained the goal relating to the event, by which a participant is now completely affected. The frequency of the Telic + Dynamic combination is reflected in its phonologically reduced pronunciation in the Tat Deh/Vaupés dialect, where it appears as [yíy], without the glottal stop (compare the similar reduction of the Completive marker in the context of the Dynamic (*-cǐw-*) in §12.5 above). That this form is coming to be seen as a non-decomposable unit in its own right in this region is suggested by the inability of some speakers to separate the Telic and Dynamic markers in slow speech.

In combination with intransitive verb stems, the Telic suffix typically indicates a state that is fully attained by the subject, thus resulting in a perfective or completive sense. Examples include *həb-yiʔ-* 'dry out', *hǔ-yiʔ-* 'burn up', *pu-yiʔ-* 'all wet, soaked', *naʔ-yiʔ-* 'die/be dead, lose consciousness', and (105–106):

- (105) *ʔãh ʔəg-naʔ-yíʔ-íy*
 1sg drink-lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM
 ‘I’m fully drunk / have reached a state of full drunkenness.’ (cv)
- (106) *tiyíʔ naw-yíʔ-íy tãʔáy-át*
 man good-TEL-DYNM woman-OBL
 ‘The man got well / became fully good in the company of the woman.’
 (el)

Similar uses of *-yiʔ-* often involve the Inchoative suffix *-ay*, which indicates the subject’s transition to a state of being completely involved in or affected by the event (see examples 36–37 above).

With transitive clauses, the Telic suffix indicates that the *object* of the verb is fully affected by the event:

- (107) *tih ʔəg-yíʔ-íy*
 3sg drink-TEL-DYNM
 ‘He’s drunk (it) all up.’ (cv)
- (108) *tih d’oʔ-cij-yíʔ-iw-ay*
 3sg take-scatter-TEL-FLR-INCH
 ‘He took (the pieces) and scattered them.’ (txt)

Although it conveys a sense of completion, the Telic marker is distinct from the Completive (see §12.5 above), as can be seen in the following comparison of their uses. Whereas the Completive marker indicates that the actor has finished performing the activity, the Telic signals the completion of the activity vis-à-vis a goal – especially an involved object – as example (109a–b) illustrates. Note that the Telic and Completive markers can (and frequently do) co-occur, as in (109c).

- (109) a) *húptok ʔãh g’ɔp-yíʔ-íy*
 caxiri 1sg serve-TEL-DYNM
 ‘I served all the caxiri (i.e., it is all gone).’
- b) *húptok ʔãh g’ɔp-cíw-íy*
 caxiri 1sg serve-COMPL-DYNM
 ‘I’ve already served caxiri (i.e., I am done serving, but there may still be some left).’

- c) *húptok ?āh g'ɔp-(hũ?)-yíʔ-cíw-íy*
 caxiri 1sg serve-(finish)-TEL-COMPL-DYNM
 'I already served all the caxiri (i.e., I have finished serving and there is none left).' (el)

Accordingly, in certain situations the Completive marker may appear where the Telic marker cannot. The unacceptable example (110a), for example, would imply absurdly that all the rain was used up (whereas everybody knows that it will rain again before long); (110b), on the other hand, simply states that the current rain has passed. On the other hand, the combination of Telic and ('long-term') Inchoative in (110c) is fully grammatical, and indicates a transition from a long dry spell to another rainy period – this is said, for example, when a sudden rain puts a stop to plans to fish with timbó (fish-poison vine), which must be done during periods of low water in the creeks.

- (110) a) **děh d'oj-yíʔ-íy*
 water rain-TEL-DYNM
- b) *děh d'oj-cíʔ-íy*
 water rain-COMPL-DYNM
 'It rained (and has stopped).' (i.e., it has finished raining for the time being)
- c) *děh d'oj-yíʔ-iw-ay*
 water rain-TEL-FLR-INCH
 'It has started raining again (after a long dry period).' (el)

Telicity in Hup is likewise distinct from the expression of Perfective aspect, since the temporary nature of an event or its resulting state is independent of whether the goal has been achieved and/or the participants fully affected. These forms are contrasted in (111a–b); their distinct semantics also allows them to co-occur (111c):

- (111) a) *tih ham-yíʔ-íy*
 3sg go-TEL-DYNM
 'He went away.' (cv)
- b) *tih ham-ʔě-y*
 3sg go-PERF-DYNM
 'He's going (there) briefly/temporarily.' (el)

- c) *tih naʔ-yiʔ-ʔǝ-y*
 3sg lose.consciousness-TEL-PERF-DYNM
 ‘He lost consciousness (completely, but only temporarily).’ (ru)

Like most aspectual markers in Hup, Telic *-yiʔ-* is independent of tense. While most of the examples above are interpreted as referring to events that are completed and therefore in the past, Telic *-yiʔ-* is also used in reference to present, habitual, and future situations. These focus on an achieved goal or fully affected participant, without entailing the completion or ending of the activity itself.

Examples (112–114) illustrate currently on-going or habitual situations that are conceived as telic:

- (112) *pib hǝh-yiʔ-iy*
 strong make.sound-TEL-DYNM
 ‘(The tape player) gives a loud sound.’ (cv)
- (113) *ʔám ʔid-hũʔ-yiʔ-iy !*
 2sg speak-finish-TEL-DYNM
 ‘You speak (the Hup language) completely!’ ~ ‘You know how to say everything.’ (cv)
- (114) *ʔicabéw ʔəg-yiʔ-iy bíg*
 Isabel drink-TEL-DYNM HAB
 ‘Isabel always drinks (hot things) right up.’ (cv)

The following examples have future reference, conveyed via the Inchoative (115), the first person inclusive Declarative form (116), and the Future suffix *-te-* (117):

- (115) *ʔáh ham-yiʔ-iw-ay*
 1sg go-TEL-FLR-INCH
 ‘I’m leaving for good.’ (said as a joke when going to roça) (cv)
- (116) *ʔin biʔ-yiʔ-ih*
 1pl work-TEL-DECL
 ‘We’ll do the whole thing.’ (e.g., planting an entire roça) (el)

- (117) *hí ?ǎh piniŋ-yohoy-yiʔ-té-h*
 just 1sg tell.story-search-TEL-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’m just going to tell the story as best I can.’ (txt)

The Telic function of *-yiʔ* – in relation to an object or goal of the activity – is also clearly illustrated in imperative clauses. For example, the simple imperative form of the verb ‘weave basket’ (*g’úd*) is used to tell someone to weave a little bit, but the telic imperative *g’ud-yiʔ* means ‘finish weaving it; weave entire indicated amount’. Similarly, the intransitive *ham-yiʔ* (go-TEL.IMP) means ‘go away!’, as opposed to *hám* ‘go!’. Further examples are given in (118–120):

- (118) *wæd-yiʔ !*
 eat-TEL.IMP
 ‘Eat (it) up!’ (cv)
- (119) *núw-ǎn g’ɔʔ-yiʔ !*
 this-OBJ pull.up-TEL.IMP
 ‘Pull that one up (manioc)!’ (cv)
- (120) *?ǎn hi-yiʔ-kǎm, yǎʔám !*
 1sg.OBJ descend-TEL-IMP2 jaguar
 ‘Jump down on me, jaguar!’ (txt)

The form *yiʔ* performs other functions in addition to indicating telic aspect on verbs, and in fact is near-ubiquitous in Hup. It attaches to nouns as a contrastive emphasis particle, with the function of setting the referent apart from other possible referents, as in *?ám = yiʔ* ‘it’s you (and no other)’ (see §7.1.2), and it cliticizes to nouns, adjectives, subordinated verbs, and even whole clauses as a kind of adverbializer (see §10.2). While it is probable that all, or at least most, of these uses of *yiʔ* represent (historical) polysemy rather than homonymy, the relationships between their uses are at present speculative.

12.7. Venitive *-?ay-*

Whereas the aspectual markers that are the focus of this chapter locate an event in time, the Venitive Inner Suffix *-?ay-* indicates that the activity involves a change of *spatial* location. Its functional and formal similarity to the markers of temporal aspect leads it to be considered here.

The default use of the Venitive suffix involves movement toward the speaker. In most uses, such as with the Dynamic suffix *-Výy*, the Venitive marker

marker indicates a full circuit – the actor has gone somewhere, performed the activity, and returned. Note that, in keeping with this sense, it would be ungrammatical for a speaker at point B to use the *-ʔay-* form in reference to an activity which an addressee who began at point A has performed en route to B. For example, one conventionally uses the question *ham-ʔáy-áy ʔám?* (go-VENT-DYNM 2sg) ‘have you gone and come back?’ to greet a member of one’s own village who has returned after an absence (i.e., who has gone from B to A and back to B), but not to greet a visitor from another village (who has only gone from A to B). The ‘full circuit’ use of *-ʔay-* is illustrated in the following examples:

- (121) *j’om-ʔáy-áy ʔǎh-ǎh*
 bathe-VENT-DYNM 1sg-DECL
 ‘I’ve gone to bathe (and returned).’ (cv)
- (122) *hǎt hid mæh-ʔay-yóʔ, hid wǎd-ǎy*
 alligator 3pl kill-VENT-SEQ 3pl eat-DYNM
 ‘Having gone and killed alligator (and returned), they would eat.’ (txt)
- (123) *mɔtwaʔap g’í ʔin ham-ʔay-ʔě-h*
 three year 1pl go-VENT-PERF-DECL
 ‘Three years (i.e., once each year) we went (and returned home).’ (cv)

While *-ʔay-* is grammatical in combination with all or most tense and aspect markers, events referred to by verbs inflected with *-ʔay-* are not conceived as currently on-going; they may, however, be completed (as in 121–123 above), future, habitual, or negative (unrealized):

- (124) *tóg=mæh máh-an... ʔǎh ham-ʔay-té-h*
 daughter=DIM near-DIR 1sg go-VENT-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’m going to visit my daughter (and will return afterwards).’ (txt)
- (125) *ʔǎh j’om-ʔáy-áy bíg*
 1sg bathe-VENT-DYNM HAB
 ‘I always go bathe (and come back).’ (el)
- (126) *j’om-ʔay-níh táé*
 bathe-VENT-NEG YET
 ‘I haven’t yet gone to bathe.’ (cv)

As opposed to the ‘full-circuit’ movement (going and returning) signaled by the Venitive form in indicative mode, imperative use of *-ʔay-*¹⁵⁶ involves a distinct speaker-centered movement that is only one-way. The addressee may be summoned to come and perform the activity at the location of the speaker (regardless of whether the addressee’s original origin is in the speaker’s location or elsewhere):

- (127) *ków* *wæd-ʔáy !*
 hot.pepper eat-VENT.IMP
 ‘Come eat pepper-broth (and beiju)!’ (call/invitation to eat) (cv)

- (128) *hǔ* *yǎʔ-ʔáy !*
 game.animal singe-VENT.IMP
 ‘Come and singe the game animal!’ (txt)

Alternatively, imperative *-ʔay-* can indicate dislocation away from the speaker. This interpretation usually involves the addition of the imperative form of the verb *ham-* ‘go’ to the [verb stem + Venitive] form, producing a command to go and perform an activity in a different location from that of the speech act participants (with no particular implication to return). Here, the orientation away from the speaker is effectively communicated by *hám* ‘go’, and Venitive *-ʔay-* appears to be redundant or semantically empty; nevertheless, speakers never drop the Venitive marker, whereas they *do* occasionally drop *hám* ‘go’ (example 132 below). Formally, also, this construction is peculiar in that it appears to involve *two* imperative predicates, since the Venitive Inner Suffix is not followed by the (otherwise obligatory) Boundary Suffix.

This form of the Venitive imperative is illustrated in examples (129–131). Note that the verb *ham-* ‘go’ occurs twice in (131), suggesting that the grammatical contribution of imperative *hám* in this construction is distinct from that of the main verb itself.

¹⁵⁶ Note that the combination of the Venitive (*-ʔay*) + Dynamic (*-Vy*) markers (*-ʔáy-áy*; example a), happens to be formally identical to the combined Venitive (*-ʔay*) + Inchoative (*-ay*) + imperative forms (*-ʔáy-áy*; example b):

- | | |
|--|--|
| a) <i>ʔǎh wæd-ʔáy-áy</i>
1sg eat-VENT-DYNM
‘I went to eat and returned.’ | b) <i>wæd-ʔáy-áy !</i>
eat-VENT-INCH.IMP
‘Go on over there and eat!’ |
|--|--|

Both combinations occur frequently, but are easily differentiated by their difference in mood (indicative vs. imperative).

- (129) *nɔʔ-ʔáy* *hám !*
 give-VENT.IMP go.IMP
 ‘Go give (it)!’ (to someone else, in other location) (cv)
 [Compare *nɔʔ-ʔáy* ‘come give (it)’ (to me or to someone with me)]

- (130) *j’ɔm-ʔáy* *hám !*
 bathe-VENT.IMP go.IMP
 ‘Go bathe!’ (cv)

- (131) *ham-ʔáy* *hám !*
 go-VENT.IMP go.imp
 ‘Go (do it)!’ (cv)

Example (132) illustrates that imperative *hám* ‘go!’ may be dropped in certain cases where the direction is clear from the context (although Venitive -*ʔay*- may not be dropped):

- (132) “*niŋ j’ɔm-ʔáy tǎh*” *nɔ-d’əh-d’ob-yiʔ-píd-ih*
 2pl bathe-VENT.IMP child say-send-go.to.river-TEL-DIST-DECL
 ‘(She) always sent (the children) to the river, saying “you all go bathe, children”.’ (txt)

Comparative note

Directional-type formatives are fairly common in South American languages, and have been reported for Quechua, Yagua (T. Payne 1997), Pilaga (Vidal 2001), Mosestén (Sakel 2004), and Tariana (Aikhenvald 2003a), to name just a few languages. Tukano (Ramirez 1997a: 160) marks direction both toward and away from the speaker; the semantic similarity between the Tukano and Hup venitive markers may be yet another result of the contact between these two languages.

12.8. Habitual *bíg* / *-bi-*

The fluid morpheme *bíg* (and its phonologically reduced variant *-bi-*) indicates habitual aspect. It refers specifically to habitual or customary events that hold true within the time frame of the utterance; in this, it differs from many of the

aspectual markers discussed in this chapter, which are flexible with regard to reference point.

As a fluid morpheme, *bíg* can occur in the verbal core (as an Inner Suffix) and in the periphery. In the latter case, Habitual *bíg* is identified as a particle, since it takes independent stress (with high/falling tone). It occurs in indicative, negative, and interrogative clauses alike to express a habitual activity:

- (133) *ʔicabéw ʔəg-yíʔ-íy bíg*
 Isabel drink-TEL-DYNM HAB
 ‘Isabel always drinks (hot things) right up.’ (cv)

- (134) *pǎj wǎd-ǎy bíg ʔám ?*
 umari.fruit eat-DYNM HAB 2sg
 ‘Do you eat umari?’ (i.e., do you like it / are you in the habit of eating it?)
 (cv)

- (135) *ʔám-ǎn m’æ-níh bíg tíh ?*
 2sg-OBJ cool-NEG HAB 3sg
 ‘Doesn’t it (a thin hammock) always make you cold?’ (cv)

The following examples illustrate the Habitual marker’s realization as an Inner Suffix (conditioned by the presence of certain Boundary Suffixes; see §3.5).¹⁵⁷

- (136) *tedé ʔóda hid wid-hí-bíg-mah-áh*
 three(Pt) hour(Pt) 3pl arrive-descend-HAB-REP-DECL
 ‘They always arrive by 3:00, they say.’ (cv)

¹⁵⁷ The fact that particles like *bíg* (themselves morphosyntactically bound formatives) are so frequently phonologically bound to the verb calls into question the characterization of Hup given in D. Payne (1990: 220) (based on work by Moore and Franklin 1980). Payne presents Hup as an isolating language that expresses aspect, mood, etc. by means of independent words, and she illustrates this claim with examples of the Habitual marker *bíg* as an independent form that can appear in different locations within the clause. However, not only is *bíg* often phonologically bound, but its true use as an independent lexeme is functionally and semantically distinct from its use as a Habitual marker (see below).

- (137) *ʔayũp = ʔih, key-g'ãʔ-bíḡ-ip = ʔih = yi?* *píd*
 one=MSC see-be.suspended-HAB-DEP=MSC=TEL DIST

key-g'ãʔ-ãb'ay

see-be.suspended-AGAIN

'One boy, the one who always lay watching, lay watching again.' (txt)

Habitual *bíḡ* can also follow the interrogative pronominal form 'what' – as can certain other verbal formatives such as the Frustrative – although the Habitual is otherwise limited primarily to verbs:

- (138) *hĩ-n'ih bíḡ yǎh yǎʔ b'ʔt wid-yé-ep yíkán*
 Q-NMZ HAB FRUSTMom roça return-enter-DEP over.there

kəkəy-nih = yi? kədcak-wog-bíḡ-yǎh-ǎw-áh yǎ ?

interrupt-NEG=TEL pass.climb-EMPH1-HAB-FRUST-FLR-FOC TAG1

'Why the heck, when Mom comes back from the manioc field, does she always climb up there without fail?' (txt)

The Habitual marker's phonologically reduced variant *-bi-* occurs exclusively as an Inner Suffix, followed by a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix, as is the case for all such reduced (CV) formative variants (but note that the unreduced variant can occur optionally in this environment as well, as in [137] above; see §3.6). Semantically, the two variants are essentially interchangeable (compare example 143), although *bíḡ* is sometimes preferred in more forceful, emphatic utterances.

- (139) *pīj dēh-an b'iyi? ʔāh ham-bí-h*
 cabari(fruit sp.) water-DIR only 1sg go-HAB-DECL
 'I always go only to Cabari (village).' (txt)

- (140) *cecídiya páh tǎʔnəhə-dəb-pog-bí-h !*
 Cecilia PRX.CNTR laugh-much-EMPH1-HAB-DECL
 'It's Cecilia who's always laughing a lot!' (cv)

- (141) *tíh = tǎh = d'əh j'am wid-næn-kəcət-bí-p, nó-ǎy = mah*
 3sg=little=PL DIST.CNTR arrive-come-ahead-HAB-DEP say-DYNN=REP
 'The little ones always arrive first, he said.' (txt)

- (142) “*tih = hup-hipãh = d’əh-ay yúw-úh,*” *?in-ăn nɔ-bí-ay hó?*
 3sg=RFLX-think=PL-INCH that-DECL 1pl-OBJ say-HAB-INCH TAG2
 ‘(You have) sense now (i.e., have become ‘civilized’), they always tell us now.’ (txt)

- (143) *wǒh = d’əh ?ăn hid ?id-ít ?ãh ?id-bí-h;*
 River.Indian=PL 1sg.OBJ 3pl speak-OBL 1sg speak-HAB-DECL

húp = ?áy = d’əh ?ăn wǒh hid ?id-tǎn = hin,
 Hup=FEM=PL 1sg.OBJ River.Indian 3pl speak-COND=also

?id-íy bíg
 speak-DYNM HAB

‘When the River Indians speak with me, I always speak (Tukano); also if Hup women speak Tukano with me, I always speak (it with them).’ (txt)

In keeping with its restriction to a time frame concurrent with the speech moment, the distribution of Habitual *bíg / -bí-* is limited. In particular, it is generally not found with past tense statements that have a defined endpoint, and is therefore ungrammatical in combination with the Perfective aspect marker *-?e? / -?e-*. To express a habitual event that once held true but no longer does, the Perfective alone may be used:

- (144) *nɔ-?ě-h*
 say-PERF-DECL
 ‘(I) used to say (it, in my childhood).’ (txt)

The Distributive marker *píd* may also express habitual aspect in combination with the Perfective (see §12.9.1 below), but *bíg* and *píd* do not co-occur.

Habitual *bíg / -bí-* is likewise ungrammatical in future-tense expressions, in which habitual meaning may be conveyed through use of the Future Contrast marker *tán* (§13.4.3), or via lexical strategies such as *kəkəy-níh* (interrupt-NEG) ‘without fail’ and *wág kəd-níh* (day pass-NEG) ‘every day’. Lexical means are also the only available strategy for expressing habitual aspect in imperative clauses:

- (145) *kəkəy-níh, yǒh ?ág !*
 interrupt-NEG medicine drink.IMP
 ‘Without fail, take your medicine.’ (el)

- (146) *wág kəd-níh, yǒh ʔǒg !*
 day pass-NEG medicine drink.IMP
 ‘Take your medicine every day!’ (el)

In addition to its use as a Habitual marker, the form *bǐg* also occurs as a free lexeme in Hup. Used as an adjective, *bǐg* means ‘old’ (i.e., ‘existing for a long time’), and is used in reference to inanimate entities and most animals (although not humans):

- (147) *tǐw bǐg yúw-úh !*
 path old that-DECL
 ‘That’s an old path!’ (cv)

The free lexeme *bǐg* (and its inchoative variant *bǐg-ay*) is also used as an adverbial to express durativity, ‘for a long time’:

- (148) *yíkan bǐg ʔāh ní-an-ay*
 over.there long.time 1sg be-DIR-INCH
 ‘During the long time I stayed there...’ (txt)
- (149) *cet-ham-tubud-yíʔ-íy, húp = ʔǎy-ǎn, bǐg !!*
 carry.on.back-go-INTS3-TEL-DYNM Hup-FEM-OBJ long.time
 ‘He carried the girl a long way off, for a long time!’ (txt)
- (150) *bǐg-níh = yíʔ b’uy-d’əh-yíʔ*
 long.time-NEG=TEL throw-send.away-TEL.IMP
 ‘Throw it out right away (lit. ‘in a not-long time’).’ (el)

Historical note

Despite the differences between the various realizations of the form *bǐg*, we can with high probability posit a historical relationship between them. There is no doubt that the Inner Suffix *-bǐ-* is a grammaticalized form of Habitual *bǐg* (which itself appears as both a particle and Inner Suffix). Furthermore, the Habitual marker itself probably derives from the free lexeme *bǐg*. As an independent word, *bǐg* must have first developed two related meanings and functions: the adjective ‘old’ and the adverbial ‘for a long time’ (both of which exist today). Of these, the adjectival use was probably prior, leading to an expansion of meaning from a more physical to a more temporal domain. This would have been followed by the shift from the adverbial ‘for a long time’ to the verbal

Habitual marker. Semantically, the sense of doing something or existing over a long period of time is not far removed from the idea of doing that thing over and over during an unbounded period of time – i.e., habitually (cf. §3.7).

An example of the close relationship between these uses of *bĩg* is found in (151), from the story of how the Pleiades constellation came to be: a group of brothers were seduced and tricked one by one by the Rattlesnake's daughter into being bitten by her father, and were later sent up to the sky. The free form *bĩg* is used here to indicate that '(the snake bit all the men) over the course of a long time'; but if instead it were cliticized to the verb (*g'əç-hũ?-yĩ?-iy bĩg* [=mah]) it would mean '(the snake) habitually bit them'. The semantic difference is not very great.

(151) *yup tĩhĩy = mah g'əç-hũ?-yĩ?-iy = mah; bĩg*
 that rattlesnake=REP bite-finish-TEL-DYNM=REP long.time

g'əç-hũ?-yó?-ay... póh hid cak-té-aw-ay
 bite-finish-SEQ-INCH high 3pl climb-FUT-FLR-INCH
 'The rattlesnake bit all of them; after having bit them all (each one who arrived) over the course of a long period of time... they would climb up high (to form the Pleiades).' (txt)

12.9. Iterativity

Hup has several morphological means of indicating iterativity, which correspond to different strategies for conceptualizing the repetition of events. The Distributive form *pĩd* (a fluid morpheme, having free and bound variants) indicates one to multiple repetitions of an event, and can also signal the durativity or continuity of a given event or state over time. Root reduplication marks events that are conceived as intrinsically characterized by multiple repetitions or realizations of a semantically salient feature, and the fluid form *b'ay* indicates a single repetition of an event, of some aspect of that event, or of its resulting state.

12.9.1. Distributive *pĩd*

The Distributive marker *pĩd* refers to a series of one or more repeated instances of an event, typically within a bounded time frame, and it can have secondary functions of marking durativity or habituality. The marker *pĩd* is highly flexible, occurring with (and having scope over) various parts of speech, including no-

nominal arguments of a clause, where it functions as a quantifier (see §6.5.2). This section focuses on its occurrence with verbal predicates, where its primary function is to mark iterative aspect.

In combination with verbs, *píd* is a fluid morpheme, realized both as a particle (especially when preceded by the Dynamic marker) and as an Inner Suffix (when followed by the Declarative or various other Boundary suffixes). However, whereas most fluid formatives contribute the same semantics to the verb regardless of their realization as peripheral formative or as Inner Suffix, the default interpretation of the Distributive differs slightly depending on its placement – although there is significant semantic overlap between these and the form's semantics are generally quite vague to begin with. As a particle, *píd* typically signals a repetition of the event, performed by a different agent; as an Inner Suffix, it is more likely to be interpreted as more directly aspectual, typically relating to the repetition or duration of an action performed by a single agent. The pronunciation of *-píd-* as an Inner Suffix is also somewhat distinct; it appears as [pəd] for some speakers, and occasionally is even pronounced as [pə] when followed by a vowel-initial suffix – undoubtedly illustrating the initial stages of the same phonological reduction (CVC > CV) that so many other Hup formatives have undergone in this morphosyntactic (Inner Suffix) environment.

The following examples (152–154) illustrate the uses of *píd* as a particle in combination with predicates. Its default interpretation in this context of is of at least one repetition of the event, performed by or with respect to *different* actors (subjects). Verbal predicates followed by *píd* are frequently marked with the Dynamic suffix, as well as with other Boundary Suffixes such as the Future and clausal Negative markers. It does not co-occur with Habitual *bíg*.

- (152) *j'əb-tə-yi?* *wǎn'* *ʔāh* *ʔəg-əy* ***píd***
 night-YET-TEL mingau 1sg drink-DYNM DIST
 'I too drink mingau in the morning.' (el)

- (153) *tih* *ham-tég* ***píd*** = *mah*
 3sg go-FUT DIST=REP
 'He'll go too (he says).' (ru)

- (154) *ʔāh* *hipāh-nih* ***píd***
 1sg know-NEG DIST
 'I don't know either.' (cv)

In addition to verbal constructions, Distributive *píd* occurs freely with non-verbal predicates, such as the predicate adjectives and nominals in examples

(155–157). As in the examples above, these also involve a repeated instance with a different actor or subject.

- (155) *ʔám = hin nájw píd-i? ?*
 2sg=also good DIST-INT
 ‘Are you well also?’ (cv)

- (156) *madía píd*
 Maria DIST
 ‘(I’m) Maria also.’ (the second response when two women named Maria were asked their names) (cv)

- (157) *cáp ʔid píd yúw-úh*
 other speech DIST that-DECL
 ‘That’s another story.’ (txt)

While the examples in (152–154) demonstrate the default interpretation of the particle *píd* in verbal constructions – that a different subject is involved in the repetition of the event – the semantics of this form is vague, and other interpretations are common. Distributive *píd* may mark a successive string of different events performed by the same actor (example 158), or a repetitive or continuous event carried out by the same actor(s) (example 159). It may also signal that multiple participants did the same thing, at more or less the same time (160), or even a general iterativity or habituality of the event (161).

- (158) *hæŋ-níh-áh ʔáh-áp, ʔáh b’aʔ-ʔeʔ-yo? píd,*
 fast-NEG-FOC 1sg-DECL 1sg make.bread-PERF-SEQ DIST

ʔáh wɔn’-ʔeʔ-yo? píd; hæŋ wid-way-níh
 1sg make.mingau-PERF-SEQ DIST fast arrive-go.out-NEG

tán b’št-an ʔáh-áh
 FUT.CNTR roça-DIR 1sg-DECL

‘I won’t be quick; I have to make manioc bread, and I have to make mingau; I won’t get to the roça very soon.’ (woman listing things she has to do) (ru)

- (159) *yíkán-ay yúp, póh cák-áy = cud, yǝhóy-óy píd = cud,*
 over.there-INCH that high climb-DECL=INFR search-DYNM DIST=INFR

yǝhóy-óy = cud núw-úh, tíh-ǎn = yi? píd, yǝhóy-yi? píd tíh !
 search-DYNM=INFR this-DECL3sg-OBJ=TEL DIST search-TEL DIST EMPH2
 ‘Now there, climbing up high, still searching, that one is searching for
 him still, still searching!’ (txt)

- (160) *tíh = dól? = mæh ʔǝh-wób-óy = mah; tíhñh*
 3sg=child=DIM sleep-rest.on.surface-DYNM=REP 3sg.POSS

yãʔamböʔ-ót = yi?, ʔæyǎt = yi?, key-ʔéʔ = d’əh
 dog-OBL=TEL together=TEL see-PERF=PL

ʔǝh-wób-óy píd
 sleep-rest.on.surface-DYNM DIST
 ‘The little child went to sleep (on the bed); with his dog, together, the
 ones who had been looking both went to sleep (on the bed).’ (txt)

- (161) *ʔǎh hipǎh-níh = n’íh, ʔǎh ʔih-kéy-mǎʔ píd*
 1sg know-NEG=NMZ 1sg ask-see-UNDER DIST
 ‘When I don’t know, I ask (sometimes/usually).’ (ru)

Distributive *píd* is not usually used in imperative clauses (speakers prefer other markers of repetition such as ‘Repeated instance’ = *b’ay* [§12.9.2] and ‘Related instance’ *táʔ* [§7.6] in this context). Examples of its use in imperatives do nevertheless exist:

- (162) *big-níh = mæh = yíʔ píd = mah, ʔǎn d’əh-d’əh-wáy*
 long.time-NEG=DIM=TEL DIST=REP 1sg.OBJ send-send-go.out.IMP

píd ! tíh nól-ǎh
 DIST 3sg say-DECL
 ‘“Quickly, again, send another one out for me!” he said.’ (txt)

The uses of *píd* in the examples above – as a particle that signals the repetition of the predication – are very similar to its uses with nominal arguments, where *píd* functions as a quantifier (see §6.5.2). With nominals, Distributive *píd* occurs as a free particle, and typically signals a repetition of the entity vis-à-vis the event:

- (163) *pihít* *ʔayup = tăt* ***píd*** *tih* *nóʔ-ǎh*, *tãʔǎy = n'ăn*
 banana one=fruit DIST 3sg give-DECL woman=PL.OBJ
 'He gave a banana to each of the women.' (el)

Its use with adverbial clauses, such as those relating to a location, may be very similar:

- (164) *tih* *ʔǎh-ʔé-t* ***píd***, *tih* *wæd-ʔé-t* ***píd*** = *ma-ám*
 3sg sleep-PERF-OBL DIST 3sg eat-PERF-OBL DIST=REP-DST.CNTR

tih *ʔih-key-hám-mah*
 3sg ask-see-go-REP
 'He (turtle) went asking at each place he (tapir) had slept, at each place he'd eaten.' (txt, Umari Norte dialect)

Repetition of the entity relative to the event typically entails multiple performances of the event itself. Furthermore, when an object is not explicitly stated – as in the imperative example in (162) above – the *placement* of *píd* in the clause may be predicative, but its interpretation may be similar to that of a quantifier.

When it appears as an Inner Suffix, the function of *píd* overlaps with its function as a particle (and to some degree as a nominal quantifier), but it also tends to have a more directly aspectual interpretation vis-à-vis the verb. In other words, its tighter formal integration with the verb is realized as a somewhat tighter functional integration as well. In general, when Distributive *-pid-* appears as an Inner Suffix, the subject or actor of the clause is usually understood to be the same as that which is topical in the discourse, whereas the free particle *píd* is more likely to involve a change in subject (although by no means invariably, as illustrated in 158–161 above). The exact way in which Inner Suffix *-pid-* indicates the repetition of the event may vary considerably depending on the context.

Where the temporal frame of the event is relatively broad, *-pid-* may express habituality (note that a connection between iterativity and habituality is common among aspectual systems; see Comrie 1976: 27–31). Distributive *-pid-* may be used to express habitual events that are contained within a bounded time frame, having a defined endpoint – as opposed to the Habitual marker *bíg / -bi-* (see §12.8), which is essentially Dynamic and refers only to habitual events that hold true with respect to the speech moment. Thus *-pid-* is often used to mark a *past* habitual event in the context of narrative, and is acceptable in combination with Perfective aspect (whereas *bíg / -bi-* is ungrammatical):

- (165) *j'ám = yi?* *tih* *yam-ʔe?-píd-ih*
 DST.CNTR=TEL 3sg sing-PERF-DIST-DECL
 ‘He used to always sing kapiwaya.’ (el)

- (166) *yini-mǎʔ = mah* *tih* “*níŋ j'əm-ʔáy* *tǎh*”
 thus-UNDER=REP 3sg 2pl bathe-VENT.IMP child

nɔ-d'əh-d'ob-yi?-píd-ih

say-send-go.to.river-TEL-DIST-DECL

‘While [the husband went out] she would always send the children to the river, saying “you all go bathe, children”.’ (txt)

- (167) *ków* *wæd-yó?*, *tih = ʔəgtú* *hid* *y'æt-píd-ih*
 pepper.broth eat-SEQ 3sg=drink 3pl lay.down-DIST-DECL
 ‘Having eaten pepper-broth (and bread), they would always set down the drink (for the visitors).’ (txt)

Distributive *-pid-* (in its habitual or loosely iterative use) can co-occur with the ‘Repeated instance’ marker *b'ay* (also a fluid morpheme; see §12.9.2). In example (168), enclitic *=b'ay* indicates ‘(he left) again’; i.e., a return to the state of being away that characterized the husband during the day (but whether the return to this state is single or multiple is irrelevant). Distributive *-pid-*, on the other hand, focuses attention on the *multiple repetitions* of the woman’s husband’s departure, morning after morning, i.e., ‘(he) always (left)’.

- (168) *carakǎ?* *ʔǎh-cəwə?-kamí* *tih* *way-yi?-ay-píd-ip = b'ay*
 chicken sleep-awake-moment.of 3sg go.out-TEL-INCH-DIST-DEP=AGAIN
 ‘By the time the rooster crowed he had always left again.’ (txt)

When the time frame in which the event series takes place is narrowed, *-pid-* takes on a more basic iterative function relating to a repeated event; a habitual sense is no longer relevant:

- (169) *tih* *papad-píd-ih*
 3sg moan-DIST-DECL
 ‘She kept moaning with pain.’ (txt)

- (170) *tih-ǎn tih təw-píd-ih; tih g'aw-wawat-píd-ay-áh...*
 3sg-OBJ 3sg scold-DIST-DECL 3sg scream-walk.around-DIST-INCH-DECL
 'She was scolding him; she kept screaming and walking back and forth.'
 (txt)

- (171) “*nutkán póh, nuh-ũy cúm-an,*
 here.OBJ high head-DYNM beginning-DIR
 ‘“Up here, on your necks,

ʔǎn niŋ hi-toy'-d'ó?!” *tih nɔ-píd-ih*
 1sg.OBJ 2pl FACT-carry.on.head-take.IMP 3sg say-DIST-DECL
 you all carry me thus!” he was saying.’ (txt)

With a plural subject, this iterative use of *-pid-* can indicate multiple repetitions of an event as carried out by individual members of the collective whole, as in (172). Note the similarity between this use and the use of *pid* as a quantifier (‘each’) with nouns, as well as with the various (semantically vague) uses of the particle *pid* in examples (158–161) above.

- (172) *hid wid-ham-píd-ih...* “*ʔóg niŋ bí?!*” *hid nɔ-píd-ih*
 3pl arrive-go-DIST-DECL drink 2pl make.IMP3pl say-DIST-DECL
 ‘They all arrived... “Make drink (caxiri)!” they were all saying.’ (txt)

The iterative function of *-pid-* blends smoothly into one of durativity, in which *-pid-* marks a single continuous, long-term event:

- (173) *póg! (tih) bí?-píd-ih, hɔhtég-éh*
 big 3sg make-DIST-DECL canoe-DECL
 ‘(It was) big! he was building it for a long time, the canoe.’ (txt)

- (174) *tih g'et-píd-ih, bíg!*
 3sg stand-DIST-DECL long.time
 ‘He stayed there, for a *long* time.’ (txt)

Inner Suffix *-pid-* is also commonly used to indicate one or more repetitions of an event, in which each repetition involves a different *object*. This function of *-pid-* thus differs from that of its realization as a particle, where it typically signals that the repetitions of the event involve different *subjects*. Example (175a–b) provides a comparison between an iterative event involving multiple objects, and a unitary event with a single object. Note that the iterative aspect marker on the verb in (175a) is the only indication that multiple objects are in-

volved; the noun itself is not marked for number. This use of *-pid-* is further illustrated in examples (175–178).

(175) a) *yúp, céd, tih yɔj-nɔʔ-píd-ay-áh, yãʔám-ăn-áh*
 that fruit.sp. 3sg peel-give-DIST-INCH-DECL jaguar-OBJ-DECL
 ‘Those *céd* fruits, he peeled and gave some to the jaguar.’ (txt)

b) *ʔayǔp = yiʔ tih yɔj-nɔʔ-ǎh*
 one=TEL 3sg peel-give-DECL
 ‘He peeled and gave just one.’ (el)

(176) *bőd = ʔáy cog-wæd-yiʔ-píd-ih*
 elope=FEM collect-eat-TEL.DYNM-DIST-DECL
 ‘The eloping woman gathered and ate (the fruits as they fell down).’ (txt)

(177) *tih d’oʔ-d’ob-píd-iw-ay*
 3sg take-go.to.river-DIST-FLR-INCH
 ‘She took him, in turn, down to the river’ (as she had taken his brothers one by one before him). (txt)

(178) *tih kəwǎg d’oʔ-tuʔ-píd-ih, g’áj-áh*
 3sg eye take-immersed-DIST-DECL cutivara-DECL
 ‘He put in (the jaguar’s) eyes, did the cutivara (i.e., one at a time).’ (txt)

A general comparison of some of the functions of Distributive *pid*, in its various morphosyntactic realizations and in combination with both predicates and with nominal arguments (as a quantifier; see §6.5.2), is given in the elicited paradigm in examples (179a–e). Note that the vague semantics of *pid* allows for multiple interpretations of many of these forms.

(179) a) *ʔin-ăn ʔayup = tăt píđ tih nɔʔ-ǎh*
 1pl-OBJ one=fruit DIST 3sg give-DECL
 ‘He gave one fruit to each of us.’

b) *ʔín-ăn píđ ʔayup = tăt tih nɔʔ-ǎh*
 1pl-OBJ DIST one=fruit 3sg give-DECL
 ‘He gave one fruit to us too (i.e., as well as one to another group).’

- c) *ʔayup = tăt ʔin-ăn tih nɔʔ-ɔy píd*
 one=fruit 1pl-OBJ 3sg give-DYNM DIST
 ‘He too gave one fruit to us.’
 ‘He gave one fruit to us again.’
- d) *ʔayup = tăt ʔin-ăn tih nɔʔ-píd-ih*
 one=fruit 1pl-OBJ 3sg give-DIST-DECL
 ‘He gave one fruit repeatedly to us.’
 ‘He always gave one fruit to us.’
 ‘He gave one fruit to us too.’
- e) *ʔayup = tăt píd ʔin-ăn tih nɔʔ-píd-ih*
 one=fruit DIST 1pl-OBJ 3sg give-DIST-DECL
 ‘He repeatedly gave / always gave one fruit to each of us.’

Finally, the following elicited paradigm further clarifies the differences between the usual interpretations of Distributive *-pid-*, the Habitual marker *bíg / -bi-* (§12.8), and the ‘Repeated instance’ marker *b’ay* (§12.9.2):

- (180) a) *hid næn-píd-ih*
 3pl come-DIST-DECL
 ‘They always, repeatedly came.’ (within a given period of time)
 ‘They were coming for a long time.’
 ‘They all came.’
- b) *hid næn-ǎy píd*
 3pl come-DYNM DIST
 ‘They also came / are coming.’ (subjects compared)
- c) *hid næn-bí-h*
 3pl come-HAB-DECL
 ‘They habitually come.’
- d) *hid næn-ǎy bíg*
 3pl come-DYNM HAB
 ‘They habitually come.’
- e) *hid næn-ǎy = b’ay*
 3pl come-DYNM=AGAIN
 ‘They’ve come / are coming back.’
 ‘They’ve come / are coming again.’

12.9.2. ‘Repeated instance’ *b’ay*

In combination with verbs, the fluid morpheme *b’ay* (glossed AGAIN) indicates a single repetition of either an actual event, or some aspect of the event or a resulting state. It bears some resemblance to ‘again’ in English, which also has a corresponding restitutive use (e.g., “he went back again”, when the actual act of returning has only occurred once and has not been repeated at all).¹⁵⁸

The ‘Repeated instance’ marker *b’ay* typically appears as a verbal enclitic (following Dynamic *-V́y*, as well as Dependent *-Vp*, Interrogative *-V?*, and various other Boundary Suffixes), but, as a fluid morpheme, it also appears as an Inner Suffix (primarily when followed by Declarative *-V́h*).¹⁵⁹ The following examples illustrate the occurrence of encliticized *=b’ay*, where it signals a straightforward single repetition of the event.

- (181) *tih d’ɔk-yi?-c’w-íy = b’ay*
 3sg go.out-TEL-COMPL-DYNM=AGAIN
 ‘It (the fire) has already gone out again.’ (cv)
- (182) *yúp = ?ǎy-ǎn ?ǎh b’uy-d’əh-yí?-íp = b’ay*
 that=FEM-OBJ 1sg throw-send-TEL-DEP=AGAIN
 ‘That woman I got rid of too (after having gotten rid of the previous woman).’ (txt)
- (183) *?ayǔp = ?ih, key-g’ǎ?-bí-g-íp = ?ih = yi? píđ*
 one=MSC see-be.suspended-HAB-DEP=MSC=TEL DIST

key-g’ǎ?-ǎp = b’ay
 see-be.suspended-DEP=AGAIN
 ‘One boy, the one who always lay watching, lay watching again.’ (txt)

Enclitic *=b’ay* is common in imperative clauses:

- (184) *yam-kǎm = b’ay*
 sing-IMP=AGAIN
 ‘Sing again!’ (cv)

¹⁵⁸ This ability to combine repetitive and restitutive functions in a single morphological form is shared by many languages; see Wälchli (2003).

¹⁵⁹ Note, however, that *=b’ay* is unlike most other such ‘fluid’ formatives in that it occurs on the periphery even when Dependent *-Vp* and Interrogative *-V?* are present.

- (185) *ʔǎn d'oʔ-key-ʔǎʔ = b'ay !*
 1sg.OBJ take-see-PERF.IMP=AGAIN
 'Take my picture again!' (cv)

And it can appear in interrogatives, where it follows the -Vʔ Interrogative Boundary Suffix:

- (186) *hít tih nɔ-d'oʔ-nih-tǎʔ-ǎʔ = b'ay ?*
 how 3sg say-take-be.like-CNTRFCT-INT=AGAIN
 'How could she respond?' (txt)

Other uses of *b'ay* involve the repetition of some aspect of the event or state, rather than of the event itself. In (187), for example, the practice of exploiting forest *cipó* vines for sale has gone from one realization (that of being performed by the Tukanos) to another (that of being carried out by the Hupd'əh alone). Similarly, the crab's descent from the tree in (188) has put him on the ground again, after having left it for a time, and in (189) the event of one student's going to school is contrasted with the state of another student, who skips school.

- (187) *wǎh-d'əh... biʔ-ni-ʔǎ-y hǔyʔah,*
 River.Indian-PL work-be-PERF-DYNM after

hi-kəd-ní-íy = b'ay yǎh ʔin-ǎh
 FACT-pass-be-DYNM=AGAIN FRUST 1pl-DECL
 'The Tukanos...after they did this work (in the past), we've taken their place.' (txt)

- (188) *hi-yóʔ = b'ay, “yaʔǎp ʔǎh d'əh-d'əh-hí-íy”...*
 descend-SEQ=AGAIN this.many1sg send-send-descend-DYNM
 'Having come down again, “this many I've thrown down” (the crab said)...' (txt)

- (189) *yít = yiʔ g'et-pǎm-yíʔ-íy, cáp = ʔih ye-mǎʔ = b'ay*
 thus=TEL stand-sit-TEL-DYNM another=MSC enter-UNDER=AGAIN
 'While one stays thus sitting around, another one goes (to school).' (sp)

The 'Repeated instance' form *b'ay* is most likely to appear in Inner Suffix position (although it remains unstressed) in narrative past tense, given the common presence of the Declarative marker in the verb word in this discourse context. As an Inner Suffix, it functions in the same way as it does as an enclitic; it signals the single repetition of an event or return to a state. In examples

(190–191), *-b'ay-* indicates such a return to an earlier state – that of returning home after traveling, and of being on the ground after climbing:¹⁶⁰

- (190) *ʔin-ít = yiʔ ʔam wid-b'ay-yíʔ-b'ay-áh,*
 1pl-OBL=TEL 2sg arrive-return-TEL-AGAIN-DECL
 ‘You came back again with us,

náw ʔam wid-b'ay-yíʔ-áh
 good 2sg arrive-return-TEL-DECL
 you came back in a good way.’ (txt)

- (191) *yúp = mah tih hí-b'ay-áh, cəhó = b'ay-áh*
 that=REP 3sg descend-AGAIN-DECL crab=AGAIN-DECL
 ‘Then he came down again, (did) that crab.’ (txt)

In the following examples, *-b'ay-* signals the repetition of an event, which may involve a different subject or object (as in 192–193), or a different location (194):

- (192) *yínîy = mah, cəkw'ət = ʔih... ʔin kótʔah cóʔ*
 that.be.like.DYNM=REP River.Indian=MSC 1pl ahead LOC

nəh-túʔ-b'ay-áh
 fall-dunk-AGAIN-DECL
 ‘Then the River Indian jumped/fell in in front of us’ (following the non-Indian, who had already jumped). (txt)

- (193) *núp cǎp ʔid cak-tég-b'ay-áh*
 this another speech climb-FUT-AGAIN-DECL
 ‘Here another story is coming up.’ (txt)

¹⁶⁰ Note the additional uses of *b'ay* in these examples as an independent verb stem ‘return’ and as a nominal enclitic indicating a switch of topic; these functions will be addressed below.

- (194) *ʔín-ǎn tih nɔ́-ǔy key-yóʔ* “*nu-cóʔ náén*”,
 1pl-OBJ 3sg say-DYNM see-SEQ here-LOC come.IMP

tih d'oʔ-yé-b'ay-áh

3sg take-enter-AGAIN-DECL

‘By saying, “come to this place”, he brought us there.’ (after having originally brought us to another place) (txt)

The sense of ‘repetition’ signaled by the verbal occurrence of *-b'ay-* in (195) is primarily discourse-related, since no event or state is actually repeated. Here *-b'ay-* apparently functions to relate the action of the boy to that of the dog, as simultaneous events (with a common goal) performed by different agents.

- (195) *yúp tih key-d'əh-cak-g'et-píd-ih...*
 that 3sg see-send-stand-DIST-DECL

núp=b'ay hōd-an tih waŋ-yæt-ní-b'ay-áh

this=AGAIN hole-DIR 3sg spy-lie-be-AGAIN-DECL

‘So he (the dog) is standing (with his forelegs) up against the tree, looking... as for this one (the boy), he’s lying down spying into a hole.’ (txt)

In contrast to its verbal or predicative realizations, the first occurrence of *b'ay* in (195) (following a demonstrative) illustrates the additional realization of this form as an enclitic with nominal arguments (see also 191 above). In this context, it acts as a topic-switch marker, as discussed in detail in §7.1.3. Note that this ability of a formative that is otherwise verbal (or at least predicative) to occur with nominal arguments – with which it serves a somewhat distinct function, often relating to discourse-marking – is typical of many of the aspectual markers discussed in this chapter, and is common among formatives in Hup generally. In fact, the topic-switch and ‘repeated instance’ functions of *b'ay* may not be as distinct as they seem at first glance; examples like (195) above (where verbal *-b'ay-* relates the actions of one participant to those of another) illustrate that there is a degree of overlap between these uses, which can in certain cases be relatively independent of the part of speech with which they occur (see also the discussion in §7.1.3).

Historical note

The bound form *b'ay* is formally identical to the verb *b'ay-* ‘return, go back’, and this verb is a plausible source for the aspect marker, via the processes of

(verb > formative) grammaticalization outlined in §3.7 and §9.4.3. Support for this hypothesis includes the semantic relationship between ‘repeat’ and ‘go back’, as well as the fact that a historical transition from a verb root within a compound to a verbal Inner Suffix and/or peripheral formative has been shown to be a common development for a variety of Hup forms.

12.9.3. Reduplication¹⁶¹

Reduplication of verb roots in Hup typically has an aspectual function related to iterativity, whereby an event is characterized by a quick succession of rapid movements, or by the simultaneous existence of multiple realizations. Reduplication is a marginally productive process in Hup for verbs, whereas it is unproductive for nouns (see below and §4.5). Even in the case of verbs, however, reduplicated forms for the most part have an identity as distinct lexemes, and cases in which both reduplicated and non-reduplicated forms of the same root co-exist are relatively rare.

Examples of productive reduplicated and non-reduplicated verb pairs are listed in (196) (see also 197–199), and illustrate the aspectual function that reduplication serves.

(196) <i>wāwaj-</i>	‘head lolling around’	<i>waj-</i>	‘crane neck’
<i>kokot-</i>	‘move or go in circles or a circle’	<i>kot-</i>	‘go in an arc’
<i>wawat-</i>	‘walk around, back and forth in village or field’	<i>wat-</i>	‘pass through, visit in village’
<i>?i?id-</i>	‘mumble to oneself’	<i>?id-</i>	‘speak’
<i>tātāw-</i>	‘hit with a stick repeatedly, esp. with multiple light repetitions’	<i>tāw-</i>	‘hit with stick’
<i>tətəd-</i>	‘beat timbó, with multiple quick, light repetitions’	<i>təd-</i>	‘beat timbó with slow, forceful hits’
<i>hihit-</i>	‘cut or scratch with multiple repetitions’	<i>hit-</i>	‘scratch or cut’

- (197) *tih ?i?id-cóp-ay-áh*
 3sg speak(RED)-go.up.from.water-INCH-DECL
 ‘She went up the bank mumbling to herself.’ (txt)

¹⁶¹ See §2.5 for a discussion of the phonology of reduplication in Hup.

(198) *d'ũç hid tətəd-d'ó?-óy = mah*

timbó 3pl beat.timbó(RED)-take-DYNM=REP

'They beat timbó (rapidly).'

 (txt)

(199) *d'ũç tih tsd-éh, yúp d'ũç tih təd-g'ét-ét = mah...*

timbó 3sg beat.timbó that timbó 3sg beat.timbó-stand-OBL=REP

'He beat timbó (forcefully); as he stood beating the timbó (a jaguar came down to the water).'

 (txt)

A near-comprehensive list of reduplicated verb forms from the present corpus of Hup data is given below (200a–c), together with the meanings of the non-reduplicated variants where they exist. The set of reduplicated forms in (200a) has to do with actions that intrinsically involve a series of repeated movements, typically in rapid succession; note that the forms given in (196) above are also part of this set.

(200) a) *w'ã?w'ã?-* 'stammer'

hũhũc- 'go backwards'

hũc- 'pull or move back'

yəyəp- 'knead beer mash or leaves (to extract juice)'

y'ũy'ũy'- 'shake something with up and down motion'

y'ũy'- 'shake once or twice'

nuh yĩyĩŋ- 'shake head from side to side'

wi?wi?- 'tremble'

?o?ok- 'mess with or wiggle a placed thing or a person (side to side motion)'

pe?pe?- 'grope around'

?id-cəcə?- 'speak a language with errors, stumbling'

nənəy- 'swing back and forth'

papad- 'moan continuously in pain'

tætæp- 'shake body (dog or animal)'

kækæg- 'have legs apart, esp. while walking'

yoyo- 'swing while suspended from above'

yo- 'dangle' (carrying from hand)

kikid- 'tickle'

<i>cicid-</i>	‘scratch scalp, cause to scratch’
<i>mamap-</i>	‘erode, develop a crevice’
<i>hohot-</i>	‘cough’

In (200b), the reduplicated forms all have to do with a state or event that involves many simultaneous realizations of a core attribute.¹⁶²

b) <i>b'eb'ej-</i>	‘swarm’
<i>pipiw’-</i>	‘crowding (people, fruit on tree, etc.)’
<i>maman’-</i>	‘roll up around something else’ (multiple rolls)
<i>man’-</i>	‘roll around something else once’ (e.g., paper around tobacco)
<i>bubud’-</i>	‘roll up in a coil’
<i>bud’-</i>	‘roll into a circle’
<i>bubud-</i>	‘covered with sores from insect bites’
(<i>bud</i>	‘body odor’)
<i>d'id'ib-</i>	‘curly’ (multiple curls, e.g., curly hair)
<i>d'ib-</i>	‘curled’ (individual thing)
<i>dædæp-</i>	‘spotted all over’
<i>yayag-</i>	‘full of small holes; covered with small spots’
(<i>yág</i>	‘hammock’)
<i>cæcæg-</i>	‘full of small holes’
(verb) <i>cæg-</i>	‘use small net’
(noun) <i>cæǵ</i>	‘small net’
<i>tætæn-</i>	‘grouped together’ (esp. trees or manioc plants)
<i>cecew-</i>	‘fruits turning dark when ripe’
<i>kəkəy-</i>	‘have gaps in a series’

¹⁶² Note that a few of these verbs correspond to non-reduplicated forms that appear to have nothing to do semantically with the reduplicated forms; they are probably simply homonymous and are therefore not listed here. Examples are *wi-* ‘give back’ (*wiwi-* ‘tangled up’) and *peʔ-* ‘be sick’ (*pepeʔ-* ‘grope around’). Forms for which a relationship appears possible but dubious are given in parentheses.

<i>tətək-</i>	‘be side by side in a row’
<i>(hi-tək-</i>	‘be stacked up’; <i>hi-</i> Factitive)
<i>popop-</i>	‘moldy, splotchy’
<i>wiwi-</i>	‘tangled up’ (vine, string, hair, etc.)

Finally, the reduplicated forms in set (200c) are semantically less homogenous. For the most part, they relate to states that are in some way characterized by intensity, continuity, or repetitive characteristics:

c) <i>w’aʔw’aʔ-</i>	‘be poking up out of a pot or basket (e.g., bones, manioc tubers)’
<i>d’od’ok-</i>	‘be bent’
<i>d’ok-</i>	‘be bent’
<i>wāwāw-</i>	‘reeling’
<i>wāw-</i>	‘follow a winding path’ (e.g., a wire)
<i>kōkōt-</i>	‘spiral or half-circle’
<i>popot-</i>	‘circular, encircle something’
<i>m’æm’æm’-</i>	‘limp’
<i>b’ab’ag-</i>	‘bright’
<i>b’ág</i>	‘light’
<i>titij-</i>	‘leaf/leaves turned over in forest’
<i>tij-</i>	‘fruit husk coming open’
<i>hicoco-</i>	‘be happy’ (<i>hi-</i> Factitive)
<i>co-</i>	‘rest’

Reduplication in nouns is not a productive process (and all reduplicated noun stems are fully lexicalized); nevertheless, it contributes an aspectual quality akin to its occurrence in verbs. Most reduplicated nouns are the names of small animals and insects that typically make quick, darting, repetitive motions. Examples include *b’eb’ěp* ‘butterfly’, *j’ij’īb* ‘small fruitfly sp.’, *bobób* ‘ant sp.’, and *b’ib’īb* ‘small squirrel sp.’ (see §4.5).

Note that the productive use of reduplication in verb stems may have a parallel elsewhere in Hup on a periphrastic level. A common discourse strategy involves repeating the uninflected verb root – with or without its nominal arguments – multiple times, followed by the inflected verb *ni-* ‘be’ at the end of the clause (see §18.2.2). This functions to signal multiple immediate repetitions of

the event (example 201). The same strategy (without the ‘summarizing’ verb *ni-*) can also be used for other parts of speech, as in (202). Although this is a syntactic strategy, rather than a lexical one, its function is similar to that of reduplication in verb stems. It may even be the historical source for many reduplicated stems – their frequent repetition in this syntactically reduplicated form could have led to their lexicalization as reduplicated stems.

- (201) *nút d’oʔ-cud-yóʔ, núp pǔt biʔ-yóʔ, j’ǐp j’ǐp j’ǐp*
 here take-be.inside-SEQ this circle make-SEQ tie tie tie

ní-íy hid d’əh-d’əh-hám-b’ay-áh

be-DYNM 3pl send-send-go-AGAIN-DECL

‘Having put (the cord) in here, having made this (string) circle, with a wrap-wrap-wrap they would send off (the toy top).’ (txt)

- (202) *yúp ʔǎy-g’od ʔǎy-g’od ʔǎy-g’od*
 that.ITG together-inside together-inside together-inside

ʔǎy-g’od = mah, kotów = teg, tih cud-cák-áh

together-inside=REP dance.staff=STICK 3sg be.inside-climb-DECL

‘One inside the other, they had stacked their dance-staffs.’ (txt)

12.10. Verbal ‘diminutives’

Hup speakers make use of several means to express ‘do Verb a little bit’. The first is the native Hup form *díʔ*, which follows the verb as a particle (and also appears in the verbal form *díʔ-mǎh-ǎy* [VDIM-DIM-DYNM]), as in (203). The form *díʔ* is almost certainly derived from the verb *díʔ-* ‘remain, be not yet completed or exhausted’.

- (203) *ʔám-āp péʔ-mǐʔ, wǎd-ǎy díʔ ʔám-āw-áh*
 2sg-DEP sick-UNDER eat-DYNM VDIM2 2sg-FLR-DECL
 ‘Even though you’re sick, you’re eating a little.’ (el)

The second form *-kodé* is borrowed directly from Tukano (and is recognized by most speakers as a borrowed form). It appears to be in general use among Hup speakers. Like its Tukano counterpart *kure* (cf. Ramirez 1997b: 87), it is used to mean ‘do something just/at least a little’, and combines directly with verb stems (as a consonant-initial Boundary Suffix):

(204) *ʔid tən-kodé... pǎ-ay-áh*
 speak hold-VDIM NEG:EX-INCH-DECL
 ‘We had just a little language...(it was) almost gone.’ (txt)

(205) *ʔám-ãp péʔ-mřʔ, wæd-kodé*
 2sg-DEP be.sick-UNDER eat-VDIM.(IMP)
 ‘Even though you’re sick, eat a little.’ (el)
 (compare Tukano: *ba’a kure* ‘eat at least a little’ [Ramirez 1997b: 87])

The borrowed form *-kodé* frequently co-occurs with the Hup form *dřʔ*, to form the expression *dřʔ-kodé* ‘just a little more’; e.g., *náw dřʔ-kodé* ‘somewhat better, more or less good’ (compare to Tukano *ãyu kure* (good-) ‘get a little better’; Ramirez 1997b: 87):

(206) *yudũh yúp, nɔg’od pög dřʔ-kodé ní-řw-řh*
 fish.sp. that mouth big remain-VDIM be-DYNM-DECL
 ‘That jacundá fish has a somewhat big mouth (relative to other fish).’
 (txt)

Hup speakers also use the Diminutive Intensifier *mæh* (elsewhere a nominal enclitic) as an Inner Suffix with verbs to express the same concept of ‘do Verb a little bit’ (see §15.1.4). The adverbial expression *cípmæh = yřʔ* (small=TEL) is used for this function as well; e.g., *cípmæh = yřʔ wæd-áy* (small=TEL eat-DYNM) ‘eating just a little’.

12.11. Persistent *tæ*

The Persistent or ‘ongoing event’ marker *tæ* indicates that the activity is still in progress. It normally appears as a particle (and has no alternate realization as an Inner Suffix). It forms a morphosyntactic unit with the predicate, which it obligatorily follows, and thus cannot be considered a free lexical adverbial.

In affirmative clauses *tæ* indicates ‘still doing Verb’:

(207) *dóʔ = d’əh b’óy-óy tæ*
 child=PL study-DYNM YET
 ‘The children are still studying/at school.’ (cv)

- (208) *ʔāh biʔ-ʔě-y tǎé*
 1sg work-PERF-DYNM YET
 ‘I’m still working (and will be for a little while).’ (el)

In negative clauses, it indicates ‘has not done Verb yet’ (i.e., ‘is still in a state of not doing Verb’):

- (209) *b’oy-níh tǎé*
 study-NEG YET
 ‘(He’s) not studying yet’ ~ ‘hasn’t gone to school yet.’ (cv)

- (210) *húʔ biyiw ʔāh j’id-níh-īp tǎé*
 pium blood 1sg wash-NEG-DEP YET
 ‘I haven’t yet washed off the pium (biting fly sp.) blood.’ (cv)

The form *tǎé* also occurs with predicate adjectives, as in *naw-níh tǎé* ‘not well yet’ and example (211):

- (211) *pǐb tǎé, ʔāh-áh*
 strong YET 1sg-DECL
 ‘I’m still strong.’ (txt)

In adverbial clauses, *tǎé* forms a unit directly with the verb stem, unless the Negative suffix comes between them:

- (212) *tíh biʔ-tǎé = yiʔ, teghǒ = d’əh wídnáen-ǎh*
 3sg work-YET=TEL non-Indian=PL arrive-DECL
 ‘While he was working, non-Indian people arrived.’ (el)

- (213) *tíh ʔəg-níh tǎé = yiʔ, wíʔwíʔ-iy = mah*
 3sg drink-NEG YET=TEL tremble-DYNM=REP
 ‘When he hasn’t drunk yet, he trembles.’ (cv)

Finally, *tǎé* occurs with a few predicate nominals, particularly those ‘verby’ nouns that relate to periods of time (cf. §4.1.3), e.g., *j’ób tǎé* (night YET) ‘still night/dark’ (compare the adverbial expression *j’ób-tǎé-yiʔ* ‘dawn’), *wág tǎé* (day YET) ‘still day/light’, and *tíh = pæcǎw = d’əh tǎé* (3sg=adolescent.boy=PL YET) ‘still young (boys)’. Consultants judged *tǎé* ungrammatical in combination with other nominals (e.g., **wǎd tǎé* [intended meaning: ‘still have food’]), preferring the verbal form (N) *ní-íy tǎé* ‘N still exists, is here’. However, the following nominal use with ‘paper’ was considered grammatical, in the context of a situa-

tion in which someone is going through a stack of papers to find something at the bottom:

- (214) *cug'ǎt* *tǎ* *yúw-úh*
leaf/paper YET that.ITG-DECL
'It's still paper.' (el)

Chapter 13

Tense and related forms

While aspect indicates the internal temporal consistency of a given situation, tense relates to the place of the event within the larger context of other events. That is, “tense is grammaticalised expression of location in time” Comrie (1985: 9). In Hup, aspect plays a much larger role than tense as a formal grammatical category; tense distinctions are more often simply inferred from the aspectual distinctions and the context, rather than being formally marked (see §12.2 and §17.3.2). This is not uncommon cross-linguistically; some languages, such as Burmese (Comrie 1985: 50), do not have a grammaticalized system of tense at all.

Table 40. Tense-related morphemes in Hup

Form	Slot class (formative type)	Identity/word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form
<i>-téḡ</i>	Boundary Suffix, Inner Suffix	Verbs	Future (main and subord. clauses) Purpose (subordinate clauses)	Bound noun = <i>teg</i> ‘tree, stick, thing’; noun <i>těḡ</i> ‘stick, wood’
<i>-te-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Future	
<i>-tuk-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Volition, proximative (imminent future)	Verb <i>tuk-</i> ‘want’
<i>-tu-</i>				
<i>-Vh</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	1 st person plural inclusive future	Declarative suffix
<i>páh</i>	Particle	Various hosts, predicates	Contrast: temporally proximate	
<i>j’ám</i>	Particle	Various hosts, predicates	Contrast: distant past	Adverb <i>j’ám</i> ‘yesterday’
<i>j’áh</i>				
<i>tán</i>	Particle	Various hosts, predicates	Contrast/tense: future	Adverb <i>tán</i> ‘later’

The Hup tense-related morphemes and their slot classes are summarized in Table 40. Hup’s primary tense distinction is non-future vs. future, which is most commonly expressed via the variants *-teg* / *-te-* (note that *-teg* also encodes purpose), discussed in §13.1. Hup also has two additional morphological strate-

gies for indicating a future event, although they are not restricted to this function (§13.2–13.3). In addition, the language has a system of semi-grammaticalized, largely optional contrast particles that encode distant past, temporal proximity to the speech event (usually recent past), and future tense; these are treated in §13.4.

13.1. Future *-teg* / *-te-*

The future is the only tense distinction in Hup that usually requires an overt marker, and the Future marker *-teg* and its phonologically reduced variant *-te-* are the only grammatical forms that have a primary function of indicating the location of an event in time. Thus the distinction between future and non-future is more salient in Hup than is the distinction between past and non-past. This is not unusual cross-linguistically.

The forms *-teg* / *-te-* are in fact markers of relative future, in that they are used to relate a given event to a reference point, regardless of whether that reference point is concurrent with the speech act itself, or occurs at some other time. The suffix *-teg* has the additional function of expressing purpose, which intersects closely with its function as an indicator of relative future. It has often been noted that future is as much a mode as a tense in many languages (e.g., Comrie 1976: 2, Fleischman 1982: 24), and this purposive function of the Hup future tense marker illustrates that this is indeed the case for Hup.

The phonologically unreduced form *-teg* is unusual in that it appears as a Boundary Suffix in certain environments, and as an Inner Suffix in others. When it appears as a Boundary Suffix, it is usually not found in clause-final position in declarative clauses (but see exceptions below). It may be followed in the clause by a nominal subject argument (which typically bears the clause-final Declarative marker), as in example (1), or by consonant-initial verbal formatives, like the ‘Repeated instance’ enclitic in (2) or the discourse tag in (3).

- (1) *piniŋ-tég* *?áŋ = hin-íh*
 tell.story-FUT 1sg=also-DECL
 ‘I’ll tell a story too!’ (cv)

- (2) *ham-tég ʔáh-áp, nú-ay ʔáh ham-tég = b'ay. té yawadaté*
 go-FUT 1sg-DEP this-INCH 1sg go-FUT=AGAIN until Yawaraté

ʔáh ham-té-h. g'et-g'óʔ-óy, cegundaféda = kamí
 1sg go-FUT-DECL stand-go.about-DYNM Monday(Pt)=time.of

ʔáh way-té-h, nút-úh
 1sg go.out-FUT-DECL here-DECL

'I'm going to go, I'll go this way again. As far as Yawaraté I'll go. On foot, I'll leave on Monday, from here.' (txt)

- (3) *tinñh páť cóʔ-óy ʔin hæy'-hūʔ-yiʔ-tég = həʔ,*
 3pl.POSS hair LOC-DYNM 1pl cut-follow-TEL-FUT=TAG2

yinih-yóʔ ʔin hi-ciʔ-wob-té-h !
 that.ITG.be.like-SEQ 1pl FACT-stick-rest.on-FUT-DECL

'We'll cut off her hair; then we'll stick her hair onto our heads.' (girls joking about ways they could acquire longer hair) (cv)

Non-reduced *-teg* is encountered clause-finally in interrogatives:

- (4) *ʔúy ham-tég ?*
 who go-FUT
 'Who will go?' (cv)

The reduced variant *-te-*, like all other phonologically reduced suffix variants in Hup (see §3.6), occurs as an Inner Suffix followed by a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix. It is most common in clause-final position, followed by Declarative *-Vh*, as in examples (2–3) above. It also occurs in combination with the Dependent marker *-Vp* (example 5), the Oblique case marker *-Vt* (example 8 below) and Inchoative *-ay*, among other vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes. The combined Inchoative and Declarative form *-ay-áh* (see §12.3) is of very common occurrence with *-te-*, and contributes an additional prospective or initiated sense to the future statement, much like that conveyed by English 'going to' as opposed to 'will', as in examples (6–7). The semantic and pragmatic difference between the simple future form *-té-h* and the progressive future *-té-ay-áh* is nonetheless minimal; for example, the same speaker who uttered the sentence in (3) above repeated her statement almost word-for-word immediately afterward, but substituted the progressive form for the simple future that she had used in the first instance (example 7).

- (5) *níŋ-ǎn tih tɔn-ham-pog-té-p, cún'! ham-pog-tég níŋ-áh ?*
 2pl-OBJ 3sg take-go-EMPH1-FUT-DEP INTERJ go-EMPH1-FUT 2pl-FOC
 'She's really going to take you all away, hey! Would/will you all really go?!' (cv)
- (6) *hid ʔǔh kəwəg wɔ̄t-té-ay-áh*
 3pl INTRC eye pull.out-FUT-INCH-DECL
 'One is going to pull out the other's eyes.' (txt)
- (7) *...ʔin hi-ciʔ-wob-té-ay-áh !*
 1pl FACT-stick.on-rest.on-FUT-INCH-DECL
 '(We'll just cut off all our own hair), and then we're going to stick (her hair) on!' (cv)

As with other such pairs of reduced and non-reduced formative variants in Hup, the reduced form *-te-* is strictly limited to environments preceding a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix, whereas *-teg* is much more flexible. Consultants accept the non-reduced form *-teg* in the place of *-te-* even in the context of a following vowel-initial suffix, particularly in emphatic contexts such as (8) (girls joking about acquiring longer hair) and in (9), which would be uttered when one is trying to go to sleep and is telling noisy people to be quiet (in contrast, the reduced future form *-té-ay-áh* would simply be an announcement of intention to sleep).

- (8) *níŋ məh-yáʔ, tin̄h pát ʔin d'oʔ-té-t tih,*
 2pl kill-TEL.IMP 3sg.POSS hair 1pl take-FUT-OBL EMPH2
yít-áh ʔin j'ĩp-d'ak-tég-ay-tiʔ
 thus-FOC 1pl tie-stick.against-FUT-INCH-EMPH.TAG
 'You all kill her! so that we can take her hair, and then we'll attach it (to our heads)!' (cv)
- (9) *ʔāh ʔɔ̄h-tég-ay-áh*
 1sg sleep-FUT-INCH-DECL
 'I'm going to sleep!' (forceful; e.g., 'so stop making noise!') (ru)

In exclamatory or emphatic utterances, non-reduced *-teg* even occurs without the Declarative marker (i.e., as a Boundary Suffix) clause-finally in non-interrogative mood, a context in which *-te-h* (Future + Declarative) would ordinarily be expected:

- (10) *hid nɔg'od j'á pæm-hi-ham-tég !*
 2pl mouth black sit-descend-go-FUT
 'They're going to be sitting around with black mouths!' (from eating coca) (cv)
- (11) *téwma b'uy-d'əh-ham-yi?-tég !*
 Thelma throw-send-go-TEL-FUT
 'Thelma's going to throw it out!' (cv)

The Future marker *-teg* / *-te-* is idiosyncratic in several ways. First, it is ungrammatical in imperative clauses; future tense can only be specified in the imperative by means of the Future Contrast particle *tán* (§13.4 below).

The Future marker is also ungrammatical in combination with clausal negation. A negative future construction can only be with formed with *tán*, or expressed as Inchoative aspect (see §12.3). The ungrammaticality of the Future suffix in negative clauses is an irregularity that has no clear parallel elsewhere in Hup; by analogy with forms such as Habitual *bíg* / *-bi-*, one would expect the construction [Vstem-*nih-teg*] to be possible (involving the Clausal negator *-nih*). In fact, small children do make exactly this analogy, as illustrated by the following utterance by a three-year-old boy (example 12). The unexpected ungrammaticality of this form probably has a historical explanation, which is discussed below.

- (12) *ham-nih-tég* (Child language, ungrammatical)
 go-NEG-FUT
 '(I'm) not going.' (cv)

13.1.1. Purposive function of *-teg*

The full form *-teg* has an additional function, distinct from the marking of future, which it does *not* share with its reduced variant *-te-*. This is the expression of purpose. In signaling purpose, the verb marked with *-teg* typically heads an adverbial clause, which often relates directly to a nominal referent in the main clause, as in examples (13–16). Note that in this context, the declarative form of *-teg* (*-teg-eh*) occurs clause-finally; whereas in a typical (non-emphatic) future-tense construction *-te-h* would be preferred in this context, *-te-* is now ungrammatical.

- (13) *tinĩh pĩb, tih wáy-át píđ, tih wæđ-tég-éh*
 3sg.POSS food.supply 3sg emerge-OBL DIST 3sg eat-PURP-DECL
 ‘His food supplies, in order for him to eat when he emerged again.’ (txt)

- (14) *g’æğ=tæh ?in-ăn y’æt-yi?-ay-áh, j’ũg có?;*
 bone=son 1pl-OBJ leave-TEL-INCH-DECL forest LOC

núp=yi? ?in ni-n’ĩh-tég-éh
 this=TEL 1pl be-NMZ-PURP-DECL
 ‘Bone-Son left us, in the forest (regions); this is where/how we are supposed to live.’ (txt)

- (15) *yít way-g’ã?-yó?, té cãp hayám, hãt ni-tég-n’ĩh*
 thus go.out-be.suspended-SEQ until other town name be-PURP-NMZ
 ‘So having gone out by canoe, (they would go on) to the next town, which would thus get a name.’ (from an account of the Ancestors’ original journey) (txt)

- (16) *...hãwig bi?íd=d’əh hid d’ó?-óh, bi?íd-iw-ih*
 heart bless=PL 3pl take-DECL spell-FLR-DECL

dó?=d’əh hid pɔhɔ-tég, ham-ní-h yúw-úh
 child=PL 3pl grow.plump-PURP go-be-INFR2-DECL that-DECL
 ‘The heart-blessers take (i.e., use) it, the blessing. In order for the children to grow plump; that’s how it (the blessing) went.’ (txt)

Note that, interestingly, Purposive *-teg* is grammatical in a negative adverbial clause, unlike Future *-teg* (see above):

- (17) *tih way-nĩh-tég tíh-ăn ?áh ?ih-?ũh-té-h*
 3sg go.out-NEG-PURP 3sg-OBJ 1sg ask-APPL-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’m going to ask him that he not go out.’ (el)

As a marker of purpose, adverbial *-teg* is not required to refer anaphorically to an antecedent in the same sentence. Instead, it may simply refer back to the discourse context in general; for example, (18) was uttered during a conversation about a kind of flute that was made in the old days, in response to my question “why did they make the flutes?”:

- (18) *hid hicoco-tég! hid pǎʔ = wag hid hicoco-tég !*
 3pl happy-PURP 3pl dabacuri=day 3pl happy-PURP
 ‘In order to be happy! In order to be happy on dabacuri days!’ (txt)

‘Purposive’ *-teg* may also refer directly to the pragmatic speech context, and often relates to a physical object that is at hand. For example, (19a) might be uttered in reference to a particular hammock (compare 19b, which could only be interpreted as a general statement of a future activity). Similarly, example (20) was uttered by my consultant, who was examining a small plastic animal that I had brought as an elicitation prop; since he was fully aware that the animal was going to stay in my possession, his statement could not be interpreted as referring to a future event of playing, only to the identity of the object.

- (19) a) *tán tih ʔǎh-tég*
 later 3sg sleep-PURP
 ‘Later he will sleep (with this).’ (indicating a hammock). (el)
- b) *tán tih ʔǎh-té-h*
 later 3sg sleep-FUT-DECL
 ‘Later he will sleep.’ (indefinite) (el)
- (20) *dóʔ = d’əh mǔhūʔ-tég*
 child=PL play-PURP
 ‘(It’s) for kids to play with.’ (cv)

The function of *-teg* to express purpose is closely related to its use as a future marker. For an event concurrent with the temporal reference point to have an expressed purpose, that purpose necessarily involves another event that is anticipated, and which will occur in the future relative to that reference point. When this temporal reference point is not concurrent with the speech moment itself, then this ‘future’ is strictly relative, rather than absolute; the event referred to with *-teg* may have already occurred prior to the speech event itself, as in example (15) above, or it may be occurring at the moment of the speech event, as in example (21), in which *-teg* expresses both relative future and purpose/result. On the other hand, expression of future relative to a *future* reference point (as opposed to a past or present reference point) can avoid ambiguity between purpose and future interpretations by use of the Sequential marker *-yóʔ* (see §18.2.6.3), as in example (3) above (i.e., “we’ll do X; after having done X, we’ll do Y”).

- (21) *hĩ-n'ĩh-ʔě-y* *ʔám, ʔám-ǎn hid tǝw-tég ?*
 Q-NMZ-PERF-DYNM 2sg 2sg-OBJ 3pl scold-PURP
 ‘What did you do [past], for them to be yelling at you [present]?’ (el)

13.1.2. Other uses of *teg*

The form *teg* is not only a verbal suffix in Hup; it has other, quite distinct functions as well. It occurs as a free lexeme *těg* meaning ‘stick(s), firewood’, and as a bound noun in nominal compounds (e.g., *pĩhĩt = teg* ‘banana tree’; see §5.4.3). As discussed in §5.6, *=teg* as a bound noun also combines with verb stems as a generic instrument or object nominalizer, meaning simply ‘thing’ (i.e., ‘thing for doing V’, ‘thing that does V’); e.g., *hĩʔ = teg* (write=THING) ‘pencil; stick for writing’; *pəpəd = teg* (roll=THING) ‘car, tractor’ (i.e., ‘rolling thing’); etc.

Historical note

Despite the profoundly different functions of the form *teg* as future suffix, purpose marker, bound noun, and lexeme meaning ‘firewood, stick’, a historical connection almost certainly exists between them. The various uses of *teg* are a case of (diachronic) polysemy, rather than homonymy – Hup has in fact developed a future particle from the typologically unlikely source of a noun meaning ‘stick, wood’. The steps of this grammaticalization scenario are laid out briefly here (cf. §3.7), and are discussed in more detail in Epps (2008b).

The first stage of the metamorphosis of the form *teg* would have involved as its starting point the noun ‘wood, shaft of tree’, which combined with other nouns to produce nominal compounds, such as names of trees. This then led to the ability of *=teg* to combine productively with verb stems as a nominalizer, eventually becoming Hup’s generic nominalizer (see §5.6).

The next step involved the reanalysis of the generic *=teg* nominalization as a verbal construction. Purpose adverbial constructions like those in the examples above plausibly provided the primary bridging context for this to occur; that is, they were potentially ambiguous as to whether the [Verb + *teg*] forms were functioning as nouns or verbs. As the *=teg* nominalization took on an identity as a verbal form, it adopted a suffixal stress pattern (Verb-*tég*) by analogy with other verbal constructions involving consonant-initial Boundary Suffixes in Hup (see §3.4.1.2). This new verbal form also retained an element of concreteness, as we see in examples like (19–20) above, in which the future/purpose use of the verbal *-teg* construction refers to a physical object in the discourse or at

hand. Note that while the development of a future gram from a noun like ‘wood, stick’ is typologically extraordinary, a shift from a nominal to a verbal construction is common; in fact, in the Khoisan language Sandawe (Elderkin 1991: 109–111) such a shift has even resulted in future semantics. Furthermore, expressions of purpose – the bridging context between noun and verb for Hup *teg* – are a cross-linguistically common source of future grams via grammaticalization (Bybee et al. 1991, 1994).

Once it had taken on future semantics, the verbal suffix *-teg* continued to grammaticalize, producing the phonologically reduced variant *-te-*; with this step, the ‘purpose’ semantics was largely left behind, and *-te-* took on the primary function of a future gram. Finally, in the Hup spoken today, all these manifestations of *teg* coexist: a free lexeme ‘wood, stick’, a bound noun and nominalizer, and a pair of verbal suffixes indicating purpose and future tense.

This historical scenario is supported by the several ambiguous contexts involving *teg* that currently exist in Hup, particularly those clauses where purpose and future readings are both possible (e.g., example 20). Some of the irregular occurrences of the form *teg*, such its ungrammaticality in negative clauses (discussed above) can also be explained in light of its history as a nominal form.

Questions involving identity and purpose are one example of *teg*’s potential ambiguity between noun and verb. The question “what kind of tree/thing is that?” is formally and pragmatically similar to the question “what will you do with that / what is that for?” in example (22). The primary difference between them is one of stress (here clarified by underlining):

(22) (a) *hi-n'ih teg yúp = b'ay ?*
 Q-NMZ thing that=AGAIN
 ‘What kind of tree/thing is that?’ (cv/el)

(b) *hi-n'ih tég yúp = b'ay ?*
 Q-NMZ FUT that=AGAIN
 ‘What will you do with that (thing)? / What is that for?’ (cv/el)

While (22a), “what kind of tree/thing is that?”, is a normal nominal identity question, in which *teg* follows the same stress pattern as any other noun, (22b) is crucially a verbal construction – although it lacks a verb stem. In the purpose question in (22b), the mere presence of stress on *-teg* is enough to give it a verbal identity; in addition, the semantics of purpose correspond to the semantics of future. (Note, however, that *-teg* is not the only verbal suffix in Hup that can attach directly to the question word ‘what’; this ability is also shared by the Perfective marker *-?e?* and several other forms.)

The two very similar questions in (22) could also have equally similar responses, since subjects are typically dropped in Hup when responding to questions. Like the corresponding questions, responses like those in (23) are likely to be pragmatically equivalent, and are formally differentiated only by accent.

- (23) (a) *hiʔ = teg*
 write=thing/shaft
 ‘(It’s) a pencil.’
- (b) *hiʔ-tég*
 write-FUT
 ‘(I’m) going to write.’

The semi-nominal identity of Future *-teg* / *-te-* in Hup may also explain its ungrammaticality in negative clauses. Since Hup uses a different strategy for negating nominal entities than for negating verbal clauses (see Chapter 16), it is unsurprising that an intermediate form like *teg* would pattern irregularly in negated contexts. This is supported by the fact that it is not only the verbal form of *teg* that is irregular when negated (as described above), but the nominal form as well. On the one hand, a possessed nominalization with *=teg* undergoes normal existential negation (with *pǎ*, example 24) just as can any other noun (25):

- (24) [*nǐ pǎm = teg*] *pǎ*
 1sg.POSS sit=thing NEG:EX
 ‘My seat (log for sitting) is not here / does not exist.’ (el)
- (25) [*nǐ hǎp*] *pǎ*
 1sg.POSS fish NEG:EX
 ‘My fish is not here / does not exist.’ (el)

However, while most nouns can also appear with existential negation in predicate nominal clauses with no overt copula, as in (26), nominal constructions with *=teg* are ungrammatical when they appear with a nominative pronoun in the same type of construction, as illustrated in (27).

- (26) *?ǎh [[hǎp] pǎ]*
 1sg fish NEG:EX
 ‘I am without fish.’ (el)

- (27) *ʔáħ [[pǎm = teg] pǎ]
 1sg sit=thing NEG:EX
 ‘I am without a sitting-thing.’ (el)

Instead, the only grammatical form of this expression requires a *verbal* stress pattern, in combination with the nominal Existence Negator, as in example (28). It appears that a verbal clause has been produced from a copula-less predicate nominal clause – but it is a peculiar verbal clause, since the Existence Negator *pǎ* (itself a predicative particle) is usually ungrammatical with other predicates. Moreover, the interpretation of (28) is as ambiguous between noun and verb as is its form, since ‘I have nothing to sit on’ is pragmatically equivalent to ‘I will sit on nothing’.

- (28) [ʔáħ pǎm-tég] pǎ
 1sg sit-thing/FUT? NEG:EX
 ‘I have nothing to sit on.’ (el)

The historical scenario discussed here is supported by comparative evidence. Cognates for the lexeme ‘wood, stick’ can be identified in at least two other Nadahup languages (Yuhup *tég* and Nadëb *tæg*; cf. Ospina 2002 and Weir 1984), but no similar future marker appears to exist; however, a bound form *-teg* exists in Yuhup as purpose marker (Ana María Ospina, p.c.). Finally, a likely motivating force for the development of the future gram in Hup comes from Tukano, which not only has an explicit future tense, but has been shown to have motivated the development of future marking in the neighboring Arawak language Tariana (Aikhenvald 2002a: 126–127).

13.2. Proximative *-tuk-* / *-tu-*

The compounded, auxiliary-like verb root *-tuk-* ‘want’ – and particularly its phonologically reduced variant *-tu-* – are sometimes used to indicate an imminent future event in Hup (see also §9.4.2.4B). This proximative use is most easily distinguished from the volitional when it occurs with an inanimate subject, as in examples (29–30), or in reference to a negatively construed event such as dying, as in (32). Note that the proximative use of this form is limited to future events, whereas Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-* is used in reference to closely avoided past events (see §14.2.2). The grammaticalization of volition to future is a cross-linguistically common path (see Bybee et al. 1994: 254) – English ‘will’ is among many similar examples.

- (29) *děh d'oj-tú-y*
 water rain-WANT-DYNM
 'It's about to rain.' (cv)
- (30) *cé ʔóda cuʔ-tú-ay*
 six(Pt) hour(Pt) grab-WANT-INCH
 'It's almost 6:00.' (cv)
- (31) *tih g'et-g'oʔ-tú-ay*
 3sg stand-go.about-WANT-INCH
 'She (a baby) is about to start walking.' (cv)
- (32) *ʔam = báb' = d'əh b'iyiʔ tɔhɔ-tuk-hǎ-h*
 2sg=relative=PL only end-WANT-NONVIS-DECL
 'Your relatives will soon all die, I feel.' (txt)

13.3. First person plural inclusive future

An additional, idiosyncratic future construction involves the Declarative suffix *-Vh* (see §17.3.2). In general, the main function of Declarative *-Vh* is to mark the endpoint of a declarative clause, and when no other tense-aspect markers are present the default interpretation is usually that the event occurred in the past. However, the [verb.stem-*Vh*] construction (with no additional tense-aspect markers present) can also occur with a first person plural subject in order to express a *future* event, typically in combination with a future adverbial such as 'tomorrow' or 'later' (examples 33–34). In this Declarative future expression, the first person plural is always understood as *inclusive* – that is, the future event will necessarily involve both the speaker and the addressee. Yet there is no morphological inclusive-exclusive distinction in Hup; the first person plural pronoun is semantically neutral as to inclusivity/exclusivity in all other contexts, and the same expression is likely to be interpreted as a simple past tense (and as either inclusive or non-inclusive first person) when the future reference is not made clear by an adverbial or the pragmatic context. Note that the [verb.stem-*Vh*] form is ungrammatical with expressions of future tense for subjects of any other person/number, which require the future suffix *-teg / -te-* instead (example 35).

- (33) *cǎ-wag ?in hám-ǎh !*
 other-day 1pl go-DECL
 ‘Someday we’ll go!’ (cv)
- (34) *?icáp ?in ?óg-ǎh !*
 tomorrow 1pl drink-DECL
 ‘Tomorrow we’ll drink!’ (cv)
- (35) **?icáp ?ǎh/?am/tih/nih/hid ?óg-ǎh*
 tomorrow 1sg/2sg/3sg/2pl/3pl drink

This idiosyncratic future construction may not be entirely without cross-linguistic parallels. While the Declarative marker is not itself a marker of past tense, verb-final declarative constructions are nevertheless often identified with the past; the use of a past tense to indicate an imminent future event is found in several languages, including Russian (Comrie 1985: 20).

13.4. Fused contrast/tense particles

While the Future marker *-teg / -te-* represents the primary morphological means for indicating tense in Hup, there is also a set of contrast particles that express tense-related distinctions. These three forms are *páh* ‘temporally proximate contrast’, *j’ám* (*j’ǎh* in the Tat Deh dialect) ‘distant past contrast’ (the form *j’ám* is also used as an independent adverbial: ‘yesterday’), and *tán* ‘future contrast’ (also used as an independent adverbial: ‘later’). These forms stand in paradigmatic relationship to each other, and differ primarily according to temporal reference. They are largely optional, and as a group they function to indicate contrast, either between entities associated with the reported event or between temporal periods relevant to the event.¹⁶³ The tense distinctions they encode serve to define the scope of the time period in which the contrast is cast; as such, they differ from more ‘conventional’ tense markers in that they do not necessarily locate the event itself in time, although this function is within the scope of their use.

Formally, the contrast-tense markers are particles. They follow any focused element of the clause (including both predicates and nominal arguments), but

¹⁶³ They can also serve a focus function, particularly when they occur on nominal constituents of the clause, and as such are in some cases interchangeable with the Focus marker *-áh* (see §15.2.3).

are limited to one occurrence per clause (although the contrast enclitics may co-occur with their semantically related independent lexical variants within a single clause). In the following sections, the three particles will be discussed one by one and compared; finally, some additional uses of the Future Contrast marker *tán* to mark future tense will be considered.

13.4.1. Temporally Proximate Contrast *páh*

The ‘temporally proximate’ contrast marker *páh* emphasizes the relevance of the contrast in relation to the time immediately surrounding the speech moment – the recent past, the present, and the immediate future. Crucially, *páh* cannot be used in reference to the more distant past or future. This ‘temporal proximity’ usually corresponds to the same day as the speech event, but it is a relative measure and is flexible depending on the context.

The particle *páh* typically signals a contrast between entities and/or between events or states, within the proximate temporal context. When the contrast is between an event that recently took place and the present moment, *páh* closely resembles a tense marker:

- (36) *děh d’oj-ʔě-y páh-áh*
 water rain-PERF-DYNM PRX.CNTR-DECL
 ‘It was raining (a little while ago, but has since stopped).’ (el)

- (37) *wæd-ʔě-y páh níŋ-íh !*
 eat-PERF-DYNM PRX.CNTR 2pl-DECL
 ‘You’ve just eaten!’ (e.g., said to begging children) (ru)

Partly because of its optional status, the contrast-marking function of *páh* often contributes to the overall emphasis of the utterance. In (38), for example, the speaker is referring to his attempt an hour or so earlier to buy sugar from a river-merchant (the Hupd’əh typically add sugar to manioc beer to make it stronger; the river merchant apparently felt like discouraging this use and refused to sell the sugar.) The first use of *páh* in this example is as a temporal demonstrative (see discussion below); the second and third are both emphatic and tense-related (as in 39–40 as well).

- (38) *páhá-wəd-ǎn* *n'úh, páy=pog* ***páh*** *yú-wəd-ǎh,*
 PRX.CNTR.DEM-RESP-OBJ CNTR bad=big PRX.CNTR that-RESP-DECL

“*húptok* ‘*ectragá-áy*’ *yúw-úh,* *?acúka-áh,*”
 caxiri go.bad(Pt)-DYNM that-DECL sugar-DECL

nó-ǒy ***páh*** *yú-wəd-ǎh*
 say-DYNM PRX.CNTR that-RESP-DECL

‘As for that old guy, he was such a jerk just now, “sugar makes caxiri bad,” he just said, that old guy.’ (cv)

- (39) *kəwǎg* *ni-níh* ***páh*** *?ǎh* *b’ák-áh...*
 eye be-NEG PRX.CNTR 1sg beat.timbó-DECL

wəd-yí?-íy ***páh*** *?ǎh-ǎh !*
 eat-TEL-DYNM PRX.CNTR 1sg-DECL

‘Even without eyes I am able to beat timbó...I recently ate them (my eyes)!’ (txt)

- (40) *?úy* *cáp* *?úh* *?ǎn* *hǒp kək-wob-pæ-æ?* ***páh*** ?!
 who INTS1 EPIST 1sg.OBJ fish pull-set.on-go.upstream-INT PRX.CNTR
 ‘Who in the world could have caught and set out these fish for me just now?!’ (txt)

The Proximate Contrast particle can also be used in habitual expressions, in reference to a recent event that re-occurs often. Here, the focus of the contrast is in reference to something that has just taken place. In (41), the speaker is excusing herself after a fit of giggles, and (42) was uttered at a drinking party in reference to someone’s botched attempt at dancing.

- (41) *cecidíya* ***páh*** *tǎ?-nǒhǒ-dəb-pog-bí-h !*
 Cecilia PRX.CNTR laugh-much-EMPH1-HAB-DECL
 ‘It’s Cecilia (i.e., not me) who’s always laughing a lot!’ (cv)

- (42) *yam-hipǎh-níh* *bíg* ***páh*** *yúw-úh*
 dance-know-NEG HAB PRX.CNTR that-DECL
 ‘That one never knows how to dance.’ (cv)

While the above examples have to do with an event that has just occurred, *páh* can also be used to contrast an event that is concurrent with the speech moment to some previous (recent) event or state. For example, Pedro told me that (43) was uttered on the tragic occasion of a Hup man’s murder (by a Tu-

kano from a nearby village); soon after finding him dead, they found his companion lying drunk on a sandbar. Example (44) might be uttered by someone who wants to sell a pineapple, after the addressee has first approached another pineapple-seller. Finally, example (45) was in reference to a fire that had just gone out, and (46) was spoken by someone who was feeling better after a mild illness.

- (43) *ʔib'-ʔě-y* ***páh-áh***
 be.alive-PERF-DYNM PRX.CNTR-DECL
 'He's still alive!' (ru)
- (44) *cană* *ní-ŷy* ***páh*** *ʔăn = hin-ŷh*
 pineapple be-DYNM PRX.CNTR 1sg.OBJ-ALSO-DECL
 'I too have pineapple.' (el)
- (45) *hǝ-nǝh* ***páh*** *yúw-úh*
 burn-NEG PRX.CNTR that-DECL
 'It's not burning anymore.' (cv)
- (46) *náw* ***páh*** *yúw-úh*
 good PRX.CNTR that-DECL
 'It's (going) better.' (cv)

The Proximate particle *páh* can even have reference to a proximate future situation. For example, since the verb *hǝ-* means both 'burn' and 'be ripe' in Hup, the statement in (45) above can also mean 'they're not quite ripe yet' (e.g., in reference to bananas) – but *páh* must be replaced with the Future Contrast form *tán* (see example 57, §13.4.3 below) if the bananas are very green (i.e., not expected to ripen for some time). Similarly, one might say (47) when one is setting some fish aside for the next day, but only *tán* would be appropriate if the food item were being saved for a longer time.

- (47) *ʔicáp* *ʔǎh* *wæd-tég* ***páh*** *núw-úh*
 tomorrow 1sg eat-FUT PRX.CNTR this-DECL
 'Tomorrow I'll eat this.' (ru)

On the other hand, when it occurs with a future event and the Reportative evidential, the interpretation of *páh* may involve the recent-past time in which the original statement (now being reported via the evidential) was made:

- (48) *núp = ʔih ham-tég = mah páh-áh*
 this=MSC go-FUT=REP PRX.CNTR-DECL
 ‘This guy will go, (it was recently said).’ (el)

The Proximate Contrast form *páh* also occurs in two morphologically complex lexical constructions (although it has no independent meaning as a free form). These are the temporal adverbial *páh-yiʔ* (PRX.CNTR-TEL) ‘earlier today’ (example 49), and the demonstrative form *pah-áp* (PRX.CNTR-DEP) ‘that recent one’ (alternatively *pahá-* with a bound noun; see 38 above), which concerns a recently relevant referent, as in (50) (see also §6.3).

- (49) *ʔəh-yiʔ-cǎw-ǎy yi-d’əh-əh, páh-yiʔ*
 sleep-TEL-COMPL-DYNM that-PL-DECL PRX.CNTR-TEL

hid ʔəh-yiʔ-ih

3pl sleep-TEL-DECL

‘They’re already asleep; just a little while ago they went to sleep’ (txt)

- (50) *pah-áp wædhɔʔm’əh tod pinǎŋ tih nɔ-əw-ay*
 PRX.CNTR-DEP star hollow story 3sg say-FLR-INCH
 ‘This is that Star-Hollow story that she just mentioned.’ (txt)

13.4.2. Distant Past Contrast *j’ám* / *j’áh*

Whereas *páh* signals a temporally proximate contrast, the form *j’ám* (phonologically reduced to *j’áh* in the Tat Deh/Eastern dialect) indicates a distant past contrast. It is typically used in reference to a relatively distant past event, which is contrasted with the present:

- (51) *hicocó ʔin ní-ǎh, ni-ʔě-y j’ám ʔáh-ǎh*
 happy 1pl be-DECL be-PERF-DYNM DST.CNTR 1sg-DECL
 ‘We were happy, I was happy in those days.’ (when my wife was alive)
 (txt)

- (52) *ʔáh n’ǎh naw-ʔéʔ-mǎʔ j’ám, páy-áh*
 1sg CNTR good-PERF-UNDER DST.CNTR bad-DECL
 ‘Although I was once good, I now am bad.’ (txt)

It can also be used to focus on a present situation or event and to contrast this with one in the relatively distant past; as such, it looks less like a conventional

tense marker. In (53–54), for example, the speakers have forgotten something that had been told them in the past or that they had previously known:

- (53) *hĩ-n'ĩh* *ʔam = tãhʔíp* *nĩh* *hãt* *j'ám* ?
 Q-NMZ 2sg=child.father POSS name DST.CNTR
 'What's your husband's name again?' (cv)

- (54) *yúp = yiʔ = mah* *j'áh* *tĩh*, *tóg* ?
 that=TEL=REP DST.CNTR 3sg daughter
 'Was that the one, Daughter?' (txt)

The Distant Past Contrast particle is common in narrative, and often occurs together with the Reportative evidential *mah*, as in example (55).¹⁶⁴ (This combined form is reduced to *-maám* or *-ma-y'ám* in the Umari Norte dialect area; see §14.9.4 for more discussion.) In some of these cases, the contrast-tense marker appears to refer to the time when the storyteller heard the story told, rather than to the events themselves (as in 54 above; likewise with *páh* in example 48). However, in narrative the contrast-tense marker usually refers primarily to the distant past time of the events (note that the order of the Reportative evidential and the contrast particles is fixed, and cannot be switched). Evidence for this includes the fact that the co-occurrence of these two forms is for the most part confined to narratives concerning mythical or distant past events, whereas the Reportative marker alone is used to describe mythical knowledge that pertains to everyday life (for example, concerning the malignant being embodied by the rainbow), even though the speaker presumably heard this from elders no more recently than s/he heard the tales. Also, a first-hand narrative of events that the speaker him/herself experienced long ago may make use of the contrast particle, but does not involve the Reportative evidential, as in (56).

- (55) *nút* *pũʔũk* *d'ák-áy = nih = mah* *j'ám* *tĩh-ăn* *hěʔ*
 here coca stick.against-DYNM=EMPH.CO=REP DST.CNTR 3sg-OBJ TAG2
 'Here (in his cheek) he had (a wad of) coca.' (lit. 'it was sticking there for him') (txt)

¹⁶⁴ This is subject to personal variation among story-tellers.

- (56) *mɔy pɔg j'ám yúp mɔy ni-ní-h; yúp mɔy-ǝt*
 house big DST.CNTR that house be-INFR-DECL that house-OBL
- j'ám ʔin wid-d'ób-óh, mɔy m'æc-yí?-íy j'ám ʔin-íh*
 DST.CNTR 1pl arrive-go.to.water house stuff-TEL-DYNM DST.CNTR 1pl-DECL
 'That house (that was here) was a big one; to that house we came down
 river-wards, and crammed into it.' (txt)

In addition to its use as a contrast particle, the form *j'ám* also appears in the lexical adverbial expressions *j'ám* 'yesterday' and *j'ám-yí?* (DST.CNTR-TEL) 'a long time ago; sometime before yesterday'. Like the Proximate Contrast particle *páh*, it also has a demonstrative form *j'am-ǎp* (DST.CNTR-DEP) 'that (distant past) one' (see §6.3). Thus *j'am-ǎp tiyí?* 'that man' (who passed yesterday or before) can be contrasted with *pah-áp tiyí?* 'that man' (who passed earlier today).

13.4.3. Future Contrast *tán*

The particle *tán* also indicates contrast, with a temporal scope relating to the relatively distant future. It necessarily contrasts the future with 'now', the moment of speech:

- (57) *hɔ-níh tán yúw-úh*
 burn-NEG FUT.CNTR that-DECL
 'They're not ripe yet (and won't be ripe for some time).' (el)

Future Contrast *tán* functions much like Proximate *páh* and Distant Past *j'ám*; however, it is more likely than these to refer directly to the time of the focal event, rather than to contrast a focal event occurring in the present with some situation or event that occurred at another time (accordingly, it is somewhat more tense-like). The relationship between *tán* and the other two contrast-tense particles is illustrated in the following elicited examples:

- (58) a) *núp páh yúw-úh*
 this PRX.CNTR that-DECL
 'Here it is.' (e.g., giving back something recently borrowed)

- b) *núp j'ám yúw-úh*
 this DST.CNTR that-DECL
 'Here it is.' (e.g., giving back something that was borrowed several months earlier)
- c) *nút tán yúw-úh*
 here FUT.CNTR that-DECL
 'This is where it will be.' (e.g., showing where a house will be built; not yet begun) (el)
- (59) a) *tih b'ay-níh-ay páh-áh*
 3sg return-NEG-INCH PRX.CNTR-DECL
 'He won't come back.' (said by a person who met him on the path earlier the same day)
- b) *tih b'ay-níh-ay j'ám-áh*
 3sg return-NEG-INCH DST.CNTR-DECL
 'He won't come back.' (said by a person who met him a week or so ago)
- c) *tih b'ay-níh-ay tán-áh*
 3sg return-NEG-INCH FUT.CNTR-DECL
 'He won't come back (in the relatively distant future).' (el)

In addition, like the Distant Past particle *j'ám*, Future Contrast *tán* occurs as an independent adverbial, meaning 'later today'. It also appears in the adverbial expression *tán-an-ay tán* 'in the relatively distant future' (note *tán* appears twice!), which can occur together with the Future marker *-teg / -te-*:

- (60) *tán-an-ay tán yúp moy-ót hid ni-té-h*
 later-OBJ-INCH FUT.CNTR that.ITG house-OBL 3pl be-FUT-DECL
 'In the future/someday they will live in that house.' (el)

The functional range of *tán* includes additional grammatical tasks that set it apart from the other two contrast-tense particles. In particular, *tán* acts primarily as a future tense marker (as opposed to a contrast particle) in environments where the Future marker *-teg / -te-* is ungrammatical, including imperative, negative, and apprehensive modes, and in habitual and some conditional expressions. Unlike expression of past tense, overt marking of future is required in some contexts in Hup, and *tán* often fills in where *-teg / -te-* is not appropriate.

Thus *tán* is the only contrast-tense particle that may occasionally be grammatically required, whereas the others are optional.

The use of *tán* in distant future imperatives is illustrated in (61) (said to me when I left the Hupd'əh to return to the US). The simple imperative (without future specification) would imply a more immediate expectation or command (see also §17.5). The imperative use of (particle) *tán* can be contrasted with its lexical (adverbial) use, which simply means 'later today', as in (62).

- (61) *nǎn tán !*
 come FUT.CNTR
 'Come back (in the future)!' (cv)

- (62) *tán nǎn !*
 later come.IMP
 'Come back later today!' (an invitation) (cv)

Future *tán* is also common in negative future constructions (in which *-teg / -te-* is ungrammatical), as in (63–64). Example (63) was uttered by a teenaged boy who was sticking the cigarette lighter I had just given him into the thatch of the house for safe-keeping, in response to my comment "someone else might take it!" Note that the adverbial and the Future contrast uses of *tán* may co-occur in a single clause (64).

- (63) *tih key-nih tán yúw-úh*
 3sg see-NEG FUT.CNTR that-DECL
 'He (generic) won't see it!' (cv)

- (64) *tán ?āh ham-nih tán-āh*
 later 1sg go-NEG FUT.CNTR-DECL
 'I'm not going to go, later.' (el)

Finally, *tán* may be used in the Apprehensive mode (see §14.6) to indicate a potential or hypothetical future, as in (65–67); *-teg / -te-* are ungrammatical with the Apprehensive (they indicate a more certain future event).

- (65) *?ǎn hid d'ó? tán-ǎh*
 1sg.OBJ 3pl take.APPR FUT.CNTR-DECL
 'They (boys) would get me.' (girl explaining why she did not intend to visit another town) (cv)

- (66) *cak-nínih, ʔam nóh tán-ǎh !*
 climb-NEG.be.IMP 2sg fall.APPR FUT.CNTR-DECL
 ‘Don’t climb, you’ll fall!’ (el)

- (67) “*ʔám-ǎn ʔǎh yɔmǔy yók tán-ǎh !*” *tih nó-ǎh*
 2sg-OBJ 1sg anus stab.APPR FUT.CNTR-DECL 3sg say-DECL
 ‘“I’ll stab you in the anus!” she said.’ (txt)

In addition to acting as the sole indicator of future tense where *-teg / -te-* is ungrammatical, *tán* can also appear together with *-teg / -te-* as a contrast particle. In (68), for example, the present state of the fire’s burning is contrasted with the predicted future state of its going out (the Perfective signals the end-point of the burning):

- (68) *núp-mæh-yíʔ-ip tǔg hǔ-ʔeʔ-tǔg tán-ǎh*
 this-DIM-TEL-DEP wood burn-PERF-FUT FUT.CNTR-DECL
 ‘This fire will keep burning for the moment (but will soon go out).’ (el)

Chapter 14

Modality and evidentiality

This chapter deals with Hup's more fine-grained grammatical categories of modality and evidentiality, involving formatives that associate primarily (but not always exclusively) with the verb. Hup grammaticalizes the modal distinctions of conditionality and counterfactuality, as well as frustrative, cooperative, epistemic, apprehensive, and jussive/optative modes. Of these, the Conditional, Cooperative, and Jussive markers are realized as Boundary Suffixes (and the Apprehensive as the absence of a Boundary Suffix), and can be understood as encoding specific clause types. They are thus formally and functionally akin to the more frequent markers of clause type that also relate to modality, particularly those that indicate the basic declarative, interrogative, and imperative moods, treated in the discussion of basic clause types in Chapter 17. In addition to these modal categories, Hup has a well-developed system of evidentiality with as many as five distinctions; these are covered at the end of this chapter.

The forms, slot classes, and functions of the formatives discussed in this chapter are summarized in Table 41.

14.1. Conditional *-tǎn*

The verbal suffix *-tǎn* marks a condition. It normally occurs in the first clause of a biclausal construction, which is made up of a protasis ('if' clause), followed by an apodosis ('then' or consequent clause); however, the order of these clauses is flexible, and either may be dropped if recoverable from the discourse. Conditional *-tǎn* is a Boundary Suffix, but it is non-canonical for the consonant-initial subset of these suffixes in that both it and the stem receive stress (see §3.4.1.2).

Conditional *-tǎn* is used with both 'real' conditionals (i.e., those that refer to events that are expected to occur and/or are known to occur regularly) and 'unreal' conditionals (i.e., events that are hypothetical). The difference is typically registered in the apodosis by the presence or absence of the Counterfactual suffix *-tǎʔ*- (see §14.2 below) or a related marker. Examples (1–4) illustrate 'real' conditional statements:

Table 41. Markers of modality and evidentiality in Hup

Form	Slot class (formative type)	Identity/ word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form
<i>-tǎn</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Conditional	Enclitic (w/ nouns) indicating comparison
<i>-tǎʔ-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Counterfactual, avertive	Cf. verbs <i>hitǎʔ-</i> ‘imitate’; <i>tǎʔ-key</i> ‘weigh’, etc.
<i>=tih</i>	Enclitic	Verbs	Counterfactual	
<i>yǎǎh</i>	Particle	Verbs, predicate nominals	Frustrative mood	Verb root <i>yǎǎh-</i> ‘request, order’
<i>-yǎǎh-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Frustrative mood	
<i>-nǎŋ</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Cooperative	2pl pronoun <i>nǎŋ</i> Verbal form <i>nǎŋ-</i> ‘expect someone’
<i>-∅</i>	Absence of Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Apprehensive mood	Compare imperative: <i>-∅</i> and high tone on verb stem
<i>-ʔǎh</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Jussive	Noun ‘opposite-sex sibling’
<i>ʔǎh</i>	Particle	Various hosts	Epistemic modality	Interactional (prefix w/ verbs) Applicative (Inner Suffix w/ verbs)
<i>=hǎ</i>	Enclitic	Predicates	Evidential: nonvisual	cf. verb <i>hǎh-</i> ‘make noise’
<i>-hǎ(h)-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Evidential: nonvisual	
<i>=cud</i>	Enclitic	Predicates	Evidential: inferred	‘Deceased referent’ marker (enclitic w/ nouns)
<i>-cud-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Evidential: inferred	Verb root <i>cud-</i> ‘be inside’
<i>=mah</i>	Enclitic	Various hosts	Evidential: reported	
<i>-mah-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Evidential: reported	
<i>-ni-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Evidential: inferred	Verb <i>ni-</i> ‘be, exist’

- (1) *ni-níh-íy* *bíg* *j'áh* *b'öy* *ʔáh* *cúh-tǎn-ǎh*
 this-be.like-DYMN HAB DST.CNTR traira 1sg string-COND-DECL
 'I always do like this if/when I string traira fish.' (txt)
- (2) *yág* *nó-tǎn* *táʔ*
 hammock say-COND REL.INST
 'What if you say 'hammock'?' (i.e., 'what's hammock in your language?') (cv)
- (3) *húp* *pǎ-tǎn,* *nukán* *tih* *hi-yæt-yíʔ-ay-áh*
 person NEG:EX-COND over.here 3sg FACT-lie-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'If/when no one is there, (the bones) descend to here.' (txt)
- (4) *deh = mí* *hɔp-hí-tǎn,* *ʔin* *b'ák-áh*
 water=river dry-descend-COND 1pl beat.timbo-DECL
 'If/when the stream (level) goes down, we'll fish with timbó.' (ru)

Examples (5–6) illustrate 'unreal' or hypothetical conditionals. These are signaled by the presence of Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-* or *=tih* (§14.3) in the apodosis, and/or with the Frustrative *yǎh* (§14.4). In (5), the statement is hypothetical because the speaker knows that no manioc beer – the necessary ingredient for producing a proper song – is available that day.

- (5) *deh* *b'öʔ* *ʔam* *d'óʔ-nǎn-tǎn,* *ʔáh* *ʔəg-d'óʔ-tǎn,*
 water cuia 2sg take-come-COND 1sg drink-take-COND
- hǎh-ǎy = tih* *ʔühníy*
 make.sound=CNTRFCT2 maybe
 'If you brought me a cuia, and if I drank, maybe the song would come.'
 (sg)
- (6) *ʔəg-náʔ-ǎy = tih = cud,* *j'ám-ǎp,*
 drink-lose.consciousness=CNTRFCT2=INFR yesterday-DEP
- hiyǎw'* *ni-ʔéʔ-tǎn-ǎw-ǎp !*
 strong.beer be-PERF-COND-FLR-DEP
 'We would have gotten drunk the other day, if there had been really strong beer !' (cv)

In (7), the Conditional occurs in a negative predicate, where it follows the Negative suffix *-níh*:

- (7) *ni-níh-ĩp bíg yǎh j'áh ?áh-áh,*
 this-be.like-DEP HAB FRUSTDST.CNTR 1sg-DECL

?áh pe?-ni-níh-tǎn-ǎh !

1sg be.sick-be-NEG-COND-DECL

'I'd always do like that too, if I weren't sick!' (cv)

The Conditional also occurs with predicate adjectives (including those used in adverbial phrases), as is consistent with their verb-like identity (see §10.1):

- (8) *g'í-tǎn =yi? tih nǎw-áh*
 hot-COND=TEL 3sg good-DECL
 'When it's hot, it's nice.' (el)

Conditional *-tǎn* is itself ungrammatical in imperative and interrogative clauses, or in combination with future tense morphemes (*-teg / -te-, tán*); however, it can appear in a protasis while imperative, interrogative, or future tense is expressed in the accompanying apodosis:

- (9) *tǎw-tég ?ám, tih bí?-níh-tǎn ?*
 scold-FUT 2sg 3sg work-NEG-COND
 'Will you scold, if he doesn't work?' (el)

In addition to its use as a conditional marker, the form *tǎn* appears elsewhere in Hup and performs a distinct function: it marks an equative comparative construction, where it indicates 'same amount as, same way as' (examples 10–11; see §10.2.2.1). The functional difference between this manifestation of *=tǎn* and its realization as a conditional marker corresponds to their formal distinction: as a marker of equative comparison, *=tǎn* is an unstressed enclitic (unless preceded by Factitive *hi-* in a verbal construction, see example 11), it combines with nouns as well as verb roots, and its comparative use does not in general involve a biclausal construction. That these two realizations of *tǎn* may be historically related is evidenced by the alternative translations given in these examples:

- (10) *?amĩh b'otók =tǎn tih ní-ĩy*
 2sg.POSS ear=MEAS2 3sg be-DYNM
 'She comes up to your ear.' (i.e., 'as if she were your ear, she is') (cv)

- (11) *ʔin yám-hi-tǎñ = yiʔ ʔam yám-áy*
 1pl dance-FACT-MEAS2=TEL 2sg dance-DYNM
 ‘You dance the way we do / in our way.’ (i.e., ‘as we would if we were dancing, you dance’) (el)

14.2. Counterfactual -tǎʔ-

The morpheme *-tǎʔ-*, labeled ‘Counterfactual’, encodes a type of irrealis. It has two main functions, that of marking the unrealized or unrealizable status of an event in conditional expressions, and that of marking a narrowly averted event. The form *-tǎʔ-* usually appears in the Inner Suffix position on verb stems.

14.2.1. Counterfactual in conditional expressions

Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-* typically occurs in the apodosis (‘then’ or consequent clause) of a biclausal construction encoding an ‘if-then’ relationship. The protasis, marked with Conditional *-tǎñ*, usually precedes it, although this order is flexible (see §14.1). The Counterfactual expresses the unrealized or unrealizable status of the condition, and is preferred in explicitly hypothetical situations, where the condition cannot be met or is not expected to be met within the relevant time frame:

- (12) *ʔám = báb’ dób-tǎñ, dób dǐʔ = mǎh*
 2sg=sibling much-COND much remain=DIM

ʔam d’oʔ-ye-tǎʔ-n’ih
 2sg take-enter-CNTRFCT-NMZ
 ‘If you had many siblings, you would bring in a lot (of fruit)!’ (txt)

- (13) *nǐ tǎh-ǎn mǎh-yíʔ-tǎñ... ʔǎh*
 1sg.POSS son-OBJ kill-TEL-COND 1sg

d’oʔ-d’oh-yíʔ-tǎʔ-ǎy ʔǔhníy
 take-rot-TEL-CNTRFCT-DYNM maybe
 ‘If they killed my son, I would maybe make things bad (for them).’ (txt)

When the condition is recoverable from the discourse context, the Counterfactual-marked clause may occur alone, without an associated Conditional clause (just as a Conditional clause can itself appear alone):

- (14) *yínîy* *nĭ* *tǎĕh biʔ-tǎʔ-ǎp*, *yǎhǎʔ-yíʔ-íh...*
 that.ITG.be.like.DYNM 1sg.POSS son work-CNTRFCT-DEP stop-TEL-DECL
 ‘Thus my son would have worked (had my wife been alive), but he stopped.’ (txt)

Counterfactual marking is typically absent where the condition is expected to be or is regularly met (see §14.1 above), but it is required when the conditional situation is obviously hypothetical. Thus (15), with an unmarked second clause, is inappropriate:

- (15) *ʔ hũtǎĕh ʔǎh ní-tǎĕn*, *ʔǎh way-d’óʔ-óh*
 bird 1sg be-COND 1sg leave-take-DECL
 ? (‘If I were a bird, I’ll fly.’) (el)

The Frustrative marker *yǎĕh* (§14.4), which signals that an intended or anticipated outcome is not realized, is extremely common (but not in general obligatory) in co-occurrence with the Counterfactual in conditional expressions:

- (16) *hũtǎĕh ʔǎh ní-tǎĕn*, *ʔǎh way-d’oʔ-tǎʔ-ǎy* ***yǎĕh***
 bird 1sg be-COND 1sg leave-take-CNTRFCT-DYNM FRUST
 ‘If I were a bird, I would fly.’ (el)

The Inferential Evidential forms *cud* and *-ni-* (§14.9) also often co-occur (optionally) with the Counterfactual, although less frequently than the Frustrative:

- (17) *ʔǎh cih-níh-tǎĕn*, *ham-tǎʔ-ǎy = cud*
 1sg tired-NEG-COND go-CNTRFCT-DYNM=INFR

yǎĕh páh ʔǎh = tiʔ
 FRUST PRX.CNTR 1sg=EMPH.TAG
 ‘If I had not been tired, I would have gone.’ (el)

- (18) *...yág ʔǎh d’óʔ-óy*, *ʔǎh g’et-ni-tǎʔ-ní-h...*
 hammock 1sg take-DYNM 1sg stand-be-CNTRFCT-INFR2-DECL
 ‘...I took (was given) a hammock; I would have stayed there (but these days it’s impossible).’ (txt)

Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-* never occurs in predicates marked with the Negative suffix *-níh*. Rather, the Counterfactual itself is to be interpreted as inherently negative or at least neutral regarding negation (see §16.4 and below). Clauses expressing conditional, hypothetical negative events (e.g., ‘she wouldn’t speak your language’) are phrased exactly like those expressing positive events (e.g., ‘she would speak your language’), and the negative/positive reading (i.e., whether or not the activity would be expected to take place if the hypothetical condition were realized) must be taken from the context:

- (19) *yíkán níŋǐh ʔíd ʔíd-tǎʔ-ay ʔúhníy*
 over.there 2pl.POSS speech speak-CNTRFCT-INCH maybe
 ‘Maybe she wouldn’t speak your language there (if you went there with her).’ (cv)

Accordingly, while the best translation of (19) is negative, the appropriate positive response would also use the Counterfactual: *ʔíd-tǎʔ-ǎy!* (speak-CNTRFCT-DYNM) ‘I would speak (it)!’

While Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-* patterns like a typical Inner Suffix in combination with verbal predicates, it can also occur with predicate nominals. In this environment, the copula *ni-* is an option:

- (20) *núp = ʔíh b’óy-op = ʔíh ni-tǎʔ-ǎy yǎh*
 this=MSC teach-DEP=MSC be-CNTRFCT-DYNM FRUST
 ‘This man would have been / was almost a teacher.’ (el)

However, a verbal construction is not required for expressing counterfactuality; instead, *tǎʔ* (followed by Frustrative *yǎh*) may directly follow the noun, without a copula. Furthermore, in this case *tǎʔ* may appear without the Boundary Suffix that is obligatory in its verbal realization (and strictly verbal suffixes such as the Dynamic are ungrammatical):

- (21) *núp = ʔíh b’óy-op = ʔíh tǎʔ yǎh(-ǎh)*
 this=MSC teach-DEP=MSC CNTRFCT FRUST(-DECL)
 (**tǎʔ-ǎy yǎh*)
 (*CNTRFCT-DYNM FRUST)
 ‘This man would have been / was almost a teacher.’ (el)

With predicate adjectives, either a copula construction with *ni-* or the nominalized form (*tih* + adjective, resulting in a predicate nominal; see §6.6) is preferred, as in (22). In this context, a verbal construction with the predicate adjective itself acting as a verb root is judged only marginally possible.

- (22) *tih = báb'* *tih = páy* *tǎʔ* *yǎ́h*
 3sg=sibling 3sg=bad CNTRFCT FRUST
- (? *pay-tǎʔ-ǎ́y* *yǎ́h*)
 bad-CNTRFCT-DYNM FRUST
 ‘His brother would have been an ugly/bad one.’ (el)

14.2.2. ‘Avertive’ function of *-tǎʔ-*

In addition to its use in a conditional expression, which usually involves a bi-clausal construction, Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-* may be used in an independent clause to signal an event that has been narrowly averted or is on the verge of occurring:

- (23) *?am nɔh-tǎʔ-ǎ́y !*
 2sg fall-CNTRFCT-DYNM
 ‘You almost fell!’ (cv)
- (24) *?id-tǎʔ-ǎ́y* *?ám ?*
 speak-CNTRFCT-DYNM 2sg
 ‘You were about to say something?’ (el)
- (25) *peyǎ́w cɨw-tǎʔ-ǎ́p* *hi-kád,* *?adócu* *?in* *cɨw-íh*
 beans cook-CNTRFCT-DEP FACT-pass rice 1pl cook-DECL
 ‘Instead of cooking beans, we cooked rice.’ (el)
- (26) *tih yǎ́h = d’əh mæh-yi?-tǎʔ-ǎ́y = mah*
 3sg in.law=PL kill-TEL-CNTRFCT-DYNM=REP
 ‘His in-laws nearly killed him.’ (txt)

Note that *-tǎʔ-* may precede Frustrative *yǎ́h* (as in the conditional expressions in §14.2.1):

- (27) *ʔān hid dóh-op ʔāh nɔh-yæt-yiʔ-tǎʔ-yǎh-ǎh !*
 1sg.OBJ 3pl curse-DEP 1sg fall-lie-TEL-CNTRFCT-FRUST-DECL
 ‘I almost died from their cursing me!’ (txt)

This ‘avertive’ function of Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-* is reminiscent of that of an ‘avertive’ gram, as defined cross-linguistically by Kuteva (1998, 2001). However, the morpheme *-tǎʔ-* cannot in general be considered an avertive gram according to Kuteva’s definition (2001: 84), which stresses three “essential” characteristics: counterfactuality, imminence, and past-tense reference. While Hup *-tǎʔ-* shares the feature of counterfactuality with avertive constructions in other languages, its use in conditional expressions does not always meet the criterion of imminence, and it is not in general restricted to past events – whereas Kuteva stresses that “the avertive structure is restricted to past contexts only”. Cases of Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-* in reference to non-past events are common, both in clearly conditional expressions like (12–14) above, and in more ‘avertive’ examples like (28–30):

- (28) *tih nɔh-yiʔ-tǎʔ-ǎw-ay*
 3sg fall-TEL-CNTRFCT-FLR-INCH
 ‘It’s just about to fall.’ (cv)
- (29) *doh-nih tih ni-tǎʔ-ǎp = b’ay*
 curse-NEG 3sg be-CNTRFCT-DEP=AGAIN
 ‘He’s on the verge of cursing them again.’ (cv)
- (30) *ʔüy yúp ní-íy, tók hǎy-tǎʔ-ǎʔ, nóh-hə !*
 who thus be-DYNM belly wide-CNTRFCT-INT say-TAG2
 ‘Who is thus, (who) could have a belly that wide (to contain all that beer), say!’ (cv)

Hup *-tǎʔ-* is therefore best considered not an avertive gram per se (according to Kuteva’s definition), but rather a counterfactual irrealis gram that has developed an avertive-type extended function. This development has undoubtedly come about through the ability of either of the two linked clauses in a conditional construction to appear by itself, while its companion may be left unstated when it can be recovered from the discourse. In most of the ‘avertive’ examples of the Counterfactual’s use above, in fact, a conditional clause (as protasis) and counterfactual translation could easily be supplied, such as (example 23): ‘you almost fell’ ~ ‘you would have fallen (if you had not caught yourself)’. Both the ‘avertive’ use and the more straightforward counterfactual use

of *-tǎʔ-* share the interpretation that an event in the past was not realized at all (because some necessary condition was not met), or that a non-past event is judged to be unlikely or impossible.

A final observation regarding the ‘avertive’ function of *-tǎʔ-* involves its behavior in negative contexts, which follows the same rules as its conditional/counterfactual realization (§14.2.1 above). Because *-tǎʔ-* cannot co-occur with the verbal Negative suffix *-níh*, an averted *negative* event can only be expressed with Frustrative *yǎ́h*:

- (31) *ʔǎh widham-níh yǎ́h; g'im-tǎʔ-ǎ́y yǎ́h*
 1sg arrive.go-NEG FRUST capsized-CNTRFCT-DYNM FRUST
 ‘I almost didn’t arrive; I almost capsized/drowned.’ (el)

As noted in §16.4, *-tǎʔ-* can occur with the reinforcing negative particle *nǎ́*, which otherwise is restricted to contexts in which an explicitly negative morpheme is present (example 32). This is additional evidence that Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-* (at least in its ‘avertive’ function) is itself inherently negative (see §14.2.1 above), which makes sense given its irrealis function.

- (32) *nihúʔ nǎ́ núp j'áh cóʔ ni-tǎʔ-ní-h !*
 all NEG:R this land LOC be-CNTRFCT-INFR2-DECL
 ‘All of these (evil beings) were almost/would have been in our land!’
 (txt)

A few frozen lexical expressions involving *tǎʔ-* as a root form suggest that the Counterfactual marker may have grammaticalized from what was historically a verb root. These include the Factitive form *hi-tǎʔ-* ‘imitate, copy, do as if’, as in (33); this form also appears in the verb compound *ʔid-hi-tǎʔ-* (speak-FACT-CNTRFCT-) ‘imitate speech or sound’.

- (33) *mǎh-ǎn = mah cǎp tih hitǎʔ-ǎ́h, dohʔǎ́y-ǎ́h*
 inambu-OBJ=REP other 3sg imitate-DECL Curupira-DECL
 ‘The inambu is another that he imitates, (does) Curupira.’

Other such lexicalized forms are *tǎʔnǎhǎ-* (variant *tǎʔnǎ-*) ‘laugh’, which possibly involves the root *nǎ-* ‘say’, and *tǎʔ-key-* ‘measure’, from *key-* ‘see’. At least in the case of ‘imitate’ and ‘measure’, the lexicalized forms have in common with the Counterfactual gram a semantics of hypothetical likeness; of fulfilling some, but not all, of the criteria necessary for having a particular identity. Just as ‘imitate’ could be translated ‘do as if’ (i.e., be like the real thing, but not the same), ‘measure’ could be translated ‘see as if’, since in Hup culture

measuring something usually involves suggesting a hypothetical replacement for the actual entity (e.g., ‘the length of my arm’; ‘from here to that tree’, etc.). Even ‘laugh’ could perhaps be interpreted similarly, i.e., ‘like speaking, but different’.

14.3. Alternative Counterfactual form = *tih*

In addition to *-tǎʔ-*, Hup has an alternative Counterfactual form =*tih*, illustrated in examples (34–36) (see also 5–6 above). This form occurs exclusively in conditional expressions, but is less common than *-tǎʔ-*, with which it appears to be freely interchangeable; the two can also co-occur (example 36). The factors governing the choice between these two counterfactual markers are not fully understood; however, Counterfactual =*tih* tends to be followed by the Inferential evidential *cud* (although this is not required for grammaticality), while *-tǎʔ-* is much more rarely followed by evidentials. Note that the form of Counterfactual =*tih* resembles the clause-final emphasis marker *tih* (see §15.3.1.3), but unlike the emphasis marker it is an unstressed enclitic, which tends to be followed by other enclitics.

- (34) *ʔin cóʔ-óy=b'ay dǎh-ét b'iyiʔ ʔin ní-tǎñ,*
 1pl LOC-DYNM=AGAIN water-OBL only 1pl be-COND

yít ham-nih = tih = cud = mah

thus go-NEG=CNTRFCT2=INFR=REP

‘If we lived only by the river, things would not go well for us, they say.’

(txt)

- (35) *hám-ǎy = tih = cud ʔǎh-ǎh, dǎh d'ój-óy keyóʔ,*
 go-DYNM=CNTRFCT2=INFR 1sg-DECLwater rain-DYNM CAUSE

ʔǎh ham-nih-ǎh

1sg go-NEG-DECL

‘I would have gone, but since it rained, I did not go.’ (el)

- (36) *ham-tǎʔ-ǎy = tih = cud yǎh ʔǎh-ǎh*
 go-CNTRFCT-DYNM=CNTRFCT2 FRUST 1sg-DECL
 ‘I would have gone’ (el)

14.4. Frustrative *yǎ́h*

The Frustrative marker has a range of possible interpretations: it can indicate that the intended or anticipated goal of an action is unrealized, the action itself did not reach completion, it occurred but was ineffectual, its resulting (intended) state did not last, or that its eventual outcome is in doubt. Unlike Counterfactual *-tǎ́?*, *yǎ́h* does not entail that the event does not or will not take place; rather, it has to do primarily with intentions or expectations relating to the event. Frustrative *yǎ́h* is a fluid morpheme, appearing either as a particle or as an Inner Suffix depending on the type of Boundary Suffix present (see §3.5), as the examples in this section illustrate. ‘Frustrative’ grams of this sort are found in many Amazonian languages, although their uses vary somewhat from language to language (Overall, in preparation).

Examples of Frustrative *yǎ́h* are given in (37–38); here the event in question did take place, but the intended goal was not realized. In (37), for example, the jaguar has been tricked by the crab, who has robbed him of his eyes; the jaguar’s attempts to rectify the situation are of no avail. In (38), the speaker had strung her beads on a long string to wear around her neck, but they were subsequently lost or stolen.

- (37) “*ʔǎn kəwǎg d’oʔ-tuʔ-ʔáy!*” *tih nɔ-yǎ́h-ǎ́h...*
 1sg.OBJ eye take-immers-VENT.IMP 3sg say-FRUST-DECL

tih peʔpeʔ-yǎ́h-ǎ́h
 3sg grope-FRUST-DECL
 ‘Put my eyes back in! he said (in vain)...he groped around (in vain)...’
 (txt)

- (38) *tít w’ǎt-ǎt ʔǎh cuh-ʔeʔ-yǎ́h-ǎ́h*
 string long-OBL 1sg string-PERF-FRUST-DECL
 ‘I strung (the beads) on a long string (in vain).’ (txt)

In a compound verb, the ‘in vain’ sense of the Frustrative applies to the compound as a whole. This may mean that all the sub-events (as represented by the verb roots within the compound) are carried out while the goal of the overall event remains unrealized, as in (39) (in which the teaching was begun but not continued). It may also mean that only some of the sub-events actually took place, to the effect that the goal still is unrealized, as in (40) (where the speaker wants to converse in Portuguese, but is unable to do so).

- (39) *teghõ = ʔǎy = wa* *j'ám* *ʔin-ǎn*
 Non.Indian=FEM=old.woman DST.CNTR 1pl-OBJ

b'oy-cum-ni-yǎh-ǎh

teach-beginning-be-FRUST-DECL

‘A Non-Indian woman (long ago) began to teach us (in vain).’ (she soon left). (txt)

- (40) *nĩŋ = d'əh* *wid-nǎn-tǎn = hin,* *ʔǎh* *ʔid-tuk-yǎh-ǎh*
 2pl=PL arrive-come-COND=also 1sg speak-want-FRUST-DECL
 ‘When you types (Non-Indian people) come here, I’d like (in vain) to talk with you.’ (but can’t speak Portuguese) (txt)

Frustrative *yǎh* often occurs following evidentials and other formatives (41–43), including the Intensifier suffix *-(V)cáp* (example 43; see §15.1.1):

- (41) *tĩnh* *wǎd tih* *w'ob-ʔě-y = cud* *yǎh-ǎh*
 3sg.POSS food 3sg set-PERF-DYNM=INFR FRUST-DECL
 ‘She put her food up, apparently (in vain).’ (some things were nevertheless stolen) (txt)

- (42) *ʔǎh* *j'ɔm-tú-y = hõ* *yǎh*
 1sg bathe-want-DYNM=NONVIS FRUST
 ‘I’d like to take a bath...(in vain).’ (I won’t because it is too cold) (cv)

- (43) *tih-ǎn* *ʔǎh* *key-tuk-ucáp* *yǎh-ǎh*
 3sg-OBJ 1sg see-want-INTS1 FRUST-DECL
 ‘I’d really like to see him (in vain).’ (because he is not able to come) (cv)

Used in a negative predicate, *yǎh* indicates that a negative event has impeded a desired outcome or situation (i.e., ‘did not do (verb), to our disappointment’), as in (44). As discussed above (§14.2.2), the same construction can indicate that a negative event has been narrowly averted (i.e., ‘almost did not do Verb’); these interpretations are dependent on context.

- (44) *núp = b'ay katánya-át = ?ýy = ?ih ?in-ăn hűt*
 this=AGAIN Castanha-OBL=who=MSC 1pl-OBJ tobacco

w'ob-nih yǎ́h = nih tí
 set-NEG FRUST=EMPH.CO EMPH.DEP

‘As for this one from the Rio Castanha, (he) doesn’t set any tobacco out for us’ (as a contribution to the drinking party). (sp)

Frustrative *yǎ́h* is common in exclamations of doubt (often phrased as exclamatory/rhetorical questions), in which it expresses uncertainty about the outcome of the event in question – usually vis-à-vis the intentions or hopes of the speaker – as opposed to the actual failure of the event or its goal (examples 45–49). Note that *yǎ́h* can encliticize to interrogative pronominal forms such as *hĩcó?* ‘where’ and *hĩn'ih* ‘what’ and can occur more than once in the clause (45, 47).

- (45) *hĩ-có? yǎ́h tih ham-yǎ́h-ǎ? tí*
 Q-LOC FRUST 3sg go-FRUST-INT EMPH.INT
 ‘Where could he have gone to (he was just here)?’ (txt)

- (46) *hĩ-nih-ĩy yǎ́h tih tí?! dɔ?key yǎ́h tih tí?!*
 Q-be.like-DYNMFRUST3sg EMPH.INT right FRUST 3sg EMPH.INT
 ‘How can it be? Wasn’t it right?!’ (H-CO.1)

- (47) *hĩ-n'ih bíg yǎ́h j'áh yǎ?*
 Q-NMZ HAB FRUST DST.CNTR mom

...kədcak-wog bíg yǎ́h-ǎw-ah yǎ?!
 pass.climb-EMPH1 HAB FRUST-FLR-FOC TAG1

‘Why in the world does Mom always climb up there (when she comes back from the roça)?’ (txt)

- (48) *?amih hǒp d'óh-ów-ay yǎ́h tí!*
 2sg.POSS fish rot-FLR-INCH FRUST EMPH.DEP
 ‘Your fish is probably already spoiling!’ (txt)

- (49) *?in-ĩp yĩ-n'ih = n'ăn hipāh-nih yǎ́h tí!*
 1pl-DEP that-NMZ=PL.OBJ know-NEG FRUST EMPH.DEP
 ‘We (humans) wouldn’t know about these things!’ (txt)

As noted above (§14.2), one of the most common uses of the Frustrative is in combination with the Counterfactual marker *-tǎʔ-*, especially in conditional constructions regarding events that did not or definitely will not occur (examples 50–51). This use is clearly compatible with the ‘in vain’ function of the Frustrative; because the event itself was averted or unrealized, so was any outcome from it that might have been anticipated.

- (50) “*níŋ nɔh-túʔ!*” *nó-ǎy* *yǎ́h = mah*; *ʔin*
 2pl fall-immersE.IMP say-DYNM FRUST=REP 1pl

nɔh-túʔ-tǎn, *ʔin = mah tēghǎ = d’əh* *ni-tǎʔ-yǎ́h-ǎh*
 fall-immersE-COND 1pl=REP Non.Indian=PL be-CNTRFCT-FRUST-DECL
 ‘“You all jump in!” he said (in vain); had we jumped in, we would have been Non-Indian people, it’s said.’ (txt)

- (51) *tih ye-tǎʔ-ǎy* *yǎ́h!*
 3sg enter-CNTRFCT-DYNM FRUST
 ‘It (the ball) almost went in (to the goal)!’ (cv)

Occasionally, a speaker may even leave out Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-* and use only *yǎ́h* to indicate an attempted or desired event that fails to occur (not the usual function of the Frustrative):

- (52) *tih d’óʔ-óy* *yǎ́h = mah yúp*, *tǎʔǎy-ǎw-ǎp*
 3sg take-DYNM FRUST=REP that.ITG woman-FLR-DEP
 ‘She would have taken him (as her husband), the woman.’ (txt)

Example (53) amply illustrates the related (but usually distinct) uses of Frustrative *yǎ́h* and Counterfactual *-tǎʔ-*. This passage comes from a text describing the creation of humans by Bone-Son, the Hup creator or culture hero. Bone-Son tries out and discards various physical attributes in his creation efforts, each of which would have been a human characteristic had he decided to keep them.

- (53) *yúw-ay = mah*, *tih = wəd* *biʔ-yǎ́h-ay-áh*, *wəd-nów*
 that.ITG-INCH=REP 3sg=RESP work-FRUST-INCH-DECL food-crop
 ‘Thus it was, that he did (in vain); he put a

tih w’ob-yǎ́h-mah-áh, *d’oʔ-yíʔ-íy = mah*, *kɔn-níh = mah*.
 3sg set-FRUST-REP-DECL take-TEL-DYNM=REP like-NEG=REP
 bird’s crop (on the humans, in vain), then he took it off, he didn’t like it.

wæd-nów' *paw'-pog-tǎʔ-ǎy = mah* *ʔin-ǎh.*
 food-crop swell-EMPH1-CNTRFCT-DYNM=REP 1pl-DECL
 We would have had a bulging bird's crop.

d'úb = mah tih d'oʔ-g'et-yǎh-ǎh, *d'ub-ni-tǎʔ-ǎy*
 tail=REP 3sg take-stand-FRUST-DECL tail-be-CNTRFCT-DYNM
 Then he stuck a tail on (in vain); we would have had a tail;

yǎh = mah, *ʔin-ǎh,* *kɔn-nih = mah,* *d'oʔ-yiʔ-iy = mah.*
 FRUST=REP 1pl-DECL like-NEG=REP take-TEL-DYNM=REP
 but he didn't like it and took it off.' (txt)

A final verbal use of Frustrative *yǎh* is in the idiomatic expression of regretted failure, *nó-cud-yǎh-ǎh* 'should, should have' (examples 54–55). This is a frozen, idiosyncratic construction,¹⁶⁵ which attaches as a suffix-like unit to the preceding verb form (as evidenced by the verb stem's lack of primary stress, lack of its own Boundary Suffix, and the inability of a subject to come between the two). A first person subject is ungrammatical with this expression, and the final Declarative marker cannot be replaced by the Dynamic suffix or other inflectional form.

(54) *ʔapíd-yiʔ tih d'oʔ-cɔp-yiʔ-nó-cud-yǎh-ǎh*
 immediate-TEL 3sg take-go.from.river-TEL-say-be.inside-FRUST-DECL
 'He should have brought it up right away.' (cv)

(55) *ʔam pæ-nó-cud-yǎh-ǎh*
 2sg go.upriver-say-be.inside-FRUST-DECL
 'You should have gone upriver.' (el)

Like certain other verbal formatives (but by no means all), the Frustrative can attach directly to predicate nominals without a copula verb (cf. §17.3.4). As such, it attaches to the entire predicate nominal phrase as an enclitic. Its frustrative function here is similar to its function with verbal predicates; for example, (56) was uttered in joking reference to a piece of my hair, and (57) comes from a story in which a man fishing with a spirit companion finds that the spirit's

¹⁶⁵ This form probably comes from the idiomatic expression *nɔ-cud-* 'advise, persuade'. The most likely identity of the form *cud* here appears to be the verb 'be inside', rather than the (formally identical) Inferred evidential.

‘fish’ (which the man is expected to catch) appear to humans as jaguars – making them quite difficult to pull in, string up, and carry home.

- (56) [hōp tǎh yǒ pay-nǐh mún] **yǎh** yúw-úh
 fish small dangle bad-NEG INTS2 FRUST that.ITG-DECL
 ‘It would make a not-bad minnow-fishing-line (in vain).’ (cv)
- (57) yi-d’ǎh [yǎ?ám = d’ǎh] **yǎh** = mah ?ín-ǎn-ǎw-ǎh !
 that.ITG-PL jaguar=PL FRUST=REP 1pl-OBJ-FLR-DECL
 ‘They are jaguars for us (humans)!’ (but traíra fish for spirits) (txt)

In (58), it occurs with an adverbial predicate:

- (58) [yít = yi?] **yǎh** yúw-up tí
 thus=TEL FRUST that.ITG-DEP EMPH.DEP
 ‘It should/could be like this (but generally isn’t).’ (sp)

In example (59), the speaker uses the Frustrative and the Perfective to mark the name of a dead person, indicating – as does the past tense of the English translation (‘that *was* her name’) – that the link between the actual person and the use of the name has been severed by her death (even though, of course, the name can still be applied to the memory of the person). Because the use of the Frustrative in general implies that the event is contrary to expectation or desire (of the speaker or actor), it also functions here to convey a sense of the speaker’s sorrow over her mother’s death.

- (59) nǐ ?ín tǒhǒ-yí?-íh...
 1sg.POSS mother finish-TEL-DECL
- yowǎna-?é? **yǎh** = mah yúw-úh, tinǐh hǎt-ǎh
 Joanna-PERF FRUST=REP that.ITG-DECL 3sg.POSS name-DECL
 ‘My mother died... she was called Joanna, (that was) her name.’ (txt)

In addition to its use as a Frustrative marker, the form **yǎh** also occurs independently as a verb root (as do many other bound verbal formatives in Hup), meaning ‘order, compel, request’, as in (60) (here in its imperative form):

- (60) *kayak dëh ʔəg-yǽh yú-wəd-ǎn;*
 manioc water drink-request.IMP that.ITG-old.man-OBJ

ków yoʔ-wəd-yǽh, yú-wəd-ǎn
 pimenta dip-eat-request.IMP that.ITG-OBJ
 ‘Tell that old fellow to drink manicuera; tell that old fellow to dip out and eat pepper-broth.’ (cv)

The verbal and Frustrative uses of *yǽh* can co-occur in the same verbal construction, illustrating that they are functionally and (at least in this context) formally distinct:

- (61) *deh-cá-y-ǎn tih hop-yǽh-ǎh,*
 water-beetle-OBJ 3sg get.wet-request-DECL

hop-yǽh-ǎy yǽh = mah
 get.wet-request-DYNM FRUST=REP
 ‘He sent the water-beetle into the water, sent (him) into the water in vain.’ (txt)

- (62) *ʔín-ǎn b’íyiʔ tih d’ob-yǽh-cud-yǽh-ǎh*
 1pl.OBJ only 3sg go.to.river-request-INFR-FRUST-DECL
 ‘He told only us to come down (in vain – others came as well).’ (txt)

Historical note

Despite their synchronic independence from each other, the verb root *yǽh* ‘order, compel, request’ probably represents the historical source of the Frustrative morpheme, which would have developed from the compound-final verb root *yǽh-* via a process of grammaticalization (cf. §9.4.3 and §3.5). The mechanisms that probably allowed this transition from compound-internal verb root to peripheral formative are discussed in §3.5 and §3.7, and the current fluid identity of *yǽh* provides a context in which the two constructions (*yǽh-* as verb root and *yǽh* as Frustrative marker) are still formally identical. While the semantic link between the two is not immediately obvious, it arguably lies in the fact that speakers are much more likely to bother with explicitly *stating* that they have ordered or requested someone to do something if that person has not carried out the request. That is, in stating ‘I compel him’ or ‘I requested this to

be done', the speaker is usually implying some degree of frustration that the action has not yet been carried out.

14.5. Cooperative *-nǎŋ*

The verbal Boundary Suffix *-nǎŋ* conveys a sense of cooperation. In its most frequent function, *-nǎŋ* creates a type of hortative construction, which indicates that agents should carry out an activity *in cooperation*, involving a shared goal or object. As such, it usually occurs with a first person plural subject (which may be dropped, as in 64). The Cooperative construction is illustrated in (63–65):

- (63) *b'õy ʔin kək-ʔay-nǎŋ*
 traira.fish 1pl pull-VENT-COOP
 'Let's go fish for traira fish (together).' (txt)
- (64) *hám-áy, y'æʔ-ʔay-nǎŋ*
 go-INCH.IMP defecate-VENT-COOP
 'Come on, let's go defecate (together).' (grandmother to child) (cv)
- (65) *bodáca d'oʔ-ʔáy hám, ʔin wæd-nǎŋ !*
 cookies take-VENT.IMP go.IMP 1pl eat-COOP
 'Go get some cookies, we'll eat them (together)!' (cv)

This hortative use of Cooperative *-nǎŋ* is similar to that of the inclusive first person plural future construction with Declarative *-Vh* (see §13.3), in which a sense of immediacy may be signaled by the Venitive and Perfective Aspect markers (example 66a). However, *-nǎŋ* places more focus on the *cooperative* interaction among the participants than does the Hortative Declarative construction, which simply entails the joint performance of the activity (66b).

- (66) a) *hám-áy, ʔin key-ʔay-ʔě-h !*
 go-INCH.IMP 1pl see-VENT-PERF-DECL
 'Come on, let's both go see!'
- b) *hám-áy, ʔin key-nǎŋ !*
 go-INCH.IMP 1pl see-COOP
 'Come on, let's go see together!' (cv)

Cooperative *-nǎŋ* also occurs with other persons than the first person plural, although this is considerably less common. In these cases, *-nǎŋ* often signals the centrality of an *object* to the cooperative activity to be carried out. This object must be topical to the discourse, but need not be explicitly stated, as example (67a) illustrates. If there is no common object involved, the lexical form *ʔæyǎt-yiʔ* ‘together’ is preferred, and the verb does not take *-nǎŋ* (example 67b).

- (67) a) *dóʔ=d’əh muhǔʔ-nǎŋ*
 child=PL play-COOP
 ‘The children will play (with it).’ (i.e., together with a shared object such as a ball) (el)

- b) *ʔæyǎt-yiʔ dóʔ=d’əh muhǔʔ-té-h*
 together-TEL child=PL play-FUT-DECL
 ‘The children will play together.’ (el)

Use of *-nǎŋ* with a singular subject is also possible. In these cases, the focus is often on a cooperative or solicitous activity, such as the speaker’s offer to delouse the addressee in (68):

- (68) *nǎm ʔám-ǎn ʔǎh key-nǎŋ*
 lice 2sg-OBJ 1sg see-COOP
 ‘How about I check you for lice.’ (txt)

In addition to the focus on a cooperative activity linking participants, use of *-nǎŋ* in singular-subject clauses – as in those with plural subjects like (67a) above – often highlights the role of some object that is required for the activity (i.e., *with* which the activity must be performed):

- (69) *ʔamǎh hǎhtég ʔǎn way-ʔéʔ, hǎp ʔǎh kək-ʔay-nǎŋ*
 2sg.POSS canoe 1sg.OBJ go.out-PERF.IMP fish 1sg pull-VENT-COOP
 ‘Lend me your canoe, I’ll go fishing (with it).’ (i.e., ‘it will allow me to fish’) (el)

- (70) “*ʔǎn nǎŋ d’oʔ-nǎn, máh!*” *nó-ǎy, “ʔǎh ʔəg-nǎŋ !”*
 1sg.OBJ 2pl take-come.IMP younger.sister say-DYNM 1sg drink-COOP
 ‘Bring me some, sister!’ (I) said, ‘I’ll drink some!’ (cv)

- (71) *tih yǒh d'óʔ-op yǎ́h =mah tih ham-yǎ́h-ǎ́h,*
 3sg medicine get-DEP FRUST=REP 3sg go-FRUST-DECL

tāʔǎ́y =n'ǎn tih yǒh-ni-nǎ́h

woman=PL.OBJ 3sg medicine-be-COOP

'He went to get medicine (in vain); he would medicate/enchant the women (with it).' (txt)

In addition to its use with both singular and plural forms of first and third person subjects, Cooperative *-nǎ́h* may be used with a singular second person subject:

- (72) *ʔám ʔǒh-nǎ́h*

2sg sleep-COOP

'You can sleep with it.' (handing someone a hammock) (el)

However, the use of the *-nǎ́h* verbal marker is ungrammatical with the second person plural pronoun, creating a gap in the paradigm. The only readily apparent motivation for this is that the second person plural pronoun *nǎ́h* is essentially identical in form to the Cooperative suffix. Their incompatibility may be a clue to a diachronic relationship between these two forms; alternatively, it could possibly be motivated by a desire to avoid repetitive forms, especially since pronominal *nǎ́h* is very common in Hup discourse.

The form *nǎ́h* plays another role in Hup grammar, in addition to its use as second person plural pronoun and verbal suffix. It acts as a verb root relating to a personal association between human participants, meaning roughly 'expect someone, await someone's arrival', as in (73):

- (73) *cǎp = ʔih-ǎn tih nǎ́h-ǎ́p tíh !*

other=MSC-OBJ 3sg expect.someone-DEP EMPH2

'He was expecting a different person!' (txt)

It frequently occurs together with the frustrative marker in the expression *nǎ́h-yǎ́h-ǎ́h* 'hope for, expect someone (in vain)', typically used in situations where the speaker had thought someone was coming but was mistaken. People in the village reportedly said (74) when they were expecting me and heard another boat pass by on the river.

- (74) *patí-ǎn páh ʔin nǎ́h-yǎ́h-ǎ́h*

Pattie-OBJ PRX.CNTR 1pl nǎ́h-FRUST-DECL

'We thought/hoped it was Pattie!' (ru)

The verb *nɨŋ-* also appears in the form *hup-hi-nɨŋ-* ‘await someone’s expected arrival’, which involves the Reflexive form *hup-* together with the Factitive *hi-* (example 75) – and is semantically quite similar to the other uses of *nɨŋ-*.

- (75) *tɨh-ǎn = yɨ?* *páh* *?ǎh* ***hup-hi-nɨŋ-ɨy***
 3sg-OBJ=TEL PRX.CNTR 1sg RFLX-FACT-nɨŋ-DYNM
 ‘I’m waiting for him to arrive.’ (el)

The focus on interaction or association between two human participants conveyed by *nɨŋ-* as a verb is strikingly similar to the cooperative function of the *-nɨŋ* verbal suffix. Especially in light of the fact that many Hup grammatical particles have likely historical sources in compounded verb roots, a relationship between these two forms is quite plausible. Whether these forms are in fact related to each other or to the second person plural pronoun must remain a question for future investigation.

14.6. Apprehensive mood

The Apprehensive mood is used to deliver a warning to the addressee about a possible undesirable event. It is expressed as a main clause in which the predicate is the simple verb stem, free of the verbal Boundary Suffixes that are obligatory in all other moods except the imperative. In other words, the Apprehensive can be understood as represented by a zero morpheme (although this is not indicated in the gloss line in the examples here), ‘substituting’ for a concrete Boundary Suffix that would otherwise be present.

The Apprehensive construction is formally very similar to the basic imperative in Hup, which is likewise indicated by a bare verb stem lacking a Boundary Suffix (§17.5). Their primary difference is that all imperative forms receive an obligatory high tone (on the last syllable of the stem), whereas tone on Apprehensive roots varies (see discussion below). Further distinguishing features are the fact that the second person addressee in the Apprehensive mood is always explicitly stated (as either the subject or the object of the verb), whereas in the imperative a singular (although not a plural) second person subject is almost always dropped. Also, the subject of an apprehensive clause may be first, second, or third person, whereas the subject of an imperative can only be second person.

Functionally, as well as formally, the Apprehensive mood in Hup is probably best considered a sub-type of imperative. It is essentially an implied command; as in the examples below, an Apprehensive statement such as ‘you’ll

fall!' is typically an indirect speech act meaning 'stop doing that!' – but one that leaves the addressee room to make the decision for him/herself.

Examples of the Apprehensive mood are given below, including a reflexive verb form (example 79):

(76) *ʔam nɔh !*

2sg fall.APPR

'(Watch out,) you'll fall!' (cv)

(77) *ʔam tɔh !*

2sg break.APPR

'(Watch out,) you'll break (yourself)!' (cv)

(78) *ʔám-ǎn tih g'ɔç !*

2sg-OBJ 3sg bite.APPR

'(Watch out,) he'll bite you!' (cv)

(79) *náw=yiʔ dǐʔ mǐʔ bíʔ, ʔám hup = hɔk !*

good=TEL VDIM UNDER work.IMP 2sg RFLX=sawing.motion.APPR

'Go a bit more carefully on that last part; you'll cut yourself!' (cv)

A warning can be intended as a threat, as in example (80), in which a mother is telling her son to obey lest his father punish him. A threat is also the default interpretation when the subject is in the first person (example 81).

(80) *ʔám-ǎn cé mǎh ! d'oʔ-kədnǎn ! kow'-nínih-hə !*

2sg-OBJ Moises beat.APPR take-pass.come.IMP peel-NEG.IMP-TAG2

'Moisés will beat you! Bring it here! Don't peel it!' (cv)

(81) *ʔám-ǎn ʔǎh yɔmɔy yók tán-ǎh !*

2sg-OBJ 1sg anus stab.APPR FUT.CNTR-DECL

'I'll stab you in the anus!' (txt)

Note, however, that the Apprehensive mood is not the only strategy available for delivering a threat; future-tense declarative clauses are also an option:

(82) *ʔám-ǎn miníŋ=yiʔ ʔǎh mǎh-yiʔ-té-h !*

2sg-OBJ straight=TEL 1sg beat-TEL-FUT-DECL

'I'll kill you directly!' (txt)

While warning the addressee is by far the most common function of the Apprehensive mood, a speaker can also use an Apprehensive form to refer to a possible threat to his/her own safety:

- (83) *ʔǎn hid d'óʔ tán-ǎh*
 1sg.OBJ 3pl take.APPR FUT.CNTR-DECL
 'They (boys) would get me.' (girl explaining why she did not intend to visit another town) (cv)

Of Hup's several evidential specifications (see §14.9 below), only the Reportative is grammatical in apprehensive clauses:

- (84) *ʔám-ǎn tih mǎh = mah !*
 2sg-OBJ 3sg beat.APPR=REP
 'He'll beat you, it's said!' (el)

The Apprehensive mood can occur with compound verbal constructions, involving multiple roots, emphasis markers, and aspect-related Inner Suffixes.¹⁶⁶

- (85) *náw = yiʔ tok-póg = hə cóc,*
 good=TEL pound-EMPH1.IMP=TAG2 INTERJ
- ʔam tok-pəʔ-yæt-yiʔ = pǒg!*
 2sg pound-spill-lie-TEL.APPR=EMPH1
 'Pound (the coca) carefully, darn it! You'll spill it all out!' (cv)

In keeping with Hup's strategy of external possession (see §5.3.1) – by which human 'possessors' of body parts are preferred as the primary arguments of a clause, rather than the body part itself – the human 'possessor' may become the subject of an apprehensive clause. This is illustrated in example (86) (an admonition not to point at the rainbow, for fear that the malignant Rainbow Spirit might eat away one's finger), and it results in an interpretation akin to a passive. The body part is incorporated into the verbal construction.

¹⁶⁶ In an Apprehensive clause, stress may optionally apply equally to every syllable in the verb word.

- (86) *cob-níníh!* *níŋ* *d'apũh* *tśg* !
 point-NEG.IMP 2pl hand eat.away.APPR
 'Don't point! Your finger will get eaten away!' (cv)

One of the more intriguing aspects of the Apprehensive mood is the phonology of Apprehensive verb forms. As discussed above, both imperative and Apprehensive moods allow the verb stem to stand alone, without additional inflection; thus in the majority of cases the entire verb word is a single syllable, which receives its own primary stress. In the imperative mood, this is obligatorily realized as high tone (or its falling allophone), and in general vowel-final stems also take a (presumably epenthetic) final [h] in the imperative. For the Apprehensive forms, on the other hand, there is no final [h] on CV stems, and there is no single tonal value associated with this mode. Rather, the tone assignment varies from stem to stem. This does not appear to be either phonologically conditioned or random, but purely lexical; consultants are quite definite about which tone value is acceptable and which is not, even for elicited verbs that would be expected to occur extremely rarely – if ever – in the Apprehensive mode in actual discourse.

As discussed in §2.3.2.2 (see also §3.1), it is not yet completely clear what the underlying tonal assignment is for verbs in general in Hup. Most Hup verb roots do not appear to be contrastive for tone, and many verbal environments withhold primary stress from stems and assign it to suffixes, thereby creating a situation in which the Hup pitch-accent-based tone system cannot be realized on verb stems at all. However, the fact that verbs in apprehensive mood appear to have distinct tonal values suggests that Hup verbs in general actually do have underlying tones. This is supported by the fact that in the very few cases where there does appear to be a tonal contrast distinguishing verb roots, the contrast applies consistently in the Apprehensive mode:

- (87) *ʔám-ǎn* *tih* *túk* !
 2sg-OBJ 3sg want.APPR
 'He'll want/desire you!' (warning a girl to watch out for a man) (el)
- (88) *ʔám-ǎn* *tih* *tũk* !
 2sg-OBJ 3sg sting.APPR
 'It will sting you!' (warning someone to watch out for a tocandira ant)
 (el)

14.7. Jussive -ʔũh

Inflection of verbs with the Jussive suffix *-ʔũh* constitutes a type of imperative or exhortative strategy that is restricted to third person subjects (both singular and plural). The form *-ʔũh* is a Boundary Suffix, so it accordingly does not require following inflectional material. The following examples illustrate its use:

- (89) *hũh-way-nĩh-yi? nĩh, tĩh = hup tĩh way-ʔũh*
 carry-go.out-NEG-TEL be.IMP 3sg=RFLX 3sg go.out-JUS
 ‘Don’t carry him out (of the house); let him go out by himself.’ (cv)

- (90) *tĩh m’æ-ʔũh*
 3sg cool-JUS
 ‘Let it cool off’ (then I’ll drink the coffee). (cv)

- (91) *ʔã̃y = d’əh b’iyi? biʔ-ʔũh-ay, niŋ nó-ǎh*
 woman=PL only work-JUS-INCH 2pl say-DECL
 ‘Let the women work by themselves, you all say.’ (sp)

Hup’s Jussive construction also has a more clearly optative function (as opposed to an exhortative one), in that it may be used to express the speaker’s wishes or hopes in cases where “the state of affairs wished for is... outside the sphere of influence of the speaker” (Dobrushina et al. 2005):

- (92) *hid naw-ʔũh*
 3pl good-JUS
 ‘May they be well.’ (conventional expression for sending one’s good wishes via a traveler) (cv)

In a few cases, this optative use of the Jussive takes on an additional concessive or ‘noncurative’ function (cf. Dobrushina 2003), in that it expresses a lack of control or lack of concern on the part of the speaker, rather than an actual desire.¹⁶⁷ For example, (93) was reportedly uttered by a frustrated woman upon hearing that her husband had been dancing with other women at a drinking party:

¹⁶⁷ A similar connection between ‘noncurative’ and optative meanings is also attested in other languages, such as Russian (cf. Dobrushina 2003).

- (93) *tih yam-ʔũh*
 3sg dance-JUS
 ‘Let him dance!’ (ru)
- (94) *tih d’oj-ʔũh, mǔy mĩʔ ʔin-ĩh!*
 3sg rain-JUS house UNDER 1pl-DECL
 ‘Let it rain, we’re in (‘under’) a house!’ (ru)

As discussed in Chapter 11, *ʔũh* is a highly promiscuous form in Hup. In addition to its occurrence as a prefix indicating reciprocity or interactive engagement and as a free lexeme ‘sibling of opposite sex’ (§11.2), it has three distinct realizations in suffix or post-stem position. In addition to its Jussive function as a Boundary Suffix, it occurs as a verbal Inner Suffix to form an applicative construction (§11.3), and as a particle associating with both nouns and verbs to signal epistemic modality (§14.8 below). Jussive *-ʔũh* is formally and functionally distinct from these other post-stem realizations of *ʔũh*, but it is nevertheless mutually exclusive with both of them – the Jussive cannot occur with either the Applicative or the Epistemic Modality marker.

Historical note

The formal resemblance between the Hup Jussive and Applicative constructions is probably no accident (and likewise between these and the Epistemic particle; see below). It is very likely that the Jussive construction derives historically from the Applicative.

As noted above, both the Applicative and the Jussive markers are exclusively verbal suffixes, their main formal difference being that the Applicative is an Inner Suffix (requiring a following Boundary Suffix, usually either the Dynamic or Declarative suffixes), whereas the Jussive is itself a Boundary Suffix. However, the imperative form of the Applicative has exactly the same form as the Jussive construction – *ʔũh* receives primary stress, and is not followed by additional suffix material, as is typical of the imperative construction generally in Hup (see §17.5):

- (95) *ʔǎn tǝg hũh-ʔũh !*
 1sg.OBJ wood carry-APPL.IMP
 ‘Go carry some wood for me! (cv)

- (96) *ʔám cóʔ-óy ʔǎn wǔt-ʔǔh !*
 2sg LOC-DYNM 1sg.OBJ pull.out-APPL.IMP
 ‘You pull (my eyes) out for me!’ (txt)

In addition to their identical formal realizations, the Applicative imperative and the Jussive constructions occur in complementary distribution. The Applicative imperative is used exclusively with second person subjects,¹⁶⁸ while the Jussive is used exclusively with third person subjects. (Furthermore, the Applicative does not co-occur with the Jussive even in non-imperative form.) Otherwise, in their expression of a desired future event (the most common function of imperatives and jussives/optatives alike), the two are functionally very similar, as the following examples illustrate. The Jussive expression in (97) was uttered in reference to a piece of food that Fatima’s little brother had left uneaten, while the Applicative imperative in (98) is an expression of permission or intention that the addressee eat something that the speaker does not want.

- (97) *tán pátima wæd-ʔǔh*
 later Fatima eat-JUS
 ‘Later Fatima can eat (it).’ (cv)

- (98) *ʔám wæd-ʔǔh*
 2sg eat-APPL.IMP
 ‘You eat (it for me).’ (el)

A historical progression from Applicative imperative to Jussive would reflect a cross-linguistically common polyfunctionality between imperative and jussive or optative moods, such as that encountered in Nepali (Indo-European, Bickel 1999), Russian (Indo-European, Dobrushina 2003), Buriat (Altaic, Dobrushina 2003), etc. But why should this development in Hup have focused on the *applicative* construction, as opposed to any other imperative form? I argue that the choice of the applicative imperative is in fact motivated, and that this progression is indeed functionally plausible. Just as the applicative – by definition – adds a participant, which is typically a beneficiary (and, in Hup, is frequently not explicitly stated), so does an imperative construction also involve an

¹⁶⁸ A hortative-type applicative construction with the first person plural can be formed with the Declarative suffix (see §13.3), as in the following example:

ʔin wæd-ʔǔh-ǔh!

1pl eat-APPL-DECL

‘Let’s eat (his food)!’ (i.e., he has left it behind and apparently does not want it) (el)

implicit benefactive, since the speaker is necessarily a beneficiary of any carried-out command; minimally, his/her wish is gratified. Over time, the use of the Applicative marker in imperative constructions in Hup arguably became understood as a general feature of imperative use, relating specifically to the explicit expression of wishes or hopes. This led to the reanalysis of the imperative applicative construction as a general expression of the hopes and wishes of the speaker, vis-à-vis their potential realization by some other person. This may also explain why this form did not develop into a strategy for expressing a first-person hortative, since the speaker is relatively in control of a first-person situation. In cases where this other person was a third party, as opposed to an addressee, the imperative applicative became reinterpreted as a jussive or optative construction.

14.8. Epistemic modality *ʔũh*

The particle *ʔũh* functions as a marker of epistemic modality, and signals both possibility and probability. Formally, the only features distinguishing it from Applicative *-ʔũh-* and Jussive *-ʔũh* are its identity as a particle rather than a suffix, and its association with a wider range of clausal constituents. In particular, Epistemic *ʔũh* attaches to and has scope over an entire predicate, including predicate nominals as well as verbal predicates, whereas the Jussive and Applicative markers are strictly verbal. As noted above, the Epistemic and Jussive uses of *ʔũh* cannot co-occur.

The following examples illustrate the association of Epistemic *ʔũh* with a predicate nominal, indicating conjecture or possibility:

- (99) *hǎp yǎéʔ = d'əh ʔũh !*
 fish roast=PL EPIST
 'Maybe it's people cooking fish.' (discussing a smell) (cv)

- (100) *nĩŋ = tǎh = d'əh nĩh mǎy ʔũh yúw-úh !*
 2pl=offspring=PL POSS payment EPIST that-DECL
 'This must be in revenge for (my killing) your children!' (txt)

The particle *ʔũh* is common in rhetorical questions and equivocal statements. Examples (101–102) are additional cases of its use with predicate nominals, while in (103–105) it associates with verbal predicates:

(101) *ʔũy cáp ʔũh ʔǎn hǒp kək-w'ob-pǎ-æ? páh ?*
 who INTS1 EPIST 1sg.OBJ fish pull-put-go.upstream-INT PRX.CNTR
 'Who could it be who is catching fish and setting them out for me?' (txt)

(102) *húp=mæh ʔũh núp=ti?*
 person=DIM EPIST this=EMPH.TAG
 'Could this be a little person?' (txt)

(103) *hí nɔ-wó-y ʔũh=mah j'ǎh yúw-úh*
 Q say-EMPH-DYNM EPIST=REP DST.CNTR that-DECL
 'How the heck does this (story) go here...' (txt)

(104) *hipǎh-ǎy ʔũh ʔám hó?, nuh-kəbǎk=d'əh ?*
 know-DYNM EPIST 2sg TAG2 head-break=PL
 'You must know (them), right, sauva (lit. head-breaker) ants?' (txt)

(105) *ham-tég ʔǎh tí, ʔó ham-níh-ay ʔũh*
 go-FUT 1sg EMPH.INT or go-NEG-INCH EPIST

ʔǎh ni-tég=ti?

1sg be-FUT=EMPH.TAG

'Maybe I'll go, or maybe I shouldn't.' (deciding) (el)

Epistemic *ʔũh* is an obligatory part of a very common formulaic emphatic or rhetorical construction that expresses doubt or conjecture. In this semi-idiomatic construction, *ʔũh* follows the predicate (whether nominal or verbal), while the clause-final (pronominal or demonstrative) subject takes the emphasis marker = *ʔĩh* (elsewhere 'masculine'; see §15.2.2):

(106) *húp=pog ʔũh tíh=ʔĩh !*
 person=EMPH1 EPIST 3sg=MSC
 'Could that be a person?!' (txt)

- (107) *d'oʔ-kənæn-kæm báʔ, nǎ ʔǔh yúp = ʔih,*
 take-quick.come-IMP2 PROTST 1sg.POSS EPIST that-MS

ʔǎh key-nǎh

1sg see-COOP

‘Bring it here quick, it might be mine, I’ll have a look.’ (when someone finds something) (el)

The epistemic use of *ʔǔh* has given rise to the form *ʔǔhníy* ‘maybe’, which probably derives from Epistemic *ʔǔh + ni-iy* (be-DYNAM). This derived form is typically used to mark epistemic modality (doubt or possibility) with verbal predicates, whereas *ʔǔh* by itself is more common with predicate nominals. Like other particles (including *ʔǔh*), *ʔǔhníy* is morphosyntactically bound to its host; it is unable to occur utterance-initially, although the preceding form may be as minimal as *hǎʔ* ‘yeah’ (example 110). Examples of the use of *ʔǔhníy* are given in (108–110).

- (108) *b'ɔkkáb = hin widnæn-tég ʔǔhníy*
 griddle=also arrive.come-FUT maybe
 ‘Griddles may also arrive.’ (sp)

- (109) “*táh-ǎn b'iyi? pay-nǎh mún tih bíʔ-íh,*” *nó-ǎy*
 3sg-OBJ only bad-NEG INTS2 3sg work-DECL say-DYNAM

ʔǔhníy ʔǎn, nǎh-íh

maybe 1sg.OBJ 2pl-DECL

‘“Only for him is she doing good things,” you all might be saying about me.’ (sp)

- (110) *hǎʔ ʔǔhníy*
 yes maybe
 ‘Yeah, maybe.’ (cv)

Another common form derived from Epistemic *ʔǔh* is the fused form = *cudʔǔh* [čũʔn'úh] ‘probably, apparently’, which involves the Inferred evidential *cud* (§14.9.3) plus *ʔǔh*. The co-occurrence of *ʔǔh* with the Nonvisual evidential *hǎ* (see §14.9.2) is also possible, but is much less common (and is not phonologically fused); see example (131) below. Other evidentials are not known to combine with Epistemic *ʔǔh* at all. The combination of the Epistemic modality marker and the Inferred evidential is used to express conjecture, espe-

cially where little observable evidence is available by which other observers could arrive at a similar conclusion:

- (111) *húp kəwəg = pog = cud?úh !*
 person eye=EMPH1=INFR.EPIST
 ‘It must have been a *person’s* eye (I saw)’ (txt)

- (112) *pěd d’ób-óy = cud?úh*
 Ped go.to.river-DYNM=INFR.EPIST
 ‘Ped has gone down to the river (apparently).’ (cv)

The fused form = *cud?úh* patterns much like Epistemic *?úh*; it commonly occurs with predicate nominals, and appears in the formulaic rhetorical *?úh...?ih* expression (example 113), and together with the *?úhníy* form (example 114).

- (113) *póg = cud?úh yúp = ?ih, děh = teg = ?ih*
 big=INFR.EPIST that=MSC water=tree=MSC
 ‘It was really big, that water-tree.’ (txt)

- (114) *wǎh = ?ih = cud?úhníy*
 River.Indian=MSC=INFR.maybe
 ‘I guess he was a River Indian.’ (txt)

Historical note

It is likely that the formal resemblance of all three suffixing or post-stem forms of *?úh* (Applicative, Jussive, and Epistemic modality markers) is due to historical polysemy, rather than chance homonymy. In fact, these three forms probably represent a grammaticalization chain, by which the Applicative developed into the Jussive (as argued in §14.7 above), and then the Jussive into the Epistemic modality marker.

The transition from Jussive to Epistemic marker in Hup is functionally plausible. The Jussive functions to express the speaker’s attitude toward a future event, and particularly his/her wishes and hopes regarding a probable outcome. This is essentially an expression of deontic modality, which necessarily highlights a sense of uncertainty vis-à-vis the anticipated event. Foregrounding this uncertainty has arguably allowed Jussive - *?úh* to be reanalyzed as a marker of epistemic modality. Moreover, the position of the Jussive as the medial link in the chain explains its inability to co-occur with either the Applicative or the Epistemic modality marker.

The stages of such a transition are well attested cross-linguistically. An association between an optative/noncurative function (like that of the Hup Jussive) and the expression of probability is found in numerous languages, such as Khakas (Turkic), Hindi, and Lavukaleve (Papuan) (cf. Dobrushina 2003). Similarly, a historic association between deontic and epistemic modality is also widely attested (cf. Palmer 2001: 87–89); compare the uses of *must* in English and its counterpart in other European languages (French *devoir*, etc.).

Formally, the transition from verbal suffix to predicative particle is also plausible for Hup, in light of the grammaticalization processes present in the language generally – although at face value an affix-to-clitic transition would appear typologically unlikely. In Hup, as the discussion in §3.7 illustrates (see also Epps 2007d), verb roots in compound-final position may take on auxiliary-like functions and grammaticalize into Inner Suffix forms, which come between verb stems and the obligatory Boundary Suffixes. From there, they may migrate out of the verb core to become peripheral formatives (enclitics and particles), a process that is represented and even facilitated by the general synchronic flexibility of the many fluid forms that can appear both inside and outside the verb core. These formatives can associate with non-verbal predicates as well. The diachronic transition experienced by these morphemes is schematized here:

V1 – V2 – Bdry → V1 – **Inner.suffix** – Bdry → V1 – Bdry = **Peripheral.form**

Finally, it is also probable that these post-stem realizations of *?ūh* are historically related not only to each other, but also to the Interactional prefix and the free lexeme ‘sibling of opposite sex’, as argued in §11.2.

14.9. Evidentiality

From a typological perspective, Hup has a remarkably complex system of evidentiality, with as many as five distinctions conveyed by four different grammatical markers. Evidentiality is here defined as a grammaticalized system for indicating the source of the information presented in a clause (cf. Aikhenvald 2003b); it is therefore understood as more than the capability – which is presumably common to all languages – to express information source by periphrastic means (cf. Chafe and Nichols 1986). It is not considered to be an expression of modality per se, since designation of information source may be (and often is) independent of speakers’ attitudes toward that information.

Hup formally marks evidential distinctions relating to information that is acquired nonvisually (but first-hand), by inference, and by report from another person. Visually acquired information can be understood to form a fourth evidential category, which is zero-marked and hence overlaps with the environ-

ments in which evidentiality is not specified at all. The Nonvisual, Inferred, and Reportative evidential markers are fluid morphemes that modify the entire predicate or clause; they appear most frequently as enclitics, but (like fluid morphemes generally; see §3.5) they appear in Inner Suffix position when the relevant Boundary Suffixes are present on the verb. Of these three evidential enclitics, the Nonvisual and Inferred markers represent a formal subsystem of their own in that they pattern in the same way, while the Reportative marker is distinct. In addition to these fluid forms, Hup has a second inferred evidential marker that occurs exclusively as a verbal Inner Suffix, and patterns quite differently from the other evidentials. These evidentials are summarized in Table 42:

Table 42. Evidentials in Hup

Default (includes visual)	Unmarked (-Ø)
Nonvisual	= <i>hɔ̃</i> / - <i>hɔ̃(h)</i> -
Inferred	= <i>cud</i> / - <i>cud</i> -
Reportative	= <i>mah</i> / - <i>mah</i> -
Inferred 2	- <i>ni</i> -

Important features of evidentiality in Hup include the fact that – unlike many other languages with systems of grammaticalized markers (including Hup’s neighbors Tukano and Tariana) – the specification of evidentiality is grammatically optional in Hup. Also, the information source encoded in Hup evidentials is understood as a rule to be that of the speaker, although in interrogative clauses it may be understood to be that of the addressee. Such skewed occurrence of evidential specifications with first-person referents is found in many evidential systems cross-linguistically (Curnow 2002).

The three fluid evidentials can occur in various clause types – declarative, interrogative, and exclamatory – and they occur independently of the time frame in which the event takes place (past, present, or future). However, there are some general restrictions on their distribution among clause types: only the Reportative evidential is grammatical in imperative clauses, and evidential markers do not occur at all in apprehensive or jussive/optative moods. Use of the additional inferred evidential is much more restricted.

This section introduces each of the Hup evidential specifications in turn, and discusses their functions, morphosyntactic patterning, and the possible etymological sources of their markers. It also suggests – particularly in the final ‘Comparative note’ – that neighboring Tukanoan languages have exerted a strong areal influence on the development of the Hup system (see Epps 2005a for further discussion).

14.9.1. Visual evidential ‘category’

Because evidential markers are to some degree optional in Hup even where they are appropriate, and because there are environments (such as apprehensive and jussive/optative moods) that seem to exclude the specification of evidentiality altogether, the lack of any evidential marker cannot easily be interpreted as signaling a distinct evidential ‘category’ of its own. Yet, to the extent that the expression of information source can be understood to conform to a coherent system in Hup, subject to pragmatic Gricean norms of truthfulness and informativeness, this absence of marking is to some degree consistent with a particular type of information: that which has been acquired visually by the speaker, or is generally considered common knowledge. Thus this kind of information can be understood to form a zero-marked core category of evidentiality, whereas in other cases the absence of marking may be due simply to the non-specification of evidentiality.

The use of minimal or zero marking to indicate visually acquired information is typical of evidential systems cross-linguistically. This follows from a common hierarchy of evidential specifications, by which visual perception takes precedence over other kinds of perception or inference – typically followed in the hierarchy by other types of first-hand perception (cf. Aikhenvald 2003a: 22), as is the case in Hup. In Hup, speech genres dedicated to visually acquired and/or common-knowledge information may be almost totally lacking in evidential marking.

Examples (115–116) illustrate Hup’s zero-coding of information that was experienced visually by the speaker:

- (115) *ʔok-níh key-ham-g’et-yíʔ-ay = Ø tíh = ʔá̃y-á̃h !*
 move-NEG see-go-stand-TEL-INCH=VISUAL 3sg=FEM-DECL
 ‘She was just standing there looking, without moving!’ (speaker witnessed event). (txt)

- (116) *manǵă híd-ǎn təw-níh = Ø káh*
 Margarita 3pl-OBJ scold-NEG=VISUAL ADVR
 ‘Margarita didn’t yell at (scold) them, actually.’ (speaker was there) (txt)

Clauses referring to generally known facts (relating to personal experience) are likewise understood to be zero-marked for evidentiality, as in example (117). These include descriptive discourse involving how some activity is typically carried out (assuming the speaker has participated in the activity him/herself; i.e., has witnessed it visually), as in (118), a description of how to prepare curare.

(117) *tĩhĩy cǎh = deh tĩh ham-kamí = b'ay = Ø,*
 snake flood=rain 3sg go-moment.of=again=VISUAL

núp j'ah có? = b'ay tĩhĩy = d'əh ní-ĩy = b'ay = Ø
 this earth LOC=again snake=PL exist-DYNM=again=VISUAL
 'When the Snake-Rain (and its constellation) comes around, here on earth
 there are (many) snakes.' (txt)

(118) *hĩ hid hǎw-Ø-ǎh; nút hǎw-yó? ...*
 only 3pl scrape-VISUAL-DECL here scrape-SEQ

hid cǎn' bi?-d'ó?-Ø-óh
 3pl leaf-cone make-take-VISUAL-DECL
 They just scrape it; having scraped this much, they make a leaf-cone (to
 hold it).' (txt)

Similarly, narratives of personal experience tend to be zero-marked for evidentiality:

(119) *?ǎh = tǎh?íp ?ǎn tĩh d'o?-?ũh-Ø-ũh, yěw*
 1sg=child.father 1sg.OBJ 3sg take-APPL-VISUAL-DECL armadillo
 'My husband used to catch armadillos for me.' (txt)

In other types of Hup discourse, however, the absence of an overt evidential marker is probably best understood as a lack of any evidentiality specification at all. The expression of evidentiality in Hup is guided more by Gricean-type pragmatic principles of informativeness rather than by any grammatical rule. Thus evidential markers are sometimes left off in situations where the information source is already made obvious by the discourse context or is otherwise seen as relatively non-salient. For example, the Reportative marker typically does not appear on *every* clause in a narrative (although it is present on most), and the evidential *hǎ(h)* (which marks nonvisual, first-hand information) is common but not obligatory in expressions of personal thought processes and emotions. Compare (120a) (unmarked) and (b) (marked):

(120) a) *ʔǎh-ǎp nĩŋ-ǎn = hin, yĩ-n 'ih ʔid-hipǎh-nĩh...*
 1sg-DEP 2pl-OBJ=also that.ITG-NMZ speak-know-NEG

nĩŋ-ǎn yĩ-n 'ih ʔid-tuk-nĩh ʔǎh-ǎh
 2pl-OBJ that.ITG-NMZ speak-want-NEG 1sg-DECL
 'As for me, I don't know how to say this to you all...
 I don't want to say this to you all.' (sp)

b) *ʔǎh hipǎh-nĩh = hõ*
 1sg know-NEG=NONVIS
 'I don't know.' (cv)

The degree to which the absence of evidential marking should be considered a distinct 'visual' category may be partially a matter of perspective. As argued below ('Comparative note') and in Epps (2005a), Hup has developed its evidential system to conform to a Tukanoan model (i.e., from a one-marker system specifying only reported information to a four-marker system specifying reported, nonvisual, and two types of inferred information). Three evidential markers have thus emerged through a multi-stage process of grammaticalization. These markers (as their putative sources suggest) underwent semantic extension during their development into evidentials, until they had expanded to cover large domains of meaning (e.g., extension from 'heard' information to all nonvisually acquired information, see §14.9.2 below). Accordingly, the unmarked domain of evidentiality in Hup shrank as the marked domains expanded. From a language-internal point of view, the absence of evidential marking is therefore not a coherent category in its own right, but simply what is left of the original domain of Hup grammar that had no specification for evidentiality at all; this interpretation is further supported by the (grammatical) optionality of evidential-marking generally in Hup. On the other hand, this unspecified domain has gradually been shrinking down to fit a distinct model category, the 'visual' evidential specification of Tukanoan. Thus from the language-external or areal point of view, the 'visual' core of the unmarked domain in Hup has an underlying categorial reality of its own. Because both of these perspectives were available to Hup speakers as the language changed – and their general bilingualism in Tukano ensured the everyday reality of both systems within the Hup speech community – the unmarked evidential specification in Hup is arguably understood by speakers as having a pragmatic identity *both* as a visual category and as an absence of evidentiality, depending primarily on the context. However, because they are formally indistinguishable, I will henceforth treat the default/visual evidential category as formally unmarked.

14.9.2. Nonvisual evidential *h̃(h)*

Hup marks information that is acquired first-hand but nonvisually (i.e., sensorily) with the form *h̃* (or its variant *h̃h*, which occurs only when the evidential appears in Inner Suffix position and is followed by a consonant-initial suffix). The most common source for the information is hearing, but can also be smell, taste, or touch:¹⁶⁹

(121) *náciya pæ-cíw-íy = h̃*
 boat go.upriver-COMPL-DYNM=NONVIS
 ‘The boat already went upriver.’ (speaker heard but did not see it) (cv)

(122) *pǎj = h̃*
 umari=NONVIS
 ‘(It’s) umari fruit.’ (smelling mess on baby’s foot) (cv)

(123) *g’əh nǎw = h̃ !*
 sweet good=NONVIS
 ‘(It’s) nice and sweet!’ (tasting something) (cv)

(124) *húʔ = d’əh ní-ícáp = h̃*
 pium=PL exist-INTS1=NONVIS
 ‘There are a lot of piums (small biting insects)!’ (feeling their bites) (cv)

The Nonvisual evidential is also used to express one’s own personal state. This includes both physical sensation – sickness, a heavy burden, heat or cold, etc. (examples 125–126) – and mental states such as emotion and desire (examples 127–128).

(125) *ʔǎh péʔ-éy = h̃*
 1sg sick-DYNM=NONVIS
 ‘I’m sick.’ (cv)

¹⁶⁹ Such an extension from the purely auditory domain to include non-auditory functions such as smell, touch, and thought is paralleled elsewhere in Hup (as in other languages, cf. Viberg 1984); in particular, the verb *wiʔ-* is used to express both ‘hear’ and ‘understand’, and together with the incorporated noun ‘smell’ forms the compound *cíh-wiʔ-* (smell-hear) ‘smell’.

- (126) *g'i-níh = hǫ* *yúw-úh*
 hot-NEG=NONVIS that.ITG-DECL
 'It's not hot.' (cv)
- (127) *cadaka? yám ?āh wí?-tú-y = hǫ*
 chicken song 1sg hear-want-DYNM=NONVIS
 'I'd like to hear the "Chicken Song".' (cv)
- (128) *tuk-níh = hǫ*
 want-NEG=NONVIS
 '(I) don't want to.' (cv)

The Nonvisual evidential in Hup can also be used to emphasize a personal opinion or thought, as in example (129), and can even serve to moderate a statement to make it more polite; for example, (130) was uttered by someone who had requested some cooking oil from me and was not satisfied with the amount he was given, but hesitated to ask directly for more. These are among the most creative and pragmatically optional extensions of the Nonvisual evidential's use, and would seem to reflect an understanding or folk belief that visually acquired information is the most definite or objective type, while non-visually acquired information is less objective and can therefore be expressed less directly.¹⁷⁰

- (129) *j'ǔb tóg = d'əh n'ǔh wídb'áy-áy = hǫ* *híd = b'ay*
 J'ub daughter=PL CNTR arrive.return-DYNM=NONVIS 3pl=AGAIN
 'I'm thinking of J'ub's daughters who left and never came back.' (cv)
- (130) *cípmæh = hǫ*
 little=NONVIS
 '(It) seems very little.' (cv)

This expression of personal opinion with Nonvisual *hǫ(h)* can be further moderated with the addition of the Epistemic modality particle, to express uncertainty:

- (131) *tíh-íy = hǫ* *?ǔh tíh = ?íh*
 lie-DYNM=NONVIS EPIST 3sg=MSC
 'He's probably a liar, I think.' (ru)

¹⁷⁰ Thanks to Orin Gensler for suggesting this interpretation.

Use of the Nonvisual evidential is largely limited to sensations that are experienced by the speaker. However, it can also reference those experienced by the addressee when used in interrogative clauses, as in example (132). Otherwise, non-first-person expressions of personal states usually require a Reportative marker or Epistemic modality marker (which often co-occurs with the Inferred evidential *cud*).

- (132) *yít-i? níŋ hipāh-nih-h̄h̄-ḥ̄?*
 thus-INT 2pl know-NEG-NONVIS-INT
 ‘Don’t you all know that it is thus?’ (sp)

The Nonvisual evidential cannot occur in imperative clauses, but it is grammatical in interrogative (132) and negative clauses (128 above), as well as in exclamatory clauses:

- (133) *g’í-icáp = h̄h̄ !*
 hot-INTS1=NONVIS
 ‘It’s really hot!’ (cv)

As the examples in this section illustrate, the Nonvisual marker *h̄h̄(h)* usually occurs as an enclitic, following a verbal, nominal, or adjectival predicate. As such, it typically follows all other enclitics, and lacks the final consonant:

- (134) a) *?āh tút-úy = b’ay = h̄h̄*
 1sg cold-DYNM=AGAIN=NONVIS
 ‘I’m cold again’ (cv)
- b) **?āh tút-úy = h̄h̄ = b’ay*
 1sg cold-DYNM=NONVIS=AGAIN

As a fluid morpheme, however, *h̄h̄(h)* also occurs in Inner Suffix position, most frequently followed by the Declarative Boundary Suffix (135–136), but also by forms such as the Dependent marker *-Vp*, the Interrogative *-V?*, or the Directional oblique marker *-an* in an adverbial clause relating to location (example 137–138 below). It may also take another Inner Suffix formative in between, as in (136); the absence of a following vowel-initial suffix results in the non-reduced variant *-h̄h̄h-*.

- (135) *ʔám = báb' = d'əh b'ʔyiʔ tɔhɔ-tuk-hɔ́-h*
 2sg=sibling=PL only finish-want-NONVIS-DECL
 'Your relatives will soon all die, I feel.' (txt)
- (136) *yúp hũyʔah ʔǎn yú-wəd yĩ*
 that.ITG after 1sg.OBJ that.ITG-old.man that.ITG
- nɔ-hɔ́h-b'ay-áh*
 say-NONVIS-AGAIN-DECL
 'After this, that (respected) one said to me (I heard)...' (sp)
- (137) *ʔicána má-át ni-hɔ́-ɔ́p = ʔih*
 Içana river-OBL be-NONVIS-DEP=MSC
 'The person that I believe is living on the river Içana.' (txt)

Historical note

The most likely source candidate for the Nonvisual evidential marker is the verb root *hɔ́h-* 'produce sound'. The grammaticalization of verb root to enclitic probably came about via verb compounding, in which the final verb of the compound lost its final tense-aspect-mode suffix morphology and subsequently took on clitic status. Aikhenvald (2002a: 127) proposes a similar auditory source (from a compounded verb root 'hear, perceive') for the nonvisual marker in Tariana, and observes that the grammaticalization of a compounded verb is a typical process among Eastern Tukanoan languages – as it seems to be in Hup (see §9.4.3).

As outlined in detail in §3.7, the first stage of this transition probably involved use of the verb *hɔ́h-* 'produce sound' as a compound-final form meaning 'do (verb) and produce noise', which would have developed the more modal meaning, 'produce noise in doing (verb)'. Through frequent use, this compound-final verb would have taken on an increasingly secondary status to the preceding stem until it had become an auxiliary, losing in the process its final *-h* when directly followed by a vowel-initial suffix (*hɔ́h* > *hɔ́*). As discussed in §3.5–3.7, such a root-to-auxiliary transition accompanied by phonological reduction has numerous parallels elsewhere in Hup.

At this stage in its existence, the verb root 'produce sound' would have had two distinct realizations – one primarily lexical (as an independent verb root), and the other primarily grammatical (as a evidential-like formative). However, these would have occurred in formally identical constructions – i.e., as the final

root in a verb compound. In contexts where the evidential still occurs in Inner Suffix position, such ambiguity may remain:

- (138) *himǔn = hɔb* *d'ɔʔ-d'əh-ʔáy* *hám,*
 paxiuba.tree=hollow take-send-VENT.IMP go.IMP

yúp nɔh-kəd-hi-hǔ-ǎn

that fall-pass-descend-NONVIS-OBJ

'Go fetch a paxiuba-tree-hollow, that one that I heard fall / that one that fell, making noise.' (txt)

Probably via its extension to non-verbal predicates (see §3.7), the more grammaticalized form of the verb gained an identity as an enclitic. It could then reassociate with verbal constructions and, by analogy, maintain its new enclitic identity (as defined, with verbs, by placement of the Dynamic and other Boundary Suffixes) – the present-day more canonical state of affairs. By now, the verb root and the evidential formative have become formally distinct, although the evidential still appears as an Inner Suffix when the relevant Boundary Suffixes are present (Declarative, Interrogative, etc.), as illustrated in examples (135–138) above.

14.9.3. Inferred evidential *cud*

The Inferred marker *cud* patterns formally like the Nonvisual marker in that it can cliticize to predicates, which may be nouns or adjectives when no verb is present, and can also appear as an Inner Suffix. Hup speakers use *cud* to designate an inference, usually based on some form of tangible proof. This proof is often, although not necessarily, visual evidence. In (139), for example, the husband infers from a sore on his wife's head, as well as from her illness and her story of what had happened during the day, that the malignant forest being Curupira has sucked out her brain; similarly, the speaker of (140) makes the observation while watching the man's bumbling:

- (139) *ʔám-ǎn* *dohʔǎy* *ʔun'-yíʔ-íy = cud*
 2sg-OBJ Curupira suck-TEL-DYNM=INFR
 'Curupira has sucked you (your brain), apparently.' (txt)

- (140) *b'öy yo-hipãh-nih = cud ?ám-áh*
 traira.fish dangle-know-NEG=INFR 2sg-DECL
 'It looks like you don't know how to carry traira fish.' (txt)

However, the evidence for the inference need not always be tangible:

- (141) *?ãh himihin-yí?-íy = cud*
 1sg forget-TEL-DYNM=INFR
 'I forgot it, apparently.' (looking for something) (cv)
- (142) *j'ám ?ãh cõh-ní-íy = cud yãh, hipãh-nih = hõ*
 yesterday 1sg dream-be-DYNM=INFR FRUST know-NEG=NONVIS
 'I must have dreamed last night, I don't know.' (i.e., I can't remember the dreams) (ru)

The Inferred evidential is often used to comment on an observable state. For example, (143) was uttered by a child who was pointing out a folded-over corner of one of my notebook pages, and another child said (144) to tease me, comparing a cartoon picture of an ugly person in a book to my husband.

- (143) *núp páy = cud !*
 this bad=INFR
 'This looks bad/wrong!' (cv)
- (144) *núp = cud patí = tãh?íp*
 this=INFR Pattie=child.father
 'This one looks like Pattie's husband!' (or 'this one, apparently, is Pattie's husband!') (cv)

In a similar use, the Inferred evidential can express a creative visual comparison.¹⁷¹ For example, the speaker of (145) was observing a plastic hairbrush, whose shape reminded her of an alligator's backbone and ribs. While this statement is intended to mean '...but I know that it isn't', it could also mean '...it must be; I think that it actually is' – e.g., if one had found an unidentified bone in the forest. In other words, whether the item has or does not have the identity

¹⁷¹ A similar use of the Inferred evidential is reported for Hup's neighbor Tariana (Alexandra Aikhenvald, p.c.).

of the stated entity is irrelevant to the meaning of *cud* per se, and is only an implicature in the context.

- (145) *hǎt g'æg = cud*
 alligator bone=INFR
 'It looks like an alligator bone.' (cv)

In another related use, the Inferred evidential is common in describing others' internal states (while the Nonvisual is preferred for one's own internal state; see §14.9.2 above):

- (146) *?əg-na?-pó-y = cud* *?ám-ǎp !*
 drink-lose.consciousness-EMPH1-DYNNM=INFR 2sg-DEP
 'You're drunk!' (cv)

The Inferred evidential marker frequently co-occurs with the Epistemic modality marker *?ǔh* in the partially fused form =*cud?ǔh* (see §14.8); this form is preferred for expressions of inference or speculation when no evidence is on hand, or when the evidence is too vague to be very conclusive. However, the Epistemic modality particle *?ǔh* (often in its 'maybe' form *?ǔhníy*) can also be used by itself, without the Inferred evidential, in reference to situations where some inference is involved (see §14.8 above) – for example, when remarking on the weight of a burden we see someone else carrying. While evidential *cud* (or the fused form =*cud?ǔh*) is also an option in such cases, it is preferred over simple Epistemic *?ǔh* when the event is inferred by evidence alone, without any direct observation of its actual occurrence:

- (147) *yiwík = cud*
 heavy=INFR
 'It must have been heavy.' (coming across someone's bundle dropped beside the path) (el)

Like the Nonvisual evidential, the Inferred specification can occur in negative (140 above) and exclamatory clauses (146 above), but is ungrammatical in the imperative mood. It also occurs in interrogative clauses, where it typically encodes the information source of the addressee rather than the speaker:

- (148) *hĩ-n'ǔh mǔh = cud yúp ?*
 Q-NMZ turtle=INFR that.ITG
 'What kind of turtle do you suppose that is?' (cv)

Also like the Nonvisual evidential, the Inferred specification usually appears as an enclitic, but is a fluid morpheme and accordingly occurs in the Inner Suffix slot in the verb word when a relevant Boundary Suffix is present (example 149). This results in a blurred distinction between its identity as an evidential marker and as a verb root, since a verbal form *cud-* ('be inside') also exists as an independent root in Hup (see below).

- (149) *tin̩h* *yãʔambõʔ* *yúp* *náw* *yɔhɔy-cud-yǎh-ǎw-ǎh*
 3sg.POSS dog that.ITG good search-INFR-FRUST-FLR-DECL
 'His dog was searching hard, apparently.' (txt)

The Inferred evidential is not the only realization of a grammaticalized form *cud* in Hup. As an enclitic on nominal arguments of the clause, =*cud* has the distinct function of marking a referent as deceased (see §7.3). As discussed in the Historical note below, this use of =*cud* arguably is historically linked to the Inferred evidential. Such an extension of an evidential marker is functionally unusual and is extremely rare in the evidential systems of other languages around the world. However (as mentioned in §7.3), it is not without parallel in Amazonian languages: in Andoke (an unclassified Colombian language), the predicative reportative evidential marker *-há* acts as a deceased marker when it attaches to personal names (Jon Landaburu, p.c.; cf. Landaburu 1979: 119).

Historical note

The best source candidate for the Inferred evidential is clearly the verb root *cud-* 'be located inside something else'. This verb is used for animals in underground burrows or hollow trees, people in their clothes, objects inside boxes, bags, or folders, items wrapped up in something else, and so on. Crucially, it implies that the object in question is not available for direct inspection. From a formal perspective, the grammaticalization of this form from verb root to enclitic probably followed a path similar to that proposed above for the Nonvisual marker.

From a functional perspective, however, the conceptual link between the three manifestations of the form *cud* – the verb 'be inside', the Inferred evidential, and the Deceased marker – is not nearly as obvious as that between the verb 'produce sound' and the Nonvisual evidential. However, all three realizations of the form *cud*, in spite of their different functions, share a core semantic and pragmatic feature: they are all concerned with a referent that is believed to have an actual existence in some alternative 'location' – physical, temporal, or epistemological – but that is not currently accessible to direct experience. As a verb root, *cud-* 'be inside' expresses physical presence which (because it is typi-

typically not visible) is in a sense intangible, and thus not completely certain – this would be especially frequent, for example, in commentary about fleeing game animals (a common topic in Hup life), who typically take refuge in holes, hollow trees, or thick brush. It would be a relatively short conceptual step from this use to the Inferred marker, which denotes an alternative epistemological world, a possible state or event. Moreover, a locational source for an inferred evidential has a parallel in at least one other language, Wasco-Wishram (although in this case it relates to location generally, rather than to interiority; Silverstein 1978).

From this point, it is not a huge leap to the Deceased marker, which places its referent in an alternative temporal and metaphysical world (that of memory). These conceptual jumps are in keeping with the cross-linguistic tendency “to use vocabulary from the external (sociophysical) domain in speaking of the internal (emotional and psychological) domain,” including expressions of modality (Sweetser 1997: 49). Moreover, such equations of physical and metaphysical concepts occur elsewhere in Hup; for example, the form *mi?* can be used spatially to mean ‘under’, temporally as ‘at the same time as’, and modally as ‘in spite of’ (see §18.2.6.4), and the form *big* can be used as the adjective ‘old (thing)’ (i.e., thing that has been used or experienced over and over) and as a verbal marker of habitual aspect (§3.7 and §12.8).

14.9.4. Reportative evidential *mah*

Hup marks second-hand information that is reported (i.e., was originally uttered by another speaker) with the fluid form *mah*, which is usually realized as an enclitic:

(150) *tih ham-tég = mah*

3sg go-FUT=REP

‘He’ll go (he or another said so).’ (cv)

(151) *bǝg nɔ-níh = mah tih ye-yíʔ-ay-áh*

long.time say-NEG=REP 3sg enter-TEL-INCH-DECL

‘It was not very long before he came in, it’s said.’ (txt)

(152) *péʔ = mah ! péʔ, cɔ-ɔw-ɔh !*

power=REP power rainbow-FLR-DECL

‘(He has) evil power, they say! Evil power, that rainbow (spirit)!’ (txt)

- (153) “*títí? yúw-úh !*” *nó-ǎy = mah*
 dirty that-DECL say-DYNM=REP
 ‘‘That one is dirty!’ he said, they say.’ (txt)

The Reportative is used when inquiring about or quoting someone else’s speech:

- (154) *hĩ-n ʔh = mah ?*
 Q-NMZ=REP
 ‘What did he say?’ (cv)

Similarly, it is used to ‘interpret’ sounds made by an individual who is incapable of speaking, such as a dog or an infant; (155), for example, was said in reference to a crying baby:

- (155) *ʔóm-ǎy = mah*
 fear-DYNM=REP
 ‘(He’s) scared, he says.’ (cv)

It is also common when giving a personal name, including one’s own:

- (156) *húy = mah ʔáh-ǎh*
 Huy=REP 1sg-DECL
 ‘I am (called) Húy.’ (txt)

The Reportative evidential is the default evidential specification in non-first-hand narrative genre. Even when a consultant was asked to tell a story from pictures – resulting in a narrative that was not first-hand but also not verbally re-transmitted – he used the Reportative more frequently than the Inferred evidential *cud*, which would normally be used for interpreting pictures or photographs:

- (157) *yíkán = mah tĩh ʔaʔambóʔ-ǎn hũh-d’oʔ-yóʔ = mah...*
 over.there=REP 3sg.POSS dog-OBJ carry-take-SEQ=REP

tĩh-ǎn dɔwǎh-ót n’æm’-g’ét-éy = cud

3sg-OBJ cheek-OBL lick-stand-DYNM=INFR

‘There, it’s said, (he was) carrying his dog... (the dog) licked him on the face, apparently!’ (txt)

In general, however, culturally new information sources have been fitted neatly into the Hup evidential system – although most Hupd’əh still have very limited access to these sources. The Reportative evidential *mah* is used for information obtained through reading, since this is second-hand, verbally acquired information. Inferred *cud* is used in reference to events that are *pictured* on television, but Reportative *mah* is used to relay information that is verbally reported on the television or radio. Nonvisual *hō* is generally appropriate only when referring to the actual sound; speakers do occasionally use *nó-ǝy=hō* (say-DYNM=NONVIS) ‘I hear them saying’ to introduce quoted speech, emphasizing that they have just overheard it (either from a radio or from an actual person nearby), but Reportative *mah* is more common.

Like the Nonvisual and Inferred enclitics, the Reportative is used in negative (151), exclamatory (152), and interrogative clauses (154). However, the Reportative is the only evidential in Hup that can also occur in imperative clauses, as a type of quotative:

(158) *nǝn =mah !*

come=REP

‘Come here, she said!’ (cv)

This quotative use does not entail a *direct* quote; for example, when one person repeats a command given by another person, the repeated command often differs from the original in its directional semantics (i.e., it is the content, not the form, of the speech that is stressed). On several occasions I heard one speaker say to a small child *nǝn!* ‘come!’, whereupon another speaker who was in the vicinity of the child repeated the command as *hám =mah!* (go=REP) ‘go, (they said)!’.

In addition to its use in imperative clauses, the Reportative marker differs significantly from the Nonvisual and Inferred evidential markers in its positioning and distribution. First, unlike the other two forms, it does not occur inside subordinate clauses. Furthermore, it can cliticize to any focused constituent of a clause, whereas the other two evidential markers cliticize only to predicates. In narrative, the Reportative marker is much more likely to occur in second position in the clause than on the verb, as in example (159). In general, *mah* can appear either on the subject or on the predicate, but not on both; in (157) above, however, it occurs twice within the same clause (once on the directional adverbial, once on the predicate). These differences in positioning set the Reportative evidential off from the other two evidentials as a distinct one-member subsystem.

- (159) *nuh-kəbák = n'ǎn = mah hid páʔ-áh, dáb !*
 head-break=PL.OBJ=REP 3pl ritually.present-DECL many
 'They gave a dabacuri of sauva (lit. 'head-breaker') ants, they say, lots of them!' (txt)

The Reportative usually appears as an enclitic in the Barreira and Tat Deh area dialects, but – like the other fluid evidential morphemes in Hup – it can also appear as an Inner Suffix, followed by a Boundary Suffix (example 160). However, whereas the Nonvisual and Inferred markers in this position usually take the primary stress of the verb word and are therefore indistinguishable from compounded verb roots (though not in all cases; compare 132 above), *mah* (like some other fluid formatives in Hup) as a rule remains unstressed.

- (160) *hayám biʔ-wid-næn-píd-mah-áh, hib'áh = tǎh = ʔih-íh*
 town make-arrive-come-DIST-REP-DECL create=clan=MSC-DECL
 'The Ancestor(s) arrived and built a town' (txt)

This pattern is subject to significant dialectal variation. In the Umari Norte dialect, occurrence of Reportative *mah* in the Inner Suffix position, rather than as an enclitic (particularly in narrative), is much more common than in the Hup spoken in Tat Deh and Barreira. In Umari Norte, when the otherwise unstressed evidential *mah* occurs as an Inner Suffix, it receives the primary stress in the verb word:

- (161) Umari Norte dialect:
tíh-ǎn tíh wɔn-máh-áh
 3sg-OBJ 3sg follow-REP-DECL
 'He followed him' (txt)

The Reportative marker *mah* often precedes one of two optional contrast particles, especially in narrative: one is specified for recent past (*páh*; example 162), the other for distant past (*j'ám*, or *j'áh* in the Tat Deh dialect area; example 163) (see §13.4). The order of evidential + contrast/tense marker is fixed, and the tense semantics can refer *either* to the time of the report, or to the time of the event. In the Umari Norte dialect, the forms *mah* + *j'ám* have become phonologically merged to create the form =*maám* (or =*ma-y'ám*), as we see in (164). This may reflect an incipient tense-evidential fusion in Hup, possibly motivated by the system of fused tense-evidential forms that is present in Tukano.

(162) *nĩ = mah páh yúw-úh !*
 1sg.POSS=REP PRX.CNTR that-DECL
 ‘It was mine, (someone just said)!’ (txt)

(163) *yíníy = mah j’ám tih bí?-íh, húp = n’ăn tih bí?-íh*
 so=REP DST.CNTR 3sg make-DECL person=PL.OBJ 3sg make-DECL
 ‘Thus (long ago, they say) he made (them), he made people.’ (txt)

(164) Umari Norte dialect:

j’üg-út = maám tih wɔn-kot = máh-ãh
 forest-OBL=REP.DST.CNTR 3sg follow-go.in.circles=REP-DECL
 ‘In the forest, (long ago, they say), he wandered following (the tapir).’
 (txt)

14.9.5. Co-occurrence of evidentials

The various evidentials in Hup can co-occur (primarily in their enclitic form), although with certain restrictions. For example, co-occurrence of the Inferred and Nonvisual forms is apparently limited to cases where the Nonvisual relates to the speaker’s opinion; here the Nonvisual must follow the Inferred, since the inference is within the scope of the opinion. This is illustrated by (165), which might be said about someone who has announced the day of his arrival but then does not come:

(165) *tih póg = cud = hǽ*
 liar big=INFR=NONVIS
 ‘He seems to be a liar, I think.’ (ru)

The Reportative occurs more freely with the other two evidentials, but must appear last; the inference or perception is therefore within the scope of the report (and not the other way round). (167), for example, was a report about a young woman from Barreira who went on a visit to the neighboring village of Nova Fundação with her parents, but stayed behind with a boyfriend when they returned home.

(166) *hup pã = cud = mah*
 person NEG:EX=INFR=REP
 ‘There was apparently nobody there, it’s said.’ (txt)

(167) *tih tæhʔíp ni-túk-uw-áy = nih = cud = mah*
 3sg child.father be-want-FLR-INCH=EMPH.CO=INFR=REP
 ‘It looks like she (has come to the stage of) wanting a husband, they said.’ (ru)

(168) *tih péʔ-éy = hɔ̃ = mah*
 3sg sick-DYNM=NONVIS=REP
 ‘She’s feeling sick, she says.’ (el)

14.9.6. Additional inferred evidential *-ni-*

Hup has developed a second evidential relating to inference, in addition to *cud*. This is the form *-ni-*, which is strikingly different formally from the other evidentials in Hup. Instead of functioning primarily as an enclitic, Inferred *-ni-* occurs only as a verbal Inner Suffix, combining directly and exclusively with verb stems.¹⁷² Its morphosyntactic distribution is highly restricted in comparison with that of the enclitics: it must occur on a clause-final predicate – even in an interrogative clause (making it ungrammatical in polar interrogatives using a word order inversion strategy, see §17.4.2). It does not occur at all in negative clauses, cannot appear together with other evidentials in the same verb word, and is used exclusively in reference to a past event.

Despite their significant formal differences, the two inferential forms *-ni-* and *cud* are functionally similar. Like *cud*, *-ni-* is used for an inference relating to an event which the speaker did not actually witness, as in (169), where the speaker is describing how some children sneaked into the house to steal his fish. As with *cud*, the inference may be based on tangible evidence; in (170), for example, the speaker sees the empty pot from which the mingau has been drunk. In many cases the two inferentials *cud* and *-ni-* are judged by speakers to be interchangeable, and in (170) they occur in successive clauses referring to the same event. However, use of *-ni-* tends to place less emphasis on the actual act of inferring, and is preferred when there is no actual evidence available, whereas *cud* appears to be more restricted to situations where tangible evidence is at hand. This may explain why Hup strongly favors the use of *-ni-* over *cud* in narrative, as in example (171) (from a story about the mythical Water-Tree, which is said to have created the Amazonian river system when it fell).

¹⁷² Note that it conditions vowel loss in a following vowel-initial Boundary Suffix, as do the other CV Inner Suffixes in Hup, although these owe their CV form to erosion of a final consonant.

- (169) *yúp hótʔah = mah hid ye-ní-p = b'ay-áh*
 that other.side=REP 3pl enter-INFR2-DEP=AGAIN-DECL
 'There on the other side of it (someone said) they apparently got in again.' (cv)
- (170) *ʔəg-hũʔ-yíʔ-íy = cud, dǐʔ pǎ tih ʔəg-yíʔ-ní-h*
 drink-finish-TEL-DYNM=INFR remain NEG:EX 3sg drink-TEL-INFR2-DECL
 'He drank it all up; he drank it up and left none.' (txt)
- (171) *póh, děh = teg g'et-ʔeʔ-ní-h*
 high water=tree stand-PERF-INFR2-DECL
 'Really high, the water-tree stood.' (txt)

When used with a first person subject, *-ni-* can only be used in reference to actions that the speaker has no memory of performing – usually because he or she was too young to remember, or was drunk or asleep:

- (172) *n'ikán ʔǎh macã-ní-h*
 over.there 1sg be.born-INFR2-DECL
 'I was born over there.' (txt)

Inferential *-ni-* appears to be grammatical in imperatives, although in this context it is not always clear whether this form is actually the evidential or is the imperative form of the compounded verb root *ni-* 'be', to which it is formally identical.¹⁷³ Semantically, however, it resembles an evidential; consultants say that it has the same meaning as the Reportative in the imperative – but they also report that imperative *-ni-* is only grammatical with a second person *plural* addressee, for reasons which remain opaque. The command in (173), for example, is said to be acceptable only in cases where the speaker is repeating another person's command, and is interchangeable with Reportative *níŋ hám = mah* (2pl go.IMP=REP) 'you all go, they said!'

- (173) *níŋ hám-níh*
 2pl go-INFR2.IMP
 'You all go, they said!' (el)

¹⁷³ And to which it may be historically related, as addressed below.

As an Inner Suffix, the formal identity of Inferred *-ni-* gives it a much more verb-like character than the other evidential markers, which (unlike *-ni-*) can cliticize to nominal constituents, usually are preceded by a Boundary Suffix when associating with a verb, and are unstressed. There is little doubt that the *-ni-* evidential is related to the verb root *ni-* ‘be, exist’ (see §8.4 and the ‘Historical and comparative note’ below), which can itself occur as a verbal auxiliary (i.e., as the final – fully verbal – constituent in verb compounds; see §9.4.2.4). The restricted distribution and different patterning of *-ni-* relative to the other evidentials suggest that its use as an evidential has developed fairly recently.

Historical and comparative note: Inferred -ni-

As an areal feature, the *-ni-* evidential is truly remarkable. Not only a similar evidential specification, but in fact an almost identical form, exists in many other Vaupés languages, including Tukano, Tariana, and Desano (Aikhenvald 2002a: 123; Miller 1999: 64). It also exists in Hup’s closest relative Yuhup (Ospina 2002: 181).

In Tukanoan languages, this inferred evidential reading is produced by a construction involving a nominalized form of the main verb plus the auxiliary verb *nî* ‘be’. This verb is virtually identical in form and meaning to Hup *ni-* ‘be, exist’, which is itself an areal feature, existing in various Vaupés languages of the East Tukanoan and Nadahup families, as well as Tariana (see the discussion in §8.4). Tariana has developed a similar evidential form, not from its version of the verb *ni* (which may or may not be borrowed from the neighboring languages), but through the reanalysis of the anterior aspect marker *-nhi* (in combination with past visual evidential forms) to create an inferred evidential (*-nhina*, *-nihka*) that closely resembles (both formally and functionally) the one found in the Tukanoan languages (Aikhenvald 2002a: 123).

It is likely that the Hup inferred *-ni-* evidential construction is the calqued equivalent of the Tukano construction, which is built according to the following schema (Ramirez 1997a: 140):

stem–nominalizer + ‘be’–[visual evidential–tense–person.number.gender]

This construction is illustrated in the following example:

(174) Tukano:

yaa wecé ma’a wi’ô-’karã nîi-áma
 POSS field path obstruct-NMZ.PL.PERF be-REC.PAST/VISUAL/3PL
 ‘They’ve blocked the path to my manioc field.’ (proof: logs across the path) (Ramirez 1997:140)

Nominalized forms of verbs in Hup can be derived by simply stripping the otherwise obligatory aspect suffixes from the verb stem, and as we have seen the visual evidential specification is likewise unmarked in Hup. Thus, just as the Hup form is the semantic parallel of its Tukano counterpart, it can also be seen as its formal equivalent: [verb.stem + \emptyset + 'be' + \emptyset], with a reduced form of the verb 'be'.

Comparative note: Hup evidentials as an areal feature

Despite previous characterizations of areal diffusion into the Nadahup languages as “superficial” in contrast to the diffusion between the Tukanoan and Tariana systems (e.g., Aikhenvald and Dixon 1998b: 250; Aikhenvald 1999b: 394), there is considerable evidence that this characterization does not hold for the Nadahup languages within the Vaupés region proper. As I have argued in more detail elsewhere (Epps 2005a; see also Epps 2007a), comparison with Dâw and Nadëb suggests that an optional reportative evidential distinction can be reconstructed for the Nadahup family, but that the remaining distinctions in Hup (and probably also in Yuhup) were developed relatively recently, and that areal contact with Tukanoan languages (primarily Tukano) was the catalyst. As Table 43 illustrates, Hup distinguishes the same four basic evidentiality choices as do its Vaupés neighbors (note that the Visual category in Hup is confounded by its unmarked status, but the notion of a visual evidential is nevertheless appropriate, as discussed in §14.9.1 above; the visual specification in Tariana is also minimally marked in comparison to the Tukanoan forms). Tukano and Tariana indicate evidentiality by means of portmanteau morphemes that fuse evidentiality, tense, person, and number (therefore each slot of the table below is represented by a paradigm). The Tukano system closely resembles that found in other East Tukanoan languages (of which Tuyuca is probably the most elaborate; see Barnes 1990); Tariana’s is more innovative vis-à-vis the Arawak family.

These categorial parallels are strong evidence that language contact with Tukano motivated the elaboration of Hup’s evidential system, as is also the case for Tariana (Aikhenvald 2002a: 121). Furthermore, there is considerable evidence that this elaboration is relatively recent for Hup – particularly the fact that lexical sources can be identified for all three new formatives (*hã*, *cud*, and *-ni-*). Moreover, while its categories parallel those of Tukano closely, Hup does not integrate evidentiality into its grammar as tightly as do Tukano and Tariana – suggesting that the influence of Tukano on Hup, while parallel to that of Tukano on Tariana, has been relatively less profound (although far from “superficial”). Most importantly, evidentials are required on most clauses in Tukanoan and Tariana, but are largely optional in Hup.

Hup is also more permissive than its neighbors in its distribution of evidential markers across clause types. Hup interrogative clauses can accommodate all evidential specifications, whereas in interrogatives Tukano and Tariana reduce their system to three (minus reportative). Evidentials are also reported as absent from exclamatory clauses in Tukano and Tariana (cf. Aikhenvald 2002a: 126), but are grammatical in Hup.

Table 43. Evidentiality in Vaupés languages

	Languages of the Vaupés region				Nadahup languages outside the Vaupés	
	Tukano (<i>East Tukanoan</i>)	Tariana (<i>Arawak</i>)	Hup (<i>Nadahup</i>)	Yuhup	Dâw	Nadëb
Visual	paradigm (evid.- person-tense- number)	paradigm (evid.-tense)				
Nonvisual	paradigm (evid.- person-tense- number)	paradigm (evid.-tense)	<i>hõ</i>	<i>hõ</i>		
Inferred	paradigm (evid.- person-tense- number)	paradigm (evid.-tense)	<i>cud</i>			
Inferred2	<i>-nii</i> construction	<i>-nhina</i> , <i>-nihka</i>	<i>-ni</i> constr.	<i>-n'i</i> constr.		
Reportative	paradigm (evid.- person-tense- number)	paradigm (evid.-tense)	<i>mah</i>	<i>mah</i>	<i>mah</i>	<i>mih</i>

Sources of data: Tukano: Ramirez 1997a; Tariana: Aikhenvald 2003a, etc.; Yuhup: Ospina 2002: 181; Dâw: S. Martins 1994: 106; Nadëb: Weir 1984: 254.

Hup is similarly more flexible than its neighbors regarding tense distinctions and evidentiality. All evidential specifications can co-occur with the future suffix in Hup (as in example 175), as well as with the tense-contrast particles (162–164 above) and in clauses lacking any overt tense marking (the most common type).

- (175) *nút-áh tán ?ãh hup-yəd-tég = cud*
 here-FOC FUT.CNTR 1sg RFLX-hide-FUT=INFR
 ‘It looks like I can hide here!’ (txt)

Tukano and Tariana, on the other hand, fuse tense and evidentiality specifications, but are reported as not distinguishing evidentiality in future tense at all (Aikhenvald 2002a: 126; 2003b: 122, etc.) – although the Tariana nonvisual

marker does co-occur with the future marker in some constructions (Aikhenvald 2002a: 126), and Tukano and Tariana use suffixes combining evidentiality and present or past tense to form certain expressions of future (Ramirez 1997a: 136, 166; Aikhenvald 2002a: 123). Also unlike Tukano and Tariana, Hup makes an inferred distinction in the present tense. Finally, both Hup and Tariana, but not Tukano, make a reportative specification in present-tense statements.

Chapter 15

Sentence-level affect marking

Hup has a rich repertoire of discourse-related formatives that serve the function of marking affect, and indicate intensification, emphasis, focus, and other related features. This chapter focuses on those markers that occur primarily on the level of the clause or even of the entire sentence; many associate with predicates, and many are limited exclusively to clause-final position. Formally, these markers are a heterogeneous lot, ranging from verbal Inner Suffixes to enclitics and particles; note that they are organized here according to their semantics and function, not their form class. In addition to these forms, Hup has other affect- and discourse-marking formatives that associate primarily with nominal constituents of the clause; these are discussed in Chapter 7.

The first section of this chapter deals with degree markers, which tend to associate primarily with verbal and adjectival predicates. The following sections cover the group of ‘promiscuous’ focus and emphasis markers that associate with predicates and other clausal constituents alike, and the set of affect markers that occur more or less exclusively in sentence-final position. The final sections of this chapter cover interjections and ideophones.

The grammatical formatives associated with sentence-level affect marking are summarized in Table 44:

Table 44. Sentence-level affect markers in Hup

Form	Slot class (formative type)	Identity/word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form
<i>cáp</i>	Particle	Various hosts	Intensifier	Noun <i>cáp</i> ‘body’
<i>-Vcáp</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs		
<i>mún</i>	Particle	Negated verbs Adjectives	Intensifier	
<i>muhún</i>				
<i>-tubud-</i>	Verbal auxiliary	Verb compounds	Intensifier	
<i>-kəd-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Elative	Verb <i>kəd-</i>
<i>-kád</i>	Suffix	Adjectives	(comparative, superlative)	‘pass’
<i>=mæh</i>	Enclitic	Various non-verbal hosts	Diminutive intensifier: (unimportance, smallness, closeness)	Noun <i>mæh</i> ‘younger sister’
<i>-mæh-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs		

Form	Slot class (formative type)	Identity/word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form
<i>=pog</i>	Enclitic	Various non-verbal hosts	Emphasis	Adjective <i>póg</i> 'big'
<i>-pog-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs		
<i>-po-</i>				
<i>-wog-</i>				
<i>-wo-</i>				
<i>=ʔh</i>	Enclitic	Various hosts	Emphasis	Masculine/ gender-neutral bound noun
<i>-Vʔh</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs		
<i>-áh</i>	Boundary Suffix	Various hosts	Focus	
<i>-Vw-</i>	Inner Suffix	Various hosts	Emphasis	Clause- combining
<i>tĩ</i>	Particle	Interrogative clau- ses	Interrogative emphasis	
<i>tí</i>	Particle	Subordinate clau- ses	Emphasis	
<i>tíh</i>	Particle	Clauses	Emphasis	
<i>=tiʔ</i>	Enclitic	Nouns	Emphatic tag	
<i>-Vtiʔ</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs		
<i>yǎ</i>	Particle	Interrogative clau- ses	Interactive tag	
<i>yá</i>	Particle	Affirmative clau- ses		
<i>-Vyá</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs in affirma- tive clauses		
<i>-Vhǎʔ</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Interactive tag	Affirmative word <i>hǎʔ</i> 'yes, all right'
<i>=hǎʔ</i>	Enclitic	Various hosts		
<i>=hǎ</i>	Enclitic	Imperative verbs		
<i>báʔ</i>	Particle	Clauses	Protective	
<i>-Vyík</i>	Boundary Suffix	Clause-final con- stituents, esp. verbs	Exclusive (relates to one participant alone)	
<i>-kéʔ</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	'Acting alone' marker	
<i>-d'áh</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	'Acting alone' marker	
<i>bé</i>	Particle	Clauses (?)	Acquiescence	

15.1. Degree markers

Hup has a large and heterogeneous set of markers that act as intensifiers and function to modify the degree of the assertion. Most associate with both verbal and adjectival predicates, and several can also occur with nominal constituents. The intensifier particles are functionally akin to many of the markers of focus and emphasis (see §15.2 and §15.3 below).

15.1.1. Intensifier *-(V)cáp*

Perhaps the most ubiquitous of Hup's intensifiers is the form *-(V)cáp* (glossed INTS1). This morpheme associates primarily with verbs and adjectives, although it is not limited to these, and is translated as 'very, a lot'. Formally, Intensifier *-(V)cáp* is best classed as an 'internally complex' Boundary Suffix (see §3.4.1.2), which frequently involves vowel copying. However, its formal realization is subject to considerable variation, both across speakers and across dialect regions. In Tat Deh, it is commonly pronounced *-icáp*, but some speakers also use *-Vycáp* (apparently formed with the Dynamic Boundary Suffix *-Vý*) and *-yi?-cáp* (with the Telic Inner Suffix *-yi?*); it is possible that the *-icáp* form is a phonologically reduced version of one of these alternative forms, or could possibly be derived from *hi-cap* (involving the Factitive prefix). In Barriera, speakers prefer the vowel-copying variant *-Vcáp* (which occurs in most of the examples here).

Examples of the use of Intensifier *-(V)cáp* with verbal predicates are given in (1–2). Note that as a predicative intensifier, it can occur in the same clause as the nominal quantifier *dáb* 'a lot' (example 2).

- (1) *ʔāh túk-ucáp*
 1sg want-INTS1
 'I really want (it).' (cv)
- (2) *hú? = d'əh dáb ní-ĩcáp !*
 piom=PL many be-INTS1
 'There are really a lot of pioms!' (cv)

Examples of *-(V)cáp* with adjectives are such common expressions as *títí?-icáp* 'really dirty', *náw-ācáp* 'very good', and example (3). Adjectives modified by *-(V)cáp* may be either predicates or modifiers.

- (3) *wædhó g'í-ícáp = hō*
 sun hot-INTS1=NONVIS
 'The sun is really hot.' (cv)

Verbal tense-aspect-mode specifications are very restricted with this intensifier, and in general do not come between it and the stem. In (4), the Perfective aspect marker *-?e?* – which is normally obligatorily followed by a Boundary Suffix – must *follow* the Intensifier, and as such takes the form of an enclitic rather than an Inner Suffix:

- (4) [*hōp ní-ícáp*] = *?e?*, *núp = mǎ*
 fish be-INTS1=PERF this=river
 'There used to be a lot of fish in this river.' (txt)

Similarly, if *-(V)cáp* modifies a negative predicate (which it rarely does), the Verbal Negator *-níh* (itself normally a Boundary Suffix) follows the Intensifier:

- (5) *dapűh ní-ícáp-níh mǐ?, ?ǎn d'o?-?om-kéy*
 hand be-INTS1-NEG UNDER 1sg.OBJ take-fear-see

?ám = níh, bíg !
 2sg=EMPH.CO anteater

'Even though you have no hands at all, you're scaring me, anteater!' (txt)

As a type of Boundary Suffix itself, Intensifier *-(V)cáp* is incompatible with most other Boundary Suffixes (with some exceptions). It also is not in general used to intensify smallness or diminution, and cannot occur with the irregular adjective *cípmæh* 'small'.

While Intensifier *-(V)cáp* usually occurs as a verbal/adjectival formative in main clauses, as in the examples above, it occasionally does combine with other parts of speech. In these cases, its function is primarily one of emphasis. Its form is also distinct: it usually appears without the preceding copied vowel (or *-i-*, etc.), and has the phonologically independent form of a particle. In (6), for example, *cáp* combines with adverbial clauses marked with Oblique *-V't* (here a Boundary Suffix which functions as a nominalizer, see §18.2.6.2):

- (6) *tih kədhám-áh, té húp=pog g'et-pó-t cáp,*
 3sg pass.go-DECL until person=EMPH1 stand-EMPH1-OBL INTS1
wáʔ tih g'ét-ét cáp-ay !
 vulture 3sg stand-OBL INTS1-INCH
 'She went quickly, until (she reached) the place where someone really
 was standing, where Vulture really was standing!' (txt)

Likewise, the intensifying function of *cáp* blurs with that of emphasis when it occurs with nominal forms, such as interrogative pronouns (example 7), pronouns (8), demonstratives (9), numerals, and other nouns:

- (7) *hĩ-n'ĩh cáp ʔam peʔ-ni-yǎh-ǎʔ tĩʔ*
 Q-NMZ INTS1 2sg sick-be-FRUST-INT EMPH.INT
 'What in the world is the matter with you?' (txt)
- (8) *ʔáh-ǎp=yíʔ cáp-ay=nih=cud kǎh !*
 1sg-DEP=TEL INTS1-INCH=EMPH.CO=INFR ADVR
 'But for me it's just the same, apparently!' (cv)
- (9) *nú-ũw-ũt cáp tíh céc, hóm cáp !*
 this-FLR-OBL INTS1 EMPH2 INTERJ sore INTS1
 'Right here, it's this darn sore!' (i.e., it really hurts) (cv)
- (10) *tih=cúm cáp ʔám-ǎn ʔáh ʔid-té-h*
 3sg=beginning INTS1 2sg-OBJ 1sg speak-FUT-DECL
 'I'll tell you (the story) from the very beginning.' (txt)

The form *cap* occurs elsewhere in Hup as the alienably possessed noun *cáp* 'body', and as the verb *cap-* 'grow'. Example (11) illustrates a likely semantic and functional overlap between 'body' and the Intensifier form:

- (11) *báb'=hin pǎ-ay ʔáh-ǎp tí,*
 sibling=also NEG:EX-INCH 1sg-DEP EMPH.DEP
ʔayup cáp ʔáh ni-níh-ĩh
 one INTS1 1sg be-be.like-DECL
 'I have no siblings left; it's as though I were all alone (i.e., one body).'
 (txt)

The form *cáp* also occurs in the several dialectal variants of ‘tomorrow’: *?icáp*, *?ecáp*, and *tecáp*. Future research will help to determine whether a historical connection exists among the various manifestations of this form.

15.1.2. Intensifiers *mún* / *muhún*

This intensifier, a particle, occurs with predicate adjectives, adverbials, and verbs, although in the case of verbs it is restricted to *negative* constructions involving the Verbal Negative suffix *-nǎh* (see also §16.1.6). The form of this intensifier is also subject to variation. Speakers in the Tat Deh dialect area pronounce it as *mún* in both affirmative (adjectival) and negative (verbal and adjectival) expressions. In Barreira, however, a formal distinction is maintained between the affirmative form, pronounced *muhún*, and the verbal negative *mún*. It is likely that *muhún* is the older form and that *mún* is a reduced variant, given that such phonological reduction of forms is typical, especially in the Tat Deh dialect, and that this gram appears most frequently in negative contexts.

Examples of affirmative *muhún* / *mún* (glossed INTS2) with adjectives are expressions like *náv muhún* ‘really good’, *títí? muhún* ‘really dirty’, and example (12). Note that *muhún* / *mún* can co-occur with Intensifier *-(V)cáp* to create an even stronger statement:

- (12) *cáp yǐ?-ǎn = b’ay ?am háy’-tǎn,*
 other man-OBJ=AGAIN 2sg mess.with-COND

yúp tih = páy muhún cáp-áh !
 that.ITG 3sg=bad INTS2 INTS1-DECL

‘If you mess around with another man, that’s really really bad!’ (txt)

This form can also appear in subordinate clauses:

- (13) *páy mún-ǔp = ?ǎy mǐ?...*
 bad INTS2-DEP=FEM UNDER
 ‘Even though (I am) an ugly woman...’ (sg)

The use of Intensifier *muhún* / *mún* is independent of whether the degree is seen as augmentative or diminutive (unlike *-(V)cáp*, which is restricted to augmentatives). Thus *cípmæh muhún* ‘really small’ is just as grammatical as *póg muhún* ‘really big’.

In addition to adjectives, *muhún* / *mún* can modify adverbial expressions, such as *j’ám-yi? muhún* ‘a really long time ago’, and even the predicative Exis-

tential Negative particle *pǎ́ muhún* ‘none at all’ (see §16.2). It is not generally used with nouns, but it can appear with adjectives nominalized by preceding *tih* = (as in example 12 above), and also occurs with a few of the so-called ‘verby’ nouns that are perceived as processual, such as ‘child’ or ‘old man’: *tih* = *wəhəd muhún* (3sg=old.man INTS2) ‘a very old (man)’ (see §4.1.3). It also appears with nominals in a few emphatic comparative expressions:

- (14) *yaʔamhǒʔ muhún ʔam páy-áh !*
 dog INTS2 2sg bad-DECL
 ‘You’re as bad as a dog!’ (ru)

Negative intensifier expressions, which are indicated by *mún* regardless of dialect area, can involve either verbs or adjectives. Examples include *pay-nih mún* (bad-NEG INTS2) ‘not bad at all’, and (15); see also §16.1.6 for more examples and discussion.

- (15) *ʔāh hipāh-nih mún*
 1sg know-NEG INTS2
 ‘I don’t know at all.’ (cv)

There is at least one exception to the rule limiting the verbal use of this intensifier form to negative expressions. This is the idiomatic construction *hī-ni-muhún-ūp* = *ʔih* / = *ʔáy* ‘worthless man/woman, good-for-nothing’ (a relativized form of the clause *hī ni-muhún* or *hī ni-mún* ‘really only existing’; example 16). Note that this expression is semantically (though not syntactically) a negative evaluative term.

- (16) *hī-ni-mún* = *d’əh níŋ-ǎh, hipāh-nih níŋ-ǎh !*
 only-be-INTS2=PL 2pl-DECL know-NEG 2pl-DECL
 ‘You all are worthless people, you don’t know (anything)!’ (ru)

15.1.3. Other intensifiers

While *-(V)cáp* and *muhún* / *mún* are the most commonly used intensifiers in Hup, there are a variety of other strategies for marking intensification that are less common or occur in more limited contexts.

15.1.3.1. Verbal auxiliary -*tubud*-

The form -*tubud*- (glossed INTS3) is an erstwhile compounded verb root that has taken on auxiliary-like properties of intensification (see also §9.4.2.4B for more examples and discussion of this form). It occurs only with verbs, and its formal status is somewhere in between an Inner Suffix and a compounded verb root. Examples of its use as an intensifier are given in (17–19):

- (17) *hup-hipãh-níh* *ʔãh* *ní-mĩʔ-ay*, *wəhád = d'əh*
 RFLX-know-NEG 1sg be-UNDER-INCH old.man=PL

ʔũh-mæh-tubud-ní-h !

INTRC-kill-INTS3-INFR2-DECL

‘While I was unconscious (drunk), the old men really fought!’ (txt)

- (18) *ʔin* *tæh = mæh-ãnd'əh* *hup = d'oʔ-tubúd-úh !*
 1pl son=DIM-ASSOC.PL RFLX=take-INTS3-DECL
 ‘My son and I were given a *lot* (of beer)!’ (cv)

- (19) *ʔam* *ʔəh-tubud-yíʔ-íy !*
 2sg sleep-INTS3-TEL-DYNM
 ‘You were completely asleep!’ (said to someone who overslept) (cv)

In the Umari Norte dialect, -*tubud*- as an intensifier has undergone a degree of phonological reduction, resulting in the loss of the medial consonant in the speech of some people:

- (20) *ham-túúd ! w'əh = mah j'ám* *tih* *hám-ãyík !*
 go-INTS3 long=REP DST.CNTR 3sg go-EXCL
 ‘He went on and on! He went for a *long* way!’ (txt, Umari Norte dialect)

Consultants observe that it is possible to use *tubud*- as an independent verb meaning ‘die, lose consciousness’ (example 21); however, this use is not common, and is not attested in my text corpus.

- (21) *ʔãh = ʔín* *tubud-yíʔ-íy*
 1sg=mother lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM
 ‘My mother lost consciousness/died.’ (el)

15.1.3.2. Adverbial intensifier *píb* ‘strong’

The form *píb* is usually used as an adjective meaning ‘fast, strong’, but it can also appear as an adverb and act as an intensifier (cf. §10.2):

(22) *píb* *?in* *hicocó-óh*
 strong 1pl happy-DECL
 ‘We’re really happy.’ (txt)

(23) *híd=b’ay* *kədnæn-yóʔ*, *píb* *péʔ=n’án* *d’oʔ-yíʔ-ay-áh*
 3pl=AGAIN pass.go-SEQ strong sick=OBJ.PL take-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘Having quickly come, they took those who were very sick.’ (txt)

15.1.3.3. Elative *-kəd*

The form *-kəd* is used as an elative marker in Hup, indicating ‘more than’ or ‘most’ (see §10.2.2.2). In some expressions – especially when it occurs with adjectives – it has the related function of a generic intensifier. Examples of this use include *naw-kəd* ‘really good, the best’, *pay-kəd* ‘really bad, the worst’. The form *-kəd* is almost certainly historically derived from the verb *kəd-* ‘pass’, a cross-linguistically common source of an elative marker.

In an interesting case of calquing between Hup and Tukano, a speaker used Tukano *-kumú* in place of the Hup Elative *-kəd*:¹⁷⁴

(24) *nút=tat-n’ih* *péʔ-kumú* *yǎh* *ków-ɔp* *tí!*
 here=fruit-NMZ power-*kumu* FRUST pimenta-DEP EMPH.DEP
 ‘It was a really strong hot pepper, this big!’ (txt)

However, *kumu* in Tukano is not reported by Ramirez (1997b) to be either an intensifier or an elative gram, or even a verb meaning ‘pass’.¹⁷⁵ Instead, it is a

¹⁷⁴ It is not clear whether this was a purely idiosyncratic case of code-switching on the part of this speaker, or whether this use is marginally conventionalized. While indiscriminate code-switching and borrowing of Tukano forms is not generally condoned among Hup speakers (see §1.5), some does take place; this may be an example.

¹⁷⁵ But note that Aikhenvald (2003: 439) reports that the serialized verb ‘pass’ acts as a superlative in Tariana; whether this common feature of Tariana and Hup is due to independent parallel developments or to areal diffusion of some kind is unclear.

noun, meaning both ‘bench’ and ‘blesser, spell-maker’ (a person with low-level shamanic abilities). In Hup, the form *kǎd* also has both of these nominal functions, in addition to its uses as a verb and as an elative/intensifier.¹⁷⁶ It is also not clear whether the speaker who used the Tukano word for ‘bench’ or ‘blesser’ in place of the Hup Elative *-kǎd* in (24) was aware of the homonymy or polysemy among the various Hup forms, or assumed that his listeners would be similarly aware of it, but this example appears to provide a clue to the way that cross-linguistic heterosemy can arise.

15.1.4. Diminutive Intensifier *mæh*

The Diminutive Intensifier *mæh* emphasizes smallness or closeness (spatial or temporal), as well as unimportance or endearment (cf. §7.2). Its use with nouns, however, is rarely that of simply indicating unusual smallness. For this reason, it is not considered a diminutive in the more conventional sense of the word, but rather a type of intensifier that attaches to a variety of parts of speech, focusing attention on the smallness or closeness that is already lexically signaled by other means (for example, by the adjective *tǎh* ‘small’). This discourse-related function of signaling unimportance or endearment is typical of diminutives cross-linguistically. With non-verbal hosts, Diminutive *mæh* is an enclitic and is accordingly unstressed (although – unlike many clitics in Hup – it may be stressed when followed by another clitic). When it appears with verbs, *mæh* is exclusively an Inner Suffix.

The Diminutive Intensifier occurs in a few lexically frozen nominal and adjectival forms referring to smallness or small things.¹⁷⁷ These are: *cǎpmæh* ‘narrow, thin’, *cǎpmæh* ‘small’ (cf. Umari Norte *cǎpmæh* = *mæh*), and *wǎdhǎm’ǎh* ‘star’ (from *wǎdhǎ* ‘moon, sun’); the latter form has undergone glottal spreading within the medial consonant cluster.

¹⁷⁶ The Hup form *kǎd* = *?ih* ‘blesser, spell-maker’ (= *?ih*: bound masculine noun) could be interpreted as ‘one who sits on a special bench’ (from *kǎd* ‘bench’). It is likely that the same interpretation motivates the identical form of ‘bench’ and ‘blesser’ in Tukano and is consistent with Tukanoan cultural practices, in which beautifully decorated benches are used by important individuals and in rituals. On the other hand, the Hup form could also be interpreted as ‘one who is more than others’ (from *kǎd* ‘Elicative’ or ‘pass’), i.e., more educated or more powerful. Nonetheless, the dual meaning of the Hup form ‘bench/blesser’ was almost certainly motivated by calquing from Tukano.

¹⁷⁷ The existence of these frozen forms may be evidence that *mæh* was once a true diminutive, used primarily to indicate small size.

In all other cases, the use of *mæh* is optional. It emphasizes smallness or closeness in adjectival, adverbial, and quantifying expressions such as those in (25–28). This may be either spatial or temporal; for example, ‘now’ in (26) is maximally temporally close to the speech moment.

- (25) *dəb-níh = mæh* (many-NEG=DIM) ‘a few, not many’
ʔayǔp = mæh = yíʔ (one=DIM=TEL) ‘just one’
hí-ni = mæh = n’íh (no.reason-be=DIM=NMZ) ‘just a little something’
tih = tæh = mæh (3sg=small=DIM) ‘a small one’
núp = mæh = yíʔ (this=DIM=TEL) ‘right away’
- (26) *nutæñ = mæh = yíʔ ʔãh wiʔ-tuk-hõh-yæh-æh, ʔãh-ãw-ãh !*
 now=DIM=TEL 1sg hear-want-NONVIS-FRUST-DECL 1sg-FLR-DECL
 ‘I’d like to listen to it right this minute!’ (cv)
- (27) *húp tēghod máh = mæh = yíʔ g’óh-óy*
 person fireplace near=DIM=TEL warm-DYNM
 ‘The person is warming himself right next to the fire.’ (el)
- (28) *tú = mæh = yíʔ ʔám-ʔíp mǔyok ní-íp = mæh yúw-úh,*
 low=DIM=TEL 2sg=father rafter be-DEP=DIM that.ITG-DECL

tíh-ăn nǔ-óy = mah yúw-úh
 3sg-OBJ say-DYNM=REP that.ITG-DECL
 ‘They are so low (i.e., close to the ground), the rafters of your father’s house, she said to him.’ (txt)

In the following examples, the Diminutive Intensifier occurs with nominal constituents to indicate endearment, as in (29) (where the speaker is referring to his grown-up daughter), or insignificance, as in (30–31).

- (29) *tóg = mæh máh-an... ʔãh ham-ʔay-té-h*
 daughter=DIM near-DIR 1sg go-VENT-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’m going to visit my daughter.’ (txt)
- (30) *d’og = m’æh = tæh = ʔíh = mæh... páy húp = ʔíh = mæh*
 vapisuna=snake=offspring=MSC=DIM bad person=MSC=DIM
 ‘(I’m) just a man from the Vapisuna-Snake clan... an ugly little man...’
 (sg)

- (31) *ʔin-ǎn yǔd = mæh d'oʔ-nóʔ-ǔy*
 1pl-OBJ clothes=DIM take-give-DYNM
 '(The Tukanos) gave us a few clothes.' (txt)

Examples (32–33) use the Diminutive Intensifier in nominal expressions relating to children, with the main rhetorical effect of emphasizing their weakness and vulnerability:

- (32) *cãʔ-d'ǎh doʔ = mǎh = d'əh tǔw-ít = yiʔ píd b'ay-yiʔ-ní-h*
 other-PL child=DIM=PL path-OBL=TEL DIST return-TEL-INFR2-DECL
 'Other little children would return (home while still) in the path.' (txt)

- (33) [*ʔíp pǎ*] = *mǎh = d'əh*
 father NEG:EX=DIM=PL
 'The little fatherless ones' (txt)

The Diminutive Intensifier can even occur with expressions of *large* size, in order to downplay the importance or amount. (34), for example, was spoken by a grandmother who was complaining about the disrespect shown her by the village children:

- (34) *ʔǎn n'ǔh, tih = wá-ǎn = yiʔ, ʔám = wa = mæh,*
 1sg.OBJ CNTR 3sg=old.woman-OBJ=TEL 2sg=old.woman=DIM

póg = mæh ʔǎh-tiʔ, nó-ǔy ʔũhníy ʔám-ǎh, "nɔ-bí-h
 big=DIM 1sg-EMPH.TAG say-DYNM maybe 2sg-DECLsay-HAB-DECL
 'To me, the old one, "you little old one, you probably think you're big,"
 they always say.' (cv)

With verbs, *mæh* appears in the verb core as an Inner Suffix, and takes on an auxiliary-like function of indicating that the activity is performed only to a small degree (compare the 'Verbal diminutives', §12.10):

- (35) *teghǔ = nɔg'öd ʔǎh wiʔ-mǎh-ǎh, cípmæh = yiʔ*
 Non.Indian=mouth 1sg hear-DIM-DECL little=TEL
 'I understand just a little Portuguese.' (txt)

Use of *mæh* with verbs can also emphasize insignificance or vulnerability, as with the nominals in (34) above; for example, the speaker in (36) is talking

about a young girl who has gotten married too young, in the speaker's opinion, and is looking poorly:

(36) *nǎ* *nutǎñ-ǎp* *kɔn-níh* *mún = mǎh-ay* *kǎh*,
 NEG:R today-DEP like-NEG INTS2=DIM-INCH ADVR

tinñh *dɔwǎh-ɔp* *tohó* *di?-mǎh-ay...*
 3sg.POSS cheek-DEP white remain-DIM-INCH

'These days she doesn't look good at all; her face is really pale...' (cv)

15.2. Promiscuous focus and emphasis markers

This section deals with emphasis and focus markers that can attach to various parts of speech and occur in various places in the clause, but appear to have a comparable (though not always identical) function from one such realization to another; they can therefore properly be considered maximally 'promiscuous'. These markers are in fact only a subset of the large and heterogeneous class of forms that relate to focus and emphasis in Hup, of which the other members pattern differently. Those that signal focus on nominal constituents but serve a different (predominantly aspect-marking) function with predicates are discussed together with nominal morphology in Chapter 7; sentence-final discourse particles relating to emphasis are treated below in §15.3. In addition to these, there are various other peripheral forms whose semantics relate to tense, contrast, reportative evidentiality, etc, but which also mark the focused constituent of the clause (cf. §15.2.3 and elsewhere).

15.2.1. Emphasis marker *pog* / *-po-* / *wog* / *-wo-*

The most ubiquitous of the emphasis grams in Hup is the form *pog* (occasionally pronounced *wog*, and with phonologically reduced Inner Suffix variants *-po-* and *-wo-*; cf. §7.2). This emphasis marker is common in both conversation and in narrative, unlike most other emphatic forms discussed in this and the following section (§15.3), which are rarely encountered in narrative outside of quoted speech. Its emphatic function is also extended to one of mirativity (i.e., the indication of unexpected information; cf. DeLancey 1997) in expressions of surprise.

Formally, Emphasis *pog* (glossed EMPH1) is extremely promiscuous. It attaches both to focused arguments and to predicates, and can occur multiple times in a single clause. On predicates, *pog* occurs consistently in Inner Suffix

position, while with other parts of speech it generally appears as an enclitic, often attached to the first constituent of the clause as a second position formative. It is clearly derived from the adjective *póg* ‘big’,¹⁷⁸ and the only formal difference between *pog* as adjectival modifier and as emphasis particle within a noun phrase is one of stress assignment – the adjective lexeme receives stress, while the encliticized emphasis particle does not.

Examples (37–39) illustrate the occurrence of *pog* on multiple constituents within the clause:

- (37) *tih pəpəd-hi-y’æt-yi?-póg-ay-áh,*
3sg roll.up-FACT-lay-TEL-EMPH1-INCH-DECL

tih = tǎhʔip = pog-ǎn !

3sg=child.father=EMPH1-OBJ

‘She rolled him right up (in the bark) and left him, her husband!’ (txt)

- (38) *ʔám = pog páh, ʔǎn tǎʔnɔhɔ̃-hicé?-pog-bí-h !*
2sg=EMPH1 PRX.CNTR 1sg.OBJ laugh-induce-EMPH1-HAB-DECL
‘It’s *you* that always makes me laugh!’ (cv)

- (39) *cǐʔ w’aw’aʔ-kədcak-yi?-pó-ay, húp j’ib = pog !*
leg.calf stick.up-pass.climb-TEL-EMPH1-INCH person foot=EMPH1
‘A leg was sticking out (of the pot), a human foot!’ (txt)

Emphasis *pog* has the phonologically reduced variant *-po-*, which is limited to environments where a vowel-initial suffix form directly follows. This suffix pair patterns just like the other such full/reduced pairs in Hup, such as Future *-teg / -te-*, Habitual *big / -bi-*, etc. (see §3.6). As with all of these pairs, the unreduced form *-pog-* is required when followed by a consonant-initial suffix:

- (40) *yúp baʔtǐb’ g’ɔh-pog-ʔé-ew-ǎn hid*
that.ITG spirit be-EMPH1-PERF-FLR-OBJ 3pl

wæd-yi?-kədhám-ǎy = mah

eat-TEL-pass.go-DYNM=REP

‘They came quickly to eat that one who really was a spirit.’ (txt)

¹⁷⁸ The functional link between augmentation and emphasis is comparable to that between diminution and intensification in Hup; see *mæh* (§15.1.4).

- (41) *níŋ-ǎn tih tɔn-ham-pog-té-p, cún? ! ham-pog-tég níŋ-áh ?*
 2pl-OBJ 3sg hold-go-EMPH1-FUT-DEP INTERJ go-EMPH1-FUT 2pl-FOC
 ‘She’ll really take you away! Would you really go?!’ (cv)

When a vowel-initial suffix follows, either of the two variants is possible, but speakers generally prefer *-po-* :

- (42) *hĩ-nĩh-pó-y = mah j’ám tih = b’ay ?*
 Q-be.like-EMPH1-DYNM=REP DST.CNTR 3sg=AGAIN
 ‘How the heck did this (story) go?’ (txt)
- (43) *tih m’ǎ? cój d’ob-g’et-pó-ay-áh*
 3sg red.paint brilliant go.to.river-stand-EMPH1-INCH-DECL
 ‘He stood on the bank, really brilliant with red paint.’ (txt)
- (44) *kaninĩ cɔp-ham-pó-h*
 sleepy(Tuk) go.from.river-go-EMPH1-DECL
 ‘Sleepyhead’s gone up away from the river!’ (cv)
- (45) *?ũy d’o?-yĩ?-pó-? = b’ay ?!*
 who take-TEL-EMPH1-INT=AGAIN
 ‘Who the heck took it?’ (cv)

A still further reduced form *-wog-* / *-wo-* also exists, although its use is much more limited (and is represented only in the speech of a few people from the Japu area, near the Vaupés River). This variant patterns like *pog* / *-po-* :

- (46) *hĩ-n’ĩh bíg yǎh yǎ? b’ǎt wid-yé-ep yikán*
 Q-NMZ HAB FRUSTMom roça arrive-enter-DEP over.there.ITG
- kəkəy-nĩh = yĩ? kədcak-wog-bíg-yǎh-ǎw-áh yǎ ?*
 interrupted-NEG=TEL pass.climb-EMPH1-HAB-FRUST-FLR-FOC TAG1
 ‘Why the heck does Mom climb up there without fail when she comes back from the fields?’ (txt)

- (47) *key-g'ã?-yó? = mah* *yúp* “*hĩ-nĩh-wó-y* *cáp*
 see-be.suspended-SEQ=REP that.ITG Q-be.like-EMPH1-DYNNM INTS1

bíg *yæh = nih* *tĩh-áh ?!*

HAB FRUST=EMPH.CO 3sg-FOC

‘Lying in the hammock and looking out, “what the heck is she always doing?” (he said).’ (txt)

- (48) *tinĩh* *máj-wo-ót* *təh-cud-d’o?-kədway-yĩ?-ay-áh*
 3sg.POSS basket-EMPH1-OBL break-be.inside-take-pass.go.out-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘She broke it up and put it into her basket and went quickly out.’ (txt)

Emphasis *pog* occurs in a wide variety of clause types, including imperative clauses. In imperatives it receives the primary stress of the verb word, which would normally fall on the (compound-final) verb root:

- (49) *hũt* *b’iyi?* *d’o?-g’et-póg !*
 tobacco only take-stand.IMP-EMPH1
 ‘Just get tobacco!’ (cv)

In addition to its use with verbal and nominal constituents (including noun phrases involving adjective modifiers), *pog* cliticizes to predicate adjectives (example 50), and to the predicative negative particle *pã* (example 51):

- (50) *páy = pog* *páh* *yú-wəd-áh*
 bad=EMPH1 PRX.CNTR that.ITG-old.man-DECL
 ‘That old guy’s really a jerk.’ (cv)

- (51) *pã = pog !*
 NEG:EX=EMPH1
 None at all!’ (cv)

When word-final, *pog* is often replaced by the variant *po?* (example 52–53). This word-final glottalization is an additional emphasis-marking strategy in Hup (see §15.3.4 below).

- (52) *tĩh = pãy = d’əh*, *dɔwǎh* *kubúk = d’əh* *b’iyi?-ay = po?*
 3sg=bad=PL cheek crusty.paint=PL only-INCH=EMPH1
 ‘Those ugly ones, those having crusty paint on their cheeks, are all that exist (here, now).’ (txt)

- (53) *nú-m'æ = mæh = póʔ* *năm* *hid* *w'ób-op* *báʔ*,
 this-amount=DIM=EMPH1 *curare* 3pl *set-DEP* *PROTST*

nú-m'æ = mæh *tíh !*
 this-MEAS=DIM *EMPH2*

'They put just this little bit of poison (on their darts), just this little bit (is enough to kill)!' (txt)

Finally, the form *pog* has an additional, related function: it combines productively with verb roots, acting as a habitual nominalizer meaning 'one who always does (verb), is characterized by doing (verb)'. In this construction, *pog* takes the primary stress, but its function is essentially that of an augmentative; compare English 'a big eater', 'a big liar'. Examples are given in (54):

- (54) *ʔot-póg* (cry-BIG) 'crybaby'
ʔõh-póg (sleep-BIG) 'sleepyhead'
tíh-póg (lie-BIG) 'big liar'

15.2.2. Emphasis marker = *ʔih*

The Emphasis marker = *ʔih* is a grammaticalized variant of the animate masculine (and gender-neutral) bound noun = *ʔih* (e.g., *yúp = ʔih* 'that man'; see §5.4.2.2). It typically encliticizes to nominals (especially personal names and demonstratives, but also including nominalized verbs such as relative clauses), and functions to emphasize and single out a particular referent. Note that this use of = *ʔih* is in keeping with the individuating function of the bound construction in general, and it makes sense that = *ʔih* – the most frequent and generic (animate) bound noun – would be the bound noun to develop a more general, grammatical function. Use of Emphasis = *ʔih* is illustrated in examples (55–57), where it is in all cases grammatically optional:

- (55) *mánio = ʔih* *yúw-úh*, *ʔáh = ʔip* *g'õh-õp = ʔih* *yúw-úh*
 Mario=MSC *that.ITG-DECL* 1sg=father *be2-DEP=MSC* *that.ITG-DECL*
 'That's Mario, that's the one who's my father!' (said teasingly) (cv)

- (56) *yuhúm* *deh-áh* *cáp = ʔih*, *patí*
 avocado *water-FOC* *other=MSC* *Pattie*
 'Avocado Igarapé is another one (town in that direction), Pattie!' (cv)

- (57) *tih g'ǎg-tǎh = ?ih ham-yí?ay = mah, g'ǎg-tǎh-ǎh*
 3sg bone-son=MSC go-TEL-INCH=REP bone-son-DECL
 '(Having grown up) he went on to be Bone-Son himself, did Bone-Son.'
 (txt)

In keeping with its function of singling out a referent, Emphasis = *?ih* can indicate a distinction in restrictiveness, particularly when used with adjectives. In (58a–b), for example, = *?ih* indicates a selection among multiple jaguars:

- (58) a) *yā?ám tih = pǒg = mah húp = ?ih-ǎn wón-ǎh*
 jaguar 3sg=big=REP person=MSC-OBJ follow-DECL
 'A big jaguar, it's said, followed the man.' (non-restrictive; 1 jaguar)
- b) *yā?ám tih = pǒg = ?ih = mah húp = ?ih-ǎn wón-ǎh*
 jaguar 3sg=big=MSC=REP person=MSC-OBJ follow-DECL
 'The big jaguar, it's said, followed the man.' (restrictive; 2+ jaguars)
 (el)

In addition to associating with nominals, the marker *?ih* also occurs clause-finally in connection with a verb stem, where it takes the form of an 'internally complex' Boundary Suffix: *-V?ih*. Note that the resulting construction is syntactically (as well as semantically) distinct from a relative clause, which would take the form [Verb-DEP=*?ih*] 'one who does Verb'. This is illustrated in (59–62); note that here again *-(V)?ih* is optional, and can be substituted by Declarative *-Vh*.

- (59) *?in ?ǎg = wag b'iyi? yít tih hám-ǎ?ih*
 1pl drink=day only thus 3sg go-(V)MSC
 'It's only on days that we drink that (singing) goes on thus.' (i.e., that we sing) (txt)

- (60) *wæd-yó?, ?ayǔp = ?ih = cud?úh dí?-i?ih... dí?-yó?,*
 eat-SEQ one=MSC=INFR.EPIST remain-(V)MSC remain-SEQ

tih ye-píd-i?ih

3sg enter-DIST-(V)MSC

'(The snake) having eaten (them), there was one man apparently who was left; being left, it was he that entered (the house of the Snake's daughter).' (txt)

(61) *nút wædhó ní-n'ih hid hám-ǎʔih*
 here sun be-NMZ 3pl go-(V)MSC
 'It was right when the sun was here that they started out.' (txt)

(62) *núp ʔin kawa-tég-ay = ʔih*
 this 1sg divide-FUT-INCH=MSC
 'It was there that we were to split up.' (txt)

There is some stylistic and dialectal variation in this use of Emphasis = *ʔih*. For example, one storyteller in Barriera uses the verbal construction *tih nó-ǎʔih* (3sg say-V=MSC) very frequently when introducing quoted speech in narrative (example 63). Upon hearing the recording of his narratives, however, people of Tat Deh remarked on this use, and said that they prefer *nó-ǎy = mah tih-iv-ih* (say-DYNM=REP 3sg-FLR-DECL).

(63) “*ʔúy = ʔih ʔám?*” *tih nó-ǎʔih*
 who=MSC 2sg 3sg say-(V)MSC
 ‘“Who are you?” is what he said.’ (txt)

Emphasis = *ʔih* is especially common in expressions involving the Epistemic modality marker *ʔuh* (see also §14.8). The resulting semi-idiomatic construction expresses an emphatic supposition:

(64) *húp = pog ʔuh tih = ʔih !*
 person-EMPH1 EPIST 3sg=MSC
 ‘Could that be a person?!’ (txt)

(65) *yíníy-key-yóʔ = cudʔuh hid d'ob-yíʔ-ay = ʔih*
 thus-see-SEQ=INFR.EPIST 3pl go.to.river-TEL-INCH=MSC
 ‘So with this, apparently, they went down to the river.’ (txt)

(66) *j'ám = mah yú = wəd d'oʔ-widnæn-ǎh...*
 yesterday=REP that=RESP take-arrive.come-DECL...

yúw-út ʔuh nutæn tih ʔoc-pám-ǎy = ʔih !
 that-OBL EPIST today 3sg consume-sit-DYNM=MSC
 ‘Yesterday that one (boat captain) brought (cachaça); today that must be what he’s sitting drinking!’ (cv)

- (67) *póg = cud?ǎh* *yúp = ?ǎh*, *děh = teg = ?ǎh !*
 big=INFR.EPIST that-MS water=tree=MS
 ‘That thing was apparently really big, that water-tree!’ (txt)

15.2.3. Focus *-áh*

The vowel-initial suffix *-áh* can occur only once per clause, but appears to have somewhat different functions depending on where it appears within the clause (although it is simply glossed ‘Focus’ regardless of where it occurs). Clause-finally, it occurs primarily with interrogative clauses, where it signals an emphatic, rhetorical question (and is often followed by an emphatic interrogative tag). Clause-internally, *-áh* always occurs together with some other, clause-level discourse marker (see §15.3 below), and marks the constituent that is the focus of the assertion.

Focus *-áh* attaches to any clausal constituent – nominal, verbal, or other – as a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix. It is always constituent-final, as are many other Boundary Suffixes; it follows nominal enclitics, and in the case of verbs requires any fluid formatives to occur in the Inner Suffix position. Like most of Hup’s affect markers, it is much more commonly used in conversation than in narrative (with the exception of quoted speech).

Examples of the use of Focus *-áh* as a clause-final marker of rhetorical emphasis in interrogatives are given in (68–70).

- (68) *?ám = yi? = mǎ? = nih* *yúw-áh ?!*
 2sg=TEL=UNDER=EMPH.CO that.ITG-FOC
 ‘It really is you?!’ (txt)

- (69) *hǐp = b’ay*, *hǐ* *key-nǐh-ǎy* *tǐh-áh ?!*
 which=AGAIN Q see-be.like-DYMN 3sg-FOC

wǎd *dǐ?-nǐh* *?ám-áh ?!*
 food remain-NEG 2sg-FOC
 ‘What?! How can this be? You saved no food for me?!’ (txt)

- (70) *hǐ-n’ǎh* *yǎh* *yúw-áh*, *cóc? !*
 Q-NMZ FRUST that.ITG-FOC INTERJ
 ‘What the heck could this be?!’ (cv)

In its rhetorical emphatic function in interrogatives, *-áh* may be followed by the clause-final interrogative emphasis marker *tĩ* (see §15.3.1.1). Examples (71a–b) illustrate how the use of optional *-áh* in this context indicates relative certainty regarding the event in question. Hup speakers might say either of these in the context of a village gathering, where anyone who has something to say may get up and make a speech to the assembled people. Use of (71a) would imply that they intend to speak, whereas (71b) would indicate that they probably do not – for example, if a Tukano asked them to give a speech in Portuguese.

- (71) a) *?id-tég ?in-áh tĩ ?*
 speak-FUT 1pl-FOC EMPH.INT
 ‘We’ll speak, right?’
- b) *?id-tég ?in tĩ ?*
 speak-FUT 1pl EMPH.INT
 ‘Will we really speak?’ (el)

In interrogatives, Focus *-áh* is not limited to nominal arguments, but can occur on predicates as well, such as when followed by the Interactive Tag *yǎ* (see §15.3.2) (with which it is optional), as illustrated in example (72). (Note that here it takes the place of Interrogative *-V?* on the verb).

- (72) *hĩ-n’ih big yǎh yǎ? b’õt wid-yé-ep yikán*
 Q-NMZ HAB FRUSTMom roça arrive-enter-DEP over.there.ITG
- kəkəy-nih = yi? kədcak-wog-big-yǎh-ǎw-áh yǎ ?*
 interrupted-NEG=TEL pass.climb-EMPH1-HAB-FRUST-FLR-FOC TAG1
 ‘Why the heck does Mom climb up there without fail when she comes back from the fields?’ (txt)

In its clause-internal realization, the presence of *-áh* requires the additional presence of some other clause-final discourse marker, and typically marks the constituent that is the focus of the construction; this is usually a fronted nominal argument. Examples of this usage – with a variety of clause-final discourse markers – are given in the following paragraphs.

In co-occurrence with the ‘Exclusive’ form *-Vyik* (which singles out one participant as unique vis-à-vis the event; cf. §15.3.6), Focus *-áh* is essentially obligatory, although it may be replaced by one of the set of comparable focus markers mentioned below. It must mark the entity that is the focus of the exclusive situation (see §15.3.6 for more examples and discussion):

- (73) *hid b'iyi? ʔũh-áh, hɔhtěg-ét g'ãʔ-g'óʔ-oyík céc !*
 3pl only EPIST-FOC canoe-OBL be.suspended-go.about-EXCL INTERJ
 'It was probably **only they** who went out by canoe, hey!' (cv)

Focus *-áh* likewise serves this function of marking a focused constituent in the presence of the clause-final tags *hóʔ* (Interactive; see §15.3.3 below), as in (74), and *báʔ* (Protestive; §15.3.5 below), as in (75) (where the speaker is responding to a listener's critical comment). However, *-áh* is optional in these contexts, whereas it is required with exclusive *-Vyiʔ*.

- (74) *wɔh = d'əh b'iyi?-áh yúp dób-əcáp d'oʔ-g'ét-ehsʔ*
 River.Indian=PL only-FOC that.ITG many-INTS1 take-stand-TAG2
 'Only the River Indians plant a lot, you know.' (sp)

- (75) *náw = yiʔ-áh tíh-ăn dɔʔkéy ʔāh ʔid-iy báʔ !*
 good=TEL-FOC 3sg-OBJ correct 1sg speak-DYNM PROTST
 'All right, I'm telling it to her correctly!' (in response to another's comment) (txt)

Focus *-áh* occurs in one further context involving a clause-final affect marker, but here its distribution is somewhat different from the cases described above. In this construction, rather than marking a focused argument elsewhere in the clause, *-áh* always immediately precedes a clause-final nominal argument that takes the Dependent marker *-Vp* (cf. §7.1.5 and §18.2.4.2), which here seems to be associated with topic marking and emphasis (although its primary function is that of a clausal subordinator; see §18.2). The resulting construction as a whole is relatively emphatic. Note that in a more neutral affirmation, subject-final constituent order in the clause typically requires the Declarative marker *-Vh* instead of the Dependent marker, and the preceding predicate has no special marking.

- (76) *ni-d'əh-ăn, nř hup = cət = d'əh-áh núw-űp,*
 this-PL-OBJ 1sg.POSS RFLX=older.brother=PL-FOC this-DEP

tih nɔ-ay-mah-áh

3sg say-INCH-REP-DECL

'To them, those who are my older brothers, he spoke.' (txt)

- (77) *patí-ǎn húp-út ʔǎh ʔid-ihǎʔ, ʔid-iy-ǎh ʔǎh-ǎw-ǎp*
 Pattie-OBJ Hup-OBL 1sg speak-TAG2 speak-DYNM-FOC 1sg-FLR-DEP
 ‘I speak Hup to Pattie, you know, I really speak (it)!’ (sp)

Hup has a number of peripheral formatives that share an intriguing resemblance to *-ǎh*. These markers tend to have in common a phonological form ending in [ah]; moreover, like Focus *-ǎh*, they tend to act as wandering clitic-like entities within the clause, attaching to whichever clausal constituent is in particular focus. Also, in the appropriate context, they are acceptable in place of Focus *-ǎh* when it would otherwise be required (i.e., in combination with other affect markers). While *-ǎh* itself can be considered the ‘basic’ focus morpheme with no further semantic features, the others all combine a focus-marking function with some other semantic property – just as they appear formally to combine the phonological form *-ah* with additional consonantal material. The members of this set include the Contrast-tense particles *páh* and *j’ám / j’ǎh* (§13.4), the Adversative conjunction *kǎh* (§18.1.4), and (more marginally) the Reportative evidential *mah* (§14.9.4). It is not known whether any historical relationship exists among these forms, but the fact that they share a formal and functional resemblance synchronically suggests that they may have some reality as a class.

Examples (78–79) illustrate the ability of these other focus-type markers (here the Distant Past contrast form *j’ám / j’ǎh* and the Adversative conjunction *kǎh*) to take the place of Focus *-ǎh* when a clause-final Dependent marker is present (compare 76–77 above).

- (78) *yĩ-nih-pó-y j’ǎh ʔin-ĩp*
 that.ITG-be.like-EMPH1-DYNM DST.CNTR 1pl-DEP
 ‘That’s just how it was for us!’ (cv)
- (79) *póʔdah = cóʔ-óy = d’ǎh-ǎp cǎp = yiʔ kǎh ʔid-ip*
 upriver=LOC-DYNM=PL-DEP other=TEL ADVR speech-DEP
 ‘As for the upriver folks, (it’s) actually quite different, their speech.’ (txt)

Other [-ah] forms – here appearing as second position particles – are illustrated in the following examples; the Proximate Contrast form occurs in (80), and the Reportative evidential in (81):

- (80) *nog’ǎd pǎ = pog páh yúw-úh !*
 mouth NEG:EX=EMPH1 PRX.CNTR that.ITG-DECL
 ‘It has no mouth at all!’ (cv)

- (81) *nuh-kəbək = n'ǎn = mah hid pəʔ-əh, dób !*
 head-break=PL.OBJ=REP 3pl ritually.present-DECL many
 'They gave a dabacuri of sauva (lit. 'head-breaker') ants, they say, lots of
 them!' (txt)

15.2.4. Filler form -Vw- as an emphasis marker

The so-called 'Filler' syllable -Vw- is perhaps the most neutral morpheme in Hup, in terms of carrying a particular semantics. It appears in a number of distinct contexts, in which it serves a variety of functions. In certain contexts (particularly, but not exclusively, in combination with nominal arguments), the main role of -Vw- appears to be one of conveying emphasis; this corresponds to and is perhaps even iconically motivated by the phonological weight the Filler syllable adds to the word. This function is the focus of this section. Additionally (particularly in combination with verbal predicates), the Filler syllable plays a role in clause linkage and subordination, as discussed briefly below and in §18.1.2 and §18.2.3. The connection between these various uses, and the motivation for the Filler syllable in some of these contexts, is not yet fully clear; however, certain other mechanisms used in signaling clausal linkage – most notably the Dependent marker -Vp (see §7.1.5 and §18.2.4) – are also used as discourse markers on main clauses, so this dual duty is not unique to the Filler syllable.

Formally, Filler -Vw- is limited to contexts preceding a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix, and is the only case in Hup of a vowel-initial form that is not itself a Boundary Suffix. Its function is in many cases largely determined by that of the vowel-initial suffix that follows it. Filler -Vw- tends to occur on a clause-final constituent, but can appear both clause-internally and clause-finally in a single clause.

Filler -Vw- frequently occurs with clause-final nominal arguments (subjects or objects), followed by Declarative -Vh or the Dependent marker suffix -Vp (which here serves an emphasis-related function), or (particularly in the case of demonstrative pronouns) by a case-marker (Object -ǎn or Oblique -Vt). In this context, -Vw- – which is purely optional – functions to place additional emphasis on the participant in question. This participant may already be the topic of the discourse, as in (82) (from a conversation about a stolen fish net), or may be newly introduced, as in (83), where the speaker observes that what are fish to the spirit in a tale appear to humans as jaguars.

- (82) *páh-yi?* *tih* *y'æt-pog-?ě-y* *páh*
 PRX.CNTR-TEL 3sg lay-EMPH1-PERF-DYNM PRX.CNTR

yúw-uw-úh, *các,* *tih = j'á-aw-áh*
 that.ITG-FLR-DECL INTERJ 3sg=black-FLR-DECL
 'He left it there a little while ago, hey, a black one.' (cv)

- (83) *yã?ám = d'əh = mah* *?in-ăn-ãw-áh*
 jaguar=PL=REP 1pl-OBJ-FLR-DECL
 'For us they are jaguars.' (txt)

Further examples of Filler -Vw- with Declarative -Vh on nominals are given in (84–86). In (84), the speaker is expressing his difficulty in answering my questions about Hup morphemes. Example (85) was one person's response to a question put to the group, 'Are you all going for a bath?', and (86) marked the end of one story, which led into another.

- (84) *?áh-áp* "*tih = cúm palávara*" *nɔ-yi?-iy* *bíg* *?áh-ãw-áh*
 1sg-DEP 3sg=beginning word(Pt) say-TEL-DYNM HAB 1sg-FLR-DECL
 'As for me, "it's the beginning of the word," I always say.' (txt)

- (85) *j'ɔm-nih* *?áh-ãw-áh !*
 bathe-NEG 1sg-FLR-DECL
 'As for me, I'm not going for a bath!' (cv)

- (86) *ya?áp-ay = nih* *j'áh* *yúp* *?id-iw-ih*
 that.much-INCH=EMPH.CO DST.CNTR that.ITG speech-FLR-DECL
 '(As for) this story, it's over.' (txt)

Example of Filler -Vw- with Dependent marker -Vp are given in (87–88). As discussed in §7.1.5, Dependent marker -Vp serves a topic-marking function when it appears on nominal arguments of the clause.

- (87) *ham-yi?-ay* *bíg-áh* *?ăn-ãw-áp !*
 go-TEL-INCH HAB-FOC 1sg.OBJ-FLR-DEP
 '(After telling one story) another always comes to me!' (txt)

- (88) *hĩ-n`ĩh nɔ-tég-n`ĩh pǎ-áh, yú-uw-úp,*
 Q-NMZ say-FUT-NMZ NEG:EX-FOC that.ITG-FLR-DEP

mandukorí-ǎn-ǎw-ǎp !

Mandukori-OBJ-FLR-DEP

‘...Nothing like that (is said) to that one, to Mandukori!’ (sp)

On verbal predicates, Filler *-Vw-* is usually followed by *-ay* Inchoative, *-Vh* Declarative, or *-V?* Interrogative. It cannot occur with Dynamic *-V̇y*. In this context, it is sometimes used emphatically, but also performs a range of other functions. These are summarized briefly below, and in more detail elsewhere in this grammar.

The combination of Filler *-Vw-* and Inchoative *-ay* usually indicates the initiation of a long-term or permanent situation (see §12.3):

- (89) “*n`ĩ-có? niŋ hám,*” *ʔĩn-ǎn hid nɔ-b`ay-áh,*
 that-LOC 2pl go.IMP 1pl-OBJ 3pl say-AGAIN-DECL

“*nút tǎh = d`əh hid ni-tég-ew-ay-áh*”

here tapir/cow=PL 3pl be-FUT-FLR-INCH-DECL

“‘You all go there,’ they said to us, ‘here cattle will live from now on.’”

(txt)

- (90) *ʔǎh ham-yí?-iw-ay*
 1sg go-TEL-FLR-INCH
 ‘I’m going away (for good).’ (cv)

While the long-term event interpretation of this construction is the usual one, it is not the only one possible; the Filler + Inchoative forms on a verbal predicate can also have an emphatic, primarily stylistic function like that of the Filler with nominal arguments (see above). This is illustrated in (91), where the multiple occurrence of the Filler syllable (on various constituents of the clause) yields a highly emphatic utterance:

- (91) *hǎy-ǎn key-d'ó?-ow-ay ʔǎh-ǎw-ǎh, nút tǎk j'óŋ !*
 um-OBJ see-take-FLR-INCH 1sg-FLR-DECL here thigh punch

hi-yǎt-æw-ay !

descend-lie-FLR-INCH

'I've caught a glimpse of what's-his-name; he hits her in the leg and gets down from the hammock!' (cv)

When combined with the Declarative suffix *-Vh* on predicates, Filler *-Vw-* appears to take on a distinct function relating to clause linkage, as in (92–94). Whereas the Filler + Inchoative suffix combination occurs freely on verbal predicates in isolated clauses (with the aspectual function described above), the Filler + Declarative combination is grammatical only when preceded by a linked clause (on which the Filler suffix cannot occur); the first clause makes a point, while the second provides more information about it. The Filler syllable appears to signal that the Declarative marker is here functioning non-canonically as a linker, and *-Vw-* is in fact required on the second clause of the pair in these examples. The use of this construction in clause linking almost certainly relates to the non-canonical combinations of Declarative *-Vh* with other Boundary Suffixes in some linking contexts (see §17.3.2 and §18.1.2).

- (92) **j'ám-yi? hid ní-ĩw-ĩh*
 DST.CNTR-TEL 3pl be-FLR-DECL
 (Intended meaning: 'A long time ago they lived.')
- (93) *j'ám-yi? hid ni-ní-h, nút hid ní-ĩw-ĩh*
 DST.CNTR-TEL 3pl be-INFR2-DECL here 3pl be-FLR-DECL
 'A long time ago they lived (there), (now) they live here.' (el)
- (94) *yúp = mah yúw-úh, mǎhǎy hod hid nǎ-ǎw-ǎh*
 that.ITG=REP that.ITG-DECL deer hole 3pl say-FLR-DECL
 'So that was it, that which they should call the Deer's Tomb.' (txt)

The Filler syllable has a similar linking-type function in combination with the Interrogative suffix *-V?*. Filler *-Vw-* cannot occur in a normal information-soliciting question, and is grammatical only in rhetorical or 'backchanneling' interrogatives that essentially respond to another's statement by repeating this statement as a question; as such it apparently signals a link to preceding statement. In fact, in rhetorical constructions involving the repetition of the verbal predicate, such as (95) (uttered in response to the statement 'your mother's get-

ting a bath'), the simple Interrogative suffix without the Filler is judged ungrammatical.

- (95) *j'óm-ǫw-ǫ?* ?
 bathe-FLR-INT
 'Getting a bath, huh?' (cv)

Relative clauses are yet another environment in which the Filler syllable appears, again with a function relating to clause linkage rather than emphasis. Filler *-Vw-* occurs in all cases, and only in those cases, in which a headless relative clause stands in for an object or oblique nominal argument of the main clause verb, and is nominalized directly by a case marker (either Oblique *-Vt* or Object *-ǎn*) (see §18.2.3). The case suffix attaches to the verb stem, separated from it only by the Filler syllable. Note that in adverbial clauses, on the other hand, the oblique case-markers *-an* and *-Vt* attach directly to verb stems, with no intervening Filler syllable (see §18.2.6.2). The use of *-Vw-* in headless case-marked relative clauses is illustrated in (96) (Oblique case), and (97) (Object case). Example (97) also illustrates the common occurrence of the Filler syllable between a demonstrative stem and case marker, as mentioned above.

- (96) *tih = hipūd [y'æt-yí?-iw-ít] hid kow'ow'-tu?-y'æt-yí?-ay-áh*
 3sg=mojeca lay-TEL-FLR-OBL 3pl squeeze-immersed-lay-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'They squeezed and dropped (the poison) into his mojeca, which had been set aside.' (txt)

- (97) *tih ?ǫg-ay-áh, yú-uw-ǎn...*
 3sg drink-INCH-DECL that.ITG-FLR-OBJ

yúp [hid kow'ow'-tu?-y'æt-yí?-pog-?é-ew-ǎn-áh]
 that.ITG 3pl squeeze-immersed-lay-TEL-EMPH1-PERF-FLR-OBJ-DECL
 'He drank it... that into which they had squeezed and left timbó.' (txt)

15.3. Sentence-final affect particles

This section is devoted to the large set of clause-final discourse markers in Hup. These formatives have a number of formal features in common: they are restricted to clause-final position, they can occur only once per clause, and most are free particles or – in a few cases – enclitics. They have scope over the clause as a whole and serve an affect-related function having to do with emphasis or encoding some aspect of social interaction (usually involving the addressee).

They tend to be very common in conversation – especially in highly animated conversation – but rarely occur in narrative. None are fluid morphemes (see §3.5), and they typically follow even the Interrogative and Dependent Boundary Suffixes, which in other contexts are normally clause-final. Several of these affect particles have formal variants according to the type of clause (interrogative, imperative, etc.) in which they appear, and in some cases these variants act as ‘internally complex’ Boundary Suffixes (see §3.4.1.2). Most do not co-occur with the Declarative or Dynamic suffixes at all, whose morphosyntactic position they fill. As is true for many other discourse markers in Hup and cross-linguistically, the patterning and functions of these markers are complex; a full understanding of their behavior must await future research.

15.3.1. Emphasis particles (*ti*)

One group of these discourse particles, considered here as a set, have very similar forms: *tĩ*, *ti?*, *tí*, *tíh*. To some degree, these forms associate with different clause types, but perform similar emphasis-related functions. Given their close resemblance, it is very likely that a historical relationship – or even a relationship on the synchronic level, corresponding to differentiation according to clause type – exists among them (or some of them). It is probably not an accident that some of the phonological variation among these forms corresponds to similar variation, also according to clause type, seen in other interactive tags discussed in this chapter (*yǎ*, see §15.3.2, and *hǎ?*, §15.3.3; see the summary in Table 45 at the end of §15.3.3). Note that these emphatic *ti* forms bear a formal similarity to the Counterfactual marker =*tíh* (§14.3), but the latter patterns differently in the clause and is functionally quite distinct.

15.3.1.1. Interrogative emphasis *tĩ*

The particle *tĩ* (glossed EMPH.INT) is a marker of interrogative emphasis, used in emphatic questions and expressions of doubt (examples 98–99). It is generally considered to be interchangeable with the functionally similar particle *yǎ* (which also has rising tone when used in interrogatives; see §15.3.2 below), although *tĩ* may indicate a slightly higher degree of doubt.

- (98) *hĩ-n ʔih ʔin wǎd-ǎ? tĩ?*
 Q-NMZ 1pl eat-INT EMPH.INT
 ‘What the heck is this we’re eating?!’ (joking) (ru)

- (99) *hí-có? yǎh tih ham-yǎh-ǎ? tǐ?*
 Q-LOC FRUST3sg go-FRUST-INT EMPH.INT
 ‘Where in the world has he gone?’ (txt)

In polar questions, the Focus marker *-áh* (or a related form) often occurs on post-verbal subjects followed by clause-final *tǐ* (examples 100–101; see also §15.2.3 above). As illustrated by the comparison in (102), *tǐ* by itself adds emphasis to a question, and together with Focus *-áh* indicates that the response to the question is already anticipated:

- (100) *?amǐh máj ní-ǐy = mah tih-áh tǐ?*
 2sg.POSS basket be-DYNM=REP 3sg-FOC EMPH.INT
 ‘You have your basket (as they said), right?’ (txt)

- (101) *yít = yi? tih j’ǎh tǐ?*
 thus=TEL 3sg DST.CNTR EMPH.INT
 ‘It (the story) went like that, didn’t it?’ (txt)

- (102) a) *b’oy-tég ?ín?*
 study-FUT 1pl
 ‘Are we going to study?’ (neutral)
- b) *b’oy-tég ?ín tǐ?*
 study-FUT 1pl EMPH.INT
 ‘Are we *really* going to study?’ (doubting, emphatic)
- c) *b’oy-tég ?ín-áh tǐ?*
 study-FUT 1pl-FOC EMPH.INT
 ‘We’ll study, right?’ (relative certainty, emphatic) (el)

15.3.1.2. *Emphasis tí*

Like Interrogative *tǐ*, the Emphasis marker *tí* (glossed EMPH.DEP) appears to associate primarily with a specific clause type: in most instances of its use, it occurs optionally in a main clause following Dependent marker *-Vp* (which in this context is also frequently associated with emphasis, as discussed in §7.1.5 and in §18.2.4.2). It is the only clause-final emphasis marker possible in such Dependent-marked main clauses.

- (103) *kúb tih naʔ-wób-op tí*
 starving 3sg lose.consciousness-rest.on-DEP EMPH.DEP
 ‘He was really hungry (up in the tree).’ (txt)

- (104) *ʔin = ʔih ʔǎp = nih-áh tíh-íp tí, g’ǎg-tǎh tih*
 1pl=MSC NEG:ID=EMPH.CO-FOC 3sg-DEP EMPH.DEP Bone-Son EMPH2
 ‘He isn’t one of us, that Bone-Son.’ (txt)

While the Dependent marker *-Vp* usually occurs clause-finally, immediately preceding *tí* (suggesting that both may be functioning as clause-level markers), it occasionally appears instead on a nominal argument occurring earlier in the clause:

- (105) *ʔin-íp yí-n’ih = n’ǎn hipāh-nih yǎh tí*
 1pl-DEP that.ITG-NMZ=OBJ.PL know-NEG FRUST EMPH.DEP
 ‘We (humans) don’t know about these things.’ (txt)

The relationship between emphatic *tí* and interrogative *tǐ* is suggested by their apparently identical functions in their respective clause types, as illustrated by the following example:

- (106) *yí nǎ-ǎy tíh-ǎn ʔin-áh tǐ ?*
 that.ITG say-DYNM 3sg-OBJ 1pl-FOC EMPH.INT

ʔin nǎ-nih yǎh ʔin-íp tí !
 1pl say-NEG FRUST 1pl-DEP EMPH.DEP
 ‘Did we say thus to her? As for us, we did not say (that), in vain!’ (sp)

The general restriction of *tí* to main clauses involving a Dependent marker may be subject to some dialectal variation. For example, speakers in the Tat Deh dialect region accept *tí* directly following a noun, as in (107), while Barreira speakers accept only Emphasis *tih* (see below) in this context. However, the similarity between these two forms creates confusion in elicitation for speakers as well as for linguists, so this issue must await future resolution.

- (107) *mǎhǎy tí !*
 deer EMPH.DEP
 ‘It’s a deer!’ (el)

15.3.1.3. *Emphasis tíh*

The Emphasis marker *tíh* (glossed EMPH2) typically marks quite forceful, even angry expressions, and is clearly the strongest of the *ti* emphatic forms. It is always stressed, and occurs with a variety of clause types. Such clauses may involve a full predicate (example 108); they may also be composed of only a single nominal item (example 109), whereas normally an equated nominal subject and predicate are required to form a complete predicate nominal clause. Further examples are given in (110–111).

- (108) *wæd-d'o?-níh-ay tíh !*
 eat-take-NEG-INCH EMPH2
 '(They) didn't get anything to eat!' (txt)

- (109) *j'ám-ãp=pog tíh, dúdu, b'éj=pog tíh !*
 DST.CNTR-DEP=EMPH1 EMPH2 Pedro jandia.fish=EMPH1 EMPH2
 'It was that big one, Pedro, that big jandiá fish!' (cv)

- (110) *núp tíh !*
 this EMPH2
 'This one!' (pointing out) (cv)

- (111) *búy=kamí tíh !*
 aru=time.of EMPH2
 'It was the time of the arú (cold period)!' (cv)

Alternative ways to express example (111), using different *ti* particles, are *búy=kamí-ip tí* (EMPH.DEP) and *búy=kamí-iti?* (EMPH.TAG, see below); consultants report little or no functional difference among these. Emphasis *tíh* can also apparently occur interchangeably with *tí* in a main clause marked with the clausal Dependent marker; in this context, *tíh* is said to be more forcefully emphatic than *tí*:

- (112) *nĩ-áh yúw-up tíh !*
 1sg.POSS-FOC that.ITG-DEP EMPH2
 'It's mine!' (el)

15.3.1.4. Emphatic tag *-(V)ti?*

The tag *-(V)ti?* (glossed EMPH.TAG) is formally somewhat distinct from the other members of this set. It is unstressed, ends in a glottal stop, and typically attaches directly to a verb stem as an ‘internally complex’ Boundary Suffix (cf. §3.4.1.2); with nominals, it appears without the copied vowel. Its function remains somewhat mysterious, but it does appear to have something to do with emphasis. Its use is illustrated in the following examples:

- (113) *ʔin ʔǎy=dóʔ=d’əh yiʔ=n’ǎn ʔũh-nəh-d’ák-n’ǐh*
 1pl FEM=child=PL man=OBJ.PL INTRC=fall-stick.against-NMZ

ʔǎp, yúp tih muhũʔ-ní-ǐti? !

NEG:ID that.ITG 3sg play-be-EMPH.TAG

‘We as girls didn’t go running after men like that, (but) there she’s gone messing around (and gotten married too young)!’ (cv)

- (114) *nǐ-n’ǐh = nih j’ám, ʔǎn ʔíp ʔid-iti?*
 this-NMZ=EMPH.CO DST.CNTR 1sg.OBJ father speak-EMPH.TAG
 ‘Thus Father told me (long ago).’ (txt)

- (115) *ʔin-ǐp pík wǎd-ǎti?*
 1pl-DEP fruit.sp eat-EMPH.TAG
 ‘As for us, we ate *pik* fruit!’ (el)

Following clause-final nominal arguments, *-(V)ti?* takes the place of the Boundary Suffix (usually *-Vh*) that is required on post-verbal subjects and on predicate nominals. Here it appears without the copied vowel, and can be classified (on the basis of stress) as an enclitic:

- (116) *núw-áh nǐ dápi=ti? !*
 this-FOC 1sg.POSS pencil(Pt)=EMPH.TAG
 ‘This one is my pencil!’ (showing off a new possession) (el)

- (117) *w’əh-éy = ʔǎy j’ǎh ʔǎh = ti?*
 far-DYNM=FEM DST.CNTR 1sg=EMPH.TAG
 ‘I am a woman who comes from far away.’ (sg)

Finally, *-(V)ti?* occurs together with the Epistemic modality particle *ʔũh* in a formulaic expression of doubt (cf. §14.8):

- (118) *cană ?úh ?áh yum-tég-ti?*
 pineapple EPIST 1sg plant-FUT-EMPH.TAG
 ‘Maybe I should plant pineapple.’ (sp)

- (119) *húp = mæh ?úh núp = ti?*
 person=DIM EPIST this=EMPH.TAG
 ‘Perhaps this is a little person.’ (txt)

15.3.2. Interactive tag *ya*

The clause-final particle *ya* (glossed TAG1) functions as an interactive tag. It has two realizations: it occurs with interrogative clauses, where it appears with rising tone (*yǎ*), and – more rarely – it appears on declarative clauses with high tone (*[-/V]yá*), where it typically attaches to predicates as an ‘internally complex’ Boundary Suffix with a copied vowel. It is a stylistic device; in addition to being purely optional, its use is subject to regional variation. Consultants report that speakers from the Japu/Vaupés area use it more often than those on the Tiquié River.

In its more common interrogative function, *yǎ* acts as an emphatic tag. It is judged to be almost interchangeable with the Interrogative Emphasis particle *tš* (§15.3.1.1), although it is considered somewhat more emphatic. Interrogative *yǎ* is especially common in rhetorical questions (asked not so much for information as for rhetorical effect), but it is also used when asking an information question emphatically. It follows a complete interrogative clause (whether a polar or a content question; see §17.4), and often co-occurs with other clause-internal emphasis markers (e.g., =*pog* in example 121). Examples of the interrogative use of *yǎ* are provided in (120–124):

- (120) *hĩ-n’ih ?ám = ?ín ?ám-ǎn g’et-wǎd-æ? yǎ ?!*
 Q-NMZ 2sg=mother 2sg-OBJ stand-eat-INT TAG1
 ‘What does your mother feed you?!’ (seeing no food in house) (ru)

- (121) *hĩ-n’ih ?áh wǎd-pog-tég yǎ ?*
 Q-NMZ 1sg eat-EMPH1-FUT TAG1
 ‘What the heck will I eat?’ (el)

- (122) *hĩ-n'ĩh-tég ?in yǎ ? ...páy bíl-íy = cud*
 Q-NMZ-FUT 1pl TAG1 bad work-DYNM=INFR

?in = ?in ?in-ǎn-ǎh

1pl=mother 1pl-OBJ-DECL

‘What are we going to do? Our mother has done badly by us, apparently.’
 (txt)

- (123) *tód-ót = mah hid yók-o? j'ám yǎ ?*
 hollow-OBL=REP 3pl poke-INT DST.CNTR TAG1
 ‘They poked around in the hole, right?’ (txt)

- (124) *cecádio = wəd-ǎ? yikán cu?-pog-píd-i? yǎ, n'ikán ?*
 Cesario=RESP-INT over.there.ITG grab-EMPH1-DIST-INT TAG1 over.there
 ‘Cesario always gets (the money) there, doesn’t he, over there?’ (cv)

The Focus marker *-ǎh* sometimes occurs on a clause-final pronoun when followed by *yǎ* (example 125), and can also appear on a verbal predicate followed by *yǎ*, in place of the usual Interrogative marker *-V?* (example 126).

- (125) *patí ni-pó-y tíh-ǎh yǎ ?*
 Pattie be-EMPH1-DYNM 3sg-FOC TAG1
 ‘Pattie’s here, right?’ (el)

- (126) *hĩ-n'ĩh bíg yǎh yǎ? b'ýt wid-yé-ep yikán*
 Q-NMZ HAB FRUSTMom roça arrive-enter-DEP over.there.ITG

kəkəy-nĩh = yi? kədcak-wog-bíg-yǎh-ǎw-ǎh yǎ ?

interrupt-NEG=TEL pass.climb-EMPH1-HAB-FRUST-FLR-FOC TAG1

‘Why the heck does Mom climb up there without fail when she comes back from the fields?’ (txt)

Like most other clause-final particles, *yǎ* is morphosyntactically bound to the preceding predicate, and cannot be separated from it by an address term or other material:

- (127) a) *hĩ-n'ĩh wag ?in hám-ǎ? yǎ, patí ?*
 Q-NMZ day 1pl go-INT TAG1 Pattie
 ‘So which day will we go, Pattie?’ (el)

- b) * *hĩ-n'ih wag ?in hám-ã? patí yǎ?*
 Q-NMZ day 1pl go-INT Pattie TAG1

The non-interrogative function of (-V)yá (high tone) as a rhetorical interactive tag is illustrated in examples (128–129). As such, (-V)yá may take the place of the required suffix material (usually the Declarative marker -Vh) on post-verbal subjects in affirmative clauses. It combines directly with verbs as an ‘internally complex’ Boundary Suffix, requiring a copied vowel to come between itself and the verb stem (example 129).

- (128) *nĩ ków hicóy'=hõ yǎh yúp yá*
 1sg.POSS pimenta addition=NONVIS FRUST that.ITG TAG1
 ‘Hey, that sounds like something I can put in my quinhapira! (txt)

- (129) *n'í-có? pidadacú ni-yǎh-ǎyá*
 there-LOC piraracu.fish be-FRUST-TAG1
 ‘I guess that’s where the piraracu fish live, huh?’ (txt)

It is likely that Hup *ya* is cognate with Dâw *-yam*, also a rhetorical interrogative tag (cf. S. Martins 1994: 172).

15.3.3. Interactive Tag (-V)hǎ?

The Interactive Tag (-V)hǎ? is used with statements to bid for attention and/or solicit a response from a listener. It may be related to the affirmative particle *hǎ?* ‘yeah, OK’, used for affirmative answers to questions and acquiescence to requests.

Interactive (-V)hǎ? patterns in much the same way as do the other clause-final discourse particles like Emphasis *yǎ* and *tĩ*; it is an optional, stylistic device, its use is subject to variation among individual speakers, and it is almost completely absent from narrative – occurring only in quoted conversation or when a storyteller breaks out of the narrative mode to make a meta-comment about the tale. Also like the other discourse particles that are realized as ‘internally complex’ Boundary Suffixes (e.g., *-[V]ti?* and *[-V]yá*) in declarative clauses, it fills the required morphological slot (usually occupied by Declarative -Vh) following clause-final declarative subjects, and requires an intervening vowel-copy when attaching to verb stems.

Examples of the use of Interactive Tag (-V)hǎ? are given in (130–133):

- (130) *tinĩh tít hśʔ, húp = d'əh b'iyiʔ nút ní-ĩhśʔ*
 3sg.POSS string TAG2 Hup.person=PL only here be-TAG2
 'That was his line; just Hupd'əh will live here, you know?'¹⁷⁹ (sp)
- (131) *cǎ-wag píd g'ǎʔ-ǎy j'am yĩ-n'ih hǒp hśʔ*
 other-dayDIST be.suspended-DYNM DST.CNTR that.ITG-NMZ fish TAG2
 'The other day too some fish were in my net, you know.' (cv)
- (132) *tih hǎʔ-taʔ-píd-ihśʔ, nǒh !*
 3sg stick.in.hand-meet-DIST-TAG2 say
 'He too put his hands into the hollow (to catch the fish as they emerged), you know?' (txt)
- (133) *ʔinĩh pǎt cóʔ-óy ʔin hæy'-hũʔ-yiʔ-tég-hśʔ*
 1pl.POSS hair LOC-DYNM 1pl cut-finish-TEL-FUT-TAG2
 '(We'll stick her hair onto our heads) after we've cut off our own hair, you know?' (cv)

Like several other clause-final discourse markers, *(-V)hśʔ* frequently appears together with the Epistemic modality particle *ʔũh*, as in (134); note that this example also illustrates the use of *(-V)hśʔ* with an interrogative clause.

- (134) *ham-pó-y ʔũh ʔám hśʔ*
 go-EMPH1-DYNM EPIST 2sg TAG2
 'I guess you're really going, huh?' (el)

Tag *(-V)hśʔ* can also occur with the Focus marker *-áh*, which can result in a more emphatic statement, as in (135) or the response in (136):

- (135) *wǒh = d'əh b'iyiʔ-áh yúp dǎb-əcáp d'oʔ-g'ét-ehśʔ*
 River.Indian=PL only-FOC that.ITG many-INTS1 take-stand-TAG2
 'Only the Tukanos plant a lot, you know.' (sp)

¹⁷⁹ This Hup idiom is much like that found in English, where 'line' is used figuratively to mean 'something that one habitually says' (although the two expressions likely have very different histories).

(136) A: *hú?* = *d'əh* *dəb* !
 pi-um=PL many
 'There are a lot of pi-ums!'

B: *dəb-áh* *yi-d'əh* *hə?* !
 many-FOC that.ITG-PL TAG2
 'There sure are, huh!' (cv)

Hup also has a distinct form =*hə*, which serves much the same interactive, attention-getting function as (-V)*hə?* and is limited to imperative clauses. It lacks the final glottal stop of (-V)*hə?*, and its lack of stress places it into the clitic class (whereas [-V]*hə?* is a Boundary Suffix), but is considered to be a variant of the latter form.

(137) *ʔam hi-g'et-d'oʔ-ʔũh-ũy*, *kéy = hə*, *nóh* !
 2sg FACT-stand-take-APPL-DYNM see.IMP=TAG2 say
 'You're going to step on it (tape recorder), hey, look out!' (cv)

(138) *d'oʔ-kədnæn* ! *kow'-nínih = hə* !
 take-pass.come.IMP peel-NEG.IMP=TAG2
 'Bring it here! Hey, don't peel it!' (cv)

(139) *náw = yiʔ* *tok-póg = hə*, *cəc* !
 good=TEL pound-EMPH1=TAG2 INTERJ
 'Hey, pound (the coca) carefully!' (cv)

The fact that all three of the discourse tags discussed up to this point in §15.3 appear to have similar variants according to clause type argues (in each case) for a relationship among these variants. The variants and their (partial) parallelism are summarized in Table 45.

Table 45. Distribution of Hup tag variants

Clause type	Interactive marker		
Declarative (with verbs)	(-V) <i>hə?</i>	(-V) <i>yá</i>	(-V) <i>tiʔ</i>
Declarative (main clause) bearing Dependent marker			<i>tí</i>
Interrogative		<i>yǎ</i>	<i>tǐ</i>
Imperative	= <i>hə</i>		

15.3.4. Additional emphatic device: final glottalization

Hup has an additional device for indicating emphasis, which – unlike the other forms discussed in this section – is not a formative per se, but a phonological process. This involves glottalizing the final segment of the final constituent of a clause, or of a word that occurs outside the main clause. If the morpheme ends in a vowel, a glottal stop is typically added to the word; if it ends in a voiceless consonant, this consonant is dropped and replaced by /ʔ/. A final voiced consonant typically becomes glottalized (C’).

This emphatic device is primarily stylistic; its use is common in narrative, particularly by older, experienced storytellers. These speakers use it most frequently – often uttered sharply at a higher pitch – to embellish descriptive adverbial expressions; among the most common are *bǐg*’ [bik] ‘a long time’ (from *bǐg*), and *téʔ* ‘until’ (from *té*), in expressions of traveling until a certain time or place is reached, as in example (140). Further examples are given in (141–142).

- (140) *deh-d’óʔ c’óʔ tǐh d’ób-mǐʔ... mmmm! téʔ !*
 water-take LOC 3sg go.to.river-UNDER IDEO until(EMPH)

deh = mí-an tǐh túh-úh
 water=stream-DIR 3sg pause-DECL

‘While she went down to the water, (noise of going) until! he paused by the stream.’ (txt)

- (141) *yíkán mǔy hid biʔ-píd-íh, p’óg’ !*
 over.there house 3pl make-DIST-DECL big(EMPH)
 ‘Out there they built a house, (it was) big!’ (txt)

- (142) *nihúʔ nǎ núp j’ah c’óʔ ni-tǎʔ-nǐʔ !*
 all NEG:R this land LOC be-CNTRFCT-INFR2(EMPH)
 ‘All of these (evil beings) were almost in our land !’ (txt)

- (143) *nǐŋ = tǎhʔíp = cud-ay yúʔ !*
 2pl=child.father=INFR-INCH that.ITG(EMPH)
 ‘It’s like he was your husband!’ (angrily responding to women who have given her a hard time about her husband) (cv)

15.3.5. Protestive *bá?*

The Protestive particle *bá?* signals a clash of interest between the speaker and another person. This is usually the addressee, but may also be a closely involved third party. Depending on the context, use of the Protestive can convey concession, protest, or even apology. Like most of Hup's other discourse markers, its use is primarily stylistic; it is common in songs, in keeping with the self-expressive traditional song style of the Hupd'əh. Formally, *bá?* is a fully free particle, which – unlike the other formatives defined as particles in Hup – occurs outside (and following) the clause boundary as defined by the presence of the Declarative marker (whereas other discourse-marking particles discussed above are able to follow the clause-final Boundary Suffixes *-V?* [Interrogative] and *-Vp* [Dependent], but usurp the place of the Declarative). It does not occur in interrogative clauses – perhaps because it comments on an established fact, rather than one that is in doubt.

Use of Protestive *bá?* to signal a concession, where the speaker allows another's desire to override his/her own, is illustrated below. A speaker would say (144) when, on the trail, he/she would like to continue on, but concedes to the others in the party who want to stop for the night. Example (145) was uttered by my Hup 'grandmother' on the first occasion that I offered to accompany her to work in the roça; she at first protested that I would fall off the log bridges over the streams, but then gave in.

- (144) *?in ?əh-?e?-té-h bá?*
 1pl sleep-PERF-FUT-DECL PROTST
 'All right, we'll sleep here.' (ru)

- (145) *hám-áy, bá?*
 go-INCH.IMP PROTST
 'OK, come on then.' (cv)

The use of *bá?* to indicate protest is illustrated in the following examples. Example (146) is sometimes uttered by children who are refusing to go to school, and a woman who was telling a story of her experiences used the Protestive (example 147) in response to a listener's criticism.

- (146) *ham-níh-ay ?áh-áh bá?*
 go-NEG-INCH 1sg-DECLPROTST
 'I won't go!' (ru)

- (147) *náw = yiʔ-áh, tíh-ǎn doʔkéy ʔǎh ʔid-iy báʔ !*
 good=TEL-FOC 3sg-OBJ correct 1sg speak-DYNM PROTST
 ‘That’s enough, I’m telling it to her correctly!’ (txt)

The Protestive can also occur in expressions of reproach or frustration:

- (148) *ʔǎh hutbí = hǔ báʔ*
 1sg feel.shame-NONVIS PROTST
 ‘I feel ashamed.’ (txt)
- (149) *ʔám-ǎp ʔǎn ʔid-níh-ʔeʔ j’ám-yiʔ báʔ*
 2sg-DEP 1sg.OBJ speak-NEG-PERF yesterday-TEL PROTST
 ‘You never spoke with me in the past (though I wanted you to).’ (ru)

It can also have an apologetic function, in cases where the speaker announces his intentions despite the knowledge that others – and even he himself – might prefer the situation to be otherwise:

- (150) *ʔin hám-ǎy yúw-úh báʔ*
 1pl go-DYNM that.ITG-DECL PROTST
 ‘Well, we’re going (but you have to stay behind).’ (el)
- (151) *ʔin ʔǔh-ay-áh báʔ*
 1pl sleep-INCH-DECL PROTST
 ‘Well, we’re going to sleep (although we’d like to stay up and talk).’ (cv)

The use of Protestive *báʔ* in imperatives suggests a real or anticipated clash of interest between the speaker and the interlocutor, and may also register politeness (stemming from the awareness of the possible clash). In (152), for example, the singer of an improvised song is expressing his desire for manioc beer, although he knows that none is available. (153) would be said when the addressee has found something that the speaker thinks might belong to him, and I have often heard children say (154) when trying to get my attention.

- (152) *niŋǎh dǎh b’oʔ ʔǎn niŋ be-key-kǎm báʔ*
 2pl.POSS water cuia 1sg.OBJ 2sg show-see-IMP2 PROTST
 ‘Show me your caxiri.’ (sg)

- (153) *d'oʔ-kəd-næn-kǎm báʔ, nǎ ʔúh yúp = ʔih,*
 take-quick.come-IMP2 PROTST 1sg.POSS EPIST that=MSC

ʔáh key-nǎŋ

1sg see-COOP

'Bring it here, it might be mine, I'll have a look.' (ru)

- (154) *key-kǎm báʔ !*
 see-IMP2 PROTST
 'Look!' (cv)

Finally, the Protestive can be used as a type of interjection when one misspeaks, akin to English 'oops':

- (155) *mǎh, báʔ, pǎd...*
 Mih PROTST Ped
 'Mih, I mean, Ped...' (called addressee by wrong name) (txt)

- (156) *ʔapáh ! dadánya máǎy ʔid-nǎh = hǎ ʔáh-áh báʔ !*
 INTERJ orange payment speak-NEG=NONVIS 1sg-DECLPROTST
 'Oh! I guess I forgot to tell about the payment for the oranges!' (txt)

15.3.6. Exclusive - *Vyík*

The use of this form indicates that an activity is being performed by or in relation to one participant alone, to the exclusion of other potential participants. When used in intransitive constructions, the subject is interpreted as acting by him/herself. In transitive or ditransitive clauses, any argument may be singled out as isolated vis-à-vis other referents. The constituent that is the focus of the Exclusive construction is typically fronted and marked with the Focus morpheme *-áh* or a comparable focus form (which is obligatory when *-Vyík* is present; see §15.2.3).

Exclusive *-Vyík* always follows the last constituent in a clause. It occurs only as an 'internally complex' Boundary Suffix, which is phonologically bound to its host and requires a copied vowel from the preceding stem. For *-Vyík*, this vowel-copying is required in all contexts – even when the host is a noun – whereas the vowel-copying found with most other 'internally complex' Boundary Suffixes in Hup (such as the Emphasis marker *-[V]tiʔ* and Interactive *[-V]hǎʔ*, see above) is limited to contexts where these follow a verb stem.

Examples of the *-Vyík* construction with intransitive clauses are given in (157–159). In these, the subject (clause-initial and marked with the focus particle) is singled out with respect to the predication, *via-à-vis* other potential participants. Note that Focus *-áh* always attaches to the end of the focused constituent, following other morphemes (see §15.2.3 above). Example (159b) also illustrates a functionally similar (but not identical) periphrastic strategy for indicating exclusivity, involving the quantifier *b'íyí?* ‘alone’ (which can also co-occur with the Exclusive construction, as in 158).

- (157) *nř hűt-áh ní-íyík*
 1sg.POSS tobacco-FOC be-EXCL
 ‘My tobacco alone exists’ (i.e., ‘I alone have tobacco.’) (el)
- (158) *híd b'íyí? ?űh-áh, hčhtěg-ét g'ă?g'ó?-oyík !*
 3pl only EPIST-FOC canoe-OBL suspend-go.about-EXCL
 ‘It was probably just them, the only ones who went out by canoe.’
 (i.e., so they must be responsible for the theft) (cv)
- (159) (a) *pűh = mah-áh ?ag-tég-eyík, ?in = hin ham-tég,*
 Puh=REP-FOC drink-FUT-EXCL 1pl=also go-FUT

tih máh ?ag-?ay-tég ?in = hin-íh
 3sg near drink-VENT-FUT 1pl=also-DECL
 ‘Puh’s going to drink alone, they say; we’ll go too, and drink with him.’ (el/ru)
- (b) *pűh b'íyí? = mah ?ag-té-h*
 Puh only=REP drink-FUT-DECL
 ‘Only Puh will drink, it’s said.’ (el)

In transitive and ditransitive clauses, the singled-out participant – which is fronted and marked by the focus particle – may be the subject, object, or recipient, as illustrated by the elicited paradigms in (160–161).

- (160) a) *híd-áh b'ă? wăd-æyík*
 3pl-FOC beiju eat-EXCL
 ‘Only they ate manioc bread.’ (i.e., no one else had any)

- b) *b'ǎʔ-áh hid wǎd-ǎyík*
 beiju-FOC 3pl eat-EXCL
 'They ate **only manioc bread.**' (i.e., nothing else)
- (161) a) *cug'ǎt-áh tíh-ǎn yǔ bé-eyík*
 paper-FOC 3sg-OBJ John show-EXCL
 'John showed him **only the paper** (letter).'
- b) *tíh-ǎn-áh cug'ǎt yǔ bé-eyík*
 3sg-OBJ-FOC paper John show-EXCL
 'John showed **only him** the paper (letter).'

It is also possible for the focused constituent to occur clause-finally, where it is itself marked with Exclusive *-Vyík*; in these cases the (obligatory) focus marker typically occurs on the preceding predicate. In (162), for example, the speaker uses the Exclusive gram to contrast the difficult time he experienced after his wife's death with the time before; in (163), the speaker is emphasizing that he alone was singled out to bear the responsibility of house-sitting for a Tukano couple.

- (162) *tǎhʔín pǎ, yít ham-nih j'ám tíh-iyík*
 child.mother NEG:EX thus go-NEG DST.CNTR 3sg-EXCL
 'Without my wife, it (i.e., life) just doesn't go well anymore.' (txt)
- (163) *ʔám-ǎn ʔáh y'ǎt-tég-b'ay-áh, nó-ǎy-áh ʔǎn-ǎyík*
 2sg-OBJ 1sg lay-FUT-AGAIN-DECL say-DYNM-FOC 1sg.OBJ-EXCL
 'I'll leave you (to house-sit for me), (he) said (specifically) to me.'
 (cv)
- (164) *yǐ-nih-pǎ-y píd j'ám yǐ-n'ih-ǎyík !*
 that.ITG-be.like-EMPH1-DYNM DIST DST.CNTR that.ITG-NMZ-EXCL
 'It's only this way that they always do it.' (cv)

Exclusive *-Vyík* can focus on constituents other than nominal arguments, such as the adverbial expression 'all together' in example (165). A speaker would say this in response to someone's complaint that they did not get their share at a meal, with the implication that it was their own fault for not keeping up with the others in eating out of the communal pot; in other words, the act of all eating together is contrasted to other situations in which the participants might have eaten separately and so received different-sized portions.

- (165) *ʔæyæ̀t = yiʔ-áh ʔin wáed-æyík !*
 together=TEL-FOC 1pl eat-EXCL
 ‘It was *together* that we were all eating!’ (ru)

In examples such as (165) and (166) (as in 162 above), *-Vyík* appears to function as much to encode contrast as exclusivity. (166) was reportedly uttered at a drinking party, when taunting a member of the host village who had thrown up from drinking too much beer; her point was that the women of her own village (in contrast to those of the host village) could hold their drink.

- (166) *yúp = nih-áh yú-uyík, nó-ǎy ʔáh-áh !*
 that.ITG=EMPH.CO-FOC that.ITG-EXCL say-DYNM 1sg-DECL
 ‘That’s how it is for you all (not for us), I said!’ (cv)

In Tat Deh, some speakers use the variant *-V̋c* (glossed EXCL2) in place of *-Vyík*, as illustrated in example (167). Despite its formal difference, consultants have no difficulty identifying this as a functionally equivalent dialectal variant of Exclusive *-Vyík*.

- (167) *yí-nó-ǎy = nih j’áh híd-íw-í̋c, híd = d’əh*
 that.ITG-say-DYNM=EMPH.CO DST.CNTR 3pl-FLR-EXCL2 3pl-PL

nǐh tǎhʔíp ni-ʔé? = d’əh, ni-hǎ-c, nó-ǎy ʔáh-áh
 POSS child.father be-PERF=PL be-NONVIS-EXCL2 say-DYNM 1sg-DECL
 ‘They’ve already talked like that to me; I think it’s specifically because of those who used to be their husband(s), that they’re like that, I say!’ (cv)

15.3.7. ‘Acting alone’ markers *-kéʔ*, *-d’áh*

The two clause-final forms *-kéʔ* and *-d’áh* mark the speaker’s announcement of his/her intention or desire to carry out a prospective activity, alone and under his/her own motivation. In other words, they signal that the speaker is the unique agent, regardless of what other participants might be otherwise involved. The use of these forms is highly restricted. They necessarily involve a first person singular subject, but this (i.e., the pronoun *ʔáh*) is obligatorily left unstated; it is understood from the use of the ‘Acting alone’ marker. These forms also can only have future reference (but do not involve a verbal future gram), and all the examples encountered so far involve the Perfective aspect marker (which is typically used for future events of anticipated short duration). Unlike the ‘Act-

ing alone' markers, Exclusive *-Vyík* has none of these restrictions and is of much more general use; these forms are contrasted in example (173) below.

These 'Acting alone' markers are relatively rare in discourse and are not yet well understood. They appear to be essentially interchangeable and functionally the same, although *-d'ǎh* may imply a more brief duration of the event. Examples of their use are given in (168–170). Note that the analogous expression if the speaker wishes to solicit company (rather than announcing that he/she will go alone) would involve the Cooperative suffix *-nǎŋ* (168b; see §14.5).

(168) a) *nř hõp cǎg key-ʔay-ʔeʔ-d'ǎh*
 1sg.POSS fish net see-VENT-PERF-D'AH
 'I'm off to check my fish net (alone).' (cv)

b) *hõp cǎg ʔin key-ʔay-ʔeʔ-nǎŋ*
 fish net 1pl see-VENT-PERF-COOP
 'Let's go check the fish net (together).' (el)

(169) *cǎ-wag, ʔǎh ní-ít kǎm, n'ikán b'õt-an ham-ʔeʔ-kéʔ,*
 other.day 1sg be-OBL IMP2 over.there roça-DIR go-PERF-KEʔ

nó-õp ʔǎp
 say-DEP NEG:ID
 'Look how I spend every day at home, never saying "I'm off (alone) to the roça".' (txt)

(170) *ʔǎh b'oy-ʔeʔ-kéʔ*
 1sg study-PERF-KEʔ
 'I'm off to study (alone).' (el)

15.3.8. Acquiescence particle *bé*

The particle *bé* occurs quite frequently in the expression *hǎʔ bé* 'OK!' where it marks acquiescence to an imperative (while affirmative *hǎʔ* by itself can signal either acquiescence or an affirmative answer to a question). This is illustrated by speaker B's response to A's imperative in example (171):

- (171) A: *niŋ piniŋ-d'əh-áy = mah, tíh-ǎn !*
 2pl tell.story-send-INCH.IMP=REP 3sg-OBJ
 'You all tell a story for her quick, she says!' (cv)

B: *hǎ? bɛ*
 yes ACQ
 'OK!' (cv)

The only other context in which the particle *bɛ* has been encountered is in co-occurrence with the 'Acting alone' marker *ké?*, as in (172). In this case, it may indicate acquiescence in the sense that the speaker has made up his mind to do something after some deliberation. It is hoped that future investigation will shed more light on the functions of this and the two 'Acting alone' particles described above.

- (172) *yam-?e?-ké? bɛ*
 dance-PERF-KE? ACQ
 'OK, (I'm) off to dance.' (el)

15.4. Grammaticalized social connectedness

Quite a number of grammaticalized forms in Hup arguably have a primary – or at least a very frequently exploited – function of indicating social relationships among participants. This is loosely defined as 'social connectedness' – the grammaticalized reference to social characteristics or relationships between participants or referents in a speech event.

The idea of grammaticalized 'social connectedness' relates to short-term social positioning emerging from the speech event. Where this concerns the expression of the speaker's own role in the social situation, this may be termed 'social deixis' (cf. Levinson 1983: 62–63, Foley 1997: 313); in Hup, however, the 'social connectedness' grams encode not only deixis, but also ways of talking referentially about other participants' interactions.

Social deixis in language is often defined narrowly as involving perduring social relationships that transcend the moment of interaction (cf. Manning 2001). Such deictic forms include familiar and polite second-person pronouns and honorific terms of address, which are both ways of indexing relatively enduring, pre-established social relationships. Hup has two such honorific-like forms of address (also used for third-person reference): =*wəd* 'old/respected person' and =*wa* 'old/respected woman' (see §7.4).

In addition to this, languages may grammaticalize *situationally dependent* social connectedness or deixis, where the relationship is specific to the activity in question or is created in the context of the speech event itself (second-person pronouns and honorifics can have this ‘relatively creative’ function as well as their more common ‘presupposing’ one). In general, grammaticalized forms of specifically situationally dependent social connectedness do not seem to be particularly common cross-linguistically, or are at least not well described. Some examples do exist, however; for instance, the Arawak language Tariana is reported to have ‘sociative’ serial verb constructions, in which the second root in the serial construction is the verb ‘be together’ (Aikhenvald 2002a). Also, in *Tukang Besi* (Indonesia), the ‘social activity prefix’ *hopo-* ‘implies that an action is done for a social or ceremonial function, and not just for purely personal goals’ (Donohue 1999: 283), and *Tarahumara* (Mexico) is reported to have a co-ordinator which is used ‘when harmony and/or good fellowship are implied between the conjuncts’ (Thord-Gray 1955: 516, cf. J. Payne 1985b: 25).

Hup appears to have a relatively large repertoire of grammaticalized forms that relate to such situationally dependent social connectedness. Those forms that appear to have a primary function of indexing, creating, and referring to temporary relationships between human participants are the Cooperative verbal suffix *-nǎŋ* (joint performance of an activity towards a common goal; §14.5), the ‘Acting alone’ markers *-d’ǎh* and *-kéʔ* (speaker acts alone; §15.3.7), the inclusive first person plural future or hortative use of Declarative *-Vh* (§13.3), as well as the Associative Plural form *-ǎnd’ǎh* (a group of people associated with a particular participant; §4.4.6), and (more marginally) the ‘Following’ postposition *hǔy* (one person physically follows another, usually in the joint performance of an activity; §10.3.1.1). Other forms that typically encode social interactions among human participants, but also have a more general function with non-human referents, include the Contrastive *n’ǔh* (contrast between the referent and other entities; §7.8), Exclusive *-Vyík* (§15.3.6), and even the Applicative suffix *-ʔǔh-* (§11.3). Interestingly, many of these grams are verbal Boundary Suffixes – a morphosyntactic slot which is tightly associated with the verb (see §3.4.1.2). This may have to do with the fact that Boundary Suffixes often function to mark clause type, and several of the grams described here have a hortative or exclamatory function.

The following elicited paradigm illustrates some of the range of information about social dynamics that can be implied or entailed by some of these constructions; the neutral, unmarked form is given in (173a):

- (173) a) *máđio b’ǔt bǎʔ-ǎy*
 Mario roça work-DYNM
 ‘Mario is clearing a roça.’

- b) *máđio-áh b'žt bí?-iyík*
 Mario-FOC roça work-EXCL
 'Mario alone is clearing a roça (and no one else is doing so).'
- c) *máđio n'úh b'žt bí?-iy*
 Mario CNTR roça work-DYNM
 'Mario is clearing a roça (and we should follow suit and clear one for ourselves).'
- d) *máđio b'žt bí?-?úh-úy*
 Mario roça work-APPL-DYNM
 'Mario is clearing a roça (as a service to someone else).'
- e) *hám-áy, b'žt ?in bí?-nǎŋ !*
 go-INCH.IMP roça 1pl work-COOP
 'Let's go, we'll clear a roça together!'
- f) *b'žt ?in bí?-íh !*
 roça 1pl work-DECL
 'Let's clear a roça (together)!'
- g) *nǎ b'žt bí?-?ay-?e?-d'áh !*
 1sg.POSS roça work-VENT-PERF-D'AH
 'I'm off to clear my roça (alone)!'

Arguably, Hup grammar places a high priority – from a cross-linguistic perspective – on the linguistic expression and creation of social relationships. The reasons for this may lie in the Hup cultural and social context. Just as the highly stratified societies in which Japanese and other East Asian languages are spoken have given rise to the development of a large number of honorific particles in these languages (which index relatively *perduring* social relationships), the cooperative, egalitarian society of Hup speakers may well have contributed to the development of the grammaticalized expression of relatively *context-dependent* social relationships, which are created and maintained in the context of the activity and the speech event itself. In Hup society, the Western concept of the individual as an autonomous agent is relatively foreign; the individual is always conceptualized as part of a larger group. At the same time, there is relatively little centralized authority within this group. Thus it is noteworthy if someone is acting alone (Exclusive -*Vyík*); solicitation and discussion of cooperation between individuals – especially involving the sharing of food or objects

– is common (Cooperative *-nǎŋ*; inclusive 1pl *-Vǎh*; Applicative *-?ũh-*); and individuals and family units are expected to act on their own initiative in order to maintain their place in a tightly knit and essentially communal larger group (Contrastive *n'ũh*; ‘Acting alone’ markers *-ké?*, *-d'ǎh*). On the other hand, while the structure of Hup society is consistent with Hup’s grammatical encoding of social connectedness, it is not clear why this language has developed these forms when so many other languages, spoken in similarly egalitarian societies, apparently have not. More cross-linguistic work must be done to establish how common such forms really are among the world’s languages, and what exactly may motivate their development.

15.5. ‘Whatchamacallit’ morpheme *hǎy*

The function of the ‘whatchamacallit’ form *hǎy* is to fill the space left by a mental block, maintaining the flow of speech and the conversational turn of the speaker; it is therefore something like English ‘watchamacallit’ and ‘um’. Whatchamacallit *hǎy* can act as an interjection (allowing the speaker to hold the floor while searching for words), and it can also occur in place of a lexical item within the clause – typically a noun or verb stem – but not a grammaticalized particle or bound morpheme. When it replaces a lexical item, *hǎy* itself takes the inflectional morphology of the replaced stem. Note that this ability of a single root to inflect as either a noun or a verb is not unique to *hǎy* (cf. §3.1), but *hǎy* is extreme in its flexibility.

The interjection-type use of *hǎy* is illustrated in (174), where the speaker uses it to correct himself when he absent-mindedly called someone by the wrong name. Note the similarity between this use and that of Protestive *bá?* for self-correction (§15.3.5) in example (155) above.

- (174) *patí, hǎy, wáwdu*
 Pattie um Evaldo
 ‘Pattie, I mean, Evaldo!’ (cv)

In examples (175–177), Whatchamacallit *hǎy* fills in for a noun within the clause, and inflects for case and number just like a normal noun. Interestingly, the ability of *hǎy* to take object case and number marking is governed by the animacy of the referent, just as it is for any noun. This suggests that even

though the speaker has a mental block on the word itself, information pertaining to the animacy and number of the referent is still available.¹⁸⁰

- (175) *hǎy-ǎt, tegcǎh-ót tih mǎnæ-yó? = mah...*
 um-OBL wood.ash-OBL 3sg mix-SEQ=REP
 ‘Having mixed it with, um, with cinders, it’s said...’ (txt)
- (176) *hǎy-ǎn key-d’ó?-ów-ay ʔǎh-ǎw-ǎh*
 um-OBJ see-take-FLR-INCH 1sg-FLR-DECL
 ‘I’ve caught a glimpse of what’s-his-name.’ (cv)
- (177) *núp hǎy = n’ǎn, cudádu = n’ǎn, hid ʔid-ʔay-píd-ay-áh*
 this um=PL.OBJ soldier(Pt)=PL.OBJ 3pl speak-VENT-DIST-INCH-DECL
 ‘They spoke to, um, to some soldiers.’ (txt)

The Whatchamacallit form can also fill in for one member of a compound, including a compound involving a bound noun:¹⁸¹

- (178) *n’ikán = mah yúp hǎy mǎy, mǎytǔd mǎy hid nǎ-ǎw-ǎh*
 over.there=REP that.ITG um house mutum house 3sg say-FLR-DECL
 ‘Out there were the whatchamacallit burrows, the *mutum* burrows, as they call them.’ (txt)
- (179) *pídiya pǎg-ót ʔúh j’ám hǎy = hǎb-ót*
 battery(Pt) big-OBL EPIST DST.CNTR um=HOLLOW-OBL
- tǎ?-yó? j’ám*
 end.to.end-SEQ DST.CNTR
 ‘(He) had the batteries stacked end-to-end in a whatchamacallit hollow’
 (replacing *j’ak* ‘buriti palm’; i.e., a hollowed-out buriti palm stick) (cv)

Whatchamacallit *hǎy* occurs most frequently in the place of a noun stem, but it can also take the place of a verb. As such, it takes the corresponding inflectional morphology, such as the Sequential suffix:

¹⁸⁰ Cf. English ‘I’ll take some of those *whatchamacallits*’.

¹⁸¹ This is probably limited to the freer, more lexical first noun, but not the more grammatical bound second noun.

- (180) *yúp hǎy-yóʔ, yúp tih =kəwǎg ní-íy*
 that.ITG um-SEQ that.ITG 3sg=eye be-DYNM
 ‘So after um (after verb-ing), thus he had eyes.’ (txt)

The Whatchamacallit form can also appear in a compound verb, where it replaces one of the compound-internal roots. In (181), it is not clear what verb the speaker intended to put in the place of *hǎy*; in (182), the missing verb stem may be *hup-hipāh* ‘be conscious’, as in the second verb – if this is the case, then it is interesting that *hǎy* occurs first in the compound, rather than in the actual position of the missing stem. Alternatively, however, the speaker could have had in mind the compound *ʔǎh-cəwəʔ* (sleep-wake) ‘awake from sleep’.

- (181) *céʔ = mǎh tih g’ud-d’óʔ-óh... tih hǎy-d’óʔ-óh...*
 leaf.basket=DIM3sg weave-take-DECL 3sg um-take-DECL
 ‘He made a leaf-basket... he um...’ (txt)

- (182) *hǎy-cəwəʔ-nih-ay = mah, cəwəʔ-hup-hipāh-nih*
 um-awake-NEG-INCH=REP awake-RFLX-know-NEG
 ‘He wouldn’t, um, awake; he did not awake and gain consciousness.’
 (txt)

15.6. Interjections

As a category, interjections in Hup are only one step removed from the set of clause-final discourse particles discussed in §15.3. Like many of the discourse particles, Hup interjections have a primarily affective and stylistic function, and are phonologically and morphosyntactically independent – but they are considerably more grammatically, semantically, and phonologically self-contained than the discourse markers. Two subtypes of interjection can be distinguished on formal grounds: those that are obligatorily associated with a preceding clause, and those that can stand alone as a free utterance.

15.6.1. Clause-bound interjections

This small set of interjections, which are ubiquitous in everyday conversation, bear the closest resemblance to the clause-level discourse particles discussed above. However, they are distinct in that they are completely free forms, having no morphosyntactic or phonological interaction with the rest of the clause, and no particular grammatical restrictions on their use; they are also semantically

independent from the rest of the clause. The interjections of this type always follow a full clause, which may be of any kind (declarative, interrogative, imperative, etc.).

Hup speakers use the emphatic, exclamatory interjections *các* (men only) and *cún'* (women only) very often in conversation. These are the only known forms in the language for which there is a distinction between men's speech and women's speech. Their use is illustrated in (183–184); example (184) was uttered first by a young teenaged boy, then jokingly echoed by a teenaged girl, with the appropriate change of interjection.

- (183) *níŋ-ăn tih tɔn-ham-pog-té-p, cún' !*
 2pl-OBJ 3sg hold-go-EMPH1-FUT-DEP INTERJ
 'Hey, she's going to take you all away!' (cv)

- (184) Boy:
hĩ-n'ĩh = pog yúp = b'ay, cəc ?!
 Q-NMZ=EMPH1 that.ITG=AGAIN INTERJ
 'Hey, what the heck is that?!'

Girl (echoing him):
hĩ-n'ĩh = pog yúp = b'ay, cún' ?!
 Q-NMZ=EMPH1 that.ITG=AGAIN INTERJ
 'Hey, what the heck is that?!' (cv)

The interactive interjections *nóh* and *nɔ-kæm* – both imperative forms of 'say' – are also very common in Hup conversation. On one level, these forms are literal requests for the addressee to repeat the speaker's utterance back to him/her; this is often used as an effective way of saying something for another person – i.e., what one would like that person to say – while at the same time establishing the utterance as part of that person's conversational turn, which is thereby considered as not really being usurped. It is also a common way to include others in the conversation, even those who do not yet have full conversational competence, such as babies and linguists. In some cases, the addressee does indeed repeat the utterance. This kind of interchange is illustrated in the conversation in (185), in which a group of people were trying to coax someone to tell a story, and were trying to involve me in the coaxing:

- (185) J: *piniŋ-po?-ʔé? !*
 tell.story-EMPH1-PERF.IMP
 'Please tell a story!'

G: *j'ám-ãw-ãn-ãp táʔ-ay, yǎʔ ?*
 DST.CNTR-FLR-OBJ-DEP REL.INST-INCH Mom
 ‘What about that one, Mom,

j'ám-ãp tód-ót hid bib'-g'et-yíʔ-íw-ãn ?
 DST.CNTR-DEP hollow.tree-OBL3pl plug.up-stand-TEL-FLR-OBJ
 that one about them plugging up the hollow tree?’

P: *yúw-ãn ʔãh hipãh-nih-ay = hõ*
 that.ITG-OBJ 1sg know-NEG-INCH=NONVIS
 ‘I don’t know that one.’

J: *dohʔǎy piníŋ, yãʔám piníŋ...*
 Curupira story jaguar story

ʔám tãhʔíp-ãn ʔam piníŋ-tég, nõh !
 2sg child.father-OBJ 2sg tell.story-FUT say.IMP
 ‘The Curupira story, the jaguar story... **you’ll tell it to your husband, say!**’ (to me)

M: *cáp táʔ, nõ-kǎm patí !*
 other REL.INST say-IMP2 Pattie
 ‘Say “(tell) another one!” Pattie!’

Hup speakers use *nõh* even more frequently as a simple interjection, with utterances that do not really represent a conversational turn on the part of the addressee, who is not expected to repeat them. Examples of this use are given in (186–187):

(186) *j'ãh deh b'iyiʔ, nõh !*
 cara water only say
 ‘It was all cará beer, say!’ (cv)

(187) *húp = d'əh pǎ, nõh*
 person=PL NEG:EX say
 ‘There aren’t any Hup people, say.’ (cv)

A related interjection is *nõyhaʔ* (probably from *nõ-ǎy = haʔ* [say-DYNM=ALT.INT], see §17.4.4). It can be translated as something like ‘I say,’ and can convey slight uncertainty or self-correction:

- (188) *?in ni-hipáh-áh, núp hayám-át-áh, núp mǔy-ǔt-ǔh, nǔyha?*
 1pl be-know-DECL this town-OBL-DECL this house-OBL-DECL say.INT
 ‘We know how to live/behave ourselves, in this town, in this
 (community) building, I’d say.’ (sp)

15.6.2. Free interjections

The Hup forms classed as ‘free’ interjections are usually delivered as exclamations, and are complete grammatical utterances in their own right. They are usually pronounced with distinctively high pitch and intensity, and most involve a single, vowel-final syllable with a lengthened vowel. This phonological distinctiveness is a cross-linguistically common feature of interjections (cf. Schachter 1985: 53). Many free interjections are conventionalized forms, with semantically specific interpretations.

One such form is *cěeee* [ʃěeee] (pronounced with rising intonation),¹⁸² used in reference to large amounts of something. Speakers use this interjection to express their appreciative amazement when seeing a large school of minnows, a large group of butterflies, etc. – or even when referring to a surprisingly large quantity of diarrhea:

- (189) *tíh-ǎn tíh kuj-b’uy-d’əh-way-pó-ay-áh ! cěeee? !*
 3sg-OBJ 3sg diarrhea-throw-send-go.out-EMPH1-INCH-DECL INTERJ(EMPH)
 ‘He shot out diarrhea and expelled (her arm)! Lots of it!’ (txt)

The free interjection *pǎh* or *pǎh* – typically pronounced with low pitch and rising intonation – is used in reference to something big, frightening, or intriguing, which may have possible serious consequences. One might use this interjection when noticing that a big rainstorm is approaching or when hearing that someone did something that might lead to trouble. For example, (190) was a response to another speaker’s account of a drinking party in which she surreptitiously (under cover of darkness) poured out the manioc beer served to her, which was not very tasty.

¹⁸² For the sake of simplicity, stress (encoding rising or falling tone/intonation) on interjections and ideophones (see below) is marked only on the first vowel of a prolonged vocalic form.

- (190) **pĩĩĩ...** *baʔtúk-an-ay-áh ?*
 INTERJ dark-OBJ-INCH-DECL
 ‘Oooo... it was already dark, huh?’ (cv)

The interjection *ʔakĩh* (and its variants *ʔakáh*, *ʔayáh*, and *ʔayĩh*) are expressions of pain (i.e., ‘ouch!’):

- (191) **ʔakĩh!** *nĩŋ = tǎh = d’əh nĩh mǎy ʔúh yúw-úh !*
 INTERJ 2pl=offspring=PL POSS payment EPIST that.ITG-DECL
 ‘Ow!! This must be in revenge for (my killing) your children!’ (txt)

- (192) **ʔayfĩh!** *tih nɔ-ǎh, tih papad-píd-ih...*
 INTERJ 3sg say-DECL 3sg moan-DIST-DECL
 ‘Ouch! she was saying, she was moaning continuously...’ (txt)

Other conventionalized free interjections include *yǎh* ‘how pretty!’, *ʔacũh!* ‘ouch, yikes, look out’ (when an accident befalls oneself or another person, such as tripping, singeing one’s hand in the fire, etc.), and *ʔapáh* ‘darn!’ (e.g., when one forgets something).¹⁸³

Less conventionalized interjection-type noises are also fairly frequent in Hup discourse. An example is the exclamation of worry or remorse in (193), in which a husband is running away from his wife, who has turned into an evil spirit; but as he does so, he begins to wonder if he is mistaken and she really is still a human being:

- (193) **ʔóoooo,** *hup = ʔǎy-ǎn = mĩʔ = nih-áh,*
 INTERJ person=FEM-OBJ=UNDER=EMPH.CO-FOC

ʔǎh = tǎhʔín-ǎn ʔǎh yəd-tɔʔɔh-ɔh !
 1sg=child.mother-OBJ 1sg hide-run-DECL
 ‘Ooooh, even though (she may be) a person, I am running away from my wife!’ (txt)

¹⁸³ At least a few of these same interjections are also used by Tukanoans.

15.7. Ideophones

Like interjections, ideophones in Hup constitute a special word class that serves a discourse-marking function. Also like interjections, they are not morphosyntactically bound, but occur on the level of the sentence. They are considered in this chapter for these reasons.

As in perhaps all of the world's languages, ideophones in Hup have “a special dramaturgic function that differs from [that of] all other word classes... [and] simulate an event, an emotion, a perception through language” (Voeltz and Kilian-Hatz 2001: 3). Described as “the closest linguistic substitute for a non-verbal, physical act” (Kunene 2001: 183), ideophones are peripheral to the lexicon, and fulfill a special performative function.

Like interjections, ideophones cross-linguistically tend to have distinctive phonology, involving special rules of length, tone, stress, and reduplication (e.g., Voeltz and Kilian-Hatz 2001, Nelson 2005). This is true of Hup ideophones, which often involve a multi-syllabic string made up of one repeated syllable (or bisyllabic form), or even a single prolonged vowel or sonorant segment. They are typically pronounced with a relatively high pitch and intensity, and stress tends to be more or less constant throughout. Nasalization, if present, applies throughout the form (as with Hup morphemes generally). Tone does not appear to be contrastive, but intonation may be rising or falling, depending on the ideophone. The number of repetitions of the base form depends a great deal on the type of sound or action the ideophone represents; five repetitions are common, but fewer also occur, and some ideophones are single syllables. The number of repetitions and whether the final syllable is closed or open varies across speakers.

Most ideophones in Hup represent sounds, and a few refer to motions. Like interjections, they are usually peripheral to a main clause; however, ideophones representing sounds are often – like quoted speech – introduced by the verb ‘say’. Hup speakers (both men and women) use ideophones very frequently in narrative, particularly when telling myths or other stories (but also in narrative within a conversational context); however, ideophones are less common in speeches, songs, and spells. Some ideophones are more conventionalized than others, both in form and in use.

Ideophones used to describe motions include the sound associated with traveling or going somewhere (example 194), and movement upwards or upstream (example 195; variants *didididĩ* and *wededede* also exist).

- (194) *tih tũhũk-g'ět-mĩ?*, *tih-ăn* *tih ham-yĩ?-ay-áh*, ***mmmmm'*** !
 3sg snore-stand-UNDER 3sg-OBJ 3sg go-TEL-INCH-DECL IDEO
 ‘While she was snoring, he went away.’ (txt)

- (195) **wídídídí**, *pótʔah-an*, *kək-dʔəh-hám-ãp*, **wídídídí**
 IDEO upriver-DIR pull-send-go-DEP IDEO
 ‘(Going-up noise), upriver, (he) pulled them...’ (txt)

The sound and action of jumping or landing somewhere suddenly is a commonly used ideophone; the same ideophone is also used for an object hitting something (cf. 203 below):

- (196) *tih* *nɔh-wob-yíʔ-ay-áh*, **póoo!** *tih* *wæd-ay-áh!*
 3sg fall-set-TEL-INCH-DECL INTERJ 3sg eat-INCH-DECL
 ‘He fell upon him, pow! He ate him!’ (txt)

Several Hup ideophones involve conventionalized human sound effects. Examples of these are giggling (example 197), laughing loudly (198), snoring (199), and calling out to another person (200):

- (197) *ʔáy=dʔəh* *tih-ăn* *tæʔnɔhǎ-ay-áh*, **kít kít kít kít kít kít**
 FEM=PL 3sg-OBJ laugh-INCH-DECL IDEO
 ‘The women laughed at him, (giggling noise).’ (txt)

- (198) **hehéʔ** *nó-ǎy* *híd=wá=dʔəh*, *ʔăn-áh*
 IDEO say-DYNDM 3pl=old.woman=PL 1sg.OBJ-DECL
 ‘Ha ha! went those old bags (women), to me’ (cv)

- (199) **kóŋ, kóŋ, kóŋ** *nɔ-pæm-pǎ-y=mah* *yúp* *táh-áh*
 IDEO say-sit-EMPH1-DYNDM=REP that.ITG tapir-DECL
 ‘(Snoring noise) he was saying as he sat, that Tapir!’ (txt)

- (200) *tih* *ʔey-wɔn-yíʔ-ay-áh*, **ʔóəəəəh!** *ʔăn* *yu-ʔé?!*
 3sg call-follow-TEL-INCH-DECL IDEO 1sg.OBJ wait-PERF.IMP
 ‘She went calling after him, heeey! wait for me!’ (txt)

Other conventionalized sound-related ideophones include the noise of falling into water (*tapúh*), the sound of killing fish by breaking their necks (example 201), and of a large bird landing (202):

- (201) *yúp = mah tih = nuhũy tih tǎh-əp = mah, yúp kúnúnúnú*
 that.ITG=REP 3sg=neck 3sg break-DEP=REP that.ITG IDEO

tih nɔ-píd-ih

3sg say-DIST-DECL

‘Then, it’s said, he broke (the fishes’) necks, *kunununu* it went.’ (txt)

- (202) *hohopóo! nɔ-yí?-iy = mah yúw-úh, wǎ?*
 IDEO say-TEL-DYNM=REP that.ITG-DECL vulture

tih kǎdhí-íw-ay-áh

3sg pass.descend-FLR-INCH-DECL

‘(Flapping, landing noise) it went, (it was) Vulture landing.’ (txt)

They also include hitting noises, such as *tǎk!* (the noise of a machete hitting or cutting something), *tǎn’ tǎn’ tǎn’ tǎn’ tǎn’* (the bones of a turtle-anklebone oracle knocking against each other), and *dih!* (an object hitting against someone). Example (203) illustrates a string of more marginally conventionalized sound effects related to a hitting event:

- (203) *tih cík-ih, wǐhǐp wǐhǐp póo! wǎkód!*
 3sg throw.stick-DECL IDEO IDEO IDEO
 ‘He threw (stick); (noise of flipping through air, hitting; hawk falling).’ (txt)

Still others are *túdúdúdúdú* (thunder rumbling), *cǎdǎdǎdǎdǎdǎdǎ* (a bird flying away), the eating noise/action of fish (example 204), running (205), and rummaging through things while searching (206):

- (204) *kóbokóbokóbo yúp ba?tǐb’ g’ǔh-pog-?é-ew-ǎn*
 IDEO that.ITG spirit be2-EMPH1-PERF-FLR-OBJ

hid wǎd-yí?-kǎdhám-ay-áh

3pl eat-TEL-pass.go-INCH-DECL

‘(Eating noise) they (fish) came quickly and ate up that one who had been a spirit.’ (txt)

- (205) *tih tǎ?ǎh-wǎn-nǎn-yí?-ay-áh, túktúktúktúktúk !*
 3sg run-follow-come-TEL-INCH-DECL IDEO
 ‘She came running after him, (sound of running)!’ (txt)

- (206) *tih yəhɔy-ɔh, kədɔw' kədɔw' kədɔw'*
 3sg search-DECL IDEO
 'He searched (noise of rummaging).' (txt)

Hup speakers also use a variety of relatively non-conventionalized ideophone-like sound effects in narrative, which consultants say are not in common use and are probably chosen ad hoc by the storyteller. Examples include *pɔ?* (a spirit falling out of tree), *təh, hǎ...* (a severed head falling to the ground), and *cǎw'! kǎy' kǎy'!* (a woodpecker pecking). Others are the sound/action of getting or grabbing something (example 207), various jumping and landing noises (208), and the banging noises made by the mythical tapir's attempts to beat off the turtle who had bitten onto his testicles (example 209).

- (207) *yít teghɔ̃, pǎ? !*
 thus fire IDEO
 'Thus a gun, (grabbing noise)!' (txt)

- (208) *tih cək-kədhám-ǎh, cɔp! kədǎw!*
 3sg jump-pass.go-DECL IDEO IDEO
 'He jumped quickly (jumping and landing noises).' (txt)

- (209) *pɔk, pɔk tih nɔ-d'ak-g'ó?-mah-ǎh*
 IDEO 3sg say-stick.against-go.about-REP-DECL
 '(Bang, bang) he went knocking him about.' (txt, Umari Norte dialect)

Hup uses a few other types of sound symbolism in addition to ideophones. Reduplication – both on the lexical level (see §4.5 and §12.9.3) and on the clausal level (§18.2.2) – is an iconic representation of a repetitive action. Also, a number of words in Hup are clearly of onomatopoeic origin, and in some cases probably continue to have an onomatopoeic association to the referent in the minds of speakers. Examples include verbs relating to noisy bodily functions, most notably *hatcĩh-* 'sneeze', for which there is a corresponding ideophone (*hatcĩh!*) that is identical to the verb. Some bird names are also onomatopoeic and are based on the bird's call, such as *wəhwǎw* 'dove'.

Chapter 16

Negation

Negation in Hup is relatively complex. Three distinct strategies for expressing negation are available, involving at least four different negative markers. These can all be used for clausal or ‘standard’ negation, which produces the opposite truth value in the clause (cf. J. Payne 1985a, Miestamo 2005). The most common or basic form of negation in Hup involves a negative suffix (*-nĩh*) that is used exclusively with verbal (and adjectival) predicates. Another common strategy relies on a predicative particle (*pǎ*), which is used as an existential negator with noun phrases. Finally, the third negation strategy makes use of an ‘identity negator’ particle (*?ǎp*) that can function both to contradict the entire clause and to negate an individual constituent within the clause – often relating specifically to the identity of a nominal entity. Because of this latter function of negating a constituent, the particle *?ǎp* is not – unlike Hup’s other negative strategies – exclusively a clausal negator.

16.1. Verbal Negative *-nĩh*

Hup prefers a morphological strategy for the negation of clauses. In most cases, this involves a single negative marker *-nĩh* (although in special cases two negative markers can occur; see §16.1.7 below), which occurs as a suffix on the verb stem. Use of the form *-nĩh* is limited exclusively to negation of the verb phrase predicate (which is understood here to include predicate adjectives; see §3.1.3 and §10.1).

Formally, *-nĩh* usually occurs as a verbal consonant-initial Boundary Suffix, which receives primary (word-level) stress within the verb word; however, it is in some cases followed by an additional Boundary Suffix, in which context it is best considered an Inner Suffix. The final [h] of *-nĩh* is usually clearly audible (especially when followed by a vowel-initial Boundary Suffix), but is occasionally dropped in fast speech. Finally, Negative *-nĩh* is nearly identical to the Possessive marker *nĩh* (see §5.2), but confusion does not arise given their distinct tone values and their complementary distribution on verbs and nouns, respectively. It is also homonymous with the verb root *nĩh*- ‘be like’ (cf. §10.2.2.1),

but because this verb – like all verb roots – is usually obligatorily followed by a Boundary Suffix, the chance of confusion is again minimized.¹⁸⁴

16.1.1. Verbal negation in main clauses

In declarative clauses, negation with *-nih* is a nearly symmetric strategy vis-à-vis the affirmative clause: in most cases, the negative clause is structurally almost identical to its positive counterpart, except that the negative marker usually takes the place of the (otherwise obligatory) Boundary Suffix on the verb stem in the affirmative clause. While not all Boundary Suffixes are incompatible with Negative *-nih* (in particular, the Dependent marker *-Vp* and the Interrogative *-V?* can follow *-nih*), the most common suffixes in affirmative main clauses – Dynamic *-V̇y* and Declarative *-V̇h*, among others – are almost always replaced by *-nih* (cf. §16.1.5 below).

This near-symmetric pattern for declarative clauses is illustrated in examples (1a–b), which come from a conversation; the negative utterance of the first speaker was contradicted by the positive assertion of the second. Further examples of negative assertions are given in (2–3).

- (1) a) *maŋgǎ híd-ǎn təw-níh*
 Margarita 3pl-OBJ scold-NEG
 ‘Margarita didn’t yell at them.’ (cv)
- b) *maŋgǎ híd-ǎn tów-ay*
 Margarita 3pl-OBJ scold-INCH
 ‘Margarita was yelling at them.’ (cv)
- (2) *kayak = tǐg macã-níh píđ; canǎ b’íyi? macá-ǎh*
 manioc=stem grow-NEG DIST pineapple only grow-DECL
 ‘Manioc doesn’t grow either; only pineapples grow.’ (cv)
- (3) *hup-hipǎh-níh yúp pay céc !*
 RFLX-know-NEG that.ITG bad INTERJ
 ‘That bad one has no sense!’ (cv)

¹⁸⁴ Like any verb stem, *nih-* ‘be like’ can be followed by the Negative suffix:

tih = ?íp = yi? tih bahad-níh-níh
 3sg=father=TEL 3sg appear-be.like-NEG
 ‘He doesn’t look like his father.’ (el)

The same symmetric strategy also applies to negation in interrogative clauses, as illustrated in examples (4–5).

- (4) a) *tuk-níh ?ám ?*
 want-NEG 2sg
 ‘Don’t you want (it)?’ (cv)
- b) *túk-úy ?ám ?*
 want-DYNM 2sg
 ‘Do you want it?’ (cv)
- (5) *mangǎ táʔ-ay, híd-ǎn yamhidɔʔ-níh tíh ?*
 Margarita as.for-INCH 3pl-OBJ sing-NEG 3sg
 ‘What about Margarita, didn’t she sing to them?’ (cv)

Imperative clauses, on the other hand, have an asymmetric negation strategy – that is, the negative construction does not mirror its positive counterpart (compare examples 6a and b; see §17.5 for discussion of imperatives). This is consistent with the cross-linguistic tendency for imperative environments to often require special negative constructions (cf. Kahrel 1996, Miestamo 2005: 15–16). In Hup negative imperatives, the negated verb phrase acts structurally as an embedded adverbial clause (usually – though not obligatorily – marked with the adverbializing *=yiʔ* enclitic), while the main clause is the imperative form of the verb *ni-* ‘be’:

- (6) a) *tǎʔnɔhɔ-níh =yiʔ níh !*
 laugh-NEG=TEL be.IMP
 ‘Don’t laugh!’ (cv)
- b) *tǎʔnɔhɔ́h !*
 laugh.IMP
 ‘Laugh!’
- (7) *hūh-way-níh =yiʔ níh !*
 carry-go.out-NEG=TEL be.IMP
 ‘Don’t carry (him) out!’ (cv)

The sequence *níh =yiʔ níh* is often reduced – especially in fast speech – to the form *-níníh*:

- (8) *kow'-níníh = hə !*
 peel-NEG.IMP=TAG2
 'Don't peel (the fruit)!' (cv)

16.1.2. Verbal negation in subordinate clauses

Relative clauses in Hup (see §18.2.3) undergo negation of the verb phrase just as main clauses do. The Negative suffix is followed by the Dependent marker *-Vp* (example 9) or other relative clause morphology (10).

- (9) *hi-yəd-níh-ĩp = ?ǎy j'ǎh*
 FACT-hide-NEG-DEP=FEM DST.CNTR
 '(I'm) not a woman who hides things.' (lit. 'I'm a not-hiding-things woman') (sg)
- (10) *wəh ?id hipāh-níh = d'əh*
 River.Indian speech know-NEG=PL
 'Those who don't know any Tukano' (txt)

That Negative *-níh* has only local scope over the verb phrase to which it attaches is illustrated by the fact that negation can occur independently in main and embedded relative clauses, as illustrated by the elicited examples in (11–12).

- (11) a) *?ǎh hipǎh-ǎy [yúp wid-ye-níh-ĩw-ǎn]*
 1sg know-DYNM that arrive-enter-NEG-FLR-OBJ
 'I know that one who did not arrive'
- b) *?ǎh hipǎh-níh [yúp wid-yé-ew-ǎn]*
 1sg know-NEG that arrive-enter-FLR-OBJ
 'I don't know that one who arrived.' (el)
- (12) a) *tíh b'ǔt-an hám-ǎy [bóda tac-níh = d'əh-ót]*
 3sg roça-DIR go-DYNM ball kick-NEG=PL-OBL
 'She's going to the roça with those who didn't play ball.'
- b) *tíh b'ǔt-an ham-níh [bóda tác = d'əh-ót]*
 3sg roça-DIR go-NEG ball kick=PL-OBL
 'She's not going to the roça with those who played ball.' (el)

For other types of subordination, a copula construction with the verb *ni-* ‘be, exist’ is an optional strategy for forming a negative, as in (13a). An alternative non-copula construction and corresponding affirmative form are given in (13b–c).

- (13) a) *ʔāh tih-ǎn ʔih-ʔūh-té-h, way-níh tih ni-tég*
 1sg 3sg-OBJ ask-APPL-FUT-DECL go.out-NEG 3sg be-PURP
 ‘I’m going to ask him to not go out.’
- b) *tih way-níh(-tég) tih-ǎn ʔāh ʔih-ʔūh-té-h*
 3sg go.out-NEG(-PURP) 3sg-OBJ 1sg ask-APPL-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’m going to ask him to not go out.’
- c) *tih way-tég tih-ǎn ʔāh ʔih-ʔūh-té-h*
 3sg go.out-PURP 3sg-OBJ 1sg ask-APPL-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’m going to ask him to go out.’ (el)

16.1.3. Verbal negation and scope within the verb compound and phrase

As the examples above show, negation with *-níh* usually negates the entire verbal predicate. In the case of compound verbs, however, negating the compound assertions of the corresponding affirmative clause may require varying treatment of the compound depending on the level of semantic integration of its combined roots.

In the case of less-integrated compounds (see §9.4.1) – in which verb roots are strung together to encode a sequence or co-occurrence of relatively distinct events – the Verbal Negator *-níh* is usually understood to have scope over all preceding roots within the verb word. Thus the most likely interpretation of a negative compound such as *ʔid-wæd-ham-níh* (speak-eat-go-NEG) would be that none of these activities are taking place. If one (or more) activity is occurring, the compound is broken up into two verbal constructions, one negative and one affirmative, which function as two predicates (cf. §9.2); for example, *ʔid-níh (tih) wæd-hám-áý* (speak-NEG [3sg] eat-go-DYNM) ‘(he’s) going and eating (simultaneously) without speaking’, or *ʔid-wæd-níh (tih) hám-áý* (speak-eat-NEG [3sg] go-DYNM) ‘(he’s) going along without eating or speaking’. This co-presence of a negative and an affirmative verbal predicate – where the fully affirmative counterpart would be expressed by a single verb compound – is common in Hup (examples 14–16).

- (14) *ʔan-níh ʔāh g'āʔ-g'óʔ-óh*
 make.love-NEG 1sg be.suspended-go.about-DECL
 'Without making love, I'm there in the hammock.' (cv)
- (15) *tiníh ʔid wiʔ-níh g'et-g'óʔ-tú-ay=d'əh=nih*
 3sg.POSS speech hear-NEG stand-go.about-want-INCH=PL=EMPH.CO
 'And we'd go about without understanding her language.' (cv)
- (16) *hí-n ʔh-tég ʔin, hup=ʔáʔ=d'əh, yum tən-níh ʔin ní-ʔ?*
 Q-be.like-FUT/PURP 1pl Hup=FEM=PL plant hold-NEG 1pl be-INT
 'Why is it that we, Hup women, are without anything to plant?' (cv)

In the case of more tightly integrated compounds (in which the final root carries aspectual, modal, or other information; cf. §9.4.2), on the other hand, negating the assertion of the corresponding affirmative clause frequently does not require splitting up the compound, even though the negation may be more directly relevant to one component stem than another. Thus in example (17), the negative of 'sing loudly' or 'make noise singing' remains a verb compound, even though consultants judge it to be neutral as to whether the singing itself continues or not.

- (17) *yam-hǎh-níh =yi? níh !*
 sing-make.noise-NEG=TEL be.IMP
 'Don't sing loudly!' (el)

Cases like that in (17) are typical of highly integrated compounds, in that negation usually has immediate scope over the auxiliary rather than over a compound as a whole. However, an exceptional case involves the auxiliary *yǎh* 'request, order', with which negation is normally interpreted as having scope over the main verb in the compound (here 'eat' or 'enter'), rather than over the auxiliary itself, as in (18–19).¹⁸⁵

- (18) *ʔāh dóʔ=n'ǎn hǎp wǎd-yǎh-níh (ni-yíʔ-íy)*
 1sg child=PL.OBJ fish eat-request-NEG be-TEL-DYNM
 'I told the children not to eat the fish.' (el)

¹⁸⁵ For discussion of causative compound constructions, see §9.4.1.2.

- (19) *nu-có? híd-ǎn tih ye-yǎh-níh*
 this-LOC 3pl-OBJ 3sg enter-request-NEG
 ‘He forbids them to come in here.’ (cv)

As noted above, the Negative suffix *-níh* typically has scope only over the verb phrase in which it appears. However, in cases of clause chaining involving a string of sequential activities (marked with the Sequential suffix *-yó?*, which is itself incompatible with *-níh*; see §16.1.5 below), the interpretation of negative scope appears to be more flexible. Example (20) comes from a speech delivered to the community, and lists a series of activities that women are expected to do to carry out the planting of manioc; only the last verb carries the negation, but the utterance was interpreted to mean that women do *none* of these things (without some involvement on the part of their husbands). However – especially with a definite subject such as *yúp = ʔǎy* ‘that woman’ – the interpretation that all the activities *were* carried out except the last, explicitly negative one is also possible.

- (20) *tǎʔǎy = d’əh kayak = tǐg d’oʔ-yó?, kayak = tǐg g’uk-yó?*
 woman=PL manioc=stem take-SEQ manioc=stem bundle-SEQ

cet-d’oʔ-kəðham-ni-yó?, cǐy’-níh ʔǎy = d’əh-əh
 carry.on.back-take-go.quickly-be-SEQ poke-NEG woman=PL-DECL
 ‘Women, having (not) taken manioc plants, having (not) bundled manioc plants, having (not) quickly carried (them), women don’t plant (lit. poke in) them.’ (sp)

One way of avoiding this scopal ambiguity involves setting the assertions apart from the negative clause with the auxiliary verb *ni-* and the Simultaneous or ‘in spite of’ adverbializer *-mǐ?*:

- (21) *cug’ǎt cuʔ-yó?, hǐʔ = teg cuʔ-yó? ní-mǐ?*
 book grab-SEQ write=STICK grab-SEQ be-UNDER

dóʔ = d’əh b’oy-ham-níh-ǐh
 child-PL study-go-NEG-DECL
 ‘Despite having grabbed books and pencils, the children did not go to study.’ (el)

16.1.4. Verbal negation and modifiers (adjectives, adverbs, quantifiers)

As discussed in §3.1.3 and §10.1, predicative adjectives in Hup are formally very similar to verbs. Their behavior in negative contexts is consistent with this – they undergo clausal negation in just the same way as do verb stems:

- (22) *pihít dəb-níh = məh*
 banana many-NEG=DIM
 ‘(There are) not many bananas.’ (cv)

- (23) *g’i-níh = h̃ yúw-úh !*
 hot-NEG=NONVIS that-DECL
 ‘It’s not hot!’ (cv)

Adjectives serving an adverbial function (see §10.2) usually appear within the compound verb in negative contexts, as in (24–25a) – whereas they typically occur outside the compound in affirmative clauses, as in (25b).

- (24) *ʔín = tǎh̃ = d’əh-ay yúw-úh, ʔəm-naw-níh*
 1pl=offspring=PL-INCH that-DECL fear-good-NEG
 ‘They are our children; it’s not right to fear them!’ (sp)

- (25) a) *tih tɔʔóh-pib-níh*
 3sg run-fast-NEG
 ‘He doesn’t run fast.’

- b) *píb tih tɔʔóh-óy*
 fast 3sg run-DYNM
 ‘He runs fast.’ (el)

There are no inherently negative quantifiers in Hup; however, the clause-level quantifier form *píd* (‘all, each of’; see §6.5.2) can occur in negative clauses:

- (26) *ʔín = hin tih-ǎn “nǎn!” nɔ-níh píd*
 1pl=also 3sg-OBJ come say-NEG DIST
 ‘As for us, we never / none of us told her “come!”’ (sp)

16.1.5. The interaction of verbal negation and other grammatical systems

It is cross-linguistically common for negation to interact with other grammatical systems within a language, such as tense and aspect (cf. Aikhenvald and Dixon 1998a, Miestamo 2005: 15–17). In Hup, whether a clause is marked as affirmative or negative may influence the choices to be made in other grammatical systems. This has already been seen in the discussion of negation in the imperative mood above (§16.1.1).

Negative *-nih* can co-occur in the verb word with the majority of other inflectional forms. It belongs to the class of Boundary Suffixes that require fluid formatives to appear in the periphery of the verb word (i.e., as enclitics or particles), rather than inside the verb as Inner Suffixes (cf. §3.5). Accordingly, Inner Suffixes such as the Applicative precede the Negative Boundary Suffix, and peripheral forms such as evidential enclitics pile up after it:

(27) *ʔám-ǎn d'oʔ-ʔũh-níh-áh ʔǎh-ǎp*
 2sg-OBJ take-APPL-NEG-FOC 1sg-DECL
 'I'm not going to get any (cookies) for you!' (cv)

(28) *ʔǎh biʔ-tuk-níh =hǔ*
 1sg work-want-NEG=NONVIS
 'I don't want to work.' (el)

In some cases involving aspect marking, two strategies of negation are available: one symmetric (example 29a; compare 29b), the other asymmetric, with the aspect marker occurring on the copula-like verb *ni-* 'be' (29c).

- (29) a) *ham-níh bíg ʔǎh-ǎh !*
 go-NEG HAB 1sg-DECL
 'I never go.' (txt)
- b) *hám-áy bíg ʔǎh-ǎh*
 go-DYNM HAB 1sg-DECL
 'I always go.' (txt)
- c) *nɔ-níh ʔin ni-bí-hə !*
 say-NEG 1pl be-HAB-TAG2
 '(“Go to school!”) we never say.' (sp)

On the other hand, certain tense, aspect, and mode specifications are not possible within the negated verb word. Negative *-nih* (itself having an ambiguous

identity as either Boundary or Inner Suffix, depending on what other formatives are present) cannot co-occur with certain Boundary Suffixes. In particular, it is ungrammatical in combination with Dynamic *-V̄y* and Declarative *-V̄h* (except in certain cases of clause-combining, see §18.1.2). It is likewise ungrammatical with Sequential *-yó?* (a Boundary Suffix); an auxiliary construction with *ni-* ‘be’ is required in order to convey a sequential negative event:

- (30) *wi?-níh ni-yó? ?in b’ay-té-ay-áh*
 hear-NEG be-SEQ 1pl return-FUT-INCH-DECL
 ‘Having understood nothing, we’d return.’ (cv)

Verbal negation is ungrammatical in the Apprehensive mood (see §14.6), and it also does not co-occur with the Counterfactual marker *-tã?* – presumably because the irrealis nature of this morpheme gives it an inherently negative quality (see §14.2 and §16.4 below).

Finally, the Verbal Negative suffix *-níh* is ungrammatical with the Future suffixes *-teg* / *-te-* (although it can occur with *-teg* when this suffix acts as a purpose marker in a dependent clause, as in example 13b above; see §13.1). This apparently idiosyncratic aspect of Hup grammar probably has a historical explanation relating to the nominal origin of these future suffixes, as discussed in the Historical note in §13.1. In order to express a negative future event, Hup relies on two alternative constructions. The most common involves the Inchoative marker *-ay*, as in (31) (but note that this combination can also be used for a current, on-going event, so its future reading is implied rather than entailed). The Future Contrast particle *tán* (§13.4.3) provides a second option for expressing negative future, as in example (32).

- (31) *ham-níh-ay*
 go-NEG-INCH
 ‘(I) won’t go.’ (cv)

- (32) *?ãh b’íyi? ham-níh tán-áh !*
 1sg only go-NEG FUT.CNTR-DECL
 ‘I alone will not go!’ (cv)

16.1.6. Verbal negation and emphasis/intensification

Several morphological strategies are available for forming emphatic negative utterances. Note that all of these emphatic or intensifier forms also occur in

affirmative clauses, but in certain cases their function in negative clauses is distinct from their function in affirmatives.

The most widely used negative emphasis marker or intensifier is the verbal particle *mún*. This form follows Negative *-níh* with verbs, adjectives, and adverbials. By contrast, in affirmative clauses the variants *muhún* (which occurs in the Barreira dialect region and is there formally distinguished from negative *mún*) and *mún* (Tat Deh dialect area; both affirmative and negative) function as intensifiers with adjectives, but are not grammatical with verbs (see §15.1.2). Use of this negative emphasis form yields such adjectival and adverbial expressions as *pay-níh mún* ‘not bad at all’ ~ ‘good, pretty’ (example 33),¹⁸⁶ as well as verbal forms like *hipāh-níh mún* (know-NEG INTS2) ‘(I) don’t know at all’ and those in (34–35):

- (33) *yĩ-n`íh = hin pay-níh mún tih bí?-ih*
 that.ITG-NMZ=also bad-NEG INTS2 3sg work-DECL
 ‘That’s easy/nice work that he’s doing.’ (sp)
- (34) *ĩn-ăn = yi? = níh yúp nɔ?-níh mún tih ni-bí-h, céc !*
 1pl-OBJ=TEL=EMPH.CO that give-NEG INTS2 3sg be-HAB-DECLINTERJ
 ‘That one never gives us any (sugar)!’ (cv)
- (35) *tǎh = mǎh-ăn = yi? ?ɔm-níh mún hid ni-bí-h !*
 son=DIM-OBJ=TEL fear-NEG INTS2 3pl be-HAB-DECL
 ‘They’re not afraid of / have no respect at all for my son!’ (cv)

Other emphatic forms that are productive with negative clauses (as well as with affirmatives; see §15.1) include the Emphasis marker *pog*, as in (36). The most commonly used intensifier with affirmative clauses (*-Vcáp*) rarely occurs with negatives, although this combination is possible, as illustrated by (37).

- (36) *yi-d`ǎh-ăn pe?-níh = pog bíg = nih j`ám = há? !*
 that.ITG-PL-OBJ hurt-NEG=EMPH1 HAB=EMPH.CO DST.CNTR=INT.TAG
 ‘(It) never bothers/hurts them.’ (discussing biting insects swarming on men without shirts) (cv)

¹⁸⁶ Use of this form with certain adjectives appears to be idiomatic. The most striking case is *naw-níh-mún* (good-NEG-INTS2) ‘a lot, extremely numerous’.

- (37) *dapúh ní-ĩcáp-níh-mĩ?*, *ʔǎn d'oʔ-ʔom-kěy ʔám = nih, bíg !*
 hand be-INTS1-NEG-UNDER 1sg.OBJ take-fear-see 2sg=EMPH.CO anteater
 'Even though you have no hands at all, you're scaring me, anteater!' (txt)

16.1.7. Reinforced negation with *nǎé*

Hup uses an additional negative particle *nǎé* to mark a strongly negative clause. This particle always occurs together with and reinforces some other negative marker; this is usually the Verbal suffix *-níh*, as in (38–39), but it may also be the Existential negative particle *pǎ* (see §16.2) or Counterfactual *-tǎéʔ-* (see §14.2). Such reinforced negation is fairly common – though far from ubiquitous – and is used by both older and younger speakers.

- (38) *pihít nǎé ʔayup = tǎt hǔ-níh*
 banana NEG:R one=fruit burn-NEG
 'Not a single banana is ripe.' (el)
- (39) *yikán wǔh b'íyíʔ ʔǎh ʔid-íh, nǎé húp ʔid-níh*
 over.there River.indian only 1sg speak-DECL NEG:R Hup speak-NEG
 'Over there I spoke only Tukano, I didn't speak any Hup at all.' (txt)

Reinforced negation with *nǎé* is used fairly consistently to express a 'neither...nor' relationship between constituents:

- (40) *yikán nǎé cǎkw'ǎt ʔid-níh-ĩp*
 over.there NEG:R Tukano speak-NEG-DEP
- nǎé potugěc wiʔ-níh-ĩp*
 NEG:R Portuguese understand-NEG-DEP
 'There, neither speaking Tukano nor understanding Portuguese, (there I arrived).' (txt)

Comparative note

The form *nǎé* is clearly a borrowing from Tukano, and is identified as such by some Hup speakers themselves. In Tukano, a strong negative is likewise conveyed by double negative marking in the clause, involving the negative particle *neé* and the verb plus negative suffix (cf. Ramirez 1997a: 154), and this property of double negation to mark a strong negative is common to East Tukanoan

languages generally. According to Aikhenvald (2002a: 134–135), a nearly identical emphatic double negation strategy – involving the particle *ne* and the negated verb – also exists in Tariana, and can be attributed to language contact between Tariana and East Tukanoan languages. The use of the same negative strategy and form in Hup is clearly a result of its involvement in the Vaupés linguistic area. However, the parallelism is not complete in Hup; *nǎé* cannot stand alone in Hup to mean ‘no’, as it can in Tukano and Tariana (Aikhenvald 2002a: 134).

The negative particle *nǎé* (and the Tukano and Tariana variants of this form) bears a rather striking resemblance to the Portuguese negative *nem*, which typically expresses a ‘neither/nor’ relationship, as can Hup *nǎé*. However, it is not clear whether any actual historical link exists between these forms. Aikhenvald (2002a: 135) considers the resemblance “almost certainly coincidental”, noting that “a negative marker with a dental nasal is attested in many languages of the area, of different genetic affiliations”. Clarification of the origin of this particle awaits future research.

16.2. Existential negative *pǎǎ*

A second, distinct strategy of negation in Hup involves the negative particle *pǎǎ*. This strategy is used exclusively to express negation of a nominal entity, specifically relating to the negation of its existence or presence (negative identity is handled by the particle *ʔǎp*, see §16.3 below). The negative marker *pǎǎ* stands on its own as a complete predicate, ‘there does not exist’, and has scope over the noun phrase:

- (41) *ʔǎn = dú = d’əh* *kotʔah = cóʔ = yiʔ* *húp* *pǎǎ*,
 1pl=ancestor=PL before=LOC=TEL human NEG:EX

cəkʷ’ə̀t = d’əh *pǎǎ*, *mináʔ = d’əh* *pǎǎ*...

Tukano=PL NEG:EX Desano=PL NEG:EX

‘In the time before our ancestors there were no people, no Tukanos, no Desanos...’ (txt)

The noun phrase negated by *pǎǎ* may be made up of a noun and an adjective modifier, as in (42a). Compare this to the verbal negation strategy, in which the adjective + *-nǎh* together form the predicate, and the negative particle has scope only within the predicate, as in (42b).

(42) a) [tiyĩ? pǒg] **pǎ**
 man big NEG:EX
 ‘There is no big man.’

b) tiyĩ? [pog]-**níh**
 man big-NEG
 ‘The man is not big.’ (el)

As a predicative particle, *pǎ* frequently occurs by itself as a complete utterance (in reference to an entity that is the topic of the discourse), meaning ‘(it) is not here; (there) is none’. It can likewise act as a negative interrogative predicate, as in *pǎ tíh?* (NEG:EX 3sg) ‘is there none?’ or ‘is he/she/it not here?’. The affirmative parallel of *pǎ* is the verb *ni*- ‘be, exist’ (compare examples 43a-b), whose negated form *ni-níh* (be-NEG) is occasionally substituted for *pǎ*, although this is not common (43c).

(43) a) ?ǎh = báb’ = d’əh **ní-íy**
 1sg=sibling=PL be-DYNM
 ‘I have siblings.’ (txt)

b) ?ǎh = báb’ = d’əh **pǎ**, na? - yí? - íy
 1sg=sibling=PL NEG:EX lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM
 ‘I have no siblings; (they) are all dead.’ (txt)

c) báb’ **ni-níh** j’ǎh ?ǎh-ti?
 sibling be-NEG DST.CNTR 1sg-EMPH.TAG
 ‘I have no relatives/siblings.’ (txt)

Negative *pǎ* has certain qualities of a verb; in particular, it can take an assortment of inflectional and tense-aspect related markers. These include some that can occur with various parts of speech, such as the Inchoative (example 44) and the Perfective (example 45; note that this form of the Perfective also occurs with nominals), but also some that are found exclusively with verbs, such as the Habitual particle (example 46).

(44) pídiya = hin nutǎn **pǎ-ay-áh** ?ǎh-ǎp
 battery=also today NEG:EX-INCH-FOC 1sg-DEP
 ‘Today I’ve run out of batteries.’ (sp)

(45) *pǎ̃-ʔeʔ*

NEG:EX-PERF

‘(There is) temporarily none.’ (el)

(46) *ʔāh wid-ham-tég mɔy pǎ̃ bíg*

1sg arrive-go-FUT/PURP house NEG:EX HAB

‘There’s never a place for me to stay when I arrive.’ (el)

However, *pǎ̃* is unlike a verb in several crucial respects. In particular, *pǎ̃* differs from all members of the verb class in that it is unable to take most Boundary Suffixes (as can be seen in examples 45–46 above, in which Boundary Suffixes would be required were true verbs involved), and typically occurs alone in uninflected form. Its predicative identity is also not sufficient grounds for attributing verbal status to *pǎ̃*, since adjectives and nouns can also form complete predicates in Hup. Nor does *pǎ̃* resemble an adjective, since adjectives – like verbs – can take most Boundary Suffixes, and adjectives occur within the noun phrase without an overt subordinator (whereas both *pǎ̃* and verbs must be expressed as a relative clause in this context). Accordingly, *pǎ̃* is here considered a predicative particle in its own right, rather than a member of the verb class or any other word class in Hup.

Use of a copula construction with *ni-* to carry tense-aspect marking is a general option in clauses with *pǎ̃*, as in (47), and is in some cases required, as in (48) (as is also the case with the Verbal Negative *-nǐh*, cf. example 30 above).

(47) *yi-n ʔih wag = hín pǎ̃ j’ám púy’ ni-bí-hóʔ*

that.ITG-NMZ day=also NEG:EX DST.CNTR little.brother be-HAB-TAG2

‘On those days little brother is always absent.’ (sp)

(48) *bab’ = áy pǎ̃, cət = ʔáy pǎ̃ ni-yóʔ*

sibling=FEM NEG:EX older.sibling=FEM NEG:EX be-SEQ

‘Having been without a younger sister, without an older sister.’ (txt)

Also unlike normal verbs, the predicative particle *pǎ̃* cannot directly take the Future suffixes *-teg / -te-*, which are similarly ungrammatical with Verbal Negative *-nǐh* (see §16.1.5 above). As in the case of verbs taking the *-nǐh* negative suffix, predicative *pǎ̃* often takes the Future Contrast particle *tán* instead:

(49) *mɔy pǎ̃ tán yúw-úh*

house NEG:EX FUT.CNTR that-DECL

‘There won’t be a house (for me to stay in).’ (el)

Alternatively, *pǎ* can take a nominalized verbal future construction (i.e., a complement clause) as its subject:

- (50) *nɔ-tég-n'ih pǎ,* *yúp mandukorí-iw-ih*
 say-FUT-NMZ NEG:EX that Mandukori-Filler-DECL
 'He has nothing like this to say, that Mandukori.' (sp)

- (51) *hid ham-yi?-ih,* *?ayǔp míníŋ = yi?*
 3pl go-TEL-DECL one straight=TEL

cá?ǎh ham-tég-n'ih pǎ = yi?
 side go-FUT-NMZ NEG:EX=TEL
 'They go (along), just straight ahead, not going from side to side.' (txt)

Curiously, an alternative strategy involves a special type of clause, in which a verb stem plus *-teg* acts as a pseudo-nominal subject, and *pǎ* forms the predicate; schematically, 'future-Verbing does not exist' (example 52). This construction with Future *-teg* appears to have both a nominal and a verbal identity, which probably reflects the historical derivation of the verbal future suffix from a generic nominalizer (see Historical note §13.1).

- (52) [*?ǎh pæm-tég*] *pǎ*
 1sg sit-thing/FUT NEG:EX
 'I have nothing to sit on; I will not sit.' (el)

Common emphatic forms involving negative *pǎ* are given in examples (53–54). Note that the variant of the emphasis marker in (54) (*muhún*; found in the *Barriera* dialect area only) otherwise occurs only in affirmative clauses as a modifier of an adjective, whereas the Verbal Negative *-nih* is always followed by the variant *mún* (see §16.1.6).

- (53) *pǎ = pog !*
 NEG:EX=EMPH1
 'None at all!' (cv)

- (54) *ki?dēh* *b'ɔk, ?āh* *yǎh-ǎh,* *kayak = dēh* *b'ɔk;*
manicuera.w/tapioca dish 1sg order-DECL manioc=water dish

pǎ *muhún-ǔp,* *kɔw* *y'á?*
NEG:EX INTS2-DEP pimenta crush
'Manicuera with tapioca, I ordered (to be brought), manicuera (lit. manioc water); (for those with) nothing at all, (I ordered them to bring) crushed pimenta.' (txt)

The Existential negator *pǎ* can co-occur with other negative particles. In example (55), the speaker uses the negative particle *nǎ* (§16.1.7) to reinforce negative *pǎ* when relating what he has been told by Catholic missionaries. In (56), someone's assertion *pǎ!* '(there are) none!' is contradicted by another speaker via the negative Identity particle *?ǎp* (see §16.3 below); note that the clause-level 'contradictory' nature of *?ǎp* is such that this double negative results in a positive, as opposed to the use of reinforcing negative particle *nǎ* in (55). Finally, although *pǎ* cannot itself take the negative verbal suffix *-níh*, both existential and verbal negation occur together in the same sentence in example (57); here the two negatives are conceptually completely independent of each other.

- (55) *póh,* *yecú* *máh-an,* *nǎ* *pekádu* *pǎ = d'əh* *hám-ǎh*
high Jesus near-DIR NEG:R sin(Pt) NEG:EX=PL go-DECL
'Up high, where Jesus is, only those without sins go.' (txt)

- (56) *pǎ* *?ǎp !*
NEG:EX NEG:ID
'Not none!' (cv)

- (57) *yít* *ham-níh-íy = nih* *j'ám* *tǎh?ín* *pǎ-ǎyík*
thus go-NEG-DYNM=EMPH.CO DST.CNTR child.mother NEG:EX-EXCL
'It didn't go well without my wife.' (txt)

16.3. Identity negative *?ǎp*

The negative particle *?ǎp* has the function of contradicting an assertion or negating the identity of a nominal entity ('this is not an X'). It is not associated with any particular word class, but may modify nouns, verbal predicates, adjectives, or adverbials.

Formally, *ʔǎp* is a free form, phonologically independent from the preceding form(s). However, it can occur within the scope of an evidential enclitic (see example 66 below), which suggests that it can sometimes undergo a degree of morphosyntactic integration with its clausal host. Negative *ʔǎp* itself does not take any inflectional markers. It is homonymous with the ‘quantity’ marker *ʔǎp* (see §6.5.3).

The most common use of *ʔǎp* is as an identity negator with predicate nominals, as in examples (58–61). The negative particle has scope over the entire noun phrase predicate.

(58) *núp j’áh-an = ʔǎy = ʔǎy ʔǎp*
 this land-DIR=who=FEM NEG:ID
 ‘(I’m) not a woman of this land.’ (sg)

(59) *maŋǎ ʔǎp !*
 Margarita NEG:ID
 ‘(It was) not Margarita (but someone else).’ (cv)

(60) *nutǎn-ǎy ʔid ʔǎp*
 today-DYNM story NEG:ID
 ‘(It’s) not a story of today.’ (i.e., it’s an old story) (txt)

(61) *húp = ʔǎy ʔǎp páh núp-ti? !*
 person=FEM NEG:ID PRX.CNTR this-EMPH.TAG
 ‘This is not a human woman!’ (txt)

While *ʔǎp* must follow the predicate, the subject of the predicate nominal clause (when explicitly stated) is free to either precede or follow the negated predicate (example 62a), just as it is in the corresponding affirmative clause (62b). This example clarifies that *ʔǎp* is not itself predicative, unlike the existence/presence negator *pǎ* discussed above.

(62) a) *[tiyǐ? pǒg] ʔǎp núp-ǎh*
 man big NEG:ID this-DECL
 ‘This is not a big man.’

b) *[tiyǐ? pǒg] núp-ǎh*
 man big this-DECL
 ‘This is a big man.’ (el)

Example (62a) can be understood to mean either ‘this is a man who is not big’ or ‘this is not a (big) man’ (i.e. not a man at all). However, the same clause negated with *-níh* has quite different constituency, and can therefore only mean ‘this man is not big’ (63a). The negation of identity in (62a) can also be contrasted with the negation of existence/presence in (63b).

(63) a) *núp tiyi? [pog]-níh*
 this man big-NEG
 ‘This man is not big.’

b) *[tiyĩ? pǒg] pǎ*
 man big NEG:EX
 ‘There is no big man.’ (el)

When the negative particle *ǎp* is postposed to a verbal predicate, it functions to contradict an entire assertion, as in examples (64–65). This negation strategy carries more contradictory force than the more common verbal negation strategy with the suffix *-níh*. With verbal predicates, *ǎp* must follow the fully inflected verb (regardless of the type of inflection). The expression in (64) would be used with children who are begging to eat someone else’s bananas, in order to impress upon them that the rightful owner is a serious possessor and the coveted item is not up for grabs.

(64) *tih wæd-mũhũ?-úy ǎp, tinñh g’ǎ?-ǎh !*
 3sg eat-play-DYNM NEG:ID 3sg.POSS hang-DECL
 ‘It’s not that she’s playing around at eating that, it’s *her* hanging bunch (of bananas)!’ (ru)

(65) *ǎh wæd-ǎy ǎp ǎh-ǎh, wæd tih = pǎy !*
 1sg eat-DYNM NEG:ID 1sg-DECL food 3sg=bad
 ‘I’m not eating; the food is bad!’ (ru)

Note that the object of the verbal predicate negated with *ǎp* can appear outside the scope of *ǎp*, as in (66) (in which the object *ǎn-ǎn* ‘us-OBJ’ follows *ǎp*). This example also illustrates the fact that evidentials – as clause- or predicate-level markers themselves, indicating the speaker’s source of information – generally follow the negative particle.

- (66) *yinih-yó?*, [hí hid tów-óy] **?ǎp** = *cud*
 that.ITG.be.like-SEQ no.reason 3pl scold-DYNM NEG:ID=INFR

?ín-ǎn = hin-íp...

1pl-OBJ=also-DEP

‘And thus, it was not without reason that they scolded us, apparently...’

(txt)

The negative particle *?ǎp* is also used to negate non-predicative clausal constituents. These include nominal arguments of the clause, both subjects (example 67) and objects (example 68):

- (67) *?áh = ?íp ?ǎp ?ǎn kéy-éh*
 1sg=father NEG:ID 1sg.OBJ see-DECL
 ‘It wasn’t my father that saw me (but someone else).’ (el)

- (68) *cug’ǎt ?ǎp tih d’ó?-óh*
 leaf/paper NEG:ID 3sg take-DECL
 ‘It wasn’t the book that he took (but something else).’ (el)

Similarly, *?ǎp* can negate a subordinate clause acting as a nominal constituent of the main clause, as in (69–70). It is not found inside subordinate clauses.

- (69) [*tih wád-ǎp*] **?ǎp** *páh yúw-úh !*
 3sg eat-DEP NEG:ID PRX:CNTR that.ITG-DECL
 ‘That’s not his thing to eat!’ (el)

- (70) *?ín ?ǎy = d’ó? = d’ǎh [yí = n’ǎn ?ũh-n’oh-d’ák-n’ǎh] ?ǎp !*
 1pl woman=child=PL man=PL.OBJ INTRC-fall-stick.against-NMZ NEG:ID
 ‘We as girls weren’t ones to go running after men like that!’ (cv)

The Identity Negator *?ǎp* can also negate an adverbial expression, as in (71), and negates quantifiers such as *nihǔ?* ‘all’ (example 72) and *b’íyí?* ‘all, only’ (although, curiously, it is judged ungrammatical with the quantifier *?ápyí?* ‘all’):

- (71) *píb ?ǎp tih t’ósh-óy*
 fast NEG:ID 3sg run-DYNM
 ‘He does not run fast.’ (el)

- (72) *hid nihũ?* **ʔǎp** *ham-té-h,* *dəb-níh = d'əh = yi?*
 3pl all NEG:ID go-FUT-DECL many-NEG=PL=TEL
 'They won't all go, only a few of them.' (el)

However, consultants judged *ʔǎp* to be inappropriate or strange in combination with predicate adjectives:

- (73) ?? *yũ páy* **ʔǎp** *tih bahád-áy*
 John bad/ugly NEG:ID 3sg appear-DYNM
 (Intended meaning: 'John does not appear ugly/ bad.')

The contradictory force of *ʔǎp* can apply to negative clauses as well as to affirmative ones. This is illustrated by its occurrence with the Verbal Negative *-níh* in example (74), and with the Existential Negative *pǎ* in (56) above.

- (74) *tih wæd-níh* **ʔǎp**
 3sg eat-NEG NEG:ID
 'He *didn't* not eat.' (i.e., he did eat) (el)

Finally, *ʔǎp* shows the same flexibility as *-níh* (example 20 above) in that a single *ʔǎp* can negate an entire string of sequentially linked clauses:

- (75) *nĩ ʔǎy = hiwĩh = d'əh = yi?* *nih-yó?*, *b'ət wid-yé,*
 1sg.POSS FEM=relative=PL=TEL be.like-SEQ roça arrive-enter

wǎn' wǎn'-d'ó?, *kǎn = mæh,* *kǎn d'ó?-yó?*
 mingau make.mingau-take farinha=DIM farinha take-SEQ

ʔég-əp ʔǎp
 drink-DEP NEG:ID
 'I don't do like my female kinsmen: return from the roça, take mingau, a little farinha, take farinha, and drink.' (i.e., I do none of these things) (txt)

16.4. Negative expressions and negative lexical items

Hup has no general lexeme for 'no'. A negative response or refusal typically requires one of the strategies already discussed here, such as a verb phrase negated with *-níh* (either echoed or summarized as *nih-níh* [be.like-NEG] 'not like that'), a noun phrase with the existence negator *pǎ* 'none, not here' (which, as

discussed, can stand alone), or a generic demonstrative or other noun with ‘identity’ negation (e.g., *yít ʔǎp* ‘not thus’), depending on the context.

However, Hup does have several inherently negative lexical items and expressions, in addition to the negative particles already discussed in this chapter. The fixed negative phrase *ʔám yaʔǎpaʔ* is commonly used in response to questions to mean ‘I don’t know’. Its etymology is obscure, but it appears to involve the second person singular pronoun *ʔám*, and possibly the form *yaʔǎp* ‘that’s all; that much’.

Inherently negative verbs in Hup include *muy-* ‘not get any, fail’, as in examples (76–78). This verb can occur in compounds, and can itself take clausal negation (78). It is almost certainly borrowed from Tukano, in which the near-identical form *muí* has essentially the same meaning as its Hup counterpart (cf. Ramirez 1997b: 108).

- (76) *d’əwyíʔ hǒp múy-ǔy ʔǎh-ǎh*
 today fish get.none-DYNM 1sg-DECL
 ‘Today I didn’t get any fish.’ (ru)

- (77) *badánka pɔpɔ-ǎn g’əç-múy-ǔy*
 branca(Pt) inambu-OBJ bite-get.none-DYNM
 ‘Branca (dog) did not catch the inambu.’ (el)

- (78) *j’ám hǒp ʔǎh kək-muy-níh*
 yesterday fish 1sg pull-get.none-NEG
 ‘Yesterday I caught plenty of fish.’ (lit. I didn’t come away from fishing empty-handed) (ru)

Another verb that can be considered a lexical negative is *yǎhǎʔ-*, which usually occurs in verb compounds to mean ‘stop doing Verb’:

- (79) *yam-yǎhǎʔ-yíʔ !*
 sing-stop-TEL.IMP
 ‘Stop singing!’ (el)

Finally, the verbal Counterfactual marker *-tǎʔ-* can be considered inherently negative, as discussed in §14.2 and in §16.1.7 above; it can even occur with the reinforcing negative marker *nǎé*, as in (81) (from a discussion of evil spirits).

- (80) *ʔam nɔh-tǎʔ-ǎy !*
 2sg fall-CNTRFACT-DYNM
 ‘You almost fell!’ (cv)

- (81) *ni-hũ?* **næ** *núp* *j'ah = có?* *hid* *ni-tæʔ-ní-h*
 be-finish NEG:R this land=LOC 3pl be-CNTRFACT-DECL
 'All of these were almost in our land.' (txt)

Comparative note

Negation in Hup's sister language Nadëb has been described in some detail by Weir (1984, 1994), who observes that Nadëb has a remarkably complex set of strategies for negation, which reveal some typologically unusual features. The only negative constructions reported to have direct affirmative equivalents are dependent or embedded clauses and imperatives, while the negation of any non-imperative verbal main clause results in a non-verbal equative clause (Weir 1994: 291). Moreover, the negative marker used in clausal negation itself has a nominal identity, which is typologically extremely rare – in fact, Nadëb may represent the only example of such a strategy (cf. Miestamo 2005: 94).

The strategies and morphemes found in Nadëb appear (at least superficially) to have little in common with those in Hup. One possible cognate is the Nadëb post-verbal particle *manih*, which bears some resemblance to the Hup Verbal Negative suffix *-nih*; however, in Nadëb this negative particle is used exclusively in imperative clauses.

A possible cognate with Hup *pǎ* is found in Dâw. According to S. Martins (1994: 163), verbal negation in Dâw involves the enclitic *-êh*, and nouns undergo existential negation via a combination of this form with the nominal predicate marker *ma*, resulting in the form *meh*. This particle combines with nouns in much the same way as does Hup *pǎ*; for example, compare Dâw *lay' meh* (fishhook NEG) 'there aren't any fishhooks' with the same construction in Hup: *hõpkék pǎ* (fishhook NEG:EX). If future work reveals that the Hup and Dâw forms are actually cognates, this will provide some insight into the historical source of Hup *pǎ*.

As a final intriguing point, semantically parallel (though non-cognate) non-compositional negative lexical items meaning 'I don't know' and 'be absent/non-existent' (of which the latter is predicative) are found in both Tukano (*uba* and *mãri*) and Tariana (*hãida* and *kuripua*) respectively, and this fact has led Aikhenvald (1999b: 404) to suggest that this parallelism is an areal feature. That Hup also has analogous forms (*?ám ya?ápa?* and *pǎ*) is likely yet another indication of its deep involvement in the Vaupés linguistic area.

Chapter 17

Simple clauses

This chapter focuses on three major types of main clause in Hup, which correspond to distinct speech acts: declarative, interrogative, and imperative. The differentiation of these clause types is a salient aspect of Hup morphosyntax, and is encoded by both clausal constituent order and morphological marking.

17.1. Boundary Suffixes and clause type

Morphologically, Hup clauses in general are loosely defined by the Boundary Suffixes, as discussed in §3.4.1.2. While a heterogeneous group, the Boundary Suffixes (particularly the set of ‘simple’ suffixes) generally share the function of indicating clause type. Accordingly, they distinguish dependent or co-subordinate clauses of various kinds (adverbial, relative, complement, sequential, conditional, etc.) and main clauses having a particular illocutionary force (negative, interrogative, imperative, etc.).

A subset of the Boundary Suffixes, of which all except an unmarked ‘zero’ form share a vowel-copying VC profile, can be defined functionally as maximally ‘basic’ in that they mark several of the most distinctive clause types and are otherwise largely semantically neutral (Table 46; see also §3.4.1.2). Although these morphemes are heterogeneous in their patterning inside the clause (and may in some cases co-occur within the clause), when they occur on a clause-final verbal predicate they are mutually exclusive¹⁸⁷ and correspond consistently to clause type. These are by far the most frequently occurring Boundary Suffixes in Hup, although they are often supplanted by various other Boundary Suffixes (e.g., the Verbal Negative *-níh* [§16.1], the forceful Imperative *-kaǝm* [§17.5.2], etc.). Where they relate to declarative, interrogative, and imperative clauses, the functions and patterning of the various Boundary Suffixes (including these maximally ‘basic’ forms) will be discussed in this chapter. The clause-marking functions of other Boundary Suffixes are treated in Chapter 18 and other sections of this grammar.

¹⁸⁷ Exceptions to this rule may occur in cases of clause linkage, principally regarding the suffixes *-Vý* and *-Vh*; see §18.1.2 and below.

Table 46. The set of parallel clause-final Boundary Suffixes in Hup

Declarative clauses	- $\acute{V}h$ (Aspect-neutral) - $\acute{V}y$ (Dynamic; concurrent with speech moment)
Interrogative clauses	- $V?$
Imperative and Apprehensive clauses	- \emptyset (plus high tone for imperative)
Dependent clauses	- Vp

17.2. The morphosyntax of main clauses

The relative order of subject and verb plays an important role in defining declarative, interrogative, and imperative clauses in Hup. In general, more than one ordering option is available for a given clause type, but it is the interaction of word order and clause-final morphological marking that is crucial in distinguishing one from another.

The most basic morphosyntactic patterns that define the various types of main clauses are listed below. Because the order of subject and object arguments in transitive clauses is highly flexible (as discussed in §17.3.1 below), objects are not included in this schema. The patterns are indicated using the subset of Boundary Suffixes given in Table 46 above, which are the most common markers of clause type, but it is important to note that in some cases other Boundary Suffixes may appear in their place. For example, the Negative suffix *-nih* (among other forms) may take the place of the Dynamic marker, or of the Declarative marker in a verb-final declarative clause; similarly, imperative clauses may take the strong imperative suffix *-kaəm* (or Jussive or Apprehensive morphology) instead of the \emptyset form and high tone.

Declarative clauses:

Subject Verb-DYNAMIC	(Current or on-going events)
Subject Verb-DECLARATIVE	(Events not immediately concurrent with the speech moment or frame of reference)
Verb-DYNAMIC Subject-DECLARATIVE	(Common variant; appears to involve right-dislocation)

Interrogative clauses:

Verb-DYNAMIC Subject	(Polar questions)
Q word Subject Verb-INTERROGATIVE	(Constituent questions)
Subject Verb-INTERROGATIVE	(Polar constituent-focused questions)

Imperative clauses:

(Subject) Verb- \emptyset (plus high tone)

17.3. Declarative clauses

This section treats the declarative clause in Hup. Declarative clauses are defined both by constituent order and morphological marking, and include both affirmative and negative statements, as well as non-verbal clauses involving predicate nominals, adjectives, and locatives.

17.3.1. Constituent order in the declarative clause

Constituent order in Hup is relatively flexible, but the basic (formally least-marked) pattern is clearly verb-final. Defining the order of nominal arguments in the transitive clause is more difficult, but the ‘basic’ constituent order can arguably be identified as AOV. The actual order of constituents appears to be determined primarily by pragmatics, principally the relative newness or givenness of information. Other relevant factors that correlate with word order are verbal tense and aspect, and the identity of nominal constituents as pronouns or full lexical nouns. Both context and the existence of morphological core case-marking (see §4.3.1), which corresponds to a consistently nominative-accusative alignment system, help to disambiguate syntactic arguments.

Hup shows general consistency between its clausal and phrasal constituent order patterns, according to the word order universals originally established by Greenberg (1966). As objects precede verbs, so do relative clauses, demonstratives, numerals, and genitives (i.e., possessors) precede the noun phrases they modify, and nouns precede adpositions. Adjectives, on the other hand, follow nouns, in line with Dryer’s (1992) observation that a correlation between the order of object/verb and adjective/noun is cross-linguistically weak.

In discourse, it is relatively rare for two full noun phrases to be present, as is cross-linguistically typical (cf. the ‘preferred argument structure’ observed by Du Bois 1987). The use of pronouns is common, as is the dropping of arguments altogether when these can be recovered from the discourse context; this is particularly true for objects (example 1). Subject dropping also occurs (example 2), but is less frequent. In providing information in response to a question or related solicitation from an interlocutor, an utterance may consist of only a verb (plus inflection), or only a noun or adjective, but in most other discourse contexts a predicate with at least one nominal argument (usually the subject) is the norm.

- (1) *yo-cak-wob-ni-yó?*, *póh tih w'ob-yí?-ay-áh*,
 pull-climb-rest.on-be-SEQ high 3sg set-TEL-INCH-DECL
nukán, wáb-an
 over.here jirau-DIR
 'Having pulled (her children) up, she set (them) up high, here, on the
 jirau.' (txt)
- (2) *cet-ham-tubud-yí?-íy*, *hup = ?áý-ǎn !*
 carry.on.back-go-INTS3-TEL-DYNM person=FEM-OBJ
 '(The tapir) carried the woman a long way off!' (txt)

In keeping with the avoidance of multiple full noun phrases, a relatively common discourse strategy is to repeat a clause, dropping a different argument each time:

- (3) *nút = mah, ba?tǐb-ǎn g'əç-g'et-pó-h !*
 here=REP spirit-OBJ bite-stand-EMPH1-DECL
hǎt g'əç-g'et-pó-h, ba?tǐb' hohǒ?-ót
 alligator bite-stand-EMPH1-DECL spirit rib.cage-OBL
 'Here, it's said, (he) bit the spirit! The alligator bit (him), on the spirit's
 rib cage.' (txt)

Verb-final constituent order is basic and most frequent in Hup, although some flexibility exists. Verb-final declarative clauses are particularly standard in past-tense narrative and in descriptive and other time-neutral discourse, and are also common in clauses with future or past tense reference generally. In these cases, the clause-final verb is very often marked with the Declarative marker *-Vh* (§17.3.2 below), but a variety of other Boundary Suffixes also occur (e.g., Future *-téç*, Negative *-níh*, etc.).

Declarative verb-final constituent order is illustrated in the intransitive clauses in (4–5). As these examples show, intransitive (and also transitive) clauses are frequently initiated by an adverbial word or clause (often denoting temporal sequence), followed by the subject, and finally the verb.

- (4) *bǐg = mah = yí?* *tih níh-ǎh, ham-g'ó?-óh*
 long.time=REP=TEL 3sg be.like-DECL go-go.about-DECL
 'For a long time, it's said, he did thus, wandered about.' (txt)

- (5) *tāʔáy nǎh wǎç ká-át = mah,*
 woman POSS fish.trap barricade-OBL=REP

tǎh y'æʔ-tuʔ-ní-h

tapir defecate-immersed-INFR2-DECL

'On the woman's fish-trap (in the water), the tapir defecated.' (txt)

While verb-final constituent order is basic in Hup, a variant in which the verb precedes the subject in the declarative clause is also common. Most cases of this apparent subject-final word order can probably be best explained as involving right dislocation, as discussed below. This subject-final structure is somewhat more frequent when the clause encodes an ongoing or currently relevant event, and these clauses are thus particularly common in everyday conversation. In such cases, the verb is usually marked with the Dynamic suffix *-V́y*, but other Boundary Suffixes are possible (e.g., Inchoative *-ay*, Negative *-nǎh*, etc.).

A crucial feature of subjects that appear to the right of the verb in declarative clauses is their inability to stand alone without additional morphology – a feature that sets apart this VS structure as clearly more marked than the verb-final clause type. In this context, subjects are obligatorily marked by an inflectional suffix, most often the Declarative *-V́h* (§17.3.2 below), although other markers are also possible. If an unmarked subject does occur in clause-final position, the clause can only be interpreted as a polar interrogative (see §17.4.2 below).

Examples of this clause type are given in (6–7).

- (6) *ʔamǎh tegcáʔ d'óʔ-óy páh ʔǎh-ǎh !*
 2sg.POSS wood.box take-DYNM PRX.CNTR 1sg-DECL
 'I took your matches!' (cv)

- (7) *tǎh-íy yúw-úh, patí!*
 lie-DYNM that.ITG-DECL Pattie
 'He's lying, Pattie!' (cv)

Examples of subject-final declarative clauses usually involve pronominal or demonstrative subjects, whereas subjects that are full nominals are more likely to be clause-initial (as in example 8). The most common third person pronoun in post-verbal position is the 'intangible' demonstrative (*yu-*), rather than the regular personal pronominal forms *tih* or *hid* (cf. §6.3).

- (8) *wǎh pæcáw = d'əh b'íyi? ní-íy*
 river.indian youth=PL only be-DYNM
 'There are only River Indian boys.' (cv)

This subject-final order also makes it possible both for the clause to receive Declarative marking and for the verb to be marked with the Dynamic marker or some other Boundary Suffix (which otherwise cannot normally co-occur with the Declarative on the verb), such as Negative *-níh*. In addition, subject-final structure in declarative clauses occurs when the clause-final subject is marked with the suffix *-Vp*, argued in §7.1.5 to indicate a reactivated topic, and the focus marker *-áh* falls on the preceding predicate.

Right dislocation is a common information-packaging convention of Hup, as is discussed in more detail below. In clauses which clearly involve right dislocation (e.g., examples 17 and 22 below), arguments are often expressed (or restated) as external arguments to the main clause, following the predicate and independently marked with the Declarative suffix (while the preceding clausal material may *also* take the Declarative marker). While the post-predicative subjects in examples such as (6–7) should probably also be identified as right-dislocated arguments, they are less clearly characterized as such for several reasons. First, in cases like those above, the subject is not co-referential with any other subject nominal in the clause. In addition, intonation falls just before the clause-final subject, but then rises again on the subject itself, whereas cross-linguistically right dislocated elements are usually unaccented (Lambrecht 2001: 1071). However, the fact that the post-predicative subjects are typically pronouns or demonstratives resemble right-dislocated subjects cross-linguistically, and it is likely that the constructions exemplified above represent a conventionalized form of right-dislocation in which the co-referential subject within the main clause is normally dropped.¹⁸⁸

As for a basic order of nominal arguments in the transitive clause (where these are explicitly stated at all), this is difficult to ascertain definitively. In cases where there are absolutely no other clues to the identity of subject and object, Hup speakers prefer AOV constituent order, which suggests that this order of arguments is in some sense the most basic:

- (9) a) *m'ǎh yã?ám mǎh-ǎy*
 snake jaguar kill-DYNM
 'The snake kills the jaguar.'

¹⁸⁸ I am grateful to Knud Lambrecht for enlightening discussion of these issues.

- b) *yãʔám m'æh mæh-æy*
 jaguar snake kill-DYNM
 'The jaguar kills the snake.' (el)

It is, however, extremely rare for constituent order to be the only clue to the identity of subject (i.e., agent) and object in a transitive clause, and consultants are generally uncomfortable with elicitation exercises like that exemplified in (9). Grammatical objects that are human entities, pronouns, and noun phrases involving demonstratives are obligatorily marked with Object case in Hup (see §4.3.1.1), so their identity as subject or object is always clear. On the other hand, inanimate entities in object function are not generally object-marked; yet inanimate entities can hardly ever be interpreted as actors, hence hardly ever as subjects, so this lack of object marking rarely leads to confusion. Cases of potential ambiguity are therefore for the most part limited to interactions between two animal entities, for which object marking is optional. Even in these cases, if context-related clues to the identity of the participants are inadequate or lacking, speakers prefer to use the optional case markers rather than simply to rely on constituent order; thus the object nominals in (9a) and (b) would ordinarily be marked with *-án*.

Actual Hup discourse provides few clues to establishing one order of core nominal arguments as more 'basic' than another, because clauses containing both a full (non-pronominal) nominal subject and object are rare, as noted above. When these do occur, the order of subject and object is flexible, and is subject to pragmatic considerations – in general, newer or more focused information is fronted, while more topical arguments tend to come later in the clause. However, a text count of such clauses does suggest that AOV order is at least twice as common as OAV order, which supports the apparent preference for AOV order found in elicitation contexts, as discussed above. A text example of AOV order is given in (10); the alternative OAV order (in which the speaker is focusing on the object, Curupira) in (11).

- (10) *yúp = mah yúp, tih = tæhʔíp b'ǎʔ cim'-d'oʔ-yæh-æh*
 that.ITG=REP that.ITG 3sg=child.father beiju claw-take-FRUST-DECL
 'Then, it's said, her husband reached for the beijú in vain.' (txt)

- (11) *dohʔãy-ăn = mah ʔayúp = ʔih, húp = ʔih kéy-éh*
 Curupira-OBJ=REP one=MSC Hup=MSC see-DECL
 'A man, a Hup man saw Curupira, it's said.' (txt)

The order of pronominal objects relative to other nominal constituents also depends on pragmatics; they tend to follow full nominal agents in the clause (example 12), but this is not obligatory (13):

- (12) *yít j'ób hæyhó = mah j'am baʔtīb'*
 thus night middle=REP DST.CNTR spirit

tíh-ăn wídnæn-pó-ay-áh
 3sg-OBJ arrive.come-EMPH1-INCH-DECL
 'So in the middle of the night, it's said, a spirit came to him.' (txt)

- (13) *ʔăn baʔtīb' wæd-tæʔ-æy páh ʔăn-áh !*
 1sg.OBJ spirit eat-CNTRFACT-DYMN PRX.CNTR 1sg.OBJ-DECL
 'A spirit nearly ate me up!' (txt)

As is common in many languages, pronominal subjects in Hup (which tend to be highly topical) almost always immediately precede the verb in the clause (examples 14–15) (resulting in a default OAV order). Because pronominal objects are obligatorily case-marked, ambiguity in the identity of core syntactic arguments is always avoided when one argument is a pronoun. Probably as a result of this preference for pronominal subjects to directly precede the verb, they have acquired some of the characteristics of proclitics when in this position in the clause (i.e., lack of stress, and a tendency for the third person singular pronoun *tíh* to be phonologically dependent on the verb in the Umari Norte dialect; see §3.4.2.1 and §6.1).

- (14) *patí-ăn húp-út ʔáh ʔíd-ihó?*
 Pattie-OBJ Hup-OBL 1sg speak-TAG2
 'I speak Hup to Pattie, you know.' (sp)

- (15) *yít = mah háť-ăn tíh d'oʔ-yíʔ-íh*
 thus=REP alligator-OBJ 3sg take-TEL-DECL
 'Then he grabbed the alligator.' (txt)

Despite the strong preference for subject pronouns to directly precede the verb, this is not obligatory in the Hup clause (although this order appears to be more fixed in the Umari Norte dialect, in keeping with the pronouns' more clitic-like identity in that dialect). Focused pronominal subjects typically precede objects (especially where these are themselves pronominal), as in example

(16) – where the subject receives additional emphasis through its clause-final repetition as a right-dislocated argument.

- (16) *ʔǎh tih-ǎn mæh-yíʔ-íy = tih, ʔǎh-ǎh !*
 1sg 3sg-OBJ kill-TEL-DYNM=CNTRFCT2 1sg-DECL
 ‘I would kill him, I (would)!’ (txt)

Nevertheless, Hup has a number of strategies for maintaining its preference for immediately preverbal pronominal subjects in transitive clauses. For example, subjects are often referred to initially via a pronoun, and only made explicit post-verbally as an external argument to the main clause:

- (17) *tih hehéʔ-éh, tih-ǎn, yúp dohʔǎy-ǎh*
 3sg laugh.loudly-DECL 3sg-OBJ that.ITG Curupira-DECL
 ‘She laughed loudly at her, (did) that Curupira (wife).’ (txt)

It is also fairly common to have a full nominal subject *and* a co-referential (re-sumptive) pronoun together in same clause, as in (18), especially in the Umari Norte dialect.

- (18) *yí-níh-yóʔ = mah baʔtíʔ tih peʔpeʔ-kót-óh*
 that.ITG-be.like-SEQ=REP spirit 3sg grope-go.in.circles-DECL
 ‘Then, it’s said, the spirit went groping around.’ (txt)

This prevalence of pronominal subjects, which appear to be marginally procliticized to the verb, may represent an early step towards the historical development of a system of pronominal clitics – a process which, when further developed, often gives rise to verbal person agreement. Such systems of person-marking on the verb are fairly common in Amazonian languages.

Other orders of predicates and arguments are possible in Hup, although they are less clearly limited to the domain of a single clause. As mentioned briefly above, Hup has a productive strategy of information packaging that involves the stringing along of arguments *after* the predicate. These arguments appear as self-contained pieces of information that relate to, but occur outside, the main clause, as right-dislocated arguments (antitopics). In many cases, the fact that these external arguments occur outside the main clause proper is signaled by the ability of both the argument and the preceding predicate to independently take the Declarative suffix *-Vh*. Because the Declarative suffix is not grammatical clause-internally, the *-Vh*-marked predicate preceding the external argument cannot be interpreted as clause-medial. Moreover, the main clause and its exter-

nal argument are typically separated from each other by a short pause and/or intonation juncture.

This external argument strategy is common with subjects (see above) and objects, as illustrated in the following examples. In (20) both subject and object are stated as pronouns in the main clause, and then restated more explicitly in the string of arguments that follow.

- (19) *děh hón-ǝp = mah tih kéy-éh, tih-ǎn-áh*
 water vomit-DEP=REP 3sg see-DECL 3sg-OBJ-DECL
 ‘While (ritually) vomiting water, he saw her (reflected in the water).’
 (txt)

- (20) *yít = mah tih-ǎn tih g’əç-d’oʔ-póg-b’ay-áh,*
 thus=REP 3sg-OBJ 3sg bite-take-EMPH1-AGAIN-DECL

hăt = b’ay-áh, tinñh mumuy = cúm, baʔtǝb’-ǎn-áh
 alligator=AGAIN-DECL 3sg.POSS arm=beginning spirit-OBJ-DECL
 ‘So then he bit him, (did) the alligator, on his upper arm, (bit) the spirit.’
 (txt)

This strategy of expressing arguments externally to the main clause also applies to oblique constituents, as in (21), where the demonstrative ‘here’ of the main clause is elaborated following the predicate.

- (21) *nút hid ni-ʔě-h, núp mǝy-ǝt*
 here 3pl be-PERF-DECL this house-OBL
 ‘They lived here, in this house.’ (cv)

This tendency to restate nominal arguments externally to the main clause is especially frequent in narrative discourse in the Umari Norte dialect (examples 22–23). This probably has to do with the fact that verbs in this dialect almost always occur with their pronominal subjects (often clearly procliticized), which are then clarified as co-referential right-dislocated arguments marked with *-Vh*.

- (22) *mih-ǎn = maám tu = hup-yéd-áh, tih-iw-ih, tah-áh*
 turtle-OBJ=REP.DST.CNTR 3sg=RFLX-hide-DECL 3sg-FLR-DECL tapir-DECL
 ‘He hid himself from the turtle, he (did), the tapir.’ (txt, Umari Norte dialect)

- (23) *macã-cák-maám* *tih-ăn* *tõ = wɔn-hám-ãy = mah* *yúp,*
 heal-climb-REP.DST.CNTR 3sg-OBJ 3sg=follow-go-INCH=REP that.ITG

mih-íh, *tah-ăn-áh*

turtle-DECL tapir-OBJ-DECL

‘Having got well and climbed out (of the hole), he followed after him, (did) the turtle, (after) the tapir.’ (txt, Umari Norte dialect)

However, just as it is not always obvious that post-verbal subjects are right-dislocated (see above), post-verbal objects are likewise not always clearly external to the main clause, as in (24–25). As is the case for subjects, their status is unclear when the clausal chunks are not distinguished from each other by the Declarative marker (which tends to be optional on clause-final objects, unlike clause-final subjects) and the object is not co-referential with another noun phrase. Nevertheless, the verb or predicate of the clause is often separated from its clause-final argument (whether subject or object) by a slight pause or intonation break (as is the case in 24–25), suggesting a juncture. While the actual status of these post-verbal arguments is currently understood to be outside the main clause, this issue should be explored further.

- (24) *?id-cíw-íy* *j’ám* *tíh-ăn,* *?áh-áh*
 speak-COMPL-DYNM DST.CNTR 3sg-OBJ 1sg-DECL
 ‘I already spoke to her.’ (cv)

- (25) *?áh hipãh-cíw-íy,* *híd-ăn*
 1sg know-COMPL-DYNM 3pl-OBJ
 ‘I already know (how it is with) them.’ (sp)

The order of arguments in ditransitive clauses follows similar guidelines to that in transitive clauses. The dropping of one or even both objects from the clause is quite common, since the participants can usually be recovered from the discourse context. When both objects are present, the newer, more focused information typically comes first. Their respective identities are usually not in question, since recipients/beneficiaries are more likely to be human or at least animate (and receive obligatory object marking regardless), while direct objects tend to be inanimate. However, even if both objects are human – leading to potential ambiguity between object and recipient/beneficiary – their order is still quite flexible and is determined by pragmatics and context. For example, consultants interpret both of the elicited options in (26) to mean ‘I show you the child’, since this is the more pragmatically expected scenario:

- (26) a) *tih = dóʔ-ǎn ʔám-ǎn ʔāh bé-éy*
 3sg=child-OBJ 2sg-OBJ 1sg show-DYNM
 ‘I show you the child.’ (el)
- b) *ʔám-ǎn tih = dóʔ-ǎn ʔāh bé-éy*
 2sg-OBJ 3sg=child-OBJ 1sg show-DYNM
 ‘I show you the child’ (el)

Where a ditransitive clause involves a causitivized transitive verb, there seems to be some preference (in elicitation contexts) for the object of the main predicate to precede the object of the embedded transitive verb, but consultants judge both interpretations to be acceptable:

- (27) *tãʔǎy tih = dóʔ-ǎn dudú-ǎn key-yǎh-ǎy*
 woman 3sg=child-OBJ Pedro-OBJ see-request-DYNM
 ‘The woman tells the child to look at Pedro.’
 (Or: ‘The woman tells Pedro to look at the child’) (el)

In actual discourse, however – in the few cases where both ditransitive objects are actually present – their respective order is interchangeable (and presumably dependent on information structure). This is particularly apparent in example (28), where the speaker switches the order of the object nominals (‘drink’ and ‘him’) between repetitions of the same clause:

- (28) *ʔǎg tíh-ǎn tih g’óʔ-óh, b’óʔ pǎg-ót !*
 drink 3sg-OBJ 3sg serve-DECL cuia big-OBL
- b’óʔ pǎg-ót nút=mah tíh-ǎn ʔǎg tih g’óʔ-óh !*
 cuia big-OBL here=REP 3sg-OBJ drink 3sg serve-DECL
 ‘She served drink to him, in a big cuia! In a cuia this big, it’s said, she served him drink! (txt)

Further examples of the flexible ordering of ditransitive objects are given in (29–32), where newer, more focused information generally precedes older, more topical information. In (29–30), the recipient/beneficiary precedes the direct object (as it also does in 33 below):

- (29) *‘máý ! teghõ = ʔǎy-ǎn dadánya ʔin du-wæd-ʔáy-ay-áh*
 let’s.go Non.Indian=FEM-OBJ orange(Pt) 1pl sell-eat-VENT-INCH-DECL
 ‘C’mon! Let’s go sell some oranges to the Non-Indian girl.’ (txt)

- (30) *níŋ-ǎn yĩ-n'ĩh ʔid-tuk-níh ʔǎh-ǎh*
 2pl-OBJ that.ITG-NMZ speak-want-NEG 1sg-DECL
 'I don't want to say this to you all.' (sp)

In (31–32), the direct object precedes the recipient/beneficiary:

- (31) *ʔamĩh kág' ʔǎn be-kǎm !*
 2sg.POSS forehead 1sg.OBJ show-IMP2
 'Show me your forehead!' (txt)
- (32) *yúp = mah yawǎç kág' = mah baʔtĩb-ǎn tih bé-éh*
 that.ITG=REP Titi.Monkey forehead=REP spirit-OBJ 3sg show-DECL
 'So he showed the monkey's forehead to the spirit.' (txt)

Note that pronominal subjects in these clauses tend to immediately precede the verb, just as they do in mono-transitive clauses; non-pronominal subjects, on the other hand – while infrequent – are more likely to be clause-initial (supporting the argument that basic constituent order is AOV):

- (33) *tih = tǎhʔín tih-ǎn wǎd nɔʔ-ay-áh*
 3sg=child.mother 3sg-OBJ food give-INCH-DECL
 'His wife gave him food.' (txt)

Finally, objects of ditransitive clauses may be tacked on behind the predicate as right-dislocated arguments (example 34), just as in mono-transitive clauses. In the very rare cases in which a clause has more than three explicitly stated arguments (i.e., a tritransitive applicative construction), then at least one argument (usually the beneficiary of the applicative) occurs in this external position.

- (34) *yúp mĩh kinim hɔk-d'oʔ-yóʔ = mah*
 that.ITG turtle wrist saw-take-SEQ=REP
- tih d'əh-d'əh-wáy-áh, baʔtĩb'-ǎn*
 3sg send-send-go.out-DECL spirit-OBJ
 'So having cut off the turtle's foot, it's said, he passed (it) out to the spirit.' (txt)

17.3.2. Declarative marker -*Vh*

The vowel-copying Boundary Suffix -*Vh* – perhaps the most ubiquitous bound morpheme in Hup – marks the declarative clause. While it is not obligatory on every declarative clause in Hup (its place may be filled by other Boundary Suffixes) it is very often present. Conversely, it is obligatorily absent from all other major clause types in the language: interrogative, imperative (and subtypes jussive/optative and apprehensive), subordinate, and also negative.¹⁸⁹ The Declarative marker is a member of the subset of vowel-copying CV suffixes defined in Table 46 above, which exist in a mutually exclusive relationship on clause-final verbs and mark each of the various clause types. Although the overt marking of declarative clauses is cross-linguistically less common than the marking of interrogative and other clause types, it is not a rare phenomenon, and often involves syntactic or morphological marking parallel to that of other sentence types (cf. Sadock and Zwicky 1985: 166).

Whereas the other vowel-copying Boundary Suffixes in Hup can appear clause-internally (and in some cases on more than one constituent or type of constituent, although with varying functions), the Declarative marker is found no more than once per clause, and is in general limited to main clauses – although it may also occur on multiple external arguments (right-dislocated elements or antitopics) following the main clause, as discussed above (§17.3.1). It is also restricted to clause-final position (or as the final morphological element of an external argument) – acting rather like a punctuation mark.

As a clause-final marker, the Declarative suffix attaches to whichever constituent appears last in the clause – whether this is the verb, subject, or some other.¹⁹⁰ In a non-interrogative clause, a subject that follows the predicate (and is presumably not extra-clausal, cf. §17.3.1 above) takes obligatory inflection, which is typically the Declarative marker (example 35; cf. §17.3.1). The Declarative marker is also the most common Boundary Suffix to appear on clause-final verbs (example 36). Because of its obligatory clause-final nature, it follows all other verbal suffixes, and provides the environment for many fluid formatives to appear as Inner Suffixes (see §3.5).

¹⁸⁹ Except in certain cases involving clause combination; see below.

¹⁹⁰ The only exceptions to this rule are interjections and the Protestive *bá?* (a clause-level affect marker), which could itself be considered a type of interjection; these may follow the Declarative suffix.

- (35) *kit-d'ák-áy = mah* *tíh-íh*
 chop-be.against-DYNM=REP 3sg-DECL
 'She hit (her machete) against (the fishtrap).' (txt)
- (36) *yúp* *yǒy* *yā?ám = wəd = mah* *yúp* *b'ay-yí?-íh*
 that.ITG curauá jaguar=RESP=REP that.ITG return-TEL-DECL
 'Then that old curauá jaguar-chief went back, it's said.' (txt)

Examples (37–39) illustrate multiple occurrences of the Declarative marker, on the main clause and on the following coordinated external arguments (which include both subjects and objects, and are in some cases co-referential with explicitly stated noun phrases in the main clause; see also 19–20 above).

- (37) *yúw-ǎn* *?in* *bi?íd-íh,* *haŋ-j'ǎp* *bi?íd-ip = ?íh-íh*
 that.ITG-OBJ 1pl bless-DECL breath-snap spell-DEP=MSC-DECL
 'We do this spell, the "breath-snapping" sickness one.' (txt)
- (38) *nút* *ca? = cud?úh,* *hidnǐh* *yǎk* *pát* *cá?*
 here box=INFR.EPIST 3pl.POSS macaw hair box
- ni-píd-íh,* *hidnǐh = hup-úh*
 be-DIST-DECL 3pl.POSS=RFLX.INTS-DECL
 '(It was) a box of this size, their macaw-feather box was, their own (box).' (txt)
- (39) *yúp = yi?* *bi?-níh-íy = cud* *yǎh* *wəhád = d'əh-śh,*
 that.ITG=TEL make-be.like-DYNM=INFR FRUSTold.man=PL-DECL
- mǐh* *kākǎw-ǎh*
 turtle anklebone-DECL
 'Thus the Ancestors made it, the Turtle-Anklebone oracle.' (txt)

The use of the Declarative suffix in marking coordinated external arguments of a clause is probably linked to its common occurrence on nominals in a list (cf. §6.7), as in (40), although it is not required in this context. Like the external arguments, listed entities are all on the same syntactic level; none is subordinate to the others.

- (40) *yág*, *b'òh-òh*, *wǎn-ǎh*, *mǒm-ǒh*, *nihǔ?* !
 hammock salt-DECL machete-DECL axe-DECL all
 'Hammocks, there was salt, there were machetes, there were axes,
 everything!' (txt)

Because Boundary Suffixes in general are mutually exclusive on a given verb, a verb can usually take only one of the parallel vowel-copying suffixes listed in Table 46 at a time. However, since both the Declarative marker *-Vh* and the Dynamic *-Vy* can occur in declarative clauses, their relationship is somewhat complex. This relationship is discussed here and in §12.2.

To begin with, Declarative *-Vh* and Dynamic *-Vy* differ from each other in their overall patterning. The Declarative marker is limited to declarative clauses, where it is restricted to clause-final constituents, regardless of their part of speech. The Dynamic, on the other hand, can in general occur only on verbs (and predicate adjectives),¹⁹¹ but it is not strictly clause-final, and it can occur in clause-medial position in interrogative clauses, as well as in either clause-medial or final position in declarative clauses. Thus the two suffixes can (and frequently do) co-occur in a single clause when the subject nominal is clause-final and Declarative-marked, and the predicate is clause-medial and Dynamic-marked.

When a declarative clause ends in a verb, on the other hand, the Dynamic and Declarative suffixes are mutually exclusive (but see below for an exception related to clause linking). The Dynamic marker has an aspectual function, and is usually preferred when describing events that are on-going and dynamic in relation to the speech moment (or a more general frame of temporal reference; cf. §12.2). The Declarative marker, on the other hand, is neutral with regard to tense and aspect. It is accordingly the preferred inflectional form in narrative descriptions of past events (example 41), procedural discourse (42), descriptive or generic statements (43–44), and spells (which are based on narrative and descriptive discourse forms).

- (41) *bǐg* *tih* *ham-g'ó?-òh*
 long.time 3sg go-go.about-DECL
 'He traveled around for a long time.' (txt)

¹⁹¹ But see §12.2 for exceptions.

- (42) *děh hi-wǎy hám = d'əh yúp, hǒpkǎk,*
 water FACT-go.out go=PL that.ITG fish.pull

mɔmb'ók hid tɔn-hám-ǎh
 metal.pot 3pl take-go-DECL

'Those who go out (to fish) in the flooded area (igapó), they take along fishhooks and pots.' (txt)

- (43) *canǎ b'íyi? macǎ-ǎh*
 pineapple only be.born-DECL
 'Only pineapples grow (in this kind of soil).' (cv)

- (44) *?ǎh b'íyi?-ay hipǎh-ǎh; d'ó? = d'əh,*
 1sg only-INCH know-DECL child=PL

tǎh = d'əh hipǎh-níh-ay-ǎh
 offspring=PL know-NEG-INCH-DECL

'I'm the only one who knows; the children, sons/daughters don't know.'
 (txt)

- (45) *núw-ǎn ?ǎh key-d'əh-hám-ǎh, ?ǎh = tǎh ?ín-ǎn*
 this-OBJ 1sg see-send-go-DECL 1sg=child.mother-OBJ
 'I go along to look after my wife (to the roça; in general)' (sp)

Statements in future tense usually also involve a clause-final verb marked as Declarative:

- (46) *?amǎh ?íd ?ín wí?-té-ay-ǎh*
 2sg.POSS speech 1pl hear-FUT-INCH-DECL
 'We're going to understand your language!' (cv)

- (47) *té yawadaté ?ǎh ham-té-h*
 until Yawaraté 1sg go-FUT-DECL
 'I'll go all the way to Yawaraté.' (txt)

Because the Declarative is *neutral* with regard to aspect, it is usually acceptable in place of the Dynamic in reference to a current, aspectually dynamic state, as in (48). This example also illustrates the distinct patterning of fluid formatives in the context of these two suffixes (see §3.5 for a detailed discus-

sion of this phenomenon). By definition, they follow the Boundary Suffix when the Dynamic is present (48a); however, the Declarative's obligatorily clause-final status requires them to occur in Inner Suffix position, within the verb word (48b). In most cases, the meaning of the bound forms is essentially the same regardless of their position.

(48) a) *cúg* *?ãh* *wi?-tú-y=hõ* *yãh*
 stringed.instrument 1sg hear-want-DYNM=NONVIS FRUST
 'I'd like to hear the fiddle.' (cv)

b) *nutãñ = mæh = yí?* *?ãh* *wi?-tuk-hõh-yãh-ã'h*
 today=DIM=TEL 1sg hear-want-NONVIS-FRUST-DECL
 'Right this minute, I'd like to listen (to the tape recorder).' (cv)

In a 1977 article on Hup, Moore claims that the primary function of these two vowel-copying suffixes (*-V̄y* and *-V̄h*) is one of organizing discourse. The *-V̄y* form, she argues, "indicates that the material is organized around the action or the object of the action rather than around the subject," whereas *-V̄h* "indicates significant participant involvement...where a discourse or part of a discourse can be said to be organized around a participant" (1977: 27–29). However, her discussion overlooks crucial characteristics of these two suffixes' patterning. First, she considers them only in terms of their mutually exclusive realization on clause-final verbs, ignoring the fact that they pattern differently within the clause and with regard to the part of speech of their host, and can co-occur when *-V̄y* is not clause-final. She also claims incorrectly that "one [of these two suffixes] occurs on the main verb phrase of every sentence in a discourse" in Hup (1977: 25), when in fact their presence depends on the tense, aspect, and modality of the clause, and whether or not other Boundary Suffixes are present on the verb.

According to my analysis, Moore's claim regarding these suffixes' patterning – to the extent that it is accurate – is simply an epiphenomenon, a by-product of their actual functions, not a primary function in its own right. Clauses which specify verbal aspect as linked to the speech moment (as with *-V̄y*) are more likely to focus on the event itself, whereas when aspect is neutral vis-à-vis the temporal frame of reference (as with *-V̄h*) the event per se is less likely to be focal – producing the pattern Moore observed. However, this pattern is not consistent, since even strongly event-oriented discourse may be consistently unmarked for dynamicity, as in the case of procedural discourse, where the Declarative marker is preferred over the Dynamic. The mutual exclusivity of the *-V̄y* and *-V̄h* markers in clause-final context is probably due primarily to the morphological or slot restriction common to Boundary Suffixes in general.

The Declarative marker *-Vh* has two other functions, which are at least marginally distinct from its function as the marker of a declarative clause. When *-Vh* occurs on clause-final verbs with a first person plural subject, the clause can function as an inclusive, hortative-like future construction, as illustrated in example (49). In this case, and only in this case, it has a tense-related value: it conveys future semantics, even though with all other person and number values future tense must be signaled via an overt future gram (see §13.3). However, note that this is only one possible interpretation of this syntactic combination (1pl.Subj + Verb-*Vh*), which can also relate to a past or tense-neutral event (example 50).

- (49) *cǎ-wag* *?in* *hám-ǎh*, *patí !*
 other-day 1pl go-DECL Pattie
 ‘Someday we’ll go (together), Pattie!’ (cv)

- (50) *?ew’* *hoy* *?in* *wid-d’ób-óh*
 bird.sp. pool 1pl arrive-go.to.river-DECL
 ‘We arrived down at *?ew’* Pool.’ (txt)

The Declarative marker has an additional function related to clause linking (see §18.1.2). As such, Declarative *-Vh* occurs in contexts where it usually does not appear or is not required – such as following a predicate adjective (these do not usually take a Boundary Suffix) or even directly following another Boundary Suffix (Boundary Suffixes are normally mutually exclusive) – although *-Vh* is still restricted to clause-final position. In (51), for example, the Declarative occurs on a predicate adjective in the first of a pair of linked clauses;¹⁹² clause linking likewise accounts for the appearance of *-Vh* in (52), following the Negative Boundary Suffix *-níh*. It may be some reflex of this clause-linking function that motivates the Declarative marker’s repeated occurrence on external arguments following the main clause and on entities in a list (see above).

- (51) *máki nǎw-ǎh*; *páy* *?in* *?ih-tǎn*, *woy-níh*
 Marc good-DECL merchandise 1pl ask.for-COND be.stingy-NEG
 ‘Marc is nice; when we ask for merchandise, he is not stingy.’ (el)

¹⁹² Both options – Declarative or zero inflection on the adjective – are grammatical here.

- (52) *m'ǎh hid wǎd-ǎy, hid hup-hipãh-nih-ǎh*
 snake 3pl eat-DYNM 3pl RFLX-know-NEG-DECL
 'When they eat snake, they lose all self-control.' (lit. have no self-awareness, sense) (cv)

The use of the Declarative in (53–54) is particularly striking, since it follows the Dynamic marker on the same verb root – which in all other contexts is completely ungrammatical, as discussed above. Clause-linking contexts thus may provide a marginal exception to the mutual exclusivity of the Dynamic and Declarative forms; note, however, that this co-occurrence has as yet been attested only in elicitation, and even then consultants do not all agree on its acceptability.

- (53) *ʔóga ʔid-ǎy-ǎh, múndu ʔid-nih-ǎh (ʔid-nih-ǎy-ǎh)*
 Olga speak-DYNM-DECL Mundo speak-NEG-DECL (speak-NEG-DYNM-DECL)
 'Olga speaks, but Mundo does not.' (el)
- (54) *ʔin bíʔ-ǎy-ǎh, ʔicáp ʔin có-óh*
 1pl make-DYNM-DECL tomorrow 1pl rest-DECL
 'Today we work, tomorrow we rest.' (el)

17.3.3. Verbless clauses

This section addresses clauses without verbs in Hup, which involve either predicate nominals or predicate adjectives. These have many features in common with clauses involving verbal predicates, especially in terms of their ability to take TAM-related inflection, but they also differ in significant ways.

Predicate nominal and adjective clauses are the only verbless clause types in Hup, and are discussed individually in the following subsections. In contrast, predicate locatives involve a positional verb (stand, lie, be inside, etc.) or the neutral verb *ni-* 'be present, exist', in addition to the predicative noun and locative postposition:

- (55) *ʔág b'ók g'od-an cúd-úy*
 fruit pot inside-OBJ be.inside-DYNM
 'The fruit is inside the pot.' (el)

17.3.3.1. *Nominal predicates*

Predicate nominal clauses equate two nominal entities, one of which is usually a demonstrative. Under most circumstances, a copula is absent (and in fact is ungrammatical), but a copula is required when certain tense/aspect specifications are made (see §17.3.4 below).

A common predicate nominal clause in Hup is the standard identity statement ('that's a N'), which involves a demonstrative subject – most often the 'intangible' *yu-* (usually expressed as the clause-final unit *yúw-úh* [that.ITG-DECL]) – and a nominal predicate. When the subject is a demonstrative (whether clause-initial or clause-final), the Declarative marker is required on the end of the clause. Especially in the case of a clause-initial demonstrative subject, the presence of the Declarative marker serves to identify the predicate nominal clause as a clause, rather than a stranded noun phrase. For example, the clause in (56) 'that's a deer' (uttered by a child in reference to a picture in a magazine) would be *yúp məhǎy* 'that deer' without the Declarative. Further examples are given in (57–59).

(56) *yúp məhǎy-ǎh*
 that.ITG deer-DECL
 'That's a deer' (cv)

(57) *híd hi-g'et-?e?-ní=n'ǎh mǎy, nihǔ? yúw-úh!*
 3pl FACT-stand-PERF-be=NMZ house all that.ITG-DECL
 'The houses where they stayed, that was all of them!' (txt)

(58) *mǎn hāyam yúw-úh*
 caatinga town that.ITG-DECL
 'It's a caatinga town.' (cv)

(59) *pé?-ep=?ǎh yúw-úh, cǎ=wǎd-ǎh!*
 hurt-DEP=MSC that.ITG-DECL rainbow=RESP-DECL
 'That one is a powerful one, the Rainbow Spirit!' (txt)

Predicate nominal clauses which equate two full nouns can follow the same pattern, although they normally undergo a clear pause between subject and predicate. However, speakers prefer to form a clause using both the declarative demonstrative form *yúw-úh* and the co-referential nominal (which apparently occurs as a left-dislocated argument). This preference highlights the copula-like use of the demonstrative identifier *yúw-úh*, as discussed in §6.3C. These options are illustrated in examples (60–61).

- (60) a) *?ám = ?ín, tih = bab' ?ǎy-ǎh*
 2sg=mother 3sg=sibling.FEM-DECL
 'Your mother is his sister.'
- b) *?ám = ?ín, tih = bab' ?ǎy yúw-úh*
 2sg=mother 3sg=sibling.FEM that.ITG-DECL
 'Your mother is his sister.' (el)

- (61) a) *cɔkw'ət, wəh = ?ih-íh*
 tukano river.indian=MSC-DECL
 'The Tukano is a River Indian.'
- b) *cɔkw'ət, wəh = ?ih yúw-úh*
 tukano river.indian=MSC that.ITG-DECL
 'The Tukano is a River Indian.' (el)

Note that the external argument may precede or follow the demonstrative clause:

- (62) a) *bebé, hūtǎh yúw-úh* b) *hūtǎh yúw-úh, bebé-éh*
 bird.sp. bird that.ITG-DECL bird that-DECL bird.sp.-DECL
 'The *bebe* is a bird.' 'The *bebe* is a bird.' (el)

Predicate nominal clauses lacking the Declarative marker are not usually considered grammatical, but consultants judge Declarative -*Vh* to be optional if either the predicate nominal or the subject is a possessive construction or a personal name (examples 63–64). Nevertheless, speakers prefer the clause-final demonstrative + Declarative *yúw-úh* in these cases (63b).

- (63) a) *núp nř mčy(-ǎh)*
 this 1sg.POSS house-DECL
 'This is my house.'
- b) *núp nř mčy yúw-úh*
 this 1sg.POSS house that.ITG-DECL
 'This is my house.' (el)
- (64) *pedú kapitǎw(-ǎh)*
 Pedro village.leader(-DECL)
 'Pedro is capitão.' (el)

The subject of the predicate nominal clause may be dropped, although this is not particularly common:

- (65) *hib'ăh = tǎĥ = d'əh nĭh g'aç tít deh*
 create=offspring=PL POSS bead string water
 '(It's) the Bead-String Creek of the Ancestors.' (i.e., the Ancestors called it this) (txt)

In all cases, post-predicative subject nominals are obligatorily marked with the Declarative (as in any other Hup clause).

- (66) *mũn hăyám, hidnĭh hăyám-ăh*
 caatinga town 3pl.POSS town-DECL
 '(It's) a caatinga town, their town.' (cv)

A number of aspect and mood markers combine with predicate nominals in much the same way as they do with verbal predicates (cf. Chapter 12) – whereas they often have a distinct discourse-marking function in combination with nominal arguments, when they are grammatical with these at all (see §7.1). Such Inner Suffixes as the Perfective (example 67) and the Counterfactual (69) do not require a Boundary Suffix when they occur with predicate nominals (although the Boundary Suffix follows them obligatorily with verbal hosts). The Inchoative suffix (which can act as either an Inner or a Boundary suffix with verbs) also attaches to predicate nominals without following inflection (example 68). Finally, the Frustrative marker occurs as a peripheral formative with nominal predicates, much as it does in some verbal constructions (example 70).

- (67) *tih = tǎĥ tih = cəw-ʔeʔ*
 3sg=son 3sg=shaman-PERF
 'His son used to be a shaman.' (el)
- (68) *dĕh-ay ʔin-ĭh*
 water-INCH 1pl-DECL
 'We're going to get rained on.' (cv)
- (69) *ʔédia kapităw-tăĥʔ yăĥ*
 Elias village.leader(Pt)-CNTRFACT FRUST
 'Elias would have been the capitão.' (el)

Use of the copula *ni-* (see §17.3.4 below) is also an option when indicating the above aspectual specifications with nominal predicates, and is required when some other inflectional forms are expressed in connection with nominal predicates, such as Habitual *bíg / -bi-* and Future *-teg / -te-*.

17.3.3.2. Adjectival predicates

As discussed in detail in §10.1 (and briefly in §3.1.3), adjectives are a distinct, closed word class in Hup, with properties of both nouns and verbs; as predicates, they pattern much like verbs – although unlike verbs, they do not require a Boundary Suffix. Unlike predicate nominals, predicate adjective clauses never take a copula (probably because predicate adjectives already have a semi-verbal status); a copula is grammatical only if the adjective is nominalized and appears as a predicate nominal, and the clause is marked with tense-aspect inflection.

Predicate adjective clauses – in which the adjectival predicate is unmarked with any inflection – are illustrated in the following examples:

- (70) *wowó = hin nów píd, hehé = hin nów píd*
 wowo.flute=also good DIST pan.flute=also good DIST
 ‘The *wowo* flute is also nice; the pan-flute is also nice.’ (txt)

- (71) *děh páy !*
 water bad
 ‘The rain is unpleasant!’ (cv)

Although predicate adjectives (unlike verbs) do not require a Boundary Suffix, a Boundary Suffix may be present – such as the Dynamic (see §12.2), the Declarative (72–73), or other forms. The Declarative suffix is required on a clause-final subject, as in any other Hup clause (examples 74–75) (note that Predicate-Subject and Subject-Predicate word order may be interchangeable, as in 73–74). Example (74) *nów yúw-úh* ‘that’s good’ may be compared with its phonologically reduced, conventionalized variant *nów yúh* ‘thank you’.

- (72) *cicřw, wah ?út, púp = b’ah, dób-áh*
 brazil.wood patauá thorn paxiuba=SPLIT many-DECL
 ‘Brazil wood, patauá thorn, paxiuba strip, (there are) many (kinds)!’ (txt)

- (73) *núp nów-áh*
 this good-DECL
 ‘This is good.’ (el)

(74) *náw yúw-úh*
 good that.ITG-DECL
 ‘That’s good.’ (cv)

(75) *dób, pæcæw = d’əh-śh !*
 many adolescent.boy=PL-DECL
 ‘There are lots of boys!’ (lit. ‘the boys are many!’) (cv)

As examples (73–74) above illustrate, adjectival predicates frequently take demonstrative subjects (especially the ‘intangible’ *yu-*), just as do nominal predicates. Example (76) indicates that, again in common with predicate nominal clauses, the demonstrative identifier *yúw-úh* can serve an optional, co-referential, and pseudo-copular function in predicate adjective clauses having a full subject noun phrase.

(76) a) *n’íp teg pǒg-óh* b) *n’íp teg póg yúw-úh*
 that tree big-DECL that tree big that.ITG-DECL
 ‘That tree is big.’ ‘That tree is big.’ (el)

As discussed in §6.6, addition of the *tih* = (3sg) preform creates a derived nominal from an adjective. Such nominalized adjectives are syntactically nouns and can act as predicate nominals:

(77) *yúp tih = páy muhún cáp-áh !*
 that.ITG 3sg=bad INTS2 INTS1-DECL
 ‘That’s really really bad!’ (txt)

(78) *?ǎh = tóg tih = tǎh = mæh-ǎh*
 1sg=daughter 3sg=small=DIM-DECL
 ‘My daughter is small.’ (el)

The various options for expressing an adjective as predicate (both as a predicate adjective and, when nominalized, as a predicate nominal) are summarized in the elicited paradigms below. These options apply to adjectives generally in Hup, with the exception of the irregular adjective *cípmæh* ‘small’, which differs from normal adjectives in various ways (see §10.1).

The elicited examples in (79) illustrates the verbless clause when it is unmodified for tense/aspect. The sequence N-Adj can be interpreted in two ways: as a noun phrase (Noun-Modifier) and as a clause (Subject-Predicate); note

accordingly the variations in the construction that yield interpretations of the predicate as adjectival (79a–c) or nominal (79d).

(79) Adjectival predicates:

- a) $ʔǎh = tǎh$ $póg$
 1sg=offspring big
 ‘My son is big; my big son.’
- b) $ʔǎh = tǎh$ $póg-óh$
 1sg=offspring big-DECL
 ‘My son is big.’
- c) $n'íp = ʔih$ $póg$ $yúw-úh$
 that=MSC big that.ITG-DECL
 ‘That guy is big.’

Nominal predicate:

- d) $ʔǎh = tǎh$ $tih = pög$
 1sg=offspring 3sg=big
 ‘My son is big; my big son.’ (el)

Certain Inner Suffixes and other forms that typically associate with verbs, such as the Perfective aspect marker ($-ʔeʔ / -ʔe-$), can attach directly to the adjectival predicate; in this case a Boundary Suffix is required (just as if the predicate were verbal), as in (80a). Alternatively, the formative can attach to and have scope over a noun phrase formed by [noun + adjective modifier], resulting in a predicate nominal clause; accordingly no verbal Boundary Suffix is required (examples 80b–c).

(80) Adjectival predicate:

- a) $ʔǎh = tǎh$ $[pog]-ʔě-h$
 1sg=offspring big-PERF-DECL
 ‘My son used to be big.’

Nominal predicates:

- b) $[ʔǎh = tǎh$ $póg] = ʔeʔ$
 1sg=offspring big=PERF
 ‘(That) used to be my big son.’

- c) $\text{ʔáħ} = \text{tǎħ}$ $[\text{tħ} = \text{pǒg}] = \text{ʔe}?$
 1sg=offspring 3sg=big=PERF
 ‘My son used to be big.’ (el)

As noted above (see also §17.3.4 below), the use of *ni-* as a copula verb can only occur with an adjective in predicative position when the latter is nominalized (and is thus realized as a predicate nominal), and when *ni-* hosts aspectual or other inflection (81a). With a non-nominalized adjective, on the other hand, *ni-* can only be interpreted as a verbal predicate, while the adjective is understood to be part of the subject noun phrase (81b).

(81) Copula *ni-*:

- a) $\text{ʔáħ} = \text{tǎħ}$ $[\text{tħ} = \text{pǒg}]$ *ni-ʔě-h*
 1sg=offspring 3sg=big be-PERF-DECL
 ‘My son used to be big.’

Verbal predicate *ni-*:

- b) $[\text{ʔáħ} = \text{tǎħ}$ *pǒg] *ni-ʔě-h*
 1sg=offspring big be-PERF
 ‘My big son used to exist / be here’ (el)*

Some inflectional forms, such as Future *-te-*, can only appear on the copula (in contrast to the Perfective, which can optionally be indicated directly on the predicate nominal/adjective), as in (82). The fact that certain forms like the Future suffix can attach directly to verbal predicates, but not to adjectival predicates, constitutes another difference between members of the verb and adjective classes, and an exception to the general rule that predicate adjectives pattern like verbs.

(82) Copula *ni-*:

- a) $\text{ʔáħ} = \text{tǎħ}$ $\text{tħ} = \text{pǒg}$ *ni-té-h*
 1sg=offspring 3sg=big be-FUT-DECL
 ‘My son will be big.’ (el)
- b) $*\text{ʔáħ} = \text{tǎħ}$ *pog-té-h*
 1sg=offspring big-FUT-DECL

17.3.4. Copula clauses

As noted in the preceding sections, the verb *ni-* ‘be, exist’ can play the role of a copula in predicate nominal clauses (which include nominalized adjectives). This is not the only manifestation of this verb’s special status in Hup grammar, as discussed in §8.4; it appears in a wide range of unusual contexts and performs various functions that are in general impossible for other verbs (e.g., noun incorporation, forming negative imperative clauses, etc.).

The basic meaning of *ni-* is ‘be, exist’, and it occurs as a normal intransitive verb in statements of location and existence. This use is extremely common, and is illustrated in (83–84). Its negative counterpart, the predicative particle *pã*, typically replaces it in expressions of negative existence, as discussed in §16.2.

- (83) *mǔy-an* *cug’æť* *ní-íy*
house-DIR paper be-DYNM
‘The book is in the house.’ (el)
- (84) *wǔh = d’əh* *ní-íy* *píd*
river.indian=PL be-DYNM DIST
‘There are also River Indians (there).’ (cv)

As a copula, the primary function of *ni-* is to host verbal inflection in non-verbal clauses. Its use is subject to several restrictions; as mentioned in §17.3.3 above, the copula appears with nominal predicates only, and therefore predicate adjectives must be nominalized if they are to occur with a copula. Also, copular *ni-* does not occur when no verbal inflectional markers are present for it to host; furthermore, the more ‘default’ inflectional markers – the Dynamic and Declarative suffixes – do not by themselves require *ni-* as a host (and thus do not normally appear at all unless other inflectional forms are present). If *ni-* does occur in the clause under these circumstances, it can only be interpreted in its verbal sense ‘be, exist’:

- (85) *ʔáħ = tǎħ* *tih = pǔg* *ní-íy*
1sg=son 3sg=big be-DYNM
‘My big son exists / is present.’ (el)

The use of a copula construction is optional with some inflectional forms – primarily the Perfective, Inchoative, and Counterfactual markers – since these inflections may attach directly to the predicate nominal or adjective. However, the copula *ni-* is the only option for expressing other, strictly verbal inflectional forms with predicate nominals and adjectives – particularly the Sequential, Fu-

ture, and Habitual forms. Examples (86–88) illustrate the function of copular *ni-* as the bearer of inflectional suffixes.

- (86) *tih = tǎh* *tih = ców* ***ni-ʔǎ-h***
 3sg=offspring 3sg=shaman be-PERF-DECL
 ‘His son was a shaman.’ (el)
- (87) *ʔédia kapitǎw* ***ni-tǎʔ-ǎy*** ***yǎh***
 Elias village.leader(Pt) be-CNTRFACT-DYNM FRUST
 ‘Elias would have been capitão.’ (el)
- (88) *patí nǎh yǎnu-an = ʔýy* ***ni-yóʔ***, *yúp*
 Pattie POSS money(Pt)-DIR=who be-SEQ that.ITG

tih nóʔ-ǎh, *dúdu-ǎn-ǎp*
 3sg give-DECL Pedro-OBJ-DEP
 ‘Having become one who has Pattie’s money, he gives (merchandise) to Pedro.’ (cv)

In addition to nominal predicates, *negative verbal* predicates also require copular *ni-* for expressing the majority of TAM-related specifications (Habitual, Sequential, Counterfactual, Future; see also §16.1.5):

- (89) *d’oʔ-ham-yiʔ-yóʔ*, *bahad-nǎh tih* ***ni-yíʔ-ay-áh***
 take-go-TEL-SEQ appear-NEG 3sg be-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘After he had taken her off, she did not appear.’ (txt)
- (90) *doh-nǎh tih* ***ni-tǎʔ-ǎp = b’ay***
 curse-NEG 3sg be-CNTRFACT-DEP=AGAIN
 ‘He’s on the verge of cursing them.’ (cv)
- (91) *hup-hǎb = mah,* *báb’ pǎ* ***ni-yóʔ***
 RFLX-be.bereft=REP sibling NEG:EX be-SEQ
 ‘All alone, being without kin.’ (txt)

As mentioned in §8.4, the verb *g’ǎh-* is the functional counterpart of *ni-* in the Rio Vaupés and Umari Norte dialect areas, and sometimes serves a copular function not unlike that of *ni-*, as exemplified in (92). Note, however, that *g’ǎh-* does not replace *ni-* completely, since in some people’s speech the two forms can actually co-occur, even in a single copula construction (example 93). Be-

cause *g'ǝh-* does not normally occur in the dialects on which this grammar is mostly based, the details of its relation to *ni-* will have to await future research.

- (92) *hǝp wæd-tú-up g'ǝh-ǝy = nih, tæh?íp pǎ-ǎp*
 fish eat-want-DEP be2-DYNM=EMPH.CO child.father NEG:EX-DEP

g'ǝh-ǝy = nih, hí tih d'o?pæ-yí?-ih
 be2-DYNM=EMPH.CO only 3sg take-go.upstream-TEL-DECL
 'Wanting to eat fish, and being without a husband, just for this she was going upstream taking (the fish).' (txt)

- (93) *yúp tih = ?ǎy, hup = ?ǎy g'ǝh-?e?-yǎh-ǎp = mǐ?*
 that.ITG 3sg=FEM person=FEM be2-PERF-FRUST-DEP=UNDER

ba?tǐb' tih ni-g'ǝh-ní-h
 spirit 3sg be-be2-INFR2-DECL
 'This woman, despite having been a person, was now an evil spirit.' (txt)

While *ni-* is the main copula verb in Hup, a few other verbs can serve a quasi-copular function in certain contexts. In particular, the concept 'become' is expressed by the verb *hidoho-*, and the verb *ham-* 'go' is also occasionally used in this sense, as with the nominalized predicate adjective in example (94):

- (94) *yi-d'ǝh yúp tih = páy = d'ǝh ham-ní-h*
 that.ITG-PL that.ITG 3sg=bad=PL go-INFR2-DECL
 'Those people became bad (i.e., went bad).' (txt)

17.4. Interrogative clauses

Hup has three main types of interrogative clause, which differ from each other both formally and functionally. These are constituent or 'question-word' questions, general polar (yes-no) questions, and polar questions with focus on a particular constituent (typically used in discursive backchanneling). The features that formally define the interrogative clause vis-à-vis other clause types in Hup are constituent order, the presence of a question word (interrogative pronoun, demonstrative, or adverbial), and the presence of the Interrogative suffix *-V?*, although which of these are present depends on the subtype of interrogative. Crucially, the Declarative suffix never occurs in an interrogative clause. Two clause-final particles (*yǎ* and *tǐ*) are also used primarily in interrogatives as dis-

course tags (see §15.3), and are acceptable with all three subtypes of interrogative clause. Most verbal formatives are acceptable in interrogative clauses, including evidentials (see §14.9).

17.4.1. Constituent (question-word) questions

The primary function of constituent or ‘question-word’ questions is to solicit specific information. The formal organization of these clauses is quite distinct: the clause begins with a question word (acting as an interrogative pronoun, determiner, or adverbial), and – when a verbal predicate is present – the clause ends with a verb inflected with the Interrogative suffix *-V?*.

The Hup question words are discussed in detail in §6.3 (Table 28), and are summarized in (95) below. With the exception of the interrogative pronoun used specifically for human referents (*?ũy* ‘who’), all of the question words are derived from the interrogative particle *hĩ*. In addition to appearing as constituents of interrogative clauses, the question words can all stand alone as independent interrogative utterances.

- (95) *?ũy* ‘who’
hĩt ‘where? in what way?’
hĩp ‘which; how, in what manner?’
hĩ-có? ‘at/to what location?’
hĩ-kán ‘in/from what direction?’
hĩ-n’ĩh ‘what, what kind?’
hĩ-?ãp ‘how many?’
hĩ-m’æ ‘when, what quantity?’
hĩnĩykeyó? ‘why’ (*hĩ-nĩh-ĩy key-yó?* Q-be.like-DYNM see-SEQ)
hĩ-nĩy ‘what did you say?’ (*hĩ-nĩh-ĩy* Q-be.like-DYNM)

The *-V?* interrogative inflection that marks the clause-final verb stem in constituent questions is an unstressed vowel-copying Boundary Suffix. It exists in a mutually exclusive relationship with the other vowel-copying Boundary Suffixes on clause-final verbs (Dynamic, Declarative, and Dependent marker suffixes; see Table 46), as well as with the Inchoative and most other Boundary Suffixes. The intonation contour in constituent questions is consistently highest-pitched on the clause-initial question word, and lowest on the clause-final verb. While a subject and, in a transitive clause, a direct object (modified by the interrogative pronoun, see example 97 below) may be present in the initial noun

phrase, other objects or oblique arguments usually occur outside the main clause, as external topics following the verb (and usually uninflected).

Content interrogatives are illustrated in the following examples. Note that emphatic questions often involve the Emphasis particle *-pog*, as in (99).

(96) *hĩ-n'ĩh ʔam bĩʔ-iʔ ?*
 Q-NMZ 2sg work-INT
 'What are you doing?' (cv)

(97) *hĩ-ʔăp g'ĩ ʔám tón-šʔ ?*
 Q-QTY hot(season) 2sg hold-INT
 'How many years do you have (i.e., how old are you)?' (cv)

(98) *ʔűy yĩ nš-šʔ ?*
 who that.ITG give-INT
 'Who said that?' (cv)

(99) *ʔűy yĩ nĩh-pog-píd-iʔ ?!*
 who that.ITG be.like-EMPH1-DIST-INT
 'Who the heck did that?!' (cv)

Only one question word can be used per clause, but it is possible to append additional question words to the main clause (as external arguments or as additional clauses with deletion of presupposed constituents):

(100) *hĩ-n'ĩh tĩh nšʔ-šʔ ? ʔűy-ăn ?*
 Q-NMZ 3sg give-INT who-OBJ
 'What did she give? To whom?' (el)

Where Inner Suffixes are present, most (such as Applicative *-űh-* and Distributive *-píd-* above) take the *-Vʔ* suffix, as would any verb stem. However, the Future suffix pair *-teg / -te-* is exceptional: whereas clause-final verbs in declarative clauses generally take the reduced form *-te-* followed directly by Declarative *-h*, only the unreduced form *-teg* can appear in an interrogative clause, as illustrated in (101–104). It is possible (although rare) for the Future suffix *-téɡ* to receive an additional *-Vʔ* suffix, but the reduced counterpart *-te-ʔ* cannot occur (example 103). This is not true of phonologically reduced suffixes generally, as illustrated by the reduced sequence *-bĩ-ʔ* of Habitual *bíg / -bĩ-* in (104). Note that the Future suffix is irregular in other ways as well, likely due to its unusual historical origin (see §13.1).

- (101) *hi-n'ǐh ʔam biʔ-tég ?*
 Q-NMZ 2sg make-FUT
 'What are you going to make?' (cv)
- (102) *hí-cóʔ ʔúh ʔāh ham-tég páh ?*
 Q-LOC EPIST 1sg go-FUT PRX.CNTR
 'Where can I go now?' (txt)
- (103) *hínǐy-keyóʔ ʔam ham-tég-(eʔ) (*ham-té-ʔ) ?*
 Q.be.like.DYNM-cause 2sg go-FUT-INT
 'Why are you going?' (el)
- (104) *n'ikán hid cak-bí-ʔ ?*
 over.there 3pl climb-HAB-INT
 'They always climb up there?' (cv)

With predicate nominals, no clause-final Interrogative suffix *-Vʔ* occurs. The clause begins with the question word, and ends with the noun being questioned; this may be a demonstrative, a demonstrative noun phrase, or a full lexical noun (examples 105–107). In the Tat Deh dialect, the 'intangible' demonstrative *yúp* has a special interrogative variant *yúw*, as example (105b) illustrates.

- (105) a) *hí-n'ǐh yúp ?*
 Q-NMZ that.ITG
 'What's that?' (cv)
- b) *hí-n'ǐh yúw ?*
 Q-NMZ that.ITG
 'What's that?' (cv, Tat Deh dialect)
- (106) *ʔǔy yúp = ʔáʔ ?*
 who that.ITG=FEM
 'Who's that woman?' (el)
- (107) *hí-n'ǐh yág ?*
 Q-NMZ hammock
 'What hammock (is it)?' (el)

The enclitic =*b'ay*, which appears with nominal arguments as a topic-switch marker (§7.1.3) and with verbal predicates as an aspectual marker of a repeated action or return to a state (§12.9.2), occurs frequently in interrogative clauses. It is always clause-final, and it usually occurs on a noun, as in predicate nominal content interrogatives (examples 108–109), and also in polar questions (see below). Its function in interrogatives, where it attaches to a nominal constituent, appears to be linked to its topic-switch function with nominal constituents more generally; that is, it focuses attention on a selection among a group of possible referents or options, especially in relatively emphatic contexts.

- (108) *hĩ-n'ĩh =pog yúp =b'ay, céc ?!*
 Q-NMZ=EMPH1 that.ITG=AGAIN INTERJ
 'What the heck is that?!' (cv)

- (109) *ʔũy yúp =b'ay ?*
 who that.ITG=AGAIN
 'Who's that?' (cv)

In addition to appearing with clause-final nouns in interrogatives, =*b'ay* can also attach directly to some question words when these occur as independent utterances:

- (110) *hĩp =b'ay, hí tĩh ʔəg-pám-ǎy ʔǎp !*
 how=AGAIN only 3sg drink-sit-DYMN NEG:ID
 'How is this? She's not just sitting there drinking!' (cv)

Although the normal function of =*b'ay* on verbal predicates is aspectual, it can nevertheless serve its discourse-marking function when it occurs on an interrogative verbal predicate. In this case, it always follows the interrogative inflection on the verb (in contrast to most other 'fluid' enclitics and particles, which must appear in the verb core when this Boundary Suffix is present), as in examples (111–113).

- (111) *ʔũy d'oʔ-yiʔ-pó-ʔ =b'ay ?*
 who take-TEL-EMPH1-INT=AGAIN
 'Who the heck stole it?' (cv)

- (112) *hecínádo way-hũyʔah =b'ay... ʔũy yǎh-tég =b'ay ?*
 Reginaldo go.out-after=AGAIN who order-FUT=AGAIN
 'After Reginaldo leaves... who will send another (teacher)?' (sp)

- (113) *hĩt tih nɔ-d'oʔ-nih-tǎʔ-ǎʔ = b'ay ?*
 how 3sg say-take-be.like-CNTRFACT-INT=AGAIN
 'How could she respond?!' (rhetorical) (cv)

In general, all nominal constituents of the main clause can be questioned, whether they are core or peripheral arguments, as can heads within nouns phrases. For example, while (114) questions a locative phrase, (115) selects the nominal element *within* the locative.

- (114) *hĩ-cóʔ cug'ǎt cúd-uʔ ?*
 Q-LOC paper be.inside-INT
 'Where is the book?' (el)
- (115) *hĩ-n'ĩh g'od-an cug'ǎt cúd-uʔ ?*
 Q-NMZ inside-OBJ paper be.inside-INT
 'Inside what is the book?' (el)

On the other hand, locative postpositions cannot themselves be directly questioned (presumably due in part to the fact that question-words must be clause initial):

- (116) **cáʔ hĩ-n'ĩh cug'ǎt ní-ĩʔ ?*
 box Q-NMZ paper be-INT
 (Intended meaning: 'In what part of the box is the book?')

Questions in Hup can involve embedded interrogatives. For instance, a question word can occur in an adverbial clause, embedded within an interrogative main clause (but the question word still must be the initial constituent):

- (117) *hĩ-n'ĩh kéy-ep ʔam yé-eʔ ?*
 Q-NMZ see-DEP 2sg enter-INT
 'What did you come in for?' (lit. 'what did you come in to see') (cv)

Also, in quoted speech (see §18.2.1), an interrogative clause can be embedded within a declarative main clause:

- (118) *hĩ-n'ĩh yup g'õh-õ?, nõ-õy ?ĩn-ĩh*
 Q-NMZ that.ITG be-INT say-DYNM 1pl-DECL
 “‘What’s that?’ we say.’ (cv)¹⁹³

As discussed in §6.2, the interrogative particle *hĩ* (like Hup’s demonstratives) occurs as a quasi-free particle when followed by the verbs *nõ-* ‘say’ and *nĩh-* ‘be like’ whereas in all other contexts it is obligatorily inflected. Interrogative clauses formed with *hĩ* plus ‘say’ or ‘be like’ are irregular syntactically, as well as morphologically – the clause is subject-final, as is typical of the polar interrogative subtype (see below), despite the fact that this is a content question (examples 119–120). This non-canonical constituent order is probably due to the fact that *hĩ* is essentially inflected by the verb itself and is therefore morphosyntactically bound to it; although certain bound morphemes can come between *hĩ* and the verb stem ‘say’ or ‘be like’, the subject of the clause cannot and is therefore unable to precede the verb in the clause.

- (119) *hĩ=yĩ? nõ-nĩh-ĩy ?ám ?*
 Q=TEL say-be.like-DYNM 2sg
 ‘What does this (word) mean?’ (lit. ‘What/how are you saying?’) (sp)

- (120) *hĩ bi?-nĩh-ĩy ?ám=b'ay, ?amĩh kəwəg ?*
 Q make-be.like-DYNM 2sg=AGAIN 2sg.POSS eye
 ‘What have you done with your eyes?’ (txt)

An additional minor subtype of interrogative clause that solicits a content response involves the ‘Related Instance’ particle *tá?* as its predicate (see §7.6):

- (121) *dúdu-nĩh tá? ?*
 Pedro-POSS REL.INST
 ‘What about Pedro’s?’ (txt)
- (122) *pĩhít, cáp tá?, hĩ-n'ĩh tĩh key-ní-ĩ? ?*
 banana other REL.INST Q-NMZ 3sg see-be-INT
 ‘She went to check the bananas, and what else?’ (el)

¹⁹³ The speaker, a teenaged girl from Barreira, uses the verb *g'õh-* ‘be’ here instead of *nĩ-* (see §8.4) in joking imitation of the Vaupés dialect.

- (125) *manǰǎ táʔ-ay, híd-ǎn yamhidɔʔ-níh tíh ?*
 Margarita REL.INST-INCH 3pl-OBJ sing-NEG 3sg
 ‘What about Margarita, did she sing to them?’ (cv)

The interrogative discourse-marker =*b’ay* (see §7.1.3) is particularly common in polar questions, where it follows the clause-final subject:

- (126) *hi-wag-yiʔ-pó-y híd = b’ay, ʔána ?*
 FACT-day-TEL-EMPH1-DYNM 3pl=AGAIN Ana
 ‘Did they stay up all night, Ana?’ (cv)
- (127) *nutǎn biʔ-ní-íy níŋ = b’ay ?*
 today make-be-DYNM 2pl=AGAIN
 ‘Did you all work today?’ (cv)

Negatively biased polar questions are phrased as negative predicates within the interrogative clause (example 128). A negative polar interrogative can also be used as a polite invitation (example 129).

- (128) *ham-níh-ay ʔám ?*
 go-NEG-INCH 2sg
 ‘Are you not going?’ (cv)
- (129) *wæd-níh-ay ʔám ?*
 eat-NEG-INCH 2sg
 ‘Won’t you eat something?’ (cv)

Emphasis in polar questions can be signaled via the clause-final Focus marker *-áh*, as well as the predicative Emphasis form *-pog*:

- (130) *ham-pog-tég níŋ-áh ?!*
 go-EMPH1-FUT 2pl-FOC
 ‘Will/would you really go?!’ (cv)

Polar interrogatives involving predicate nominals are typically identity questions, and are most commonly formed with the ‘intangible’ demonstrative *yúp* (often *yúp = b’ay* in *Barriera*; *yúw* in *Tat Deh*):

- (131) *mɔhǎy = yi? yúp ?*
 deer=TEL that.ITG
 ‘Is that a deer?’ (el)

Perhaps the most frequent use of basic polar questions is the standard Hup greeting, which involves asking a question about whatever the addressee is obviously engaged in at the time. These questions are clearly not really requests for information – the formula virtually requires the answer to be obvious – but are a conventionalized speech act for the purpose of social interaction. The standard answer is an affirmative repetition of the verb phrase (see §17.4.5 below). One of the most conventionalized of these questions is the typical morning greeting (example 132). Other common greetings are provided in (133–135); (133) is often said when entering a house where a number of people are gathered, and (135) is conventionally used to greet a visitor from another community on his/her arrival in one’s own village. As expected, addressing more than one person requires the second person plural pronoun *níŋ* in place of singular *?ám*, as in (133).

- (132) *cəwəʔ-áy ?ám ?*
 awake-DYNM 2sg
 ‘Are you awake?’ (cv)
- (133) *ní-íy níŋ ?*
 be-DYNM 2pl
 ‘Are you all here?’ (cv)
- (134) *g’áʔ-áy ?ám ?*
 suspend-DYNM 2sg
 ‘Are you lying in a hammock?’ (cv)
- (135) *náŋ-ǎy ?ám ?*
 come-DYNM 2sg
 ‘Have you arrived?’ (cv)

Likewise, situation-specific questions regarding the addressee’s current (observable) activity are perfectly acceptable greetings:

- (136) *těg təʔ-áy ?ám ?*
 wood light.fire-DYNM 2sg
 ‘Are you lighting a fire?’ (cv)

- (137) *hǎw-ǎy* *?ám ?*
 scrape-DYNM 2sg
 ‘Are you scraping (manioc)?’ (cv)

The subject-verb inversion strategy used in these polar questions is undoubtedly the most typologically striking feature of Hup interrogatives. Such use of word order inversion in polar questions is common in European languages, but it is very rare elsewhere in the world (cf. Dryer 2005). Moreover, the fact that polar questions represent the *only* interrogative subtype in Hup to use a word order inversion strategy violates Greenberg’s (1966) Universal 11, which states that inversion with polar interrogatives only occurs in those languages that use inversion to mark constituent interrogatives.¹⁹⁴ (Note, however, that inversion in polar questions is restricted in Hup; it involves only pronominal subjects, and does not occur in argument-focused polar questions; see §17.4.3 below). While at first glance subject-verb inversion in Hup polar questions appears to have a parallel in those declarative clauses in which the subject follows the predicate (see §17.3.1 above), in fact the declarative case probably involves right-dislocation whereas the interrogative case does not.

17.4.3. Polar questions with argument focus

Polar questions involving a focused argument have a distinct structure in Hup; crucially, they do not involve subject-verb inversion. These questions commonly serve a rhetorical function, such as when responding to a speaker (i.e., a ‘backchanneling’ strategy akin to ‘really?’, ‘is that right?’, ‘uh-huh’, etc. in English). The formal organization of the argument-focused polar question is essentially like that of the constituent or ‘question-word’ question, but without the initial question word; however, like the ‘basic’ polar questions discussed above, it solicits a yes-no answer. Its constituent order is the same as that of the typical declarative clause, from which it is formally distinguished by the presence of the Interrogative Boundary Suffix *-V?* (or the unreduced form of the Future suffix *-téŋ*) on the clause-final verb, in place of the Declarative marker *-Vh*. Intonation in these interrogatives tends to peak clause-initially on the focused constituent (usually a nominal or adverbial), and fall at the end of the clause.

¹⁹⁴ Word order inversion is in fact attested in Hup constituent questions, but is restricted to those involving the exceptional interrogative verb forms ‘say what’ and ‘be like what’ (§17.4.1).

Although they solicit a yes-no answer, these questions front a non-predicative constituent of the clause, which is understood (via this fronting strategy) to be the focus of the question. In many cases, this results in a semi-rhetorical question – i.e., a question to which one already knows the answer and is simply soliciting agreement or confirmation, rather than more substantial information. Thus in Hup this type of interrogative, which is the least formally marked subtype, also corresponds to the least information-oriented interrogative – a cross-linguistically common pattern (Sadock and Zwicky 1985: 180).¹⁹⁵

It is also important to note that this the strategy of fronting a focused argument of the clause is a property of declarative (and other) clauses in Hup (see §17.3.1), and is not limited to interrogatives, just as subject-verb inversion is found in both declarative and interrogative clauses that lack an argument focus (see above). That interrogative word order is paralleled by declarative word order, which in turn may be motivated by considerations relating to information structure, suggests that some of the same pragmatic principles are also historically responsible for the word order patterns of the Hup interrogatives, although these have since been systematized and made obligatory.

Examples of this interrogative strategy are given in (138–140); in all cases, the question is focused on the clause-initial constituent.

- (138) *j'əb-tə = yi? tih y'ət-æw-ə? ?*
 night-still=TEL 3sg lay-FLR-INT
 'He left it this morning?' (cv)

- (139) *yít = yi? niŋ hipãh-hǎ-?, yúw-ǎn ?*
 thus=TEL 2pl know-NONVIS-INT that.ITG-OBJ
 'You all think thus, about this?' (sp)

- (140) *b'ət-an ?am hám-ã? ?*
 roça-DIR 2sg go-INT
 'You're going to the roça?' (cv)

In polar interrogatives of this type, it is common for the *-V?* Interrogative suffix to occur *twice* in the clause: both clause-finally on the verb, as expected, and also directly on the fronted, queried nominal entity, as a marker of special interrogative focus. In this case, the suffix attaches to the final element of the

¹⁹⁵ The use of the clause-final Interactive tag *-(V)hə?* (which itself occurs as a Boundary Suffix on the verb) with affirmative-type clauses is probably related to this interrogative strategy (see §15.3.3).

queried noun phrase (as is consistent with nominal morphological patterns generally), and receives stress – unlike the clause-final occurrence of *-V?* on the verb, which is unstressed. This focus function of *-V?* is illustrated in examples (141–144).

- (141) *nř hřp pog-ŏ? řam wæd-æ? ?*
 1sg.POSS fish big-INT 2sg eat-INT
 ‘It was my big fish you ate?’ (el)

- (142) *núp = mæh = yř? páh yúw-úh, yúw-an-ǎ?*
 this=DIM=TEL PRX.CNTR that.ITG-DECL that.ITG-OBJ-INT

řam wón-ř? páh ?
 2sg follow-INT PRX.CNTR
 ‘That one was just here; is that the one you’re following?’ (txt)

- (143) *cecádio = wæd-ř? yikán cu?-pog-píd-ř? yǎ, n’ikán ?*
 Cesario=RESP-INT over.there.ITG grab-EMPH1-DIST-INT TAG1 over.there
 ‘Cesario always gets (the money) there, doesn’t he, over there?’ (cv)

- (144) *nřřh = hup-ú?, řǎn nřř dú-u? ?*
 2pl.POSS=RFLX-INT 1sg.OBJ 2pl exchange-INT

j’ek-nřh řám páh ?
 steal-NEG 2sg PRX.CNTR
 ‘Is it your *own* thing you’re selling me? You didn’t steal (it)?’ (ru)

It is also possible for the interrogative focus marker to occur on a vocative kin term or personal name, used to reference the addressee to whom the question is directed:

- (145) *pǎç-ǎ?, řy = řǔhnřy húp řid-kéd-æ?, núp hayám-ǎ?*
 father’s.brother who=maybe Hup speak-pass-INT this village-OBL
 ‘Uncle, who might speak the best Hup in this village?’ (cv)

The argument-focus polar interrogative strategy is typically used to ask for clarification of what someone has just said, especially with reference to a nominal or adverbial element of the clause. It is frequently used rhetorically, often as a kind of backchanneling strategy by which one person responds neutrally to what another has just said. In these cases, frequently just the focal word will be

uttered alone with the Interrogative focus marker (stressed *-Vʔ*). This type of interrogative response is ubiquitous in Hup discourse, as illustrated in examples (146–148) below; here the first speaker’s statement is marked as (A), and the rhetorical/interrogative response as (B).

(146) A) *nu-cóʔ-oʔĩh nĩh*
 this-LOC-MSC POSS
 ‘The guy from over there’s (radio).’

B) *cíʔ tãhʔip nĩh-ĩʔ ?*
 Cíʔ child.father POSS-INT
 ‘Cíʔ’s husband’s?’ (cv)

(147) A) *hĩ-n’ĩh ʔamĩh hãt ?*
 Q-NMZ 2sg.POSS name
 ‘What’s your name?’

B) *nĩ hãt-áʔ ?*
 1sg.POSS name-INT
 ‘My name?’ (cv)

(148) A) *tán ʔãh j’om-té-h*
 later 1sg bathe-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’ll bathe later.’

B) *tán-áʔ ?*
 later-INT
 ‘Later?’ (cv)

Note that the queried element may itself be a predicate, as in (149). When this is the case, the Interrogative suffix *-Vʔ* does not behave as it does in a normal interrogative clause, where it fills the verbal Boundary Suffix slot in the place of the Dynamic or other markers. Instead, here it simply attaches to whatever word-final morphology is present – even an enclitic that follows the Dynamic marker.

(149) A) *nút hɔ minĩŋ hid g’ig-b’uy-d’əh-ye-yíʔ-ĩh !*
 here liver straight 3pl shoot.arrow-throw-send-enter-TEL-DYNM
 ‘They shot (another man) right here straight through the liver!’

B) *naʔ-yáʔ-íy = mah-ǎʔ*

lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM=REP-INT

'(He) died, they say, right?' (cv)

17.4.4. Interrogative Alternative =*haʔ*

The enclitic =*haʔ* signals an alternative question, in which the speaker presents a choice between two (or more) opposing options. The marker =*haʔ* can appear utterance-finally or within the clause, or both simultaneously, and can attach both to focused constituents and to the predicate, as examples (150–152) illustrate. The disjunction *ʔó* 'or' (probably from Portuguese *ou* 'or', borrowed via Tukano) is common in these clauses, though not in general obligatory (see §18.1.5).

- (150) *carakǎʔ cih = haʔ tih wǎd-ǎʔ,*
 chicken grass=ALT.INT 3sg eat-INT

ʔó m'íʔ = haʔ tih wǎd-ǎʔ ?

DISJ worm=ALT.INT 3sg eat-INT

'Is the chicken eating grass, or is it eating worms?' (el)

- (151) *picána bíʔ mǎh-ní-h, ʔó yǎʔambǒʔ = haʔ ?*
 cat rat kill-INF2-DECLDISJ dog=ALT.INT
 'The cat killed the rat, or was it the dog?' (el)

- (152) *wíh = haʔ cím'-íy = haʔ,*
 hawk=ALT.INT claw-DYNM=ALT.INT

ʔó yǎʔambǒʔ = haʔ g'ǎç-ǎy = haʔ ?

DISJ dog=ALT.INT bite-DYNM=ALT.INT

'Did the hawk claw (it), or did the dog bite (it)?' (el)

The alternative option need not always be explicitly stated:

- (153) *hí-n'íh ʔin yum-tég páh ? canǎ ʔin yum-tég = haʔ ?*
 Q-NMZ 1pl plant-FUT PRX.CNTR pineapple 1pl plant-FUT=ALT.INT
 'What should we plant? We'll plant pineapple, or?' (ru)

The marker =*ha?* also appears to be part of the expression *nóyha?* (probably from *?áh nó-ǔy = ha?* [1sg say-DYNM=ALT.INT] ‘I say, or’; cf. §15.6.1). This construction is used as a kind of interjection or interactive tag, particularly for expressing a shade of doubt regarding an affirmation (example 154), and can also be used to mark a self-correction (example 155).

(154) *?in ni-hipááh-ááh, núp hayám-át-ááh, núp mǔy-ǔt-ǔh, nóyha?*
 Ipl be-know-DECL this town-OBL-DECL this house-OBL-DECL say.INT
 ‘We know how to live/behave ourselves, in this town, in this
 (community) building, I’d say.’ (sp)

(155) *ko?ǎp wág-áh yi-d’ǔh-ǎp, pécta-áh bí? = d’ǎh-ǎp,*
 two day-FOC that.ITG-PL-DEP party(Pt)-FOC make=PL-DEP

?ǔg-ǎp. móta?ǎp wág nóyha?
 drink-DEP three day say.INT
 ‘For two days they were holding the party, drinking. Three days I mean.’
 (cv)

17.4.5. Responding to interrogatives

Content questions are typically answered with a standard declarative clause, or more minimally, a single word that provides the particular information solicited. In the case of yes-no questions, the typical response is the repetition of the verb phrase that appeared in the interrogative (whether negative or affirmative), in declarative form. Subjects are frequently dropped. Examples (156–160) illustrate question-answer dyads between two speakers (A and B).

(156) A) *nǎn-ǎy ?ám ?*
 come-DYNM 2sg
 ‘Have you come?’ (greeting new arrival)

B) *nǎn-ǎy*
 come-DYNM
 ‘(I’ve) come.’ (cv)

(157) A) *ham-níh-ay ?ám ?*
 go-NEG-INCH 2sg
 ‘Will you not go?’

- B) *ham-níh-ay*
 go-NEG-INCH
 ‘(I) won’t go.’
- A) *híníy-keyó? ?*
 Q.be.like-cause
 ‘Why?’
- B) *?ǎn hid d’ó? tán-ǎh*
 1sg.OBJ 3pl take.APPR FUT.CNTR-DECL
 ‘They (Tukano men) would get me.’ (cv)
- (158) A) *?ǎg-na?-yí?-íy níŋ ?*
 drink-lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM 2pl
 ‘Did you all get drunk?’
- B) *?ǎh-ǎp ?ǎg-na?-m’uy-níh j’ám-ǎp,*
 1sg-DEP drink-lose.consciousness-do.a.lot-NEG DST.CNTR-DEP
- ni-d’ǎh-ǎp d’ó? = d’ǎh-ǎp ?ǎg-ná?-ǎy !*
 that-PL-DEP child=PL-DEP drink-lose.consciousness-DYNM
 ‘As for me, I didn’t get very drunk, (but) as for those kids, they did get drunk!’ (cv)
- (159) A) *kawag-hiyǎt-ay hid ?ǎg-ǎ? ?*
 pass.day-FACT.lie-INCH 3pl drink-INT
 ‘Until after dawn they drank?’
- B) *nukán-ay, nukán-ay hid ?ǎg-ǎh !*
 over.here-INCH over.here-INCH 3pl drink-DECL
 ‘(Until the sun was) there, there they drank!’ (cv)
- (160) A) *?ǎy-ǎn = yí? tíh nó-ǎ? ? ?ǎy-ǎn ?*
 who-OBJ=TEL 3sg say-INT who-OBJ
 ‘To whom did she say (that)? To whom?’
- B) *mændí tóg-ǎn*
 Bernadito daughter-OBJ
 ‘To Bernadito’s daughter.’ (cv)

The affirmative particle *hǎʔ* ‘yes, all right’ is also common in response to polar questions, and can be used either by itself or preceding an affirmative clause. For example, the response in (161) comes from the story of the Tapir and the Turtle; the Turtle has questioned the leaves of trees at the places where the Tapir had slept, and they answer as follows:

- (161) *hǎʔ, n'ít tih ʔǎh-ǎh*
 yes there 3sg sleep-DECL
 ‘Yes, he slept there.’ (txt)

There is no general word for ‘no’ in Hup; however, the negative predicative particle *pǎ* (see §16.2) can be used in response to questions dealing with the presence or existence of nominal entities:

- (162) A) *hǔp=d'əh pǎ híd ?*
 Hup=PL NEG:EX 3pl
 ‘There are no Hup people?’

- B) *pǎ*
 NEG:EX
 ‘(There are) none.’ (cv)

17.5. Imperative clauses

The basic imperative clause in Hup is easily distinguished from other clause types. The primary morphological characteristics marking the simple imperative include the *lack* of any Boundary Suffix on the verb (such that this clause type can be considered the unmarked member of the set in Table 46 above, contrasting with ‘dynamic’, interrogative, declarative, and subordinate clauses), and obligatory high (falling) tone. Additionally, word-final CV stems typically appear with epenthetic [h] in the imperative; thus *nɔ-* ‘say’ appears as *nóh*, *yu-* ‘wait’ as *yúh*, etc.

The syntax of the imperative clause is typically verb-final, and the most focal nominal constituent is usually fronted (as is the norm in Hup clauses generally); this constituent is most often the direct object of a transitive or ditransitive clause, while ditransitive recipients tend to come later in the clause. The singular second person subject pronoun *ʔám* is normally dropped altogether, so it is common for an imperative verb stem to form an entire clause by itself. The second person plural pronoun *níŋ* is usually present, but can also be dropped.

Such subject-deletion in imperative clauses is a cross-linguistically common phenomenon (cf. Sadock and Zwicky 1985: 171).

Basic Hup imperatives are limited to second person subjects. Other closely related moods are expressed via different strategies; for example, first person plural hortative-type constructions involve the Declarative *-Vh* (§13.3 and above; also compare the hortative function of the ‘Cooperative’ suffix *-nǎŋ*, §14.5). The jussive (optative) mood occurs with third person subjects, and employs the suffix *-ʔũh*, which is identical to the imperative form of the Applicative construction (probably indicative of a historical relationship between the Applicative and the Jussive, as argued in §14.7). Finally, the Apprehensive mood (§14.6), while found with all subject persons, bears a formal and functional similarity to the simple unmarked imperative. Both constructions are expressed by a bare verb stem and a second person subject; moreover, these are pragmatically similar speech acts, since an utterance in the apprehensive mood is usually intended as a warning (a pragmatically negative command), and solicits some action (usually one relating to protecting him/herself) from the addressee.

Various aspectual distinctions (though not all) are acceptable in Hup imperative clauses.¹⁹⁶ Imperative nuances contributed by aspectual-type markers can relate to directionality (toward or away from the speaker), urging, politeness or short-term action, and completeness.

In addition to the simple imperative form (and the other modal variations on the imperative mentioned above), Hup has a specifically imperative suffix *-kaǎm*, which attaches to verb stems and lends additional force to the command; this construction is also discussed below.

17.5.1. Simple imperative

The simplest form of the imperative in Hup involves a bare verb stem (i.e., lacking any Boundary Suffix) with high tone on the final syllable (phonetically realized as a falling tone when the syllable ends in a voiced consonant). Such lack or reduction of affixes on verbs in the imperative mode is a cross-linguistically common phenomenon (cf. Sadock and Zwicky 1985: 172). As noted above, vowel-final (CV) stems almost always take epenthetic final [h], but this seems to be subject to a minor degree of variation (the alternative is a long vowel with falling tone, as is typical in nominal CV words). Examples of the simple imperative are given in (163–165):

¹⁹⁶ Sadock and Zwicky (1985: 172) note that both tense and aspect distinctions are cross-linguistically relatively uncommon in imperatives.

(163) *nǽn !*

come.IMP

'Come!' (cv)

(164) “*nút niŋ níh !*” *nɔ-yóʔ, tih y'ǽt-b'ay-áh*

here 2pl be.IMP say-SEQ 3sg lay-AGAIN-DECL

'Having said “you all stay here!” he left (us).’ (txt)

(165) “*húptok niŋ bíʔ ! ʔǽg niŋ bíʔ !*” *hid nɔ-píd-ih*

caxiri 2pl make.IMP drink 2pl make.IMP3pl say-DIST-DECL

“‘You all make caxiri! You all make drink!’ they were saying.’ (txt)

The same strategy applies to verb compounds, where the imperative high tone occurs on the final root of the compound word:

(166) *kótʔah b'ay-yúh !*

in.front return-wait.IMP

'Go back and wait!' (txt)

(167) “*yok-d'əh-nǽn !*” *tih nɔ-píd-ih, “yok-d'əh-nǽn !*”

poke-send-come.IMP 3sg say-DIST-DECL poke-send-come.IMP

‘“Poke (with the stick) and send (them) through!” he was saying, “Poke and send (them) through!”’ (sending fish through a hollow log) (txt)

(168) *d'oʔ-kədnǽn !*

take-pass.come.IMP

'Bring it here!' (cv)

A few verbs with postural or directional semantics are commonly followed by the verb *d'oʔ-* ‘take’ in the imperative. This results in a specifically imperative compound, used to tell someone to assume a certain position – much as ‘take’ is used in English. For example, imperative ‘take a seat’ (example 169) is uttered when inviting or ordering someone to sit down; ‘take a duck’ (170) when going under a low branch on a forest trail. Compound-final *d'oʔ-* is ungrammatical with many verbs; e.g., **ham-* ‘go’, **yǽt-* ‘lie’, etc.

(169) *pæm-d'óʔ !*

sit-take.IMP

'Sit down!' ('Take a seat!') (cv)

- (170) *doy-d'ó?* !
 duck-take.IMP
 'Duck!' ('Take a duck!') (cv)

Many verbal Inner Suffixes can occur in imperative mood, coming as always in the post-stem position. Just like a compound-final imperative verb stem, such suffixes take the high (falling) tone associated with the imperative, and occur without a following Boundary Suffix. In some cases, these add distinct nuances to the imperative speech act, which are linked to but not necessarily predicted by their aspectual or modal functions. The aspect-related variations of the imperative that are most frequently exploited by Hup speakers are summarized here.

The Venitive suffix *-?áy-* (see §12.7) is common in imperatives. Used by itself with a verb stem, it indicates motion toward the speaker, 'come and do V':

- (171) *ków wæd-?áy* !
 hot.pepper eat-VENT.IMP
 'Come eat quinhapira!' (cv)
- (172) *?ǎn cug'ǎt nɔʔ-næn-?áy, tǎh* !
 1sg.OBJ paper give-come-VENT.IMP son
 'Bring me a piece of paper, Son!' (cv)
- (173) *?ǎn kəwǎg d'oʔ-tuʔ-?áy* !
 1sg.OBJ eye take-immersed-VENT.IMP
 'Come put my eyes (back) in for me!' (txt)
- (174) *?ǎn nɔʔ-?áy* !
 1sg.OBJ give-VENT.IMP
 '(Come) give me (one)!' (cv)

When the imperative form of the verb *ham-* 'go' is added to the imperative venitive form of the verb, the resulting construction indicates movement away from the speaker, 'go and do V' (cf. §12.7), as in example (175). This construction is irregular in that it involves two separate imperative verbs in the same predicate. The alternative interpretation, whereby the two verbs form a single compound, is ruled out by the fact that the two verbal forms are independently stressed; moreover, Venitive *-?áy-* is consistently stem-final in all other Hup compounds, whereas in this case it comes between the two stems.

- (175) *həb-ʔáy hám! tēghod-ót həb-pəm-ʔáy hám !*
 dry-VENT.IMP go.IMP wood.hole-OBL dry-sit-VENT.IMP go.IMP
 ‘Go dry them! Go sit and dry them at the fire!’ (cv)

The Inchoative marker *-ay* (see §12.3), when used imperatively, produces a relatively forceful directive. It urges the addressee to hurry up and get started in carrying out the activity. Example (176) – in which the Inchoative and Venitive forms co-occur – was uttered by a companion who was waiting for me to finish my bath in the river, and was growing impatient.

- (176) *cəp-ʔáy-áy !*
 go.from.river-VENT-INCH.IMP
 ‘Come up from the river!’ (cv)

The imperative use of the Telic marker *-yíʔ-* (see §12.6) can also contribute extra force to the utterance. Its emphasis on the full effect of an action may indicate straightforward completion, as in (177), but may also be used more generally as a kind of verbal exclamation point, as in examples (178–179).

- (177) *biʔ-yíʔ !*
 make-TEL.IMP
 ‘Finish making it!’, ‘Do it all!’ (cv)

- (178) *ham-yíʔ !*
 go-TEL.IMP
 ‘Go away!’ (vs. *hám* ‘go!’) (cv)

- (179) *poʔ-yíʔ !*
 open-TEL.IMP
 ‘Open (it) up!’ (vs. *póʔ* ‘open (it)!’) (cv)

The Perfective suffix (specifically, its unreduced variant *-ʔeʔ*; see §12.4) is also commonly used in the imperative mode. In keeping with the standard use of the Perfective, its imperative use can indicate that the event is expected to be of short-term or limited duration; however, it is also used simply to tone down the command, making it gentler or more polite. This pragmatic extension of the Perfective’s aspectual function is probably motivated by the fact that a request for a short-term, temporally limited action is likely to represent less of an imposition on the addressee than a request for something more long-term. For example, a child said (180) to me when begging for a fruit to eat, and my consultant

said (181) when gently telling a child to leave the house so that we could work. Example (182) was given as an example of a maximally wheedling request for a favor.

(180) *j'ǎk ʔǎn nɔʔ-ʔéʔ !*
 buriti 1sg.OBJ give-PERF.IMP
 'Please give me a buriti fruit!' (cv)

(181) *n'i-cóʔ way-ʔéʔ !*
 that-LOC go.out-PERF.IMP
 'Go out for a little while!' (cv)

(182) *děh ʔǎn g'ɔp-ʔūh-ʔay-ʔéʔ, nutǎn b'íyíʔ !*
 water 1sg.OBJ serve-APPL-VENT-PERF.IMP today only
 'Won't you please go fetch water for me, just today?' (ru)

A few peripheral formatives (enclitics and particles) also occur in imperative clauses, and are unaffected by the imperative tonal pattern, which is limited to the verb core. The Reported evidential =*mah* is particularly common in the imperative (§14.9.4), where it has a quotative function, used for repeating a command previously uttered by another speaker:

(183) *nǎn = mah !*
 come=REP
 'Come here (he said)!' (cv)

While the aspectual Inner Suffixes above take on distinct semantic nuances when used imperatively, other tense-aspect-mood specifications do not occur in the imperative at all. In addition to the Dynamic marker (which belongs to the set of vowel-copying Boundary Suffixes that are mutually exclusive with imperative mode), the Habitual, Frustrative, and Counterfactual forms are ungrammatical in the imperative. The same is true of the Future gram *-teg / -te-*, although a future time value can be specified in the imperative by means of the Future Contrast particle *tán*:

(184) *hɔh = yíʔ tán !*
 smoke=TEL.IMP later
 'Smoke them later!' (txt)

Other bound forms that are ungrammatical with imperatives include the Proximate and Distant Past Contrast particles *páh* and *j'ám / j'áh*, and evidentials other than the Reportative form *mah* and (more marginally) the Inferential *-ni-*.

Negative clauses require a special imperative construction, in which the negative predicate functions as an adverbial clause (usually marked as such by the adverbial/Telic enclitic *=yi?*, see §10.2 and §16.1.5), together with the affirmative imperative form of the verb *ni-* 'be', which acts as the main clause. This produces the construction [Verb-*níh* = (*yi?*) *níh*] (Verb-NEG=TEL be.IMP) (example 185). The imperative 'be' can occasionally be dropped when followed by an object nominal (example 186), and the entire construction (*-níh =yi? níh*) is frequently shortened to *-níníh* (example 187), especially when the subject is singular (since singular subjects are usually deleted in imperative clauses).

(185) *d'oʔ-ham-níh níŋ níh !*
 take-go-NEG 2pl be.IMP
 'Don't take (it) away!' (sp)

(186) *tǎʔnɔhɔ-níh =yi? níř ʔíd !*
 laugh-NEG=TEL 1sg.POSS speech
 'Don't laugh at what I say!' (cv)

(187) *cuʔ-níníh !*
 grab-NEG.IMP
 'Don't touch!' (cv)

17.5.2. Imperative suffix *-kǎm*

Hup has one specifically imperative suffix, the form *-kǎm*. Formally, this is a consonant-initial Boundary Suffix, which can follow Inner Suffixes and takes word-level stress. In contrast to the basic imperative construction, it has rising tone, rather than high. Semantically, *-kǎm* produces a command which is somewhat more forceful than the simple imperative. This is nevertheless not incompatible with politeness; for example, my consultants often accepted an offer of something to eat or drink with *nɔʔ-kǎm!* (give-IMP2). Examples of this imperative form are given in (188–190).

- (188) *náw = yiʔ, niŋ tɔn-ʔay-kǎm, ʔǎh piniŋ-té-t,*
 good=TEL 2pl hold-VENT-IMP2 1sg tell.story-FUT-OBL

núp = wa-ǎn !

this=old.woman-OBJ

‘That’s enough! You all come hold (the baby) while I tell this respected one a story!’ (cv)

- (189) “*ʔǎn hi-yiʔ-ʔay-kǎm, yǎʔám !*” *nó-ʕy = mah*
 1sg.OBJ descend-TEL-VENT-IMP2 jaguar say-DYNM=REP
 ‘‘Come on and jump down on me, Jaguar!’’ he said.’ (txt)

- (190) *tók = teg d’oʔ-ʔay-kǎm, céc, d’oʔ-kədnæn-kǎm = b’ay !*
 pestle=stick take-VENT-IMP2 INTERJ take-pass.come-IMP2=AGAIN
 ‘Bring the pestle, darn it, bring it quick!’ (cv)

Example (191) was uttered in joking anger, directed toward the village men in general (none of whom were present) – the speaker was clambering under a tree that had fallen across the path, while encumbered with a heavy basket of manioc.

- (191) *núw-ǎn kit-kǎm !*
 this-OBJ chop-IMP2
 ‘Cut this one!!’ (cv)

The Repetitive aspectual enclitic =*b’ay* frequently follows the Imperative suffix *-kǎm*:

- (192) *key-kǎm = b’ay !*
 see-IMP2=AGAIN
 ‘Look (again)!’ (cv)

In a much less frequent use, the form *kǎm* appears without any preceding verb stem, and behaves like a discourse particle or interjection (example 193). A consultant suggested that this use is related to *key-kǎm* ‘look, pay attention!’; it may be an abbreviated form of this common attention-getting expression that has developed a secondary use as a discourse marker.

(193) *cǎ-wag ʔāh ní-ít kǎǎm, n'ikán b'ʔt-an*
 other-day 1sg be-OBL IMP2 over.there roça-DIR

ham-ʔeʔ-kéʔ, nɔ-ʔp ʔǎp
 go-PERF-KEʔ say-DEP NEG:ID

'Look how I spend every day at home, never saying "I'm off alone to the roça".' (txt)

17.5.3. Responses to imperatives

Responses to commands are much like the responses to questions, discussed above in §17.4.5. An acquiescent response is usually a simple *hǎʔ* 'yes, all right', as illustrated in the text example in (194), and may also involve the repetition of the predicate (often in future form). A negative response may likewise involve the repetition of the predicate, in negated form.

(194) “*hǔ yǎʔ-ʔáy !*” *tǐh-ǎn tǐh nɔ-ʔh;*
 animal singe-VENT.IMP 3sg-OBJ 3sg say-DECL

“*hǎʔ*” *nɔ-yóʔ = mah, yǎʔ-ǎp tǐh d'ób-óh*
 yes say-SEQ singe-DEP 3sg go.to.river-DECL

““Go singe the game!” he told her; having said “all right,” she went down to the water to singe (it).’ (txt)

Chapter 18

Clause combining

Hup has a rich repertoire of strategies for combining clauses. Mechanisms involve coordination, subordination, and cosubordination, including what may be best characterized as clause-chaining. This chapter begins with a discussion of coordination in Hup, then moves on to subordination and cosubordination, where at least one clause is dependent on another. Hup has an especially wide selection of (co)subordination strategies for indicating temporal overlap or succession of events.

As is consistent with Hup morphological patterns generally, most of the morphological forms used to signal clause linkage are verbal suffixes or enclitics, and these usually follow the second (or final) clause, occurring at the end of the sentence. Only two are particles that come between the linked clauses, and both of these are probably borrowings from Portuguese (likely via Tukano).¹⁹⁷

Many of the markers discussed in this section have already been encountered in previous sections of this grammar. These have other uses that are distinct or only marginally related to their clause-linking functions, and as such they may also occur on independent clauses and even on clausal constituents. While doubt can rarely be completely eliminated as to whether they are polysemous (either synchronically or diachronically) or homonymous, polysemy often appears to be motivated semantically, and is certainly in keeping with the high level of polysemy found among forms in Hup generally. Where these forms are addressed in this chapter, their other uses are mentioned, and cross-references are made to the appropriate sections in other chapters.

The bound formatives relating to clause-combining (their functions, slot classes, etc.) are summarized in Table 47:

¹⁹⁷ As noted in §1.5.3, Portuguese fluency is considerably higher among Tukanoan and Arawak peoples of the upper Rio Negro region than it is among the Hupd'əh, and Tukano is a likely source of many Portuguese loans in Hup (see also Epps forthcoming a).

Table 47. Formatives relating to clause combining

Form	Slot class (formative type)	Identity/word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form
= <i>nih</i>	Enclitic	Various hosts, clauses	Emphatic Coordinator	
<i>kǎh</i>	Particle	Predicates	Adversative conjunction	
- <i>Vp</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs, clauses	Dependent marker	Topic marker (w/ nouns, other hosts)
- <i>ñih</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Nominalizer, complementizer	
= <i>yiʔ</i>	Enclitic	Adverbs, clauses	Adverbializer	Telic aspect (Inner Suffix w/ verbs) Contrastive emphasis marker (enclitic w/ nouns)
- <i>Vt</i>	Boundary Suffixes	Verbs	Adverbializers	Case markers (w/ nouns; Oblique, Directional oblique)
- <i>yóʔ</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs (Oblique case nouns)	Sequential	
- <i>mĩʔ</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Adverbial: simultaneous events (different actors); concessive	Locative postposition <i>mĩʔ</i> 'under'
- <i>kamí</i>	Particle Boundary Suffix	Various hosts Verbs Nominals	Concessive Temporal adverbial	
<i>keyóʔ</i>	Particle	Verbs (Nouns in object case)	Cause	Verb 'see' + Sequential: <i>key-yóʔ</i>
<i>té</i>	Particle	Free	Spatial/temporal adverbial 'until'	Cf. Portuguese <i>até</i> 'until' (space/time)

18.1. Coordination

Hup has a number of strategies for indicating a conceptual link between two clauses, where both are on the same syntactic level and neither is dependent on the other. These strategies include simple juxtaposition of linked elements, as well as additional morphological means for signaling the relation between them. In some cases, the clause-level strategies can also apply to linked phrases or constituents within the clause.

As discussed in Chapter 9, many distinct activities (usually performed by the same subject) are expressed in Hup not through clause-level coordination, as

they would be in English, but through verb compounding, as in the following example:

- (1) *ʔəg-yamhĩdɔʔ-ʔě-h*
 drink-sing-PERF-DECL
 ‘(They) were drinking and singing (at the same time).’ (cv)

Such compounding involves co-subordination at the nuclear level (in the terminology of Foley and Van Valin 1984), whereas in Hup linking or ‘nexus’ at the peripheral level (i.e., involving whole predicates) is preferred for events that are conceptually relatively less integrated. This latter type of linking is the subject of this chapter.

18.1.1. Juxtaposition strategy

The most common strategy in Hup for both phrasal and clausal coordination is the simple juxtaposition of the coordinated elements, or ‘zero strategy’ (cf. J. Payne 1985b: 25). Clues that this is indeed clausal coordination include intonation (which tends to descend further sentence-finally than between coordinated clauses), pause phenomena (which tend to be longer and more salient between sentences), and the general absence of ‘resummarizing’ devices such as *yĩnih-yóʔ* (that.ITG.be.like-SEQ) ‘and after that’ between coordinated clauses.

Clausal juxtaposition can be used to express events occurring in succession, and those happening at the same time, as in examples (2–3). Note that verb compounding is not appropriate in these cases because the events are not really integrated conceptually, and in (3) because the predicates have different subjects.

- (2) *nút tíh-ǎn d’oʔ-cæŋpe-g’et-yíʔ-íy = mah,*
 here 3sg-OBJ take-astraddle-stand-TEL-DYNM=REP

tíh-ǎn tíh yók-óh
 3sg-OBJ 3sg poke-DECL

‘(He) made him stand with legs apart like this, (and) he poked him.’ (txt)

- (3) *núp tih kəmən-g'ét-ay-áh,*
 this 3sg wrap.arms.around-stand-INCH-DECL

tih-ăn đowǎh n'æm'-g'ét-éy = cud, tinǎh yǎ?ambǒ?-óh !
 3sg-OBJ cheek lick-stand-DYNM=INFR 3sg.POSS dog-DECL
 'He's standing like this with his arms around (the dog), and (it) is licking
 his cheek, his dog!' (txt)

Variants of a clause (as well as its constituents; see §17.3.1) are often repeated or paraphrased for rhetorical effect in Hup discourse, and these are also typically coordinated with the main clause via the juxtaposition strategy:

- (4) *ni-n'ǎh mǎy hi-j'ǐp-ǎy-y yǎǎh = mah, tih-áh, mǎy*
 this-NMZ house FACT-tie-PERF-DYNM FRUST=REP 3sg-DECL house

tih hi-j'ǐp-yǎǎh-ǎh
 3sg FACT-tie-FRUST-DECL
 'She had tied up the house like this (i.e., the door) in vain; she had tied up
 the house in vain.' (txt)

The juxtaposition strategy is likewise used to coordinate multiple arguments (bearing the same grammatical relation to the verb) within a single clause (§6.7).

18.1.2. Vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes and clause linkage

Hup's vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes (see §3.4.1.2) are those which usually occur on verbal predicates in main clauses, where they indicate aspect and clause type (related to mood). However, several of them have a distinct function relating to the linking of clauses and other parts of discourse, and as such they typically occur in contexts where they would otherwise be ungrammatical. The use of these forms for clause linkage is a minor, relatively infrequent strategy in Hup, and is at this point not fully understood. It will be treated relatively briefly here; more information on these suffixes is given in the sections focusing on their primary uses, in other chapters.

As discussed in §17.3.2, the Declarative marker *-Vh* occasionally occurs in environments where it ordinarily cannot appear: *following* another Boundary Suffix on a verb. Normally, a single Boundary Suffix is all that a verb requires, and the Boundary Suffixes are in most circumstances mutually exclusive (see §3.4.1.2 and §8.3). All of these non-canonical uses of the Declarative involve

clause linkage, whereby the two clauses are associated in some general way – e.g., cause, explanation, etc.; the Declarative marker itself is thus understood to be a formal indicator of this linkage.

In (5–6) (repeated from §17.3.2), for example, the Declarative follows the Negative and the Dynamic Boundary Suffixes – an ungrammatical combination in independent clauses. Note that the non-canonical use of the Declarative can occur on either the initial or the final clause of the pair.

- (5) *m'æh hid wæd-æy, hid hup-hipāh-nih-ih*
 snake 3pl eat-DYNM 3pl RFLX-know-NEG-DECL
 'They eat snake, and (then) they lose all self-control.' (cv)
- (6) *?in bi?-iy-ih, ?icáp ?in có-oh*
 1pl make-DYNM-DECL tomorrow 1pl rest-DECL
 'Today we work, and tomorrow we rest.' (el)

A similar use of the Declarative for clause coordination involves its combination with the Filler syllable *-Vw-*. The *-Vw-Vh* combination occurs on the second of two coordinated clauses, where the second clause expresses a paraphrase, explanation, or continuation of the idea expressed in the first, as in example (7). Such a coordination-related function may be a more general feature of the Filler syllable, as well as of the Declarative, as discussed in §15.2.4 and below.

- (7) *yúp = mah yúw-úh, mchǒy hod hid nǒ-šw-šh*
 that.ITG=REP that.ITG-DECL deer hole 3pl say-FLR-DECL
 'So that was it, that which they should call the Deer's Tomb.' (txt)

The linking function of Declarative *-Vh* is not limited to clauses. It typically marks non-verbal entities that come after the main clause and appear as right-dislocated arguments – tacked-on, associated packages of information (see §17.3.1–17.3.2). These Declarative-marked entities are usually restated or additional constituents of the main clause, which develop and/or clarify the original proposition:

- (8) *macã-cák-maám tih-ăn tĩ = wɔn-hám-ay = mah yúp,*
 heal-climb-REP.DST.CNTR 3sg-OBJ 3sg=follow-go-INCH=REP that.ITG

mih-íh, tah-ăn-á'h

turtle-DECL tapir-OBJ-DECL

'Having got well and climbed out (of the hole), he followed after him, (did) the turtle, (after) the tapir.' (txt, Umari Norte dialect)

The Declarative marker also occurs optionally on coordinated nominal entities in a list of items (cf. §6.7 and §17.3.2).

These uses of the Declarative marker involve various distinct types of linkage – between nominal constituents and between clauses, whether among like entities (such as the restated constituents of the main clause in [8]), or among different entities (such as the coordinated clauses in [5–7] and listed items). Nevertheless, they all involve the linking of entities on the same syntactic level. The Declarative marker can therefore be considered to have a kind of all-purpose linking function, in addition to its more canonical role as a marker of Declarative clauses.

The use of the Filler syllable -Vw- in combination with the Declarative suffix -Vh̄ to signal coordination (as in 7 above) may not be a property of the Declarative Boundary Suffix alone. There is evidence that this clause-linking function is also characteristic of the Filler syllable in combination with other Boundary Suffixes, although in limited contexts, as mentioned in §15.2.4. When the Filler syllable occurs coupled with the Interrogative suffix -Vʔ, the combination -Vw-Vʔ has a coordinating function similar to that in (7) above. In addition, the combination of Filler syllable -Vw- and Inchoative -ay (yielding -Vw-ay, which elsewhere indicates an inchoative event with long-term duration or consequences; see §12.3) appears in certain cases to have a clause-linking function relating to temporal simultaneity: 'when (actor) begins to (verb)':

- (9) *núp niŋ pæ-æw-ay, wayd'óʔ = teg-an = yíʔ*
 this 2pl go.upriver-FLR-INCH fly=STICK-DIR=TEL

niŋ pæ-æʔ = b'ay ?

2pl go.upriver-INT=AGAIN

'When you all went upriver, was it in a plane that you went?' (cv)

- (10) *húp-ăn tih wæd-tú-w-ay, pĩk-ĩy = mah*
 person-OBJ 3sg eat-want-FLR-INCH shriek-DYNM=REP
 'When he wants to eat people, he shrieks (to lure them near).' (txt)

The Dynamic suffix $-V\acute{y}$ also has a function relating to the linking of entities in discourse. Like the Declarative marker, the Dynamic is a vowel-copying Boundary Suffix; it normally occurs only on verbal predicates, carries aspectual information, and (like all Boundary Suffixes) is mutually exclusive with other Boundary Suffixes. As discussed in §12.2, however, it can also appear in non-canonical contexts – on non-verbal constituents and together with other Boundary Suffixes. This is especially common in co-occurrence with the Emphatic Coordinator $=nih$ in clause-linking contexts (see §18.1.3 below), but $-V\acute{y}$ can also occur by itself following other Boundary Suffixes, such as the Negative in (11), to signal coordination between clauses – much as the Declarative does in (5) above. Finally, in what may be a related function, the Dynamic also appears in a few contexts as an attributive marker in certain nominal compound constructions (see §5.1.4 and §18.2.3 below).

- (11) *tih* *ʔɔh-nih-ɪy*, *tih* *mæh-æh*
 3sg sleep-NEG-DYNM 3sg kill-DECL
 ‘He didn’t sleep, he killed (fish).’ (ru)

How are we to understand the use of these clause-level morphemes to signal linking *between* clauses? While it is not yet clear how this came about, it is in fact relatively common cross-linguistically for clause- and sentence-level structures to migrate into the broader discourse context (see Evans 2007). As discussed below (§18.2.4.2), this has apparently occurred with the Dependent marker $-Vp$ in Hup, which not only indicates dependency between clauses, but also appears on independent clauses and even clausal constituents as a marker of emphasis and topic. Similarly, the other vowel-copying Boundary Suffixes mentioned above may have moved from being purely clause-level features to having a function within the sentence or wider discourse.

18.1.3. Emphatic Coordinator $=nih$

The enclitic $=nih$ has a function related to clause linking. It is conjunction-like, but serves a variety of other linking functions that are not typical of conjunctions cross-linguistically. In general, it links a predication to a previous assertion, which may occur either within the same sentence, or in the preceding discourse context. As is somewhat atypical for conjunctions cross-linguistically, it tends (with some exceptions) to occur sentence- or utterance-finally, on the *final* clause of two (or more) conjoined clauses. As mentioned above, however, this position is consistent with the clause-final placement of morphology in Hup generally.

The Emphatic Coordinator =*nih* is an optional, emphatic coordinating device, rather like English ‘too’ (which also occurs sentence-finally; e.g., “I ate beans and I drank beer too”). Its main function appears to be one of emphasizing that the clause is comparable or parallel to the associated assertion. The linked clauses are typically temporally simultaneous (where temporality is relevant) and conceptually closely related, involving a restatement or development of the same idea. Note that this coordinating function of =*nih* appears to be similar to that of the non-canonical uses of Declarative -*V̇h* (above), but that the latter tends to link clauses that are temporally *not* simultaneous.

The Emphatic Coordinator =*nih* can attach to virtually any part of speech, and the phrase bearing =*nih* typically acts as a predicate. The most interesting morphological feature of =*nih* is that it is very frequently preceded by the Dynamic Boundary Suffix -*V̇y*, and it licenses this suffix to appear in environments where it would otherwise be ungrammatical (see also §12.2 and above). Otherwise restricted mainly to verbal and adjectival predicates in main clauses, the Dynamic suffix when followed by =*nih* can attach to other Boundary Suffixes, adverbials, nouns, etc. This is undoubtedly related to the more general clause-linking function of Dynamic -*V̇y*, as discussed in §18.1.2 above. Also, the use of the Dynamic marker plus =*nih* to link two temporally simultaneous or conceptually closely related assertions can perhaps be understood as an extension (to the discourse level) of the aspectual use of -*V̇y* within the clause, where it signals that the event is concurrent with the speech moment or the temporal frame of reference (cf. §12.2). When it precedes =*nih*, the Dynamic suffix is typically made phonologically prominent with extra stress and length.

The examples below illustrate the use of =*nih* to express coordinated assertions about a single topic. These develop and restate a single point or idea, and the clauses are on the same syntactic level. The marker =*nih* (which is directly or indirectly preceded by the Dynamic suffix) is highlighted in bold. Specifically non-canonical uses of the Dynamic (as licensed by =*nih*) are also in bold.

- (12) *ʔāh hipāh-yíʔ-ay bíg ʔāh-āh,*
1sg know-TEL-INCH HAB 1sg-DECL

*nó-ḡy bíg=**nih** ʔāh-āp=hóʔ ʔāh ʔid-iw-ay*
say-DYNM HAB=EMPH.CO 1sg-DEP=TAG2 1sg speak-FLR-INCH
‘I always start thinking (of another story); I always keep talking once I get started.’ (txt)

- (13) *pán ham-nīh-īp = ʔih, yít=yiʔ g’āʔ-āp = ʔih-īy=**nih***
sloth go-NEG-DEP=MSC thus=TEL be.suspended=MSC-DYNM=EMPH.CO
‘The sloth is the one that doesn’t go, that stays thus in one place.’ (el)

- (14) *cih-níh = mah yúp mĩh-ĩw-ĩh, tíh-ǎn wón-ǔw-ǔh.*
 tire-NEG=REP that.ITG turtle-FLR-DECL 3sg-OBJ follow-FLR-DECL

j'ǔb baktúk = hin nǎn-ǎy = nih, nǎn-hi-wǎg,
 night dark=also come-DYNM=EMPH.CO come-FACT-day

nǎn-hi-d'ú? = mah

come-FACT-afternoon=REP

'That turtle did not get tired, (as he) followed him (Tapir). He came along in the darkness too, came in the morning, came in the afternoon.' (txt, Umari Norte dialect)

- (15) *d'o?-ye-yó? ǐn-ǎn, yít-yi?-ǐy píd = nih,*
 take-enter-SEQ 1pl-OBJ thus-TEL-DYNM DIST=EMPH.CO

b'oy-ye-nih-ǐy píd-ǐy = nih, có-wag-áh
 study-enter-NEG-DYNM DIST-DYNM=EMPH.CO rest-day-DECL

'Having brought us into the village, it was just the same, we still didn't go to church on Sundays.' (txt)

The Emphatic Coordinator is most frequently preceded by Dynamic *-Vý*, but may instead occur with the Inchoative marker *-ay*. Just as the presence of *=nih* imparts extra phonological prominence and a freer distribution to the Dynamic, it also conditions stress on the preceding Inchoative marker *-ay* (which is otherwise lexically specified as unstressed), as in example (16). This stress assignment is clearly particular to *=nih*, since other unstressed enclitics (such as evidentials) do not have this effect on preceding *-ay*.

- (16) *tih wɔn-hám-ǎh...* “*hít tih hám-ǎ? j’ám ? hĩ-m’é*
 3sg follow-go-DECL where 3sg go-INT DST.CNTR Q-MEAS

j’ám tih hám-ǎ? ?” tih nɔ-mah-ǎh;
 DST.CNTR 3sg go-INT 3sg say-REP-DECL

bǐg-ǎy = nih nɔ-ǎy píd = mah yúp, yup
 long.time-INCH=EMPH.CO say-DYNM DIST=REP that.ITG that.ITG

tih ?ǎh-?ě-p hód-óh
 3sg sleep-PERF-DEP hole-DECL

‘He went following him... “Where did he go? When did he go (by here)?” he said; and it was for a long time that he kept asking (this), at each place he (Tapir) had slept.’ (txt, Umari Norte dialect)

The Emphatic Coordinator = *nih* is also acceptable in an interrogative:

- (17) *híp = b’ay cǎc? ?ǎh wæd-hitǎ?-key-nǎj !*
 where=AGAIN INTERJ 1sg eat-do.as.if-see-COOP

híp = yí? tih níh-ǎy = nih ?
 how=TEL 3sg be.like-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘How is it, hey? I’ll try some, what’s it like?’ (cv)

A degree of conceptual integration of events is crucial to the use of = *nih* (although cooperation or involvement between the participants is not). In example (18), simultaneity is an important aspect of this integration; if Mouro went fishing first and returned before I went, speakers would instead use Distributive *píd* ‘also’ (see §12.9.1) rather than = *nih*. Likewise, the Emphatic Coordinator = *nih* is not used for two simultaneous events that are conceptually more distinct; in (19), the clauses are coordinated via the juxtaposition strategy, while the Proximative Contrast particle *páh* on the second clause contributes an adversative sense (‘but’):

- (18) *mówdu hǎp kók-əp hám-ǎy, ?ǎh = hin hǎp*
 Mouro fish pull-DEP go-DYNM 1sg=also fish

kók-əp hám-ǎy = nih
 pull-DEP go-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘Mouro went fishing, and I went fishing too.’ (el)

- (19) *ʔába b'ʔt-an há-m-á-y, mówdu hǒp kók-əp*
 Alba roça-DIR go-DYNM Mouro fish pull-DEP

há-m-á-y páh (= nih)*
 go-DYNM DST.CNTR (*=EMPH.CO)
 'Alba went to the roça, but Mouro went fishing.' (el)

As the coordinated clauses in (20) illustrate, the linking of simultaneous, associated events or states can involve an explicit contrast. Also note that the Emphatic Coordinator morpheme (and preceding *-V'y*) is not limited to the last clause, but can occur on both.

- (20) *tih = dó wón-ǔp = ʔih-íy = nih,*
 3sg=red follow-DEP=MSC-DYNM=EMPH.CO

tih = tohó wɔn-nih-íw-íy = nih
 3sg=white follow-NEG-FLR-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 'The brown (dog) chases animals, while the white one does not.' (el)

The Emphatic Coordinator *=nih* is used not only with coordinated clauses in the same sentence, but also across speakers in discourse. For example, it often occurs on successive assertions about the same topic by different participants in conversation. In (21), speaker A chimes in to add something to what speaker B says. Example (22) involves three different speakers involved in a conversation about hair: according to the myth, among the various possessions the different peoples received at the time of their origin (in the Boiling Hole into which they were told to jump) were a number of leaves, of which the different types determined the type of hair each people would have (longer and blacker vs. shorter and less luxuriant). Note that while Dynamic *-V'y* (or Inchoative *-ay*) is usually found with *=nih*, it is not required in all contexts (21).

- (21) A) *yí-có? = yí? píd yúw-úh, cí? deh có? = yí? píd*
 there.ITG-LOC=TEL DIST that.ITG-DECL slug water LOC=TEL DIST
 'It's over there too, where Slug Creek is.'

B) *wá?ah có? = nih*
 other.side.of.water LOC=EMPH.CO
 'And on the other side of the creek.'

- A) *wáʔah* *cóʔ*
 other.side.of.water LOC
 ‘On the other side of the creek.’ (cv)
- (22) A) *ʔáh-ãp* *núp púp = g’æt-æy = nih* *kăh d’oʔ-ní-p !*
 1sg-DEP this paxiuba=leaf-DYNM=EMPH.CO ADVR take-INFR2-DEP
 ‘But as for me, I certainly got that paxiuba leaf too!’ (laughs)
- B) *ʔáh-ãp* *yít-cáp-áy = nih = cud* *kăh*
 1sg-DEP thus-INTS1=EMPH.CO=INFR ADVR
 ‘For me it’s definitely the same too!’
- C) *hidnîh-îp* *yít* *cáp-áy = nih = cud = poʔ* *báʔ,*
 3pl.POSS-DEP thus INTS1-INCH=EMPH.CO=INFR=EMPH1 PROTST
- wăh = g’æt-æy = nih = cud*
 pataua=leaf-DYNM=EMPH.CO=INFR
 ‘But theirs (Tukanos’) was thus though, (they got) the patauá leaf, apparently!’
- A) *wăh = g’æt d’oʔ-nîh = mah*
 pataua=leaf take-NEG=REP
 ‘It wasn’t the patauá leaf they got, they say.’
- B) *nî-n’îh* *ciwîb = g’æt* *náw !*
 this-NMZ bacaba=leaf good
 ‘It was that nice bacaba leaf!’
- A) *ciwîb = g’æt* *ʔapíd-yiʔ-íy = nih = mah*
 bacaba=leaf immediately-TEL-DYNM=EMPH.CO=REP
- hid* *d’oʔ-cak-g’ét-éh*
 3pl take-climb-stand-DECL
 ‘And they grabbed the bacaba leaf immediately and climbed out with it!’ (cv)

In another discourse-related use, the Emphatic Coordinator =*nih* is sometimes used in response to questions, as in example (23) – the response to my asking after someone’s illness (and where the Dynamic suffix would otherwise be ungrammatical after the Negative marker). The Emphatic Coordinator is

especially common when providing an ‘it just is’ type of answer, using the ‘no reason’ particle *hĩ*; for example, a teenager answered my question, ‘Why did you leave school?’ with (24). The Emphatic Coordinator in these instances may serve to link the response back to the preceding discourse, or even to the question itself.

- (23) *peʔ-widnæñ jʔap-nih-ĩy = nih*
 sick-arrive.come break-NEG-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘The fever still hasn’t broken.’ (cv)

- (24) *hĩ ʔãh way-yiʔ-ĩy = nih*
 only 1sg go.out-TEL-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘I just left.’ (cv)

Further examples of Emphatic Coordinator =*nih* are given below. These can function to indicate coordination among noun phrases (cf. §6.7); =*nih* may appear on a verb, an adverbial expression, or even a predicate nominal.

- (25) *cugʔæť mǔy-an ní-ĩy = nih,*
 book house-DIR be-DYNM=EMPH.CO

dapicéda = hin ní-ĩy = nih...
 pen(Pt)=also be-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘And the book is in the house, and the pen is there too...’ (el)

- (26) *tinĩh páy ni-ʔě-y = cud, dʔəwyiʔ = nih,*
 3sg.POSS baggage be-PERF-DYNM=INFR today=EMPH.CO

tih tɔn-ham-húʔ-ũh
 3sg hold-go-finish-DECL
 ‘His stuff *was* there (yesterday), and then today, he took it all away.’ (cv)

- (27) *núp tǔh-ďt = ʔỵy = dʔəh, cǎp = yiʔ bʔỵyʔ ʔid-ĩh...*
 this pig-OBL=who=PL other=TEL only speak-DECL

núp ʔinĩh = hin cǎp = yiʔ-ĩy = nih kǎh
 this 1pl.POSS=also other=TEL-DYNM=EMPH.CO ADVR
 ‘Those people from Serra dos Porcos all have a different speech... but our language is different too.’ (txt)

Finally, Hup speakers occasionally use the conjunction *ʔó* (probably borrowed from Portuguese *ou* ‘or’, via Tukano)¹⁹⁸ together with =*nih* in environments of coordination, as in (28). However, *ʔó* is more commonly used in disjunctive expressions (see §18.1.5 below).

- (28) *patí bíʔ-íy=nih, ʔó pedú bíʔ-íy=nih*
 Pattie work-DYNM=EMPH.CO or Pedro work-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 ‘Pattie worked, and Pedro worked too.’ (el)

18.1.4. Adversative Conjunction *kǎh*

Hup speakers use the adversative conjunction-like form *kǎh*¹⁹⁹ (‘but, though, on the other hand’) to signal a semantic opposition to a previous clause or assertion in discourse, and it can also occur in expressions of disjunction (usually in combination with the disjunctive marker *ʔó*; see §18.1.5 below). Use of Adversative *kǎh* is limited to declarative clauses, while the Alternative Interrogative form =*haʔ* is used to indicate disjunction in ‘either or’ questions (see §17.4.4).

Adversative *kǎh* is a peripheral formative (a particle), which *cannot* occur in the verbal Inner Suffix position (unlike Hup’s fluid formatives). It usually follows the last of two (or more) coordinated predicates. Example (29) illustrates its use in coordinating two clauses within the same sentence. In examples (30–31), it occurs on an independent clause that is linked to the preceding discourse. The speaker in (31) had been talking about the challenge of keeping one’s children fed.

- (29) *tíh = tǎhʔíp = mah cípmǎh = mah, tíh = yíʔ póg = mah kǎh !*
 3sg=child.father=REP small=REP 3sg=TEL big=REP ADVR
 ‘Her husband is small, but she is big, they say!’ (cv)

¹⁹⁸ Consultants who speak Portuguese identify this as a Portuguese borrowing.

¹⁹⁹ A phonetically identical form *kah* appears in the verb compound *kah-kǎd-* (*kah* + ‘pass’) ‘step over (something)’ and in the locative postposition *kakǎh* ‘between’, but there is no evidence that this resemblance is anything other than homonymy.

- (30) *yít = mah tíh-ǎn tíh g'əç-d'oʔ-póg-b'ay-áh,*
 thus=REP 3sg-OBJ 3sg bite-take-EMPH1-AGAIN-DECL

hǎt = b'ay-áh, tinǎh mumuy = cúm, baʔtǐb'-ǎn-áh.
 alligator=AGAIN-DECL 3sg.POSS arm=beginning spirit-OBJ-DECL

tíh-íp húp ham-yíʔ-ay = mah kǎh
 3sg-DEP person go-TEL-INCH=REP ADVR

‘So then he bit him, (did) the alligator, on his upper arm, (bit) the spirit. But as for him, the man, (he) got away.’ (txt)

- (31) *tǎh pá = d'əh-əp = yíʔ nǎw kǎh*
 offspring NEG:EX=PL-DEP=TEL good ADVR

‘(For those) with no kids, on the other hand, it’s all right.’ (sp)

The Adversative Conjunction is in general optional; clauses in an adversative relationship can also be expressed by simple juxtaposition, as in (32) (note that *kǎh* is acceptable here, although the speaker did not choose to use it):

- (32) *ʔǎh-ǎp ʔəg-naʔ-m'uj-nǎh j'ám-ǎp,*
 1sg-DEP drink-lose.consciousness-do.a.lot-NEG DST.CNTR-DEP

nǎ-d'əh-əp d'óʔ = d'əh-əp ʔəg-náʔ-ǎy !

this-PL-DEP child=PL-DEP drink-lose.consciousness-DYNM

‘As for me, I didn’t get very drunk, (but) as for those kids, they did get drunk!’ (txt)

The use of *kǎh* is not limited to expressing a semantic opposition between the clause it marks and a preceding assertion. It can also mark a clash between reality and intent or effort – in other words, between the situation expressed by a clause and another possible world of which the listener is expected to be aware:

- (33) *bǎg = mah = yíʔ tíh nǎh-ǎh, ham-g'óʔ-óh;*
 long.time=REP=TEL 3sg be.like-DECL go-go.about-DECL

hǎyám hup-hipǎh-nǎh-ay = mah kǎh tíh-iw-íp
 town RFLX-know-NEG-INCH=REP ADVR 3sg-FLR-DEP

‘For a long time she did thus, wandered about; she didn’t know where her village was.’ (txt)

As discussed in §15.2.3, Adversative *kǎh* belongs to a small class of focus markers (of which *-áh* is the unmarked form) that resemble each other phonologically (i.e., they all end in [ah]) and pattern in similar ways. In particular, in expressions like (33–34) which require a focus marker (because the clause ends in a subject that takes the Dependent marker, producing an emphatic construction), *kǎh* can fill this slot (while maintaining its adversative semantics).

- (34) *pótʔah cóʔ-óy = d'əh-əp cǎp = yiʔ kǎh ʔid-ip*
 upriver LOC-DYNM=PL-DEP other=TEL ADVR speech-DEP
 'As for the upriver folks, (it's) actually quite different, their speech.' (txt)

18.1.5. Disjunction

To indicate an explicit disjunction, speakers may simply express the options as two coordinated clauses or phrases, each marked with the Epistemic modality particle *ʔũhníy* 'maybe' (usually together with the Inferred evidential *cud*, see §14.9.3):

- (35) *wĩh cím'-íy = cud ʔũhníy, yǎʔambǒʔ g'əç-áy = cud ʔũhníy*
 hawk claw-DYNM=INFR maybe dog bite-DYNM=INFR maybe
 'Either the hawk clawed (it), or the dog bit (it), apparently.' (el)

The borrowed form *ʔó* (from Portuguese *ou* 'or', cf. §18.1.3 above) is in common use to indicate disjunction, either instead of or in addition to the strategy in (35) above, as illustrated in example (36). Note that disjunctive *ʔó* typically occurs twice, coming before each of the two expressed options individually – exactly as Portuguese speakers use *ou...ou* in either/or expressions – rather than following only the second option (the pattern more typical of Hup linking formatives). This is also distinct from the less common conjunctive 'and' use of *ʔó* (example 28 above), where it occurs only once, between the two coordinated entities. The Adversative particle *kǎh* can also appear at the end of the sentence as an extra signal of the disjunction (with or without *ʔó*). However, this is only a marginal function of *kǎh*; not only is *kǎh* optional here, but it also is not by itself indicative of a disjunction, as example (37) illustrates.

- (36) *ʔó ʔatúdu = cudʔũhníy, ʔó cibínu = cudʔũhníy,*
 or Arthur=INFR.maybe or Silvino=INFR.maybe

ham-yiʔ-cíw-íy kǎh
 go-TEL-COMPL-DYNM ADVR

‘It was maybe Arturo, or on the other hand maybe Silvino who already left.’ (el)

- (37) *ʔatúdo, cibínu ham-yiʔ-cíw-íy ʔũhníy kǎh*
 Arthur Silvino go-TEL-COMPL-DYNM maybe ADVR
 ‘Arthur and Silvino may have already left, however.’ (el)

The borrowed form *ʔó* is also frequently used without *kǎh* to link disjointed nominal entities in a list:

- (38) *ʔó cǎp g’í, ʔó mótaʔáp g’í, ʔǎh biʔ-ni-té-h*
 or other year or three year 1sg work-be-FUT-DECL
 ‘Next year, or a third year, I’ll stay here to work’ (sp)

- (39) *ʔin key-b’áy-át yúp, hǒp = d’əh g’ǎʔ-b’ay-áh.*
 1pl see-return-OBL that.ITG fish=PL be.suspended-AGAIN-DECL

ʔo d’ób = d’əh, ʔo tonyayǎg, ʔo yáy, ʔo g’əwd’ók,
 or acará=PL or jacundá.sp. or traira.sp. or tubo

ʔo báh, ʔo pǎy = d’əh, yúp hǒpkǎk-ót g’ǎʔ-ǎh
 or acará.sp. or acará.sp.=PL that.ITG fish.pull-OBL be.suspended-DECL
 ‘When we go back to look, fish are hanging (from the hooks). Acará,
 or jacundá, or traira sp., or tubo, or acará sp., or acará sp., these are
 hanging from the fishhooks.’ (txt)

18.2. Subordination and cosubordination

The majority of Hup’s clause-linking strategies involve a combination of a main clause and a dependent clause. The verb in the dependent clause typically takes a Boundary Suffix (see §3.4.1.2) that specifies its relationship to the main clause. In general, this dependent-clause verb lacks inflection for tense-aspect-mode, illocutionary force, or even – in some cases – negation; these are usually

specified on the verb in the main clause, which typically takes one of the vowel-initial Boundary Suffixes.

The combination of a dependent clause and a main clause is typical of both subordination and cosubordination phenomena cross-linguistically, according to the typology proposed by Foley and Van Valin (1984; cf. Van Valin and La Polla 1997). In cases of subordination, the dependent clause is an argument or a modifier of the main clause; examples include relative clauses, complement clauses, and adverbial clauses, all of which occur in Hup. Where cosubordination is involved, on the other hand, the dependent clause (so defined by its inability to stand as an independent sentence) acts as neither modifier nor argument of the main clause.

A number of Hup clause types can be said to involve cosubordination. At least two of these – dependent clauses indicating sequential events (marked with *-yoʔ*, §18.2.6.3) and simultaneous events (marked with *-miʔ*, §18.2.6.4) – are also arguably examples of clause-chaining, which exists in Hup's Tukanoan and Tariana neighbors as well. Cross-linguistically, phenomena typically associated with clause-chaining include (in addition to cosubordinate status) attention to temporality (sequence and simultaneity), the lack of a conjunction heading the dependent clause (rather, temporal or circumstantial meaning is marked on the verb), and switch-reference particles marking whether the dependent clause has the same subject or a different subject from the associated clause (cf. Longacre 1985: 264–267). Sequential *-yoʔ* and Simultaneous *-miʔ* clauses conform to this prototype for the most part, except for the fact that they lack special markers of switch-reference (which are entirely absent in Hup). However, Sequential clauses almost always involve the same subject as that found in the main clause, whereas Simultaneous clauses involve a different subject; they thus exhibit sensitivity to switch-reference phenomena. This marginal switch-reference feature in Hup may have developed via contact with Tukanoan languages; Aikhenvald (2003a: 515) notes that areal diffusion appears to have motivated the development of the phenomenon in Tariana, and a similar shift in Hup would be no surprise given the profound extent to which areal diffusion has influenced other aspects of Hup grammar.

18.2.1. Quoted speech

Directly quoted speech constitutes the least canonical case of subordination in Hup, because it involves the combination of two (or more) finite clauses, neither of which is morphologically marked as dependent on the other (and thus not clearly 'subordinate'). The quoted material forms a complete, main-clause utterance – no different from any other independent utterance in Hup – and (with the exception of a few cases involving the rapid exchange of dialogue, in

which the quoted speech forms an independent clause) it is always framed by an associated main clause involving the verb *nɔ-* ‘say’.

Despite the fact that neither clause has any morphological marking of dependence, their relationship is best analyzed as one of subordination. As the examples below illustrate, the framing verb ‘say’ – which requires a complement – always follows the quotation; accordingly, treating ‘say’ as the main verb and the quoted speech as its embedded complement is consistent with Hup’s verb-final constituent order. In addition, arguments of ‘say’ (particularly an object addressee, as in 43 below) can, although rarely do, *precede* the quoted speech, a further indication that the latter is dependent and embedded.

- (40) “*núh péʔ-éy = hɔ̃, ʔǎn-ǎh,*” *ʔǎh nɔ-ɔ̃y,*
 head sick-DYNM=NONVIS 1sg.OBJ-DECL 1sg say-DYNM

nɔ-yíʔ-ay tíh-ǎn, ʔǎh-ǎh
 say-TEL-INCH 3sg-OBJ 1sg-DECL

‘‘I have a headache,’’ I said, I said (that) to her.’ (cv)

- (41) “*ʔǎn d’oʔ-nǎn, mǎh!*” *nɔ-ɔ̃y, “ʔǎh ʔǎg-nǎh!” nɔ-ɔ̃y*
 1sg.OBJ take-come.IMP yng.sister say-DYNM 1sg drink-COOP say-DYNM
 ‘‘Bring me some, younger sister!’’ (I) said, ‘‘I’ll drink some!’’ (I) said.’
 (cv)

- (42) “*wǎd-nǎh niŋ níh ! póh niŋ d’oʔ-cak-w’ob-yíʔ,*
 eat-NEG 2pl be.IMP high 2pl take-climb-set-TEL.IMP

ʔin pǎʔ-cóʔ-ay = nih, niŋ wǎd !” hid nɔ-ɔ̃h
 1pl dabacuri-LOC-INCH=EMPH.CO 2pl eat.IMP 3pl say-DECL

‘‘You all don’t eat (it)! Put it up high, and when we hold our dabacuri, you all eat (it)!’’ they said.’ (txt)

- (43) *yúp yawǎç tíh = tǎh ʔín-ǎn, “ciw-ʔáy!” tíh nɔ-ɔ̃h*
 that.ITG titi.monkey 3sg=child.mother-OBJ cook-VENT.IMP 3sg say-DECL
 ‘So (regarding) that monkey, to his wife, ‘‘Cook (it)!’’ he said.’
 (i.e., ‘He told his wife to cook the monkey.’) (txt)

The quoted speech construction with ‘say’ is also used with more marginally linguistic phenomena, such as someone’s unspoken thoughts, laughter (as in example 44), or other noises – even if made by animals or inanimate objects (cf. §15.7 on ideophones).

- (44) “‘*hehé !*’ *nó-ǝ́y híd = wá = d’əh, ʔǎn-ǎ́h*
 (laughing noise) say-DYNM 3pl=old.woman=PL 1sg.OBJ-DECL
 “‘Ha ha!’ said those old bags (women) to me.’ (cv)

The framing verb *nɔ-* ‘say’ can be part of a larger verb compound:

- (45) “‘*yók, yók !*’ *tih nɔ-kədd’ob-yíʔ-ay-áh,*
 poke.IMP poke.IMP 3sg say-pass.go.to.river-TEL-INCH-DECL

 “‘*yók !*’ *nó-ǝ́y = mah*
 poke.IMP say-DYNM=REP
 “‘Poke, poke (me)!’ he said as he came down to the water, “poke (me)!”
 he said, it’s said.’ (txt)

That the verb *nɔ-* ‘say’ is itself a crucial part of the quoted speech construction is illustrated by the fact that other verbs relating to various speech acts (‘ask’, ‘scold’, ‘call’, etc.) cannot take quoted speech as a complement. Even quoted questions are framed with ‘say’ (rather than *ʔih-key-* ‘ask’), just as are statements:

- (46) “‘*hĩ-n’ih = pó-y ʔám ʔiʔ = tǎ́h ?! hí-n’ih ʔám-ǎn*
 Q-NMZ=EMPH1-DYNM 2sg mother=son Q-NMZ 2sg-OBJ

hǎ́h-ǝ́ʔ ?” *nó-ǝ́y = mah*
 make.noise-INT say-DYNM=REP
 “‘What in the world are you doing, mother’s son?! What’s making that
 noise (come) from you?’ he said.’ (txt)

Such speech act verbs *can* appear in the context of quoted speech, but they require the obligatory co-presence of ‘say’, which takes the quoted speech as its complement:

- (47) *tih ʔey-wɔn-yíʔ-ay-áh, “ʔǝǝəh ! ʔǎn yu-ʔé ?!*
 3sg call-follow-TEL-INCH-DECL (calling noise) 1sg.OBJ wait-PERF.IMP

núp ʔǎh hup-cúd-uw-ǎn wɔy-nih ʔám ?” *tih nɔ-píd-ih*
 this 1sg RFLX-be.inside-FLR-OBJ love-NEG 2sg 3sg say-DIST-DECL
 ‘She followed after him calling, “Ooooh! Wait for me! Don’t you love
 this one inside me (your unborn child)?” she was saying.’ (txt)

Quoted speech is extremely common in Hup, especially in narrative discourse. However, it is possible to communicate indirect speech as well. This occurs mainly in the context of conversation. The primary mechanism for this is the Reportative evidential (see §14.9.4), which allows the speaker to relate the content of a proposition or even a command without restating the words of the original speaker.

Hup speakers prefer the Reportative evidential for presenting information that is considered immediately relevant to the speech moment and the situation at hand, whereas quoted speech is more likely to be independent of the current pragmatic context. For example, indirect speech via the Reportative is usually chosen to communicate something like ‘he said he’ll come’ when people are preparing for a trip and are discussing who will be a part of the group. Conversely, Hup speakers would prefer quoted, direct speech to say the same thing when relating a scene (usually including a more complete conversation) that took place between them (or someone else) and the other person. Quoted speech therefore communicates more than just content, but also contributes to re-create the scene by preserving the illocutionary force of the original utterance. Quoted and indirect speech can co-occur; in non-first-hand narrative, the Reportative evidential is typically used *together* with the verb ‘say’ in the clause framing the quoted speech (as in example 46 above), in reference to the fact that the tale itself is second-hand information (‘he said “X”, it’s told’).

In addition to the speech-reporting function of the Reportative evidential, commands and requests in Hup can be related indirectly by the verb *yǎh-* ‘request, order’, which usually appears in compounds such as *biʔ-yǎh-* ‘request/order to work’ (see §9.4.1.2).

18.2.2. Cosubordination and predicate reduplication with *ni-*

Hup relies on the verb *ni-* (which is idiosyncratic in a number of ways, see §8.4) to form a particular strategy of clausal cosubordination. According to this strategy, which is strictly limited to *ni-* among Hup verbs, one or more dependent clauses is followed by utterance-final *ni-*. While *ni-* is inflected normally with a Boundary Suffix, thus constituting a main clause predicate, the verbs in the preceding predicates all lack the Boundary Suffix that is otherwise obligatory for verbs in Hup (except for those in apprehensive and imperative clauses; cf. §3.4.1.2 and §8.3). These dependent predicates carry the main information of the utterance and are neither arguments nor modifiers of the finite *ni-* clause – evidence that this strategy is one of cosubordination rather than subordination. The finite *ni-*, on the other hand, acts as a kind of ‘light’ or ‘dummy’ verb, con-

veying no particular semantics but carrying the required inflection, the Boundary Suffix.

The most frequent realization of this cosubordination strategy is the phenomenon of ‘predicate reduplication’, which indicates a repeated event. This iconic strategy involves multiple repetitions of what is usually the same bare verb, often stated together with an object or adverbial expression (which is also repeated), followed by fully inflected *ni-*:

- (48) *cǎw-ǎn d’oʔ-cak-w’ob-yíʔ, cǎw-ǎn d’oʔ-cak-w’ob-yíʔ,*
 other-OBJ take-climb-set-TEL other-OBJ take-climb-set-TEL

cǎw-ǎn d’oʔ-cak-w’ob-yíʔ, ní-íy = mah
 other-OBJ take-climb-set-TEL be-DYNM=REP

‘(He) put another up (on the smoking-platform), and put another up, and put another up, thus, it’s said.’ (txt)

- (49) *híd-ǎn wæd-nǔʔ, híd-ǎn wæd-nǔʔ,*
 3pl-OBJ eat-give 3pl-OBJ eat-give

ní-yóʔ píd = mah tih way-yíʔ-píd-íh
 be-SEQ DIST=REP 3sg go.out-TEL-DIST-DECL

‘(He) would give them food, (always) give them food, having done thus he would go out again, it’s said.’ (txt)

- (50) *yíkán = yiʔ píd wíd-b’ǎy, yíkán-yiʔ píd*
 over.there=FOC DIST arrive-return over.there-FOC DIST

wíd-b’ǎy, ní-íy = mah
 arrive-return be-DYNM=REP

‘(He) arrived back there again, arrived back there again, it’s said.’
 (i.e., he kept finding himself back at the house of the evil spirits.) (txt)

Both same and different subjects may be encountered among the dependent clauses. Example (51) illustrates predicate (near-)reduplication with *ni-* for repeated verbs having different subjects, explicitly stated in succession:

- (51) *yúp = mah hid yohoy-píd-ih, yã?ambö? = hin yohöy,*
 that.ITG=REP 3pl search-DIST-DECL dog=also search
- tih = hup = hín yohöy, ní-ty = mah*
 3sg=RFLX.INTS=also search be-DYNN=REP
 ‘So they were searching, the dog also searching, and he himself (boy)
 also searching.’ (txt)

Although it applies on the clausal level, this strategy is closely related – both formally and functionally – to lexical reduplication in Hup. Verb stems undergo semi-productive reduplication to express an event or state that is intrinsically characterized by multiple repetitions, such as coughing (see §12.9.3). Predicate reduplication is preferred when the repetition is not an intrinsic characteristic of the verb, but rather applies to the entire situationally dependent event, including both the action and the participants. This is represented iconically by shifting the reduplication from the lexical to the predicative level, but still summing it up as one unified event with *ni-*. This similarity between lexical and predicate reduplication is even more apparent when the reduplicated predicate is composed of only a single verb stem, with no repeated arguments and a common subject, as in examples (52–53). Indicators that this is predicate, rather than lexical, reduplication are the presence of *ni-*, the multiple repetitions of the verb (whereas a reduplicative verb stem involves only one repetition), and the fully copied CVC syllable form of the repeated verb (whereas reduplicated stems do not include non-homorganic medial consonant clusters).

- (52) *núp pöt bi?-yó?, j'ǐp j'ǐp j'ǐp ní-ty*
 this circle work-SEQ wrap wrap wrap be-DYNN
- hid d'əh-d'əh-hám-b'ay-áh*
 3pl send-send-go-AGAIN-DECL
 ‘Having made this loop, having wrap-wrap-wrapped (the string), they
 would send (the top) off.’ (txt)
- (53) *yǐ-nih-yó?, wót wót ni-yó? = mah yúp...*
 that.ITG-be.like-SEQ pull.out pull.out be-SEQ=REP that.ITG
 ‘Then, having taken out, taken out, it’s said...’ (txt)

Predicate reduplication with *ni-* can also involve the repetition of *different* predicates in the dependent clauses:

- (54) *kit-pǎé, d'oʔ-cud-pǎé, kit-pǎé,*
 chop-go.upstream take-be.inside-go.upstream chop-go.upstream
- d'oʔ-cud-pǎé, ní-íy = mah*
 take-be.inside-go.upstream be-DYNM=REP
 'He was cutting (fish) and going upstream, putting them inside (a basket) and going upstream...it's said.' (txt)
- (55) *yúp cǎp d'ǒb, mǎh-yíʔ, cǎp d'ǒb,*
 that.ITG other go.to.river kill-TEL other go.to.river
- cǎp d'ǒb, ní-íy = mah*
 other go.to.river be-DYNM=REP
 'So another went down to the river, and was killed, another went down, another went down, thus.' (txt)

This use of *ni-* as a light verb following a bare verb in a dependent predicate is not limited to reduplicative predicates like those in the examples above. As discussed in §9.3, the same strategy also appears in a non-reduplicative construction, involving a single dependent predicate or two (or more) different dependent predicates with no repetition, as in the following examples:

- (56) *tínħ yǎʔambǒʔ = b'ay nǝh-kǎdhi-yíʔ, ni-yíʔ-ay = cud*
 3sg.POSS dog=AGAIN fall-pass.descend-TEL be-TEL-INCH=INFR
 'His dog too fell down fast, apparently.' (txt)
- (57) *tíw deh hid nǝ-an, bíʔ-g'oʔ-ʔay ní-píd-ih*
 Brazil.nut water 3pl say-DIR work-go.about-VENT be-DIST-DECL
 'We went to work at the place they call Rio Castanha.' (txt)
- (58) *yǔb d'ǔp, kayak = tǔg cǔy' ʔin ni-té-h*
 cipó pull.down manioc=stem poke.in 1pl be-FUT-DECL
 'We'll both pull cipó and plant manioc.' (el)

This (non-reduplicative) bare predicate plus *ni-* sequence bears some resemblance to serial verb constructions in other languages (cf. §9.3); however, unlike serial verb constructions both in Hup and (typically) cross-linguistically, it allows participant doubling (as in 58, where each verb has a different object). It is also reminiscent of a construction found in Tariana (Aikhenvald 2003a: 438), in which the Tariana verb *ni-* ('do'; almost certainly related to Hup's *ni-* via areal

diffusion) has what Aikhenvald terms a ‘recapitulating’ function in a serial verb construction.

In the Hup case, cosubordinative constructions with *ni-* are distinct from compounds of the form (Verb-*ni-*), even where the first verb form is followed immediately by *ni-* (as in 56–57). In contrast to (Verb-*ni-*) compounds, which do exist (and in which *ni-* acts as an auxiliary verb, as illustrated in example 59), in contexts involving multiple predicates a slight pause typically precedes *ni-*. Both verbs also can have separate word-level stress (although this does not seem to be obligatory), whereas stress in a verb compound must occur only on the last root and/or on the Boundary Suffix (i.e., one to two primary stresses per word). Finally, Inner Suffixes cannot come between verb stems within compounds in Hup, but can occur between the bare verb in the dependent clause and the following *ni-*; moreover, the same suffixes can appear again on *ni-*, as in the case of the Telic marker in example (56).²⁰⁰ These features suggest that the bare verb and *ni-* in cases like (56–57) above should be considered separate predicates in a cosubordinate relationship, rather than as components of a single compound verb.

- (59) *n'ikán = b'ay tinñh yã?ambö? = b'ay*
 over.there=AGAIN 3sg.POSS dog=AGAIN

j'om-tu?-g'et-ní-b'ay-áh
 bathe-immersed-stand-be-AGAIN-DECL
 ‘Over there, his dog goes back into the water.’ (txt)

One additional case of *ni-* used as a light verb is mentioned here because of the similarity it bears to the constructions discussed above. This use occurs when the verb in the preceding dependent clause is marked with the Sequential marker *-yó?*, itself a Boundary Suffix, as in (60). Note that Sequential *-yó?* marks a cosubordinate dependent clause, and normally requires a corresponding main clause; the light verb *ni-* is apparently chosen when no other main clause verb appears readily available (see §18.2.6.3 below).

- (60) *tih na?-yí?-ay-áh. tih na?-yó? ní-ty,*
 3sg die-TEL-INCH-DECL 3sg die-SEQ be-DYNM
 ‘He died. When he was dead,

²⁰⁰ However, in rare cases the Telic marker (uniquely among Boundary Suffixes) does occur compound-internally, so this diagnostic is not fully reliable where it is concerned.

d'oʔ-taw-ham-yóʔ ní-íy tíh-ǎn hid j'ǔg
 take-carry.together-SEQ be-DYNM 3sg-OBJ 3pl forest
 having carried him away, they buried him

hæhó-an tíh-ǎn kǎʔ-g'et-yíʔ-ay ní-ay-áh.
 middle-DIR 3sg-OBJ bury-stand-TEL-INCH be-INCH-DECL
 in the middle of the forest.

yúp kǎʔ-g'oʔ-yóʔ, wid-ye-yóʔ ní-íy, "hĩ-cóʔ
 that.ITG bury-go.about-SEQ arrive-enter be-DYNM Q-LOC
 Having buried him, after having come back to the village,

ʔin ham-tég páh ?" nɔ-g'et-g'óʔ-óy ʔin-ǎh
 1pl go-FUT PRX.CNTR say-stand-go.about-DYNM 1pl-DECL
 "where can we go?" we said, wandering about.' (txt)

18.2.3. Relative clauses

Relative clauses in Hup are formed via the nominalization of a verb phrase. They are built on a gapping strategy – that is, the relativized or head nominal is external to the relative clause (although the relative clause may also be headless). A headed relative clause directly precedes the head nominal it modifies. This pattern is consistent with the nominal compound construction in Hup, where the modifying noun occurs in the N1 slot, followed by the head noun in the N2 slot (see §5.1);²⁰¹ note that this is distinct from the pattern represented by adjectives, which always follow the noun they modify. Both restrictive and non-restrictive relative clauses are encountered in Hup; there is no essential formal difference between them. In keeping with the NP Accessibility Hierarchy proposed by Keenan and Comrie (1977), Hup allows relativization on subject, object (including recipient/beneficiary), and oblique roles within the relative clause, but no others.

Hup has a variety of strategies for expressing relative clauses, which can be understood in terms of a continuum from headed to headless.²⁰² A fully headed clause has a standard (free lexical) noun as its head, while a headless clause –

²⁰¹ It is also relatively common for a demonstrative to precede the noun phrase formed by the relative clause + head noun (i.e., Dem – [RelCl] – Head nominal); this is also consistent with the pattern of nominal compounding in Hup.

²⁰² Thanks to Orin Gensler for suggesting this interpretation.

by definition – lacks any head nominal at all. Intermediate between these are those clauses that take a bound noun as a head nominal; this bound noun is less semantically explicit than a full noun, and relies more on anaphoric reference to a previously mentioned (or physically present) entity:

Full noun as head – Bound noun as head – No head nominal

Headed <-----> *Headless*

Whatever its position on this continuum, the relative clause is a nominalization. Hup relies on a hodgepodge of available devices for indicating relative clause status, which depend on the presence or absence of a head nominal and the role of the relative clause (as subject, object, or oblique) within the main clause. Most of these are discussed in this section; an additional, more marginal strategy involving the nominalizing suffix *-n'ih* is discussed in §18.2.5 below.

Hup's default subordinator in a relative clause is the Dependent marker *-Vp*, a Boundary Suffix that attaches directly to the verb. Normally, a relativized verb marked with *-Vp* is directly followed by a head nominal; this may be a full noun (example 61–62), or a bound noun (example 63). Use of a bound noun as the head nominal is generally preferred when one is available. Note that the Dependent marker *-Vp* has other functions in Hup besides its role in relative clauses; these are discussed in §18.2.4 below (see also §7.1.5), and these constructions are not necessarily nominalizations.

(61) *yúp* [hid key-ʔě-p] hɔhɔh = b'ay, ham-yiʔ ní-ay-áh
 that.ITG 3pl see-PERF-DEP toad=AGAIN go-TEL be-INCH-DECL
 'That toad they were looking at, (it) went away.' (txt)

(62) [ʔǎn hid yamhidɔʔ-g'óp-ɔp] mǎy
 1sg.OBJ 3pl sing-serve-DEP payment
 '(It was) the payment for their singing to and serving me.'
 (lit. their singing-and-serving-me payment) (cv)

(63) *yít = mah* *yúp* *húp = wəd* *wiʔ-g'ét-éy*,
 thus=REP that.ITG person=RESP hear-stand-DYNM

[mǔh g'íg-ip] = ʔih

inambu shoot.w/arrow-DEP=MSC

'There a man was standing listening, (it was) one who was shooting inambu.' (txt)

Where a relative clause refers to a plural entity, the Plural marker =*d'əh* may attach to the head noun, but may alternatively replace the head noun and Dependent marker as the unique subordinator for the clause. As is consistent with Hup's system of 'split plurality' (cf. §4.4.1), only relative clauses referring to animate entities may be overtly marked as plural with =*d'əh*. Both of these options ([Verb=*d'əh*] and [Verb-*Vp* + Head.nominal =*d'əh*]) are possible for most animate plural referents, as example (64) illustrates; however, the masculine/gender-neutral bound noun =*ĩh* is virtually never followed by =*d'əh*, but is only replaced by it (whether in a relative clause or in a compound noun, see §4.4.1A).

(64) a) *tãʔǎy = n'ǎn tĩh mǎh-ǎy*, [*tĩh ní =]n'ǎn-ǎh*
 woman=PL.OBJ 3sg beat-DYNM 3sg be=PL.OBJ-DECL
 'He hits the women, those with whom he stays.'

b) [*tĩh ní-ĩp*] = *ʔǎy = n'ǎn tĩh mǎh-ǎy*
 3sg be-DEP=FEM=PL.OBJ 3sg beat-DYNM
 'He hits the women with whom he stays.' (el)

Where =*d'əh* is the only subordinator, it essentially fills the role of head nominal, on a par with a bound noun (i.e., 'those who V'), and it takes the place of the Dependent marker -*Vp*, which is otherwise required on the relativized verb preceding all head nominals (whether bound or full). Apparently, given that Plural =*d'əh* is (for the most part) only grammatical with nominals in Hup, -*Vp* is unnecessary as an additional default nominalizer. That =*d'əh* possesses qualities of – and substitutes for – both the head noun and the subordinating suffix suggests that relative clauses of this type are truly intermediate between headed and headless. This is further supported by fact that [verb=*d'əh*] clauses resemble -*Vp* marked headless relative clauses (see below) in that they may be ambiguously interpreted as either a relative or an adverbial clause, as discussed in more detail in §18.2.4.1. Relativization with =*d'əh* is illustrated in the following example:

(65) *tĩh = pǎy = d'əh*, [*dɔwɔh kubúk*] = *d'əh b'iyi? - ay = po?*
 3sg=bad=PL cheek crusty.paint=PL only-INCH=EMPH1
 'Those ugly ones, those having crusty paint on their cheeks, are all that exist (here, now).' (txt)

Like the Plural marker =*d'əh*, a case marker can similarly follow the (full or bound) head nominal in a headed relative clause, as in (66). The case suffix may also follow the Plural marker =*d'əh*; the Plural =*d'əh* + Object -*ǎn* combina-

tion usually appears in the fused form =*n'an* in a relative clause, just as it does generally on nouns in Hup (cf. §4.3.1.2F) (see example 64 above). However, again like the Plural marker, the case suffix can alternatively take the place of both head noun and subordinator, resulting in a headless relative clause (see below).

- (66) *yǔ* [*?ãh kéy-ep*] = *?ih-ăn mæh-yí?-íy*
 João 1sg see-DEP=MSC-OBJ kill-TEL-DYNM
 ‘John killed the one I saw.’ (el)

Headless relative clauses exist in Hup, but conform to a peculiar distribution. Clear examples of headless relative clauses in nominative case vis-à-vis the main clause – i.e., acting as the main clause’s subject or as a predicate nominal (e.g., 67, 70) – are vanishingly rare, although they do occur. Unlike headless relatives acting as objects or obliques within the main clause (which are nominalized via a case marker, as outlined below), those in nominative case are marked only with the default nominalizer *-Vp*. Evidence that headless relatives of this type are effectively nominalized by the Dependent marker alone includes their ability to act as nominal constituents of the main clause, their negation with the Identity Negative *?ap* (67).

- (67) [*tih wæd-æp*] *?ãp páh yúw-úh* !
 3sg eat-DEP NEG:ID PRX:CNTR that.ITG-DECL
 ‘That’s not his thing to eat!’ (el)

The examples in (68–69) also appear to involve headless *-Vp*-marked relative clauses; however, given the distinct ability of the Dependent marker to occur on entire main clauses (where it indicates emphasis or intent; see §18.2.4.2), the interpretation of these examples as headless relatives can be disputed.

- (68) *tã?ãy tih-ăn noh-d'ak-yæh-b'ay-áh,* [*tih = báb' = ?ãy*
 woman 3sg-OBJ fall-stick.to-FRUST-AGAIN-DECL 3sg=sibling=FEM

ni-?ě-p, *yúp [m'æh = tæh?ín nĩh báb' = ?ãy ni-?ě-p]*
 be-PERF-DEP that.ITG snake=child.mother POSS sibling=FEM be-PERF-DEP
 ‘A woman tried (in vain) to be his lover, (she who) had been her younger sister, (she who) had been the younger sister of Snake’s wife.’ (txt)

- (69) [*mĩh ?ãn no? -?ě-p*]
 Mih 1sg.OBJ give-PERF-DEP
 ‘(This is one that was) given to me by Mih.’ (showing a fishhook) (cv)

The question of why dependent clauses that are in nominative case within the main clause (i.e., *Vp*-marked) occur so rarely as headless relatives is an intriguing puzzle of Hup, especially since their counterparts in other positions within the main clause are very frequently headless. This situation is probably due to the fact that *-Vp*-marked dependent clauses are much more likely to function as adverbials, as illustrated in example (70). Occasionally, this dual function of dependent clauses marked by *-Vp* results in (potential) ambiguity – resembling the synchronically dual function (relative and adverbial) of the ‘adjoined relative clause’ found in many Australian languages (Hale 1976). We return to this issue (and its historical implications) in §18.2.4.1 below.

- (70) [cǝʔ cǝg-ǝp] = mah tih hám-ǎh
 shrimp net-DEP=REP 3sg go-DECL
 ‘She went netting shrimp, it’s said.’ (txt)

Headless relative clauses occurring in non-subject argument positions within the main clause are nominalized by a case marker (Object *-ǎn* or Oblique *-Vít*). These relative clauses are (by definition) entirely headless, and (like those nominalized by Plural =*d’əh*) they lack the Dependent marker *-Vp* (as well as a head noun). The case marker attaches directly to the verb stem, with the Filler syllable *-Vw-* (cf. §15.2.4) appearing obligatorily in the middle. Crucially, these relative clauses *must* occupy the object or oblique position within the main clause in order to receive the corresponding case marker. Headless relative clauses are extremely common in object or oblique positions within the main clause (more common, in fact, than are headed clauses in these positions), in contrast to their rarity in subject position (where they are nominalized by *-Vp* only), as discussed above.

A headless relative clause nominalized by the Object marker is given in example (71). Significantly, the use of the Object marker in the relevant headless relative clauses is required, irrespective of the animacy or number of the referent, whereas differential object marking (whereby singular inanimate nouns are never Object-marked; see §4.3.1.2) applies to most other nouns in Hup; headed relative clauses in object roles are frequently, but not obligatorily, case-marked regardless of animacy. Elsewhere in Hup, the Object marker *-ǎn* appears only as a case marker on nominals (but compare the Directional oblique form *-an*, used both for nominals and in adverbial clauses; see §18.2.6.2).

(71) *yít = mah* *yúw* *hid* [*kit-cəg-nɔh-yæʔ-æw-ən*], *nút*,
 thus=REP that.ITG 3pl cut-make.piece-fall-lie-FLR-OBJ here

tih nuhuytúk wob-d'oʔ-kədham-yíʔ-íh !

3sg hat rest.on-take-pass.go-TEL-DECL

'Then, they say, that piece they had chopped off, here, they stuck it back on like a hat!' (cv)

A headless relative clause nominalized by the Oblique marker is provided in example (72). Note, however, that the Oblique suffix used with relative clauses is a variant of the more standard vowel-copying Oblique form *-Vít*; it appears obligatorily as *-ít*.²⁰³ Some speakers pronounce it consistently as nasal (regardless of the nasality of the stem); others as oral. Elsewhere in Hup, both variants of the Oblique marker (*-Vít* and *-Vw-ít*) attach to the verb stem and form adverbial-type clauses relating to location, time, and manner (see §18.2.6.2 below).

(72) *tih hɔhtəg-ét hám-ǎy*, [*tih = báb' biʔ-ʔé*]-*w-ít*
 3sg canoe-OBL go-DYNM 3sg=sibling work-PERF-FLR-OBL
 'He's going in the canoe, in the one his brother made.' (el)

Other features of the relative clause in Hup apply regardless of nominalization strategy or headedness. Constituent order is generally like that of the declarative clause, but is consistently verb-final (whereas the declarative clause is more variable), with no tacked-on arguments external to the main part of the clause permitted. The order of subject and object in transitive relative clauses depends on their topicality, just as it does in declarative clauses, and subjects are frequently dropped. Most Inner Suffixes can occur in a relative clause (preceding the Dependent marker, plural morpheme, or case marker), e.g., Future/purpose *-teg-* / *-te-*, Habitual *-big-* / *-bi-*, and Venitive *-ʔay-*.

In daily discourse, relative clauses are very common. One common function they serve is to facilitate reference to nameless entities, or provide alternative ways to talk about something. For example, some speakers use the term *ʔin cák-ap = teg* (1pl climb-DEP=THING) 'the thing we climb' in reference to a ladder (in lieu of the borrowed word *sikáda*, from Portuguese *escada*), and a speaker who wants to keep a bag of candy secret from the children might refer to it as *g'əh nǎw-āp = ʔuç* (sweet good-DEP=sack) 'the sweet-tasting sack'.

²⁰³ It is possible that the variant *-ít* is a hold-over from an earlier form of the Oblique marker, that has since been replaced elsewhere by *-Vít*.

The remainder of this discussion presents examples of relative clauses according to the role of the relativized noun within the relative clause – as subject, object, or oblique (the only roles accessible to relativization). Because the different strategies for nominalizing the relative clause may also depend on its role within the main clause (again as subject, object, or oblique) these distinctions will also be reflected in the presentation.

A. Relativized noun is the subject of the relative clause

The examples in this section illustrate the relativized noun's role as the subject of the relative clause. In (73–75), the relative clause is also the subject of the main clause (or refers back to the subject). Note that these examples are headed (although the plural example in 74 is somewhat intermediate); headless relative clauses in main-clause subject position (i.e., nominalized by *-Vp* only) are rare, as discussed above.

- (73) *ʔam = tóg tǎǎh hũh-j'ɔm-túʔ-úh,*
 2sg=daughter offspring hold-bathe-go.into.liquid-DECL

[ʔam mǎh-wɔn-d'əh-ham-ʔǎ-p] = ʔǎy-ǎh
 2sg beat-follow-send-go-PERF-DEP=FEM-DECL
 'Your daughter is bathing her child, (she's) the girl that you beat and drove away.' (txt)

- (74) *[hǎp = kək = cúk d'óʔ] = d'əh, hid bíʔ-ih*
 fish=pull=pole take=PL they make-DECL
 'Those who take (use) fishing poles, they make (them).' (txt)

Note that the Diminutive Intensifier enclitic =*mǎh* can come between the relative clause and Plural =*d'əh* (which here takes the place of both subordinator and [animate] head nominal):

- (75) *tih = d'óʔ = mǎh = d'əh, [ʔíp pǎ] = mǎh = d'əh,*
 3sg=child=DIM=PL father NEG:EX=DIM=PL

hid ʔǎh-yíʔ-ih
 3pl sleep-TEL-DECL
 'The little children, the little fatherless ones, they fell asleep.' (txt)

In examples (76–78), the relativized noun is the subject of the relative clause and the object of the main clause. Headless variants (in which the verb is nominalized by [Filler + case marker]) such as (76) and (78) are common in this main-clause position.

- (76) *[baʔtɨb' ham-ʔeʔ-ní]-ĩw-ǎn ʔám-ǎn ʔǎh ʔid-té-h*
 spirit go-PERF-INFR2-FLR-OBJ 2sg-OBJ 1sg speak-FUT-DECL
 ‘I’ll tell you the one about the evil spirit that was going along.’
 (lit. the evil-spirit-going-along one) (txt)

- (77) *[tɨw bɨʔ]=n'ǎn tɨh mæy-nóʔ-ǔw-ay*
 path work=PL.OBJ 3sg pay-give-FLR-INCH
 ‘So he paid those who worked on the road.’ (txt)

Note that when a headless relative clause has its own internal animate object, this can result in embedding of object-marked nominal forms within the larger utterance:

- (78) *[[tɨh = tǎh = d'əh-ǎn] ciw-ʔé-w-ǎn] mæh-mæy-yóʔ = mah...*
 3sg=offspring=PL-OBJ cook-PERF-FLR-OBJ kill-payment-SEQ=REP
 ‘Having killed in revenge the one who had cooked his children...’ (txt)

Also note that the headless relative clause and the noun to which it refers may both appear in the main clause as independent, appositional noun phrases, as in (79). This is clearly not a headed relative clause, which would appear in the form *pæm-ní-ĩp hɔhɔh* (sit-be-DEP toad), with the head nominal following the Dependent-marked verb phrase.

- (79) *hɔhɔh, [pæm-ní]-ĩw-ǎn, mæh-d'oʔ-yóʔ = mah...*
 toad sit-be-FLR-OBJ beat-take-SEQ=REP
 ‘Having whacked the toad that was sitting there...’ (txt)

In example (80), the relativized nouns are the subjects of the relative clauses and the direct object and recipient, respectively, of a ditransitive main clause:

- (80) *g'áj yǎʔám wɔy-ɔh,* [*g'áj wɔn*]-*ɔw-ǎn-ǎh,*
 cutivara jaguar hold.back.from-DECL cutivara follow-FLR-OBJ-DECL

yǎʔamböʔ-ǎn-ǎh; [*tíh-ǎn kəwǎg d'oʔ-tuʔ-ʔé*]-*w-ǎn-ǎh*
 dog-OBJ-DECL 3sg-OBJ eye take-go.into.liquid-PERF-OBJ-DECL
 'The jaguar protects the cutivara, from the one that follows the cutivara,
 from the dog; (the jaguar protects) the one who put his eyes in for him.'
 (txt)

Finally, the relativized nouns in (81–82) are the subjects of the relative clauses and predicate nominals in the main clauses:

- (81) *ʔǎh [biʔ-hipǎh-ǎp] = ʔíh*
 1sg work-know-DEP=MSC
 'I'm one who knows how to do (this).' (cv)
- (82) [*ʔiníh ʔíd ʔíd-ip*] = *ʔǎy tíh = tíʔ, nɔ-yóʔ...*
 1pl.POSS speech speak-DEP=FEM 3sg=EMPH.TAG say-SEQ
 'Having thought, "this is one who speaks our language!" ...' (txt)

B. Relativized noun is the object of the relative clause

In (83–86), the relativized noun is the object of the relative clause and the subject of the main clause. As expected (*vis-à-vis* the discussion above), case marking on the relative clause (whether headed or headless) corresponds to its role within the main clause, not its role within the relative clause.

- (83) *yúp [hop-yǎh-ǎp] deh = bɔyɔʔ = mah*
 that.ITG immerse-send-DEP water=spider=REP

wægyɔh d'oʔ-ʔáy-áh
 sand take-VENT-DECL
 'So that water-spider who had been sent into the water came up with
 some sand.' (txt)

- (84) [*ʔǎh ʔéy-ep*] = *ʔíh wíd-yé-éh*
 1sg call-DEP=MSC arrive-enter-DECL
 'The one I called entered.' (el)

Either object (direct object or recipient/beneficiary) of a ditransitive relative clause can be relativized:

- (85) [picána yã?ambõ?-ăn d'o?-ham-?ě-p] bĩ? na?-yĩ?-íy
 cat dog-OBJ take-go-PERF-DEP rat die-TEL-DYNM
 'The rat [which the cat brought to the dog] is dead.' (el)

- (86) [yũd ?in j'ek-?ě-p] = ?ǎy na?-yĩ?-íy = mah
 clothes 1pl steal-PERF-DEP=FEM die-TEL-DYNM=REP
 'The woman [from whom we stole clothes] has died, it's said.' (el)

In (87), the relativized noun is not only the object of the relative clause, but also the object of the main clause; it appears as headless and Object-marked:

- (87) tih ychóy-ɔp hidnĩh hɔhóh, [hid key-?é]-w-ăn
 3sg search-DEP 3pl.POSS toad 3pl see-PERF-FLR-OBJ
 'He's searching for their toad, the one they had been looking at.' (txt)

Note, however, that while case marking is obligatory when the headless relative is the main-clause object (as in 88), case marking is *not* required (although it is common even for inanimates) when the relative clause in this position is headed and the referent is non-human (recall that Object marking is elsewhere required only on human objects and is ungrammatical on singular inanimate objects; see §4.3.1.2):

- (88) [?ǎh du-?ě-p] hɔhtěg(-ăn) tih b'uy-d'əh-yĩ?-íy
 1sg trade-PERF-DEP canoe(-OBJ) 3sg throw-send-TEL-DYNM
 'He lost the canoe I had bought.' (el)

In example (89), the relativized noun is the object of the relative clause and the oblique in the main clause; the head nominal is case-marked accordingly:

- (89) wǎn' wót-óy = cud [j'ũg-an yũ
 mingau stir-DYNM=INFR forest-DIR João
 d'o?-ye-?ě-p] tegd'uh tǎh-ǎt
 take-enter-PERF-DEP tree small-OBL
 'She's stirring mingau with the stick that John brought from the forest.'
 (el)

C. Relativized noun is oblique in relative clause

Examples of a relativized noun that is an oblique in the relative clause are given in (90), in which it is also the subject of the main clause, and in examples (91–92), in which it is the object of the main clause. Again, case-marking on the relative clause corresponds to its main-clause role.

- (90) [*tih* = *dó?* *muhũ?*-*bí-p*] *yã?**ambõ?* *bahad-níh*
 3sg=child play-HAB-DEP dog appear-NEG
 ‘The dog with which the child always plays has disappeared.’ (el)

- (91) *tih* *?ǝg-ay-áh,* *yú-uw-ǎn,* *wæd-hup-cíp,*
 3sg drink-INCH-DECL that.ITG-FLR-OBJ eat-RFLX-COMPL

yúp [*hid* *kow’ow’-tu?*-*y’æt-yi?*-*pog-?é*]-*w-ǎn-áh*
 that.ITG 3pl squeeze-go.into.liquid-lay-TEL-EMPH1-PERF-FLR-OBJ-DECL
 ‘He drank it, after (he’d) finished eating, that into which they had squeezed and left (the timbó juice)!’ (txt)

- (92) *tih* = *dó?* [*tih* *muhũ?*]-*ũw-ǎn,* *picána-ǎn,* *máéh-ǎy*
 3sg=child 3sg play-FLR-OBJ cat-OBJ beat-DYNM
 ‘The child hit the one with which he was playing, the cat.’ (el)

In (93), the relativized noun is both an oblique in the relative clause and an oblique in the main clause:

- (93) [*tǝg* *?am* *hũh-?ay-?ǝ-p*] *b’ǝt-ǝt*
 wood 2sg carry-VENT-PERF-DEP roça-OBL
 ‘(She’s) in the roça from which you carried wood.’ (cv)

Finally, in example (94) the relativized noun is an oblique in the relative clause and a predicate nominal in the main clause:

- (94) [*?in* *wáed-ǝp*] = *teg* *yúw-úh*
 1pl eat-DEP=tree that.ITG-DECL
 ‘That’s the tree that we eat from!’ (cv)

18.2.3.1. Other constructions with a relationship to relative clauses

The [relative clause + head nominal] construction in Hup corresponds to the [N1 (modifier) + N2 (head)] structure of a nominal compound. In keeping with this fact, headed relative clauses resemble a sub-type of nominal compound in Hup, in which a bare verb stem (i.e., lacking a Dependent marker) acts as N1 and combines with a noun – often a bound noun – as N2; e.g., *wǎç hod* (boil hole) ‘Boiling Hole’ (cf. §5.1).

Headed relative clauses and [verb + noun] compounds are both functionally and formally similar. Both are nominalizations formed from a verb stem (with or without a Dependent marker) followed by a noun, and both mean, essentially, ‘one who does Verb’. However, the tighter formal integration of the [verb + noun] unit in the compound construction, and its more lexicalized nature, iconically reflect a tighter semantic integration. While a relative clause construction indicates ‘one who does/is doing Verb’, thus reporting a (perhaps incidental) state of affairs involving the head noun, the [verb stem + noun] compound concerns the identity of the head noun: ‘one who always does / is characterized by doing Verb’. Note that a participant that appears as a subject within the relative clause cannot occur within the noun phase in the [verb + noun] compound (and may appear externally only as a possessor). These two constructions are compared in (95–96).

- (95) (a) [*tih g'ět-ep*] = *mɔy*
 3sg stand-DEP=house
 ‘The house where she stays/lives’ (el)
- (b) *tinih g'ět* = *mɔy*
 3sg.POSS stand=house
 ‘The house where she always stays’ (el)
 (i.e., someone, such as an old woman, who stays home all day,
 every day)
- (96) a) [*mɔy hǎp-æp*] = *wa*
 house sweep-DEP=old.woman
 ‘Woman who is sweeping the house’ (el)
- b) *mɔy hǎp* = *wa*
 house sweep=old.woman
 ‘Woman who is always sweeping the house’ (uttered as a joke) (cv)

Note, however, that if a [verb + noun] compound is *inalienably* possessed (in which case the nominal possessor is not followed by the Possessive marker *níh*; compare the alienably possessed form in 95b), the only formal difference between it and a headed relative clause is the lack of the Dependent marker:

- (97) *?in = [ní = wag] j'ób tih way-ní-h*
 1pl=be=day night 3sg go.out-INFR2-DECL
 'On the night of the day that we were there (lit. 'our being-day') he came out.' (txt)
- (98) *núp cǎhdeh wag, yók cǎhdeh, tih = [hám = wag]*
 this rainy.season day otter rainy.season 3sg=go=day
 'This rainy season time, the Otter Rain, its going-days' (across the sky; referring to a constellation) (txt)

Hup has one additional construction that should be mentioned here for the similarity it bears to the headed relative clause. This is the use of the Dynamic suffix *-Vý* as an attributive marker in a small, apparently closed set of semi-frozen nominal compounds, which are formed from the combination of an adjective (or in a few cases another noun) and a noun (see §5.1.4 and §12.2), as in examples (99–100). This results in a construction that is not unlike a relative clause, except that the Dynamic *-Vý* occurs in place of the Dependent marker, and the dependent non-verbal predicate has no accompanying arguments (whereas the relative clause typically has at least a subject within the dependent clause). The use of the Dynamic, an intrinsically verbal morpheme, as an attributive marker may be rather like the 'verbalizing' of a noun or adjective modifier, whereas in a relative clause one 'nominalizes' a verb.

- (99) *cǎ-wag ?ǎh hǒ-ní-íy, [w'éh-éy] = ?ǎy mǐ? j'am...*
 other=day 1sg liver-be-DYNM far-DYNM=FEM UNDER DST.CNTR
 'Sometimes I think: although I am a woman who comes from far away (I am nevertheless living here like this).' (txt)
- (100) *[nu-cǎ?-áy] = n'ǎn ?ǎh hup-?id-muhǔ?-ǔti?*
 this-side-DYNM=PL.OBJ 1sg RFLX-speak-play-EMPH.TAG
 'I am scolded and teased by those who are from around here.' (txt)

18.2.4. Dependent marker -*Vp*

The vowel-copying Boundary Suffix -*Vp* is Hup's most versatile, all-purpose subordinating morpheme. As discussed in §18.2.3 above, it attaches to verb stems and acts as the default nominalizer in relative clauses. In addition to this function, the inflection of a verb stem with Dependent marker -*Vp* can create a dependent clause that functions as an adverbial modifier of the main clause. However, the -*Vp* suffix is not restricted to subordinate clauses, but can also appear as the primary inflection in main clauses, where it serves several functions that in general relate the clause to the larger discourse context. Finally, it can even attach to nominal arguments within the clause, where it functions as a discourse marker relating to topicality (cf. §7.1.5). The adverbial and main-clause functions of -*Vp* are discussed in the following sub-sections.

18.2.4.1. *Dependent marker and dependent clauses: adverbial function*

The use of the Dependent marker to form a dependent clause contributing adverbial information is illustrated in examples (101–103) below. The Dependent-marked verb here functions as a converb, defined by Haspelmath (1995: 3) as “a nonfinite verb form whose main function is to mark adverbial subordination”. As is common among converb constructions cross-linguistically, the main and dependent clauses in Hup usually share a single subject, which is implicit in the dependent clause (although the rare exception occurs); furthermore, they frequently have different objects (in this, they contrast with verb compounds in Hup, which can have different underlying subjects – when causative – but no more than one object.) The dependent clause lacks any conjunction bearing temporal or circumstantial information, and is normally (though not obligatorily) fronted. As the examples below illustrate, this clause-combining strategy with Dependent marker -*Vp* usually expresses coordinated, simultaneous events, in which the dependent clause provides a contextual frame for the main event and contributes information relating to manner, purpose, etc.

- (101) [děh hón-ǝp]=mah, tih káy-éy tih-ǎn-ǎh
 water vomit-DEP=REP 3sg see-DYNM 3sg-OBJ-DECL
 ‘While (ritually) vomiting water, he saw her (reflected in the water), it’s said.’ (txt)

- (102) *yikán* *nǎé* [*cɔkw'ət* *ʔid-níh-ĩp*] *nǎé*
 over.there NEG:R Tukano speak-NEG-DEP NEG:R

[*portugéc* *wiʔ-níh-ĩp*], *yikán* *ʔǎh* *wid-ham-ní-h*
 Portuguese hear-NEG-DEP over.there 1sg arrive-go-INFR2-DECL
 'There, neither speaking Tukano nor understanding Portuguese, there I arrived.' (txt)

- (103) *d'úʔ* *ʔǎh* *ʔót-óh*, [*b'ót-an* *g'et-g'óʔ-op*] *ʔǎh* *ʔót-óh*
 afternoon 1sg cry-DECL roça-DIR stand-go.about-DEP 1sg cry-DECL
 'I cry in the afternoon, I cry while walking in the roça.' (txt)

Where the subordinated clause relates to purpose, the coordinated events may be conceived as involving succession (with temporal overlap), rather than simultaneity:

- (104) *tíh* *cák-áy*, [*cadakǎʔ* = *típ* *d'óʔ-op*]
 3sg climb-DYNM chicken=egg take-DEP
 'He climbed up to get the chicken egg.' (el)

- (105) *tíh* = *tǎhʔíp* = *b'ay* [*hǒp* *kók-əp*] *hám-ǎh*
 3sg=child.father=AGAIN fish pull-DEP go-DECL
 'As for her husband, (he) went to fish.' (txt)

Historical note

This function of the Dependent marker to indicate a converbal clause is almost certainly related historically to its function in relative clauses (see Epps 2007c). As the discussion in §18.2.3 above illustrates, while Dependent-marked relative clauses may occasionally be headless when the nominal referent is obvious from the pragmatic or discourse context, they are almost always headed; in other words, singular headless relative clauses in nominative case are almost entirely absent from Hup. It is plausible that the Dependent-marked clause was once used exclusively as a headless relative, but over time developed an adverbial function, and that this new function has all but supplanted the earlier one.

Several features of Hup grammar provide evidence that the headless relative clause of the form [Verb-*Vp*] is indeed historically related to the adverbial use of the same construction. In addition to their identical structure, such a transition would explain the otherwise puzzling distribution of headless relative

clauses within the main clause: as noted above, they are extremely rare as subjects of the main clause or as predicate nominals (which requires them to take the form [Verb-*Vp*]), but are ubiquitous as objects (and to a lesser extent as obliques) in the main clause (where they are directly inflected with the nominalizing case-markers Object *-ǎn* and Oblique *-ít*, which replaces the Dependent marker; see §18.2.3 above). Converbial clauses and singular headless relatives in nominative case are effectively in complementary distribution.

An important clue to this historical transition comes from plural-marked clauses. As discussed in §18.2.3 above, relative clauses – which are nominals by definition – can be formed via the addition of the Plural marker =*d’əh* directly to the verb stem (usually for animate referents only, cf. §4.4.1). The Plural marker accordingly acts as a kind of (pseudo-) head nominal (akin to a bound noun), and can completely replace both the Dependent marker and any head nominal that would be present in the singular form.²⁰⁴ An identical pattern occurs in converbial clauses: where the converbial clause with a singular subject is formed via [Verb-*Vp*], its counterpart with a plural (animate) subject is formed via [Verb=*d’əh*]:

- (106) *ʔin wid-ham-bí-ay-áh, [j’ák=b’ək kód]=d’əh, koʔap b’ək*
 1pl arrive-go-HAB-INCH-DECL buriti=mud pass=PL two swamp
 ‘We always arrive (there), (upon) passing the buriti-swamps, two swamps.’ (txt)

Moreover, the interpretation of the *plural*-marked dependent clause tends to be ambiguous between a relative clause (again, in nominative case only with respect to the main clause) and a converbial clause. Both readings are easily available in the following examples. In many cases, the discourse context indicates which reading is preferable – the adverbial reading if the referent has already been introduced, the relative reading if it has not; for this reason, the relative interpretation is most accessible in (108), the adverbial in (109). However, as these examples show, there is no formal distinction and either reading is possible.

- (107) *ʔecáp cóʔ hid nǎn-ay-áh, [híd=n’ǎn máxh]=d’əh-əh*
 tomorrow LOC 3pl come-INCH-DECL 3pl=PL.OBJ kill=PL-DECL
 ‘The next day they arrived, those who (would) kill them.’
 ‘The next day they arrived, in order to kill them.’

²⁰⁴ For example (as discussed in §18.2.3), the singular relative clause *kéy-ep=ʔih* ‘a man/person who sees’ would become the plural *kéy=d’əh* ‘those who see’.

- (108) [*deh = hi-wáy hám*] = *d'əh yúp, hɔpkǎk,*
 water=FACT-go.out go= PL that.ITG fish.pull

mɔmb'ɔk hid tɔn-hám-ǎh
 iron.pot 3pl hold-go-DECL

→ 'Those who go out in the igapó, they bring along fishhooks and pots.'
 'Going out in the igapó, they bring along fishhooks and pots.' (txt)

- (109) *mɔy m'æc-yí?-íy j'ám ?ín-ǎh,*
 house stuff-TEL-DYNM DST.CNTR 1pl-DECL

[*tíh-ǎn tɔ?ɔh-wid-d'ób*] = *d'əh-ay*

3sg-OBJ run-arrive-go.to.river=PL-INCH

'We all squeezed into the house, we who had fled from him toward the river.'

→ 'We all squeezed into the house, (after) fleeing from him toward the river.' (sp)

This kind of ambiguity between a relative clause and an adverbial was probably once a general feature of the singular [Verb-*Vp*] dependent clauses as well. Over time, however, Hup speakers presumably came to favor the converbal interpretation, and came close to abandoning the relative clause interpretation. However, perhaps in part because of the lower frequency of the plural construction in discourse, in part because of its more overtly nominal form (given that the Plural marker is associated with nouns elsewhere in the language), the ambiguity remained in those clauses inflected with the plural marker – which are freely used both as relative and converbal clauses. As mentioned in §18.2.3 above, this kind of ambiguity between an adverbial interpretation and a relative interpretation of a single construction has a cross-linguistic parallel: The 'adjoined relative clause' found in a number of Australian languages exhibits much the same kind of phenomenon (Hale 1976).

While this interpretation of a historical relationship between the converbal and the relative-clause uses of the Dependent marker accounts for most of the data, it is interesting to note that speakers do occasionally use the *-Vp* Dependent marker on adverbial-type dependent clauses even when these have a plural subject, as in example (110). The most likely explanation for this apparent discrepancy is that the converbal realization of the Dependent marker has (at least marginally) attained the status of an autonomous adverbial, independent of the relative clause. In fact, as the following discussion (§18.2.4.2) will illustrate, the grammaticalization has not stopped there, but has moved beyond the bounds of the sentence and into the discourse.

- (110) *j'əb-tæ-yi?* *d'oʔ-g'et-d'óʔ-op,* *nút hid hi-číp-čh*
 night-still-TEL take-stand-take-DEP here 3pl FACT-COMPL-DECL
 '(After) setting it in (the pot to cook) in the morning, they finish here'
 (points to sky to indicate noon). (txt)

18.2.4.2. Dependent marker and main clauses

Verbal predicates marked with the *-Vp* Dependent marker are not limited to dependent clauses, but can also head main clauses. As such, they appear to perform a range of functions.

The choice of the Dependent marker over another Boundary Suffix appears in some cases to signal the activity in question to be a goal or intention. The utterance in (111), for example, is a statement of purpose, vis-à-vis the speaker's present activity of walking down to the stream. As seen above, this use of a Dependent-marked clause as a purpose adverbial is common when it is subordinate to a main clause; this example could be interpreted in the same way, but with the main clause elided.

- (111) *j'óm-šp,* *ʔáh-čh*
 bathe-DEP 1sg-DECL
 'I'm going for a bath.' (cv)

In other cases, the function of the Dependent marker is less clear; it is particularly frequent with emphatic and evaluative statements, and in some cases appears to mark the utterance as topical or relatively presupposed in relation to the larger discourse or pragmatic context. In (112), the statement relates to some Hup girls' wanting to accompany me to the US; in (113), to a young man's failure to participate in the rush to prepare vines for sale to an approaching river boat.

- (112) *níŋ-ăn tih tən-ham-pog-té-p,* *cún'!* *ham-pog-tég níŋ-áh ?!*
 2pl-OBJ 3sg hold-go-EMPH1-FUT-DEP INTERJ go-EMPH1-FUT 2pl-FOC
 'She really will take you all along! Would you all really go?!' (cv)

- (113) *níŋ j'čip-d'oʔ-yi?* *níŋ = hin!* *tih = pæcæw mɔ?* *ʔam j'čip-níh-čp !*
 2pl tie-take-TEL.IMP 2pl=also 3sg=youth UNDER 2sg tie-NEG-DEP
 'You all tie up (the cipó vines), you all too! Even though you're young you're not tying (them) up!' (cv)

The most likely explanation for the use of the *-Vp* marked verb phrase in both dependent and main clauses is a historical one: the Dependent-marked clause has probably migrated out of the sentence and into the discourse. Mithun (1999: 267) observes that for Native American languages generally, “a not uncommon historical change is a gradual increase in the use of dependent verb forms in independent sentences”. This development, which Evans (2007) terms ‘insubordination’, is also common in languages in other parts of the world. Examples include the use of the infinitive in imperative clauses in German, Italian, and other European languages (Evans 2007: 366), and the occurrence of the Central Alaskan Yup’ik subordinative suffix in connected speech, especially narrative, where it marks *pragmatic* (rather than syntactic) linkage among clauses within the higher-level discourse unit (Mithun 1999: 267).

In Hup, the discourse-level use of the Dependent suffix is relatively infrequent in narrative, but very common in conversation. Use of this form in main clauses is probably an extension of its use to mark adverbial clauses (see §18.2.4.1 above); in this context, the adverbial dependent clause is typically framed by the event referred to in the main clause. In conversation, however (as opposed to narrative), this ‘framing’ activity may be recoverable from the pragmatic context; in other words, the frame is already obvious to the addressee and does not need to be explicitly stated. Over time, speakers’ choice to leave the main clause inexplicit and state only the dependent clause would have led to reanalysis of the Dependent verb form as appropriate in main clauses. Functionally, too, there is still some overlap; compare the purpose-related use of the *Vp*-marked main clause in example (111) with that of the *Vp*-marked adverbial clauses in examples (104–105) above. Other functions of the *-Vp* marked main clause in Hup resemble some of those indicated by Evans (2007) as typical of ‘insubordination’ cross-linguistically, particularly the expression of presupposition and speaker attitudes relating to emphasis, evaluation, and intention.

With a plural subject, the Dependent marker is typically replaced by the Plural suffix =*d’əh* in main clauses (as in example 114, which also relates to purpose), just as it is in dependent (adverbial and relative) clauses (see the discussion in §18.2.4.1 above). It is possible that such a historical transition, whereby relative clauses taking the plural marker move step by step out of a dependent relationship and into the discourse where they function as main clauses, could be one of the mechanisms by which languages develop number agreement on verbs.

- (114) *‘máy, kéy = d’əh !*
 let’s.go see=PL
 ‘Come on, let’s go see!’ (cv)

A clause marked with the *-Vp* suffix and acting as a main clause can itself occur in a coordinated relationship – as opposed to a dependent relationship – with another main clause. In this case, the conjunction *minih* ‘also’ signals that the combination is one of coordination, rather than subordination, of a *Vp*-marked dependent clause.²⁰⁵ Examples of this conjunction have been attested only in elicitation, and are limited to coordination involving Dependent-marked clauses.

- (115) *pátima b'óy-op hám-áy, bóda tác-ap minih*
 Fatima learn-DEP go-DYNM ball kick-DEP ALSO
 ‘Fatima is going to to study (to school), and she will also
 (i.e., afterwards) play ball.’ (el)

- (116) *hám-áy, yúb d'up-?ay-nŋ, dög b'žt=d'əh minih*
 go-INCH.IMP cipó pull.vines-VENT-COOP vapisuna cut.down=PLALSO
 ‘Let’s go, we’ll pull cipó vines, and also cut down vapisuna (to get the
 fruit).’ (el)

18.2.4.3. Further uses of the Dependent marker: appearance on nominals

The Dependent marker has still other functions. In addition to occurring on the predicate of a main clause, the suffix *-Vp* can also occur on nominal constituents. The clause-final subject of a main clause is a common target; as discussed in §17.2, subjects that follow the verb in the declarative clause are obligatorily marked with a suffix, most commonly the Declarative *-Vh*, but also the Dependent *-Vp*. When the clause-final subject noun phrase takes the Dependent marker, this always requires a marker of focus or contrast (i.e., Focus *-áh* or related forms) to appear on the preceding predicate (cf. §15.2.3). Note that the Dependent marker *-Vp* is stressed when it appears on clause-final subjects, whereas in most other environments it is unstressed. The use of the Dependent marker in this context is probably related to the topic-marking function it serves with other nominal constituents within the clause, but it also appears to be associated with emphasis, as it often is on clause-final predicates.

²⁰⁵ A possible etymology of *minih* is a deverbalization of *mi-* (which currently exists as a dialectal variant of the Factitive prefix *hi-*) plus the verb root *nih-* ‘be like’.

- (117) *náw = yi?* *tok-póg = hə?*, *các*,
 good=TEL pound-EMPH1=TAG2 INTERJ

?əg-na?-pó-y = cud-áh *?ám-áp !*
 drink-lose.consciousness-EMPH1-DYNAM=INFR-FOC 2sg-DEP
 ‘Pound (the coca) carefully, darn it, you’re drunk!’ (cv)

- (118) *n’íp g’ét-ep = wəd-áh* *cáw-áp !*
 that stand-DEP=RESP-FOC other-DEP
 ‘That other old fellow standing there’ (serve drink to him!) (cv)

- (119) *yī-nih-pó-y* *j’áh* *?in-íp !*
 that.ITG-be.like-EMPH1-DYNAM DST.CNTR 1pl-DEP
 ‘It was thus for us too!’ (cv)

Elsewhere, the Dependent marker *-Vp* occurs on individual nominal arguments in other positions within the main clause, as in examples (120–121). These are often either fronted or post-posed (as antitopics), and may be marginally removed from the main clause by a slight pause; as such they may be restated in the main clause as a pronoun. Here the Dependent suffix is best understood as a topic marker, as discussed in §7.1.5.

- (120) *g’əg = təh-əp*, *táh wəd = hɔb-ɔt = mah* *tih* *hib’áh-atih*
 bone=son-DEP tapir food=HOLLOW-OBL=REP 3sg be.created-EMPH2
 ‘So as for Bone-Son, they say he was born in a cow-trough’ (txt)

- (121) *?áh-áp* *híd-ən = yi?* *nó-ýy* *j’ám-ti?*
 1sg-DEP 3pl-OBJ=TEL say-DYNAM DST.CNTR-EMPH.TAG
 ‘As for me, I said (so) to them.’ (cv)

The highly promiscuous nature of the Dependent marker is such that in certain cases it can actually appear on every constituent of a clause. This phenomenon has been observed only in relatively emphatic conversational contexts:

- (122) *ʔáh-ǎp ʔəg-naʔ-m'uy-níh j'ám-ǎp,*
 1sg-DEP drink-lose.consciousness-do.a.lot-NEG DST.CNTR-DEP
- ni-d'ǎh-əp dóʔ=d'əh-əp ʔəg-náʔ-ǎy j'ám-ǎp !*
 this-PL-DEP child-PL-DEP drink-lose.consciousness-DYNM DST.CNTR-DEP
 'As for me, I didn't get very drunk on that occasion, but as for those
 children, they did get drunk then!' (cv)

As a final note to this section, an idiosyncratic form *-áp* (with a fixed lexical vowel [a]) is encountered in the Tat Deh dialect (in addition to the Dependent marker *-Vp*, which also exists). The form *-áp* may bear a relationship to the Dependent marker, and could perhaps be a reduced form of Focus *-áh* + Dependent *-Vp* (although at this point this is purely speculative). Speakers from Barreira say that the equivalent emphatic form in their dialect is *páh-áp* (Proximate contrast particle + Dependent marker *-Vp*):

- (123) a) Tat Deh dialect:

ʔáh-ǎp ham-tég-áp !
 1sg-DEP go-FUT-FOC.DEP?
 'I'm going (too)!' (cv)

- b) Barreira dialect:

ʔáh = hin ham-tég páh-áp !
 1sg=also go-FUT PRX.CNTR-DEP
 'I'm going too!' (el)

18.2.5. Complementation and the Nominalizer *-n'ih*

The nominalizing Boundary Suffix *-n'ih*²⁰⁶ attaches to verb stems and produces a dependent clause. This clause typically acts as a complement, but can also function as an adverbial or a relative clause.

Although they are nominalizations, clauses formed by *-n'ih* do not take nominal morphology in general, such as distinctions of case and number. Other than the occasional appearance of the Declarative marker (in its capacity relating to clause coordination), *-n'ih* is not followed by other Boundary Suffixes;

²⁰⁶ The suffix *-n'ih* takes rising tone; both it and the preceding syllable of the stem are stressed.

however, it can be preceded by Inner Suffixes and by some consonant-initial Boundary Suffixes, such as Perfective *-ʔeʔ-*, Negative *-níh*, and Future/purpose *-teg*.

The following examples illustrate the use of *-n'ǎh* to form a complement clause. As in these examples, complements involving *-n'ǎh* almost always act as objects of the main clause. In (124–125) *-n'ǎh* produces a nominalization relating to the action or state described by the verb:

- (124) *ʔāh hipāh-níh*, [*náw ʔam ʔid-n'ǎh*]-ǎh
 1sg know-NEG good 2sg speak-NMZ-DECL
 'I didn't know you spoke (Portuguese) so well!' (cv)

- (125) [*tíh tʔʔóh-n'ǎh*] ʔāh *tuk-níh = hō*
 3sg run-NMZ 1sg want-NEG=NONVIS
 'I don't want him to run (away).' (el)

In addition to acting as objects of the matrix clause, as in the examples above, clauses nominalized with *-n'ǎh* can also act as subjects. However, this function is much more limited. The most common context for such subject nominalizations is a negative clause in which the predicate is the Negative Existence particle *pǎ*, which occurs strictly with nominal subjects in Hup:

- (126) *hōpkǎk d'oʔ-g'ět = d'əh*, *hid ham-yíʔ-ǎh*,
 fish.pull take-stand=PL 3pl go-TEL-DECL

ʔayup miníŋ = yíʔ, [*cǎʔāh ham-tég-n'ǎh*] *pǎ = yíʔ*
 one straight=TEL other.side go-FUT-NMZ NEG:EX=TEL
 'Those who set down fishhooks, they go (along), just straight ahead,
 there is no going from side to side.' (txt)

- (127) [*nʔ-tég-n'ǎh*] *pǎ*, *núp mandukodí-iw-ǎh*
 say-FUT/PURP-NMZ NEG:EX this Mandukori-FLR-DECL
 'He has nothing like that to say, that Mandukori.' (cv)

Nominalizations formed with *-n'ǎh* also occasionally act as subjects in other contexts, such as the following predicate adjective clause:

- (128) *ʔám = báb' dób-tǎn*, *dób díʔ = mǎh* [*ʔam d'oʔ-ye-tǎʔ-n'ǎh*]
 2sg-sibling many-CONDmuch VDIM=DIM 2sg take-enter-CNTRFCT-NMZ
 'If you had many siblings, what you bring in would be a lot.' (txt)

A *-n'ǎh* nominalization can also occur outside the clause or on its periphery, as well as acting as a core argument of the main clause. In (129), for example, *-n'ǎh* creates a preposed nominal topic, which is restated as an oblique (pronoun) in the main clause:

- (129) [*ʔin key-hipāh-níh-n'ǎh*], *tíh-ít nɔʔ-níh bíg ʔin n'ǎh-ǎh*
 1pl see-know-NEG-NMZ 3sg-OBL give-NEG HAB 1pl CNTR-DECL
 ‘Our not being able to read, with this (it) doesn’t go right (give) for us.’
 (sp)

In addition to forming action/state nominalizations, complement clauses with *-n'ǎh* can also resemble relative clauses. When they denote entities or objects that participate in the nominalized clause (examples 130–131), they are semantically like headless relatives, and function much like Hup’s ‘true’ headless relative clauses (§18.2.3 above). The main differences between the two strategies are that headless relatives of the type described above are specific and usually definite (i.e., they refer to a particular entity), and they typically encode the animacy and number of this entity via the Object and Plural markers. Complements with *-n'ǎh* functioning as headless relatives, on the other hand, typically have generic referents, and refer to an idea, a way of doing something, a mass or generic entity, etc. Unlike the more canonical relative clauses discussed above, which must take a case marker when in an object or oblique role within the main clause, this is never the case with *-n'ǎh* clauses, which also do not encode number.

- (130) [*ʔāh wiʔ-ʔéʔ-n'ǎh*], *ʔāh ʔid-té-h*
 1sg hear-PERF-NMZ 1sg speak-FUT-DECL
 ‘That which I heard, I will tell.’ (txt)

- (131) [*dóʔ=d'əh, yaʔamhǒʔ=d'əh y'ǎʔ-n'ǎh*], *b'uy-d'əh-yíʔ*
 child=PL dog=PL defecate-NMZ throw-send-TEL.IMP
 ‘What dogs or kids defecate, throw (it) out (of the living area).’ (el)

Note that a sentence may involve multiple, embedded nominalizations marked with *-n'ǎh*:

- (132) [[*hĩ-ní-n'ǎh*] *ʔam tɔn-næn-ʔéʔ-n'ǎh*], *ʔam pahá-áh*
 only-be-NMZ 2sg hold-come-PERF-NMZ 2sg share-DECL
 ‘Whatever it was you brought, you shared.’ (txt)

When they stand in for a nominal referent, *-n'ǎh* nominalizations are occasionally followed by a bound or classifying noun in a nominal compound construction, as in (133). In this case, *-n'ǎh* forms a headed relative clause, in which it acts much like (and is often interchangeable with) the Dependent marker *-Vp*.

- (133) [*ʔāh d'óʔ-n'ǎh*] = *g'æt=yíʔ tih d'óʔ-óh*
 1sg take-NMZ=LEAF=TEL 3sg take-DECL
 'He took the same book that I took.' (el)

While nominalizations with *-n'ǎh* usually appear in the place of nominal arguments, they can also form adverbial clauses relating to manner or time, as in (134–136). The use of *-n'ǎh* with an adjective root in (134) is consistent with the generally verb-like nature of adjectives in Hup (cf. §10.1).

- (134) [*cípmæh-n'ǎh*] *yok-hi-g'et-yóʔ = mah, tih = tit*
 little-NMZ poke-FACT-stand-SEQ=REP 3sg=string

pǒg-ót tih yók-ay-áh
 big-OBL 3sg poke-INCH-DECL
 'Having poked him out in a small way, he poked him with a big strand (of thorns)!' (txt)

- (135) [*ʔam há-m-n'ǎh*], *hǒhtǔg-ét há-m*
 2sg go-NMZ canoe-OBL go.IMP
 '(Since) you're going, go by canoe.' (el)

- (136) *yúp hǔyʔah [j'ób nǎn-n'ǎh], [wædó*
 that.ITG after night come-NMZ sun

nǒh-cud-yé-ay-n'ǎh] = mah, tíh-ǎn baʔtǔb' ye-yíʔ-ay-áh
 fall-be.inside-enter-INCH-NMZ=REP 3sg-OBJ spirit enter-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'So after this, at nightfall, when the sun was going down, they say, an evil spirit came to her (house).' (txt)

Nominalizations with *-n'ǎh* are also found in appositional expressions with nouns, typically forming independent, sub-clausal units like those in (137–139). This strategy is used when providing an explanation or additional information about an entity, particularly when the addressee is not familiar with the referent when it is first named.

- (137) *mũh*, [*hũ* *mæh-n'ĩh*]
 arrow animal kill-NMZ
 'An arrow; what animals are killed with' (el)
- (138) *mǎh*, [*hid* *g'íg-n'ĩh*]
 inambu 3pl shoot.arrow-NMZ
 'An inambu; what they shoot' (cv)
- (139) *yā?ám* *cǎhdeh*, [*hid* *nó-n'ĩh*]
 jaguar rainy.season 3pl say-NMZ
 'Jaguar-rain, as they call it' (cv)

Finally, the nominalizer *-n'ĩh* also occurs as a bound element with demonstratives, especially those referring to mass or generic nouns (see §6.3): *ní-n'ĩh* 'this (mass), these'; *n'í-n'ĩh* 'that (mass), those'; *yĩ-n'ĩh* 'that (mass), those (intangible)'; *hĩ-n'ĩh* 'what'; *cǎ-n'ĩh* 'another (mass)'.

18.2.6. Dependent clauses contributing adverbial information

While the discussion in the preceding sections has focused mainly on Hup's strategies for creating dependent clauses that can function as core arguments of the verb, this section deals with the range of dependent clauses that act as adjuncts. There is a considerable emphasis on temporality in Hup, by which dependent clauses relate to the simultaneity or sequence of events. However, a number of these adjunct strategies are multifunctional; several have spatial as well as temporal functions, and a few also act to relate the proposition to the wider discourse context. In addition, Hup has a dependent clause construction for expressing the reason for an event.

Several other types of dependent adverbial-type expressions have been discussed earlier in this chapter or in previous chapters. As we saw above, the Dependent marker *-Vp* can form adverbial (converbal) clauses relating to simultaneous (or temporally overlapping), coordinated events (§18.2.4), and the Nominalizer *-n'ĩh* can convey information in a dependent clause relating to time or manner of the event (§18.2.5). Conditional expressions with the verbal suffix *-tǎn* (§14.1) also function as dependent (adjunct) clauses, as do purpose adverbials involving *-teg* (§13.1). Finally, Hup's simple adverbial expressions that do not involve clause linking are discussed in §10.2.

The verbal suffixes to be discussed in this section, all of which are used to form adverbial-type dependent clauses, are summarized in Table 48:

Table 48. The principal adverbial clause markers in Hup

Function	Form	Gloss
Simultaneity:		
same time/place	- <i>V́t</i>	Oblique case marker
prolonged duration	- <i>an-ay</i>	Object? marker + Inchoative
at moment of	- <i>kamí</i>	moment of
at time of, physically/conceptually separate	- <i>mǎʔ</i>	‘Under’ (also appears as a locative postposition)
Sequential	- <i>yóʔ</i>	Sequential
Spatial:		
at place of	- <i>V́t</i>	Oblique case marker
under	- <i>mǎʔ</i>	‘Under’
in direction/at place of	- <i>an</i>	Directional case marker
Reason	<i>keyóʔ</i>	Cause
General adverbial function (marginal)	= <i>yíʔ</i>	‘Telic’ (elsewhere a marker of telicity on verbs)

18.2.6.1. Adverbial (Telic) =*yíʔ* with adverbial clauses

The adverbial function of the form =*yíʔ* (elsewhere a Telic suffix on verbs [§12.6] and a contrastive emphasis marker on nominals [§7.1.2]) has already been encountered in §10.2, which focuses on its use in non-clausal adverbial expressions. This section examines the use of =*yíʔ* in marking an entire clause as an adverbial. Encliticized =*yíʔ* appears on a number of adverbial clauses – including, but not limited to, those that have no other morphological indicator of their adverbial status – but in most cases is to some degree optional.²⁰⁷

Adverbial or ‘Telic’ =*yíʔ* can optionally attach to the end of an converbal clause marked as such by the Dependent marker -*Vp* (cf. §18.2.4.1), as in examples (140–141). In these examples, =*yíʔ* may function partly to contribute contrastive emphasis semantics to the adverbial expression, much as it does

²⁰⁷ As noted elsewhere, the connections among the many overlapping functions of *yíʔ* are extremely complex and not yet fully understood; for this reason I have simply glossed it as ‘Telic’ in all its manifestations. Note that =*yíʔ* appears to be sensitive to word-level stress patterns; it is unstressed when it follows a stressed syllable, but stressed following an unstressed syllable.

when associating with nominal arguments within the clause, but it also helps to clarify the clause's adverbial status:

- (140) [tíh-ǎn ?éy-ep] = yí? tíh wid-ye-yí?-íh
 3sg-OBJ call-DEP=TEL 3sg arrive-enter-TEL-DECL
 'He entered, calling her.' (el)
- (141) ?édia = b'ay [?ag-ná?-ǎp] = yí? háam-ǎh
 Elias=FOC drink-lose.consciousness-DEP=TEL go-DECL
 'Elias went while drunk.' (cv)

When the adverbial clause marked with the Dependent marker *follows* the main clause – a non-canonical position (in contrast to the above examples, where it precedes the main clause) – it is usually marked with Telic = *yí?*, and some consultants even judge this extra adverbial marker as near-obligatory here. In this context, = *yí?* apparently functions primarily to mark the dependent clause as adverbial vis-à-vis the preceding main clause, despite their atypical order. This is the case in example (142) (in which = *yí?* also occurs on several other adverbial expressions within the same utterance).

- (142) yít = yí? ?am hót?ah = yí? ?am = ?in nǎh b'ót-óh,
 thus=TEL 2sg beyond=TEL 2sg=mother POSS roça-DECL
- [?am kéy-ep] = yí?
 2sg see-DEP=TEL
 'Thus in front of you will be your mother's roça, as you've seen it (before).' (txt)

The marker = *yí?* has a similar adverbial-marking function in (143), in which it occurs on (otherwise morphologically unmarked) adverbial expressions that *follow* the main clause, including an adverbial formed from the predicative negative particle *pǎ*.

- (143) hǒpkǎk d'o?-g'ět = d'əh, híd ham-yí?-íh,
 fish.pull take-stand=PL 3pl go-TEL-DECL
- [?ayup miníŋ] = yí?, [cǎ?ǎh ham-tég-n'íh pǎ] = yí?
 one straight=TEL other.side go-FUT-NMZ NEG:EX=TEL
 'Those who set down fishhooks, they go (along), just straight ahead, without going from side to side.' (txt)

Finally, the form *=yɨʔ* also regularly occurs (though is not absolutely obligatory) on adverbial expressions involving negation. This is especially common in negative imperative expressions, in which the imperative mood and the negation cannot be expressed in the same predicate; usually, therefore, the negative must be realized as an adverbial, and the imperative is marked on the ‘dummy’ main verb *ni-* ‘be’, as in (144) (cf. §17.5.1). However, *=yɨʔ* can mark a variety of other negative adverbial expressions as well, as in (145–146) (*=yɨʔ* also appears in its verbal telic function elsewhere in these examples).

(144) *ham-nih =yɨʔ nih !*
 go-NEG=TEL be.IMP
 ‘Don’t go!’ (cv)

(145) *big-nih =yɨʔ b’uy-d’əh-yɨʔ*
 long.time-NEG=TEL throw-send.away-TEL.IMP
 ‘Throw it out right away.’ (el)

(146) *ham-nih =yɨʔ ni-tubud-yɨʔ-iy !*
 go-NEG=TEL be-EMPH-TEL-DYNM
 ‘(I) never go at all!’ (txt)

18.2.6.2. *The case-marked clause as an adverbial*

As the discussion in §18.2.3 above illustrates, Hup’s Object and Oblique case markers can combine directly (together with the Filler syllable) with verb stems to form headless relative clauses. This section focuses on the similar ability of verb stems to take either of the two oblique case markers (Oblique *-V̇t* and Directional *-an*) to form adverbial clauses relating to the place, time, or even manner of the event. Such an adverbial clause is not switch-reference sensitive; it and the main clause may have either the same or different subjects.

Unlike oblique headless relative clauses (which take the combination of Filler *-Vw-* and the Oblique variant *-iṫ*), most adverbial clauses involving the generic Oblique marker use the standard form *-V̇t*, which occurs elsewhere on nouns to indicate comitative, locational, or instrumental relationships (cf. §4.3.4). Consultants do not usually accept the *-Vw-iṫ* form with adverbial clauses, whereas it is the only form possible with oblique headless relatives (§18.2.3). However, the *-Vw-iṫ* variant is optionally possible for adverbials in some cases, as the examples below illustrate. It may be that a historical connection exists between the two types of Oblique-marked dependent clause – the headless relative in oblique position in the main clause and the adverbial clause

relating to time and location – just as a connection appears to exist between the headless relative in main-clause subject position (marked with *-Vp*) and the formally identical adverbial clause, discussed above (§18.2.4.1).

Adverbial clauses formed from the combination of the generic Oblique marker *-V̂t* (or *-Vw-ît*) and a verb stem are quite common in Hup. One function of these relates to location, as examples (147–149) illustrate; this is in keeping with the locative function of *-V̂t* as a case marker on nouns. In the following examples, the *-Vw-ît* variant chosen by the speaker in (147) is judged to be interchangeable with *-V̂t* by consultants, but they claim *-V̂t* to be the only possibility in (148–149).

- (147) *tih wɔn-hám-ay-áh, té [tod pög g'et-pó-ow-ît] = mah*
 3s follow-go-INCH-DECL until hollow big stand-EMPH1-FLR-OBL=REP
 ‘He followed (it), to (the place) where a big hollow tree stood, it’s said.’
 (txt)

- (148) *cɔp-yóʔ, té [ciwĩb nɔwá = mí hid nɔ-ǫ̂t],*
 go.from.river-SEQ until bacaba sprout=creek 3pl say-OBL

ʔin tuh-d'oʔ-bí-h

1pl pause-take-HAB-DECL

‘We went up from the river, until we stopped to rest, as always, at (the place which) they call Bacaba-sprout Creek.’ (txt)

- (149) *hǫ̂p pǫ̂ʔ-ót ʔāh g'āʔ-g'oʔ-ʔě-h,*
 fish dabacuri-OBL 1sg be.suspended-go.about-PERF-DECL

[húp pǫ̂-ǫ̂t], j'ǫ̂g kakǫ̂h-an

person NEG:EX-OBL forest between-DIR

‘I used to live in (the place called) Fish-Dabacuri, where there are no people, in the middle of the forest.’ (txt)

Examples (150–153) illustrate the use of the [Verb-*V̂t*] construction to form temporal adverbials relating to simultaneity. This use presupposes not only the same time, but also the same location, and may plausibly represent an extension of the locative function of the case-marker *-V̂t*.

- (150) *yúp = mah* [*tih cæg-pæ-æt*] = *mah*, *d'ób = n'ăn*
 that.ITG=REP 3sg net-go.upriver-OBL=REP acara=PL.OBJ

tih kək-w'ob-pæ-ní-h, *húp = ?ih-íh*
 3sg pull-set-go.upriver-INFR2-DECL person=MSC-DECL
 'Thus, it's said, (at the time) when she was going upstream netting
 (shrimp), he was fishing acará fish and setting them out for her, a man.'
 (txt)

- (151) [*j'ík tih cih-wí?-ít*] = *mah* *tih na?-yí?-ih*
 smoke 3sg scent-hear-OBL=REP 3sg die-TEL-DECL
 '(At the moment) when she smelled the smoke, it's said, she died.' (txt)

- (152) [*wðh = d'əh ?ăn hid ?id-ít*] *?ăh ?id-bí-h*
 River.Indian=PL 1sg.OBL 3pl speak-OBL 1sg speak-HAB
 'I always speak (Tukano) (at the times) when the River Indians speak to
 me.' (txt)

- (153) *tðh = n'ăn* [*?ăh key-ét*], *g'íg-íy*
 pig=PL.OBJ 1sg see-OBL shoot.arrow-DYNM
 'I shot pigs, (at the times) when (I) saw them.' (txt)

The Oblique adverbial construction can also relate to manner and purpose, as in (154–158). Both the *-Vw-ít* and the *-Vt* variants of the Oblique marker are used in these examples.²⁰⁸

- (154) [*yúp = yi? níh-íw-ít*] *tih ?ey-yəhəy-ní-h*
 that.ITG=TEL be.like-FLR-OBL3sg call-search-INFR2-DECL
 'In this way he went calling and searching.' (txt)

- (155) [*yúp tih ?əg-ná?-ăw-ít*] = *yi? = mah* *tih*
 that.ITG 3sg drink-die-FLR-OBL=TEL=REP 3sg

?ðh-kəðham-yi? ní-ay-áh
 sleep-pass.go-TEL be-INCH-DECL
 'So, in his drunkenness (poisoned state), he fell immediately to sleep.'
 (txt)

²⁰⁸ Their potential for interchangeability here is not clear.

- (156) [*nukán hid hitoy?-d'ó?-ót*], *híd-ăn*
 over.here 3pl FACT:carry.on.head-take-OBL 3pl-OBJ

g'əç-tuk-yó? = *mah*, *yít tih = báb' = n'ăn*, *yít tih ?id-ih*
 bite-want-SEQ=REP thus 3sg=sibling=PL.OBJ thus 3sg speak-DECL
 'So that they would carry him on their heads, since he wanted to bite them, he spoke thus to his kinsmen.' (txt)

- (157) *?əg-ót hid dóh-op*, [*hup-hipāh-nih hid ni-té*]-*t*
 drink-OBL 3pl enchant-DEP RFLX-know-NEG 3pl be-FUT-OBL
 'They put a spell into the drink, so that they would be (made) senseless.'
 (txt)

Hup's second oblique marker *-an* 'Directional' (an unstressed form that is probably related historically to the Object marker *-ăn*; see §4.3.2) also combines with verb stems to form dependent clauses, as in the following examples. In keeping with its function with lexical nouns, *-an* with dependent clauses indicates a location or directional goal. The Filler syllable *-Vw-* is ungrammatical here.

- (158) *té [tih ní-an] = mah hid d'ó?-wid-yé-éh*
 until 3sg be-DIR=REP 3pl take-arrive-enter-DECL
 'They led (him) to the place where he (evil spirit) lived, it's said.' (txt)

- (159) *teghõ = ?ăy = wa j'ám ?in-ăn b'oy-cum-ni-yăh-ăh*,
 fire=FEM=old.woman DST.CNTR 1pl-OBJ teach-begin-be-FRUST-DECL

[*n'ikán ?in ní-an*], [*yiyiw deh-an ?in ní-an*]
 over.there 1pl be-DIR ant.sp. water-DIR 1pl be-DIR
 'A non-Indian woman began to teach us (in vain), there where we lived, where we lived at *Yiyiw* Ant Creek.' (txt)

- (160) [*tíw deh hid nɔ-an*], *bi?-g'o?-?ay ní-píd-ih*
 Brazil.nut water 3pl say-DIR work-go.about-VENT be-DIST-DECL
 'We went to work at the place they call Rio Castanha.' (txt)

What is apparently the same form (Directional marker *-an*) also occurs in a number of extended expressions in Hup (see §4.3.3), two of which can appear with dependent clauses in an adverbial function. The more common of these is the form *-an-ay*, which combines Directional *-an* and the Inchoative aspect suf-

fix *-ay*,²⁰⁹ and – like adverbial *-an* on its own – attaches directly to the verb stem. It indicates simultaneity where events are concurrent for a relatively long period of time (i.e., ‘during, while’), and it implies that the event described in the main clause is initiated during the course of the event described in the adverbial clause. The focus of this construction is on the *duration* of the event or state, and it is therefore inherently Dynamic (compare *kamí* ‘at the moment of’, which focuses on a point in time and is inherently perfective; §18.2.6.5 below). Adverbial clauses with *-an-ay* are illustrated in examples (161–162):

(161) *yikán* *bǃg* [*ʔāh ní-an-ay*] *yúp*,
over.there long.time 1sg be-DIR-INCH that.ITG

yĩ-n'ǃh *wiʔ-yóʔ* *ʔāh* *ʔid-ay-áh*
that.ITG-NMZ hear-SEQ 1sg speak-INCH-DECL
‘During the long time I was there, having heard these (Portuguese and Tukano), I began to speak (them).’ (txt)

(162) *kək-w'ob-pæ-yóʔ* [*té tih = g'ætʔóh-an-ay*] = *mah*,
pull-set-go.upriver-SEQ until 3sg=end-DIR-INCH=REP

tiyĩʔ = b'ay *key-d'ob-g'et-ní-ay-áh*
man=AGAIN see-go.to.river-stand-be-INCH-DECL
‘Having fished while going upriver, as she was reaching the end, a man was standing (on the bank) looking down at her.’ (txt)

Another adverbial expression involves the combination of *-an*²¹⁰ and the Emphatic Coordinator =*nih*. This form signals a goal on which another action is dependent; it is extremely limited in my corpus:

(163) [*ʔin kək-d'óʔ-ǎn = nih*], *ʔin há-m-ǎh*
1pl pull-take-DIR=EMPH.CO 1pl go-DECL
‘When we catch something (while fishing), we’ll go (home).’ (el)

²⁰⁹ The combination of nasal and oral morphemes yields the pronunciation [anday].

²¹⁰ It is not clear whether this is the Object or the Directional marker, but the question may be essentially meaningless if the two are in fact historically related (see §4.3.3).

18.2.6.3. Sequential *-yóʔ*

The Sequential marker *-yóʔ* creates a dependent clause and indicates a temporal succession of events. It is almost always followed by a main clause; only under extremely limited circumstances can a Sequential clause stand alone in relation to the wider discourse context. Clause combination with the Sequential is switch-reference-sensitive in that the same subject is strongly preferred for both clauses. Because the dependent clause does not act as either a modifier or an argument of the main clause, this strategy is probably best considered to involve cosubordination, and specifically clause-chaining (or perhaps incipient clause-chaining), rather than subordination proper.

Formally, Sequential *-yóʔ* is a consonant-initial Boundary Suffix, and can be preceded by most Inner Suffixes. Other Boundary Suffixes are ungrammatical in combination with *-yóʔ*, including the verbal Negative suffix *-níh*; thus when Sequential *-yóʔ* occurs with a negative predicate, it requires a copular host (cf. 173 below).

Use of the Sequential is very common in Hup, particularly in narrative (although less so in the Umari Norte dialect). In the conventional narrative strategy, a dependent Sequential clause is commonly followed by a main clause, in which the verb takes the Inchoative plus Declarative inflection *-ay-áh* (i.e., a form of progressive aspect). In the following sentence, this main clause may be resummarized with the Sequential, and the next event introduced as the new main clause (see also the discussion in §12.3). Clause combination of this kind involving the Sequential is illustrated in the following examples:

- (164) *“hǎʔ”, nɔ-yóʔ, tíh-ǎn tíh yók-ay-áh*
 OK say-SEQ sg-OBJ 3sg poke-INCH-DECL
 ‘Having said ‘all right’, he poked him.’ (txt)

- (165) *yí-cóʔ tíh = tǎhʔín-ǎn mǎh-yíʔ-yóʔ,*
 that.ITG-LOC 3sg=child.father-OBJ kill-TEL-SEQ

wíd-cóp-ów-ay = mah, *tíh = tǎhʔín-ǎn = b’ay*
 arrive-go.from.river-FLR-INCH=REP 3sg=child.mother-OBJ=AGAIN

tíh mǎh-b’ay-áh
 3sg kill-AGAIN-DECL
 ‘Having killed the husband, he came up from the river, it’s said, and then he killed the wife!’ (txt)

- (166) *yúp wid-yé-ay-yóʔ, “húptok niŋ bíʔ !*
 that.ITG arrive-enter-INCH-SEQ caxiri 2pl work.IMP

ʔǎg niŋ bíʔ !” hid nɔ-píd-íh
 drink 2pl work.IMP 3pl say-DIST-DECL
 ‘(The jaguars) having entered, “you all make caxiri! make drink!” they all were saying.’ (txt)

In narrative, a new event is often simply prefaced with the formulaic *yĩ-nih-yoʔ* (that.ITG-be.like-SEQ) ‘so with that’, as in (167). In example (168), a child used this formulaic expression to prompt her distracted grandmother to go on with a story.

- (167) *yĩ-nih-yóʔ, “hi-nih-íy tih?” nɔ-yóʔ = mah j’áh,*
 that.ITG-be.like-SEQ Q-be.like-DYNM3sg say-SEQ=REP DST.CNTR

tih ʔɔt-kədcɔp-yíʔ-ay-áh
 3sg cry-pass.go.from.river-TEL-INCH-DECL
 ‘So with that, having said “what happened?” she came quickly up from the river crying.’ (txt)

- (168) *yĩ-nih-yóʔ táʔ ?*
 that.ITG-be.like-SEQ REL.INST
 ‘And after that?’ (cv)

While a dependent Sequential clause is almost always followed by a main clause of some kind, this may be no more than the ‘light’ or ‘dummy’ verb *ni-be*. This verb forms a kind of default main clause when no other verb is readily available to the speaker (cf. §18.2.2):

- (169) *yawăç tih w’ób-óh, tók cɔʔ-d’oʔ-kədcɔp-yóʔ*
 titi.monkey 3sg set-DECL belly gut-take-pass.go.from.river-SEQ

ní-íy tih w’ób-óh
 be-DYNM 3sg set-DECL
 ‘She placed the monkey (on the jirau), after having gutted it and come up from the river she placed it...’ (txt)

The dependent Sequential clause is almost always followed by the main clause; however, there are one or two examples in my corpus of the reverse

order, as in (170). While this would seem to be an argument against normal clause-chaining, this reversal of clause order involving the Sequential is quite rare in Hup, and it is possible that the very few examples like (170) could be explained as an afterthought on the part of the speaker.

- (170) *tih pɛʔ-éy, húptok ʔəg-yóʔ*
 3sg sick-DYNM caxiri drink-SEQ
 ‘He’s sick, after drinking caxiri.’ (cv)

As noted above, use of the Sequential also usually requires the same subject for both clauses. However, there seem to be a few exceptions to this rule as well (but note that the *topical* participant remains the same):

- (171) *naʔ-hipāh-nih g’āʔ-hi-ham-yóʔ,*
 die-know-NEG be.suspended-FACT-go-SEQ

pǎç = wəd tíh-ǎn... d’ũç g’óʔp-ay-áh
 paternal.uncle=RESP 3sg-OBJ timbó serve-INCH-DECL
 ‘(The old man) having lain for a long time in his hammock without knowing how to die, Uncle served him timbó (poison).’ (txt)

The Sequential can occur in Interrogatives, although examples of this usage are limited. For example, the Sequential form ‘having wanted what’ is used to mean ‘for what reason?’ in (172) (also see the use of causal *keyóʔ* (*key-yóʔ* [see-SEQ]) in interrogatives; §18.2.6.6 below).

- (172) *ʔeckóda ham-yíʔ-íy pah-áp háy-áh, hocinéa-áh,*
 school(Pt) go-TEL-DYNM PRX.CNTR-DEP um-DECL Rosinea-DECL

hī-n’ih tuk-yóʔ ? nɔ-kǎm
 Q-NMZ want-SEQ say-IMP2
 ‘That what’s-her-name, Rosinea, went to school; for what reason, say?’
 (sp)

Example (173) illustrates the incompatibility of the dependent Sequential clause with verbal negation; negative predicates require copular *ni-* ‘be’, as a coordinated predicate, to host the Sequential.

- (173) *wiʔ-níh ni-yóʔ ʔin bʼay-té-ay-áh*
 hear-NEG be-SEQ 1pl return-FUT-INCH-DECL
 ‘Having understood nothing, we’d return.’ (cv)

Like negative clauses, predicate nominal clauses also require copular *ni-* to host the Sequential, which cannot attach directly to the predicate nominal itself (cf. §17.3.3.1). However, there is at least one exception to the primarily verbal identity of Sequential *-yóʔ*: it can follow nominal forms that take the Oblique case (as a locative), to mean ‘having gone to / been at X’:

- (174) *tát deh-ét-yóʔ, cãw-yucé-an tih ham-té-h*
 taracúá.ant water-OBL-SEQ São-José-DIR 3sg go-FUT-DECL
 ‘Having been at Tat Deh, he’ll go to São José.’ (el)

18.2.6.4. *Simultaneity and concession with -mĩʔ*

The Boundary Suffix *-mĩʔ*, like Sequential *-yóʔ*, attaches to verb stems to form dependent clauses, and is also considered to involve clause-chaining (cosubordination) rather than subordination proper. Where Sequential *-yóʔ* favors the same subject in the linked clauses, use of Simultaneous *-mĩʔ* reveals a strong preference for different subjects; this appears semantically natural, since two simultaneous actions are normally more likely to be performed by two different people than by the same person.

As a Boundary Suffix on verbs, the form *-mĩʔ* contributes the adverbial sense of temporal simultaneity (‘at the same time as’) or concession (‘even though, in spite of’). As a marker of concession, it can also occur as a free particle, and can appear in main clauses and even associate with predicate nominals. The same form *mĩʔ* also occurs as a locative postposition with nouns, where it has the spatial sense ‘under’ (see §10.3.1); note that it is glossed ‘UNDER’ in its verbal use as well.

As an indicator of temporal simultaneity, the verbal Boundary Suffix *-mĩʔ* entails that the simultaneous events be relatively dissociated from one another; this distinguishes *-mĩʔ* from the other verbal markers relating to simultaneity discussed in this chapter. This dissociation of events is often physical – i.e., the events are interpreted as occurring in different locations – but it can also be conceptual, relating to a lack of cooperation or coordination between the actors despite the simultaneity of the action. For example, *-mĩʔ* is used when an event is kept secret from someone by virtue of that person’s involvement in a distinct and simultaneous event – as in (175) below, where the mother kept the fact that she had taken a deer spirit as a husband secret from her children, by sending

them out to bathe in the morning so that her husband could leave the house unseen. Similarly, the children later take advantage of their mother's bathing to beat timbó, in order to make the poison that they will use to get rid of their unwanted stepfather (example 176).

- (175) *yí-níh-míʔ = mah* *tih* “*níŋ j'om-ʔáy tǎh*”
 that.ITG-be.like-UNDER=REP 3sg 2pl bathe-VENT.IMP offspring

no-d'əh-d'ob-yiʔ-píd-ih

say-send-go.to-river-TEL-DIST-DECL

‘While this happened (i.e., her husband the deer spirit left the house), it’s said, she would always send them to the river, saying “go bathe, children.”’ (txt)

- (176) *j'om-əp* *tih* *kədd'əb-míʔ = mah,* *d'ǔç*
 bathe-DEP 3sg pass.go.to.river-UNDER=REP timbo

hid *tətəd-d'óʔ-óy = mah*

3pl beat.timbo-take-DYNM=REP

‘While she (their mother) went down to bathe, they beat the timbó (to release the poison), it’s said.’ (txt)

The physical dissociation of events or situations is also apparent in example (177), where the speaker is setting up a virtual map (illustrated with marks in the dirt) to describe the location of a town:

- (177) *nút* *ʔũhníy* *cíʔ* *deh* *hayám* *ní-míʔ,*
 here maybe slug creek town be-UNDER

nu-cóʔ *ʔũhníy-ay* *yúw-úh,* *wáʔah* *cóʔ*

here-LOC maybe-INCH that-DECL other.side.of.water LOC

‘While Slug Creek Village is about here, it (Avocado Creek Village) is about here, on the other side.’ (cv)

The ‘concessive’ use of *-míʔ* (cf. Thompson and Longacre 1985: 198) – apparently an extension of its temporal function into the discourse context (see below) – creates adverbial-type clauses meaning ‘in spite of, although’:

- (178) *nĩ* *báb' = d'əh hid ní-mĩʔ,* *ʔāh pæ-yíʔ-íh*
 1sg.POSS sibling=PL 3pl be-UNDER 1sg go.upriver-TEL-DECL
 'Although my brothers were there, I went (back) upstream.' (txt)

Formally, the concessive use of Hup *-mĩʔ* is considerably more flexible than its simultaneous use. In particular, the concessive clause marked by *-mĩʔ* need not be fully dependent on an accompanying main clause. In (179), for example (reportedly said when someone is seen eating something that they have claimed to habitually not eat), although the *-mĩʔ* clause is adjacent to a main clause, it marks a concession vis-à-vis the larger discourse context. That is, it seems to be acting not so much as a dependent clause marker, but rather as an adversative conjunction strategy meaning 'nevertheless, in spite of this'.

- (179) *tih tíh-íy = cud,* *wǎd-mĩʔ = cud !*
 3sg lie-DYNDM=INFR eat-UNDER=INFR
 'She's lying, apparently; she's eating (it) nonetheless, apparently!' (ru)

Similar uses of *-mĩʔ* are illustrated in examples (180–181). In (180), a young girl was responding to my question, 'your father's not here?'; in (181), the narrator of a tale makes a meta-comment about her stumbling over the Tukano words spoken by the Deer Spirit, when this character is first introduced:

- (180) *pǎ ... tih ní-mĩʔ*
 NEG:EX 3sg be-UNDER
 '(He's) not here... he's around, though.' (cv)

- (181) *yúp ʔāh d'əh-d'əh-ham-níh diʔ-kodé,*
 that.ITG 1sg send-send-go-NEG VDIM-VDIM2

wǎh ʔíd-mĩʔ = cud ʔũhníy yǎh yúw-úh
 River.Indian speak-UNDER=INFR.EPIST FRUST that.ITG-DECL
 'I didn't manage that very well, but he did speak Tukano, apparently.'
 (txt)

In other uses, concessive *mĩʔ* appears as a free particle, rather than as a verbal Boundary Suffix, and again is not limited to dependent clauses. In (182), it occurs in a main clause and *follows* the Dynamic marker, whose Boundary Suffix slot in the verb it would normally occupy:

- (182) *hám-ǎy mǎʔ ʔin-ǎh, ʔam káy-tǎn*
 go-DYNM UNDER 1pl-DECL 2sg see-COND
 ‘We’re making progress, actually, if you look closely.’ (cv)

As a particle, concessive *mǎʔ* can even follow a predicate nominal, which normally behaves as a dependent clause:

- (183) *tih=pæcǎw mǎʔ ʔam j ʔp-nǎh-ǎp !*
 3sg=youth UNDER 2sg tie-NEG-DEP
 ‘Even though you’re young you’re not tying (the vines) up!’ (cv)
- (184) *cǎ-wag ʔǎh hɔ-ní-ǎy, w’éh-éy=ʔǎy mǎʔ j’ám...*
 other=day 1sg liver-be-DYNM far-DYNM=FEM UNDER DST.CNTR
 ‘Sometimes I think: although I am a woman from far away (I am nevertheless living here like this).’ (txt)
- (185) *dohʔǎy mǎʔ = cud = mah, tih-ǎn yǎ nih-ní-h !*
 Curupira UNDER=INFR=REP 3sg-OBJ that.ITG be.like-INFR-DECL
 ‘It was actually Curupira, apparently, that did this to her, it’s said!’ (txt)
- (186) *núh b’ǎyiʔ-ay mǎʔ = mah, tih ʔid-ǎh*
 head only-INCH UNDER=REP 3sg speak-DECL
 ‘Although only a head, he spoke.’ (txt)

Finally, *-mǎʔ* (used as a verbal Boundary Suffix) also has an additional, distinct idiomatic function: it occurs in a main clause, together with the Distributive form *pǎd* (a marker of iterative or durative aspect, see §12.9.1), and the resulting construction implies that the activity (usually one involving goal-oriented movement) requires a relatively long time to carry out. While it is not really clear whether this idiomatic use is linked more directly to the temporal or the concessive realizations of *-mǎʔ*, the expression of doing a single activity for a long time may include a sense of the potential for numerous other events to occur during this period, and thus bear some relation to simultaneity.

- (187) *ʔéw' hɔy ʔin wid-d'ób-óh, ʔin pǎ-mǐʔ*
 bird.sp. pool 1pl arrive-go.to.river-DECL 1pl go.upriver-UNDER

píd, cínku ʔóra ʔin bahád-áh
 DIST five(Pt) hour(Pt) 1pl appear-DECL
 'We went down (from the forest) to Bird-Pool; we took a long time coming upstream, at 5:00 we appeared (home).' (txt)

- (188) *wag-hi-yǎť tih = hayám-an wǎcncɔhg'ǎʔ-yǎťh-ǎw-ǎh, mmm,*
 day-FACT-lie 3sg=town-DIR encounter.path-FRUST-FLR-DECL (going noise)

teʔ ! hayám hæyó ʔin hám-mǐʔ píd, kǎdham-yǐʔ-ay-áh
 until town middle 1pl go-UNDER DIST pass.go-TEL-INCH-DECL
 'At dawn we would go out into the city, (going noise), until! we'd eventually go through the whole center of the town, and pass through it.'
 (cv)

There is little doubt that the simultaneous and concessive uses of *-mǐʔ* involve polysemy. Such an overlap is highly plausible typologically; for example, English exhibits a similar overlap between concession and simultaneity in the adverbial expression 'while'. Furthermore, examples can be found in Hup in which the temporal and concessive uses overlap; here the semantics of *-mǐʔ* as 'during' or 'in spite of' is vague or ambiguous, as in (189–191). The use of *-mǐʔ* to mark simultaneity was probably historically prior to its use as a marker of concession, as suggested by the relative formal flexibility of the latter use.

- (189) *páy-mǐʔ cak-yóʔ...*
 bad-UNDER climb-SEQ
 'Having climbed up, despite/while feeling bad...' (txt)

- (190) *deh d'ǒj-mǐʔ, kǎd hid táw-áy*
 water rain-UNDER bench 3pl carry.together-DYNM
 'They were carrying a bench while it was raining/despite the rain.' (cv)

As noted above, the form *mǐʔ* has an additional use as a locative postposition with the spatial sense 'under' (cf. §10.3.1):

- (191) *hɔhtěg mǐʔ*
 canoe under
 'under the canoe'

This spatial use is probably also related historically to the temporal and concessive uses of this form. Such a link among spatial and temporal (as well as more abstract) meanings already has considerable precedence in Hup. For example, certain other locative postpositions double as time adverbials, such as *hǔyʔah* ‘behind’ and ‘after’, and *kótʔah* ‘in front’ and ‘before’; also compare the use of Distributive *píd* as both a quantifier (relating to quantities of entities) and a marker of verbal aspect (relating to repeated instances of an event) (cf. §6.5.2 and §12.9.1), and the use of the Oblique case marker *-Vít* to mark both location (of entities) and adverbial clauses relating to time (simultaneity) (cf. §4.3.4 and §18.2.6.2). Moreover, a connection between spatial ‘under’ and temporal simultaneity is arguably semantically motivated: If time and space are both viewed linearly, then two things that are placed one atop the other are occupying the same point in space (from a two-dimensional, horizontal perspective); likewise, two activities going on simultaneously are occupying the same slot in time.

18.2.6.5. Simultaneous temporal adverbial *-kamí*

The form *-kamí* produces a dependent clause meaning ‘at the moment of’. Like most of the other bound forms discussed here, it occurs as a verbal Boundary Suffix, although it is not limited to verbal hosts.

The verb phrase marked with *-kamí* indicates a specific point in time that has been reached when the main clause event begins to take place, as examples (192–194) illustrate. The event in the dependent clause is thus viewed perfectly, rather than as a state with a prolonged duration or a dynamic event with internal structure. Note that verbs marked with *-kamí* normally receive no other inflection (including Inner Suffixes).

- (192) *cé* *gʔi*, *ʔāh* *tɔn-kamí*, *ʔāh = ʔín*
 six(Pt) summer 1sg hold-moment.of 1sg=mother

ʔān *naʔ-yiʔ-ní-h*
 1sg.OBJ die-TEL-INFR2-DECL

‘When I was six years old, my mother died on me.’ (txt)

- (193) *tih cog-kamí = mah yúp “kótʔah ʔāh*
 3sg gather.in-moment.of that.ITG in.front 1sg

d’ob-yu-té-h, ‘má’y !’ nó-ǎy = mah
 go.to.river-wait-FUT-DECL let’s.go say-DYNM=REP
 ‘When she was putting (manioc) into her basket, “I’ll go ahead down to the river and wait; let’s go!” he said.’ (txt)

- (194) *nút ʔāh ni-kamí = mah, ʔāh = ʔín ʔǎn*
 here 1sg be-moment.of=REP 1sg=mother 1sg.OBJ

b’uy-d’óh-óh; ʔāh cípmæh = tæ’n
 throw-send-DECL 1sg little=MEAS2
 ‘When I was this size, my mother abandoned me; when I was small.’ (txt)

In addition to occurring with verbs, *-kamí* can occur with a noun to form an adverbial phrase, as in *menénda-kamí* ‘at school lunch time’ (from Portuguese *merenda escolar* ‘school lunch’), or even with an interrogative:

- (195) *hĩ-n’íh-kamí ʔam dapúh j’íp-ĩ?*
 Q-NMZ-moment.of 2sg hand tie-INT
 ‘On what date did you get married?’ (cv)

18.2.6.6. Reason adverbial *keyóʔ*

Hup forms adverbial clauses expressing reason with the particle *keyóʔ*, which follows a fully inflected verb (i.e., one that receives a Boundary Suffix, usually Dynamic *-Vý*). This ‘Reason’ adverbial is clearly derived from the Sequential form of the verb ‘see’, *key-yóʔ* ‘having seen’ (i.e., a dependent clause), but it appears to be grammaticalizing into a single fused particle. This particle is now (at least marginally) morphosyntactically associated with the preceding verb, and cannot in these cases be considered a dependent clause in its own right.

The particle *keyóʔ* itself marks a larger adverbial clause (formed from the inflected verb + *keyóʔ*), which relates to the reason behind an event. This unit is dependent on a main clause, which expresses the event itself, as in examples (196–198). It also occurs in the interrogative expression *hĩníykeyóʔ* (*hĩ-níh-ĩy key-yóʔ* [Q-be.like-DYNM see-SEQ]) ‘why, for what reason?’.

- (196) *yít [tíh ʔót-óy keyóʔ] = mah tíh = ʔíp tíh-ăn*
 thus 3sg cry-DYNM CAUSE=REP 3sg=father 3sg-OBJ
hăyʔah cóʔ d'óʔ-way-g'et-yíʔ-íh
 outside LOC take-go.out-stand-TEL-DECL
 'So [because (the child) cried] her father put her outside, it's said.' (txt)
- (197) *[yi-níh-íy keyóʔ] = cudʔúh hid d'ob-yíʔ-ay = ʔíh*
 that.ITG-be.like-DYNM CAUSE=INFR.EPIST 3pl go.to.river-TEL-INCH=MSC
 '[Because of this], apparently, they went down to the river.' (txt)
- (198) *[tíh wíç-íy keyóʔ] = mah, "ʔűy cáp ʔúh tiyíʔ pǎ-ăt*
 3sg whistle-DYNM CAUSE=REP who INTS1 EPIST man NEG:EX-OBL
ʔăn wíç-g'et-g'óʔ-oʔ páh ?" nót-óy = mah
 1sg.OBJ whistle-stand-go.about-INT PRX.CNTR say-DYNM=REP
 '[Because/seeing that he had whistled], "who can it be, while I am
 without a man, that is going about whistling for me?" she said, it's said.'
 (txt)

In an adverbial phrase involving a noun, the 'Reason' particle does double duty as a true verbal form *key-yóʔ* ('having seen'), and the noun is inflected as the object of the clause – evidence that the distinction between Reason adverbial and Sequential verb form is minimal. An example is 'because of you':

- (199) *patí, ʔám-ăn keyóʔ ʔin ni-yíʔ-íh*
 Pattie 2sg-OBJ CAUSE 1pl be-TEL-DECL
 'Pattie, because of you we stayed.' (lit. 'having seen you we stayed.')

Similarly, to express 'because of seeing', use of the additional verb 'see' is optional:

- (200) *dóʔ = n'ăn (kéy-éy) key-yóʔ, tíh təw-wáy-áh*
 child=PL.OBJ (see-DYNM) see-SEQ 3sg scold-go.out-DECL
 'Because he saw the children, he became angry.' (el)

This 'Reason' adverbial use of *key-* 'see' is largely limited to the Sequential form of the verb, but not completely; for example, an annoyed person said (201)

– using the Dependent-marked form of ‘see’ in a ‘reason’ sense – to an intruding dog:

- (201) *hĩ-n’ĩh káy-ep ʔam yé-eʔ ?!*
 Q-NMZ see-DEP 2sg enter-INT
 ‘What did you come in for?!’ (lit. ‘What did you come in to see?!’) (cv)

18.2.6.7. *Temporal/spatial adverbial particle té*

Hup has only one adverbial particle that precedes the clause, while the rest all follow it and usually appear as verbal suffixes. This is the temporal/spatial adverbial *té*, ‘until, up to’, which marks a point that is reached when describing movement through space or time. A free particle, *té* typically precedes either a place name or a dependent clause:

- (202) *kəd-yiʔ ní-íy, ʔin kəd-kədham-yiʔ-bí-ay-áh,*
 pass-TEL be-DYNM 1pl pass-pass.go-TEL-HAB-INCH-DECL

té nút wædhɔ ní-n’ĩh
 until here sun be-NMZ

‘We passed beyond it, (as) we always pass it, until the sun was here.’
 (txt)

In narrative, Hup speakers frequently pronounce *té* with special emphasis, usually involving higher intensity and pitch, a dramatic pause following the word, and often an emphatic final glottal stop:

- (203) *yít hi-g’et-yóʔ hid ham-ní-ĩp = b’ay, tɛʔ ! bedné !*
 thus FACT-stand-SEQ 3pl go-be-DEP=AGAIN until(EMPH) Belem
 ‘So having stayed there, they went on again, until! (they got to) Belém!’
 (txt)

The particle *té* is almost certainly a borrowing from Portuguese *até* ‘until’, and probably entered Hup via Tukano. One consultant who is reasonably fluent in Portuguese sometimes uses Portuguese *até* interchangeably with *té*. The same form *te* also occurs in Tariana (cf. Aikhenvald 2003a) and Tukano (Ramirez 1997b: 187).

Appendix I

Texts

1. Introduction

The texts included here represent a range of genres: traditional tales, conversation, spells, and songs. All were recorded in the villages of Tat Deh and Barreira Alta. The Hup verbal tradition is still relatively strong, and traditional stories and songs are expertly told and sung by young as well as old people; the narrators of the texts given here represent this range of ages. Once recorded, the texts were transcribed and translated with the indispensable help of Hup consultants. The original recordings of several of the texts reproduced here can be heard on the audio CD accompanying this volume.

A remarkable feature of traditional verbal art in the Vaupés is the widespread occurrence of the same themes and styles all around the region and beyond, regardless of the language in which the texts appear. Given the regional multilingualism, texts move fluidly from one language group to the next. The same stories are told and retold in Tukanoan, Arawak, and Hup villages – as illustrated by the story of Curupira given below, which according to the narrator was told by Tukanos to her Hup relative many years before. Similarly, the narrator of the spell text included here was said to have spent considerable time as a boy among Tukanos, from whom he learned a number of spells (which he now delivers in Hup). The melodies and themes of the songs are likewise very similar across language groups, as discussed below.

2. Traditional tales

Text 1:

Baktǎb' b'öyn'ǎn kəkəp pinǎŋ ‘The Spirit Who Fished for Traira’

Told by Isabel (Kök) Salustiano, Tát Deh (Taracúa Igarapé), October 2001.

This tale deals humorously with the theme – widespread in Amazonia – of the disjunct between the world of spirits and the world of humans. The recorded text is included on the accompanying CD.

Yúp = mah yúp baktǎb' = ?ǎy-ǎn = mah ?ayǔp = ?ih yoh-ní-íy.
 that.ITG=REP that.ITG spirit=FEM-OBJ=REP one=MSC affine-be-DYNM
 ‘So, it’s said, there was a man who had taken a spirit woman as a wife.

Yúp ?ayǔp = ?ih, yoh-ní-íp = mah yúp, tih hám-ǎh,
 that.ITG one=MSC affine-be-DEP=REP that.ITG 3sg go-DECL
 That man, the one who was thus affinally related, it’s said, he went

tih = yǒh = n'ǎn wát-ap. Yúp tih = yǒh = d'əh máh-an
 3sg=affine=PL.OBJ go.visiting-DEP that.ITG 3sg=affine=PL near-DIR
 visiting his affinal relatives (spirits). He went visiting to where his affinal

wat-hám-ǎp = mah yúp, háy máh yúw-úh, baktǎb'
 go.visiting-go-DEP=REP that.ITG um near that.ITG-DECL spirit
 relatives lived; he arrived to where the, um, where

máh-an wid-hám-ǎh. Baktǎb' = ?ǎy-ǎn = mah yúp tih tón-ǒh,
 near-DIR arrive-go-DECL spirit=FEM-OBJ=REP that.ITG 3sg hold-DECL
 the spirits were. He had a spirit woman as a wife,

húp-up = ?ih-íh.
 person-DEP=MSC-DECL
 this man (did).

Yúp = mah yúp “b'öy ?in kək-?ay-nǎŋ !” nɔ-yó? = mah,
 that.ITG=REP that.ITG traira 1pl pull-VENT-COOP say-SEQ=REP
 ‘So, it’s said, having said “Let’s go fish for traira together!”’

tih = yǒh-ǎn tih tɔn-hám-ǎh, yúp húp-up = ?ih-ǎn,
 3sg=affine-OBJ 3sg hold-go-DECL that.ITG person-DEP=MSC-OBJ
 he (the spirit relative) took his affinal relative along, (took) that man,

baktǐb'-ǐh, tih = yǒh-ǎn. yikán = mah b'ob'öd-ót = mah
 spirit-DECL 3sg=affine-OBJ over.there=REP forest.clearing-OBL=REP
 the spirit (did), (took) his affinal relative. It was out there in a forest clearing,²¹¹

yúw-úh, b'ob'öd-ót = mah yúp b'öy = n'ǎn tih kák-śh.
 that.ITG-DECL forest.clearing-OBL=REP that.ITG traira=PL.OBJ 3sg pull-DECL
 in a forest clearing, it's said, he fished for traira.

Bǐ? = n'ǎn = mah yúp tih hǎ?-?ě-h, cǎ?-át
 rat=PL.OBJ=REP that.ITG 3sg search.inside-PERF-DECL root.clump-OBL
 He (the spirit) searched out rats (for bait)²¹² with his hands, searched (them) out

hǎ?-?ě-h, yúp baktǐb'-ǐh. "B'öy = n'ǎn ?in kək-nǐŋ-ay!"
 search.in-PERF-DECL that.ITG spirit-DECL traira=PL.OBJ 1pl pull-COOP-INCH
 in clumps of roots, (did) that spirit. "Let's go fish for traira!"

Yúp = mah yúp yi-d'śh, hǎy = d'əh, yǎ?ám = d'əh yǎěh = mah
 that.ITG=REP that.ITG that.ITG-PL um=PL jaguar=PL FRUST=REP
 'So, it's said, those (the spirit's traira fish) were, um, jaguars

?in-ǎn-ǎw-ǎh! Yǐnih-mǐ? = mah yúp tǐh-ǎn-ǎp,
 1pl-OBJ-FLR-DECL that.ITG.be.like-UNDER=REP that.ITG 3sg-OBJ-DEP
 for us (humans)! At the same time, it's said, for him,

baktǐb'-ǎn-ǎp, b'öy = d'əh g'śh-ní-h.
 spirit-OBJ-DEP traira=PL be-INFR2-DECL
 for the spirit, they were traira fish.

²¹¹ A *b'ob'öd* is a naturally occurring forest clearing, caused by a certain species of tree (*b'ob'öd = teg*) that poisons the ground around it, killing the neighboring plants.

²¹² Traira fish of course do not eat rats.

“*Tih = tæh = d’əh j’áh* *widnæn-kəcət-bí-p,*” *nó-ǒy = mah.*
 3sg=small=PL DST.CNTR arrive.come-first-HAB-DEP say-DYNM=REP
 “The little ones always arrive first,” (the spirit) said, it’s said.

Yúp = mah tih kók-óh, *tih b’uy-yæt-d’əh-píd-íh,*
 that.ITG=REP 3sg pull-DECL 3sg throw-lie.on.ground-send-DIST-DECL
 So he fished; he kept pulling (them) out and throwing them on the ground,

tih = tæh = n’ăn = mah tih kək-d’o?-píd-íh. *Yúp = mah tih = nuhũy*
 3sg=small=PL.OBJ=REP 3sg pull-take-DIST-DECL that.ITG=REP 3sg=neck
 he kept pulling out the little ones. Then, it’s said, he broke

tih táh-əp = mah yúp, *kúnunununu tih nɔ-píd-íh.*
 3sg break-DEP=REP that.ITG IDEO 3sg say-DIST-DECL
 their necks, *kunununu* was the sound it made.

Yít b’íyi? píđ = mah, yít tih nfh-ít = yi? = mah.
 thus only DIST=REP thus 3sg be.like-OBL=TEL=REP
 Just like this, over and over, thus he (the spirit) did.

J’ób hæyó tih = pög = d’əh widnæn-ay-áh; *ʔín-ăn-ăp*
 night middle 3sg=big=PL arrive.come-INCH-DECL 1pl-OBJ-DEP
 And in the middle of the night the big ones began to arrive; for us (humans)

yā?ám = d’əh tih = pög = d’əh yæh = mah yúp = hin-íp.
 jaguar=PL 3sg=big=PL FRUST=REP that.ITG=also-DEP
 they were big jaguars.

Yinih-yó? = mah yúp, tih mæh-hũ?-yí?-íh,
 that.ITG.be.like-SEQ=REP that.ITG 3sg kill-finish-TEL-DECL
 ‘So after that, it’s said, he (the spirit) finished killing them all, (while)

tih = hupáh = mæh = yí? = mah yúp húp-up = ?ih
 3sg=back=DIM=TEL=REP that.ITG person-DEP=MSC
 that person was trembling right up against

wi?wi?-d'ák-áh, tih = yǎh hupáh máh = yi? = mah,
 tremble-be.against-DECL 3sg=affine back near=TEL=REP
 his (the spirit's) back, against his affine's back,

yã?ám = n'ǎn ?óm-ǎp. Tih-ǎn-ǎp b'ǎy = d'ǎh = mah,
 jaguar=PL.OBJ fear-DEP 3sg-OBJ-DEP traira=PL=REP
 afraid of the jaguars. For him (the spirit) they were traira,

tih = pǎg = d'ǎh = mah. "Tih = pǎg = d'ǎh wæd-d'o?-næn-yi?-c'iw-íy,"
 3sg=big=PL=REP 3sg=big=PL eat-take-come-TEL-COMPL-DYNM
 big ones, it's said. "The big ones have already arrived to eat (the bait),"

nǎ-ǎy = mah; hih-nǎn-ǎy ?in nǎ-nih-íw-íh.
 say-DYNM=REP jaguar.roar-come-DYNM 1pl say-be.like-FLR-DECL
 (the spirit) was saying; they came jaguar-roaring, we would say.

Yí nǎ-yó? = mah yúp tih mǎh-ǎh; kawag d'ǎh-næn-tég
 that.ITG say-SEQ=REP that.ITG 3sg kill-DECL dawn send-come-FUT
 'Having said this, it's said, he killed (the big fish); it was just before dawn

kót?ah = mǎh = mah hū?-nǎh-g'ét-ay-áh yi-d'ǎh-ǎh.
 before=DIM=REP finish-fall-stand-INCH-DECL that.ITG-PL-DECL
 arrived that they finished.

"Ya?ǎp = yi? ?in mǎh-ǎh. Hǎy, b'ǎy = n'ǎn cuh-?áy !
 all.that=TEL 1pl kill-DECL um traira=PL.OBJ string-VENT.IMP
 "That's all we'll kill. Come string up the traira!

Tih = tǎh cúh tih-yi?, tih = pǎg cúh
 3sg=small string.IMP 3sg-TEL 3sg=big string.IMP
 String the small ones and the big ones

tih-yi? bí? !" *tih nǎ-ǎh. Yít tih nǎ-ǎy*
 3sg-TEL make.IMP 3sg say-DECL thus 3sg say-DYNM
 separately!" he (the spirit) said. Upon his saying this,

keyóʔ = mah yúp, cuh-dʻoʔ-hipāh-nīh tih gʻet-gʻóʔ-óh,
 CAUSE=REP that.ITG string-take-know-NEG 3sg stand-go.about-DECL
 he (the man) just stood around without knowing how to string them,

húp-up = ʔih-íh. Yúp cuh-dʻoʔ-hipāh-nīh tih
 person-DEP=MSC-DECL that.ITG string-take-know-NEG 3sg
 (did) the person. Because he was standing around not knowing

gʻet-gʻóʔ-óy keyóʔ = mah yúp, “yī nīh-íy bíg
 stand-go.about-DYNM CAUSE=REP that.ITG that.ITG be.like-DYNM HAB
 how to string them, “This is how I always do it, when I string traيرا,”

jʻáh ʔāh-áh, bʻöy ʔāh cuh-tǎn-ǎh,” nɔ-yóʔ = mah, tih
 DST.CNTR 1sg-DECL traيرا 1sg string-COND-DECL say-SEQ=REP 3sg
 (the spirit) said, it’s said, and he strung

cuh-dʻoʔ-yíʔ-ay-áh. Tih = tæg cáʔ-át cuh-dʻəh-cák,
 string-take-TEL-INCH-DECL 3sg=tooth box-OBL string-send-climb
 them all up. (He) strung (one) up by the chin,

tih = tæg cáʔ-át cuh-dʻəh-cák tih ní-mah-áh.
 3sg=tooth box-OBL string-send-climb 3sg be-REP-DECL
 strung (the next) up by the chin (and so on), thus he did, it’s said.

Yīnih-yóʔ = mah yúp tih = pög = nʻän tih
 that.ITG.be.like-SEQ=REP that.ITG 3sg=big=PL.OBJ 3sg
 ‘Having done this, it’s said, he then strung

cuh-dʻoʔ-yíʔ-bʻay-áh. “Hám, yo-dʻoʔ-ʔáy,” nɔ-ǔy = mah.
 string-take-TEL-AGAIN-DECL go.IMP dangle-take-VENT.IMP say-DYNM=REP
 up the big ones. “Go on, carry them,” (the spirit) said.

Yít = mah tih yo-dʻoʔ-hipāh-nīh gʻǔh-gʻet-gʻóʔ-op = bʻay.
 thus=REP 3sg dangle-take-know-NEG be-stand-go.about-DEP=AGAIN
 Then, it’s said, he (the man) was standing around again, not knowing how to

“*ʔāh b’ōy = n’ān núp = yiʔ yo-d’oʔ-kədham-nñh-ǎy bíg*
 1sg traira=PL.OBJ this=TEL dangle-take-pass.go-be.like-DYNM HAB
 carry (them). “I always carry traira

j’áh ʔáh-áh, b’ōy = n’ān yo-hipāh-nñh = cud ʔám-áh!”
 DST.CNTR 1sg-DECLtraira=PL.OBJ dangle-know-NEG=INFR 2sg-DECL
 and go like this, I do; you don’t know how to carry traira, apparently!”

nó-ǎy = mah, tih yo-d’oʔ-kədham-yiʔ-ay-áh.
 say-DYNM=REP 3sg dangle-take-pass.go-TEL-INCH-DECL
 (the spirit) said, and he carried them quickly off dangling from his hand.

Yo-d’oʔ-kədham-yóʔ = mah, deh = mi tǎh-ǎt, “ʔin tők
 dangle-take-pass.go-SEQ=REP water=creek small-OBL 1pl belly
 Having carried them quickly off, at the stream he said, “let’s

cóʔ-ʔě-h!” tih nó-ay-áh. Yúp = mah yúp “pěc
 gut-PERF-DECL 3sg say-INCH-DECL that.ITG=REP that.ITG scale
 gut them!” So then, it’s said, “scrape off the scales!”

kój !” nó-yóʔ = mah tñh-ñh, “ʔáh hipāh-nñh ʔáh-áh,”
 scrape.off.IMP say-SEQ=REP 3sg-DECL 1sg know-NEG 1sg-DECL
 he (the spirit) said; “I don’t know how!”

nó-ǎy = mah húp-up = ʔñh cóʔ-óy = b’ay-áh. “ʔñ-ñp
 say-DYNM=REP person-DEP=MSC LOC-DYNM=AGAIN-DECL 1pl-DEP
 the man said in his turn. “We don’t

yí-n’ñh = n’ān hipāh-nñh yǎh tíh !” Yǎʔám = d’əh = mah
 that.ITG-NMZ=PL.OBJ know-NEG FRUST EMPH2 jaguar=PL=REP
 know anything about those things!” They were jaguars

ʔñ-ǎn-ǎw-áh. Yúp = mah tih tők
 1pl-OBJ-FLR-DECL that.ITG=REP 3sg belly
 for us (humans), it’s said. So, it’s said, he (the spirit)

hihit-b’uy-d’əh-ham-yiʔ-ay-áh. Tők
 scrape.repeatedly-throw-send-go-TEL-INCH-DECL belly
 cut open the bellies (of the fish) and threw out (the innards).

hihit-b'uy-d'əh-ham-yó? = mah *tih háy-ay-áh,* *tih = pęc*
 scrape.repeatedly-throw-send-go-SEQ=REP 3sg um-INCH-DECL 3sg=scale
 Having opened the bellies and thrown out the innards, he um, he scraped off

tih kój-ay-áh. *Tih koj-yó?, yinih-yó?* *tih*
 3sg scrape-INCH-DECL 3sg scrape-SEQ that.ITG.be.like-SEQ 3sg
 the scales. (The spirit's) having scraped off the scales, and after that

tok cə?-hū?-yó?, hid yo-d'o?-yí?-ay-áh, *té*
 belly gut-finish-SEQ 3pl dangle-take-TEL-INCH-DECL until
 having finished gutting them, they went off carrying (the fish) dangling from

yinih-yó? = mah *yúp* *tih* *widyeyí?-ay-áh.*
 that.ITG.be.like-SEQ=REP that.ITG 3sg arrive.enter-TEL-INCH-DECL
 their hands, until after that, it's said, he (they) arrived home.

Ya?ăp = yi? ?ăh ?id-té-ay-áh; *hú?-ay* *?ūhníy* *yúw-úh,*
 all.that=TEL 1sg speak-FUT-INCH-DECL finish-INCH maybe that.ITG-DECL
 'That's all I'm going to tell; I guess it's finished,

pă-ay.
 NEG:EX-INCH
 that's all there is.'

Text 2: *Dohʔá̃y Piniŋ* ‘A Story of Curupira’

Told by Teresa (Mũn) Monteiro Socot, Tat Deh (Taracuá Igarapé),
October, 2001.

The first part of this text is a kind of preface in which the narrator Teresa describes the malignant forest being Curupira, followed by the story. Teresa learned this tale from an elderly relative in the village, who had herself heard it long ago from a Tukano person, who was reportedly related to the Tukanoan woman to whom the events occurred. Stories about Curupira – including tales of first-hand encounters – are very common among the Hupd’əh. The recorded text is included on the CD accompanying this volume.

Nút dohʔá̃y piniŋ ʔá̃h piniŋ-té-h. Nút ʔiniŋ j’áh-át,
here Curupira story 1sg tell.story-FUT-DECL here 1pl.POSS land-OBL
‘Now I’ll tell a story about Curupira. Here in our land,

déh-g’æt-yǝh = d’əh nĩh j’ũg-út, yúp dohʔá̃y ní-ĩy,
water-leaf-flood.area=PL POSS forest-OBL that.ITG Curupira live-DYNM
in the forest of the people of the headwaters of the streams, lives Curupira,

nóyhaʔ. Pá̃t bǝ-óy = mah dohʔá̃y-á̃h. Tinĩh j’ib = hin
INTERJ hair long-DYNM=REP Curupira-DECL 3sg.POSS foot=also
say. He has long hair, it’s said, has Curupira. His feet also point

hũyʔah cóʔ = mah, tih y’æt-d’oʔ-yíʔ-íh. Húp-ǎn tih
behind LOC=REP 3sg leave-take-TEL-DECL person-OBJ 3sg
backwards, it’s said, as he puts them down. When he wants to eat

wæd-tú-ay, pí̃k-ĩy = mah, yaʔamboʔ tá̃h pí̃k = yiʔ
eat-want-INCH shriek-DYNM=REP dog small shriek=TEL
people, he shrieks (to lure them near), it’s said, he always shrieks

nǝ-nĩh-ĩy = mah, dohʔá̃y-á̃h; yěç = yiʔ
say-be.like-DYNM=REP Curupira-DECL jacamim-TEL
just like a puppy, it’s said, does Curupira; he shrieks like a jacamim bird,

pí̃k-nǝ-nĩh-ĩy = mah. Mǝh-ǎn = mah cǎp tih hitá̃ʔ-á̃h,
shriek-say-be.like-DYNM=REP inambu-OBJ=REP other 3sg imitate-DECL
it’s said. The inambu bird, it’s said, is another that he imitates,

dohʔáy-áh. Yúp = mah yúp j'üg-út g'et-g'óʔ = d'əh
 Curupira-DECL that=REP that.ITG forest-OBL stand-wander=PL
 does Curupira. Thus, it's said, those who go wandering in the forest tell about

wiʔ-hipāh-nó-ǎh. Hú = d'əh nihúʔ = mah tih hitǎʔ-ǎh,
 hear-know-say-DECL animal=PL all=REP 3sg imitate-DECL
 how they hear and recognize him. He imitates all the animals, it's said,

tih hitǎʔ-ǎw-ǎh; yí nó-ǎy wíʔ = d'əh n'üh-üh.
 3sg imitate-FLR-DECL thus say-DYNM hear=PL CNTR-DECL
 he imitates (them); so say those who have heard him.

ʔayüp = ʔáy = mah j'áh b'ǎt-an hám-áh. Deh = mí pög-ót
 one=FEM=REP DST.CNTR roça-DIR go-DECL water=river big-OBL
 'A woman, it's said, once went to her roça. She went across to

wáʔah cóʔ = mah tih b'ǎt hám-áh, tih b'íyiʔ.
 other.side.of.water LOC=REP 3sg roça go-DECL 3sg alone
 the her roça on the other side of the river, it's said, she alone.

Yinih-míʔ = mah tih = tǎhʔíp = b'ay hōp kók-əp
 that.ITG.be.like-UNDER=REP 3sg=child.father=AGAIN fish pull-DEP
 At the same time her husband went fishing.

hám-áh. Deh = mí-an ham-yóʔ = mah, hōhtǎg-ét ham-yóʔ = mah,
 go-DECL water=river-DIR go-SEQ=REP canoe-OBL go-SEQ=REP
 Having gone by the river, having gone by canoe, it's said, she went

tih cóp-ǎh, tinñh b'ǎt-an hám-ǎw-áh. Yíkán
 3sg go.from.river-DECL 3sg.POSS roça-DIR go-FLR-DECL over.there
 up the bank, going to her roça. After having spent a long time coming up (to

bǎg widcəp-yoʔ, ní-íy = mah, tǎg tih tóʔ-ǎh,
 long.time arrive.go.from.river-SEQ be-DYNM=REP wood 3sg light.fire-DECL
 reach her field), she lit a fire, she would sweep the ground (and burn the weeds),

j'áh hæp-té-p = mah tih tóʔ-áh. Yúp tih = yi?
 earth sweep-FUT-DEP=REP 3sg light.fire-DECL that.ITG 3sg=TEL
 so she lit a fire. Then when

hæp-hup-cíp = mah, ʔayǔp = ʔih tih-ǎn widnæn-ay-áh.
 sweep-RFLX-COMPL=REP one=MSC 3sg-OBJ arrive.come-INCH-DECL
 she had finished sweeping up, it's said, a man arrived to her.

Tih = tæhʔip = yi? key-nih-íy = mah; dohʔáy mǐʔ = cud = mah
 3sg=child.father=TEL see-be.like-DYNM=REP Curupira UNDER=INFR=REP
 He looked like her husband, it's said; however, it was Curupira,

tih-ǎn yínih-ní-ih. Yít widnæn-yóʔ = mah yúp,
 3sg-OBJ that.ITG.be.like-be-DECL thus arrive.come-SEQ=REP that.ITG
 apparently. So having arrived, it's said –

g'í wag g'óh-óy = nih, “ʔám-ǎn nǎm = d'əh ní-íy híd ?”
 hot day be-DYNM=EMPH.CO 2sg-OBJ louse=PL be-DYNM 3pl
 it was a hot dry-season day – “are there lice on you?”

nɔ-yóʔ = mah, tih-ǎn tih ʔih-kéy-éh. “Nǎm ʔám-ǎn ʔǎh
 say-SEQ=REP 3sg-OBJ 3sg ask-see-DECL louse 2sg-OBJ 1sg
 he asked her, it's said. “I'll check you for lice,”

key-níŋ, nó-óy = mah. Tih = tæhʔip = yi? key-nih-íy = mah.
 see-COOP say-DYNM=REP 3sg=child.father=TEL see-be.like=REP
 he said, it's said. He looked like her husband, it's said.

“Hǎʔ, key-ʔay-kǎm, ʔǎn cícid-icáp = hǔ, yi-d'əh-áh,”
 yes see-VENT-IMP2 1sg.OBJ itch-INTS1=NONVIS that.ITG-PL-DECL
 “All right, come look, they're making me itch a lot.” Having said this,

nɔ-yóʔ = mah yúp, tih yu-ham-pám-ay-áh, nǎm
 say-SEQ=REP that.ITG 3sg wait-go-sit-INCH-DECL louse
 she sat down and waited for him to check for lice.

key-yǎh-ǎw-ay-áh. Yúp yu-ham-pəm-yóʔ = mah yúp,
 see-request-FLR-INCH-DECL that.ITG wait-go-sit-SEQ=REP that.ITG
 Having sat down and waited, it's said,

yúp key-tǎh-ip = yi?, *tǎh-ǎn tih ʔun'-yi?-ní-h*, *tinǎh*
 that.ITG see-lie-DEP=TEL 3sg-OBJ 3sg suck-TEL-INFR2-DECL 3sg.POSS
 that one was lying about looking (for lice); he sucked her,

núh cǔwǎh = mah tih ʔun'-yi?-ní-h.
 head brain=REP 3sg suck-TEL-INFR2-DECL
 he sucked out her brain, it's said.

Yúp = mah yúp, *“pǎ, yi-d'ǎh-ǎh*. *Kayak tó?*
 that.ITG=REP that.ITG NEG:EX that.ITG-PL-DECL manioc tuber
 ‘So with that, “There aren’t any (lice). Go pull

g'ɔʔ-ʔáy-áy !” nɔ-ǎy = mah yúp dohʔáy-ǎh.
 pull.manioc-VENT-INCH.IMP say-DYNM=REP that.ITG Curupira-DECL
 manioc!” said that Curupira.

Tǎh = tǎhʔíp = yi? *key-nǎh-ǎy = mah yúw-úh*. *Yúp = mah*
 3sg=child.father=TEL see-be.like-DYNM=REP that.ITG-DECL that.ITG=REP
 He looked like her husband, it's said. So, it's said, having said

yúp, *“hǎʔ, g'ɔʔ-d'ɔʔ-ʔay-ʔě-h,” nɔ-yóʔ = mah*,
 that.ITG yes pull.manioc-take-VENT-PERF-DECL say-SEQ=REP
 “all right, I'll go pull (it),”

tih g'ɔʔ-ǎh. *Tih cog-kamí = mah yúp*, *“kótʔah*
 3sg pull.manioc-DECL 3sg gather.up-moment.of=REP that.ITG before
 she pulled (manioc). As she was gathering it into her basket,

ʔǎh d'ob-yu-té-h, *máy !” nɔ-yóʔ = mah, tih*
 1sg go.to.river-wait-FUT-DECL go.INCH.IMP say-SEQ=REP 3sg
 “I'll go ahead and wait, let's go!” (he) said,

kǎdd'ob-yǎʔ-ay-ǎh, *dehd'óʔ cóʔ, tih cɔp-ʔéʔ*
 pass.go.to.river-TEL-INCH-DECL water.take LOC 3sg go.from.river-PERF
 and he went quickly down to the river, to the port, from whence she had come,

có? = mah, *tih* *d'ob-yí?-ay-mah-ǎh*.
 LOC=REP 3sg go.to.river-TEL-INCH-REP-DECL
 it's said, he went down to the river, it's said.

Yít-yí? *hæŋǎét = yí?* *g'ɔ?-d'o?-yó?* = mah, *tih*
 thus-TEL fast=TEL pull.manioc-take-SEQ=REP 3sg
 'Thus having quickly pulled manioc, it's said,

cog-d'o?-yó? = mah, *tih* *d'ob-yí?-ay-áh*.
 gather.up-take-SEQ=REP 3sg go.to.river-TEL-INCH-DECL
 having gathered it into her basket, she went down to the river.

D'ob-yó? = mah *yúp,* *tih* *widd'ob-key-yǎh-ǎh*.
 go.to.river-SEQ=REP that.ITG 3sg arrive.go.to.river-see-FRUST-DECL
 Having gone down to the river, it's said, she arrived down and looked around in vain.

Nǎ *húp* *pǎ* = mah, *tih* *key-widd'ób-óh,* *nǎ*
 NEG:R person NEG:EX=REP 3sg see-arrive.go.to.river-DECL NEG:R
 There was no one there, it's said; she looked around as she went down, there

húp *pǎ* = cud = mah. "Hí-có? *yǎh* *tih* *ham-pog-yǎh-ǎ?*
 person NEG:EX=INFR=REP Q-LOC FRUST3sg go-EMPH1-FRUST-INT
 was no one there. "Where could he have gone?!"

tí ?! *Núp = mǎh = yí?* *tih* *kǎdd'ób-otíh !"* *nɔ-yó?* = mah,
 EMPH.INT this=DIM=TEL 3sg pass.go.to.river-EMPH2 say-SEQ=REP
 He just now went down here!" she said, it's said,

tih *key-yɔhɔy-yǎh-ǎh.* *Pǎ* = mah.
 3sg see-search-FRUST-DECL NEG:EX=REP
 and looked all around in vain. He was not there, it's said.

Yínih-yó? = mah *yúp* *kayak* *tó?* *w'ob-d'o?-yó?* = mah,
 that.ITG.be.like-SEQ=REP that.ITG manioc tuber set-take-SEQ=REP
 'So with that, it's said, having placed her manioc (in the canoe), it's said,

tih b'eh-hí-ay-áh. B'eh-yó?, yíkán tinñh
 3sg cross.water-descend-INCH-DECL cross.water-SEQ over.there 3sg.POSS
 she crossed the river, going downstream. Having crossed the river,

dehd'ó?-an widham-yi? ní-íy = mah yúp. Tinñh
 water.take-DIR arrive.go-TEL be-DYNM=REP that.ITG 3sg.POSS
 she arrived there at her port. Having washed

kayak = tó? j'id-yó? = mah, tih cɔp-yí?-ay-áh, mǒy-an.
 manioc=tuber wash-SEQ=REP 3sg go.from.river-TEL-INCH-DECL house-DIR
 her manioc, it's said, she went up from the river, to her house.

Widcɔp-yi? ní-íy, tinñh kayak = tó? tih y'æt-yí?-íh.
 arrive.go.from.river-TEL be-DYNM 3sg.POSS manioc=tuber 3sg lay-TEL-DECL
 She arrived and set down her manioc.

Yúp tih widcɔp-hǔy?ah díyi? = mah, tih = tǎh?íp hǒp
 that.ITG 3sg arrive.go.from.river-before VDIM=REP 3sg=child.father fish
 'Then shortly after she had arrived, her husband, who had gone

mǎh-?ay-?e?-ní-p, widb'áy-ay-áh. Dób = mah hǒp tih
 kill-VENT-PERF-INFR2-DEP arrive.return-INCH-DECL many=REP fish 3sg
 to kill fish, returned. He had killed a lot of fish.

mǎh-ní-h. "Ciw-?áy, nǐ yǒh = n'ǎn ?ǎh
 kill-INFR2-DECL cook-VENT.IMP 1sg.POSS affine=PL.OBJ 1sg
 "Come cook (these fish), I'll offer food to (i.e., eat with) my affinal

g'et-wǎd-nǐŋ !" nǒ-ǒy = mah, tih = tǎh?íp-íh. Yúp = mah tih
 stand-eat-COOP say-DYNM=REP 3sg=child.father-DECL that.ITG=REP 3sg
 relatives!" (he) said, it's said, her husband. So, it's said,

cíw-íh; ciw-yó? = mah yúp, ciw-hup-cǐp = mah yúp,
 cook-DECL cook-SEQ=REP that.ITG cook-RFLX-COMPL=REP that.ITG
 she cooked (them); having cooked them, it's said, when she finished cooking

“*g’et-wæd-ʔáy-áy, ʔám = yǒh = n’ǎn,*” *nó-ǒy = mah. Yúp = mah*
 stand-eat-VENT-INCH.IMP 2sg=affine=PL.OBJ say-DYNM=REP that.ITG=REP
 them, “come offer food to your affinal relatives,” she said, it’s said. So, it’s said,

tih g’et-wæd-ǎh, yúp = mah yúp, g’et-wæd-yóʔ = mah yúp,
 3sg stand-eat-DECL that.ITG=REP that.ITG stand-eat-SEQ=REP that.ITG
 he offered food to (them), and then, having fed them (the men), it’s said,

tǎʔǎy = n’ǎn tih g’et-wæd-ǎp = b’ay-áh. G’et-wæd-yóʔ = mah
 woman=PL.OBJ 3sg stand-eat-DEP=AGAIN-DECL stand-eat-SEQ=REP
 he fed the women. Having fed (them), it’s said,

yúp, núp dǐʔ = n’ǎn, hǒp = n’ǎn, póh wáb-át w’ob-yóʔ,
 that.ITG this remain=PL.OBJ fish=PL.OBJ high jirau-OBL set-SEQ
 the remaining ones, the fish, having put them up high on the jirau,

“*hǒh-yǐʔ tán,*” *nó-ǒy = mah. “Hǒʔ,” nó-ǒy = mah, yúp*
 smoke-TEL.IMP later say-DYNM=REP yes say-DYNM=REP that.ITG
 “later smoke them,” he said, it’s said. “All right,” she said,

tǎʔǎy-ǎh. Yúp = mah yúp hǒp = n’ǎn w’ob-yóʔ, tǔg
 woman-DECL that.ITG=REP that.ITG fish=PL.OBJ set-SEQ wood
 the woman. So, it’s said, having put those fish up, having

tǎʔ-d’ak-yóʔ = mah, hǒp = n’ǎn tih w’ób-óh. Yúp
 kindle-be.against=REP fish=PL.OBJ 3sg set-DECL that.ITG
 lit a fire, she put up the fish. As she

tǎʔ-d’ák-ap = yǐʔ = mah, tǔg-hod máh tinǐh yág
 kindle-be.against-DEP=TEL=REP wood-hole near 3sg.POSS hammock
 lit a fire, it’s said – her hammock was right next to

ni-g’ǒh-ǒy = nih = mah; cak-g’ǎʔ-ní-ay-áh,
 be-be2-DYNM=EMPH.CO=REP climb-be.suspended-be-INCH-DECL
 the fireplace – she climbed into (her hammock),

hup-hipāh-nǐh tih g’ǎʔ-yiʔ-ní-h.
 RFLX-know-NEG 3sg be.suspended-TEL-INFR2-DECL
 and lay there unconscious.

Yúp = mah yúp tih = yǒh = d'əh máh-an ham-ʔáy-ap,
 that.ITG=REP that.ITG 3sg=affine=PL near-DIR go-VENT-DEP
 'Then, it's said, her husband returned from his affinal

tih = tǎhʔíp widb'áy-áh. Hī ʔám ní g'á-ǎyúp ?!
 3sg=child.father arrive.return-DECL Q 2sg this be.suspended-(V)that.ITG
 relatives' place. "What are you doing lying in the hammock like this?"

Amñh hǒp d'óh-əw-ay yǎh tih !" *tih nó-ǒy = mah, tih-ǎn-áh.*
 2sg.POSS fish rot-FLR-INCH FRUST EMPH2 3sg say-DYNM=REP 3sg-OBJ-DECL
 Your fish must be spoiling!" he said to her.

"Áh péʔ-éy = hǒ páh ! Péʔ-widnǎñ ní-ǎy = hǒ
 1sg be.sick-DYNM=NONVIS PRX.CNTR sick-arrive.come be-DYNM=NONVIS
 "I'm sick! I have a fever!"

páh ʔǎn-áh !" *nó-ǒy = mah, yúp = ʔǎy-áh,*
 PRX.CNTR 1sg.OBJ-DECL say-DYNM=REP that.ITG=FEM-DECL
 she said, it's said, that woman,

tih = tǎhʔín-ǎh, tih-ǎn-áh. Yúp = mah yúp, "hī-n'ih
 3sg=child.mother-DECL 3sg-OBJ-DECL that.ITG=REP that.ITG Q-NMZ
 his wife, (said) to him. Then, it's said, "what

cáp ʔám-ǎn péʔ-yǎh-ǎh? tí?!" *nó-ǒy = mah. Yúp = mah*
 INTS1 2sg-OBJ sick-FRUST-INT EMPH.INT say-DYNM=REP that.ITG=REP
 in the world could be making you sick?' he said. Then, it's said,

yúp tih-ǎn tih ʔíd-ay-áh, "ʔám = yiʔ key-nih-ǎp,
 that.ITG 3sg-OBJ 3sg speak-INCH-DECL 2sg=TEL see-be.like-DEP
 she told him, "Someone who looked like you

ʔǎn b'ǒt-an widway-ʔáy-áh. ʔÁm = yiʔ widway-ʔáy-aʔ,
 1sg.OBJ roça-DIR arrive.go.out-VENT-DECL 2sg=TEL arrive.go.out-VENT-INT
 came to me in the roça. Was it you that went

yíkán ?" *nə-yóʔ = mah, tih = tǎhʔín tih-ǎn ʔih-kéy-éh.*
 over.there say-SEQ=REP 3sg=child.mother 3sg-OBJ ask-see-DECL
 out there?" (she) said, it's said, his wife asked him.

“*Āh ham-nīh-īy = nih-áp,*” *nó-ōy = mah,*
 1sg go-NEG-DYNM=EMPH.CO-FOC.DEP? say-DYNM=REP
 “I didn’t go,” (he) said,

tih = tǎh?íp-ih. “*Cǎ-n’ih = ?ih = yf? = cud,* *?ám-ǎn*
 3sg=child.father-DECL other-NMZ=MSC=TEL=INFR 2sg-OBJ
 her husband. “It must have been some other man,

bahad-?ay-ní-h !” *nó-yó? = mah,* *tih = tǎh?íp* *tih-ǎn*
 appear-VENT-INFR2-DECL say-SEQ=REP 3sg=child.father 3sg-OBJ
 who appeared to you!” (he) said, it’s said, her husband

?id-ih. “*?Ám = yi? key-nīh-īy* *páh !* *?Ám-ǎn nǎm ?ǎh*
 speak-DECL 2sg=TEL see-be.like-DYNM PRX.CNTR 2sg-OBJ louse 1sg
 told her. “But it looked like you! ‘I’ll check you for lice,’

key-nīŋ, *?ǎn* *nó-ōy* *páh* *yúw-úh !*” *nó-yó? = mah,* *tih*
 see-COOP 1sg.OBJ say-DYNM PRX.CNTR that.ITG-DECL say-SEQ=REP 3sg
 that one said to me!” she told him.

?id-ih. “*?ǎn po?-key-kǎm,*” *nó-ōy = mah.* *Yúp = mah*
 speak-DECL 1sg.OBJ open-see-IMP2 say-DYNM=REP that.ITG=REP
 “Open (my hair) and look,” (she) said (to her husband). And

yúp *tinīh* *núh* *kætdóh* *cípmæh = yf? = mah*
 that.ITG 3sg.POSS head end small=TEL=REP
 there on the top of her head (something) was

j’ũ?-g’et-mǎh-ǎy = mah; *hóm ni-g’et-mǎh-ǎy = mah.* “*Ám-ǎn doh?ǎy*
 ooze-stand-DIM-DYNM=REP sore be-stand-DIM-DYNM=REP 2sg-OBJ curupira
 oozing slightly, it’s said; a little sore was there, it’s said. “Curupira has

?un’-yf?-īy = cud,” *nó-ōy = mah,* *tih = tǎh?íp-ih,* *tih-ǎn-ǎh.*
 suck-TEL-DYNM=INFR say-DYNM=REP 3sg=child.father-DECL 3sg-OBJ-DECL
 sucked you (your brain), apparently!” he said, her husband, to her.

Yúp j'ób, wag hiyǽt = yí? = mah tih na?-yí?-íh.
 that.ITG night day FACT.lie=TEL=REP 3sg die-TEL-DECL
 'And that night, just before dawn, it's said, she died. Curupira had

Doh?áý tih-ăn ?un'-ní-p, macã-níh-ay = mah,
 curupira 3sg-OBJ suck-INFR2-DEP come.to.senses-NEG-INCH=REP
 sucked her (brain); she could not recover,

na?-tubúd-yí?-ay = mah.
 die-INTS3-TEL-INCH=REP
 and died completely, it's said.

Text 3: *Canã Pó Baktĩb* 'The Spirit of the Pineapple Thicket'

Told by Elias Andrade Pires, Barreira Alta, January 2002.

This story is yet another tale of a person's encounter with the spirit world. The recorded text may be found on the accompanying CD.

Yít = mah, tih = dó? ?ót-óh. Yít tih ?ót-óy keyó? = mah,
 thus=REP 3sg=child cry-DECL thus 3sg cry-DYNM CAUSE=REP
 'So, it's said, a child was crying (at night). Because she cried, it's said,

tih = ?íp tih-ăn háy?ah có? d'o?-way-g'et-yí?-íh. Yít tih
 3sg=father 3sg-OBJ outside LOC take-go.out-stand-TEL-DECL thus 3sg
 her father put her outside. Then when

d'o?-way-g'et-yí?-ít = mah yóy canã pó baktĩb'
 take-go.out-stand-TEL-OBL=REP pineapple.sp. pineapple thicket spirit
 he put her outside, it's said, a yóy pineapple-thicket spirit

d'o?-ham-yí?-íh. Yít = mah hid ?ũh-toh-hám-áh,
 take-go-TEL-DECL thus=REP 3pl INTRC-steal-go-DECL
 took (her) off. With that, it's said, they (the other spirits) went chasing after

"Nĩ = mah páh yúw-úh ! Nĩ = mah páh yúw-úh !"
 1sg.POSS PRX.CNTR that.ITG-DECL 1sg.POSS=REP PRX.CNTR that.ITG-DECL
 each other to steal (the girl), saying, "But she's mine! But she's mine!"

Yǒy canǎ pó baktǐb', "Nǐ = mah, nǐ = mah
 pineapple.sp. pineapple thicket spirit 1sg.POSS=REP 1sg.POSS=REP
 (And) that *yǒy* pineapple-thicket spirit said, "Mine, no, she's mine!"

páh yúw-úh !" *ʔŭh-nǒ-hám-ǎy = mah, yi-d'ǎh-ǎh,*
 PRX.CNTR that.ITG-DECL INTRC-say-go-DYNM=REP that.ITG-PL-DECL
 They all went saying (thus) together, all going after

yúp = ʔǎy-ǎn ʔŭh-toh-hám = d'ǎh. Yǒy canǎ pó-ót
 that.ITG=FEM-OBJ INTRC-steal-go=PL pineapple.sp. pineapple thicket-OBL
 that girl to steal her. That one took her into the *yǒy*

n'íp = ʔih = mah tǐh-ǎn d'oʔ-ye-yíʔ-ǐh, té yúp pó-an.
 that=MSC=REP 3sg-OBJ take-enter-TEL-DECL until that.ITG thicket-DIR
 pineapple thicket, it's said, all the way to that thicket.

Yít = mah tih tǎh-ni-yíʔ-ǐh, yúp = ʔǎy-ǎh. Tǎh-ni-yóʔ,
 thus=REP 3sg offspring-be-TEL-DECL that.ITG=FEM-DECL offspring-be-SEQ
 'Then she had a child, it's said, that woman (did). Having had a child,

ní-íy = mah, tih hūh-j'ǒm-ay-áh, tih d'oʔ-d'ób-b'ay-áh.
 be-DYNM=REP 3sg carry-bathe-INCH-DECL 3sg take-go.to.river-AGAIN-DECL
 it's said, she took him down to the river to bathe him.

Yúp d'oʔ-d'ób-op = mah yúp, tinǐh mǒy-ǒt
 that.ITG take-go.to.river-DEP=REP that.ITG 3sg.POSS house-OBL
 As she was taking him down to the river, it's said, she swung him

kək-g'ǎʔ-d'oʔ-kədwáy-ay-áh; yít = mah tih = d'óʔ
 pull-be.suspended-take-pass.go.out-INCH-DECL thus=REP 3sg=child
 against the house (rafter) as she went quickly out (bumping him accidentally),

ʔót-ǎh. "Tú = mǎh = yíʔ ʔám = ʔíp mǒyók ní-íp = mǎh yúw-úh,"
 cry-DECL low=DIM=TEL 2sg=father rafter be-DEP=DIM that.ITG-DECL
 and the child cried. "They are so low, the rafters of your father's house,"

tʰh-ǎn nɔ-ǒy = mah yúw-úh. Yít = mah yúp húp = wəd
 3sg-OBJ say-DYNM=REP that.ITG-DECL thus=REP that.ITG person=RESP
 she said to him. So, it's said, there was a man standing there

wiʔ-g'ét-éy, mǒh g'íg-ip = ʔih. Yít = mah tih
 listen-stand-DYNM inambu shoot.arrow-DEP=MSC thus=REP 3sg
 listening, one who was out shooting inambu. So, it's said, she bathed

hūh-j'óm-ǒh, mǒh-ǒt. Hūh-j'óm = yiʔ ní-íy = mah, tih
 carry-bathe-DECL lake-OBL carry-bathe=TEL be-DYNM=REP 3sg
 (the child), in the lake. She bathed him, it's said, and

d'oʔ-cóp-ǒh, mǒy-an.
 take-go.from.river-DECL house-DIR
 took him back up to the house.

Yúp = mah yúp tʰh = ʔíp-ǎn ʔid-widyé-éh. Yít,
 that.ITG=REP that.ITG 3sg=father-OBJ speak-arrive.enter-DECL thus
 'So, it's said, (the man) went back and told her father.

“ʔám = tóg tǎh hūh-j'óm-túʔ-úh, ʔám
 2sg=daughter child carry-bathe-immense-DECL 2sg
 “Your daughter is bathing a child, the girl

mǎh-wɔn-d'əh-ham-ʔě-p = ʔǎy-ǎh,” tʰh-ǎn nɔ-widyé-éh.
 beat-follow-send-go-PERF-DEP=FEM-DECL 3sg-OBJ say-arrive.enter-DECL
 you beat and drove away,” (he) said to him as he entered.

Yinih-yóʔ = mah yúp ʔecáp cóʔ hid nǎn-ay-áh,
 that.ITG.be.like-SEQ=REP that.ITG tomorrow LOC 3pl come-INCH-DECL
 ‘So with that, it's said, the following day they went out,

híd-ǎn mǎh = d'əh-ǒh. hí = mah híd-ǎn hid maç-wɔn-yé-éh.
 3pl-OBJ kill=PL-DECL only=REP 3pl-OBJ 3pl chop.out-follow-enter-DECL
 in order to kill them. They just entered chopping down (the plants), following

Yúp pó-an maç-hũ?-yí?, híd-ăn mæh-hũ?-yí? = mah
 that.ITG thicket-DIR chop.out-finish-TEL 3pl-OBJ kill-finish-TEL=REP
 them (the spirits). They chopped everything down in the thicket, and killed

hid ní-íh. Yít maç-hũ?-yó?, yúp pó hæhó
 3pl be-DECL thus chop.out-finish-SEQ that.ITG thicket middle
 them all. Then having chopped everything down, there in the middle of the

yúp = ?ây ni-ní-h, nóyha?, yúp pó hæhó-an.
 that.ITG=FEM be-INFR2-DECL INTERJ that.ITG thicket middle-DIR
 thicket was the woman, say, there in the middle of the thicket.

Yæwæc-yó? = mah tíh-ăn hid d'o?-yé-éh, mǒy-an. Mǒy-an
 encounter-SEQ=REP 3sg-OBJ 3pl take-enter-DECL house-DIR house-DIR
 'Having encountered her, they took her back to (their) house. Having entered

d'o?-ye-yó?, hid d'o?-widyé-ét = mah, yúp = ?ây na?-yí?-íh.
 take-enter-SEQ 3pl take-arrive.enter-OBL=REP that.ITG=FEM die-TEL-DECL
 the house, at the moment that they brought her in, that woman lost conscious-
 ness.

Na?-yó? ní-íy, hid bi?íd-ít = mah tíh
 die-SEQ be-DYNM 3pl bless.w/spell-OBL=REP 3sg
 Having lost consciousness, when they blessed her, it's said, she

macá-b'ay-áh, yúp = ?ây-áh. J'ík tíh
 gain.consciousness-AGAIN-DECL that.ITG=FEM-DECL smoke 3sg
 regained consciousness, (did) that woman. (But) at the moment she smelled

cřwř?-ít = mah tíh na?-yí?-íh, j'ík tíh cřwř?-ít.
 smell-OBL=REP 3sg die-TEL-DECL smoke 3sg smell-OBL
 the smoke, it's said, she died, at the moment she smelled the smoke.²¹³

Ya?ăp-ay yúw-úh.
 all.gone-INCH that.ITG-DECL
 That's all.

²¹³ The woman had already become a spirit herself, and spirits fear and avoid smoke.

3. Conversation**Text 4: Conversation about the fight at Santa Atanasio**

Tat Deh, July 2004.

This topic of this conversation is the fight that had occurred the previous year (2003) in the Hup village of Santa Atanasio (also known as Serra dos Porcos or ‘Pig Hill’), which already had a reputation among other Hupd’əh for being a violent place (cf. §1.6). One explanation for this violence is the large size of the village; with several hundred inhabitants, it is much larger than the traditional Hup community of no more than a few dozen people. Their relatively sedentary living pattern (originally fostered by missionaries) and partial abandonment of the old semi-nomadic way of life leads to scarcity of resources and creates difficulty for large groups to fission when tensions arise (see Reid 1979: 310–311). Unlike most Hup fights (which are usually limited to drinking parties) this one was quite serious and lasted for weeks, resulting in several deaths. This conversation took place at night, among a small group of women.²¹⁴

J: *J’ám, háy, j’ám-áp nút ?am næn-?ay-hǔy?ah, hid*
 DST.CNTR um DST.CNTR-DEP here 2sg come-VENT-after 3pl
 ‘A while back, um, a while ago after you came here, they were

?ũh-kit-píd-ih ! Tǒh-an = ?ũy = d’əh. Nǎm-át,
 INTRC-cut-DIST-DECL pig-DIR=who=PL poison-OBL
 cutting each other! Those of Serra dos Porcos. Shooting

?ũh-g’íg = d’əh, mǒm = teg-ét ?ũh-g’íg = d’əh, ní-íy
 INTRC-shoot.arrow=PL iron=THING-OBL INTRC-shoot.arrow=PL be-DYNM
 each other with poisoned arrows, shooting each other with metal-tipped

bíg = mah yi-d’əh-əh.
 HAB=REP that.ITG-PL-DECL
 arrows, those ones are always like that.’

²¹⁴ Because I was also involved in the conversation, my contributions are transcribed as PLE. These lines should of course not be confused with the native-speaker utterances.

P: *ʔũh-g'íg = d'əh, nɔ-kǎm !*
 INTRC-shoot.arrow=PL say-IMP2
 'Shooting each other with arrows, say!'

PLE: *hiniy-keyó? hid ʔũh-mǎh-ǎ? ?*
 Q.be.like.DYNM-CAUSE 3pl INTRC-beat-INT
 'Why do they fight?'

J: *ʔũh-mǎh-ǎy ! hĩ hid ʔũh-mǎh-yíʔ-íy = nih.*
 INTRC-beat-DYNM just 3pl INTRC-beat-TEL-DYNM=EMPH.CO
 'They fight! They just really fight.'

J'am-yíʔ-íy = d'əh hid ʔũh-mǎh-ʔě-y = mah, yít
 DST.CNTR-TEL-DYNM=PL 3pl INTRC-beat-PERF-DYNM=REP thus
 The people of long ago fought, it's said, thus they are full of

ʔũh-mǎh-tǎw-śh. Mǔy tuj-d'ak-yíʔ-íy = mah !
 INTRC-beat-anger-DECL house set.alight-be.against-TEL-DYNM=REP
 fighting rage. They burned down houses, it's said!

Mǔy b'ɔt-hi-d'əh-yíʔ-íy píd = mah, yi-d'əh-śh !
 house chop.down-FACT-send-TEL-DYNM DIST=REP that.ITG-PL-DECL
 They chopped down houses too, it's said!'

PLE: *Naʔ-yíʔ-íy hid ?*
 lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM 3pl
 'Did they die?'

J: *Naʔ-yíʔ-íy = mah !*
 lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM=REP
 'They died, it's said!'

P: *Kǎʔ-yíʔ-íy = mah !*
 bury-TEL-DYNM=REP
 'They were buried, it's said!'

J: *Hĩ-ʔap = n'ǎn = mah hid mǎh-yíʔ-i? j'ǎh ?*
 Q-QTY=PL.OBJ=REP 3pl kill-TEL-INT DST.CNTR
 'How many was it that they killed?'

P: *Kaʔǎp = n'ǎn.*

two=PL.OBJ

'Two.'

J: *Kaʔǎp = n'ǎn... tiyĩʔ, tãʔǎy, yaʔǎp = n'ǎn = mah hid mæh-yĩʔ-íh.*
 two=PL.OBJ man woman that's.all=PL.OBJ=REP 3pl kill-TEL-DECL
 'Two... a man, a woman, that's who they killed, it's said.'

PLE: *Hid g'íg-iʔ ?*

3pl shoot.arrow-INT

'They shot (them) with arrows?'

J: *Hid g'íg-íh ! Tők-ót, nút, tők-ót, nukán = mah*
 3pl shoot.arrow-DECL belly-OBL here belly-OBL over.here=REP
 'They shot (them) with arrows! In the belly, here, in the belly, right here in

tők-ót hid g'ig-tod-d'əh-næn-ǎh !

belly-OBL 3pl shoot.arrow-pierce-send-come-DECL
 the belly, it's said, they shot (them) right through!'

P: *Nút = mah.*

here=REP

'Here, it's said.' [gestures to belly]

J: *ʔAyǔp = ʔih-ǎn = mah nút hid g'íg-íh, nukán, tih*
 one=MSC-OBJ=REP here 3pl shoot.arrow-DECL over.here 3sg
 'They shot one man here [gestures], it's said, up to here

ham-g'et-yĩʔ-íh, ʔayǔp = ʔih-ǎn.

go-stand-TEL-DYNM one=MSC-OBJ

[gestures to the back], it (the arrow) went and stuck in, to one man.'

PLE: *Kaʔtít-ít ?*

neck-OBL

'In the neck?'

J: *Kaʔtít-an, nukán tæg-cáʔ-an. Cǎp = ʔih-ǎn = mah nút hó*
 neck-DIR over.here tooth-box-DIR other=MSC-OBJ=REP here liver
 'In the neck, up here in the jaw. Another man, here right through the liver

miníŋ hid g'ig-b'uy-d'əh-ye-yíŋ-íh, ní-n'íh miníŋ !
 direct 3pl shoot.arrow-throw-send-enter-TEL-DECL this-NMZ direct
 they shot an arrow right into him, right through this part! [gestures]'

PM: *Naŋ-yíŋ-íy = mah-áŋ ?*
 lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM=REP-INT
 'He died, they say?'

J: *Naŋ-yíŋ-íy = mah !*
 lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM=REP
 'He died, they say!'

P: *Hup-hipāh-níh yí-d'əh-əh, nɔ-kǎm !*
 RFLX-know-NEG that.ITG-PL-DECL say-IMP2
 'Those folks have no sense, say!'

J: *Hup-hipāh-níh; tǎh-an = ŋy = d'əh hid ŋəg-tǎn,*
 RFLX-know-NEG pig-DIR=who=PL 3pl drink-COND
 'They have no sense/self-control; when the people of Serra dos Porcos

hup-hipāh-níh = mah! ŋūh-mǎh-póg!
 RFLX-know-NEG=REP INTRC-beat-EMPH1
 drink, they have no sense, it's said! They're big fighters!

P: *Nutǎn táŋ ?*
 today REL.INST
 'What about nowadays?'

J: *ŋūh-mǎh-ǎy ŋūhníy nutǎn = hin, wíŋ-níh táé.*
 RFLX-beat-DYNM maybe today=also hear-NEG YET
 'They might be fighting nowadays too, I haven't heard yet.'

P: *Ní-íy híd ?*
 be-DYNM 3pl
 'Are they there (in the village)?'

J: *Ní-íy = mah. ŋOpíd naŋ-yíŋ-íy píđ = mah,*
 be-DYNM=REP immediately lose-consciousness-TEL-DYNM DIST=REP
 'They're there, it's said. They start dying right away, it's said,

yí-d'ǎh-ǎh, hid ?ũh-mǎh-ǎp.
 that.ITG-PL-DECL 3pl RFLX-beat-DEP
 when they fight.'

P: *M'ǎh hid wǎd-ǎy, hid hup-hipãh-nĩh-ĩh, nɔ-kǎm.*
 snake 3pl eat-DYNM 3pl RFLX-know-NEG-DECLsay-IMP2
 'When they eat snake, they lose all self-control, say.'

J: *M'ǎh hid wǎd-ǎy = mah, hid hup-hipãh-nĩh-ĩh.* [Laughs.]
 snake 3pl eat-DYNM=REP 3pl RFLX-know-NEG-DECL
 'When they eat snake, it's said, they lose all self-control.'

P: *Yĩ nɔ-ǎy = mah j'ám yí-d'ǎh-ǎh, yĩ*
 that.ITG say-DYNM=REP DST.CNTR that.ITG-PL-DECL that.ITG
 'That's what they say, that's

nɔ-ǎy j'ám ?ǎh = hũtǎh n'ũh-ũh.
 say-DYNM DST.CNTR 1sg=nephew CNTR-DECL
 what my nephew told.'

J: *Yĩ nɔ-ǎy = mah...*
 that.ITG say-DYNM=REP
 'That's what (they) say...'

P: *?ǎh = hũtǎh = mǎh, pah-áp Penandu, yikán, Manáw-an*
 1sg=nephew=DIM PRX.CNTR-DEP Fernando over.there Manaus-DIR
 'My little nephew, that Fernando, the father of that girl

n'ikán hid hɔk-yĩ?-ip = ?ǎy = cud nĩh ?íp n'ũh-ũh.
 over.there 3pl saw-TEL-DEP=FEM=INFR POSS father CNTR-DECL
 they apparently cut there in Manaus.'²¹⁵

J: *Yĩt-yĩ?. ni-n'ĩh-ĩt píd = mah hid kít-j'ap-d'ǎh-hám-ǎh,*
 thus-TEL this-NMZ-OBL DIST=REP 3pl cut-divide-send-go-DECL
 'That's right. They chopped off right here,

²¹⁵ The girl was reportedly taken to Manaus for an operation and died.

Patí, núh g'ætdóh tíh, núh g'ætdóh nút kit-j'ap...
 Pattie head end EMPH2 head end here cut-divide
 Pattie, the top of (one man's) head, the top of his head they chopped...

núh b'ǝʔ kit-b'ah-d'əh-hí-íy píd=mah, yi-d'əh-əh !
 head cuia cut-split-send-descend-DYNM DIST=REP that.ITG-PL-DECL
 they split right through his skull, it's said!

P: *Yít=mah=nih ! Yít=mah=nih, tíh núh*
 thus=REP=EMPH.CO thus=REP=EMPH.CO 3sg head
 'That's it, they say! That's it, they wrapped up

hi-kop-g'et-g'óʔ-óy...
 FACT-wrap.up-stand-go.about-DYNM
 his head in a cloth...

J: *Yít=mah yúw hid kit-cəg-nəh-yæt-æw-ǎn, nút,*
 thus=REP that.ITG 3pl cut-make.piece-fall-lie-FLR-OBJ here
 'Then, they say, that piece they had chopped off, here, they stuck it

tíh nuhũytúk wob-d'oʔ-kədham-yíʔ-íh ! [Laughs.]
 3sg hat rest.on-take-pass.go-TEL-DECL
 back on like a hat!'

Others: *Tinĩh boné=cudʔũh ! [Laughter]*
 3sg.POSS cap(Pt)=INFR.EPIST
 'Like his cap, apparently!'

PLE: *Naʔ-yíʔ-íy tíh ?*
 lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM 3sg
 'Did he die?'

J: *Naʔ-yíʔ-íy=mah.*
 lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM=REP
 'He died.'

P: *ʔíb'-íy=mah yúw-úh, nə-kǎm.*
 live-DYNM=REP that.ITG-DECL say-IMP2
 'They say he's alive, say.'

J: *ʔib'-íy = mah* *yúw-úh,* *macá-ǎy = mah !*
 live-DYNM=REP that.ITG-DECL regain.consciousness-DYNM=REP
 'He's alive, they say, he got well!

Macá-ǎy = mah *yúw-úh,* *yí*
 regain.consciousness-DYNM=REP that.ITG-DECL that.ITG
 He got well, the man that

nih-ʔě-p = ʔih. *Dǎb-ay = hǎ* *j'ǎh,* *yí-d'ǎh,*
 be.like-PERF-DEP=MSC many-INCH=NONVIS DST.CNTR that.ITG-PL
 that happened to. There are a lot of them, I think,

hid ʔūh-mǎh-póg = hǎ *tíh !* *Naʔ-yíʔ = d'ǎh,*
 3pl INTRC-kill-EMPH1=NONVIS EMPH2 lose.consciousness-TEL=PL
 they fight a lot! Lots of people

dǎb-ay = hǎ ! *ʔAyǔp = ʔǎy-ǎn,* *hǎy-ǎn,* *ní-íy,* *yúp* *hid*
 many-INCH=NONVIS one=FEM-OBJ um-OBJ be-DYNM that.ITG 3pl
 died, I think. There was one woman, um, that woman they

cǐʔ g'ig-ʔeʔ-ní-p = ʔǎy-ǎh. *Nút ní-íh,* *ʔadamáandu*
 calf shoot.arrow-PERF-INFR2-DEP=FEM-DECL here be-DECL Armando
 shot in the calf of the leg. She was here, in Armando's house,

máh, *ní-íy* *n'ít,* *ʔiníh* *mǎy-ǎt.* *Ní-n'íh-ít* *tíh-ǎn*
 near be-DYNM there 1pl.POSS house-OBL this-NMZ-OBL 3sg-OBJ
 there, in our house. In this part (calf) they

hid g'ig-ní-h, *ní-n'íh-ít,* *j'am-ǎp = ʔǎy-ǎn*
 3pl shoot.arrow-INFR2-DECL this-NMZ-OBL DST.CNTR-DEP=FEM-OBJ
 shot her, in this part, that woman,

tíh, *ʔIdá = tǎh ʔín-ǎn.* *Nu-cóʔ* *j'ǎh* *tíh-ǎn* *tíh*
 EMPH2 Idario=child.mother-OBJ this-LOC DST.CNTR 3sg-OBJ 3sg
 Idario's wife. It (the arrow) entered her

kǎdye-ní-hǎʔ. *Nukán tíh* *kǎdyé-ep = mah* *j'ǎh,*
 pass.enter-INFR2-TAG2 over.here 3sg pass.enter-DEP=REP DST.CNTR
 right here. It went in all the way to here,

nukán. G'æǵ kakǎh-an yúp b'otní kədway-ní-ǵy
 over.here bone between-DIR that.ITG hole.through pass.exit-be-DYNM
 to here. Right between the bones, it made a hole right through to the other

tih! Nu-có? ʔũhníy ʔũh-mǎh = d'əh hid háy, hid
 EMPH2 here-LOC maybe INTRC-beat=PL 3pl um 3pl
 side! She was standing approximately here, watching as the fighters, um,

ní-mǐ? = cudʔũh tih key-g'ət-eʔih. ʔǎn piniŋ-ʔě-y
 be-UNDER=INFR.EPIST 3sg see-stand-MS 2sg.OBJ tell.story-PERF-DYNM
 as they were there (fighting), apparently. She herself told me

j'ǎh tih-ǵc. Yúp = pog = mah j'ǎh yú-uw-úc, hí
 DST.CNTR 3sg-EXCL that=EMPH1=REP DST.CNTR that.ITG-FLR-EXCL just
 the story. It happened like this, just

b'ũh ʔín-ǎn g'əç-d'oʔ-b'íyí? nǐh-ǵy = mah, cǐʔí
 horsefly 1pl-OBJ bite-take-only be.like-DYNM=REP electric.shock
 like when a horsefly bites us, it was like an electric (eel)

ni-kəd-hám-ǵy = mah, nút tab'ah-d'oʔ-píd-ay-áh,
 be-pass-go-DYNM=REP here slap-take-DIST-INCH-DECL
 shock; she slapped her leg here [gestures slapping leg],

nu-có? tih tab'ah-d'oʔ-ní-h, d'apũh g'odhó có? tih-ǎn
 here-LOC 3sg slap-take-INFR2-DECL hand palm LOC 3sg-OBJ
 she slapped, um, right here, and then she got another wound in the palm

həm-ní-ǵy = b'ay = cud tih, nút tih tab'ah-d'óʔ-ót! Čǵ? có?!
 sore-be-DYNM=AGAIN=INFR EMPH2 here 3sg slap-take-OBL calf LOC
 of her hand, apparently, where she had slapped! In the calf of the leg!

Tih = ʔín-ǎn = b'ay ni-n'ǵh-ǵt, ni-n'ǵh-ǵt hid kit-b'ah-yí?
 3sg=mother-OBJ=AGAIN this-NMZ-OBL this-NMZ-OBL 3pl cut-split-TEL
 Her mother too, right here, they split her right here [gestures to skin between

ní-b'ay-áh. Kinǐm có?, núp mumǵy
 be-AGAIN-DECL upper.hand LOC this arm
 thumb and fingers!] On her hand, like this her arm was

J: *Niŋ pǎ ʔũhníy j'ǎh hid widnæn-ʔay-ʔě-h...*
 2pl NEG:EX maybe DST.CNTR 3pl arrive.come-VENT-PERF-DECL
 'You all weren't here, maybe, when she arrived.'

Others: *ʔín pǎ, ʔin pǎ = cudʔũhníy.*
 1pl NEG:EX 1pl NEG:EX=INFR.maybe
 'We weren't here, we weren't here, apparently.'

P: *Hǎy-ǎn tíh, j'am-ǎp b'óŋ hid nɔ-póg-owa-ǎn,*
 um-OBJ EMPH2 DST.CNTR-DEP B'óŋ 3pl say-EMPH1-(V)old.woman-OBJ
 'What's-her-name, that one they call B'óŋ,

hid nɔ-pó = wa-ǎn, ʔýy tǎhʔín = mah yúp
 3pl say-EMPH2=old.woman-OBJ who child.mother=REP that.ITG
 they call (her), whose wife is she, do they

j'ám tí ?
 DST.CNTR EMPH.INT
 say?'

Others: *paditó tǎhʔín.*
 Parito child.mother
 'Parito's wife.'

P: *Yúp = po-ǎn ʔũh nukán hid kit-d'əh-nǎn-ní-h...*
 that.ITG=EMPH1-OBJ EPIST over.here 3pl cut-send-come-INFR2-DECL
 'It must have been that one they came to cut, right here [gestures to shoulder].'

P: *Tih = tǎh = d'əh = yí? = mah !*
 3sg=offspring=PL=TEL=REP
 'It was her *sons*, they say!'

J: *Tih = hūtǎh = d'əh = mah j'ǎh yúw-úh.*
 3sg=nephew=PL=REP DST.CNTR that.ITG-DECL
 'It was her nephews, they say.'

P: *Tih = hũtǎh = d'əh = mah j'ǎh yúw-úh, hutóg'.*
 3sg=nephew=PL=REP DST.CNTR that.ITG-DECL niece
 '(OK,) it was her nephews, niece.'

Nukán ! Nukán = cud?ũhníy tih
 over.here over.here=INFR.maybe 3sg
 Right here! Right here, apparently,

pəpə?-hi-g'ǎ?-ǎé? = cud?ũhníy.
 be.rolled.over-descend-hang-PERF=INFR.maybe
 it (the skin) hung down!'

J: *Pííí... Pe? = wá-acáp = pog = cud?ũhníy !*
 INTERJ pain=old.woman-INTS1=EMPH=INFR.maybe
 'Oooh... That's a woman who has suffered a lot, apparently!'

PLE: *mumǔy = cúm-ũ? ?*
 arm=begin-INT
 '(It was) her upper arm?'

P: *Mumǔy = cúm tíh! Mumǔy = cúm nút tíh-ǎn tíh*
 arm=begin EMPH2 arm=begin here 3sg-OBJ 3sg
 'Her upper arm! Here on her upper arm they

kit-næn-d'əh-ní-h ! Núp pupǔg-út ! "Pííí ! Hǒm
 cut-come-send-INFR2-DECL this round.fleshy.part-OBL INTERJ sore
 cut! Here on the fleshy part! "Oooh! You

g'a?ye-ǎé-y = cud ?ám = wa-atí?, "ǎh nǒ-ǎp.
 have.wound-PERF-DYNM=INFR 2sg=RESP-EMPH.TAG 1sg say-DEP
 got wounded?" I said (to her).

J: *Mǒm cú? = d'əh, g'ig-, háy, mǔh cú? = d'əh, teghǒ = teg*
 axe grab=PL shoot.arrow um arrow grab=PL fire=THING
 'Grabbing axes, shoot- um, grabbing arrows, grabbing guns,

cú? = d'əh, wǎn cú? = d'əh ní-íy bíg = mah, hid
 grab=PL knife grab=PL be-DYNM HAB=REP 3pl
 grabbing machetes, thus they always do, when

ʔũh-mæh-tæñ, yi-d'əh-əh, Patí ! Yəʔóm bíg = mah,
 INTRC-beat-COND that.ITG-PL-DECL Pattie dangerous HAB=REP
 they fight, Pattie! They're always

yi-d'əh-əh !
 that.ITG-PL-DECL
 dangerous, it's said!

P: *Nám, nɔ-kæm !*
 poison say-IMP2
 'Poison, say!'

J: *Yəʔóm-icáp bíg = mah, páy = mah.*
 dangerous-INTS1 HAB=REP bad=REP
 'Always really dangerous, they say, (they're) rotten.'

P: *cáp nút tɬh-ən hid hək-, hid*
 other here 3sg-OBJ 3pl saw 3pl
 'Another, here they sawed- they

kít-d'əh-hi-pog-ní-b'ay-áh, nút !
 cut-send-descend-EMPH1-INFR2-AGAIN-DECL here
 cut her, here!'

J: *Cɬʔ-ít = b'ay.*
 calf-OBL=AGAIN
 'In the calf of the leg.'

P: *Cɬʔ-ít = b'ay. Nút = pog ʔũh j'áh cáw-áh, nút,*
 calf-OBL=AGAIN here=EMPH1 EPIST DST.CNTR other-DECL here
 'In the calf of the leg. Here maybe was another, here,

mũh-út; həm b'íyí? = pog j'áh
 arrow-OBL sore only=EMPH1 DST.CNTR
 with an arrow; that woman was completely covered

yú = wa = pow-əh !
 that.ITG=old.woman=EMPH1=DECL
 with wounds!'

J: *Hǒm b'íyí? j'áh* *yú = wa = pow-óh !*
 sore only DST.CNTR that.ITG=old.woman=EMPH1-DECL
 'That woman was covered with wounds!'

P: *Yúp tih = tǎh = d'əh kít-ip máy = yí? = mah;*
 that.ITG 3sg=offspring=PL cut-DEP payment=TEL=REP
 'That was her (B'əŋ's) sons' revenge, it's said;

háý-ăn, cadád-ăn cakáya-át hid cǒh-óh.
 um-OBJ Cadad-OBJ fish.spear-OBL 3pl stick.spear-DECL
 they stuck um, Cadád with a fish-spear.'²¹⁶

PLE: *?íb'-íy tǐh ?*
 live-DYNM 3sg
 'Did she live?'

J: *?íb'-íy = mah. N'ikán yǒh = d'əh*
 live-DYNM=REP over.there medicine=PL
 'She lived, they say. The doctors

yǒh-ni-macǎ-áy = mah.
 medicine-be-gain.consciousness-DYNM=REP
 healed her over there.'

P: *Hǔh-an, nǒh !*
 rapids-DIR say.IMP
 'In São Gabriel, say!'

J: *Hǔh-an.*
 rapids-DIR
 'In São Gabriel.'

PLE: *B'ay-yí? -íy tǐh ?*
 return-TEL-DYNM 3sg
 'Has she returned home?'

²¹⁶ Cadád's sons had cut B'əŋ; B'əŋ's sons retaliated by wounding Cadád.

P: *B'ay-yíʔ-íy = mah, hid b'ay-yíʔ-íy.*
 return-TEL-DYNM=REP 3pl return-TEL-DYNM
 'She's returned, they say, they've returned.'

J: *Tóh hāyám-an. Nút = mah, teghō = teg-ét hid teghō-tǎn,*
 pig town-DIR here=REP fire=THING-OBL 3pl fire-COND
 'To Serra dos Porcos. Here, they say [gestures to thigh], when they shot with
 a gun,

nút hid teghō-d'əh-hám-ǎh, tōk-ót. ʔib'-yíʔ-íy = mah
 here 3pl fire-send-go-DECL thigh-OBL live-TEL-DYNM=REP
 here they shot, in the thigh. They're alive,

yi-d'əh-əw-əp. Ni-n'ǎh-ít = ʔy = d'əh = mah
 that.ITG-PL-FLR-DEP this-NMZ-OBL=who=PL=REP
 it's said. Those shot here [gestures to torso]

naʔ-yíʔ-íh.
 lose.consciousness-TEL-DECL
 died.'

P: *Háwig-an = ʔy = d'əh = mah naʔ-yíʔ-íh.*
 heart-DIR=who=PL=REP lose.consciousness-TEL-DECL
 'Those (shot) in the heart died, it's said.'

J: *ʔín-īp ʔib'-níh kǎh, nu-cóʔ-óy = d'əh-əw-əp. Hī-ní = n'ǎn*
 1pl-DEP live-NEG ADVR here-LOC-DYNM=PL-FLR-DEP only-be=PL.OBJ
 'As for us, we don't survive, the people from here. They

hid wǎd-ǎh, háy = hin...
 3pl eat-DECL um=also
 (in Serra dos Porcos) eat any old thing, um...

P: *Cǎy = n'ǎn...*
 centipede=PL.OBJ
 'Centipedes...'

J: *Cǎy... cǎy = n'ǎn = mah hid, hǎy-an, hǎb-kǎd-yó?*
 centipede centipede=PL.OBJ=REP 3pl um-DIR dry-dry.in.heat-SEQ
 'Centipedes... having dried centipedes out, in the whatchamacallit,

yu?-yó? = mah hid ?ǎg-pó-tíh !
 burn-SEQ=REP 3pl drink-EMPH1-EMPH2
 having burned them (to ashes and mixed with water), they drink them!'

P: *Na?-nǎh hid ni-tég.*
 lose.consciousness-NEG 3pl be-FUT/PURP
 'So that they won't die.'

J: *Na?-nǎh hid ni-tég, n'i-d'ǎh n'ǎh. Hǎy nǎh,*
 lose.consciousness 3pl be-FUT/PURP that-PL CNTR um POSS
 'So that they won't die, those folks. What's-her-name's,

Kǎk nǎh tǎh = d'ǎh yǎ nih-pó-y j'ám
 Kǎk POSS offspring=PL that.ITG be.like-EMPH1-DYNM DST.CNTR
 Kǎk's children do this...

tíh... hǎy... N'ít wǎdǎg'ǎw' hohód-ót ni-pó-y
 EMPH2 um there jacu.sp. clearing-OBLbe-EMPH1-DYNM
 um... (Those things) that are always there in that Jacu-bird Clearing,

yǎh = nih j'ǎh tíh, hǎy = d'ǎh-ǎtíh... húp-ǎn
 FRUST=EMPH.CO DST.CNTR EMPH2 um=PL-EMPH2 person-OBJ
 whatchamacallit... those things that

nǎh-d'ak-tuk-d'o?-bíg = n'ǎn... hǎ-n'ǎh = pog = d'ǎh = mah
 fall-be.against-face.down-take-HAB=PL.OBJ Q-NMZ=EMPH1=PL=REP
 always fall onto people... What the heck are

yúw j'ǎh? Bǎyǎ? = pog = d'ǎh tíh, póh
 that.ITG DST.CNTR spider=EMPH1=PL EMPH2 high
 those things? Spiders! Those that always fly

wayd'o?-g'ǎ?-g'o?-bíg = d'ǎh, cǎcǎc-póg-n'ǎh = d'ǎh,
 fly-be.suspended-go.about-HAB=PL spider.walk-EMPH1-NMZ=PL
 around and hang around up high, that walk in a spidery way,

yi-n'ǎh = n'ǎn = mah *yúp* *n'ǎh* *póh*
 that.ITG-NMZ=PL.OBJ=REP that.ITG CNTR high
 (those people) always take those and

d'oʔ-kæd-g'ǎʔ-yiʔ-píd-ǎh. *Ków* *máj-ǎt*
 take-dry.in.heat-be.suspended-TEL-DIST-DECL hot.pepper basket-OBL
 hang them up (above the fire) to dry out. In the basket (used for drying) hot

hǐ *cacaʔ-yíʔ-íy = mah* *tíh.*
 just interlock-TEL-DYNM=REP EMPH2
 peppers, they say it's just a mass of interlocking (spider's legs).

P: *Híd ʔəg-tég.*
 3pl drink-FUT/PURP
 'For them to drink.'

J: *yǎʔóm...*
 dangerous
 'Dangerous...'

PM: *ʔín-ǎn híd mǎh-ǎt, naʔ-nǎh* *híd ni-tég.*
 1pl-OBJ 3pl kill-OBL lose.consciousness-NEG 3pl be-FUT/PURP
 'So that they won't die when they kill us.'

J: *Tǎʔǎy = d'əh-ət = mah* *híd ʔǎh-mǎh-bí-h.*
 woman=PL-OBL=REP 3pl INTRC-beat-HAB-DECL
 'They always fight with the women.'

Tǎʔǎy = d'əh = hin wǎn *tón = d'əh* *híd ni-bíg = mah,* *cóc*
 woman=PL=also machete hold=PL 3pl be-HAB=REP hoe
 The women too are always holding machetes, they say, always

tón = d'əh *ní-íy* *bíg.* *Híd tǎhʔíp = d'əh-ət = yiʔ* *híd*
 hold=PL be-DYNM HAB 3pl child.father=PL-OBL=TEL 3pl
 holding hoes. They always fight with their

ʔǎh-mǎh-bí-h ! *Yíníy = mah* *yúp*
 INTRC-beat-HAB-DECL that.ITG.be.like.DYNM=REP that.ITG
 husbands! That's why

tãʔǎy = n'an = hin hid mæh-yiʔ-bí-h.
 woman=PL.OBJ=also 3pl beat-TEL-HAB-DECL
 they always hit/kill the women too.'

W: *ʔayǔp = ʔǎy, kaʔǎp = ʔǎy = d'əh teghǔ = teg-ét náʔ-ǎp,*
 one=FEM two=FEM=PL fire=THING-OBL lose.consciousness-DEP
 'One woman, two women died from being shot with guns,

ʔayǔp = ʔǎy, mǔh-ǔt hid g'íg-ip = ʔǎy, ʔayǔp = ʔǎy...
 one=FEM arrow-OBL 3pl shoot.arrow-DEP=FEM one=FEM
 one woman, one they shot with an arrow, one woman...

teghǔ = teg-ét, ʔayǔp = ʔǎy-ǎn d'oʔ-yayag-yíʔ-íy.
 fire=THING-OBL one=FEM-OBJ take-full.of.holes-TEL-DYNM
 with a gun, (they) filled one woman full of holes.

J: *Hó miníŋ = mah hid teghǔ-yíʔ-íh, yúp = ʔǎy-ǎn-ǎh,*
 liver direct=REP 3pl fire-TEL-DECL that.ITG=FEM-OBJ-DECL
 'They shot her right through the liver, it's said, that woman,

ʔayǔp = ʔǎy-ǎn, tãʔǎy-ǎn.
 one=FEM-OBJ woman-OBJ
 one woman, a woman.'

Others: *Taʔacáw-ǎn !*
 adolescent.girl-OBJ
 'A girl!'

J: *Taʔacáw-ǎn. Naʔ-yíʔ-íy ! Děh-an = mah hid*
 adol.girl-OBJ lose.consciousness-TEL-DYNM water-DIR=REP 3pl
 'A girl. She died! They shot her and she fell into the water,

teghǔ-b'uy-tuʔ-yíʔ-íh, deh = mi tǎh-an. Nút tih
 fire-throw-immersed-TEL-DECL water=stream small-DIR here 3sg
 into the stream. She fell like this

tuk-nəh-túʔ-út = yiʔ = mah tih naʔ-yíʔ-íh.
 face.down-fall-immersed-OBL=TEL=REP 3sg lose.consciousness-TEL-DECL
 face down into the water, it's said, and she died.

Tiyiʔ-ǎn = hin yít-yiʔ píd = mah. Hǎy, cam-ǎp hamé
 man-OBJ=also thus-TEL DIST=REP um DST.CNTR-DEP Amelia
 It was the same for a man too. That what's-her-name, Dark Amelia, she

j'á = wa tih piníŋ-īp n'ũh. Hǎy = mah, j'áh
 black=old.woman 3sg tell.story-DEP CNTR um=REP DST.CNTR
 told us the story. Um, they say,

hid ʔũh-mæh-d'əh-cak-kamí = mah, cǎp = ʔih mũh
 3pl INTRC-beat-send-climb-moment.of=REP other=MSC arrow
 when they got up to fight, a man fell with

wæwæ-nɔh-yǎt, cǎp = ʔih mũh wæwæ-nɔh-yǎt,
 stick.out-fall-lie other=MSC arrow stick.out-fall-lie
 an arrow sticking out of him, another fell with an arrow sticking out of

cǎp = ʔih mũh wæwæ-nɔh-yǎt, ni-pó-y = mah j'áh
 other=MSC arrow stick.out-fall-lie be-EMPH1-DYNM=REP DST.CNTR
 him, another fell with an arrow sticking out of him, that's how

yi-d'əh-ətíh ! Hid nih-póg = mah j'am tíh...
 that.ITG-PL-EMPH2 3pl be.like-EMPH1=REP DST.CNTR EMPH2
 it was! That's how it was for them, it's said...

J: *tǎh náʔ = wig, nř mǔy tú-an hid mũh*
 pig lose.consciousness=seed 1sg.POSS house near-DIR 3pl arrow
 'Like pig-corpses, they lay stuck with arrows

wæwæ-næn-yǎt-æp, nó-ǔy j'áh yúw-up tíh...
 stick.out-come-lie-DEP say-DYNM DST.CNTR that.ITG-DEP EMPH2
 all around my house, that one told it...

hicih-nřh = mah tíh! Nǎm, hǎy-ǎt, mǔm = teg hid
 FACT.tire-NEG=REP EMPH2 poison um-OBL metal=THING 3pl
 lots of them! Poison, with um, they shot them with

g'íg-ip... papad-næn-yǎt-ǎy = mah yi-d'əh-áh,
 shoot.arrow-DEP moan-come-lie-DYNM=REP that.ITG-PL-DECL
 metal-tipped arrows... they were lying around moaning,

hid g'ig-póg = d'əh tíh ! Yúp-yi? nǐh-ít
 3pl shoot.arrow-EMPH1=PL EMPH2 that.ITG-TEL be.like-OBL
 those who they'd shot! Would you have

key-tǎʔ-ǎy ʔám-ǎp ?!
 see-CNTRFCT-DYNM 2sg-DEP
 the courage to see that?

P: *ʔǎh-ǎp key-tuk-nǐh = hǎ.*
 1sg-DEP see-want-NEG=NONVIS
 'As for me, I don't want to see it.'

J: *ʔǎh-ǎp key-tuk-nǐh mún-úh ! D'apúh-út ʔuh-mǎh = n'ǎn*
 1sg-DEP see-want-NEG INTS2-DECL hand-OBL INTRC-beat-PL.OBJ
 'As for me, I don't want to see it a bit! Even when they fight with hands,

n'úh, hid ʔuh-tab'ah-hi-d'əh-ət = yiʔ, tǔʔəh-kəðham-yíʔ-icáp
 CNTR 3pl INTRC-slap-FACT-send-OBL=TEL run-pass.go-TEL-INTS I
 when they are slapping each other, I always run

bǐg ʔǎh-ǎw-ǎp... yǔʔóm = pog j'ǎh ʔuh-mǎh-ǎh...
 HAB 1sg-FLR-DEP dangerous=EMPH1 DST.CNTR INTRC-beat-DECL
 away as fast as I can... Fighting is really scary...'

P: *Wǎn-át = ʔy = d'əh, mǔh-út = ʔy = d'əh, nǎm muh-út = ʔy = d'əh...*
 knife-OBL=who=PL arrow-OBL=who=PL poison arrow-OBL=who=PL
 'Those with machetes, those with arrows, those with poison arrows...'

yǐ nǔ-ǔy j'ǎh ʔǎh = hǔtǎh n'úh-úh.
 that.ITG say-DYNM DST.CNTR 1sg=nephew CNTR-DECL
 that's how my nephew told it. (They're) always just one

Hǐ kadaw-yíʔ-íy bǐg d'apb'uy = teg-éh.
 just form.clump.of.sticks-TEL-DYNM HAB flesh.throw=THING-DECL
 big crowd of weapons.'

J: *Mmmm... ʔamǐh hayám-an = ʔy = d'əh*
 2sg.POSS town-DIR=who=PL
 'Mmmm... I guess the people of your town/country

ʔũh-mæh-key-nĩh-ay-hǎ-ʔ, *Patí ?*
 INTRC-beat-see-NEG-INCH-NONVIS-INT Pattie
 don't fight much, Pattie?'

PLE: *ʔũh-mæh-æý !*
 INTRC-beat-DYNM
 'They fight!'

J: *ʔũh-mæh-æý híd ?*
 INTRC-beat-DYNM 3pl
 'They fight?'

PLE: *Teghǎ = teg-ét...*
 fire=THING-OBL
 'With guns...'

J: *Teghǎ = teg-ét? Key-ʔě-y ʔám = b'ay ?*
 fire=THING-OBL see-PERF-DYNM 2sg=AGAIN
 'With guns? Have you seen it?'

PLE: *Key-nĩh.*
 see-NEG
 'I haven't seen it.'

J: *Kæʔ-yíʔ-íy híd ?*
 bury-TEL-DYNM 3pl
 'Do they (die and) get buried?'

PLE: *Kæʔ-yíʔ-íy.*
 bury-TEL-DYNM
 'They (die and) get buried.'

P: *Tedevicǎw-ǎt ʔin káy = d'əh n'ũh, máetʔah, Manáw-ǎt ʔin*
 television-OBL 1pl see=PL CNTR downriver Manaus-OBL 1pl
 'We saw it on the television, downriver, we saw it

kéy = d'əh n'ũh, naw-nĩh mún ?ũh-mæh-pó-y
 see=PL CNTR good-NEG INTS2 INTRC-beat-EMPH1-DYNM
 in Manaus,²¹⁷ there were loads

j'áh yi-d'əh-əp tíh !
 DST.CNTR that.ITG-PL-DEP EMPH2
 of them fighting!'

J: *Teghǎ = d'əh = yí? kád-əh! Teghǎ = d'əh = yí? kád-əh !*
 fire=PL=TEL pass-DECL fire=PL=TEL pass-DECL
 'Loads of non-Indian people! Loads of non-Indian people!'

P: *Bómba-át ?ũh-yu?-yí? = d'əh, ní-íy yi-d'əh-əh.*
 bomb(Pt)-OBL INTRC-burn-TEL=PL be-DYNM that.ITG-PL-DECL
 'They were burning each other up with bombs.'

J: *?ámĩh hayám-át bómba ní-íy = mah tíh j'áh, Patí ?*
 2sg.POSS town-OBL bomb(Pt) be-DYNM=REP 3sg DST.CNTR Pattie
 'Are there bombs in your town/country, Pattie?'

PLE: *Hĩ-n'ĩh "bómba-á?" ?*
 Q-NMZ bomb-INT
 'What's "bomba"?'

J: *Nãm tíh, hid ?ũh-mæh-yí?-n'ĩh nãm.*
 poison EMPH2 3pl INTRC-beat-TEL-NMZ poison
 'Poison, poison they use for fighting.'

PLE: *Key-nĩh, ní-íy ?ũhníy.*
 see-NEG be-DYNM maybe
 'I haven't seen (them), maybe (they) exist.'

J: *Ní-íy ?ũhníy.*
 be-DYNM maybe
 'Maybe they exist.'

²¹⁷ The speaker had recently been taken to Manaus for medical treatment.

[General laughter.]

PLE: *Ní-íy = cud.*

be-DYNM=INFR
 ‘I guess they exist.’

J: *Ní-íy = cud. ?Am key-níh = cud-uh. ?Am key-níh hid*
 be-DYNM=INFR 2sg see-NEG=INFR-DECL 2sg see-NEG 3pl
 ‘They probably do exist. You just haven’t seen them, apparently. While

bí? - ?ũhníy. Yíkán-áy = d’əh = yí? = mah j’áh
 work-maybe over.there-INCH=PL=TEL=REP DST.CNTR
 you’re not seeing, maybe they are making them. The people from there

?ũh-mæh-tubud-icáp = pog bíg-íh !
 INTRC-beat-INTS3-INTS1=EMPH1 HAB-DECL
 always really fight a lot, they say!’

P: *Manáw-át ?ũh-mæh-æcáp = pog yi-d’əh-əh !*
 Manaus-OBL INTRC-beat-INTS1=EMPH1 that.ITG-PL-DECL
 ‘In Manaus they really fight a lot!’

Manáw-át hid ?ũh-mæh-æcáp = pog yi-d’əh-əh.
 Manaus-OBL 3pl INTRC-beat-INTS1=EMPH1 that.ITG-PL-DECL
 In Manaus they really fight a lot.

Yəh = mæh = yí? tedevicáw-át hid bahád-ap...
 above=DIM=TEL television-OBL 3pl appear-DEP
 They appear on the surface of the television...²¹⁸

²¹⁸ The speaker makes little distinction between what actually goes on in Manaus and what appears on the television in Manaus. Note that ‘on the surface of the television’ (rather than in/on the television) is considered the more appropriate expression.

4. Spells

Text 5: *Biʔid ʔid* (A curing spell)

By Manuel Dias (Mandu), Barreira Alta, June 2002.

At one point during my stay in Barreira, I fell sick with a rash and fever. Mandu, a *kəð = ʔih* (i.e., a person – normally a man over fifty years old – who is not a shaman, but has skill in healing and possesses a repertoire of spells for different occasions; cf. Tukano *kumu*, see discussion in §15.1.3.3) treated me in the following manner: after mashing ingá bark with water in a cup, he sat by himself in a corner of the house for about ten to fifteen minutes while he quietly murmured a spell over the cup. When this was completed, he proceeded to rub the wet bark over my arms and legs. This procedure was repeated three or four times over the course of a few days, until I was well. Later, I asked him to repeat the spell he had used to cure me for the tape recorder, and he agreed. The text of this spell is given here,²¹⁹ and a version of a similar spell (also by Mandu) is provided on the CD accompanying this volume.

Biʔid ʔid-íp, yúp = ʔǎw... ʔǎw məh-w'ob-d'əh-hí-íy...
 blessing speech-DEP that.ITG=swarm swarm kill-set-send-descend-DYNM
 ‘The curing-spell, that swarm²²⁰ ... (I) send (the words of the spell) down onto the swarm to kill (the sickness)...’

yúw-ǎn dəh j'ap-g'et-w'ob-d'əh-hí-íy... Yúw-ǎn
 that-OBJ water snap-stand-set-send-descend-DYNM that-OBJ
 (the words) go down to break through the water²²¹ (on the victim)... Having

hũʔ-d'əh-ham-yóʔ, hũʔ-d'əh-ham-yóʔ, núp, b'ab'ǎʔ = ʔǎw-ǎt,
 end-send-go-SEQ, end-send-go-SEQ this imbaúba=swarm-OBL
 finished sending that (water) away, having finished sending (it) off, this, with the imbaúba swarm,

²¹⁹ The quiet, mumbling delivery that is conventional when uttering spells makes transcription difficult. There are therefore a number of short gaps in this text (indicated by [...]), marking passages which my consultant and I were unable to transcribe.

²²⁰ It is *tih = pɛʔ-ǎw*, the ‘sickness-swarm’, which causes the illness; the curer sends the words of the spell via the substance used for treatment (in this case, mashed bark) to kill or expel the swarming insect-like beasts.

²²¹ The swarming sickness-beasts have put their illness-bringing water (saliva) onto the victim.

b'ab'ǎ? = *teg hi-bǎg = d'ǎh, yi-d'ǎh nǎh, yi-d'ǎh nǎh*
 imbaúba=tree FACT-swarm=PL that.ITG-PL POSS that.ITG-PL POSS
 the ones that swarm around the imbaúba trees, their, their

děh, yi-d'ǎh nǎh nɔcǎw deh, děh
 water that.ITG-PL POSS saliva water water
 water, their saliva, (the words)

j'ap-g'et-d'ǎh-hí-íy j'ám-ǎh.
 snap-stand-send-descend-DYNM DST.CNTR
 go down to break through the water.

Yi-d'ǎh nǎh hǎy' = b'ah, ʔid-cod-g'et-d'ǎh-hí-icáp, tǎh-ǎn
 that.ITG-PL POSS snip=SPLIT speak-untie-stand-send-descend-INTS1 3sg-OBJ
 Their scissors,²²² (I) send the speech down strongly to untie,²²³ I said to it (the

ʔǎh nɔ-ǎh. Yúw-ǎn hũʔ-ham-yóʔ, kapíʔ pɔ mǎʔ
 1sg say-DECL that-OBJ end-go-SEQ caapi thicket under
 illness or its embodiment). Having sent those off, to the one who came to exist

hib'ah-ní-íw-ǎn, híd = n'ǎn ʔǎh ʔíd-íh... Yi-d'ǎh nǎh
 FACT:be.created-be-FLR-OBJ 3pl=PL.OBJ 1sg speak-DECL that.ITG-PL POSS
 under the *caapi* thickets,²²⁴ to them I spoke... to them. Those ones'

děh, yi-d'ǎh nǎh nɔcǎw deh, ʔǎh ʔǎw
 water that.ITG-PL POSS saliva water 1sg swarm
 water, their saliva, I send down (spell)

mæh-w'ob-d'ǎh-hí-íy, ʔǎh mæh-w'ob-d'ǎh-hí-íy ...
 kill-put.onto-send-descend-DYNM 1sg kill-put.onto-send-descend-DYNM
 to kill that swarm, I send (it) down to kill (it) ...

²²² The sickness-beasts have scissors ('snipping-things') that inflict sores on the victim.

²²³ Someone has 'tied up' the victim with a sickness-inducing curse; the healer 'unties' the victim with the words of the spell.

²²⁴ A spirit and/or swarm of sickness beasts that embody the illness.

naw-cáp-áh... ʔid-mæh-w'ob-d'əh-hí-íy ... tʃh-ǎn ʔǎh
 good-INTS1-DECL speak-kill-put.onto-send-descend-DYNM 3sg-OBJ 1sg
 it's very well done... (I) send my words down to kill (it)... I say to

nó-ǎh. Yi-d'əh-ǎn hũʔ-ham-yóʔ, yi-d'əh-ǎn tukcʃʔ = n'ǎn
 say-DECL that.ITG-PL-OBJ finish-go-SEQ that.ITG-PL-OBJ ant.type=PL.OBJ
 it (the sickness). Having sent all of these (the swarm of bee-like insects) away, I

ʔǎh dʃʔ-ǎh, tukcʃʔ = d'əh yi-d'əh nǎh dǎh, yi-d'əh
 1sg count-DECL ant.type=PL that.ITG-PL POSS water that.ITG-PL
 count those ants,²²⁵ the stinging-ants, their water, their

nǎh hæy' = b'ah, yi-d'əh nǎh yǔd, ʔid-wəc-key-mí
 POSS snip=SPLIT that.ITG-PL POSS clothes speak-pull.off-see-?
 scissors, their clothes,²²⁶ (I) spoke to pull (the clothes)

j'am-ǎh... tʃh-ǎn ʔǎh nó-ǎh. Yúw-ǎn hũʔ-ham-yóʔ, ni-d'əh nǎh,
 DST.CNTR 3sg-OBJ 1sg say-DECL that-OBJ finish-go-SEQ this-PL POSS
 off... I said this to it (sickness). Having sent that away, these ones',

tæ = d'əh nǎh, yi-d'əh nǎh dǎh ʔǎh nó-ǎh. Yi-d'əh nǎh
 ant.type=PL POSS that.ITG-PL POSS water 1sg say-DECL that.ITG-PL POSS
 the *tæ* ants', their water, I said. Those ones'

hæy' = b'ah ʔǎh nó-ǎh, yi-d'əh nǎh yǔd,
 snip=SPLIT 1sg say-DECL that.ITG-PL POSS clothes
 scissors, I said, those ones' clothes,

yi-d'əh nǎh nuhũytúk = teg g'í...
 that.ITG-PL POSS hat=THING heat
 their hat of heat²²⁷ ...

²²⁵ A type of ant that comes out at night and has a painful sting.

²²⁶ The sickness covers the victim with burning 'clothes' of fever and pain.

²²⁷ A 'hat' of heat and pain is set down on the victim by the illness and/or curse.

miŋ-j'ap-w'ob-d'əh-hí-íy... *tíh-ăn* *ʔăh* *nó-ốh*.
 dizzy-break.in.two-set-send-descend-DYNM 3sg-OBJ 1sg say-DYNM
 (I send the spell to) break the dizziness (of the illness)... I said to it.

Hũʔ-d'əh-ham-yíʔ-íh, *yít-íh,* *hũʔ-d'əh-ham-yóʔ,*
 finish-send-go-TEL-DECL thus-DECL finish-send-go-SEQ
 (The spell) finished sending it all away, thus, having finished sending

bóg, *kǎk* *b'ák-át* *hi-bóg* *bíg=d'əh,* *yi-d'əh* *nǐh*
 bee maniwara.ants nest-OBL FACT-swarm HAB=PL that.ITG-PL POSS
 it all away, bees, the ones that always swarm in the maniwara nests, their black

bóg *j'á=d'əh,* *yi-d'əh* *nǐh* *hǎy'=b'ah,* *ʔăh* *nó-ốh,*
 bee black=PL that.ITG-PL POSS snip=SPLIT 1sg say-DECL
 bees, their scissors, I said,

yi-d'əh *nǐh* *děh,* *ʔăh* *nó-ốh,* *yi-d'əh* *nǐh* *tát=n'ăn*
 that.ITG-PL POSS water 1sg say-DECL that.ITG-PL POSS ant.type=PL.OBJ
 their water, I said, their *tát* ants,

ʔăh *hũʔ-d'əh-ham-yíʔ-íh.* *Tát=n'ăn* *ʔăh*
 1sg finish-send-go-TEL-DYNM ant.type=PL.OBJ 1sg
 I sent them all away. Having sent off

hũʔ-d'əh-ham-yíʔ-yóʔ, *naw-cáp-áh* *tíh-ăn,* *naw-cáp-áh*
 finish-send-go-TEL-SEQ good-INTS1-DECL 3sg-OBJ good-INTS1-DECL
 all the *tát* ants, it was really good for her (victim), really good

tíh-ăn, *yǎh* *deh,* *yúp* *kud'úp,* *yǎh* *deh,* *cab'ăd-át,*
 3g-OBJ medicine water that pain.end medicine water leg.strip-OBL
 for her; medicine water, that pain-diminisher,²²⁸ medicine water, with a leg-
 strip,

²²⁸ *kud'úp* normally refers to the bitter sap that makes an unripe banana taste bad; here *ʔid-kud'úp-* (*ʔid-* 'speak') is said to be spell-language for the gradual ending of pain through the curing process.

cab'ăd-ăt *ʔid-tu-g'et-muhũn-icáp...* *tĩh-ăn* *ʔãh* *nó-śh...*
 leg.strip-OBL speak-descend.into-stand-INTS2-INTS1 3sg-OBJ 1sg say-DECL
 with a leg-strip²²⁹ (I) speak (the sickness) all the way down into the ground... I
 said this to it...'

5. Songs

As described in §1.4, the Hupd'əh normally sing only on days of caxiri-drinking, and then it is usually the women who do most of the singing (although men also participate). However, the two songs transcribed here were actually sung to me on the morning after a drinking day, when people had more or less sobered up. I had wanted to record some songs, but found it nearly impossible to get a good recording in the context of the drinking party because of the background noise and slurred speech of the singers. Despite having been sung somewhat out of their normal context, these both appear to be fairly good examples of the typical Hup song. Both songs are included on the CD provided here.

Hup songs are composed of improvised, somewhat stylized texts set to a set of standard, repetitive melodies. Typical motifs include the singer's frequent reference to herself in the third person, and the heavy use of discourse particles (particularly relating to emphasis). Repetition of words and syllables is also a common device; repeated syllables are here glossed RS (Repeated Syllable). The songs typically stress the singer's identity – with a focus on clan membership – and, in many cases, her relationship to the person to which the song is addressed. The singer often portrays herself as alone and 'mixed in' to the local group, to which she feels she does not really belong. These themes are likewise common in the songs of the River Indians (see Chernela 1988); the Hup and River Indian songs are also very similar in their melodies, performance style, etc., and this singing style is probably a widely shared regional practice.

In Song 1, the singer refers to the fact that her father was actually a member of the Dâw group, who came upriver long ago while working for a river merchant; he married a Hup woman and settled in the region.²³⁰ The singer and her

²²⁹ A *cab'ăd* is a woven fiber strip traditionally tied below the knee to plumpen the calf of the leg (plump calves are considered a sign of health). Because no such strip was actually used in the curing process, reference to it here is presumably a metaphor for restoring health.

²³⁰ This is the only such case of Dâw-Hup intermarriage that I encountered.

siblings – who grew up speaking Hup and Tukano – were given a Hup clan membership and were incorporated into the Hup community (whereas normally in the Vaupés the children’s ethnic affiliation would be the same as their father’s).

Text 6: Song

Ana Oliveira, Tat Deh, August 2000.

Núp j’áh ?áh-ãp-áh, núp j’áh ?áh-ãp-áh,
 this DST.CNTR 1sg-DEP-DECL this DST.CNTR 1sg-DEP-DECL
 ‘Here I am, here I am,

núp j’áh ?áh-ãp-áh, núp = ?áy = mæh-ãp-ãh.
 this DST.CNTR 1sg-DEP-DECL this=FEM=DIM-DEP-DECL
 here I am, this little woman.

Hĩ g’et-g’ó-op = ?áy = mæh j’áh, kamá
 only stand-go.about-DEP=FEM=DIM DST.CNTR Dâw
 (I am) a woman who is just passing through, a little Dâw

húp = ?áy = mæh-ãp-ãh, nó-õp húp = ?áy = mæh j’áh.
 person=FEM=DIM-DEP-DECL say-DEP person=FEM=DIM DST.CNTR
 woman,²³¹ so says this little woman.

Cokw’et-nog’öd-tæh = ?ih nĩh tæh?ín = mæh-ãp-ãh,
 toucan-mouth-offspring=MSC POSS child.mother=DIM-DEP-DECL
 I am the little wife of a Toucan’s-Beak Clansman,

?áh-ãti?-ti?-ti?, núp j’áh-át-ha-hát hikakýy
 1sg-EMPH.TAG-RS-RS this land-OBL-RS-RS mix.in
 I am, I’ve only come and mixed in (among the others) in

næn-g’ét-éy = hõ j’áh, ?áh = hin-ĩh bá?, nó-õp,
 come-stand-DYNM=NONVIS DST.CNTR 1sg=also-DECL PROTST say-DEP
 this land, I feel, but I too say this,

²³¹ The singer uses *hup* here in a general ‘Nadahup (Makú) person’ sense, i.e., as opposed to River Indians or non-Indians.

húp = ʔǎy = mæh j'ǎh j'ǎh ʔǎh = tiʔ, ʔǎh = tiʔ-tiʔ.
 person=FEM=DIM DST.CNTR RS 1sg=EMPH.TAG 1sg=EMPH.TAG-RS
 I'm just a little Hup ('Makú') woman, I am.

Nř ʔín = d'əh hűyʔah, núp j'áh-ah-át
 1sg.POSS mother=PL after this land-RS-OBL
 'After my mother and mother's sisters, I think about how I've ended up

ni-nɔh-g'ét-éy = hõ páh ʔǎh = hin-ǎh báʔ-báʔ.
 be-fall-stand-DYNM=NONVIS PRX.CNTR 1sg=also-DECL PROTST-RS
 living here in this land too.

Núp j'ǎh-j'ǎh-j'ǎh nř ʔináč = d'əh hűyʔah
 this DST.CNTR-RS-RS 1sg.POSS mother's.sister=PL after
 In this land, after my mother's sisters,

ni-nɔh-g'ét-éy = hõ j'ǎh ʔǎh = tiʔ, ʔǎh = tiʔ-tiʔ.
 be-fall-stand-DYNM=NONVIS DST.CNTR 1sg=EMPH.TAG 1sg=EMPH.TAG-RS
 I guess I've wound up living here too, I have.

Bab'ʔǎy ní-ĩp ʔǎp, bab'ʔǎy ní-ĩp ʔǎp, núp
 younger.sister be-DEP NEG:ID younger.sister be-DEP NEG:ID this
 'One with no younger sister, one with no younger sister,

j'áh-át, cɔkw'ət-nɔg'öd-tǎh = d'əh nř j'áh-át
 land-OBL toucan-mouth-offspring=PL POSS land-OBL
 in this land, I think about how I'm living here in the land of the

ni-nɔh-g'ét-éy = hõ páh ʔǎh = tiʔ, ʔǎh = tiʔ-tiʔ.
 be-fall-stand-DYNM=NONVIS PRX.CNTR 1sg=EMPH.TAG 1sg=EMPH.TAG-RS
 Toucan's Beak Clansmen. I am.

Nř ʔǎy = dóʔ = n'ǎn key-d'əh-ham-yóʔ-yóʔ, nř tǎh = d'əh...
 1sg.POSS FEM=child=PL.OBJ see-send-go-SEQ-RS 1sg.POSS offspring=PL
 I go about seeing my daughters, my sons...²³²

²³² That is, she has established a family here and is among kin.

ní ?áh nɔh-g'ét-éy=hõ j'áh ?áh=ti?
 this 1sg fall-stand-DYNM=NONVIS DST.CNTR 1sg=EMPH.TAG
 thus I think about how I'm living here,

?áh=ti?-ti?
 1sg.EMPH.TAG-RS
 I am.

?áh=ti?, ?áh=ti? nř ?ũh=n'ǎn
 1sg=EMPH.TAG 1sg=EMPH.TAG 1sg.POSS oppos.sex.sibling=PL.OBJ
 'I, I, having brought my brothers

núp j'áh-ah-át kək-næn-g'et-yó?, cɔkw'ət-nɔg'ød-tǎh=d'əh
 this land-RS-OBL pull-come-stand-SEQ toucan-mouth-offspring=PL
 to live in this land, I'm thinking about how I am living

nřh j'áh-át ni-nɔh-g'ét'éy=hõ páh ?áh=ti?
 POSS land-OBL be-fall-stand-DYNM=NONVIS PRX.CNTR 1sg=EMPH.TAG
 in the land of the Toucan's Beak Clansmen, I am,

?áh=ti?-ti? Nř nɔ-ɔp=?ǎy j'áh ?ǎh=ti?-ti?
 1sg=EMPH.TAG-RS this say-DEP=FEM DST.CNTR 1sg=EMPH.TAG-RS
 I am. I am one who is saying thus, I am,

nɔ-ɔy=mah.
 say-DYNM=REP
 so they say.

Núp=?ǎy=mæh-ǎp-ǎh, núp=?ǎy=mæh-ǎp-ǎh, núp j'áh-j'áh-j'áh.
 this=FEM=DIM-DEP-DECL this=FEM=DIM-DEP-DECL this DST.CNTR-RS-RS
 'This little woman, this little woman, this one.

Dog-m'ǎh-tǎh=?ǎy=mæh-ǎp-ǎh, nɔ-ɔp húp=?ǎy
 vapisuna-snake-offspring=FEM=DIM-DEP-DECL say-DEP person=FEM
 A little Vapisuna-Snake Clanswoman, I'm a woman

j'áh *?áh = ti?* *?áh = ti?* *?Áh = ti?* *?áh = ti?*
 DST.CNTR 1sg=EMPH.TAG 1sg=EMPH.TAG 1sg=EMPH.TAG 1sg=EMPH.TAG
 who says thus, I am. I, I,

nó-ǔy = mah-mah *tíh-íp-íh,* *núp* *j'áh-j'áh-j'áh,*
 say-DYNM=REP-RS 3sg-DEP-DECL this DST.CNTR-RS-RS
 she says, they say, this,

tíh *g'ǔh-ǔy = nih* *nóh-g'et-g'ó?-óh,* *nutæñ* *tíh*
 3sg be2-DYNM=EMPH.CO fall-stand-go.about-DECL today 3sg
 she is likewise thus, just passing through, today she is thus

g'ǔh-ǔy = nih *nóh-g'et-g'ó?-óh.* *Nó-ǔti?-ti?*
 be2-DYNM=EMPH.CO fall-stand-go.about-DECL say-EMPH.TAG-RS
 just passing through.²³³ Thus says

núp = ?áy-áh, *ní* *nóh-g'et-ep = hǔ* *j'áh-j'áh*
 this=FEM-DECL this fall-stand-DEP=NONVIS DST.CNTR-RS
 this woman, thus thinking about just passing through,

?áh = ti? *?áh = ti?*
 1sg=EMPH.TAG 1sg=EMPH.TAG
 I am, I am.

Núp *j'áh* *?áh-ãp-áh,* *?ám* *key-tuk-tæñ-æw-æh,*
 this DST.CNTR 1sg-DEP-DECL 2sg see-want-COND-FLR-DECL
 'Here I am, if you want to see,

núp *j'áh-j'áh* *?áh = ti?* *?áh = ti?* *teghǔ = ?áy = mæh.*
 this DST.CNTR-RS 1sg=EMPH.TAG 1sg=EMPH.TAG non.Indian=FEM=DIM
 here I am, I am, non-Indian girl.

Núp *j'áh* *?áh-ãp-áh,* *teghǔ = n'ãn* *toqtúg...* *ní*
 this DST.CNTR 1sg-DEP-DECL non.Indian=PL.OBJ son.in.law this
 Here I am, one who has non-Indians for sons-in-law,

²³³ Here she is referring to me, the visitor.

nɔ-té-p = ʔǎy j'áh ʔáh-ǎtiʔ-ti?...
 say-FUT-DEP=FEM DST.CNTR 1sg-EMPH.TAG-RS
 I am one who will say thus, I am...²³⁴

Text 7: Song

Amélia, Tat Deh/Cabari do Japu, August 2000.

ʔáh = hin-áh nɔ-ǎy = nih = mah tíh-ip tí
 1sg=also-DECL say-DYNM=EMPH.CO=REP 3sg-DEP DEP.EMPH
 'I too, she says, they say

j'ǔg hup = ʔǎy = mæh, j'ǔg hup = ʔǎy = mæh páh-páh-páh-páh
 forest person=FEM=DIM forest person=FEM=DIM PRX.CNTR-RS-RS-RS
 a little woman of the forest, a little woman of the forest

ʔáh-ǎp-ǎti? nɔ-ǎy = nih = mah.
 1sg-DEP-EMPH.TAG say-DYNM=EMPH.CO=REP
 I am, they say.

Núp = ʔǎy-ǎp-áh, núp = ʔǎy-ǎp-áh, děh-g'æt yǎh
 this=FEM-DEP-DECL this=FEM-DEP-DECL water-head waters
 This woman, this woman, I am a woman of the headwaters,

húp = ʔǎy ʔáh-ǎp-áh děh-g'ætyǎh-an = ʔǎy = ʔǎy
 person=FEM 1sg-DEP-DECL water-headwaters-DIR=who=FEM
 I am a woman from the headwaters,

ʔáh-tiʔ-ti?, ʔám-ǎn ʔám-ǎn. Deh = mi
 1sg-EMPH.TAG-RS 2sg-OBJ 2sg-OBJ water=stream
 to you, to you (I tell this). You want to listen

²³⁴ Her two oldest daughters have traveled to São Gabriel and are living there (they are virtually the only Hupd'əh in the region who have done so for any length of time); Ana speculates that they will marry non-Indian men.

g'ætyǰh-an = ʔǔy = n'ǎn = nih *páh-páh,* *ʔám*
 headwaters-DIR=who=PL.OBJ=EMPH.CO PRX.CNTR-RS 2sg
 to the people from the headwaters of the streams,

wiʔ-tú-utiʔ *ʔám* *nó-tǎn-ǎp,* *teghō = ʔǎy-ǎp* *nó-ǰy*
 listen-want-EMPH.TAG 2sg say-COND-DEP non.Indian=FEM-DEP say-DYNM
 if you say so, the non-Indian girl says so.

páh-páh. *Nó-ǰy = nih = mah* *núp = ʔǎy-ǎp-ǎh,*
 PRX.CNTR-RS say-DYNM=EMPH.CO=REP this=FEM-DEP-DECL
 This woman says, it's said,

dog-m'ǎh-tǎh = ʔǎy *ʔǎh-ti-tiʔ,* *g'et-g'ó-op = ʔǎy,*
 vapisuna-snake-offspring=FEM 1sg-EMPH.TAG-RS stand-go.about-DEP=FEM
 I'm a Vapisuna-Snake Clanswoman, a woman who is just passing through,

g'et-g'ó-op = ʔǎy. *Nǎ* *ʔín = ʔǔh = d'əh*
 stand-go.about-DEP=FEM 1sg.POSS mother=oppos.sex.sibling=PL
 a woman just passing through. This is perhaps not

nǎh *j'áh-át* *ʔǎp* *ʔǔhníy* *páh-páh,* *núp = ʔǎy-ǎp*
 POSS land-OBL NEG:ID maybe PRX.CNTR-RS this=FEM-DEP
 my mother's brothers' land, this woman

yǎ *nó-ǰw-ǰh.*
 that.ITG say-FLR-DECL
 says thus.

Nó-ǰy = nih = mah *tǎh-íp-itíʔ,* *cǎp = ʔǎy* *tóg = yiʔ,*
 say-DYNM=EMPH.CO=REP 3sg-DEP-EMPH.TAG other=FEM daughter=TEL
 'She says, it's said, another woman's daughter, another Hup woman's

cǎp *húp = ʔǎy* *tóg = yiʔ = mah-mah* *g'et-g'óʔ-op = ʔǎy,*
 other person=FEM daughter=TEL=REP-RS stand-go.about-DEP=FEM
 daughter, it's said, I am a woman who is just passing through,

g'et-g'óʔ-op = ʔǎy páh-páh-páh ʔáh-ǎp-ǎtiʔ.
 stand-go.about-DEP=FEM PRX.CNTR-RS-RS 1sg-DEP-EMPH.TAG
 just passing through.

wǎç-y'ǎʔ-tǎh = ʔǎy, wǎç-y'ǎʔ-tǎh = ʔǎy,
 dove-feces-offspring=FEM dove-feces-offspring=FEM
 Dove-Feces Clanswoman, Dove-Feces Clanswoman,²³⁵

nó-ǎy = nih = mah páh tǎh-íp-itiʔ.
 say-DYNM=EMPH.CO=REP PRX.CNTR 3sg-DEP-EMPH.TAG
 thus she says, it's said.'

²³⁵ This clan name was not recognized by my consultant; it may be an alternative or joke name for the Vapisuna-Snake clan, to which the singer belongs.

Appendix II

Summary of Hup grammatical formatives

Form	Morphological formative type	Identity/ word-class of host ²³⁶	Function	Other relevant functions of same form	Section reference
<i>-an</i>	Boundary Suffix	Nouns	Directional oblique case (direction, location)		§4.3.2
		Verbs	Adverbializer (in direction/place of)		§18.2.6.2
<i>-ǎn</i>	Boundary Suffix	Nouns	Object case		§4.3.1
		Verbs	Relative clause (object of main clause)		§18.2.3
<i>-ǎnd'əh</i>	Nominal suffix	Nouns	Associative plural		§4.4.6
<i>-áh</i>	Boundary Suffix	Various hosts	Focus		§15.2.3
<i>-ay</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Inchoative aspect		§12.3
		Nouns, various hosts	Inchoative focus		§7.1.1
<i>bá?</i>	Particle	Clauses	Protestive		§15.3.5
<i>-b'ay-</i> <i>= b'ay</i>	Enclitic, Inner Suffix	Verbs	Repetition or return to a state; 'again'	Verb <i>b'ay-</i> 'return'	§12.9.2
	Enclitic	Nouns	Topic-switch marker		§7.1.3
<i>bé</i>	Particle	Clauses (?)	Acquiescence		§15.3.8
<i>bíg</i> <i>-bì(g)-</i>	Particle Inner Suffix	Verbs	Habitual aspect	Adjective <i>bíg</i> 'old'; adverbial 'a long time'	§12.8
<i>cáp</i>	Particle	Various hosts	Intensifier	Noun <i>cáp</i> 'body'	§15.1.1
<i>-Vcáp</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs			
<i>-cǐp-</i> <i>-cǐw-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Completive aspect	Verb <i>cǐp-</i> 'finish basket'	§12.5
<i>có?</i>	Particle	Various hosts	Locative; shift of attention among entities		§7.9, §10.3.1

²³⁶ As observed in §3.1, predicate adjectives pattern like verbs except where otherwise noted.

Form	Morphological formative type	Identity/ word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form	Section reference
= <i>cud</i> - <i>cud</i> -	Enclitic Inner Suffix	Predicates Verbs	Inferred evidential	Verb <i>cud</i> - 'be inside'	§14.9.3
		Nouns	Deceased referent marker		§7.3
- <i>d'ǎh</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	'Acting alone' marker		§15.3.7
= <i>d'əh</i>	Enclitic	Nouns	Plural, collective		§4.4
		Verbs	Relative/converbal clauses (plural)		§18.2.3
<i>dǐ?</i>	Particle	Verbs	Verbal diminutive, 'do V a little'	Verb <i>dǐ?</i> - 'remain'	§12.10
- <i>Vhǎ?</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs		Affirmative word <i>hǎ?</i> 'yes, all right'	§15.3.3
= <i>hǎ?</i>	Enclitic	Various hosts	Interactive tag		
= <i>hə</i>	Enclitic	Imperative verbs			
= <i>ha?</i>	Enclitic	Various hosts	Interrogative alternative, doubt		§17.4.4
<i>hi</i> -	Prefix	Verbs	Factitive		§11.4
= <i>hin</i>	Enclitic	Nouns, adverbials	Parallel comparison		§7.7
= <i>hǎ</i>	Enclitic	Predicates	Nonvisual evidential	Verb <i>hǎh</i> - 'make noise'	§14.9.2
- <i>hǎ(h)</i> -	Inner Suffix	Verbs			
<i>hup</i> -	Prefix	Verbs	Reflexive (passive voice)	Noun <i>húp</i> '(Hup) person';	§11.1
= <i>hup</i>	Enclitic	Nouns	Reflexive intensifier	Adj. <i>húp</i> 'good, new, beautiful'	§7.1.4
<i>hǔy</i>	Particle	Nouns (animate)	'Following' post-position	Other locative postpositions: <i>hǔy?ah</i> 'after, behind'; <i>hǔyan</i> 'in water'	§10.3.1.1
<i>j'ám</i> <i>j'ǎh</i>	Particle	Various hosts, predicates	Contrast: distant past	Adverb <i>j'ám</i> 'yesterday'	§13.4.2
<i>kǎh</i>	Particle	Predicates	Adversative conjunction		§18.1.4
- <i>kamí</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs Nominals	Temporal adverbial		§18.2.6.5
- <i>kǎm</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Imperative (strong)		§17.5.2
- <i>ké?</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	'Acting alone' marker		§15.3.7

Form	Morphological formative type	Identity/ word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form	Section reference
<i>keyó?</i>	Particle	Verbs (Object- case nouns)	Cause	Verb 'see' + Sequential: <i>key-yó?</i>	§18.2.6.6
<i>-kəd-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Elative (comparative & superlative)	Verb <i>kəd-</i> 'pass'	§10.2.2.2
<i>-kéd</i>	Suffix	Adjectives			§15.1.3.3
<i>-kodé</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Verbal diminutive, 'do verb a little'	Cf. Tukano <i>kure</i>	§12.10
<i>=mah</i>	Enclitic	Various hosts	Reportative evidential		§14.9.4
<i>-mah-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs			
<i>m'ǎé</i>	Particle	Nominals	Measure (comparable time, size, or distance)		§10.2.2.1
<i>=mǎh</i>	Enclitic	Various hosts	Diminutive intensifier: (unimportance, smallness, closeness)	Noun <i>mǎh</i> 'younger sister'	§15.1.4
<i>-mǎh-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs			
<i>-mǎ?</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Adverbial: simultaneous events (different actors); concessive	Locative postposition <i>mǎ?</i> 'under'	§18.2.6.4
	Particle	Various hosts	Concessive		
<i>mún</i> <i>muhún</i>	Particle	Negated verbs, Adjectives	Intensifier		§15.1.2
<i>nǎé</i>	Particle	Free	Reinforced negation		§16.1.7
<i>-ni-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Inferred evidential	Verb <i>ni-</i> 'be, exist'	§14.9.6
<i>=nih</i>	Enclitic	Various hosts, clauses	Emphatic Coordinator		§18.1.3
<i>-nǎh</i>	Boundary Suffix (Inner Suffix)	Verbs	Verbal negation		§16.1
<i>nǎh</i>	Particle	Nouns	Possessive (alienable)	Verb <i>nǎh-</i> 'be like'	§5.2
<i>-n'ǎh</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Nominalizer, complementizer		§18.2.5
<i>-nǎŋ</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Cooperative	2pl pronoun <i>nǎŋ</i>	§14.5
<i>n'ǎh</i>	Particle	Nouns	Contrast between entities		§7.8

Form	Morphological formative type	Identity/ word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form	Section reference
<i>páh</i>	Particle	Various hosts, predicates	Contrast: temporally proximate		§13.4.1
<i>pǎ</i>	Predicative particle	Nouns	Negation of existence or presence		§16.2
<i>píd</i>	Particle	Nouns	Quantifier		§6.5.2
<i>-pid-</i>	Particle, Inner Suffix	Verbs	Repetition, iterativity, durativity		§12.9.1
<i>=pog</i>	Enclitic	Various hosts			
<i>-pog-</i> <i>-po-</i> <i>-wog-</i> <i>-wo-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Emphasis	Adjective <i>póg</i> 'big'	§15.2.1
<i>tá?</i>	Particle	Nouns	Related instance marker		§7.6
<i>tán</i>	Particle	Various hosts, predicates	Contrast: future	Adverb <i>tán</i> 'later'	§13.4.3
<i>tǎ</i>	Particle	Verbs, other predicates	Persistent		§12.11
<i>-tǎn</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Conditional		§14.1
<i>=tæn</i>	Enclitic	Nouns	Comparable amount; size or time	Factitive <i>hi-tǎn</i> can act as a free verbal predicate with comparative function	§10.2.2.1
<i>-tǎ?</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Counterfactual, avertive	Cf. verbs <i>hitǎ?</i> - 'imitate'; <i>tǎ?</i> - <i>key</i> 'weigh', etc.	§14.2
<i>té</i>	Particle	Free	Spatial/temporal adverbial 'until'	Cf. Portuguese <i>até</i> 'until' (space/time)	§18.2.6.7
<i>-téǵ</i>	Boundary Suffix, Inner Suffix	Verbs	Future (main clauses) Purpose (subordinate clauses)	Generic 'thing' bound noun = <i>teg</i> ; noun <i>tǐǵ</i> 'stick, wood'	§13.1
<i>-te-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Future		
<i>tí</i>	Particle	Subordinate clauses	Emphasis		§15.3.1.2
<i>tǐ</i>	Particle	Interrogative clauses	Interrogative emphasis		§15.3.1.1

Form	Morphological formative type	Identity/ word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form	Section reference
= <i>tíʔ</i>	Enclitic	Nouns	Emphatic tag		§15.3.1.4
- <i>Vtíʔ</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs			
<i>tíh</i>	Particle	Clauses	Emphasis		§15.3.1.3
= <i>tíh</i>	Enclitic	Verbs	Counterfactual		§14.3
<i>tíh</i> =	Proclitic or bound nominal	Nouns, Adjective NPs	Default bound noun, Adjective nominalizer	3sg pronoun <i>tíh</i>	§5.4 §6.6
- <i>tuk-</i> - <i>tu-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Volition, proximative (imminent future)	Verb <i>tuk-</i> 'want'	§13.2
= <i>wəd</i> = <i>wa</i>	Enclitic	Nouns	Respect markers (male/gender- neutral and female)	Bound nouns <i>wəhád</i> 'old man'; <i>wá</i> 'old woman'	§7.4
<i>yǎ</i>	Particle	Interroga- tive clauses	Interactive tag		§15.3.2
<i>yá</i>	Particle	Affirmative clauses			
- <i>Vyá</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs in affirmative clauses			
<i>yǎéh</i>	Particle	Verbs, predicate nominals	Frustrative mood	Verb <i>yǎéh-</i> 'request, order'	§14.4
- <i>yǎéh-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs			
- <i>yíʔ-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Telic aspect		§12.6
= <i>yíʔ</i>	Enclitic	Nouns	Contrastive emphasis		§7.1.2
		Adverbs, clauses	Adverbializer		§10.2 §18.2.6.1
- <i>yóʔ</i>	Boundary Suffix	Verbs (Oblique case nouns)	Sequential		§18.2.6.3
<i>ʔǎp</i>	Particle	Predicate nominals; clauses	Negation of identity		§16.3
<i>ʔǎp</i>	Particle or bound form	Nouns, numerals	Quantifier		§6.5.3
- <i>ʔay-</i>	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Venitive (spatial dislocation in event)		§12.7

Form	Morphological formative type	Identity/ word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form	Section reference
-ʔeʔ- -ʔe-	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Perfective aspect		§12.4
-ʔeʔ	Nominal suffix	Predicate nominals			
= ʔih	Enclitic	Various hosts	Emphasis	Masculine / gender-neutral bound noun	§15.2.2
-Vʔih	Boundary Suffix	Verbs			
ʔó	Particle	Free	Clause linking (usually disjunction)	Cf. Portuguese <i>ou</i> 'or'	§18.1.5
ʔūh-	Prefix	Verbs	Interactional (reciprocal)		§11.2
-ʔūh-	Inner Suffix	Verbs	Applicative	Noun ʔūh 'sibling of opposite sex'	§11.3
-ʔūh	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Jussive		§14.7
ʔūh	Particle	Various hosts	Epistemic modality		§14.8
= ʔūy	Nominal enclitic	Noun + Directional or Object case	Indefinite associative 'one from X place; associated with X'	Interrogative pronoun ʔūy 'who'	§7.5
-Vh	Boundary Suffix	Clause-final constituents	Declarative mood Hortative marker		§17.3.2 §13.3
-Vp	Boundary Suffix	Verbs, clauses	Dependent marker		§18.2.4
		Nouns, various hosts	Topic marker		§7.1.5
-Vt	Boundary Suffix	Nouns	Oblique case (location, instrument, etc.)		§4.3.4
		Verbs, clauses	Adverbializer (place or time of) Relative clauses		§18.2.6.2 §18.2.3
-Vw-	Inner Suffix	Various hosts	Emphasis		§15.2.4
			Clause-combining		§18.1.2
					§18.2.3
-Vy	Boundary Suffix	Verbs (Nouns and a few particles)	Dynamic aspect		§12.2
			(Attributive marker)		§5.1.4
-Vyik	Boundary Suffix	Clause-final constituents, esp. verbs	Exclusive (relates to one participant alone)		§15.3.6

Form	Morphological formative type	Identity/ word-class of host	Function	Other relevant functions of same form	Section reference
-V?	Boundary Suffix	Verbs	Interrogative mood		§17.4
		Various hosts	Interrogative focus		
Bare verb stem + high (falling) tone		Verbs	Imperative mood		§17.5.1
Bare verb stem		Verbs	Apprehensive mood		§14.6

Appendix III

Glossary of regional terms²³⁷

<i>açai</i>	palm species with edible fruit; <i>Euterpe precatoria</i>
<i>acará</i>	fish species
<i>arú</i>	cool period of the rainy season; lasts about a week
<i>aturá</i>	large basket manufactured exclusively by the Nadahup peoples; used by other peoples for carrying manioc and other goods
<i>bacaba</i>	palm species with edible fruit; <i>Oenocarpus bacaba</i>
<i>beiju</i>	flat bread made from bitter manioc
<i>benzamento</i>	healing or protective spell; ‘blessing’
<i>buriti</i>	palm species with edible fruit; <i>Mauritia flexuosa</i>
<i>caapi</i>	hallucinogenic drink made from the vine <i>Banisteriopsis caapi</i>
<i>caatinga</i>	area of Amazonian forest with extremely sandy soil; marked by smaller trees and certain specific plants and animals
<i>cabari</i>	tree sp. with edible fruit
<i>cachaça</i>	Brazilian sugar-cane rum
<i>cará</i>	plant with edible tuber; <i>Dioscorea</i> sp.
<i>caraná</i>	palm species used for thatching roofs; <i>Mauritiella armata</i>
<i>carurú</i>	poke-weed (plant with edible leaves); <i>Phytolacca</i> sp.
<i>caxiri</i>	beer brewed from manioc
<i>cipó</i>	(cipó títica) vine used for basket-making and tying; <i>Heteropsis spruceana</i>
<i>coca</i>	plant of which the leaves are powdered and eaten for a caffeine-like effect; also called <i>ipadu</i> ; <i>Erythroxylum coca</i>
<i>cubiu</i>	plant with edible fruit; <i>Solanum sessiliflorum</i>
<i>cucura</i>	wild grape species; <i>Pourouma cecropiifolia</i>
<i>cuia</i>	gourd bowl or dipper
<i>cunurí</i>	tree with edible nuts; <i>Cunuria spruceana</i>
<i>curare</i>	arrow and dart poison; made from a vine
<i>curauá</i>	pineapple type
<i>Curupira</i>	malignant forest spirit with long red hair and feet attached backwards; lures people to him in order to eat them
<i>cutia</i>	Black Agouti; <i>Dasyprocta fuliginosa</i> (small animal)
<i>cutivara</i>	Green Acouchy; <i>Myoprocta pratti</i> (small animal)
<i>dabacurí</i>	region-wide reciprocal presentation ritual; most often involves wild fruit
<i>imbaúba</i>	tree species; <i>Cecropia sciadophylla</i>
<i>envira</i>	tree species whose bark is used for slings and basket tumplines
<i>farinha</i>	coarse dry meal made from bitter manioc

²³⁷ Most of these terms are of Nheengatú origin; some are Portuguese. Thanks to Pieter van der Veld for the Latin names of plants, and to Marc de Bont for his considerable help in identifying the birds.

<i>igapó</i>	area of forest along the rivers that is flooded during the rainy season
<i>igarapé</i>	stream
<i>inambú</i>	tinamou (bird species)
<i>ingá</i>	any of a group of related trees having sweet edible seed pods; <i>Inga sp.</i>
<i>jacamim</i>	Grey-winged Trumpeter (bird species)
<i>jacundá</i>	fish species
<i>jandiá</i>	fish species
<i>japu</i>	Yellow-rimmed Cacique (bird species)
<i>japurá</i>	tree species with edible fruit; <i>Erismia japura</i>
<i>japurutú</i>	woodwind instrument, about five feet long, played with a reed
<i>jirau</i>	grid made from lashed sticks; suspended above fire for smoking meat and fish, or built inside house for placing belongings
<i>kapiwayá</i>	ritual song cycle, sung and danced by men; words are unintelligible and are passed down by memorization
<i>mamanga</i>	bee species
<i>mandí</i>	fish species
<i>manicuera</i>	sweet drink made from cooking the poisonous juice left over from processing bitter manioc
<i>maniwa</i>	manioc plants
<i>mawaco</i>	small tube-shaped whistle held vertically
<i>mingau</i>	thick morning drink made from tapioca, salt, and water; drunk warm
<i>mojeca</i>	thick, spicy fish stew
<i>mutum</i>	small turkey species, lives in holes in the ground
<i>mucucú</i>	tree species with large inedible brown nuts
<i>paca</i>	small animal; <i>Agouti paca</i>
<i>pajé</i>	shaman
<i>paraná</i>	shortcut across a river loop; usually via a small connecting waterway
<i>pium</i>	small biting fly species
<i>piraracú</i>	large fish species
<i>patauí</i>	palm species; <i>Jessenia bataua</i>
<i>paxiuba</i>	palm species whose trunk splits into flat sections like planks; <i>Socratea exorrhiza</i>
<i>puçanga</i>	love-charm
<i>pupunha</i>	palm species with edible fruit; <i>Bactris gasipaes</i>
<i>quinhapira</i>	broth made from hot peppers in which beiju is dipped, often flavored with fish, meat, or wild fruits
<i>roça</i>	slash-and-burn field; primarily for manioc but also bananas, hot peppers, etc.
<i>sauva</i>	species of large edible ants; a delicacy
<i>shibé</i>	drink made from farinha softened in water
<i>tapiri</i>	small temporary shelter made from poles and palm thatch; typically erected in forest camps and intended to last for a few days or weeks only
<i>taracué</i>	ant species; makes a clicking sound
<i>timbó</i>	vine that is beaten in streams so that its poison will stun the fish; <i>Lonchocarpus sp.</i>
<i>tipití</i>	woven tube used to squeeze the poisonous juice out of bitter manioc mash
<i>tocandira</i>	ant species; extremely painful sting
<i>traira</i>	fish species

<i>tucumá</i>	palm species with edible fruit; <i>Astrocaryum aculeatum</i>
<i>tucunaré</i>	fish species
<i>tucupí</i>	poisonous liquid left over from manioc processing
<i>turí</i>	tree species whose wood is used for torches
<i>ucuqui</i>	tree species with edible fruit; <i>Pouteria ucuqui</i>
<i>umari</i>	tree species with edible fruit; <i>Poraqueiba serica</i>
<i>urucu</i>	plant whose seeds yield a bright red dye; used to paint the body, etc.
<i>uacú</i>	tree species with edible fruit; <i>Monopteryx uacu</i>
<i>wirapisuna</i>	tree species with edible fruit; <i>Gnetum sp.</i>
<i>Yurupari</i>	region-wide ritual complex involving sacred trumpets forbidden to women and children

Appendix IV Photographs



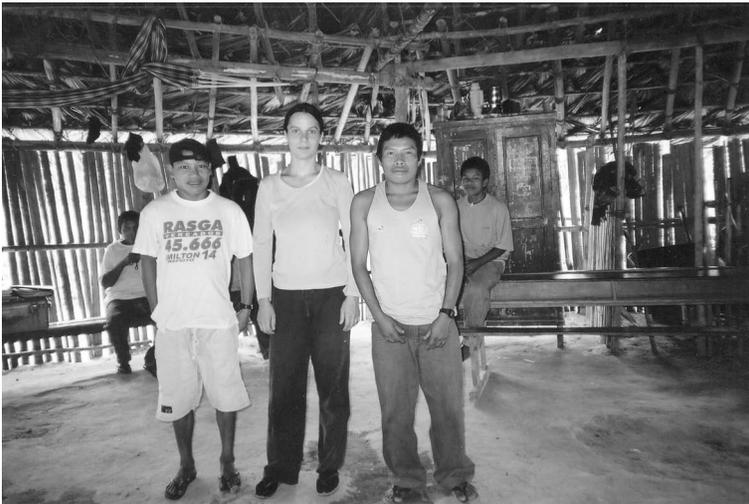
Photograph 1. Pedro Pires Dias



Photograph 2. Manuel Dias



Photograph 3. Teresa Monteiro serving caxiri



Photograph 4. Sabino Monteiro, Pattie Epps, Americo Monteiro



Photograph 5. Jocemar and Denilson Dias with their pet toucan



Photograph 6. Paulina Monteiro making an atura basket



Photograph 7. Tat Deh residents traveling to Pij Deh (Cabari do Japu) for a dabacuri



Photograph 8. Tat Deh residents in a forest encampment



Photograph 9. Aracy Pires squeezing manioc mash in a tipiti



Photograph 10. Tat Deh residents distributing japurá fruit at a dabacuri

References

Aikhenvald, Alexandra

- 1996 Areal diffusion in northwest Amazonia: The case of Tariana. *Anthropological Linguistics* 38 (1): 73–116.
- 1999a Serial constructions and verb compounding: Evidence from Tariana (North Arawak). *Studies in Language* 23 (3): 469–498.
- 1999b Areal diffusion and language contact in the Içana-Vaupés basin, Northwest Amazonia. In *The Amazonian Languages*, R. M. W. Dixon and Alexandra Aikhenvald (eds.), 385–415. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- 2000a Areal typology and grammaticalization: The emergence of new verbal morphology in an obsolescent language. In *Reconstructing Grammar*, Spike Gildea (ed.), 1–37. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- 2000b *Classifiers: A Typology of Noun Categorization Devices*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- 2002a *Language Contact in Amazonia*. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.
- 2002b Typological parameters for the study of clitics, with special reference to Tariana. In *Word*, R. M. W. Dixon and Alexandra Aikhenvald (eds.), 42–78. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- 2003a *A Grammar of Tariana*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- 2003b Evidentiality in typological perspective. In *Studies in Evidentiality*, Alexandra Aikhenvald and R. M. W. Dixon (eds.), 33–62. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- 2005 *Evidentiality*. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.
- 2006 Serial verb constructions in typological perspective. In *Serial Verb Constructions*, Alexandra Aikhenvald and R. M. W. Dixon (eds.), 1–68. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Aikhenvald, Alexandra and R. M. W. Dixon

- 1998a Dependencies between grammatical systems. *Language* 74: 56–80.
- 1998b Evidentials and areal typology: A case study from Amazonia. *Language Sciences* 20: 241–257.

Aissen, Judith

- 2003 Differential object marking: Iconicity vs. economy. *Natural Language and Linguistic Theory* 21 (3): 435–483.

Athias, Renato

- 1995 Hubde-Maku et Tukano. Relations inégales entre deux sociétés du Vaupés Amazonien (Brésil). Ph. D. diss., Université de Paris X, Nanterre.

- 2002 Saúde, medicina tradicional e programas de saúde entre os povos indígenas do Rio Negro [Health, traditional medicine, and health programs among the indigenous peoples of the Rio Negro]. In *Saúde Indígena em São Gabriel da Cachoeira* [Indigenous Health in São Gabriel da Cachoeira], Maria do Carmo Brandão, Nílton Cezar de Paula, and Renato Athias (eds.), 7–18. Recife: Liber Gráfica e Editora Ltda.
- 2004 Indigenous traditional medicine among the Hupd'äh-Maku of Tiquié River (Brazil). Paper presented at the conference 'Indigenous peoples' right to health: Did the International Decade of Indigenous Peoples make a difference?' December 9–10, London.
- Athias, Renato and Alex Shankland
 2007 Decentralisation and Difference: Indigenous Peoples and Health System Reform. *IDS Bulletin* (Brighton) 38 (1): 37–47.
- Balée, William
 1999 Modes of production and ethnobotanical vocabulary: a controlled comparison of Guajá and Ka'apor. In *Ethnoecology: Knowledge, Resources, and Rights*, T. L. Grayson and B. Blount (eds.), 24–40. Athens: University of Georgia Press.
- Bamonte, Gerardo
 1972 De um trabalho de campo do autor: Localização de aldeias Macus na área do Rio Tiquié (alto Rio Negro, Amazonas) [From fieldwork of the author: Localization of Maku villages in the area of the Rio Tiquié (Upper Rio Negro, Amazonas)]. *Congresso Internazionale degli Americanisti*, Rome, Italy, 439–446.
- Barnes, Janet
 1990 Classifiers in Tuyuca. In *Amazonian Linguistics: Studies in Lowland South American Languages*, Doris Payne (ed.), 273–292. Austin: University of Texas Press.
 1999 Tucano. In *The Amazonian Languages*, R. M. W. Dixon and Alexandra Aikhenvald (eds.), 207–226. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Barnouw, Victor
 1963 *Culture and Personality*. Homewood, Illinois: Dorsey Press.
- Beuchat, Henri and Paul Rivet
 1910 Affinités des langues du sud de la Colombie et du nord de l'Équateur: groupes Paniquita, Coconuco et Barbacoa. *Le Muséon*, Louvain, tome XI, 33–67 and 141–198.
- Bickel, Balthasar
 1999 Grammatical relations, agreement, and genetic stability. Manuscript, University of California at Berkeley.
- Bickel, Balthasar and Johanna Nichols
 2007 Inflectional morphology. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, 2nd ed., Timothy Shopen (ed.), 174–240. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Blake, Barry J.
 1990 *Relational Grammar*. London: Routledge Press.

- 2001 *Case*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Blažek, Václav
 1999 *Numerals: Comparative Etymological Analyses and their Implications*. Masarykova Univerzita V Brně.
- Blevins, Juliette
 1993 Klamath laryngeal phonology. *International Journal of American Linguistics* 59: 237–279.
 2004 *Evolutionary Phonology: The Emergence of Sound Patterns*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Boersma, Paul and Weenink, David
 2007 Praat: Doing phonetics by computer (Version 4.6.38 [and previous versions]) [Computer program]. Retrieved November 2007 (latest version) from <http://www.praat.org/>.
- Bossong, Georg
 1980 L'objet direct prépositionnel dans les langues romanes: Contribution à une typologie des relations syntaxiques de base. *I6e Congrès International de Linguistique et Philologie Romanes (Palma de Mallorca 1980)* [actes non publiés].
 1983 Animacy and markedness in universal grammar. *Glossologia* 2: 7–20.
 1985a *Empirische Universalienforschung. Differentielle Objektmarkierung in den Neuiranischen Sprachen*. Tübingen: Gunter Narr.
 1985b Markierung von Aktantenfunktionen im Guaraní. Zur Frage der differentiellen Objektmarkierung in nicht-akkusativischen Sprachen. In *Relational Typology*, Frans Plank (ed.), 1–29. Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
 1991 Differential object marking in Romance and beyond. In *New Analyses in Romance Linguistics*, Douglas Kibbee and Dieter Wanner (eds.), 143–170. (Current Issues in Linguistic Theory 69.) Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins.
 1998 Le marquage différentiel de l'objet dans les langues d'Europe. In *Actance et Valence*, J. Feuillet (ed.), 193–258. Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Bowerman, Melissa and Eric Pederson
 1993 Topological relations pictures. In *Manual for the Space Stimuli Kit 1.2*, Eve Danziger and D. Hill (eds.), 40–50. Nijmegen: Max Planck Institute for Psycholinguistics.
- Brandão Lopes, Aurise
 1995 Fonologia da língua Yuhup: Uma abordagem não-linear [Yuhup phonology: A non-linear approach]. M. A. thesis, Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina, Brazil.
- Brandão Lopes, Aurise and Steve Parker
 1999 Aspects of Yuhup phonology. *International Journal of American Linguistics* 65 (3): 324–342.

- Broschart, Jürgen
 2000 Isolation of units and unification of isolates: the gestalt-functions of classifiers. In *Systems of Nominal Classification*, Gunter Senft (ed.), 239–269. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Brown, Lea
 2001 A grammar of Nias Selatan. Ph. D. diss., University of Sydney.
- Bruce, Leslie
 1988 Serialization: From syntax to lexicon. *Studies in Language* 12: 19–49.
- Bruzzi, A. A.
 1977 *A Civilização Indígena do Vaupés* [The Indigenous Civilization of the Vaupés]. Rome: LAS.
- Buchillet, Dominique
 1992 Os Índios da região do alto rio Negro. História, etnografia, e situação de terras [The Indians of the Upper Rio Negro region. History, ethnography, and location]. Manuscript, Universidade de Brasília/ORSTOM.
- Bybee, Joan L.
 1985 *Morphology: A Study of the Relation between Meaning and Form*. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins.
- Bybee, Joan L., William Pagliuca and Revere Perkins
 1991 Back to the future. In *Approaches to Grammaticalization*, Vol. 2, Elizabeth Traugott and Berndt Heine (eds.), 17–58. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Bybee, Joan L., Revere Perkins, and William Pagliuca
 1994 *The Evolution of Grammar: Tense, Aspect and Modality in the Languages of the World*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Cabalzar, Aloisio and Carlos Alberto Ricardo
 1998 *Povos Indígenas do Alto e Medio Rio Negro*. São Paulo: Instituto Socioambiental and São Gabriel da Cachoeira: FOIRN (Federação das Organizações Indígenas do Rio Negro).
- Cabrera, Gabriel, Carlos Franky, and Dany Mahecha
 1994 Aportes a la etnografía de los Níkak y su lengua – aspectos sobre fonología segmental. *Ethnologie*. Bogotá: Universidad Nacional de Colombia.
 1999 *Los Níkak: Nómadas de la Amazonía colombiana*. Santafé de Bogotá: Universidad Nacional de Colombia, Fundación Gaia – Amazonas.
- Campbell, Lyle
 1997 *American Indian Languages*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Cathcart, Marilyn E.
 1972 Cagua grammar, Write-up Stage 2. Manuscript, SIL.
 1979 Fonología del Cagua. *Sistemas Fonológicos de Idiomas Colombianas*, Vol. 4. Lomalinda, Colombia: SIL.

- Cathcart, Marilyn E. and Stephen H. Levinsohn
 1977 The encoding of chronological progression in Cacia narratives. In *Discourse Grammar: Studies in Indigenous Languages of Colombia, Panama, and Ecuador*, part 2, Robert Longacre and Frances Woods (eds.), 69–94. (SIL Publications in Linguistics and Related Fields 52 [2].) Dallas: SIL and University of Texas at Arlington.
- Chafe, Wallace and Joanna Nichols
 1986 *Evidentiality: The Linguistic Coding of Epistemology*. Norwood, NJ: Ablex.
- Chappell, Hilary and William McGregor
 1995 Prolegomena to a theory of inalienability. In *The Grammar of Inalienability*, Hilary Chappell and William McGregor (eds.), 3–30. Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Chappell, Hilary and William McGregor (eds.)
 1995 *The Grammar of Inalienability*. Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Chaumeil, Jean-Pierre
 1993 Des esprits aux ancêtres: Procédés linguistiques, conceptions du langage et de la société chez les Yagua de l'Amazonie péruvienne. *L'Homme* 126–128: 409–427.
- Chernela, Janet
 1988 Gender, language, and placement in Uanano songs and litanies. *Journal of Latin American Lore* 14 (2): 193–206.
 1993 *The Wanano Indians of the Brazilian Amazon: A Sense of Space*. Austin: University of Texas Press.
- Chung, Sandra and Alan Timberlake
 1985 Tense, aspect, and mood. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, Vol. 3, Timothy Shopen (ed.), 202–257. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Comrie, Bernard
 1976 *Aspect*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 1985 *Tense*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 1989 *Language Universals and Linguistic Typology: Syntax and Morphology*, 2nd ed. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
 2005 Endangered numeral systems. In *Bedrohte Vielfalt: Aspekte des Sprach(en)tods*, Jan Wohlgemuth and Tyko Dirksmeyer (eds.), 203–230. Berlin: Weissensee Verlag.
- Corbett, Greville
 2000 *Number*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Craig, Colette Grinevald
 1986 Jacalteco noun classifiers: A study in language and culture. In *Noun Classes and Categorization*, Colette Craig (ed.), 263–295. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Croft, William
 1990 *Typology and Universals*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

- Crowley, Terry
 1982 *The Paamese Language of Vanuatu*. (Pacific Linguistics B-87.) Canberra: Pacific Linguistics.
 1995 Inalienable possession in Paamese. In *The Grammar of Inalienability*, Hilary Chappell and William McGregor (eds.), 383–432. Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
 2002 *Serial Verbs in Oceanic: A Descriptive Typology*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Curnow, Timothy Jowan
 2002 Evidentiality and me: The interaction of evidentials and first person. In *Proceedings of the 2001 Conference of the Australian Linguistic Society*, Cynthia Allen (ed.). Available at <http://linguistics.anu.edu.au/ALS2001/proceedings.html>.
- DeLancey, Scott
 1986 Toward a history of Tai classifier systems. In *Noun Classes and Categorization*, Colette Craig (ed.), 437–452. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
 1997 Mirativity: The grammatical marking of unexpected information. *Linguistic Typology* 1: 33–52.
- Del Vigna, Dalva
 1991 Segmentos complexos da língua Yuhup [Complex segments of the Yuhup language]. M. A. thesis, Universidade de Brasília, Brazil.
- Denny, J. Peter
 1976 What are noun classifiers good for? *Chicago Linguistics Society* 12: 122–132.
- Derbyshire, Desmond
 1979 *Hixkaryana*. Amsterdam: North Holland.
- Derbyshire, Desmond and Doris Payne
 1990 Noun classification systems of Amazonian languages. In *Amazonian Linguistics: Studies in Lowland South American Languages*, Doris L. Payne (ed.), 243–272. Austin: University of Texas Press.
- Diessel, Holger
 1999 *Demonstratives: Form, Function, and Grammaticalization*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
 2003 The relationship between demonstratives and interrogatives. *Studies in Language* 27 (3): 635–655.
- Dixon, R. M. W.
 1982 *Where Have All the Adjectives Gone? And Other Essays in Semantics and Syntax*. Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
 1988 *A Grammar of Boumaa Fijian*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Dixon, R. M. W. and Alexandra Aikhenvald
 1999 Introduction. In *The Amazonian Languages*, R. M. W. Dixon and Alexandra Aikhenvald (eds.), 1–21. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 2002 Word: A typological framework. In *Word*, R. M. W. Dixon and Alexandra Aikhenvald (eds.), 1–41. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

- Dixon, R. M. W. and Alexandra Aikhenvald (eds.)
 1999 *The Amazonian Languages*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 2002 *Word*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Dobrushina, Nina
 2003 Zooming into modality's semantic map: Focus on volitionals. Abstract for the ALT V Conference, Cagliari, Italy, Sept., 2003.
- Dobrushina, Nina, Johan van der Auwera, and Valentin Goussev
 2005 The optative. In *World Atlas of Language Structures*, Matthew Dryer, Martin Haspelmath, David Gil, and Bernard Comrie (eds.), 298–301. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Donohue, Mark
 1999 *A Grammar of Tukang Besi*. Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Dryer, Matthew
 1992 The Greenbergian word-order correlations. *Language* 68 (1): 81–138.
 2005 Polar questions. In *World Atlas of Language Structures*, Martin Haspelmath, Matthew Dryer, David Gil, and Bernard Comrie (eds.), 470–473. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Du Bois, John W.
 1987 The discourse basis of ergativity. *Language* 63 (4): 805–855.
- Durie, Mark
 1997 Grammatical structures in verb serialization. In *Complex Predicates*, Alex Alsina, Joan Bresnan, and Peter Sells, (eds.), 289–354. Stanford: CSLI Publications.
- Elderkin, Edward D.
 1991 Clause structure and tone in Sandawe. *York Papers in Linguistics* 15: 93–115.
- Epps, Patience
 2005a Areal diffusion and the development of evidentiality: Evidence from Hup. *Studies in Language* 29 (3): 617–650.
 2005b Language endangerment in Amazonia: The role of missionaries. In *Bedrohte Vielfalt: Aspects of Language Death*, Jan Wolgemuth and Tyko Dirksmeyer (eds.), 311–327. Berliner Beiträge zur Linguistik, Berlin: Weissensee.
 2006 Growing a numeral system: The historical development of numerals in an Amazonian language family. *Diachronica* 23 (2): 259–288.
 2007a The Vaupés melting pot: Tukanoan influence on Hup. In *Grammars in Contact: A Cross-linguistic Typology*, Alexandra Aikhenvald and R. M. W. Dixon (eds.), 267–289. (Explorations in Linguistic Typology 4.) Oxford: Oxford University Press.

- 2007b Birth of a noun classification system: the case of Hup. In *Language Endangerment and Endangered Languages: Linguistic and Anthropological Studies with Special Emphasis on the Languages and Cultures of the Andean-Amazonian Border Area*, Leo Wetzels (ed.), 107–128. (Indigenous Languages of Latin America series [ILLA].) Leiden University, The Netherlands: The Research School of Asian, African, and Amerindian Studies (CNWS).
- 2007c Escape from the noun phrase: The adventures of a relative clause. Paper presented at the *Seminario de Complejidad Sintáctica*, University of Sonora, Hermosillo, Mexico, Nov. 15–16, 2007.
- 2007d On directionality in language change: The case of productive deaffixation in Hup. Manuscript, University of Texas at Austin.
- 2008a Grammatical borrowing in Hup. In *Grammatical Borrowing: A Cross-linguistic Survey*, Yaron Matras and Jeanette Sakel (eds.). Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- 2008b From ‘wood’ to future tense: nominal origins of the future construction in Hup. *Studies in Language* 32 (2): 382–403.
- Forthc. a Loanwords in Hup. *Loanword Typology Project* [exact title undetermined], Martin Haspelmath and Uri Tadmor (eds.), MPI EvA, Leipzig.
- Forthc. b Hup. In *Reciprocals and Semantic Typology*, Nicholas Evans, Alice Gaby, Stephen Levinson and Asifa Majid (eds.).
- Forthc. c Language and subsistence patterns in the Amazonian Vaupés. In *The Languages of Hunter-gatherers: Global and Historical Perspectives*, Tom Güldemann, Richard Rhodes, and Patrick McConvell (eds.).
- Forthc. d A escola entre os Hupd’äh do Alto Rio Negro: Problemas e sugestões [The school system among the Hupd’äh of the Upper Rio Negro: Problems and suggestions]. (For a planned compilation on the Hupd’äh, to be published in Brazil), Aloisio Cabalzar Filho and Manuel Arroyo-Kalin (eds.).
- Erickson, Timothy and Catherine Erickson
1993 *Vocabulário Júpda-Espanhol-Português*. Bogatá: Associação Instituto Linguístico de Verano.
- Evans, Nicholas
1995 The syntax and semantics of body part incorporation in Mayali. In *The Grammar of Inalienability*, Hilary Chappell and William McGregor (eds.), 65–110. Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
2007 Insubordination and its uses. In *Finiteness*, Irina Nikolaeva (ed.), 366–431. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Evans, Nicholas and Rachel Nordlinger
2004 Reciprocals across languages. Manuscript, University of Melbourne.
- Evans, Nicholas, Stephen Levinson, N. J. Enfield, Alice Gaby, and Asifa Majid
2004 Reciprocals. *Field Manual*, Vol. 9. Nijmegen: Max Planck Institute for Psycholinguistics.

- Facundes, Sidney da Silva
 2000 *The language of the Apuriña people of Brazil*. Ph. D. diss., University of New York at Buffalo.
- Fedden, Sebastian
 2005 Reciprocal constructions in Tok Pisin. Manuscript, University of Melbourne.
- Ferguson, Charles A.
 1966 Assumptions about nasals: A sample study in phonological universals. In *Universals of Language*, 2nd ed., Joseph Greenberg (ed.), 53–60. Cambridge, Massachusetts: M. I. T. Press.
- Fisser, Anne
 1988 *Wirtschaftliche und soziale Beziehungen zwischen den Tukano und Maku Nordwest-Amazoniens*. Hohenschäftlarn: Klaus Renner Verlag.
- Fleischman, Suzanne
 1982 *The Future in Thought and Language: Diachronic Evidence from Romance*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Foley, William
 1997 *Anthropological Linguistics*. Oxford: Blackwell Publishers.
- Foley, William and Mike Olson
 1985 Clausehood and verb serialization. In *Grammar Inside and Outside the Clause*, Johanna Nichols and Anthony Woodbury (eds.), 17–60. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Foley, William and Robert Van Valin
 1984 *Functional Syntax and Universal Grammar*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 1985 Information packaging in the clause. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, Vol. 1, Timothy Shopen (ed.), 282–364. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Frajzyngier, Zygmunt and Traci S. Curl
 2000 *Reciprocals: Forms and Functions*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Franklin, Gail and Barbara Moore
 1979 Descrição preliminar de características estativas da língua Maku-Hupda [Preliminary description of stative characteristics of the Maku-Hupda language]. In *Breves notícias da língua Maku-Hupda*, Barbara Moore and Gail L. Franklin, 1–8. (Ensaio Linguístico 6.) Brasília: SIL.
- Franky, Carlos and Dany Mahecha
 1997 Los yuhup del bajo Apaporis: Entre la flexibilidad e la clandestinidad. El arte de las relaciones multiculturales. VIII Congreso de Antropología en Colombia, Popayán.
- Giacone, Antonio
 1955 *Pequena Gramática e Dicionário Português Ubde-Nehern ou Macú* [Short Portuguese–Ubde-Nehern Dictionary and Grammar]. Amazonas, Brazil: Missão Indígena Salesiana, Rio Uaupés/Rio Negro.

Giusti, Giuliana

- 2001 The birth of a functional category: From Latin ILLE to the Romance article and personal pronoun. In *Current Studies in Italian Syntax: Essays offered to Lorenzo Renzi*, Guglielmo Cinque and Giampaolo Salvi (eds.), 157–171. Amsterdam: North Holland.

Givón, Talmy

- 1979 *On Understanding Grammar*. New York: Academic Press.
- 1991 Serial verbs and the mental reality of 'event': Grammatical vs. cognitive packaging. In *Approaches to Grammaticalization, I: Focus on Theoretical and Methodological Issues*, Elizabeth C. Traugott and Bernd Heine (eds.), 81–127. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- 2001 *Syntax: A Functional-Typological Introduction*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Goldman, Irving

- 1963 *The Cubeo: Indians of the Northwest Amazon*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Gómez-Imbert, Elsa

- 1982 *De la forme et du sens dans la classification nominale en tatuyo (langue Tukano Orientale d'Amazonie Colombienne)*, Doctorat de 3^e cycle. Paris: U. Paris-Sorbonne (=TDM 19, Editions ORSTROM, 1986), downloadable at www.ird.fr.
- 1988 Construcción verbal en Barasana y Tatuyo. *Amerindia* 13: 97–108.
- 1996 When animals become 'rounded' and 'feminine': Conceptual categories and linguistic classification in a multilingual setting. In *Rethinking Linguistic Relativity*, John Gumperz and Stephen Levinson (eds.) 438–469. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- 2007a Construcciones seriales en tatuyo y barasana (familia tukano): Hacia una tipología de la serialización verbal. In *Lenguas indígenas de América del Sur: Estudios descriptivo-tipológicos y sus contribuciones para la lingüística teórica*, A. Romero-Figueroa, A. Fernández Garay and A. Corbera Mori (eds.), 172–189. Caracas: Ediciones UCAB.
- 2007b Tukanoan nominal classification: The Tatuyo system. In *Language Endangerment and Endangered Languages: Linguistic and Anthropological Studies with Special Emphasis on the Languages and Cultures of the Andean-Amazonian Border Area*, Leo Wetzels (ed.), 401–428. (Indigenous Languages of Latin America series [ILLA].) Leiden University, The Netherlands: The Research School of Asian, African, and Amerindian Studies (CNWS).

Gómez-Imbert, Elsa and Michael Kenstowicz

- 2000 Barasana tone and accent. *International Journal of American Linguistics* 66: 419–463.

- Goodwin Gómez, Gale
 2000 Noun classifiers in ethnobotanical terminology of a Yanomami language of Brazil. In *Indigenous Languages of Lowland South America*, Hein van der Voort and Simon van de Kerke (eds.), 9–24. (Indigenous Languages of Latin America [ILLA] 1.) Leiden: CNWS.
- Green, Rebecca
 1995 *A Grammar of Gurr-Goni*. Ph. D. diss., Australian National University.
- Greenberg, Joseph
 1966 Some universals of grammar with particular reference to the order of meaningful elements. In *Universals of Language*, 2nd ed., Joseph H. Greenberg (ed.), 73–113. Cambridge, MA: M. I. T. Press.
- Grenand, Françoise and Epaminondas Henrique Ferreira
 1989 *Pequeno Dicionário da Língua Geral* [A Short Dictionary of Língua Geral]. (Série Amazônas, Cultura Regional 6.) Manaus: SEDUC.
- Grimes, Barbara J.
 1985 Language attitudes: Identity, distinctiveness, survival in the Vaupés. *Journal of Multilingual and Multicultural Development* 6: 389–401.
- Grinevald, Colette
 2000 A morphosyntactic typology of classifiers. In *Systems of Nominal Classification*, Gunter Senft (ed.), 50–92. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 2002 Making sense of nominal classification systems: Noun classifiers and the grammaticalization variable. In *New Reflections on Grammaticalization*, Ilse Wischer and Gabriele Diewald (eds.), 259–275. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Grinevald, Colette and Frank Seifart
 2004 Noun classes in African and Amazonian languages: Towards a comparison. *Linguistic Typology* 8 (2): 243–285.
- Hackstein, Olav
 Forthc. Apposition and nominal classification in Indo-European and beyond. In *Evolution of Syntactic Relations*, Christian Lehmann and Stavros Skopeteas (eds.). [Trends in Linguistics.] Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Haiman, John
 1985 *Iconicity in Syntax*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
 2002 Systematization and the origin of rules: The case of subject-verb inversion in questions. *Studies in Language* 26 (3), 573–593.
- Hale, Kenneth
 1976 The adjoined relative clause in Australia. In *Grammatical Categories in Australian Languages*, R. M. W. Dixon (ed.), 78–105. (Linguistic Series 22.) Canberra: Australian Institute of Aboriginal Studies.
- Hanke, Thomas
 2005 *Bildungsweisen von Numeralia - eine typologische Untersuchung*. Series: Berliner Beiträge zur Linguistik 3. Berlin: Weißensee.

Hansen, Cynthia Andersen

- 2007 Hands, fingers, feet, and toes? Oh brother: The numeral system in Iquito. Paper presented at the Symposium on Endangered Languages of Amazonia, The University of Texas at Austin, February 17, 2007.

Haspelmath, Martin

- 1995 The converb as a cross-linguistically valid category. In *Converbs in Cross-Linguistic Perspective: Structure and Meaning of Adverbial Verb Forms*, Martin Haspelmath and Ekkehard König (eds.), 1–56. Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- 2004 On directionality in language change with particular reference to grammaticalization. In *Up and Down the Cline: The Nature of Grammaticalization*, Olga Fischer, Muriel Norde and Harry Perridon (eds.), 17–44. (Typological Studies in Language 59.) Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Forthc. Parametric versus functional explanations of syntactic universals. In *The Limits of Syntactic Variation*, Theresa Biberauer and Anders Holmberg (eds.). Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Heine, Bernd

- 1997 *Possession: Cognitive Sources, Forces, and Grammaticalization*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- 2000 Polysemy involving reflexive and reciprocal markers in African languages. In *Reciprocals: Forms and Functions*, Zygmunt Frajzyngier and Traci S. Curl (eds.), 1–30. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- 2003 Grammaticalization. In *Handbook of Historical Linguistics*, Brian Joseph and Richard Janda (eds.), 575–601. Oxford: Blackwell.

Heine, Bernd, Ulrike Claudi, and Friederike Hünemeyer

- 1991 *Grammaticalization: A Conceptual Framework*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Henley, Paul, Marie-Claude Mattei-Müller, and Howard Reid

- 1996 Cultural and linguistic affinities of the foraging people of northern Amazonia: A new perspective. *Antropológica* 83: 3–38.

Hill, Jonathan

- 1985 Agnatic sibling relations and rank in northern Arawakan myth and social life. In *Sibling relations in Lowland South America*, Judith Shapiro (ed.), 25–33. (Working Papers on South American Indians 7.) Bennington, VT: Bennington College.

Hook, Peter

- 1991 The emergence of perfective aspect in Indo-Aryan languages. In *Approaches to Grammaticalization*, Vol. 2, Elisabeth Closs Traugott and Bernd Heine (eds.), 59–89. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Hopper, Paul and Sandra A. Thompson

- 1980 Transitivity in Grammar and Discourse. *Language* 56 (2): 251–299.

Hopper, Paul and Elisabeth Closs Traugott

- 1993 *Grammaticalization*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

- Huber, Randal Q. and Robert B. Reed
 1992 *Vocabulario Comparativo: Palabras Selectas de Lenguas Indígenas de Colombia*. Bogotá: Asociación Lingüístico de Verano.
- Hugh-Jones, Christine
 1979 *From the Milk River: Spatial and Temporal Process in Northwest Amazonia*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Hugh-Jones, Stephen
 1979 *The Palm and the Pleiades: Initiation and Cosmology in Northwest Amazonia*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Hurford, James
 1987 *Language and Number*. Oxford: Blackwell Publishers.
- Ito, Junko and Armin Mester
 1995 The core-periphery structure of the lexicon and constraints on reranking. In *University of Massachusetts Occasional Papers in Linguistics 18: Papers in Optimality Theory*, Jill Beckman, Laura Walsh Dickey, and Suzanne Urbanczyk (eds.), 181–210. Amherst: University of Massachusetts.
- Jackson, Jean
 1974 Language identity of the Colombian Vaupés Indians. In *Explorations in the Ethnography of Speaking*, Richard Bauman and Joel Sherzer (eds.), 50–64. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 1983 *The Fish People: Linguistic Exogamy and Tukanoan Identity in Northwest Amazonia*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 1984 Vaupés marriage practices. In *Marriage Practices in Lowland South America*, Kenneth Kensinger (ed.), 156–179. Urbana and Chicago: University of Illinois Press.
- Jakobson, Roman
 1968 *Child Language, Aphasia, and Phonological Universals*. (Translation of *Kindersprache, Aphasie und allgemeine Lautgesetze*, Uppsala, 1941.) The Hague: Mouton and Co.
- Jouïon, Paul
 2000 *A Grammar of Biblical Hebrew*, translated and revised by T. Muraoka. Roma: Editrice Pontificio Istituto Biblico.
- Kahrel, Peter
 1996 Aspects of negation. Ph. D. diss., University of Amsterdam.
- Keenan, Edward L.
 1985 Relative clauses. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, Vol. 2, Timothy Shopen (ed.), 141–170. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Keenan, Edward and Bernard Comrie
 1977 Noun phrase accessibility and universal grammar. *Linguistic Inquiry* 8 (1): 63–99.
- Kemmer, Suzanne
 1993 *The Middle Voice*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Kingston, John

2003 Mechanisms of tone reversal. In *Cross-Linguistic Studies of Tonal Phenomena: Historical development, phonetics of tone, and descriptive studies*, Shigeki Kaji (ed.), 57–120. Tokyo: ILCAA.

2005 The phonetics of Athabaskan tonogenesis. In *Athabaskan Prosody*, Sharon Hargus and Keren Rice (eds.), 137–184. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Klavans, Judith

1985 The independence of syntax and phonology in cliticization. *Language* 61: 95–120.

Klein, Harriet Manelis

2000 Meronymy or part-whole relations in indigenous languages of lowland South America. In *Indigenous Languages of Lowland South America*, Hein Van der Voort and Simon van de Kerke (eds.), 83–98. (Indigenous Languages of Latin America [ILLA] 1.) Leiden: CNWS.

Knjazev, Jurij

1998 Towards a typology of grammatical polysemy: Reflexive markers as markers of reciprocity. In *Typology of verbal categories*, L. Kulikov and H. Vater (eds.), 185–193. Tübingen: Niemeyer.

Knobloch, Francis

1972 The Maku Indians and racial separation in the valley of the Rio Negro. *Mankind Quarterly* 13: 100–109.

Koch-Grünberg, Theodore

1906a Die Indianner-Stämme am oberen Rio Negro und Yapurá und ihre sprachliche Zugehörigkeit. *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie* 38: 167–205.

1906b Die Makú. *Anthropos* 1: 877–906.

König, Ekkehard and Peter Siemund

2000 Intensifiers and reflexives: A typological perspective. In *Reflexives: Forms and Functions*, Zygmunt Frajzyngier and Traci S. Curl (eds.), 41–74. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Kunene, Daniel P.

2001 Speaking the act: The ideophone as a linguistic rebel. In *Ideophones*, F. K. Erhard Voeltz and Christa Kilian-Hatz (eds.), 183–191. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Kuteva, Tania

1998 On identifying an evasive gram: Action narrowly averted. *Studies in Language* 22 (1): 113–160.

2001 *Auxiliation: An Enquiry into the Nature of Grammaticalization*. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.

La Rotta, Luz Marina

1977 Comparación fonológica entre el cacua y el español. *Artículos en Lingüística y Campos Afines* 3: 1–21. Bogotá: Summer Institute of Linguistics.

- Lakoff, George
 1987 *Women, Fire, and Dangerous Things*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Lambrecht, Knud
 1994 *Information Structure and Sentence Form*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 2001 Dislocation. In *Language Typology and Language Universals: An international handbook* (Vol. 2), Martin Haspelmath, Ekkehard König, Wulf Oesterreicher, and Wolfgang Raible (eds.), 1050–1078. Berlin/New York: Walter de Gruyter.
- Landaburu, Jon
 1979 *La langue des Andoke, Amazonie Colombienne. Grammaire*. Paris: CNRS.
- Lefebvre, Claire
 1991 *Take* serial verb construction in Fon. In *Serial Verbs: Grammatical, Comparative, and Cognitive Approaches*, Claire Lefebvre (ed.), 37–78. (Studies in the Sciences of Language Series 8.) Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins.
 2002 *A grammar of Fongbe*. (Mouton Grammar Library 25.) Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Lehmann, Christian
 2005 Theory and method in grammaticalization. *Zeitschrift für Germanistische Linguistik* 32 (2): 152–187.
- Levinson, Stephen
 1983 *Pragmatics*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Liang, Hsin-Hsin and Peter E. Hook
 Forthc. The compound verb in Chinese and Hindi-Urdu and the plausibility of macro linguistic areas. In *Proceedings of the International Conference on South Asian Linguistics 5*, Colin Masica (ed.), 105–126. Delhi: Moltilal Banarsidass.
- Longacre, Robert E.
 1985 Sentences as combinations of clauses. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, Vol. 2, Timothy Shopen (ed.), 235–286. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Loukotka, Cestmír
 1968 *Classification of South American Indian Languages*. Los Angeles: University of California.
- Lucy, John A.
 1992 *Grammatical Categories and Cognition*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 1997 Linguistic relativity. *Annual Review of Anthropology* 26: 291–312.

Lucy, John A. and Suzanne Gaskins

- 2003 Interaction of language type and referent type in the development of non-verbal classification preferences. In *Language in Mind: Advances in the Study of Language and Thought*, Dedre Gentner and Susan Goldin-Meadow (eds.), 465–492. Cambridge, MA/London: M. I. T. Press.

Macaulay, Monica and Joseph C. Salmons

- 1995 The phonology of glottalization in Mixtec. *International Journal of American Linguistics* 61 (1): 38–61.

Mahecha Rubio, Dany

- 2007 Los Níkak: Experiencias y aprendizajes del contacto con otras gentes. In *Language Endangerment and Endangered Languages: Linguistic and Anthropological Studies with Special Emphasis on the Languages and Cultures of the Andean-Amazonian Border Area*, Leo Wetzels (ed.), 91–106. (Indigenous Languages of Latin America series [ILLA].) Leiden University, The Netherlands: The Research School of Asian, African, and Amerindian Studies (CNWS).

Malone, Terrell

- 1988 The origin and development of Tuyuca evidentials. *International Journal of American Linguistics* 54 (2): 119–140. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Manning, H. Paul

- 2001 On social deixis. *Anthropological Linguistics* 43 (11): 54–100.

Martins, Silvana A.

- 1994 Análise da morfossintaxe da língua Dâw (Makú-Kamã) e sua classificação tipológica [Analysis of the morphosyntax of the Dâw language and its typological classification]. M. A. thesis, Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina, Brazil.

- 2004 *Fonologia e gramática Dâw* [Phonology and Grammar of Dâw]. Ph. D. diss., Vrije Universiteit, Amsterdam. Amsterdam: LOT.

Martins, Silvana A. and Valteir Martins

- 1999 Makú. In *The Amazonian Languages*, R. M. W. Dixon and Alexandra Aikhenvald (eds.), 251–268. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Martins, Valteir

- 1994 Análise prosódica da língua Dâw (Makú-Kamã) numa perspectiva não-linear [Prosodic analysis of the Dâw language (Makú-Kamã) in non-linear perspective]. M. A. thesis, Universidade Federal de Santa Catarina, Brazil.

- 2005 *Reconstrução fonológica do Protomaku Oriental* [Phonological reconstruction of eastern Protomaku]. Ph. D. diss., Vrije Universiteit, Amsterdam. Amsterdam: LOT.

Mayer, Mercer

- 1969 *Frog, Where Are You?* New York: Dial Press.

- Meira, Sergio
 2006 The grammar of space in Tiriyo. In *Grammars of space: Explorations in Cognitive Diversity*, Stephen C. Levinson and David P. Wilkins (eds.), 311–358. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Miestamo, Matti
 2005 *Standard Negation: The Negation of Declarative Verbal Main Clauses in a Typological Perspective*. (Empirical Approaches to Language Typology 31.) Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Miller, Marion
 1999 *Desano Grammar*. (Studies in the Languages of Colombia 6.) Arlington: SIL and the University of Texas at Arlington.
- Milton, Katherine
 1984 Protein and carbohydrate resources of the Maku Indians of northwestern Amazonia. *American Anthropologist* 86: 7–27.
- Mithun, Marianne
 1988 Lexical categories and the evolution of number marking. In *Theoretical Morphology: Approaches in Modern Linguistics*, Michael Hammond and Michael Noonan (eds.), 211–234. San Diego: Academic Press.
 1999 *The Languages of Native North America*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 2001 The difference a category makes in the expression of possession and inalienability. In *Dimensions of Possession*, Irène Baron, Michael Herslund, and Finn Sorenson (eds.), 285–310. (Typological Studies in Language 47.) Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Moore, Barbara J.
 1977 Some discourse features of Hupda Macu. In *Discourse Grammar: Studies in Indigenous Languages of Colombia, Panama, and Ecuador*, part 2, Robert Longacre and Frances Woods (eds.), 25–42. (SIL Publications in Linguistics and Related Fields 52 [2].) Dallas: SIL and University of Texas at Arlington.
- Moore, Barbara and Gail L. Franklin
 1979 Análise preliminar de locuções nominais da língua Hupda [Preliminary analysis of nominal constructions in the Hupda language]. In *Breves Notícias da Língua Maku-Hupda* [Short Notes on the Maku-Hupda Language], Barbara Moore and Gail L. Franklin, 9–31. (Ensaio Linguísticos 6.) Brasília: SIL.
 1980 Verbal and nominal inflection in Hupda Makú. Manuscript, SIL.
- Moravcsik, Edith
 2003 A semantic analysis of associative plurals. *Studies in Language* 27 (3): 469–503.
- Murphy, Yolanda and Robert F. Murphy
 1985 *Women of the Forest*, 2nd ed. New York: Columbia University Press.
- Nasukawa, Kuniya
 2005 *A Unified Approach to Nasality and Voicing*. (Studies in Generative Grammar 65.) Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.

Nelson, Nicole

- 2005 Wrong side reduplication is epiphenomenal: Evidence from Yoruba. In *Studies on Reduplication*, Bernhard Hurch (ed.), 135–160. (Empirical Approaches to Language Typology 28.) Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.

Neves, Eduardo

- 1998 Paths in dark waters: Archaeology as indigenous history in the Upper Rio Negro basin, northwest Amazonia. Ph. D. diss., Indiana University.
- 2001 Indigenous historical trajectories in the Upper Rio Negro basin. In *Unknown Amazon*, Colin McEwan, Christina Barreto, and Eduardo Neves (eds.), 266–286. London: The British Museum Press.

Nichols, Johanna

- 1988 On alienable and inalienable possession. In *In Honor of Mary Haas*, William Shipley (ed.), 557–609. (Haas Festival Conference on Native American Linguistics.) Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- 2003 Lexical Valence Typology Project: Instructions for elicitation of causative-noncausative verb pairs. Manuscript, University of California at Berkeley.

Nichols, Johanna, David A. Peterson, and Jonathan Barnes

- 2004 Transitivity and detransitivizing languages. *Linguistic Typology* 8 (2): 149–211.

Nimuendajú, Curt

- 1950 Reconhecimento dos rios Içana, Ayarí, e Uaupés: Relatório apresentado ao Serviço de Proteção aos Índios do Amazonas e Acre, 1927 [Reconnaissance of the Içana, Ayarí, and Uaupés Rivers: Report presented to the Indian Protection Service of Amazonas and Acre, 1927]. *Journal de la Société des Américanistes* 39: 125–182.
- 1982 *Textos Indigenistas*. São Paulo: Edições Loyola.

Norde, Muriel

- 2002 The final stages of grammaticalization: Affixhood and beyond. In *New Reflections on Grammaticalization*, Ilse Wischer and Gabriela Diewald (eds), 45–65. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins.
- 2006 Demarcating degrammaticalization: The Swedish *s*-genitive revisited. *Nordic Journal of Linguistics* 29 (2): 201–238.

Ospina Bozzi, Ana María

- 1999 Le système aspecto-temporal dans la langue Yuhup-Makú (Colombie). *Actances* 10: 119–136. Paris: Rivaldi–CNRS.
- 2002 Les structures élémentaires du Yuhup Maku, langue de l'Amazonie Colombienne: Morphologie et syntaxe. Ph. D. diss., Université Paris 7 – Denis Diderot.

- 2007 Predicates in Yuhup. In *Language Endangerment and Endangered Languages: Linguistic and Anthropological Studies with Special Emphasis on the Languages and Cultures of the Andean-Amazonian Border Area*, Leo Wetzels (ed.), 191–207. (Indigenous Languages of Latin America series [ILLA].) Leiden University, The Netherlands: The Research School of Asian, African, and Amerindian Studies (CNWS).
- Osumi, Midori
1995 *Tinrin Grammar*. (Oceanic Linguistics Special Publication 25.) Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press.
- Overall, Simon
In preparation. Frustrative, as a category, in Amazonia and elsewhere. Manuscript, Research Center for Linguistic Typology, La Trobe University.
- Palmer, Frank
2001 *Mood and Modality*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Payne, David
2002 Causatives in Asheninka: The case for a sociative source. In *The Grammar of Causation and Interpersonal Manipulation*, Masayoshi Shibatani (ed.), 485–505. (Typological Studies in Language 48.) Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins.
- Payne, Doris
1990 Morphological characteristics of lowland South American languages. In *Amazonian Linguistics*, Doris Payne (ed.), 213–242. Austin: University of Texas Press.
- Payne, Doris and Immanuel Barshi
1999 External possession: What, where, how, and why. In *External Possession*, Doris Payne and Immanuel Barshi (eds.), 3–31. (Typological Studies in Language 39.) Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Payne, John R.
1985a Negation. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, Vol. 1, Timothy Shopen, (ed.), 197–242. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
1985b Complex phrases and complex sentences. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, Vol. 2, Timothy Shopen (ed.), 3–41. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Payne, Thomas
1997 *Describing Morphosyntax*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Peterson, Jean Trellogen
1978 Hunter-gatherer/farmer exchange. *American Anthropologist* 80: 335–351.
- Pike, Eunice
1986 Tone contrasts in central Carrier. *International Journal of American Linguistics* 52 (4): 411–418.

Plank, Frans

- 1995 Entgrammatisierung – Spiegelbild der Grammatisierung? In *Natürlichkeitstheorie und Sprachwandel*, Norbert Boretzky, Wolfgang Dressler, Janez Orešnik, and Wolfgang Wurzel (eds), 199–219. Bochum: Universitätsverlag Brockmeyer.

Politis, Gustavo

- 1996 *Nukak*. Bogotá, Colombia: Instituto Amazonico de Investigaciones Cientificas SINCHI.

Pozzobon, Jorge

- 1983 Isolamento e endogamia: Observações sobre a organização social dos Índios Maku [Isolation and endogamy: Observations on the social organization of the Maku Indians]. M. A. thesis, Universidade Federal do Rio Grande do Sul, Brazil.
- 1991 Parenté et demographie chez les Indiens Maku. Ph. D. diss., Université de Paris VII.
- 1994 Índios por opção [Indians by choice]. *Porto e Virgula* 17 (June): 34–39. Porto Alegre, RS, Brazil.
- 1997 Hiérarchie, liberté, et exclusion (les Maku et la démarcation de terres indigènes dans le haut Rio Negro). *Journal de l'Institut des Hautes Études d'Amérique Latine* 23: 143–157.
- 1997 Langue, société, et numération chez les indiens Maku (Haut Rio Negro, Brésil). *Journal de la Société des Américanistes* 83: 159–172.
- 2002 *Vocês, Brancos, Não Têm Alma: Histórias de Fronteiras* [You Whites Have No Souls: Stories of Boundaries]. EDUFPA, Belém: MPEG Edição.

Proschan, Frank

- 1997 We are all Kmhmu just the same. *American Ethnologist* 24 (1): 91–113.

Ramirez, Henri

- 1997a *A Fala Tukano dos Ye'pa-Masa*, Vol. 1: Gramática [The Tukano Language of the Ye'pa-Masa: Grammar]. Manaus: Inspetoria Salesiana Missionária da Amazônia, CEDEM.
- 1997b *A Fala Tukano dos Ye'pa-Masa*, Vol. 2: Dicionário [The Tukano Language of the Ye'pa-Masa: Dictionary]. Manaus: Inspetoria Salesiana Missionária da Amazônia, CEDEM.
- 2001a *Dicionário Baniwa-Português* [Baniwa-Portuguese Dictionary]. Manaus: Editora da Universidade do Amazonas.
- 2001b Família Makú ou família Uaupés-Japura? [Makú family or Uaupés-Japura family?]. Paper presented at the meeting of ANPOLL, Belém, Brazil.
- 2006 *A Língua dos Hupd'äh do Alto Rio Negro: Dicionário e Guia de Conversação* [The Language of the Hupd'äh of the Upper Rio Negro: Dictionary and Conversation Guide]. Sao Paulo: SSL/Libro.

- Ramos, Alcida Rita, Peter Silverwood-Cope, and Ana Gita de Oliveira
 1980 Patrões e clientes: Relações intertribais no alto Rio Negro [Patrons and clients: Intertribal relations on the Upper Rio Negro]. In *Hierarquia e Simbiose. Relações Intertribais no Brasil*, Alcida Rita Ramos (ed.), 135–182. São Paulo: Editora Hucitec, Instituto Nacional do Livro, Ministério da Educação e Cultura.
- Reichel-Dolmatoff, Gerardo
 1971 *Amazonian Cosmos: The Sexual and Religious Symbolism of the Tukano Indians*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
 1978 *Beyond the Milky Way: Hallucinatory Imagery of the Tukano Indians*. Los Angeles: UCLA Latin American Center Publications.
- Reid, Howard
 1978 Dreams and their interpretation among the Hupda Maku Indians of Brazil. *Cambridge Anthropology* 4 (3): 2–29.
 1979 Some aspects of movement, growth and change among the Hupdu Maku Indians of Brazil. Ph. D. diss., University of Cambridge.
- Reid, Nicholas
 1997 Class and classifier in Ngan'gityemmerri. In *Nominal Classification in Aboriginal Australia*, Mark Harvey and Nicholas Reid (eds.), 165–228. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Remijsen, Bert and Vincent van Heuven
 2005 Stress, tone, and discourse prominence in the Curaçao dialect of Papiamentu. *Phonology* 22: 205–235.
- Riad, Tomas
 1998 Towards a Scandinavian accent typology. In *Phonology and Morphology of the Germanic Languages*, Wolfgang Kehrein and Richard Wiese (eds.), 77–109. Tübingen: Niemeyer.
- Rießler, Michael
 2004 Grammaticalization of attributive markers. Paper presented at the Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology, Leipzig, June 8, 2004.
- Rival, Laura
 Forthc. Domesticating the landscape, producing crops, and reproducing society in Amazonia. In *Convergence and Emergence: Towards a New Holistic Anthropology?* David Parkin and Stan Ulijaszek (eds.). Oxford: Berghahn Books.
- Rivet, Paul
 1911 Affinités du Miránya. *Journal de la Societe des Américanistes*, n.s., 8: 117–152.
 1912 Les affinités du Tikuna. *Journal de la Société des Américanistes*, n.s., 9: 83–110.
- Rivet, Paul and Constant Tastevin
 1920 Affinités du Makú et du Puinave. *Journal de la Societe des Américanistes*, n.s. 12: 60–82.

- Rivet, Paul, P. Kok and Constant Tastevin
 1925 Nouvelle contribution à l'étude de la langue Makú. *International Journal of American Linguistics* 3 (2/4): 133–192.
- Rodrigues, Aron Dall'Igna
 1986 *Línguas Brasileiras: Para o Conhecimento das Línguas Indígenas* [Brazilian Languages: Toward an Understanding of the Indigenous Languages]. São Paulo: Ed. Loyola.
- Ross, Malcolm
 1998 Possessive-like attributive constructions in the Oceanic languages of Northwest Melanesia. *Oceanic Linguistics* 37 (2): 234–276.
- Sadock, Jerold
 1991 *Autolexical Syntax: A Theory of Parallel Grammatical Representations*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Sadock, Jerold and Arnold Zwicky
 1985 Speech act distinctions in syntax. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, Vol. 1, Timothy Shopen (ed.), 155–196. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Sakel, Jeannette
 2004 *A Grammar of Mosestén*. (Mouton Grammar Library 33.) Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Schachter, Paul
 1985 Parts-of-speech systems. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, Vol. 1, Timothy Shopen (ed.), 3–61. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Schladt, Mathias
 2000 The typology and grammaticalization of reflexives. In *Reflexives: Forms and Functions*, Zygmunt Frajzyngier and Traci S. Curl (eds.), 103–124. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Schultz, Harald
 1959 Ligeiras notas sobre os Maku do Paraná Boá-Boá [Short notes on the Maku of Paraná Boá-Boá]. *Revista do Museu Paulista*, n.s., 11: 129–131.
- Schweder, Richard A., and Edmund J. Bourne
 1984 Does the concept of the person vary cross-culturally? In *Culture Theory: Essays on Mind, Self and Emotion*, Richard A. Schweder and Robert A. LeVine (eds.), 158–199. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Seifart, Frank
 2003 Nominal classification in Witotoan languages: Towards a comparison. Paper given at the 51st Annual International Congress of Americanists, Santiago, Chile.
- Senft, Gunter (ed.)
 2000 *Systems of Nominal Classification*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Shalev, Michael, Peter Ladefoged and Peri Bhaskararao
 1993 Phonetics of Toda. *PILC Journal of Dravidian Studies* 4: 19–56.

- Shibatani, Masayoshi
 1985 Passives and related constructions. *Language* 62 (4): 821–848.
- Shopen, Timothy (ed.)
 1985 *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
 2007 *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, 2nd ed. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Siemund, Peter
 2001 Interrogative constructions. In *Language Typology and Language Universals: An International Handbook*, Vol. 2, Martin Haspelmath, Ekkehard König, Wulf Oesterreicher, and Wolfgang Raible (eds.), 1010–1028.
- Silverstein, Michael
 1976 Hierarchy of features and ergativity. In *Grammatical Categories in Australian Languages*, R. M. W. Dixon (ed.), 112–171. Canberra: Australian Institute of Aboriginal Studies.
 1978 Deixis and deducibility in a Wasco-Wishram passive of evidence. *Proceedings of the Annual Meeting of the Berkeley Linguistics Society* 4: 238–254.
- Silverwood-Cope, Peter
 1972 A contribution to the ethnography of the Colombian Maku. Ph. D. diss., Cambridge University.
- Smith-Stark, T. Cedric
 1974 The plurality split. In *Papers from the Tenth Regional Meeting, Chicago Linguistic Society*, Michael La Galy et al. (eds.), 657–671. Chicago: Chicago Linguistics Society.
- Sorensen, Arthur P.
 1967 Multilingualism in the Northwest Amazon. *American Anthropologist* 69: 670–684.
 1984 Linguistic exogamy and personal choice in the northwest Amazon. In *Marriage Practices in Lowland South America*, Kenneth Kensinger, 180–193. Urbana/Chicago: University of Illinois Press.
- Stenzel, Kristine
 2004 A reference grammar of Wanano. Ph. D. diss., University of Colorado.
 2005 Multilingualism in the northwest Amazon, revisited. *Memorias del Congreso de Idiomas Indígenas de Latinoamérica-II*, University of Texas at Austin. Available at www.ailla.utexas.org/site/cilla2_toc_sp.html.
 2007 Glottalization and other suprasegmental features in Wanano. *International Journal of American Linguistics* 73 (3): 331–366.
- Storto, Luciana
 1999 Aspects of a Karitiana grammar. Ph. D. diss., Massachusetts Institute of Technology.
- Sweetser, Eve
 1997 *From Etymology to Pragmatics: Metaphorical and Cultural Aspects of Semantic Structure*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

- Tabor, Whitney and Elizabeth C. Traugott
 1998 Structural scope expansion and grammaticalization. In *The Limits of Grammaticalization*, Anna Giacalone Ramat and Paul Hopper (eds.), 227–270. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Talmy, Leonard
 1978 Figure and ground in complex sentences. In *Universals of Human Language*, Vol. 4: Syntax, Joseph Greenberg, Charles Ferguson, and Edith Moravcsik (ed.), 625–649. Stanford: Stanford University Press.
 1985 Lexicalization patterns: Semantic structure in lexical forms. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, Vol. 3, Timothy Shopen (ed.), 57–149. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Terribilini, Mario and Michel Terribilini
 1961 Enquête chez des Indiens Maku du Vaupés. *Bulletin de la Société Suisse des Américanistes* 21: 2–10.
- Thompson, Sandra and Robert Longacre
 1985 Adverbial clauses. In *Language Typology and Syntactic Description*, Vol. 2, Timothy Shopen (ed.), 171–234. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Thord-Gray, Ivor
 1955 *Tarahumara-English, English-Tarahumara Dictionary and an Introduction to Tarahumara Grammar*. Miami: University of Miami Press.
- Trask, Robert L.
 1993 *A Dictionary of Grammatical Terms in Linguistics*. London/New York: Routledge Press.
- Traugott, Elizabeth C.
 1997 The role of the development of discourse markers in a theory of grammaticalization. Paper presented at ICHL XII, Manchester 1995. Available at <http://www.stanford.edu/~traugott/ect-papersonline.html>.
- Van Valin, Robert and Randy La Polla
 1997 *Syntax: Structure, Meaning, and Function*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Viberg, Åke
 1984 The verbs of perception: A typological study. In *Explanations for Language Universals*, Brian Butterworth, Bernard Comrie, and Östen Dahl (eds.), 123–162. Berlin/New York: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Vidal, Alejandra
 2001 Pilaga grammar. Ph. D. diss., University of Oregon.
- Voeltz, F. K. Erhard and Christa Kilian-Hatz
 2001 Introduction. In *Ideophones*, F. K. Erhard Voeltz and Christa Kilian-Hatz (eds.), 1–8. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Voort, Hein van der and Simon van de Kerke (eds.)
 2000 *Indigenous Languages of Lowland South America*. (Indigenous Languages of Latin America [ILLA] 1.) Leiden: CNWS.

- Wälchli, Bernhard
 2003 Typology of light 'again', or, the eternal return of the same. Paper presented at the 5th International Conference of the Association for Linguistic Typology, Cagliari, Italy, September 15–18.
- Weber, David
 2002 The structural status of Bora classifiers. *Work Papers of the Summer Institute of Linguistics, University of North Dakota Session 46*. Available at www.und.edu/dept/linguistics/wp/2002.htm.
- Weir, E. M. Helen
 1984 A negação e outros tópicos da gramática Nadëb [Negation and other topics of Nadëb grammar]. M. A. thesis, Universidade Federal de Campinas.
 1986 Footprints of yesterday's syntax: Diachronic development of certain verb prefixes in an OSV language (Nadëb). *Lingua* 68: 291–316.
 1990 Incorporation in Nadëb. In *Amazonian Linguistics*, Doris L. Payne (ed.), 321–363. Austin: University of Texas.
 1994 Nadëb. In *Typological Studies in Negation*, Peter Kahrel and Rene van der Berg (eds.), 291–323. (Typological Studies in Language 29.) Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Wetzels, Leo
 1995 Contornos nasais e estrutura silábica em Kaingáng [Nasal contours and syllable structure in Kaingáng]. In *Estudos Fonológicos das Línguas Indígenas Brasileiras* [Phonological Studies of Indigenous Brazilian Languages], Leo Wetzels (ed.), 265–296. Rio de Janeiro: Editora UFRJ.
- Wiesemann, Ursula
 1964 Phonological syllables and words in Kaingáng. In *Beiträge zur Völkerkunde Südamerikas: Festgabe für Herbert Baldus zum 65 Geburtstag*, Hans Becker (ed.), 307–313. (Völkerkundliche Abhandlungen des Niedersächsischen Landesmuseums, Abteilung für Völkerkunde, 1.) Hannover: Münstermann-Druck.
- Wilkins, David
 1999 The 1999 Demonstrative Questionnaire: 'This' and 'that' in comparative perspective. In *Field Research Manual 1999*, David Wilkins (ed.). Nijmegen: Max Planck Institute for Psycholinguistics.
 2000 Ants, ancestors, and medicine: A semantic and pragmatic account of classifier constructions in Arrernte (Central Australia). In *Systems of Nominal Classification*, Gunter Senft (ed.), 147–216. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Yip, Moira
 2007 Tone. In *The Cambridge Handbook of Phonology*, Paul de Lacy (ed.), 229–252. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Zúñiga, Fernando

- 2007 The discourse-syntax interface in northwestern Amazonia: Differential object marking in Makú and some Tucanoan languages. In *Language Endangerment and Endangered Languages: Linguistic and Anthropological Studies with Special Emphasis on the Languages and Cultures of the Andean-Amazonian Border Area*, Leo Wetzels (ed.), 209–227. (Indigenous Languages of Latin America series [ILLA].) Leiden University, The Netherlands: The Research School of Asian, African, and Amerindian Studies (CNWS).

Zwicky, Arnold

- 1985 Clitics and particles. *Language* 61 (2): 283–305.

Zwicky, Arnold and Geoffrey Pullum

- 1983 Cliticization vs. inflection: English n't. *Language* 59 (3): 502–513.

Author index

- Aikhenvald, Alexandra, 13, 22, 23, 30–34, 98, 117, 123, 171, 207, 277, 281–283, 316, 386, 390, 393–395, 398, 404, 406, 419, 427, 561, 597, 641, 643, 649, 651fn, 661–664, 673fn, 712, 733, 737, 747, 820, 826, 827, 872
- Aissen, Judith, 171
- Athias, Renato, 13, 24, 35, 37
- Balée, William, 33
- Bamonte, Gerardo, 13
- Barnes, Janet, 98, 282, 662
- Barnes, Jonathan, 517
- Barnouw, Victor, 259
- Barshi, Immanuel, 228
- Beuchat, Henri, 8
- Bhaskararao, Peri, 46
- Bickel, Balthasar, 110, 134, 144, 636
- Blake, Barry J., 170, 171, 183, 185, 228
- Blažek, Václav, 316
- Blevins, Juliette, 76, 78
- Boersma, Paul, 38
- Bossong, Georg, 170, 171, 174, 185fn, 356fn, 505fn
- Bourne, Edmund J., 259
- Bowerman, Melissa, 463fn
- Brandão Lopes, Aurise, 3, 59, 78
- Broschart, Jürgen, 273
- Brown, Lea, 503
- Bruce, Leslie, 396
- Bruzzi, A. A., 18, 22fn
- Buchillet, Dominique, 6, 18, 25
- Bybee, Joan L., 39, 144, 152, 381, 521, 595, 597
- Cabalzar, Aloisio, 10, 32
- Cabrera, Gabriel, 6, 7fn, 14fn
- Campbell, Lyle, 5, 9fn
- Cathcart, Marilyn E., 6
- Chafe, Wallace, 641
- Chappell, Hilary, 228, 232, 233, 252, 257, 261fn
- Chaumeil, Jean-Pierre, 18fn
- Chernela, Janet, 14, 16–18, 22fn, 36, 499, 920
- Chung, Sandra, 525, 527
- Claudi, Ulrike, 149, 150
- Comrie, Bernard, 39, 116, 159, 170, 171, 177, 313fn, 520, 525, 541, 554, 570, 587, 588, 599, 828
- Corbett, Greville, 192, 201
- Craig, Colette Grinevald, 281
See also Grinevald, Colette
- Croft, William, 171
- Crowley, Terry, 252, 390, 393
- Curnow, Timothy Jowan, 642
- de Oliveira, Ana Gita, 24
- DeLancey, Scott, 279, 677
- Del Vigna, Dalva, 3
- Denny, J. Peter, 273
- Derbyshire, Desmond, 277, 316
- Diessel, Holger, 285fn, 288, 291, 294, 295, 298fn, 300, 302
- Dixon, R. M. W., 33, 117, 233, 326, 441, 662, 733
- Dobrushina, Nina, 634, 634fn, 636, 641
- Donohue, Mark, 502fn, 712
- Dryer, Matthew, 750, 787
- Du Bois, John W., 750
- Durie, Mark, 390, 393–396, 404, 406, 429

- Elderkin, Edward D., 595
 Enfield, N. J., 487fn, 493fn
 Epps, Patience, 24fn, 30–33, 35, 36, 100, 140, 149, 151, 154fn, 155, 206, 264, 271fn, 311, 315, 317, 487, 594, 641, 642, 645, 662, 803fn, 842
 Erickson, Catherine, 10
 Erickson, Timothy, 10
 Evans, Nicholas, 257, 487fn, 493fn, 497, 809, 846
- Facundes, Sidney da Silva, 283
 Fedden, Sebastian, 497
 Ferguson, Charles A., 46
 Ferreira, Epaminondas Henrique, 72
 Fisser, Anne, 24
 Fleischman, Suzanne, 588
 Foley, William, 357, 393, 711, 805, 820
 Franklin, Gail, 10, 211, 302, 562fn
 Franky, Carlos, 3, 6, 7fn, 14fn
- Gaby, Alice, 487fn, 493fn
 Gaskins, Suzanne, 274
 Giacone, Antonio, 9, 10
 Giusti, Giuliana, 285fn
 Givón, Talmy, 38, 150, 393
 Goldman, Irving, 16, 22fn, 32, 499
 Gómez-Imbert, Elsa, 23, 98, 99, 282, 390, 395, 405, 418
 Goodwin Gómez, Gale, 283
 Goussev, Valentin, 634
 Green, Rebecca, 281
 Greenberg, Joseph, 750, 787
 Grenand, Françoise, 72
 Grimes, Barbara J., 13
 Grinevald, Colette, 264, 277–279, 281
- Hackstein, Olav, 280fn
 Haiman, John, 223, 233
 Hale, Kenneth, 832, 844
- Hanke, Thomas, 316
 Hansen, Cynthia Andersen, 316
 Haspelmath, Martin, 149, 150, 171, 841
 Heine, Bernd, 149, 150, 216, 474, 486
 Henley, Paul, 5, 6
 Hill, Jonathan, 14, 17, 18
 Hook, Peter, 389, 420
 Hopper, Paul, 144, 169, 171, 401, 420, 475, 505, 554
 Huber, Randal Q., 6, 7fn, 316
 Hugh-Jones, Christine, 22fn
 Hugh-Jones, Stephen, 14, 22fn, 32
 Hünemeyer, Friederike, 149, 150
- Ito, Junko, 82
- Jackson, Jean, 16, 22, 23, 25, 30, 36, 281, 499
 Jakobson, Roman, 46
 Joüon, Paul, 497
- Kahrel, Peter, 727
 Keenan, Edward, 828
 Kemmer, Suzanne, 120, 380, 505, 513
 Kenstowicz, Michael, 98
 Kilian-Hatz, Christa, 721
 Kingston, John, 98
 Klavans, Judith, 123
 Klein, Harriet Manelis, 214, 216
 Knjazev, Jurij, 486
 Knobloch, Francis 14
 Koch-Grünberg, Theodore, 5, 6–8 9fn, 13, 24, 25, 33
 Kok, P., 5, 7fn, 10
 König, Ekkehard, 475, 486
 Kunene, Daniel P., 721
 Kuteva, Tania, 617
- La Polla, Randy, 820
 La Rotta, Luz Marina, 6
 Ladefoged, Peter, 46

- Lakoff, George, 275
 Lambrecht, Knud, 345, 350, 753
 Landaburu, Jon, 354
 Lefebvre, Claire, 396, 398
 Lehmann, Christian, 149
 Levinson, Stephen H., 487fn, 493fn, 711
 Liang, Hsin-Hsin, 389
 Longacre, Robert E., 820, 865
 Loukotka, Cestmír, 5
 Lucy, John A., 192, 274
- Macaulay, Monica, 75, 78, 106
 Mahecha Rubio, Dany, 3, 6, 7, 9, 14
 Majid, Asifa, 487fn, 493fn
 Manning, H. Paul, 711
 Martins, Silvana A., 1fn, 4–6, 7fn, 8, 9, 40, 277, 280, 315, 390, 393, 439, 470, 486, 499, 504, 663, 700, 747
 Martins, Valteir, 1fn, 3–6, 8, 9, 20fn, 32, 91fn, 92fn, 386
 Mattei-Müller, Marie-Claude, 5, 6, 7fn
 Mayer, Mercer, 207, 492
 McGregor, William, 228, 232, 233, 252, 257, 261fn
 Meira, Sergio, 466
 Mester, Armin, 82
 Miestamo, Matti, 725, 727, 733, 747
 Miller, Marion, 386, 390, 661
 Milton, Katherine, 14, 24
 Mithun, Marianne, 134, 192, 228, 230, 260, 431
 Moore, Barbara J., 10, 211, 302, 529, 562fn, 765
 Moravcsik, Edith, 206
 Murphy, Robert F., 18fn
 Murphy, Yolanda, 18fn
- Nasukawa, Kuniya, 60
 Nelson, Nicole, 721
 Neves, Eduardo, 32
- Nichols, Johanna, 110, 134, 144, 232, 233, 252, 517, 641
 Nimuendajú, Curt, 5, 9, 9fn, 32
 Norde, Muriel, 150
 Nordlinger, Rachel, 487fn, 497
- Olson, Mike, 394
 Ospina Bozzi, Ana María, 3, 7fn, 8, 20fn, 40, 75, 78, 127fn, 163fn, 227, 279fn, 280, 311fn, 316, 386, 388, 390, 392, 404, 406, 439, 499, 597, 661, 663
 Osumi, Midori, 233
 Overall, Simon, 620
- Pagliuca, William, 144, 152, 595, 597
 Palmer, Frank, 641
 Parker, Steve, 3, 59, 78
 Payne, David, 503
 Payne, Doris, 116fn, 228, 277, 562fn
 Payne, John R., 712, 725, 805
 Payne, Thomas, 110, 391, 394, 561
 Pederson, Eric, 463fn
 Perkins, Revere, 144, 152, 595, 597
 Peterson, David A., 517
 Peterson, Jean Treloggen, 24fn
 Pike, Eunice, 92
 Plank, Frans, 150
 Politis, Gustavo, 14fn
 Pozzobon, Jorge, 1fn, 4, 10, 13–16, 24, 25, 310fn, 311, 317
 Proschan, Frank, 9
 Pullum, Geoffrey, 123
- Ramirez, Henri, 8, 10, 45fn, 84fn, 100, 386, 387, 390, 440, 561, 583, 584, 661, 663, 664, 673, 736, 746, 872
 Ramos, Alcida Rita, 24
 Reed, Robert B., 6, 7fn, 316
 Reichel-Dolmatoff, Gerardo, 18, 22fn
 Reid, Howard, 5, 6, 7, 13–16, 19, 24, 25, 32, 34–36, 894

- Reid, Nicholas, 279, 281
 Remijnsen, Bert, 86
 Riad, Tomas, 86
 Ricardo, Carlos Alberto, 10, 32
 Rießler, Michael, 333
 Rival, Laura, 33
 Rivet, Paul, 5, 7, 8, 10
 Rodrigues, Aryon Dall'Igna, 5, 22
 Ross, Malcolm, 333
- Sadock, Jerold, 123, 135, 761, 788, 795
 Sakel, Jeannette, 354fn, 561
 Salmons, Joseph C., 75, 78, 106
 Schachter, Paul, 441, 719
 Schladt, Mathias, 474
 Schultz, Harald, 7fn
 Schweder, Richard A., 259
 Seifart, Frank, 277, 282, 316
 Shalev, Michael, 46
 Shankland, Alex, 35
 Shibatani, Masayoshi, 475
 Shopen, Timothy, 38
 Siemund, Peter, 475, 486, 784
 Silverstein, Michael, 159, 171
 Silverwood-Cope, Peter, 7, 14fn, 24
 Smith-Stark, T. Cedric, 192
 Sorensen, Arthur P., 13, 22, 281
 Stenzel, Kristine, 23, 78, 386
 Storto, Luciana, 58, 59
 Sweetser, Eve, 654
- Tabor, Whitney, 155
 Talmy, Leonard, 275, 388, 398, 406, 407
- Tastevin, Constant, 5, 7, 8, 10
 Terribilini, Mario, 13
 Terribilini, Michel, 13
 Thompson, Sandra A., 169, 171, 475, 505, 554, 865
 Thord-Gray, Ivor, 712
 Timberlake, Alan, 525, 527
 Trask, Robert L., 135
 Traugott, Elizabeth C., 144, 155, 401, 420
- van Heuven, Vincent, 86
 Van Valin, Robert, 805, 820
 Viberg, Åke, 646fn
 Vidal, Alejandra, 561
 Voeltz, F. K. Erhard, 721
- Wälchli, Bernhard, 575fn
 Weber, David, 282
 Weenink, David, 38
 Weir, E. M. Helen, 4, 7fn, 40, 227, 229, 280, 315, 387, 432, 439, 486, 597, 663, 747
 Wetzels, Leo, 57–59
 Wiesemann, Ursula, 59
 Wilkins, David, 279, 291fn
- Yip, Moira, 92
- Zúñiga, Fernando, 171
 Zwicky, Arnold, 123, 134, 139, 761, 788, 795

Subject index

- accessibility hierarchy, 828
Acquiescence particle, 710–711
‘Acting alone’ markers, 383, 709–714
adjective, 114–115, 326–333, 441–446
 as predicate 441–446, 114, 359,
 537, 585, 612, 616, 771–774
 compared to bound noun, 328–331
 defining, 114–115
 head of noun phrase, 327–331, 181
 modifier in noun phrase, 326–333,
 114, 180–181, 204, 220–221,
 278, 352, 732, 750
 negation, 732, 735, 745
 nominalization with *t#h=*, 135,
 180–181, 204, 212, 327–333
 tone and stress, 87, 328
adposition, *See* locative postposition
adverbials, 446–463, 841–845, 853–
869
 adjectives acting as, 115, 447–449
 adverbial clause, 127, 190–191,
 591–593, 841–845, 853–872
 adverbial intensifier, *p#b* 673
 ‘no reason’ form *hĩ*, 137, 451–452
 reason form *keyó?*, 870–872
 simultaneous temporal form *kamí*,
 126, 129, 869–870
 ‘Telic’ marker *yí?* as adverbializer,
 136, 465, 558, 800, 854–856
Adversative conjunction, 138, 384,
687, 816–819
affect marking, 336–352, §15
agriculture, 14, 23, 26, 33, 35
alignment (nominative-accusative), 2,
165, 750
allophones, 45–77, 83, 91–92
ambitransitive, 376–377
Andoke, 354, 653
animacy
 number marking and, 177–178,
 192–198
object marking and, 2, 166–177, 177–
178, 181
antitopic, *See* right dislocation
applicative, 119, 132, 382, 500–504,
635–637, 640–641
apprehensive mood, 95–96, 607–608,
610, 630–633, 795
Apurinã, 283
Arabic, 185, 505fn
Arawak family, 4, 8, 17–18, 22–23,
25–26, 31, 34, 283, 439–440, 662,
873
argument
 core, 166–181, 372–378, 505–511,
 852
 dropping, 376–377, 750–751, 758
 external, antitopics, *See* right
 dislocation
 focus in questions, 787–790
 oblique, 181–191, 373
 recipient, beneficiary, maleficiary,
 167–168, 374, 501–502, 758–
 760
Asheninka, 503
aspect, 112, 127, §12
 additional functions of markers,
 346–348, 220–223, 521
Associative plural, 184, 201, 205, 207
Athabaskan family, 98
attributive, 126, 220–223, 334, 338,
368, 532
augmentative, 352–353, 671, 681
avertive, 616–618
Baniwa, 8, 22–24, 34, 282, 316

- Bantu family, 98
- Barasana, 22fn, 26, 395, 405, 418
- Baré, 22, 31
- bilingualism, *See* multilingualism
- Bora, 282, 316
- borrowing
 - avoidance of, 23, 31, 281
 - lexical, 23, 30–31, 34, 78–82, 85, 91, 269–271, 275–276, 281, 439, 463, 583, 746, 791
 - morphological, 227, 583, 736, 803, 872
 - See also* language contact, Comparative notes
- Boumaa Fijian, 233
- bound noun
 - body parts, 252–256, 259–261
 - compared to adjective, 114, 328–331
 - definition and morphosyntactic properties, 203, 205, 232–233, 829–830
 - generic human, 238–241, 244–246, 258–259
 - kin terms, 234–238, 258
 - male and female, 241–244
 - non-obligatorily bound nouns, 262–263
 - other types of, 250–252
 - plant parts, 246–250, 258
 - semantic extension and, 264–273
 - See also* possession, class terms
- Boundary Suffixes, 87–88, 121–122, 124–131, 140, 380–385, 748–749
- consonant-initial, 129–130
- internally complex, 130–131
- simple, 125–127
- vowel-initial, 116, 127–128, 145, 806–809
- Buriat, 636
- Burmese, 587
- calquing, 28, 34, 316–317, 661, 673–674
- Carib family, 316, 466fn
- case, 2, 111, 165–191
 - animacy and, 168, 170–178, 181, 484, 714, 832
 - directional oblique, 181–183, 859
 - marking of multiple objects, 169–170
 - object, 164–181, 372–374, 481, 832
 - oblique, 184–191, 832, 856–859
 - plural-marked nouns and, 177–179, 192
- causative, 377–379, 398–404, 506, 516–519
- clans, 14–16, 19–22, 24, 36, 158, 234, 241, 246, 920
- classification of nouns, 264–283
 - animate entities, 273
 - class terms, 279
 - functions, 276–278
 - grammaticalization of system, 273–276, 279–282
 - native items, 265–267
 - non-native items, 267–272
 - semantic extension, 217, 264–272, 275
 - See also* bound noun
- clause
 - simple, §17
 - combined, §18
 - morphosyntax of, 749
 - See also* coordination, subordination
- clause-chaining, 731, 803, 820, 861–869
- clitics
 - enclitics, 88, 135–136, 383–384
 - proclitics, 102, 135, 755
 - See also* fluid formatives
- Collective, 195, 200–202
- color terms, 333, 443

- Comanche, 192
 comitative, 185–186, 207
 comparison, 452–463
 contrastive, 459–463
 equative, 452–459, 612
 Comparative notes, 77, 86, 97, 207, 282, 315, 386, 389, 439, 486, 561, 661, 662, 736, 747
 complementation, 849–853
 completive aspect, 549–554
 compound, *See* noun compound, verb compound
 concessive clause, 865–869
 conditional, 383, 609–614
 consonants, 45–77
 cluster simplification, 102–105
 gemination of, 47–50
 homorganic clusters, 105–108
 See also glottalized consonants, glides, etc.
 contact among Vaupés languages, 26–31
 directional formatives and, 561
 evidentials and, 662–664
 negative particle *naé* and, 736–737
 noun classification and, 2, 281–282
 noun incorporation and, 439–440
 number marking and, 207–208
 numerals and, 315–318
 verb compounding and, 427
 verb *ni-* and, 386–387
 See also borrowing, Comparative notes
 contrast-tense markers, 157, 384, 599–608
 demonstrative functions of, 305–306, 603, 605
 distant past, 600–607
 future, 605–608, 734
 temporally proximate, 600–603
 contrastive emphasis, 341–344, 351
 Contrastive marker, 337, 366–367
 converbal clause, 205–206, 841–844
 Cooperative marker, 383, 627–630, 710
 coordination
 Adversative conjunction, 384, 816–819
 Boundary Suffixes and, 806–815
 clauses, 804–819
 disjunction, 816, 818–819
 Emphatic Coordinator, 384, 809–816
 juxtaposition, 805–806
 noun phrases, 333–335, 362–363, 815
 copula, 386, 615–616, 729, 768–777, 863–864
 ‘intangible’ demonstrative and, 302–303
 cosubordination, 386, 394, 803, 819, 820–828, 861, 864, 873
 counterfactual, 382, 613–619, 623–624, 746
 Cubeo, 22, 23, 282
 Dâw, 3–7, 10, 14fn, 22, 25, 31–33, 40, 86, 98, 105, 107, 109, 227, 236, 266, 280, 315–317, 339, 386, 390, 393, 433, 440, 470, 486, 499–500, 504, 662–663, 700, 747, 920
 deaffixation, 3, 149–156
 Deceased marker, 2, 136, 337, 353–355, 610, 653–654
 declarative
 clause, 524–525, 750–777
 suffix, 525–526, 748–750, 752, 761–767
 word order in declarative clause, 750–760
 degree markers, 667–677
 deixis, social, 711–713
 demonstratives, 160–163, 172, 179–180, 198–199, 291–306
 alterative, 304–305

- case marking on, 172, 179–180
- distal, 296–297
- functions of, 291–292
- intangible, 285, 298–303
- number marking on, 166–167, 199–200, 204
- proximal, 292–296
- relationship to interrogative pronouns, 160–163, 287–290
- deontic modality, 640–641
- dependent
 - clause, §18
 - suffix, 126–128, 383, 686–688, 841–849
 - suffix as topic marker, 349–351
- Desano, 14–15, 22, 26, 386, 661
- derivation
 - adverbials, of, 447–448
 - bound nouns and, 212, 276–277
 - causatives, of, 516–519
 - nouns, of, 112–113, 210–212, 276–277
 - verbs, of, 385–386
- dialects, 10–13, 108–109
- differential object marking, 170–178
 - See also* case
- diminutive, 352–353
 - intensifier, 674–677
 - verbal diminutives, 383, 583–584
- discourse marking, §7, 677–711
- disjunction, 816, 818–819
- distant past contrast, 603–605
- distributive, 140, 318–321, 384, 566–574 *See also* iterative aspect, quantification
- ditransitive, 167–168, 374–375, 500–502, 758–760, 837
- durative, 566–567
- dynamic aspect, 126–128, 143, 524–533, 542–544, 554, 749, 810
 - compared to declarative, 525–530, 763–767
- elative, 447, 459–461, 673–674
- emphasis, 667–703, 734–736
 - augmentative emphasis forms, 352, 677–681
 - contrastive emphasis, 341–344
 - Filler form -Vw- and, 688–692
 - emphatic tag, 697–698
 - glottalization of final consonant, 703
 - interrogative emphasis, 693–694
- Emphatic Coordinator, 384, 809–816
- endangerment, 3, 23, 31, 32
- English, 216, 261, 353, 356, 362, 376, 380, 406, 429, 421, 422, 425, 463, 468, 475, 492, 507, 511, 536, 538, 554, 575, 589, 597, 625, 641, 681, 701fn, 706, 714, 715fn, 787, 796, 805, 810, 868
- epistemic modality, 384, 502–504, 637–641
- evidentials, 384, 641–664
 - co-occurrence of, 658–659
 - inferred, 140, 354, 650–654
 - inferred, additional form -ni-, 659–662
 - nonvisual, 140, 153–156, 646–650
 - reportative, 140, 604, 654–658
 - visual or default, 643–645
- Ewe, 233
- Exclusive, 706–709
- exhortative, *See* jussive
- Factive, 123, 504–516
- Filler form, 538–541, 688–692, 807–808, 832
- Finno-Ugric family, 171
- fluid formatives, 139–144
 - diachronic considerations, 149–157
- focus
 - basic focus marker, 684–688
 - inchoative, 338–341
 - ‘Following’ marker, 469–470

- Fongbe, 396
 French, 468, 641
 fricatives, 46, 60–61
 Frustrative, 143, 620–627
 future
 contrast particle, 605–608
 first person plural inclusive, 598–599
 negation and, 591, 734, 739–740
 proximative future, 148, 422–423, 597–598
 relationship to purpose, 591–594
 suffix *teg/te*, 147, 588–597, 779–780
 suffix *teg/te*, grammaticalization of, 151–152, 594–597
- gender in nouns, 193, 241–244, 282, 285
- German, 380, 846
- glides, 46, 61–63, 72–74
- glottalized consonants, 46–49, 63–78, 93, 100, 703
 transitive/intransitive verb contrast, 379–380
- grammaticalization
 verbal formatives, 149–157, 419–429
 noun classifiers, 274–276, 279–282
 See also Historical notes
- Guarani, 22, 171
- Gurr-Goni, 281
- Guugu-Yimidhirr, 357
- habitual aspect, 140, 152–153, 382–384, 561–566, 568
- health of Hupd'äh, 35–36
- Hebrew, 171, 185, 497, 505fn
- Hindi, Hindi-Urdu, 171, 389, 420, 641
- Historical notes, 227, 280, 315, 439, 486, 497, 502, 565, 578, 594, 626, 635, 640, 649, 653, 842
- Hixkaryana, 316
- Hodi, 5–6
- homorganic consonants, 79, 102–108
- honorific, *See* respect marker
- hortative, 598–599, 627, 634
- hunting and gathering, 8, 14, 24, 26, 33–35
- iconicity, 141, 171, 223, 260, 393–395, 404, 521, 688, 724, 824
- ideophones, 721–724
- imperative, 794–802
 aspect markers and, 797–799
 forceful, 800–802
 future tense and, 606–607
 negation of, 727–728, 800, 856
 simple, 748–749, 795–800
 responses to, 802
- imperfective, *See* dynamic aspect
- impersonal subject, 474, 483–484
- inchoative aspect, 533–541
- inchoative focus, 338–340, 538
- incorporation, *See* noun incorporation
- Indefinite Associative, 357–360
- indefinite reference, 306–309, 474
- individual person, cultural concept of, 259, 713
- Indo-European family, 171
- Inner Suffixes, 131–134, 380–384, 520–523
 phonological reduction of, 144–149
 relationship to compounded verb roots, 154, 426–429
 See also fluid formatives
- instrumental, 166, 186–187
- intensifiers, 667–677, 734–736
 reflexive, 348–349, 474–476
- interactive tags, 698–702
- Interactional, 119, 123–124, 487–500
- interjections, 716–720
- interrogative
 Alternative marker, 791–792

- Boundary Suffix, 127, 383, 749
 emphasis, 693–694
 pronouns, *See* question words
 responding to, 792–794
 rhetorical or backchanneling
 strategies, 788–790
 tag, 698–700
- interrogative clause, 748–749, 777–792
 constituent (question-word), 778–783
 intonation, 784
 polar (yes-no), 784–791
 word order in, 749, 787
- intransitive, 169, 372–380, 406–411
- Iquito, 316
- Iranian, 171
- iterative aspect, 566–583
 distributive, 382, 384, 566–574
 ‘Repeated instance’, 345, 575–579
 reduplication, 208, 579–583
- Jakalteq, 281
- Japanese, 82, 274, 713
- Japu River, 108, 109, 679, 698
- Japura River, 3, 10fn
- Jussive, 119, 383, 502–504, 634–637, 640–641
- Kakua, 5–7, 14fn, 32, 316
- Kaingáng, 58–59
- Kannada, 192
- Kapiwaya, 17–19, 353
- Karitiana, 58–59
- Khakas, 641
- kin terms, 194–195, 207, 258
 as bound nouns, 233–238
 as historical source of Interactional, Applicative, 497–501, 503
 object marking and, 172–173
 referential, 234–235
 vocative, 194, 234
- Koromfe, 497
- Kuyawi, 5
- labile verbs, *See* ambitransitive language
 attitudes, 22–23, 26–30
 endangerment, 3, 23, 31–32
- laryngealization, *See* vowels
- Latin, 183, 285fn
- Lavukaleve, 641
- lexicalization processes, 49, 79–81, 85, 102–107, 389, 431
- Língua Geral, *See* Nheengatú
- linguistic area, 23, 30–31
See also Comparative Notes
- linguistic exogamy, 22–23, 26–27
- locative
 adverbs, 464, 470–472
 function of Oblique case, 187–189, 856–860
 marker *co?*, 367–370
 postpositions, 464–472
- Makú, 3, 8–10, 28, 31
See also Nadahup family
- Makuna, 22
- Mandarin Chinese, 233, 356
- mass nouns, 197, 199, 202–203
- Mayali, 257
- Mbuti Pygmies, 24fn
 ‘measure’ term, 455–456
- middle voice, 505, 513
- Miraña, 316
- missionaries, 23, 34–37
- Mínica, 316
- mood and modality, §14, 770, 794–795
- morpheme order, 139–144, 381–384
 in verb compounds, 396–398, 404, 410–419
- morphophonemics, 102–108, 118
- Mosetén, 354fn, 561
- multilingualism, 21–32, 873
- Murui, 316

- Nadahup (Makú) family, 3–9
 contested members of, 5–9
 language relationships within, 3–5
 name changes, 9–10
See also Historical and Comparative notes
- Nadëb, 3–7, 14fn, 31, 33, 86, 98, 227, 229, 266, 280, 315, 317, 387, 432, 433, 439–440, 486, 499, 597, 662, 663, 747
- names, 19–21, 172–173
 nicknames, 21
 of dogs, 21
 Portuguese (personal), 21, 81, 85
 place, 158, 218
 ‘spell’ or ‘blessing’ names, 19–21
- Nanai, 233
- nasality, 42, 86, 99
 morpheme or syllable level, 41, 82–86
 on vowels, 42, 44–45, 83
 on consonants, 57–60, 83
 pre- and post-nasalization of voiced obstruents, 57–60
 spreading of, 85
- negation, §16
 existence, nominal, 737–741, 745, 747, 850
 future, 534–535, 591, 596–597, 607, 734
 imperatives, 727–728, 800
 inherently negative expressions, 745–747
 intensification, emphasis, 670–671, 734–736
 interaction with other grammatical systems, 733–734
 identity, 741–745
 modifiers and, 326–327, 448, 732
 reinforcement with *ná*, 736–737
 verbal, 390–391, 725–736
- Nepali, 636
- neutralization of voicing, 49fn, 63–65, 76
- Ngan’gityemerri, 281
- Nheengatú, 4, 5, 10, 11, 22, 23, 39, 72, 935
- Nias, 503
- nominalization, *See* derivation
- noun, §4–7
 as predicate, 112, 768–771
 bound noun, *See* bound noun
 classification, *See* classification of nouns
 defining, 111–113, 158
 human referent, 158–159, 173–175, 192–195, 238–246, 258–259
 incorporation, 431–440
 mass, 197, 199, 202–203
 modification, 326–333, 828–838
 template, 165
 ‘verby’ noun, 163–164
- noun compound
 involving adjectives, 220–223
 lexically specific, 217
 lexification and phonological reduction, 79, 85, 103–104, 220
 productive, 217–220, 274–275
 semantic (metaphorical) extension and, 216, 264–272
- Nukak, 5–7, 316
- number, 191–208
 Associative plural, 206–208
 collective, 191–193, 195, 200–202
 differential plural marking (plurality split), 192–198
 interaction with case, 166, 177–179, 185, 192
 noun phrase and, 204–205
 singulative, 193, 197, 204fn
 subordinate clause and, 206, 843–844, 846

- numerals
 variation among speakers, 310–313
 cardinal, 310, 313
 case marking and, 180
 etymological transparency of, 309–313, 315–317
 historical development of, 315–318
 in the noun phrase, 284, 314
 number marking and, 192, 199–201, 204, 314–315
 ordinal, 313–314
- object, *See* case
 oblique, *See* case
 obstruents, 50–60, 66–72, 76–77
 Oceanic languages, 333
 optative, 634–636, 641
 orthography, 98–101
- Paamese, 252, 390
 Papuri River, 1, 6, 7, 10, 13, 32
 Parallel comparison, 362–365
 particles, 134, 136–139
See also fluid formatives
 parts of speech, 111–115
 passive, 169, 190, 377, 475, 481–486
 past, *See* tense
 Pemon, 216
 perfective aspect, 541–549, 556–557, 798–799
 Persistent particle, 138, 164, 384, 520, 523, 524, 584–586
 Piapoco, 22
 Pilagá, 214, 561
 Pira-Tapuya, *See* Waikhana
 plural, *See* number
 Polish, 177
 polysemy and polyfunctionality, 119–120
 Portuguese, 4, 52, 183
 Hup contact with, 22–23, 32, 38
 lexical and morphological
 borrowing from, 31, 81–82, 84–85, 91, 269, 272, 275–276, 737, 816, 181, 872
- possession
 alienable, 224–228, 254–256
 clausal (possessor raising), 228–230, 431, 632
 human nouns and, 244–246
 inalienable, 232–234, 254–257, 259–261
 obligatory, 232
 pronouns, 159, 224–227
 verbs of, 230–231
See also bound noun
 possessor raising, 228–230, 431, 632
 prefixes and preforms, 122–124, 475
 as preverbal particles, 123–124, 480, 488–489
 ‘promiscuous’ morphemes, 119, 337–338, 677
- pronouns
 case marking on, 172
 cliticized to verb, 135, 285–286, 382
 in discourse, 750
 interrogative, *See* question words
 number marking on, 201
 object, 159
 possessive, 159, 224–227
 subject, 159, 284–287
- prosodic phonology, 82–98
See also tone, stress
 Protestive, 704–706
 proximative future, 148, 422–423, 427, 597–598
 Puinave, 5, 7, 8
 purpose, 151–152, 588, 591–595, 734
- quantification, 309–325
See also numerals, distributive
 Quechua, 475, 561
 Quichua, 389

- questions, *See* interrogative clause
 question words, 160–162, 287–291,
 778–783
 animate ‘who’, 287–290
 as interrogative pronouns, 287–289,
 778
 as adverbials, 287–290, 778
 as determiners, 287–290, 778
 indefinite reference and, 308–309
 similarity to demonstratives, 160–
 163
 quoted speech, 820–823
- reciprocal relations, *See* Interactional
 reduplication
 attributive function, 220–222
 nominal, 208–210
 phonology, 106
 predicates and, 583, 823–826
 verbal, 579–582
- reflexive, 473–487
 intensifier, 348–349, 474–475
 passive interpretation, 481–485
 polysemy of reflexive morpheme,
 473–475, 486
 reciprocal interpretation, 485–486
- Related Instance particle, 361
- relative clauses, 828–840
 accessibility to relativization, 828
 case marking on, 832–833, 837–
 838
 headed, 828–842
 headless, 828–833, 835, 837, 842–
 844
 similarity to converbial clauses,
 841–845
- respect marker, 355–357
- right-dislocation, 350, 351, 749–753,
 756–761, 787, 807
- Rio Negro, 5, 8, 22, 37, 439
- River Indian, 14–34
 sociolinguistic interaction with,
 26–30
 See also Tukano, Tariana
- Romance family, 22, 171, 174, 285fn
- Russian, 177, 475, 599, 634fn, 636
- Sandawe, 595
- Sechellois, 497
- segmental phonology, 41–78
 See also vowels, consonants
- Semitic, 171, 185
- sequential events, 550, 820, 861–864
- shaman, 18–19
- simultaneous events, 820, 864–869
- Sinhalese, 171
- Slavic family, 171
- social connectedness 711–714
- songs, *See also* kapiwaya 17–18, 25,
 704, 721, 873, 920–927
- Spanish, 174, 183, 285fn, 475
- space and time, related expressions of,
 187–190, 223, 291, 345, 455–456,
 463–472, 853–854, 857–860
- spells, 19, 25, 916–920
- stress
 on adjectival noun phrases, 328
 on noun compounds, 87, 118, 217,
 219, 234, 247, 275
 on verbs, 87, 117–118, 127, 390,
 394
 primary, 86–88, 117–118
 secondary, 88
- subordination, 819–872
 Dependent marker and, 841–845
 object marking and, 181, 830–833
 oblique marking and, 190–191,
 832–833, 856–860
 number marking and, 205–206,
 830–831, 843–844
 See also relative clause,
 complementation, adverbial
 clause
- suffixes, 124–134

- See also* Inner Suffixes, Boundary Suffixes
 suppletion, 116
 switch-reference, 820, 856, 861, 864
 different subject, 820, 864
 same subject, 820, 861
 syllable, 78–82
 symbols used, 39–40, 42fn, 63fn, 98–101

 Tarahumara, 712
 Tarascan, 192
 Tariana, 22, 23, 26, 30–32, 34, 38, 207, 208, 282, 316, 387, 390, 404, 419, 561, 597, 642, 649, 651fn, 661–664, 673fn, 712, 737, 747, 820, 826, 872
 Tatuyo, 22, 395, 405, 418
 telic aspect, 341, 554–558
 temporal
 adverbials, 856–870, 872
 function of Oblique case, 189–191
 tense, §13
 See also future, contrast–tense markers
 Thai, 281
 Tinrin, 233
 Tiquié River, 1, 3, 10, 12–14, 32, 34–35, 37, 108, 698
 Toba, 214
 Tok Pisin, 497
 tone
 grammatical uses of, 97, 210–211, 796–797
 historical reversal of, 3, 98
 in Apprehensive mood, 95–96, 633
 lexical, 88–97
 on verbs, 95–97, 371–372
 stress and, 86–89, 97
 topic
 marking with Dependent suffix, 349–351, 847–849
 switch, 345–348
 transitive, 372–380, §11
 Tukang Besi, 712
 Tukano
 grammatical borrowing, 23, 30–31
 language contact with Hup, 2–3, 13, 25–32
 lexical borrowing, 23, 30–31, 78, 91, 275, 463, 583
 See also Comparative notes, River Indian
 Tukanoan family, 2, 4, 8, 14, 22–26, 30–34, 41, 57, 78, 86, 98, 207, 280, 282, 317, 386–390, 427, 439, 440, 642, 645, 649, 661–663, 736–737, 820
 Tunebo, 357
 Tupinamba, 4, 22
 Turkic, 171
 Tuyuca, 22, 24, 26, 27, 662
 Ural-Altaic languages, 333

 valency, §11
 decreasing, 475–496, 503
 increasing, 398–404, 500–503, 506–512, 516–519
 of verb roots, 372–380
 venitive, 558–561
 verb, §8–9
 core, 87, 122–134, 139–144, 149
 defining, 113–114, 371–372
 ni- ‘be’ and its functions, 385–387
 periphery, 87, 134–144, 149
 semantic classes of roots, 375–376, 405–410
 serialization, 393–395
 template, 122, 380–385
 tone, 95–97
 verb compound, §9
 as serial construction, 393–395
 auxiliary and ‘vector’ roots, 419–426

- cause-effect relationship, 398–404
- grammaticalization of Inner
 - Suffixes from roots, 153–156, 426–429
- high integration, 404–426
- low integration, 395–404
- multiple sub-events, 405–410
- semantic classes of roots, 405–410
- temporal sequence, 396–398
- volition, 148, 422–423, 597–598
- vowels
 - copying of, 47–48, 75, 85, 102, 125–128
 - harmony, 102–105, 108
 - laryngealization, 46, 53–54, 63–64, 74–76
 - length, 42, 79, 82, 93
 - nasal contexts, 44–45, 83–85, 101
 - oral contexts, 42–43, 101
- Waikhana, 22, 26, 29
- Wanano, 22, 26, 30, 32, 386
- Warekena, 22
- Wasco-Wishram, 654
- Welsh, 497
- whatchamacallit form, 392, 714–716
- Witotoan family, 283, 316
- word
 - grammatical, 87, 110, 117
 - phonological, 82, 110, 115–118
 - structure (of noun and verb word), 121–139, 165, 380–384
 - verb compound as, 390–393
- word-accent, *See* tone
- word order
 - basic, 432, 439–440, 750–760
 - declarative clauses, 749–760, 788
 - interrogative clauses, 749, 777–778, 784, 787–788
 - subject following verb, 752–753, 784, 787
- Yagua, 18fn, 561
- Yanomam, 283
- Yanomami family, 8
- Yavapai, 475
- Yucatec 192, 274
- Yuhup, 3–8, 10, 14fn, 20fn, 25, 31–33, 40, 59, 75, 77–78, 86, 97–98, 107, 109, 127, 163fn, 227, 236, 279fn, 280, 283, 311fn, 316, 317, 386, 388, 390, 392, 404, 406, 439, 440, 486, 499, 597, 661–663
- Yurupari, 18, 19, 25, 34, 539

